





Bois

Collins (Arthur)

27<sup>m</sup> - 1  
( $\frac{N. 79}{2}$ )





<36612060780015



<36612060780015

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek



2<sup>o</sup> Brit. 27 m



Bayer. Staats-  
Bibliothek  
München





*From a curious Limning  
in the Collection*

*drawn by Isaac Oliver  
of Dr. Richard Mead.*

*The Right Honourable  
S<sup>r</sup> PHILIP SIDNEY,  
Kn<sup>t</sup>*

*To William Perry of Penshurst Esq<sup>r</sup> this Plate is humbly inscrib'd by J. Vertue, 1745.*



L E T T E R S  
AND  
M E M O R I A L S  
OF  
S T A T E,

In the REIGNS of

Queen MARY, Queen ELIZABETH, King JAMES,  
King CHARLES THE FIRST, Part of the Reign of King CHARLES  
THE SECOND, and OLIVER's Usurpation.

Written and collected

By Sir HENRY SYDNEY, Knight of the Garter, Ambassador in *France*, four Times  
Lord-Justice of *Ireland*, and thrice Lord-Deputy of that Realm, in the Reigns of Queen MARY,  
and Queen ELIZABETH, and Lord-President of *Wales*, &c.

The famous Sir PHILIP SYDNEY, and his Brother Sir ROBERT SYDNEY, Lord-Gover-  
nor of *Flushing*, and Lord-Chamberlain in the Reign of King JAMES.

ROBERT, the second Earl of *Leicester*, Ambassador to the Kings of *Denmark*, and  
*France*, and Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, in the Reign of King CHARLES THE FIRST.

PHILIP Lord Viscount *Lisle*, Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, by Authority of Parliament,  
and one of the Council of State of the Commonwealth; and of his Brother Colonel ALGERNON  
SYDNEY, one of the said Council of State, and Ambassador to the Courts of *Denmark* and *Sweden*.  
Together with Letters of the other Ministers of State, with whom they held a Correspondence.

The whole containing

The Antient State of *Ireland*; with CHARACTERS and private MEMOIRS.

ALSO,

The Antient Government of the PRINCIPALITY of *WALE*S.

The Wars between the *Spaniards*, and the STATES-GENERAL in the *Netherlands*.

Negotiations between the COURTS of ENGLAND, FRANCE, &c.

The INTRIGUES of the several COURTS of Queen ELIZABETH, King JAMES, and King  
CHARLES THE FIRST.

With other remarkable Transactions, both at Home and Abroad, during those Times,  
not hitherto known.

Faithfully transcribed from the Originals at *Penshurst Place* in *Kent*, the Seat of the Earls of  
*LEICESTER*, and from his Majesty's Office of Papers and Records for Business of State.

Whereunto is added,

Genealogical and Historical OBSERVATIONS: Also MEMOIRS of the LIVES and ACTI-  
ONS of the SYDNEYS, and their Noble Ancestors, the DUDLEYS, GREY, TALBOT, BEAU-  
CHAMP, BERKLEY, and LISLE; and a Defence of ROBERT DUDLEY Earl of LEICESTER,  
wrote by Sir PHILIP SYDNEY. Collected from Records, their Last Wills and Testaments, O-  
riginal Papers, Authentick Manuscripts, and our most approved Historians.

---

By ARTHUR COLLINS, Esq;  
AUTHOR of the PEERAGE of ENGLAND.

---

VOL. I.

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for T. OSBORNE, in *Gray's-Inn*. MDCCXLVI.



LETTERS

AND

MEMORIALS

OF

STATE

In the REIGN of

Queen Mary, Queen Elizabeth, King James  
King Charles the First, Part of the Reign of King Charles  
the Second, and Oliver's Usurpation.

By Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the Order of the Bath, Ambassador in France, four Times  
Lord Justice of Ireland, and three Lord High Treasurers of Great Britain, in the Reigns of Queen Mary  
and Queen Elizabeth, and Lord President of Wales.

The Honours Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the Order of the Bath, Ambassador in France, four Times  
Lord Justice of Ireland, and three Lord High Treasurers of Great Britain, in the Reigns of Queen Mary  
and Queen Elizabeth, and Lord President of Wales.

Robert, the second Earl of Salisbury, Ambassador in France, four Times  
Lord Justice of Ireland, and three Lord High Treasurers of Great Britain, in the Reigns of Queen Mary  
and Queen Elizabeth, and Lord President of Wales.

Philip, Lord Viscount of Salisbury, Ambassador in France, four Times  
Lord Justice of Ireland, and three Lord High Treasurers of Great Britain, in the Reigns of Queen Mary  
and Queen Elizabeth, and Lord President of Wales.

The Ancient State of Ireland; with CHARACTERS and private Memoirs  
of the several Princes, and of the several Lords, Bishops, and Gentlemen, who have been  
in the Government of Ireland, from the first Settlement of the English in that Kingdom.

The Wars between the Spaniards, and the States-General, in the Netherlands.  
Negotiations between the Courts of England, France, &c.  
The Intercourses of the several Courts of Queen Elizabeth, King James, and King

Charles the First.  
With other remarkable Transactions, both at Home and Abroad, during those Times.

Authentically transcribed from the Originals at Dublin, by Sir Henry Sydney, four Times  
Lord Justice of Ireland, and three Lord High Treasurers of Great Britain, in the Reigns of Queen Mary  
and Queen Elizabeth, and Lord President of Wales.

Genealogical and Historical Observations, and Memoirs of the several Princes, and of the several Lords, Bishops, and Gentlemen, who have been  
in the Government of Ireland, from the first Settlement of the English in that Kingdom.

By ARTHUR COLLINS, Esq.  
A Member of the PARLIAMENT of GREAT-BRITAIN.

VOL. I.

LONDON.

Printed for T. OSBORN, in Great-Britain.



To the HONOURABLE the  
**Lady *MARY* *SHERARD*,**

And to the HONOURABLE  
***ELIZABETH* *PERRY*,**  
GRAND-DAUGHTERS, and HEIRS,

Of the RIGHT HONOURABLE  
***ROBERT* *SYDNEY*,**  
Earl of LEICESTER, Viscount and Baron LISLE, Baron of  
PENSHURST, and Lord SIDNEY.

**S**HOULD these Memoirs and Letters appear in the World under any other Patronage, whilst a *SYDNEY* is still subsisting, I might be justly upbraided, of the Want of paying a due Homage to the Memory of your great and noble Ancestors, who have so highly deserved of their Country.

These are MONUMENTS of their most famous ACTIONS, which never will fade, or decay, but appear shining Examples of Prudence, Knowledge, Experience, Worth, and Honor, to the latest Posterity,



## DEDICATION.

terity. It is indeed remarkable, that there are exact Parallels of your Progenitors, amongst the Chief of the *Romans*: For what *Tacitus* observes of *Agriкола*'s excellent Conduct in *Britain*, is matched by Sir *Henry Sidney*'s in *Ireland*: In his Military Capacity, also considered as a *Roman*, he obtained the *Opima Spolia*, in killing, with his own Hand, *James Mac-Connel*, the principal Leader of the *Scots*: An Honour snatch'd but by Three in that State, greedy of Glory, viz. *Romulus*, *Cassius*, and *Marcellus*: And lastly, as a thorough paced *Roman*, he consumed his Patrimony in the Nation's Service, and was on his Death buried, like *Valerius*, at the publick Expence.

In Sir *Philip Sidney*, we behold *Marcellus* and *Mecænas* united, who, with the strongest Eloquence, could at once teach the best Rules of Poetry, and most gallantly and bountifully rewarded Men of Letters and Science: Who as a Soldier, like *P. Decius Mus*. Successfully executed the antient Silence in March, and afterwards freely rewarded the Partners of his Victory out of his own Purse: And also, like *Decius*, devoted himself in Battle to his Country.

In *Algernon Sidney*, we have, in one View, *Brutus* and *Regulus*. As the First, a Destroyer of Tyrants and Tyranny; as the Latter, a Despiser of Banishment, and even Death itself, when they came in Competition with uttering his Sentiments for his Country's Benefit.

Your



## DEDICATION.

Your noble Grandfather, when Lord *Lisle*, and your Uncle, the Earl of *Romney*, were foremost in the List of those, who, at the Revolution, drove hence our *British Tarquin*: The latter being primarily consulted in that solemn Event, and chief Minister to that King, who secured to us a RACE to reign over us, rather exercising the Valour, Moderation, and Virtue of *Roman* Consuls, than imperious Kings. But why dwell I on these, since, as an Author has observed, your illustrious Forefathers, and all your eminent Relations, have been ever Patrons of Wit and Arms, and leading in the Race of Glory.

Your Female Predecessors have been also illustrious in their several Ages.

The Duchess of *Northumberland* was the greatest Example in Fortitude of Mind in Adversity, and of modest Virtue; and whose Wisdom, Care, and Prudence, restored her overthrown House, even in a Reign of Cruelty and Tyranny.

The Countess of *Suffex*, from her private Fortune, made a very ample Provision for the Support of Learning and true Religion, and devoted even her Plate, and Ornaments, to those pious Ends.

The Lady *Pembroke* had that Judgment and Learning, as to be little less famous, than her  
b renowned



## DEDICATION.

renowned Brother, the Author of the *Arcadia*,  
and which he dedicated to her Name and Virtues.

Lady *Sunderland* is celebrated for her match-  
less Beauty, Virtue, and excellent Endowments,  
who supported the Royal Clergy in her Neigh-  
bourhood, in the Times of Anarchy and Con-  
fusion. So likewise, it is verified in your Descent,  
by your unblemished Merits, That Greatness of  
Soul and Genius are inherent in your Blood and  
Lineage.

As I apprehend, that an Attempt to celebrate  
your Polite Demeanour, and Virtuous Accom-  
plishments, in this Publick Manner, may be dis-  
agreeable to you, I shall therefore only beg your  
Permission, to subscribe myself,

*Your most Obedient,*

*and most Devoted*

*Humble Servant,*

ARTHUR COLLINS.



---

---

T H E  
P R E F A C E.

**F**ORMER Editors of State Papers, having said so much of the Uses, to which they may be applied by the Readers of History, and all agreeing, That they are the most proper Means of conveying down to Posterity just and authentick Accounts of the Transactions to which they relate. I shall make no Apology for my Undertaking, but proceed to give some Account of the Collection before me.

*THE* Title Page will inform the Publick, that these valuable Political Remains belonging to the SYDNEY Family, were selected out of the Manuscript Repository at Penshurst, and his Majesty's Paper Office at Whitehall: But it may be necessary to premise a few Words, concerning the Persons to whom we are obliged for them, and the Nature of their Correspondences; from whence the Reader will judge, what Information, or Amusement, he may expect to find in the Work itself.

SIR Henry Sydney enjoyed the most distinguished Employments in Ireland, in the Reigns of Queen Mary, and Queen Elizabeth: And our Historians agree, that he first civilized the Irish, by bringing them under Obedience to the Laws of England. The Progress he made through the whole Kingdom, at four several Times, is very judiciously and exactly related in his Letters to Queen Elizabeth, and the Lords of the Council; which shew the lamentable and disorderly State, that the Natives then laboured under from their Tenures, barbarous Customs, want of Commerce, &c. as well as the Difficulties he surmounted in making any Sort of Reformation amongst them. They are the only Accounts of the Affairs of Ireland during that Time, which can be depended upon; and the Prudence and Vigour in Government, the Justness of Observation, and the clear and manly Sense, which appear through the whole Course of Sir Henry Sydney's Dispatches, are sufficient Reasons for not suffering them to lie concealed any longer in the dusty Corner of a Library.

SIR Philip Sydney, his Son, is allowed to be as accomplished a Character, as this Nation, or, perhaps, any foreign one, ever produced. It is to be wished more of his Letters were preserved; but the few which Time hath spared us, will, for that Reason, be considered, as the greater Rarities. His  
Defence



## The P R E F A C E.

*Defence of his Uncle the Earl of Leicester, in Answer to Parsons's Commonwealth, is now first printed from the Original MS.*

*SIR Robert Sydney, the younger Brother, copied after so shining a Pattern; and by his Virtues and Services, obtained the Title and Honours of Earl of Leicester. As he was curious in laying out for Intelligence of the remarkable Events of his Time, he kept a Correspondence with Rowland White, the Post-Master, a notable busy Man, who constantly writ over to him at Flushing (when he was Resident there as Governor) the News and Intrigues of the Court; and being employed by him in Commissions to his noble Relations, and the Ministers, was entrusted by them, with several secret Passages, for the Information of his Patron. To give one Instance out of many, I shall only add, that in Mr. White's Letters, are contained several Particulars, hitherto passed over in Silence, by the Historians, of the Earl of Essex's Favour, Troubles, and Fall.*

*W H E N Sir Robert Sydney was in England, Sir William Browne, Deputy-Governor of Flushing, in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, and Sir John Throgmorton, in the Reign of King James, constantly transmitted to him the principal Transactions in the Netherlands, particularly those of the Army; as did also Prince Maurice, and some other of the Generals. Under this Correspondence, the Reader will find an exact Journal of the famous Siege of Ostend, which held out four Years against the Flower of the Spanish Forces in Flanders. There is also an Account of the Circumstances relating to the Delivery of the Cautionary Towns to the States General, which is looked upon, as not the smallest Error, of the weak Administration of James the First.*

*ROBERT, the second Earl of Leicester, was possessed of fine natural Talents, and a larger Share of Learning, than usually falls to Persons of his Rank. His Character may be found in Clarendon, 8vo, Vol. 3. Page 201. He was much employed in Business during the earlier Part of his Life, and carefully preserved Copies of his own Letters, relative to the Publick, and of such as were sent him of a publick Nature. He held a close Correspondence with the most considerable Persons of the Court of King Charles the First, particularly, with his Lady's Brothers, Algernon Earl of Northumberland, Lord High Admiral of England, and Henry Lord Percy of Alnwick, Master of the Horse to King Charles the Second, when Prince of Wales, and afterwards his Chamberlain, and Favourite to the Queen Mother.*

*T H E R E subsisted the strictest Friendship between these three Noblemen, to their Deaths: And the two last imparted to the Earl of Leicester, the private Intrigues of the Court, from 1636, to the Breaking out of the Civil Wars.*

**T H E R E**



## The P A R T I A L C O L L E C T I O N

*THERE are two Volumes of his Lordship's Letters, with the Instructions and Answers from the King, and Secretaries of State, in his Majesty's Paper Office, which have been examined, and such of them transcribed, as were wanting of what he had laid up at Penshurst, to which I have in proper Places referred.*

*AS the Reader may probably have expected to find in the Earl of Leicester's Dispatches, more particular Accounts of the Occurrences of the French Court, and of the great Events of the War, then carrying on against the House of Austria, by the enterprising Genius of Cardinal Richlieu, it may be right to apprise him, that my Lord left those Subjects to Augier, his Secretary; and that the Editor has seen in the Paper Office, several Volumes of that Agent's Letters, who never failed transmitting to the Secretaries of State, the News, and publick Relations of Paris. But the Reader may consult the general Histories of Lewis the Thirteenth's Reign upon them, as Le Vaffor, Le Clerc's Life of Richlieu, Pere Bougeant, Grotii Epistolæ, &c.*

*MY Lords principal Business, was the Management of a Treaty for Recovery of the Palatinate, which, I shall say the less of, as it is handled at large in his Dispatches; but cannot help observing, that though it be a Transaction of Consequence, none of our Historians mention it; neither is the Treaty itself to be found in Rymer. Another Point, and that of no small Delicacy, was, to watch over the Motions of the French Court, with Regard to Scotland, wherein his Lordship acquitted himself with great Vigilance and Address.*

*HIS Son, the Lord Viscount Lisle, being of the Council of State, and of the House of Commons, his Letters disclose some material Passages in both those Assemblies; but of these few are printed, our Collection swelling to a greater Bulk; than could be comprised in two Volumes.*

*THE Letters of Algernon Sydney, contain Accounts of his Negotiation, as a Mediator between Sweden and Denmark, wherein the Policy and Views of the Northern Crowns are laid open in a masterly Manner. Whilst he was on that Ambassy, the Restoration of Charles the Second was carrying on; and when it afterwards took Place, his Friends prevailed on him to forsake his Native Country, till his Principles and Attachments to the Commonwealth might not be remembered with such Resentment, as he had too much Reason to expect. He left his Affairs in England in a very entangled Condition, whereby he was a great Sufferer in his private Fortune, whereof he complains in his Letters to the Earl of Leicester his Father; yet with a Spirit that shews a manly Contempt of worldly Advantages. His Travels through Germany and France to Rome, are interspersed with many Historical Passages, Characters, and Descriptions, expressed with so much Life and Candour, as to merit both Attention and Belief.*



## The P R E F A C E.

*THE Exactness of the Errata, will, I hope, in some Degree, reconcile my Readers to the Incorrectness of the Printer; many of the Sheets being work'd off at the Press, when I was busied in completing this Collection.*

*I am willing to flatter myself, that the Notes which are occasionally subjoined to the Bottom of the Page, may be thought of Use, either in bringing the Reader a little better acquainted with the Family, or Character, of some Person, who makes a Figure in the Correspondences, or in adding a Supplemental Fact, to illustrate, or point out more fully, some Passage in the Collection.*

*I will not deny, that some Things have crept into it, which might, on a second Review, been omitted; but unavoidable Accidents have already so long delayed the Publication of the Work, that I was afraid of trespassing further on the Patience of my Subscribers. And, therefore (to borrow a Phrase from the Ghost in Hamlet) Am now come Abroad, to render up my Account, with all my Imperfections on my Head.*

May 8, 1746.

A. C.

---

A LIST



# A L I S T O F T H E S U B S C R I B E R S.

**T**H E Right Hon. Charles Earl of Ailebury. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Charles Earl of Arran.  
The Right Hon. William, late Lord Abergeenny.  
Dr. Adams, Master of Sydney College in Cambridge for the Library.

His Grace Henry Duke of Beaufort. *Large Paper.*  
Her Grace the Duchess of Bolton.  
The Right Hon. Richard Earl of Burlington. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. William Earl of Bath. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Rev. Joseph Lord Bishop of Bristol.  
The Right Hon. Francis Lord Brook. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Allen Lord Bathurst. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Lord Viscount Bateman.  
The Right Hon. Charles Lord Baltimore.  
The Hon. Thomas Lennard Barrett, Esq;  
Philip Bennet, of Whitcombe, in Com. Somerset, Esq; Member of Parliament for Bath.  
Edmund Bull, of Poland-Street, Esq; *Large Paper.*  
John Bonnell, Esq; *Large Paper.*  
John Brown, Esq;  
The Rev. Mr. John Butler, of Wateringbury, in Kent.  
The Rev. Mr. Birch.

His Royal Highness William Duke of Cumberland. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Philip Earl of Chesterfield, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Charles Lord Cadogan.  
Sir Kendrick Clayton, of Flower, near Godstone, in Com. Surry, Bart.  
Thomas Carew, of Crocomb, in Com. Somerset, Esq;  
James Cocks, Esq; Member of Parliament for Ryegate.

His Grace William Duke of Devonshire.  
His Grace Lionel Duke of Dorset.  
The Right Hon. William Earl of Dartmouth.

The Right Hon. Thomas late Lord Viscount Deerhurst.  
Benjamin Dry, of Sevenoak, in Kent, Esq;  
Captain William Daffy. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. John Earl of Egmont.  
The Rev. Mr. Exton.

The Right Hon. Benjamin Earl Fitz-Walter.  
The Right Hon. William Earl Fitz-William. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Thomas Lord Viscount Fauconberg.  
The Right Hon. Thomas Lord Foley.  
Thomas Fairfax, of Newton-Kyme, in Com. Ebor, Esq;

The Right Hon. Francis Earl of Godolphin.  
The Right Hon. John Earl of Granville. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. John Lord Gower. *Large Paper.*  
The Lady Elizabeth Germain. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Algernon Earl of Hertford, only Son and Heir-apparent of his Grace Charles Duke of Somerset. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Charles Earl of Halifax. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. William Earl of Harrington. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. the Lord Archibald Hamilton.  
Robert Hucks, Esq; deceased. *Large Paper.*  
James Hannot, of Rey-House, in Essex, Esq;  
Mr. George Holmes, Deputy Keeper of the Records in the Tower.  
Edward Horn, Esq;

The Hon. Mrs. Knight.  
Nigell Kingscote, Esq;

The Right Hon. Henry Earl of Lincoln. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Thomas Earl of Leicester. *Large Paper.*  
The Right Hon. Henry Viscount Lonsdale. *Large Paper.*

James



## A LIST of the SUBSCRIBERS.

James Lane, Esq; Richmond Herald.

His Grace Charles Duke of Marlborough. *One Large Paper, and two Small Paper.*

His Grace John Duke of Montagu. *Large Paper.*

His Grace William Duke of Manchester. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. George Earl of Macclesfield.

The Right Hon. Thomas Earl of Malton.

The Right Hon. James Earl of Morton.

The Right Hon. Charles Earl of Middlesex, Son and Heir-apparent of his Grace the Duke of Dorset. *Large Paper.*

George Montagu, Esq;

Edward Medley, junior, of Friston, in Com. Suffex, Esq; *Large Paper.*

Nicholas Mann, Esq; Master of the Charter-House.

His Grace Thomas Holles Pelham Duke of Newcastle. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. James Earl of Northampton. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Francis Lord North and Guilford.

Mr. John Nickolls, junior, Fellow of the Royal Society.

The Right Hon. Henrietta Cavendish Holles Countess Dowager of Oxford. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Robert late Earl of Orford. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. the Countess of Orford. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. John Earl of Orrery. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Charles Lord Ossulstone, Son and Heir apparent of the Earl of Tankerville.

The Right Hon. Arthur Onslow, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons. *Large Paper.*

Mr. William Oldys.

His Grace William Duke of Portland.

The Right Hon. John Earl of Portsmouth. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. John Lord Viscount Percival.

The Right Hon. Henry Pelham, Esq; Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Sir Walter Parker of Ratton in Com. Suffex, Bart.

William Perry, of Penshurst Place in Kent, Esq; *One Large Paper, two Small Paper.*

William Pitt, Esq; Paymaster General of his Majesty's Forces.

John Plumtree, Esq;

Jacob Preston Esq;

Mr. Thomas Preston.

His Grace Charles Duke of Richmond. *Large Paper.*

His Grace John Duke of Rutland, *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. William Henry, Earl of Rochford. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Sir John Rushout, Bart. John Roberts, Esq;

The Right Hon. John Earl of Sandwich.

The Right Hon. Anthony Earl of Shaftsbury. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Samuel Lord Sandys. *Large Paper.*

The Right Hon. Edward Southwell, Esq; Principal Secretary of State for Ireland.

Sir Hugh Smithson, Bart. one of the Knights of the Shire for Middlesex. *Large Paper.*

The Hon. Charles Stanhope, Esq;

Sir Brownlow Sherrard, Bart. *Large Paper.*

John Scrope, Esq; joint Secretary of the Treasury.

Andrew Stone, Esq;

Sidney Stafford Smythe, Esq;

Thomas Sidney, Esq;

The Rev. Mr. Scottow, President of Bennet's College in Cambridge.

The Rev. Mr. Stevens.

The Right Hon. Pattee Viscount Torrington. *Large Paper.*

The Hon. Thomas Townshend, Esq;

Sir Peter Thompson, Knt.

John Temple, of Moor Park, in Com. Surry, Esq;

Dr. Thorp, of Rochester, M. D.

The Reverend Mr. Edward Tart, Master of the Leicester Hospital in Warwick.

The Right Rev. Isaac Lord Bishop of Worcester.

The Right Hon. Horatio Walpole, Esq;

The Hon. Edward Wortley Montagu, Esq; Uncle to the Earl of Sandwich.

Sir Thomas Wilson, of Uckfield in Com. Suffex, Bart.

Sir Charles Wyndham, of Orchard, in Com. Somers, Bart. *Large Paper.*

Sir Thomas Webster, of Battle-Abby in Suffex, Bart. *Large Paper.*

Browne Willis, of Waddon Hall, in Com. Bucks, Esq;

James West, Esq; joint Secretary of the Treasury.

Matthew Wife, of the Priory in Warwick, Esq;

Lee Warner of Walsingham Abby, in Norfolk, Esq;

James Wittewronge, of Rothamstead, in Com. Hertford, Esq;

John Walsh, Esq;

John Warburton, Esq; Somerset-Herald.

The Reverend Mr. Williams, Rector of Penshurst in Kent.

Henry Weston, Gent.

The Hon. Philip Yorke, Esq; Son and Heir apparent of Philip Lord Hardwick, Lord High Chancellor of Great-Britain. *Large Paper.*

John Yate, Esq;

The Right Hon. Charles Lord Cadogan.

Sir Kenneth Clayton, of Flower, near Godstone, in Com. Surry, Bart.

Thomas Grew, of Croydon, in Com. Somers, Esq;

James Cocks, Esq; Member of Parliament for

THE

His Grace William Duke of Devonshire.

His Grace Lionel Duke of Dorset.

The Right Hon. William Earl of Dartmouth.



THE  
C O N T E N T S  
OF THE  
F I R S T V O L U M E.

|                                                                                            | Page            |                                                                                                                                                                                  | Page              |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|
| <b>M</b> EMOIRS of the Lives and Ac-<br>tions of the Sidneys, and their<br>noble Ancestors | 1               | Of Ambrose Dudley, <i>Earl of Warwick,</i><br><i>Lord Lisle, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                         | 36 ending 42      |
| Of Bryan, <i>Baron Lisle</i>                                                               | 1 ending 3      | Of the Countess of Warwick                                                                                                                                                       | 42 ending 44      |
| Of Robert, <i>Baron Lisle</i>                                                              | 3               | Of Robert Dudley, <i>Earl of Leicester,</i><br><i>the Favourite of Queen Eliz. with Sir</i><br><i>Philip Sydney's Defence of the said</i><br><i>Earl of Leicester</i>            | 44 ending 76      |
| Of Warine, <i>Baron Lisle</i>                                                              | 3 ending 5      | Of Sir William Sydney, <i>Knight Ban-</i><br><i>neret, Chamberlain and Steward to</i><br><i>King Edward the VI</i>                                                               | 76 ending 82      |
| Of Gerard, <i>Baron Lisle</i>                                                              | 5 ending 7      | Of Sir Henry Sydney, <i>Knight of the</i><br><i>Garter, Lord Deputy of Ireland, and</i><br><i>Lord President of Wales, &amp;c.</i>                                               | 82<br>ending 97   |
| Of Warine, <i>Baron Lisle</i>                                                              | 8, 9            | Of the famous Sir Philip Sydney                                                                                                                                                  | 98<br>ending 113  |
| Of Thomas, <i>Lord Berkley</i>                                                             | 9               | Of Sir Robert Sydney, <i>Lord Viscount</i><br><i>Lisle, and Earl of Leicester, Lord</i><br><i>Governour of Flushing, and Lord</i><br><i>Chamberlain, &amp;c.</i>                 | 113 ending 120    |
| Of Richard Beauchamp, <i>Earl of War-</i><br><i>wick</i>                                   | 9, 10           | Of Robert Sydney, <i>2d Earl of Leice-</i><br><i>ster, &amp;c. Ambassador to the Kings of</i><br><i>Denmark and of France, and Lord</i><br><i>Lieutenant of Ireland, &amp;c.</i> | 120<br>ending 147 |
| Of John Talbot, <i>Earl of Shrewsbury</i>                                                  | 10, 11          | Of Philip, <i>3d Earl of Leicester, Lord</i><br><i>Lieutenant of Ireland</i>                                                                                                     | 148, 149          |
| Of John Talbot, <i>Lord Viscount Lisle</i>                                                 | 11, 12          | Of the Honourable Col. Algernon Sydney                                                                                                                                           | 149 ending 161    |
| Of Thomas Talbot, <i>Lord Viscount Lisle</i>                                               | 12              | Of Henry Sidney, <i>Earl of Romney,</i><br><i>Secretary of State to King William III,</i><br><i>Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, Master</i><br><i>General</i>                         | a                 |
| Of Edward Grey, <i>Lord Viscount Lisle</i>                                                 | 12 ending 15    |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of John Grey, <i>Lord Viscount Lisle</i>                                                   | 15, 16          |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of Edmund Dudley, <i>Esq; of the Privy</i><br><i>Council to King Henry VII</i>             | 16 ending 18    |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of John Dudley, <i>Duke of Northumber-</i><br><i>land, Earl of Warwick, &amp;c.</i>        | 18<br>ending 29 |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of his Brother, Sir Andrew Dudley                                                          | 29, 30          |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of John Dudley, <i>Earl of Warwick</i>                                                     | 31              |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |
| Of the Dutches of Northumberland                                                           | 32<br>ending 36 |                                                                                                                                                                                  |                   |



|                                                                                                                                        | Page           |                                                                    | Page |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| <i>General of the Ordnance, Groom of the Stole, and first Gentleman of the Bedchamber to his said Majesty, &amp;c. &amp;c. &amp;c.</i> | 161 ending 175 | <i>Of John, 6th Earl of Leicester</i>                              | 178  |
| <i>Of Robert, 4th E. of Leicest.</i>                                                                                                   | 176, 177       | <i>Of Col. Thomas Sidney</i>                                       | 178  |
| <i>Of Philip, 5th Earl of Leicester</i>                                                                                                | 177, 178       | <i>Of Joceline, 7th and last Earl of Leicester, of the Sidneys</i> | 180  |
|                                                                                                                                        |                | <i>A general Index of Names in the Memoirs, &amp;c.</i>            | 181  |

## Letters and Memorials of State.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | Page       |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | Page         |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| <i>Collections made by Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the Garter, Lord President of the Marches of Wales. Touching the Antiquity, Authoritie and Jurisdiction of the Lord President and Councill of the Marches of Wales; and touching the Authority of the Lord President</i> | 1 ending 4 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester; from Killmayneham, 28 June, 1566</i>                                                                                                                                                                         | 14           |
| <i>Remembrances of principal Matters, in the Instruccions sent down with the Prynces Mary, for Proufs of the Causes and Lymitts assigned to the Counsaill in the Marches of Wales</i>                                                                                       | 4          | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Robert, Earl of Leicester; from Drogheda, xixth of August, 1566</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | 15           |
| <i>An Account of what Money was annually allowed to the Cownsell and Commissioners in the Marches of Wales, An. 3 Edw. VI. With the Names of the Commissioners, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                 | 5          | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth; from Killmayneham, xxth of April, 1567; with an Account of his Journey through the Province of Munster, the State of the Country and Inhabitants, his Proceedings there, and Characters of the principal Persons, &amp;c.</i> | 18 ending 31 |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydneys Letter to the Lords and others of the Queens Highness (Queen Mary) most honourable Privie Counsaill; from Dublin, 14 Apr. 1559</i>                                                                                                                     | 6          | <i>Queen Elizabeth, for Sir George Stanley, sent to Sir Henry Sydney, 12 August, 1567</i>                                                                                                                                                                             | 31           |
| <i>Queen Elizabeth to Sir Henry Sydney, on the Quarel between Thomas, Earl of Ormond, and the Earl of Desmond, An. 1565</i>                                                                                                                                                 | 7          | <i>Sir Warham Sent Leger, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Cork, 14 Feb. 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                            | 32           |
| <i>Copy of the Orders, for putting an End to the Differences between the Erls of Ormond and Desmond, sent by Secretary Cecil to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland, 22 Nov. 1565, in the Omissions</i>                                                                | 387        | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Edward Clinton, Earl of Lincoln, Lord High Admiral of England; from Dublin, ... March, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                | 33           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to his Son Philip Sydney, at School at Shrewsbury, An. 1566, 9 Eliz. then being of the Age of xii Years, with Instructions, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                 | 8          | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Duke of Feria in Spain; from the Court at Greenwich, Last of Apr. 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                 | 34           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland, to Mr. Secretary Cecil; from Dublin, 8th of April, 1566</i>                                                                                                                                                                    | 9          | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester; from Salloppe, 8 August, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | 34           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the same; from Killmayneham, 9th of June, 1566</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 11         | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Cecil; from Salloppe, 8 August, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                         | 35           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |            | <i>Queen Elizabeth to the Earl of Argyle; a Copy whereof was sent to Sir Henry Sydney; from Elton, 14 August, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                | 36           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |            | <i>The Earl of Argyle's Answer to Queen Elizabeth, 24 August, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                | 36           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Cecil, viiith of Nov. 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                   | 37           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same; from Dublin, 14 Nov. 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 38           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |            | <i>Sir</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            |              |



# The CONTENTS.

iii

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | Page         |                                                                                                                                                                                                 | Page         |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same; from Dublin, 17 Nov. 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                                   | 39           | <i>1 Decemb. 1574</i>                                                                                                                                                                           | 67           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same; from Maryboroughe, Last of November, 1568</i>                                                                                                                                                                   | 40           | <i>The Earl of Essex's Letter, in Answer to her Majesties, jointly addressed to the Lord Deputy, and him; from Dublin, Last of March, 1575</i>                                                  | 67           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same; from Dublin, xviii of October, 1569</i>                                                                                                                                                                         | 41           | <i>The Earl of Essex to the Lords of the Council; from Dublin, 29 March, 1575</i>                                                                                                               | 69           |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same; from Dublin, 24 Feb. 1569</i>                                                                                                                                                                                   | 43           | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, Secretary of State, to Sir Henry Sydney; from London, 15 May, 1575</i>                                                                                               | 70           |
| <i>Orders taken by the Queenes moost excellent Majestie, with the Advise of her Councell, in the Causes of the Erles of Ormond and Desmond; and by hir Majeste, in Writyng, declared and notesyed to both the Erles; dated 23 December, 1565</i> | 44 ending 47 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth; from Drogheda, 28 Sept. 1575</i>                                                                                                                        | 71           |
| <i>The Submission of the Earl of Ormond</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                      | 47           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to William Cecill, Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer; from Drogheda, 28 Sept. 1575</i>                                                                                     | 72           |
| <i>The Submission of the Earl of Desmond to the Queens most excellent Majesty</i>                                                                                                                                                                | 48           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of her Majesty's Council; from Drogheda, 28 Sept. 1575</i>                                                                                                     | 72           |
| <i>Formular of Instructions and Orders, for the Establisbing of a Councell in Munster, with a Lord President to governe the same, signed by Queen Elizabeth and Secretary Cecill, 14 December, 1570</i>                                          | 48 ending 59 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council; from Termondfacan, 1st of October, 1575</i>                                                                                                    | 74           |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from his House at Odiam, 20 Oct. 1571, in the Omissions</i>                                                                                                                                       | 388          | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from his House at Odiam, 20 Oct. 1575</i>                                                                                                        | 74           |
| <i>An Order to the Sheriff, and Justices of the Peace, of the County of Monmouth, at Ludlow, 9 March, 15 Eliz. 1572, by Sir Henry Sydney</i>                                                                                                     | 59           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council, with an Account of his Journey into several Parts of Ireland, with the State thereof, &amp;c. from Mellefount, near Drogheda, 15 Nov. 1575</i> | 75 ending 80 |
| <i>Order concerning the County of Worcester, by the Lords of the Privy Council; from Hampton Court, 24 Feb. 1573</i>                                                                                                                             | 60           | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from Windsor, 19 December, 1575, in the Omissions</i>                                                                                            | 389          |
| <i>Submission of Robert Wilde, of the Cittie of Worcester, Gent. to the Lords of the Council, Greenwich, 14 March, 1573</i>                                                                                                                      | 61           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council, with a further Account of his Progress; from Waterford, 16 Decemb. 1575</i>                                                                    | 81 ending 85 |
| <i>Edward Waterhouse, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from Court, 17 Decemb. 1573</i>                                                                                                                                                                  | 61           | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney, with Propositions for the Charges of Ireland; from Hampton Court, 28 Jan. 1575</i>                                                               | 85 ending 88 |
| <i>Queen Eliz. to Sir William Fitz-William, Lord Deputy of Ireland, and to the Earl of Essex; from Richmond, 15 March, 1574</i>                                                                                                                  | 63 ending 66 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester; from Dundalk, 4th of February, 1576</i>                                                                                                | 88           |
| <i>Thomas Sackvil, Lord Buckhurst, to Sir Henry Sydney, concerning Knoll, 23 May, 1574</i>                                                                                                                                                       | 66           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council, with a Continuation of his Journey through Ireland; from Lymericke, 27 Feb. 1575</i>                                                           | 89 ending 97 |
| <i>Lady Mary Sydney to Edmond Molli-neux, Esq; Secretary to Sir Henry Sydney; from Chiswyke, 1st of Sept. 1574</i>                                                                                                                               | 66           | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to William Cecill, Lord Burghley; from Galwaye, ... March, 1575</i>                                                                                                         | 98           |
| <i>Matthew, Archbishop of Canterbury, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Lamhith,</i>                                                                                                                                                                     |              | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Lords of the Council in Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England; from the Castle of Athlone, ... March, 1575</i>                                           | 99           |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |              | Thomas,                                                                                                                                                                                         |              |



|                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | Page           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | Page           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| Thomas, <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Hen. Sydney ; from Waterford, 8 April, 1576                                                                                                                                  | 100            | Council ; from Dublin, 15 August, 1576,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 125            |
| Tho. <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to the same ; from Kilkenny, 14th of April, 1576                                                                                                                                       | 101            | Tho. <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Henry Sydney ; from Carricke, 20 August, 1576,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | 126            |
| Tho. <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to the same ; from Kilkenny, 17th of April, 1576                                                                                                                                       | 101            | Tho. <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Henry Sydney ; from Karick, Last of August, 1576,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 127            |
| Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council, with an Account of his Journey through Connaught, the last of the 4 Provinces of Ireland, with the State thereof, &c. from the Castle of Dublin, 28th of April, 1576, | 102 ending 110 | Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth ; from the Castle of Athlone, 4th Sept. 1576,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | ib.            |
| Sir Henry Sydney to Sir Francis Walsyngham ; from Dublin, 28th of April, 1576                                                                                                                                       | 110            | Tho. <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Henry Sydney ; from Kilkenny, 6th of Sept. 1576,                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              | 128            |
| Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth, with an Account of the State of Ireland ; from the Castle of Dublin, 28th of April, 1576,                                                                                      | 112 ending 114 | Sir Henry Sydney, to Thomas <i>Earl of Ormond</i> ; from Galway, 22 Sept. 1576, in the Omissions                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 390            |
| The Dutcheß of Feria, in Spain, to her Vncle, Sir Henry Sydney ; from Madrid, 12th of June, 1576,                                                                                                                   | 114            | Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council ; from Galway, 20 Sept. 1576                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 128            |
| Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council ; from Dublin, 16 June, 1576,                                                                                                                                          | 114 ending 118 | Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lord of Upper Offory, from Galway, 22 Sept. 1576, in the Omissions                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 391            |
| Thomas, <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Henry Sydney ; from Kilkenny, 21 June, 1576,                                                                                                                                 | 118            | Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney ; from the Court at Reading, 29 Sept. 1576                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 391            |
| Thomas, <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to the same, 28th of June, 1576,                                                                                                                                                    | 118            | The Case of Thomas Erle of Ormond and Offorie, tutchinge Prise Wynes of Irelande ; with the Opinion of the Attorney General, and Sollicitor General in England, on the said Case, towching the Prise Wynes of Londoners                                                                                                           | 130 ending 134 |
| Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council ; from the Castle of Athlone, 9th of July, 1576,                                                                                                                       | 119 ending 122 | The Names of such as the Erle of Ormond, and Offorie, at his Going into England, appointed to take Charge of the Countie of Kilkennie, in his Absence. With Instructions, tutching the Charge given them, and others ; dated from Denmore, Last Sept. 1576,                                                                       | 134            |
| The Copy of the Earl of Clanrickard's Submission                                                                                                                                                                    | 122            | Orders concerning the Marches of Wales. Dated 1 Oct. 19 Eliz. 1576, with the Names of the severall Gentlemen, they were directed to, in the Counties of Salop, Worcester, Gloucester, Monmouth, Hereford, Glamorgan, Radnor, Flint, Denbigh, Montgomery, Merioneth, Canervon, Anglezey, Cardigan, Pembrok, Carmarthen, and Brecon | 135 ending 140 |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney ; from St. James's, 17 July, 1576,                                                                                                                                       | 123            | Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham, concerning the Reports of the Earl of Essex's being poisoned ; with an Account of his Sicknes, and Death ; from Dublin, 20th of October, 1576                                                                                                                                      | 140 ending 142 |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Edward Waterhouse, Esq; Secretary of Ireland ; from St. James's, 17 July, 1576,                                                                                                           | 124            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney ; from St. James's, 20th of July, 1576,                                                                                                                                  | 124            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to the same ; from Whytehawle, 24 July, 1576                                                                                                                                                 | 124            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                |
| Thomas, <i>Earl of Ormond</i> , to Sir Henry Sydney ; from Dorow, 13 August, 1576,                                                                                                                                  | 125            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                |
| Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the                                                                                                                                                                                |                |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                |



# The CONTENTS.

|                                                                                                                                                                        | Page           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | Page           |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham; from Dublin, 28 Oct. 1576</i>                                                                                        | 142            | <i>the Marches of Wales, An. 1576 170 ending 177</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 177            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council, with his Opinion for Reformation of the Disorders in the Marches of Wales; dated 12th November, 1576</i>             | 143 ending 146 | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Leycester House, 8th April, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 177            |
| <i>A Memoriall sent from Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland</i>                                                                       | 146            | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to the same; from his House in London, 18 Aprill, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 177            |
| <i>Thomas Earl of Ormond, to Sir Francis Walsyngham, 12 Nov. 1576,</i>                                                                                                 | 147            | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to his Cousen Edward Moore; from Leicester House, Aprill, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   | 178            |
| <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney, concerning the Burial of the Earl of Essex, his Fortunes and Family, and the young Earl; from Chartly, 14 Nov. 1576</i> | 147            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council; from Kilmayneham, 15 May, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 178 ending 180 |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council; from Tryme, 28 Nov. 1576</i>                                                                                         | 148            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth, in Answer to Complaints against him; from Kilmayneham, 2 May, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 180 ending 185 |
| <i>Thomas Earl of Ormond, to Sir Henry Sydney; 9th Jan. 1576</i>                                                                                                       | 149            | <i>Instructions and Memorials, given by Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the most Noble Order, and Deputye of Ireland, &amp;c. to Mr. Edward Waterhowse, being sent to her Majestie, and the Lords, for the State and Cases of this Realme; the xxth of May, 1577.</i>                                                                                                                                               | 185 ending 189 |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council, giving an Account of his Proceedings against the Rebels 149 ending 156</i>                                           | 156            | <i>A Declaration howe, and in what Manner the Town of the Newrie, in the Realme of Ireland, maye be fortified by the Queenes Majestie, without her Highnes Charge, by the Trayvell of Sir Nicholas Bagenall, her Highnes Marshall of Ireland, to Thadvancement and Establishment of the peassible Government of the North Parts of the Realme. With Sir Henry Sydneys Remarks; at Kilmayneham, 21 May, 1577</i> | 189            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham; from Dublin, 1576</i>                                                                                                | 156 ending 159 | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from London, 1 Junii, 1577; in Answer to the Instructions given him, to the Queen, the Lords of the Council, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         | 191 ending 193 |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the same; from Melefont, 30th of Jan. 1576</i>                                                                                                 | 159            | <i>Sir Francis Walsingham to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Greenwich, the xth of June, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 193            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council; from the Newrye, 12 Feb. 1576</i>                                                                                    | 160            | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney, with a further Account of his Proceedings at Court, Sir Philip Sydney, &amp;c.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | 193            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth; from the Newrye, 12 Feb. 1576,</i>                                                                                            | 160            | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Greenwich, 11th June, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 194            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham; from Dublin, 1576</i>                                                                                                | 161            | <i>James, Lord Regent of Scotland, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Edinburgh, the xx Day of June, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | 195            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth; from Dublin, March, 1576</i>                                                                                                  | 162            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council; from Dublin, March, 1576</i>                                                                                         | 163            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to his Son Sir Philip Sydney; from Dublin, March 1576</i>                                                                                         | 163            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council; from Dublin, 17 March, 1576</i>                                                                                      | 164 ending 168 |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |
| <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney, from Court; 168 ending 170</i>                                                                                          | 170            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |
| <i>Orders set down by the Queenes moste excellent Majestie; with the Advice of her Privie Counsell, for the Direction and Reformation of her Highnes Courte, in</i>    |                |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                |



|                                                                                                                                                         | Page           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | Page           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council in Ireland, to the Council in England; from Dublin, 20th of June, 1577,</i>                                        | 195 ending 197 | <i>Wales; from Dublin, 5th of Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | 213            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council in Ireland, to Queen Elizabeth; from Dublin, 20th June, 1577</i>                                                   | 197            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Sheriff, Justices of the Peace, and Commissioners of the Musters, in the County of Devon; from Dublin, 5th of Sept. 1577,</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 214            |
| <i>Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from Bristol, 26 June, 1577</i>                                                                          | 199            | <i>The Lords of the Council in Ireland, to Queen Elizabeth; from Dublin, 12 Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 214 ending 218 |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Richmond, 20th July, 1577</i>                                                         | 199            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth, sent by the Lord Chancellor, in Answer to the Complaints against his Government; from Dublin, 15th Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        | 218 ending 221 |
| <i>John Cales, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham, July 1577</i>                                                                                               | 200            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council in England, sent by the Lord Chancellor; from Dublin, 15th Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 221            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Edward Waterhous, Esq; from Castle-Diermot, 26 of July, 1577</i>                                                                | 201            | <i>Instruccions given by the Lord Deputie, and Counsell, to William Gerrard, Esq; Lord Chauncellor of this Realme, beinge expressely chosen and sent to her Majestie and the Lords from us, to entreate of Causes of this State, and to answer soch Accusacions and Objeccions as her Majestie and the Lords have bene informed of, by soch Persons, and there Agents, as have of late severed themselves from oure Fellowship, and opposed themselves against the Government; dated at Dublin, the xvth of September, 1577.</i> | 222 ending 225 |
| <i>Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from Bristol, 2d August, 1577</i>                                                                        | 201            | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Oatlands, 15 Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     | 225            |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Richmond, 9th of August, 1577</i>                                                     | 202            | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Oatlands, 15 Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | 226            |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to the same; from Richmond, of the same Date</i>                                                                             | 203            | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from Oatlands, 16 Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 227            |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to the Lord President of Munster; from Richmond, 20th August, 1577</i>                                                       | 203            | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Oatlands, 21 Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | 228            |
| <i>Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from London, 20th Aug. 1577</i>                                                                          | 204            | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from Windsor Castle, Last Sept. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          | 228            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth, in Answer to her Letter to him, on some Complaints against him; from the Newrie, Aug. 1577, 204 ending 206</i> | 204 ending 206 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council in England; from Dublin, 26 November, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 229            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of the Council in England; from the Newrie, August, 1577</i>                                                          | 206            | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth; from Dublin, 11th of December, 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | 231            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester; from the Newrie, August, 1577</i>                                                             | 207            | <i>Mr. Secretary Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney; from Hampton-Court, 18 Jan. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 233            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham; from the Newrie, August, 1577</i>                                                                     | 209            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | Mr.            |
| <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney; from London, 21 Aug. 1577</i>                                                                            | 209            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |                |
| <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to the same; from Court, 5th of Sept. 1577,</i>                                                                               | 211            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |                |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council in Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England; from Dublin, 5th of Sept. 1577</i>                             | 212            |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |                |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to the Vice President, and Council of the Marches of</i>                                                                           |                |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                  |                |



# The CONTENTS.

vii

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | Page              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | Page           |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to the same ;<br/>from Hampton-Court, 20 Jan. 1577</i>                                                                                                                               | 234               | <i>inge the Affayres of the State of this<br/>Realme ; dated the First of Maie, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                    | 254            |
| <i>The same, to the same ; from Hampton-<br/>Court, 21 Jan. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                             | 234               | <i>Sir Philip Sydney to Edmund Molli-<br/>neux, Esq; Secretary to his Father, as<br/>Lord Deputy ; from Court, Last of<br/>May, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                    | 256            |
| <i>The same, to the same ; from Hampton-<br/>Court, 4th Feb. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                            | 335               | <i>Edmund Mollineux, Esq; to Sir Philip<br/>Sydney, in Answer ; from Dublin<br/>First July, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                        | 256            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth ;<br/>from Dublin, 13th of Feb. 1577</i>                                                                                                                                  | 235 ending 238    | <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry<br/>Sydney ; from Greenwich, 2d June,<br/>1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                   | 256            |
| <i>Thomas Earl of Ormonds Demand, a-<br/>gainst Terrelagh Mac Brien, before<br/>Sir Henry Sydney</i>                                                                                                             | 238               | <i>Remembrauncies, geven by Sir Henry<br/>Sydney, Knight of the Order, &amp;c. and<br/>Lord Deputie of Ireland, to Thomas<br/>Snagg, Esq; her Majesties Attorney<br/>Generall of this Realme, for Thinges<br/>to be donne by hym at his Arryvall at<br/>the Court. Dated xi Junii, 1578</i> | 257            |
| <i>Edmund Mollineux, Esq; to the Arch<br/>Bishop of Dublin, with his Answer,<br/>16th Feb. 1577</i>                                                                                                              | 239               | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council in<br/>Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in<br/>England ; from Dublin, 14 June,<br/>1578</i>                                                                                                                                                        | 257 ending 260 |
| <i>Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry<br/>Sydney ; from London, 27th Feb.<br/>1577</i>                                                                                                                          | 240               | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Mayor of Bris-<br/>tol ; from Dublin, 14 June, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                          | 260            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the<br/>Council in England ; from Dublin . .<br/>Feb. 1577, giving an Account of his<br/>Expedition against the Rebels ;</i>                                                 | 240<br>ending 244 | <i>Memorials and Notes from Mr. Lodo-<br/>vicke Briskett, touching the State of<br/>the Realme, being sent by the Lord<br/>Deputie and Councell to the Courte ;<br/>dated from the Castell of Dublin, the<br/>xiiiith of June, 1578</i>                                                     | 261            |
| <i>Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to Sir Hen-<br/>ry Sydney ; from Greenwich, 24<br/>March, 1577</i>                                                                                                                   | 244               | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the<br/>Council in England ; from Dublin,<br/>21 June, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                         | 262            |
| <i>Thomas Wyllson, Esq; Secretary of State,<br/>to Sir Henry Sydney ; from the Court<br/>at Greenwich, 23 March, 1577</i>                                                                                        | 245               | <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the same ; from<br/>Dublin, 1 July, 1578 ;</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | 263 ending 265 |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to his Son Robert<br/>Sydney, after Earl of Leicester, from<br/>Baynards Castle in London, 25 March,<br/>1578</i>                                                                            | 246               | <i>Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry<br/>Sydney ; from London, 4 July, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                           | 265            |
| <i>Sir Philip Sydney, to his Father Sir<br/>Henry Sydney, 25 April, 1578,</i>                                                                                                                                    | 247               | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, to his Son Sir Philip<br/>Sydney ; 1st of August, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                             | 392            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney and the Council in<br/>Ireland, to Queen Elizabeth ; from<br/>Dublin, 20 April, 1578 ;</i>                                                                                                   | 248 ending<br>251 | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, and the Lords of the<br/>Council in Ireland, to the Lords of the<br/>Council in England ; from Dublin, 1st<br/>of August, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                     | 266            |
| <i>Sir Philip Sydney to Edward Water-<br/>howse, Esq; Secretary of Ireland ;<br/>from Court, 28 April, 1578</i>                                                                                                  | 389               | <i>The same to the same ; from Dublin, 12<br/>August, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                              | 267            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth,<br/>sent by Edward Waterhows, Esq;<br/>from Dublin, Last of April, 1578</i>                                                                                              | 251 ending 253    | <i>Sir Henry Sydney, &amp;c. to the Lords of<br/>the Council in England ; from Dub-<br/>lin, 24 August, 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | 268            |
| <i>Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the<br/>Council in England ; from Dublin,<br/>Last of April, 1578</i>                                                                                                        | 253               | <i>The same to the same ; from Dublin, 12<br/>Sept. 1578</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | 270            |
| <i>Instruccions geven by Sir Henry Sydney,<br/>Knight of the Order, &amp;c. and Lord<br/>Deputie of Ireland, to Mr. Edward<br/>Waterhows, being sent to her Ma-<br/>jestie and the Lords, for Matters touch-</i> |                   | <i>Lady Mary Sydney to Edmund Molli-<br/>neux,</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          |                |



|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      | Page           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                  | Page  |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|
| neux, Esq; from Chifwicke, 11 Oct. 1578                                                                                                                                                                                              | 271            | Sir Philip Sydney to Edmund Molyneux, Esq; from Bainards Castle, 10th April, 1581                                                                                                                                | 293   |
| Sir Henry Sydney to his Son Robert Sydney, after Earl of Leicester; from Ludlow Castle, 28 Oct. 1578,                                                                                                                                | 271            | Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from Court, 11th April, 1581                                                                                                                                         | 293   |
| Lady Mary Sydney to Edmund Molineux, Esq; dated Monday, 1578                                                                                                                                                                         | 272            | Edmund Molyneux, Esq; to Sir Philip Sydney; from Saloppe, 28 April, 1581                                                                                                                                         | ibid. |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Whytehall, 6 March, 1579                                                                                                                                                    | 273            | The King of Portugal to Sir Philip Sydney, translated from the Original from Tunis, 3 May, 1581                                                                                                                  | 294   |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from the Court at Nonfuch, 22 June, 1580                                                                                                                                                 | 273            | Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from Barnelmes, 21 June, 1581                                                                                                                                        | 295   |
| The Sheriff and Justices of the Peace of the County of Glamorgan to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord President of Wales, 8 July, 1580                                                                                                          | 274            | Certain special Notes to be imparted to Mr. Philippe Sydney, relating to his taking again the Government of Ireland, in the Hand-writing of Edmund Molineux, Esq; and signed by Sir Henry Sydney, 27 April, 1582 | 295   |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from Nonfuch, 8 July, 1580                                                                                                                                                               | 275            | Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Sackford, Master of the Requests; from Hereford, 6 June, 1582                                                                                                                            | 296   |
| The same to the same; from Oatlands, 9th August, 1580                                                                                                                                                                                | 276            | Sir Philip Sydney to Edmund Molyneux, Esq; from Hereford, 23 July, 1582                                                                                                                                          | ibid. |
| Sir Henry Sydneys Account of the State of Lands, &c. in Anglesey, between Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester, and Sir Richard Buckeley, 2d Sept. 1580                                                                                   | 276 ending 278 | Sir Philip Sidney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester; from Wilton, 16 Dec. 1582                                                                                                                                 | 392   |
| Sir Richard Buckley to Sir Henry Sydney; from Bewmarryes, 7 Sept. 1580                                                                                                                                                               | 278            | Sir Philip Sidney to William Lord Burghley, 27 Jan. 1582                                                                                                                                                         | 393   |
| Sir Henry Sydneys Answer; from Denbighe, 9 Sept. 1580                                                                                                                                                                                | 279            | Robert Sydney (after Earl of Leicester) to Edm. Molyneux, Esq; from Court, Sunday, 1582                                                                                                                          | 296   |
| Sir Henry Sydney to Arthur Lord Grey, Lord Deputy of Ireland, who requested of him how to proceed in his Government of that Kingdom; from Denbigh, 17 Decemb. 1580,                                                                  | 279 ending 283 | William Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer, to Sir Henry Sydney, concerning the Queens House at Oxford; from his House at Westminster, 26 June, 1583                                                             | 297   |
| Sir Philip Sydney to his Brother Robert Sydney (the first Earl of Leicester of that Name) when he was on his Travels; advising him what Circuit to take; how to behave; what Authors to read, &c. from Leicester House, 18 Oct. 1580 | 283 ending 285 | Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, to William Lord Burghley, 8 July, 1584                                                                                                                                         | ibid. |
| Robert, first Earl of Leicester, to his Father, Sir Henry Sydney; from Prague, the 1st of November, 1580                                                                                                                             | 285            | Sir Philip Sidney to Sir Edw. Stafford, Ambassador in France; from Court, 21 July, 1584                                                                                                                          | 298   |
| Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney; from Court, 24 February, 1580                                                                                                                                                            | 286            | Thomas Lord Buckehurst to Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester, on the Death of Sir Philip Sydney; from Court, 3d Nov. 1586                                                                                           | 393   |
| Sir Philip Sydney to Queen Elizabeth, An. 1580, perswading her not to marry with the Duke of Anjou                                                                                                                                   | 287 ending 292 | Sir William Borlas, Lieutenant Governor of Flushing, to Sir Robert Sydney, Lord Governor of Flushing; from Vlishinge, 15th of Sept. 1589                                                                         | 298   |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |                | Sir William Borlas to Sir Robert Sydney;                                                                                                                                                                         |       |



# The CONTENTS.

ix

|                                                                                                                                | Page         |                                                                                                                                            | Page         |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| ney; from Flushing, 22 Nov. 1589                                                                                               | 394          | Sydney; from Windsor, 16 Oct. 1590                                                                                                         | 312          |
| <i>The same to the same; from Flushing, 3d Feb. 1589</i>                                                                       | <i>ibid.</i> | Roger Seys, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, concerning Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicesters Inheritance; from Lincolns Inn, last of November, 1590 | <i>ibid.</i> |
| George Gilpin, Esq; Resident at the Hague, to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe, 25 April, 1590                               | 299          | <i>The same to the same; from Lincolns Inn, 15 Jan. 1590</i>                                                                               | 313          |
| Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, 29 May, 1590                                                           | 300          | Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, Feb. 9, 1590                                                                       | 315          |
| George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, 2 June, 1590                                                         | 301          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, Feb. 12, 1590</i>                                                                                  | 316          |
| Sir Thomas Heneage to Sir Robert Sydney; from Court, 13 June, 1590                                                             | 302          | Sir Thomas Wylkes, to Sir Robert Sydney; from London, 13 Feb. 1590                                                                         | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, 15 June, 1590                                                          | 303          | Roger Seys, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from Lincolns Inn, 23 Feb. 1590                                                                     | 317          |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Haghe, 23 June, 1590</i>                                                                     | <i>ibid.</i> | Geo. Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hagh, 14 March, 1590                                                                      | 318          |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Haghe, 1st July, 1590</i>                                                                    | <i>ibid.</i> | Sir Tho. Bodley, to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hagh, 16 March, 1590                                                                       | <i>ibid.</i> |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Haghe, 13 July, 1590</i>                                                                     | 304          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, 23 March, 1590</i>                                                                                 | 319          |
| Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidnay, Gouverneur de Flisshinge. Du Camp devant Nimeghen, 15 De Juillet, 1590 | 305          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, 26 March, 1591</i>                                                                                 | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, 12 July, 1590                                                          | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, April 4, 1591</i>                                                                                  | 320          |
| Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidnay. Du Camp devant Nimeghen, le 10 de August, 1590                         | 306          | <i>The same to the same; April 8, 1591</i>                                                                                                 | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haghe, 10 August, 1590                                                        | 307          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, April 16, 1591</i>                                                                                 | 321          |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Briell, 22 August, 1590</i>                                                                  | 308          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, April 19, 1591</i>                                                                                 | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Geo. Gilpin, Esq; Secretary of the Ambassy to the States General, to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe, 7 Sept. 1590          | 309          | George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe, 28 April, 1591                                                                  | 322          |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Haeghe, 12 Sept. 1590</i>                                                                    | 309          | Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage, Apr. 29, 1591                                                                       | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney; la Hage, ce xix de Septembre, 1590                                     | 310          | George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hague, 8 May, 1591                                                                      | 323          |
| Sir William Borlas to Sir Robert Sydney; from Flushing, 16 Sept. 1590                                                          | <i>ibid.</i> | Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hague, May 20, 1591                                                                       | <i>ibid.</i> |
| George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe, 26 Sept. 1590                                                       | 311          | <i>The same to the same; May 21, 1591</i>                                                                                                  | 324          |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert                                                                                                |              | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, June 4, 1591</i>                                                                                   | <i>ibid.</i> |
| V O L. I.                                                                                                                      |              | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage, June 6, 1591</i>                                                                                   | <i>ibid.</i> |
|                                                                                                                                |              | Sir Thomas Bodley to William Lord Burghley;                                                                                                |              |



|                                                                                                                         | Page         |                                                                                                                                                        | Page          |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|
| Burghley; <i>from the Hage</i> , June 6, 1591                                                                           | 325          | Conte Maurice de Nassau, <i>a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney. De la Hay</i> , ce 10 de Aupril, 1592                                                       | 337           |
| Sir Thomas Wylkes <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Court at Greenwich</i> , 8 June, 1591                               | <i>ibid.</i> | Sir Tho. Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , Apr. 26, 1592                                                                             | 338           |
| <i>The same to the same; from London</i> , 11th June, 1591                                                              | 326          | Conte Maurice de Nassau, <i>a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney. De la Haye</i> , le 8 de May, 1592                                                          | 338           |
| Sir Tho. Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , Aug. 31, 1591                                              | 327          | Sir Tho. Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , June 2, 1592,                                                                             | 339           |
| Thomas Lord Buckhurst <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from Draiton</i> , 13 Aug. 1591                                          | 328          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , Aug. 11, 1592                                                                                             | 339           |
| Sir Tho. Wylkes <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from London</i> , 17 Aug. 1591                                                 | 329          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , Aug. 23, 1592                                                                                             | 340           |
| George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe</i> , 31 Aug. 1591                                         | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , Oct. 24, 1592                                                                                             | 340           |
| Conte Maurice de Nassau, <i>a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney: De mon batteau a Cathboeck</i> , ce xviii de Septembre, 1591 | 330          | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , Nov. 16, 1592                                                                                             | <i>ibid.</i>  |
| <i>The same to the same; De mon batteau a l'opposite de Arnemuyden</i> , ce xviii de Sept. 1591                         | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , 22 Jan. 1592                                                                                              | 341           |
| Sir Thomas Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , Sept. 21, 1591                                           | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>The Lord Threasurers Lettre, written to the several Parties of the Realme, in behalf of the Town of Flushing, and directed to Sir Robert Sydney</i> | 342           |
| Sir Thomas Lake ( <i>after Secretary of State</i> ) <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; London</i> , 1 Oct. 1591                   | 331          | George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; Haeghe</i> , 14 March, 1594                                                                               | <i>ibid.</i>  |
| Thomas Lord Buckhurst <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; 6th of October</i> , 1591                                                | 332          | <i>The same to the same; from the Haeghe</i> , 15 Aug. 1595                                                                                            | 343           |
| George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe</i> , 1 Novem. 1591                                        | <i>ibid.</i> | Sir Thomas Lake <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from Nonfuch</i> , 22 Aug. 1595                                                                               | 343, 344      |
| Sir Thomas Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , Nov. 21, 1591                                            | 333          | Robert Beale, <i>Esq; Clerk of the Council, to Sir Robert Sydney; from London</i> , 2d Sept. 1595                                                      | 344, 345, 346 |
| George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe</i> , 30 Dec. 1591                                         | <i>ibid.</i> | George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe</i> , 11 Sept. 1595                                                                       | 346           |
| Sir Thomas Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage</i> , Jan. 10, 1591                                            | 334          | <i>The same to the same; from the Haeghe</i> , 15 Sept. 1595                                                                                           | <i>ibid.</i>  |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , March 1, 1591                                                              | <i>ibid.</i> | Rowland Whyte, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, with Occurrences; from London</i> , 19 Sept. 1595                                                         | 347           |
| <i>The same to the same; from the Hage</i> , 10 March, 1591                                                             | 335          | <i>The same to the same; from London</i> , 23 Sept. 1595                                                                                               | 348           |
| Conte Maurice de Nassau, <i>a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney; a la Haye</i> , le 3me d'Aupril                              | 336          | Robert Beale, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from Barnes</i> , 25 Sept. 1595                                                                            | 349, 350      |
| Sir Thomas Bodley <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hague</i> , Apr. 9, 1592                                            | 337          | Sir Tho. Wylkes <i>to Sir Robert Sydney; from London</i> , 27 Sept. 1595                                                                               | 350, 351      |
|                                                                                                                         |              | George Gilpin, <i>Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haeghe</i> , 1 Oct. 1595                                                                         | 351, 352      |
|                                                                                                                         |              | Sir Thomas Lake <i>to Sir Robert Sydney;</i>                                                                                                           |               |



# The CONTENTS.

xi

|                                                                        | Page               |                                                                                | Page          |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|
| ney; from Nonfuch, 1 Oct. 1595                                         | 352, 353           | at Night                                                                       | 370           |
| Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from London, 8 Oct. 1595     | 353, 354           | The same to the same; 2 Decemb. 1595                                           | 370, 371      |
| Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney, from Stepney, 9 Oct. 1595        | 354, 355           | The same to the same; 5 Decemb. 1595                                           | 372, 373      |
| Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from Court, 18 Oct. 1595     | 355                | The same to the same; 7 Decemb. 1595                                           | 373, 374      |
| George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Haege, 22 Oct. 1595 | 355, 356           | The same to the same; 8 Decemb. 1595                                           | 374, 375      |
| Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, 29 Oct. 1595                 | 356                | Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur de Sidney. A la Hay, le 11 de Decemb. 1595 | 376           |
| The same to the same; from London, 3 Nov. 1595                         | 356, 357           | Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from Court, 13 Decemb. 1595          | 376, 377      |
| The same to the same; from Court, 5 Nov. 1595                          | 357, 358           | George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hague, 13 Decemb. 1595      | 377, 378      |
| Sir Edmund Vvedale to Sir Robert Sydney; from Fleetstreet, 7 Nov. 1595 | 358, 359           | Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney; from Richmond, 13 Decemb. 1595           | 378           |
| Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, 7 Nov. 1595                  | 359                | Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from Court, 16 Decemb. 1595          | 378, 379      |
| The same to the same, with Occurrences, 12 Nov. 1595                   | 359, 360           | Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage, 17 Decemb. 1595         | 379, 380      |
| The same to the same, 16 Nov. 1595                                     | 360, 361, 362      | Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, 19 Dec. 1595                         | 380, 381      |
| The same to the same, 22 Nov. in the Morning, 1595                     | 362, 363           | The same to the same, with Occurrences of the Court, 20 Decemb. 1595           | 381, 382, 383 |
| The same to the same, 22 Nov. at Night, 1595                           | 363, 364           | Robert Beale, Esq; Clerk of the Council, to Sir Robert Sydney, 21 Decemb. 1595 | 396           |
| The same to the same, 23 Nov. 1595                                     | 364, 365           | Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, 22 Decemb. 1595                      | 383, 384      |
| The same to the same, 25 Nov. 1595                                     | 365, 366           | The same to the same; St. Stephens Day, 1595                                   | 385           |
| The same to the same, 25 Nov. 1595                                     | 366                | The same to the same; St. Johns Day, 1595                                      | 385, 386      |
| Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney; from the Hage, 25 Nov. 1595    | 367                | The same to the same; 3 January, 1595                                          | 386, 387      |
| Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney; from London, 29 Nov. 1595    | 367, 368, 369, 370 | George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney, 12 January, 1595                     | 387           |
| The same to the same, 29 Nov. 1595                                     |                    |                                                                                |               |

## ADDENDA & CORRIGENDA.

PAGE 19, Section 3, Line 1, for 25, read 35. P. 29. f. 5. l. 2. In the Account of Sir Andrew Dudley, after *so unfortunate an End*, add, He distinguished himself in the Wars of France, in Henry the Eighth's Reign, and against the Scots, in Edward the Sixth's Time. In 1548, 2 Edw. VI. being Governor of Broughtierag, he was besieged by Monsieur de Biron, with a Body of 8000 French and Scotch, and a Train of Artillery; but as Hollinshead relates, p. 993, by the valiant Prowess of Sir Andrew Dudley, and the English under him, they were repelled, and left their Siege with Dishonour. After which the Earl of Argyle, with his Highlanders, besieged it, with



## ADDENDA & CORRIGENDA.

with as little Effect, and was forced also to retire from before it. P. 31. f. 5. l. 14. after married, add, *June 3, 1599. King Edward's Journal*, p. 14, 15. P. 32. f. 1. l. 4. after proclaimed; *dele* and crowned. P. 33. f. 3. l. 4. for *Sir John*, read *Sir Edward*. P. 35. f. 2. l. 30. *I will at my Yeres Minde have suche dewyne Service, as myne Executors shall thynke mete*. It may be proper to explain this. The Word *Yeres* should be *Hearse*; and the Duchesse (for the Sake of her Children) prudently waved professing herself a Protestant, and if any Romish Superstition was to be exercised at her Funeral, she left it to her Executors, and not as her own Act or Desire. P. 48. f. 5. l. 2. for not long after, read, two Years after, and add. Our Historians say, particularly *Camden*, from whence it is taken, to blacken the Earl of *Leicester*, that this was a hasty Marriage. But the Truth is from the Depositions in the Evidence Room at *Penshurst*, and other Authorities, that the Earl of *Essex* died in *Sept. 1576* (See the Letters, p. 140) and the Earl of *Leicester* married his Widow, 21 *Sept. 1578*. See p. 69 in the *Lives*, which is taken from the Depositions on Oath, in the *Bastard Dudley's Case*, in the said Evidence Room at *Penshurst*. P. 64. f. 1. l. last, after *Disproof*, should be the following Paragraph which (by Mistake in copying) is incerted p. 67. As to the *Dudleys*, he deals much harder withal, but no whit trewer, &c. P. 69. l. 29. for *Tirlanghe*, read *Tirlaughe*. P. 70. l. 5. for *I can*, read *I came*. P. 78. f. 4. l. 5. after *Church*, add, in the *Tower of London*. P. 89. f. 2. l. 3. for 14, read 24. P. 96. f. 7. l. 1. *Hollinshead* (in *Castra. Chron.* p. 1553) gives this Account of the Lady *Mary Sydney*. 'The 9th Day of *August* next following [the Decease of *Sir Henry Sydney*] died the most noble, worthy, beneficent, and bounteous Lady, the Lady *Mary Sydney*, his only Spouse, and most dear Wife, eldest Daughter to that renowned Duke, *John* late of *Northumberland*, &c. &c. most zealously godly, and penitently, as by the Testimony of some honourable, and other grave Personages, is well avouched. During the whole Course of her Sickness, and especially a little before it pleased Almighty God to call her to his Mercy, she used such godly Speeches, earnest and effectual Persuasions to all those about her, to exhort them to Repentance, and Amendment of Life, &c. as pleased the Hearts of many that heard her. And though they before knew her to exceed most of her Sex, in singular Virtue and Quality; as good Speech, apt and ready Conception, Excellency of Wit, and notable eloquent Delivery: Yet her Discourse then amazed and astonished the Hearers; and left the World loved and honoured by all who knew her, and the renowned House whereof she was descended.' P. 98. f. 2. l. 3. The famous *Waller* gives this Encomium on the Tree:

Go Boy, and carve this Passion on the Bark  
Of yonder Tree, which stands the sacred Mark  
Of noble *Sidney's* Birth, &c.

P. *ib.* f. 3. l. 11. for *the Junseen*, read *tho' I unseen*. And S. 4. l. 4. after *Chamber*, incert, just at this Time \* *Charles the Ninth* was heaping treacherous Favours on the Protestants, in Order to trepan the Admiral of *France*, and his Party, to *Paris*, at the King of *Navarre's* Wedding, when the Protestants thinking themselves secure by that Marriage, were barbarously massacred on 24 *Aug. 1572*. Whereby it is probable, this Favour was by that base Prince, conferred on *Sir Philip Sydney*, the better to cover his barbarous Design. P. 102. f. 5. l. 2. after *Instances*, this should have been added in. See the *Life of Spencer* prefixed to his Works, p. 4. wherein the following Account is given: 'It is said *Spencer* was a Stranger to *Sir Philip Sydney*, when he had begun to write his *Fairy Queen*; and that he took Occasion to go to *Leicester House*, and to introduce himself, by sending in to *Sir Philip*, a Copy of the 9th *Canto*, of the first Book of that Poem. *Sir Philip* was much surprised with the Description of Despair in that *Canto*, and is said to have shewn an unusual Transport, on the Discovery of so new and uncommon a Genius. After he had read some Stanza's, he bid his Steward give the Person, that brought those Verses, Fifty Pounds; but upon reading the next Stanza, he ordered the Sum to be doubled. The Steward was no less surprised then his Master, and thought it his Duty to make some Delay, in executing so sudden and lavish a Bounty: But upon reading one Stanza more, *Sir Philip* raised his Gratuity to Two-hundred Pounds, and commanded the Steward to give it immediately, lest, as he read further, he might be tempted to give away his whole Estate.' P. 120. f. 6. l. 1. for 1602, read 1604. P. 132. f. 4. l. 6. for *as*, read *at*. P. 142. f. 5. for *has*, read *as*. P. 144. f. 5. l. 4. after *are*, *dele* already. P. 147. f. 2. l. 1. after *Waller*, add, amongst many other, has these:

That cloven Rock produced thee, by whose Side,  
Nature to recompence the fatal Pride  
Of such stern Beauty, plac'd those healing Springs,  
Which not more Help, than that Destruction brings.

*Waller's Poems*, p. 95.

And Page 97, thus:

Ye lofty Beeches, tell this matchless Dame,  
That if together ye fed all one Flame,  
It could not equalize the Hundredth-part  
Of what her Eyes have kindled in my Heart.

P. 149. f. 6. l. 4. after *Month*, add, The *Wednesday* after he died (which was on *Sunday*) he was cut open, and in his Bladder was found a Stone, as large as a big Lemon, and of that Shape, and weighed six Ounces. P. *ib.* f. 7. l. 3. after *aged*, *dele* more then 80, and incert 77. P. 152. f. 1. l. 13. for *ment*, read *Merit*. And the same Page, f. 2. l. 5. after *Government*, add, which was by King, Lords, and Commons, as he repeatedly declares, particularly Page 115, in these Words: *And if I should undertake to say, There never was a good Government in the World, that did not consist of the three simple Species, of Monarchy, Aristocracy, and Democracy, I think I might make it good*. Also to the same Effect, p. 132. When he might begin these *Discourses on Government*, cannot be so well determined, but it appears plainly, that the greatest Part were wrote about the latter End of *King Charles the Second's* Reign, having Reference to many People then living, whom he Personally names. P. 169. l. last but one, for his, read the King's. P. 178. f. 6. l. last, for 1727, read 1737. P. 180. f. 2. l. 2. for 6, read 7. P. 238. sect. 2. l. last, for 1578, read 1577. P. 256. f. 2. l. 1. for *Edward*, read *Edmund*. P. 328. in the Notes, l. last, for his, read the; and after *COUNCIL*, add, to his present Majesty.

\* *Harleian Miscellany*, Vol. VII. p. 318, &c.



[ 1 ]

MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
LIVES and ACTIONS  
OF THE  
SIDNEYS,  
And their Noble ANCESTORS,  
THE  
DUDLEYS, De GREY, TALBOT, BEAUCHAMP,  
BERKLEY, and LISLE.

**T**HE *Sidney* Family being first ennobled in the Name of *Lisle*, I shall begin my Account in tracing their Barony to the present Time. Of the Name of *Lisle*, there were anciently several Families, denominated from the *Isle of Wight*, the *Isle of Ely*, &c. But the first, I meet of this, is *Bryan de L'Isle*, a Person of great Note in his Time, ranked amongst the Barons in the Reign of King *John*<sup>a</sup>; and, in the third Year of that King, paid an hundred and twenty Marks, and a Palfry, for the Wardship and Marriage of the Heir of *William Briton*. In 6 *John*, he took to Wife<sup>b</sup> *Maud*, Daughter and Heir of *Thomas*, the Son of *William de Seleby*. In 9 *John*, he was made<sup>c</sup> Governor of the Castle of *Bolesover*, in *Com. Derb.* and, in 12 *John*, gave<sup>d</sup> an hundred Pounds to the King for his Welcome out of *Poitou*. In 13 *John*, he was employed<sup>e</sup> in fortifying and victualling the Castle of *Cnaresburgh* (so written in that Age) in *Yorkshire*; but was<sup>f</sup> then reputed, by some, one of the King's evil Councillors.

On 25 *May*, 1213, 15 *John*, the King, from *Temple Ewell*, writes to *Far-rand* Earl of *Flanders*, that he had received his Letter, and that he<sup>g</sup> sends *William* Earl of *Salisbury*, *Reginald* Earl of *Bologne*, this *Brian de L'Isle*, and two more with Credentials to him. Also, the same Year, when the King, by Deed, dated 3 *Oct.* 1213, sealed with a golden Seal<sup>h</sup>, resigns to God, and his holy Apostles *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, to his holy Mother the Church of *Rome*,

<sup>a</sup> Rot. Pip. 3 *Joh.* Dorf. and Somers.    <sup>b</sup> Clauf. 6 *Joh.* m. 10.    <sup>c</sup> Pat. 9 *Joh.* m. 2.    <sup>d</sup> Rot. Pip. 12 *Joh.* Linc.    <sup>e</sup> Rot. Pip. 13 *Joh.* Comp. Br. de Insula.    <sup>f</sup> Mat. Paris Hist. 231, 23.    <sup>g</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. 1. p. 172.    <sup>h</sup> Ibid. p. 176.



to his Lord Pope *Innocent the Third*, and his Catholick Successors, the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, with whatsoever belongs to them, for Pardon of all his Sins, and those of his Kindred, as well living as dead. To hold the same as in Fee of the Church of *Rome*, promising to pay for such Tenure yearly one-thousand Marks, viz. seven-hundred Marks for *England*, and three-hundred for *Ireland*; having already, by the Legate, paid to the Church of *Rome* one-thousand Marks Sterling. And thereto were Witnesses *Simon*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *W.* Bishop of *London*; *P.* Bishop of *Winchester*; *E.* of *Ely*; *H.* of *Lincoln*; *W. de Gray*, Chancellor; *William de Longspe* Earl of *Salisbury*, the King's Brother; *R.* Earl of *Chester*; *W. Mareſcall*, Earl of *Pembroc*; *Robert de Roſſe*; *William* Earl *Ferrers*; *S.* Earl of *Winchester*; *W. Briwere*, *Peter Fitz-Herbert*, *Matthew Fitz-Herbert*, and this *Brian de L'Isle*, Sewer.

In 17 *John*, he<sup>i</sup> accounted for the Fermes of the Honour of *Peveler* and *Boleſover*. And, when the Barons grew imperious and turbulent, he<sup>k</sup> was one of the Persons principally intrusted with the King's Forces in *Yorkſhire*; whereupon he had<sup>l</sup> the Lands of *Robert de Percy* and *Peter de Plumpton* (who were then in Arms in those Parts) given to him for his better Support in that Service.

In 18 *John*, he<sup>m</sup> had Command to fortify the Castle at *Boleſover*, and to hold it against the rebellious Barons; but, if he could not make it tenable, then to demolish it, whereby they might not have Advantage by it.

In 1 *Hen. III.*, when those Barons had possessed themselves of the Castle at *Montſorel* in *Com. Leiceſt.* he was<sup>n</sup> one of the chief Commanders of those Forces sent to besiege it; as also of those<sup>o</sup> at the Battle of *Lincoln*, where the rebellious Barons, had an intire Overthrow. In which Year, being again<sup>p</sup> constituted Governor of *Cnaresburgh* Castle, and having found<sup>q</sup> much Benefit by the War, he was not inclined to leave that Employment when a Peace was settled, as the Historian relates. But it appears on Record, that he was one<sup>r</sup> among the Barons of the King's Party, who signed the Treaty of Peace, between King *Henry the Third*, and *Lewis*, eldest Son of *Philip* King of *France*, at *Lambeth*, 11 Sept. 1217, 1 *Hen. III.*

In 2 *Henry III.*, he was one of the Barons<sup>s</sup> the King commissioned to give to *Lewelin*, Prince of *Wales*, Possession of the Lands of *Wenbunwen* in *Wales*, and in *Mungumer*, whereof he was disseized in the Time of the War between King *John* and his Barons, to hold till the Heir of the said *Wenbunwen* came of Age. And, standing much in Favour with the King, he was, in 5 *Henry III.*, made<sup>t</sup> Warden of all the Forests throughout *England*: Also, in 6 *Henry III.*, had his<sup>u</sup> Commission for the Government of *Cnaresburgh* Castle renewed. In 7 *Henry III.*, he was<sup>v</sup> constituted Governor of the Castles of *Peke* and *Boleſover*; and the same Year obtained<sup>w</sup> a Grant in Fee Farm of the Lordships of *Cnaresburgh*, and *Burrowghbrigge*, to hold at the ancient Ferm, i. e. fifty Pounds per Ann. during the King's Pleasure.

In 8 *Henry III.*, on those Disputes between the King, and divers of his Barons (which occasioned the Earls of *Chester* and *Leiceſter* to put themselves in Arms) he<sup>y</sup> stood firm to the King. And with *Hubert de Burgh*, Justice of *England*, and other Barons<sup>z</sup>, wrote to Pope *Honorius*, desiring those Traitors in his Dominions may not be allowed to return into *England*.

In 9 *Henry III.*, he was joined in Commission with *Hugh de Nevile*, to inquire<sup>a</sup> by the Oaths of Jurors, the Bounds of the Forests throughout *England*, and to certify what ought to be disforested, pursuant to the great Charter. In 13 *Henry III.*, he was<sup>b</sup> again made Governor of the Castle in the *Peke*; and, in

<sup>i</sup> Rot. Pip. 17 Joh. Comp. Br. de Insula. <sup>k</sup> Mat. Paris 176. n. 30. <sup>l</sup> Claus. 17 Joh. m. 11. <sup>m</sup> Pat. 18 Joh. m. 8. <sup>n</sup> Mat. Paris 293. n. 30. <sup>o</sup> Ibid. 295. l. 8. <sup>p</sup> Pat. 1 H. III. m. 7. <sup>q</sup> Mat. Paris 300. n. 20. <sup>r</sup> Rymer, Tom. 1. p. 221. <sup>s</sup> Ibid. p. 226. <sup>t</sup> Pat. 5 H. III. m. 4. <sup>u</sup> Pat. 6 H. III. m. 6. <sup>v</sup> Pat. 7 H. III. m. 5. <sup>w</sup> Claus. 7 H. III. m. 10. <sup>x</sup> Mat. Paris 320. n. 8. <sup>y</sup> Rymer, Tom. 1. p. 264. <sup>z</sup> Mat. Paris 324. n. 30. <sup>a</sup> Pat. 13 H. III. m. 3. <sup>b</sup> 16 Hen-



16 Henry III, obtained a new Grant of the Guardianship of the Castle and Honour of *Cnaresburgh*, and Castle of *Peke*.

In 17 Henry III, he was constituted Sheriff of *Yorkshire*, as also Governor of the Castles of *Scardburgh* and *Pickering*; and, in 18 Henry III, was once more made Governor of *Bolesover* Castle, in which Year he died; and his Accounts for those Truits are but for one Half of the said Year. Also, the same Year, *Thomas Briton* and *Alice* his Wife, *William de Glamorgan*, and *Ralph de Scopham*, were found to be his Heirs, and had Livery of his Lands, paying an hundred Marks Fine.

There was also in the same Age *Hugh de L'Isle*, who, in 13 John, gave two-hundred Marks, and an Horse of Price, for the Marriage of *Catharine* his Daughter and Heir. And, in 15 John, *William de Cantilupe* paid two-hundred Marks for her, to be a Wife for his Son.

Contemporary with the said *Brian*, and *Hugh*, and probably their Brother, was *Robert de L'Isle*, Son of *Ralph de L'Isle*, Grandson and Heir of another *Ralph de L'Isle*. Which *Robert*, having been in Arms with the rebellious Barons against King *John*, had his Lands seized; but, in 1 Henry III, returning to Obedience, had Restitution of them, lying in the Counties of *Lincoln*, *Kent*, *York*, *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*. Also, the same Year, having married *Robese*, Widow of *Robert de Tatshall*, and one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *John de Wabul*, paying (with *Robert de Basingham*, who had wedded *Agnes* the other Coheir) two-hundred Pounds to the King for their Relief, had Livery of that Inheritance.

This *Robert* is said to have married another Wife, *Isabel*, Daughter and Heir of *Warine-Fitz-Warren*, Lord of *Heyford-Warine*, in Com. *Oxon*; but by Record it appears that he married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir of *Henry*, second Son of *Warine*, Son of *Gerold*, with whom he had the Lordship of *Heyford-Warine*. It is further said, that he gave one Part of the Vill of *Newmarket*, with *Cassandra* his Daughter, to *Richard de Argenten*; and that *Robert de L'Isle* was his Son and Heir, which also appears from the Record before cited relating to the Manor of *Heyford-Warine*.

This last *Robert de L'Isle* was Lord of *Rugemont* in Com. *Devon*, or *Rubemont* (as sometimes wrote) by Descent from his Ancestors, and, in 48 Henry III, was constituted Governor of the Castles of *Marlborough* and *Lutgaresbull*, in Com. *Wilts*. But, in 49 Henry III, taking Part with the rebellious Barons, was by them (the King being then their Prisoner) made Governor of *Newcastle upon Tyne*.

In 10 Edw. I, he had Command from the King to be at *Worcester* on *Whitsunday*, with Horse and Arms, to march with him against the *Welsh*, who had taken *Roger de Clifford*, Senior, Prisoner, and had invaded the Lands of his Subjects with Fire and Sword. And *Gerard de L'Isle* was also summoned at the same Time. When this *Robert* died, I do not find, but he left Issue a *Robert de L'Isle de Rugemont*, summoned among the Barons in the Reign of King *Edward the Second*, of whom I shall hereafter treat, and *Warine de L'Isle*.

Which *Warine*, in 26 Edw. I, was in the Wars of *Scotland*, as also in 28 Edw. I. In 1 Edw. II, he was made Governor of *Oxford*, and, the Year after, of *Windsor* Castle, and Warden of the Forest there.

<sup>a</sup> Pat. 16 H. III. m. 1. <sup>d</sup> Ibid. m. 9. <sup>e</sup> Pat. 17 H. III. m. 5. <sup>f</sup> Pat. 18 H. III. m. 15. <sup>g</sup> Rot. Pip. 18 H. III. Ebor. <sup>h</sup> Rot. Fin. 18 H. III. m. 2. & Rot. Pip. 19 H. III. Somers. <sup>i</sup> Rot. Pip. 13 Joh. Northampt. & Rot. Pip. 2 H. III. Buck. & Bedf. <sup>k</sup> Rot. Fin. 15 Joh. m. 2. <sup>l</sup> Jekyl's Barones Extincti. MS. p. 111. b. <sup>m</sup> Clauf. 1 H. III. m. 4. <sup>n</sup> Rot. Fin. 1 H. III. m. 1. & 5 H. III. m. 2. <sup>o</sup> Rot. Fin. 1 H. III. m. 1. <sup>p</sup> Barones Extincti. <sup>q</sup> Plac. coram Rege ap. Westm. T. Trin. 3 E. II. pro Manerio de Heyford-Warine. <sup>r</sup> Baron. Extinct. præd. <sup>s</sup> Ibid. <sup>t</sup> Pat. 48 H. III. m. 3. <sup>u</sup> Pat. 49 H. III. m. 27. <sup>v</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Vol. 2. p. 190. <sup>w</sup> Baron. Extinct. <sup>x</sup> Rot. Scoc. 26 E. I. m. 7. <sup>y</sup> Rot. Scoc. 28 E. I. m. 14. <sup>z</sup> Rymer, Tom. 3. p. 78. <sup>aa</sup> Rot. Fin. 2 E. II. m. 16.



In 4 *Edw.* II, he was <sup>f</sup> again in the *Scottish Wars*; and, in 5 *Edw.* II, the King sent his Mandate to *Warine de L'Isle*, Constable of *Windsor Castle*. That, whereas he had ordered *Elisabeth*, the Wife of *Robert de Bruce*, to remain in that Castle<sup>g</sup>, he therefore commands him to provide such Apartments as are sufficient for her and her Family.

In 7 *Edw.* II, he was <sup>h</sup> once more in the *Scottish Wars*; but, in 14 *Edw.* II, having been <sup>i</sup> much oppressed by the *Spencers*, he put himself in Arms with other of the Barons. And, following *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaster*<sup>k</sup>, shared with him, and the rest of his Adherents, in their ill Success.

The King being present at *Pontefract*, the Monday after the Annunciation of the Virgin *Mary*, 1322, 15 *Edw.* II. *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaster*, this *Warine de L'Isle*, and others, were brought before him<sup>l</sup>, in the Presence of *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*, *John* Earl of *Richmond*, *Audomar de Valence* Earl of *Pembroke*, *John de Warine* Earl of *Surry*, *Edmund* Earl of *Arundel*, *David* Earl of *Athol*, and other great Men of the Kingdom: When it was deposed, That *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaster*, and his Adherents, opposed the King's Passage over *Burton-Bridge*, for three Days, and slew some of his Men. And that, the King seeking another Passage, the Earl, &c. perceiving it, set Fire to the Town and left it, taking the Field, and displaying their Colours in an hostile Manner: But, when they saw the King coming, quitted their Post, flying in Disorder, committing in their Way great Plunder, till they came to *Borough-Bridge*, where being opposed, by some of the King's Party, they engaged them, and slew several, but at length, he the said Earl was taken, and his whole Body routed. For which Treason, Murders, Plundering, Burning, and Robbing, the said Earl was sentenced to be hanged; but, in Respect to his noble Birth, the King remitted two Parts of his Sentence, and only ordered his Head to be severed from his Body. That *Warine de L'Isle*, *William Touchet*, *Henry de Bradeborn*, *William Fitz-William*, and *William Cheney*, also taken for the same Crimes and brought by the Marshal before the King and his Peers, should be drawn and hanged.

*Stow* relates<sup>m</sup>, That the before-mentioned, all Barons, were hanged and quartered at *Pontefract*. By the Inquisition taken in 1 *Edw.* III, the Jury found that this *Warine de L'Isle* died seized<sup>n</sup> of the Manors of *Kingston*, *Bouden*, and *Flanstore*, in Com. *Berks*, *Mundeford* in Com. *Norfolk*, and *Kislingbury* in Com. *Northampton*; and that *Gerard* his Son and Heir, was at that Time twenty-three Years of Age: *Alice* his Wife also surviving, who<sup>o</sup> was Sister and Heir of *Henry le Tyes*, one of the Barons of the Realm, who also taking Part with *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaster*<sup>p</sup>, suffered Death for it at *London*.

But in 1 *Edw.* III, it<sup>q</sup> was determined in Parliament, that all Persons, who, in the Time of King *Edward* his Father, were in the Quarrel of *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaster*, to prosecute *Hugh le Despencer*, Senior, and *Hugh le Despencer*, Junior, should repossess their Lands, &c. And the King issued Mandates to the respective Sheriffs to restore them to the Possession thereof; and those of *York*, *Essex*, and *Norfolk*, were commanded to deliver Possession to *Alice*, late Wife of *Warine de L'Isle*.

The said *Alice* in 4 *Edw.* III.<sup>r</sup>, procured the King's Pardon for herself; and in 6 *Edw.* III, obtained<sup>s</sup> a Charter for a Market every Week, on the *Wednesday*, at her Manor of *Pensans* in Com. *Cornub.* also, for a Fair there to begin on the Eve of *St. Peter ad Vincula* (commonly called *Lammas*) and to continue five Days after that Feast. Likewise<sup>t</sup>, for a Fair at *Musshole*, in the same County, to begin on the Eve of *St. Bartholomew* the Apostle, and to continue five Days after.

<sup>f</sup> Rot. Scoc. 4 E. II. m. 13.

<sup>g</sup> Rymer, Tom. 3. p. 302.

<sup>h</sup> Rot. Scoc. 7 E. II. m. 5.

<sup>i</sup> Knighton 2547. n. 50.

<sup>k</sup> Ib. 2539. n. 10.

<sup>l</sup> Rymer Tom. 3. p. 936 & seq.

<sup>m</sup> Annals p. 220.

<sup>n</sup> Escaetr. 1 Edw. III. m. 15.

<sup>o</sup> Claus. 1 Edw. III. p. 1 m. 15.

<sup>p</sup> Walsingham, p. 95.

<sup>q</sup> Rymer Tom. 4. p. 258. & seq.

<sup>r</sup> Pat. 4 Edw. III. m. 17.

<sup>s</sup> Cart. 6 Edw. III. n. 29.

<sup>t</sup> Ibid.



In 10 *Edw. III.*, she had also <sup>u</sup> a Charter for free Warren, at *Chilton-Tey*, *Draycot*, and *Lidyard*, in *Wiltshire*; *Hordwell*, *Kingston L'Isle*, *Bethelking*, *Faулere*, and *Budene*, in *Com. Berks*; and *Shirebourne* in *Com. Oxon*, which was the capital Seat of her Brother's Barony. She had also Liberty to inclose two-hundred Acres of Wood, two-hundred Acres of Waste, in *Chilton-Tey*; three-hundred Acres of Wood, a hundred Acres of Waste in *Budene*; and an hundred Acres of Wood, with forty Acres of Waste, in *Shirebourne*, to make a Park.

*Gerard* her Son, in 7 *Edw. III.* <sup>w</sup>, was in the *Scottish Wars*, in which Year happened <sup>x</sup> one of the greatest Victories, that ever the *English Nation* obtained against the *Scots*, who attempted to raise the Siege of *Berwick*; and that Town, after the Battle, being immediately surrendered to King *Edward*, has been in Possession of the *English* ever since.

In 9 *Edw. III.*, he was again in the Wars of *Scotland*, being then <sup>y</sup> of the Retinue of *Richard Fitz-Allan* Earl of *Arundel*, one of the <sup>z</sup> stoutest and chief Commanders of the *English Forces*, under King *Baliol*, who entered *Scotland* from *Berwick*, on the Twelfth of *July*: Whilst King *Edward*, the same Day, passed over the *Solway Frith*, on the other Side, as had been appointed. And both Armies met with little Resistance, by the almost exhausted Powers of the *Brucians*, so that they ravaged the Country at their Pleasure; but, for their Success, I refer to our Historians.

In 12 *Edw. III.*, he <sup>a</sup> was in that Expedition then made by the King into *Flanders*, who with a Royal Navy of five-hundred Sail, set out from the Port of *Orewel*, near *Harwich* in *Suffolk*, on the Sixteenth of *July*, and arrived at *Antwerp*, on the Twenty-second following. The King with his Army, staid in *Brabant* that Summer <sup>b</sup>, and on an Interview with the Emperor, at *Cologne*; it was so glorious and magnificent, that according to the Estimation of the Heralds there, who accompanied them, four great Dukes, three Archbishops, and six Bishops, thirty-seven Earls, and of Barons, Bannets, Knights, and Esquires, seventeen-thousand were present.

It is not to be doubted, but this *Gerard d' L'Isle* continued with the King and his Forces, whilst he was Abroad <sup>c</sup>, who to his great Cost, waited in *Brabant*, for the Coming of the Emperor's Forces, till the First of *September*, 13 *Edw. III.* And soon after, entering *France*, the *French* faced the *English*, at *Vironfosse*, resolving to give them Battle; but, though their Army consisted of one-hundred and five thousand Men, headed by the King of *France* himself, *John* King of *Bohemia*, *Charles* King of *Navarre*, *David* King of *Scotland*, and the whole Power of *France*, yet after promising Battle, they shamefully retreated from King *Edward* <sup>d</sup>, whose Army was very unequal in Number.

The King thereupon, waiving Part of the Realm of *France*, returned to *Antwerp* <sup>e</sup>, where he kept his *Christmas*, with great Splendor, the Queen, and her Ladies, and his Army remaining still with him; and, for the greater Solemnity, he sent for his eldest Son Prince *Edward*, Duke of *Cornwall*, &c. who paid his Duty to him.

The Year after, the King took on him the Title and Arms of *France*, and published his Letters Monitory to his Subjects of that Kingdom, to own his Authority as of their rightful King, and to come to his Protection. And immediately thereupon <sup>f</sup>, all the People of *Flanders* yielded to him, as true and rightful King of *France*, and submitted themselves and their Country to his Government. And being determined to pursue the War in *France*, with Vigour, the next Summer, the King left his Forces in *Flanders*, under the Earls of *Salisbury*, and *Suffolk*, with his Queen and Children, and came to *England* to acquaint the Parliament with his Proceedings.

<sup>u</sup> Cart. 10 *Edw. III.* n. 43.

<sup>w</sup> Rot. Scoc. 7 *Edw. III.* m. 24.

<sup>x</sup> Barnes's Hist. of

*Edw. III.* p. 79, 80.

<sup>y</sup> Rot. Scoc. 9 *Edw. III.* m. 28

<sup>z</sup> Barnes p. 95.

<sup>a</sup> Rot. Aleman.

12 *Edw. III.* m. 6.

<sup>b</sup> Barnes p. 120, 121, 122.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid p. 134, & seq.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid p. 146.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid p. 147.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid p. 158, 160.



How long this *Gerard d' L' Isle* staid with the Army, does not appear; but it is evident <sup>s</sup>, from Records, as well as our Historians, that he was in the Wars of *France*, in 20 & 21 *Edw. III.* *Barnes*, in his History of *Edward the Third*, p. 340, relates that the King went on Board, at *Southampton*, in the Close of *June*, with the Prince of *Wales*, and most of his Nobles, and among them he particularly mentions the Lord *Gerard d' L' Isle*, and his Kinsman the Lord *John de L' Isle*. By contrary Winds they were put by Landing at *Bordeaux*, and being drove back to the Coasts of *Cornwall*, the King commanded his Pilots to direct their Course for *Normandy*, and on the Eleventh of *July* happily arrived with his Fleet at *la Hogue*. To relate the particular Successes of the King is not any Part of my Design; I shall only observe, that he took several strong Towns, and came before *Paris*; and laid the Country in Ashes, near the Walls of that City, which the *French* King abandoned. King *Edward's* Letter, in Answer to King *Philip*, is so memorable, that I shall recite it, as an Honour to this Lord *Gerard d' L' Isle*, and those noble Commanders with him <sup>h</sup>.

Edward, by the Grace of God, King of France, and England, and Lord of Ireland, unto the illustrious Lord, Philip Earl of Valois.

Sir Philip of Valois,

WE have read your Letters, wherein you signify unto us, that you will combat with our whole Power, between *St. Germain de Prez*, and *Valgirart de la Paris*, or between *Franconville* and *Pont-Oyse*, this *Thursday*, or on *Saturday*, *Sunday*, or *Monday* next following; provided that neither we, nor our People, do any Damage, Spoil, or Waste. Whereupon we give you to know, that, through Assurance in God, and the clear Right which we have to the Crown of *France*, which you usurp injuriously, to the Dishonour of us, our Country, God and Right, we are come not in any Pride, or Presumption, into our said Realm of *France*, holding our Way towards you, to make an End of the War between us: But that, when it was in your Power to have Battle, you caused the Bridges to be broken down between you and us; so that we could not approach unto you, nor pass the Water of *Seyne*, till we were come to *Poissy*, and there we took Order to repair the Bridge, which you had caused to be broken; and we tarried there three Days, waiting for you and your Power, which you have assembled; unto which Place you might have come, either on the one Side, or the other, at your Pleasure. And, because we cannot have Battle with you, we have taken a Resolution to pass further into our said Realm to comfort those that are our Friends and faithful, and to chastise those who are rebellious unto us, whom you unjustly call your Subjects. And surely we will stay in our said Realm, without Departing, till we have atchieved our War, as far as we may, to our Advantage, and the Grievance of our Adversaries. Wherefore, if you are desirous, as your Letters report, to fight with us, and to save those whom you claim as your Subjects (if you will let us know, at what Time you will come) you shall find us ready in the Field to encounter you, by the Help of God: Which Thing we ardently desire for the Benefit of *Christendom*; seeing that you will not vouchsafe either to offer, or admit of any reasonable Way of Peace with us. But we are not all advised to be directed by you, nor to accept of Place and Day of Battle from you on the Conditions above-written. Dated at *Anneville*, this *Thursday*, the Seventeenth of *August*, in the Year of our Reign of *France*, the Seventh, and of *England*, the Twentieth.

Soon after, was fought the famous Battle of *Cressy*, where King *Edward* gained an intire Victory, though the *French* were four to one. And it is me-

<sup>s</sup> Rot. Franc. 21 Edw. III. p. 1. m. 9. & Rot. Franc. 21 Edw. III. p. 1. m. 18. p. 349.

<sup>h</sup> Barnes  
memorable



morable that he came before *Calais*, on *Thursday* the last of *August*, the same Year, according to *Du Chesne*; but others<sup>1</sup> say, the Seventh of *September*; and laying Siege to that strong Town, notwithstanding it was carried on with great Application (all Means being used to divert the Siege) it did not surrender till the Fourth of *August* 1347, 21 *Edw.* III. It has been already proved, that this Lord *Gerard d' L' Isle* was with the King, during the whole Time, so that this short Summary of the two Year's Campaign will not I hope be thought a Digression, since it was so much to the Honour of the Nation.

The next Mention, that I find of him, is in 24 *Edw.* III. when the King at *Rotherbith*, the Eighth of *September* 1350, sent his Mandate to *Bartholemew de Burgbergh*, Constable of *Dover* Castle, and Warden of the Cinque Ports, to permit<sup>k</sup> this *Gerard d' Lisle*, with his Servants and seven Horses, to pass the Seas in his Journey to *Rome*. On what Account, he went thither, is not said, but Mandates<sup>l</sup> were sent, at the same Time, for several Barons, and Persons of Distinction.

In 28 *Edw.* III. <sup>m</sup>, *Elisabeth*, Widow of *Edmund de St. John*, is said to be his Wife. She <sup>n</sup> was Daughter of *John* Lord *Strange* of *Blackmere*, but whether he had a former Wife I do not find: In the same Year he was in *England*, and among those Barons in Parliament at *Westminster*<sup>o</sup>, who constituted *Richard de Wymondeswold*, and others, their Proctors, to consent on their Parts, to what shall be agreed on, between the King's Ambassadors, and those of *France*, before the Pope, not judicially, but as a private Person. And he is therein wrote *Gerard d' Lisle*, Lord of *Stowe*.

In 31 *Edw.* III. he had<sup>p</sup> also Summons to Parliament, amongst the Barons of the Realm. And, in 33 *Edw.* III.<sup>q</sup>, was again in the Wars of *France* with the King<sup>r</sup>, who on the Feast of *St. Simon and Jude*, the Twenty-eighth of *October*, 1329, embarked on Board the *Philip* of *Dartmouth*, at *Sandwich* in *Kent*, and having a fair Wind made the Port of *Calais*, that Evening. *Barnes* relates<sup>s</sup>, that the King's Summons, at this Time had been particularly severe, for none<sup>t</sup> were permitted to stay at Home, between the Age of twenty and sixty, without some special Exemption; and after many Thousands had been turned back, there remained<sup>u</sup>, at least, a hundred-thousand of the most chosen Men. And, to receive them and their Provision, there lay at *Sandwich* one-thousand one-hundred and twenty-three Sail of Ships, some of which had returned from *Calais*, after Conveying the Duke of *Lancaster*, with a prodigious Quantity of Provisions to be laid up in Magazines, against the King's Coming. How the Army proceeded, I refer to our Historians and shall only observe<sup>v</sup>, that this Lord *Gerard d' L' Isle* was with the King, when he came before *Paris*, and continued with him till the famous Peace made at *Bretigny*, near *Chartres*, in 34 *Edw.* III. where the two eldest Sons of *England* and *France* solemnly swore to uphold the Articles of the said Peace; King *John* of *France* being then Prisoner in *England*. But this sacred and solemn Oath, which the Duke of *Normandy* (eldest Son of King *John*) took for the Performance of the said Treaty, was most treacherously broke by him in the Reign of the same King *Edward*, when he thought he had an Advantage of the King of *England*. And it may justly be said, that all the Kings of *France*, since, have kept no Treaties with any of the Powers of *Europe*, further than for their own Interest.

The King landed<sup>x</sup> at *Rye* in *Kent*, the Eighteenth of *May* 1360, 34 *Edw.* III; and this Lord *Gerard d' L' Isle* departed this Life the same Year<sup>y</sup>, leaving *Warine*, his Son and Heir, of full Age.

<sup>1</sup> Knighton, p. 2588. <sup>k</sup> Rymer Tom. 5. p. 681. <sup>l</sup> Ibid. <sup>m</sup> Rot. Fin. 28 *Edw.* III. m. 12. <sup>n</sup> Jekyl's Baron. Extinct. MS. <sup>o</sup> Rymer ib. p. 797 & seq. <sup>p</sup> Claus. de iisd. Ann. in Dorso. <sup>q</sup> Rot. Franc. 33 *Edw.* III. m. 9. <sup>r</sup> Rymer Tom. 6. p. 141. <sup>s</sup> Hist. of *Edw.* III. p. 566. <sup>t</sup> Knighton, p. 2623. n. 10. <sup>u</sup> Mezeray & Mat. Villani l. 9. c. 53. p. 539. <sup>v</sup> Rot. Franc. 34 *Edw.* III. <sup>x</sup> Ashmole's Life of King *Edw.* in Hist. Ord. Gart. p. 662. <sup>y</sup> Claus. 34 *Edw.* III. m. 12.



Which *Warine de L'Isle*, in his Father's Life-time, viz. 30 *Edw. III.*, was <sup>a</sup> with *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, in *Gascony*; and it is very probable was also with him, in 33 & 34 *Edw. III.*, in that Royal Expedition into *France* made by the King, wherein his Father, the Lord *Gerard de L'Isle*, served.

In 43 *Edw. III.*, he <sup>a</sup> was made Governor of the Town of *Portsmouth*; and on the Twenty-ninth of *September*, 1369, 43 *Edw. III.*, was commissioned with *Thomas del More*, Lieutenant of *Richard* Earl of *Arundel*, Constable of the Castle of *Porchester* <sup>b</sup>, to enquire into the Damages each Person had suffered by the *French*, in Burning of the Town of *Portsmouth*. That this *Warine de L'Isle* was in the Wars of *France*, the same Year <sup>c</sup>, appears on Record; and in 46 *Edw. III.*, being then a Knight Banneret <sup>d</sup>, was retained by Indenture, to serve the King in the Wars of *France*, for one whole Year, with twenty Men at Arms, and thirty Archers. Of which Men at Arms himself, being a Banneret, four Knights, and five Esquires, were Part.

In 47 *Edw. III.*, he covenanted <sup>e</sup>, that *Gerard de L'Isle* his Son, should marry *Anne*, the Daughter of Sir *Michael de la Pool*, Knight, who was to give her nine-hundred thirty-three Pounds, six Shillings, and Eight-pence, for her Portion.

In 51 *Edw. III.*, he <sup>f</sup> obtained License, to make a Castle of his House at *Shirbourne* in Com. *Oxon.*

In 1 *R. II.*, he <sup>g</sup> was again in the Wars of *France*; and, in <sup>h</sup> 3 *R. II.*, went into *Ireland*. And having been summoned to Parliament <sup>i</sup>, amongst the Barons from 43 *Edw. III.*, till 5 *R. II.*, inclusive, departed this Life <sup>k</sup>, the Twenty-eighth of *June*, 6 *R. II.*, being then seized of the Manor of *Wengrave* in *Buckinghamshire*, *Stow* in *Northamptonshire*, *Chilton-Foliot* in *Wiltshire*; *Kingston-Lisle*, *Colcote*, and *Ordeston* in *Berkshire*; *Sherbourne*, *Noke*, and *Fretewell* in *Oxfordshire*; *Alwarton* and *Trevarnayk*, in the County of *Cornwall*; and *Charlton*, *Tattercote*, *North-Bovy*, and *Langdon*, in *Devonshire*.

His Wife was *Margaret* <sup>l</sup>, Daughter and Heiress of *William Pipard*, Knight, <sup>m</sup> Son and Heir of *Thomas Pipard*, Knight, summoned to Parliament amongst the Barons in 17 *Edw. III.*, and a Descendant from *Ralph Fitz-Nicholas* <sup>n</sup>, Steward of the Household to King *Henry the Third*; and by that Title, I find him, in 11 *H. III.*, when <sup>o</sup> he was a Witness to the King's Promise of giving an Equivalent to *Isabel* Countess of *Angolessm*, in Consideration of her Dowry, in *Normandy*, *Aquitain*, and *Poitou*. Also the same Year, having the <sup>p</sup> Title of Sewer to the King, he was sent with *William* Earl of *Pembroke*, Marshal of *England*, and others, to the Princes of the Empire at *Aunvers*, to treat with them, about a League to be made between the Emperor and the King. The Year after, 12 *H. III.*, he was <sup>q</sup> sent with *Philip de Albini*, to *Lewis* King of *France*, to compleat the Truce between the two Kings, as enjoined by Pope *Gregory the Ninth*. On the Twenty-fifth of *August*, 14 *H. III.*, the King declared, That the Truce concluded with the King of *France* <sup>r</sup>, by this *Ralph Fitz-Nicholas* his Steward, to hold till Sunday after *Midsummer-Day*, is prorogued till *Lady-Day*. He was in most Transactions of that King's Reign; and in 38 *H. III.*, bearing the Title of Steward to the King, he <sup>s</sup> was a Witness to that Grant made by *Edward*, the King's eldest Son, with the Assent of his Father, to *Elleanor*, Sister of *Alfonfus* King of *Castile*, of the Castle and Town of *Tick-bull*, *Stamford*, and *Grantham*, and the Castle and Town of *Peck*, with their Appurtenances, for a Thousand Pounds Land. And when she comes to be Queen, he promises to add five-hundred Marks more of Land. This was in Order to his Marriage.

<sup>a</sup> Rymer Vol. 5. p. 844. <sup>b</sup> Ib. Tom. 6. p. 633. <sup>c</sup> Ib. p. 638. <sup>d</sup> Rot. Franc. 43 *Edw. III.* m. 8. <sup>e</sup> Ex Autogr. penes Tho. Com. Elgin. An. 1659. <sup>f</sup> Claus. 47 *Edw. III.* in dorso m. 28. <sup>g</sup> Pat. 51 *Edw. III.* m. 32. <sup>h</sup> Rot. Franc. 1 *R. II.* p. 2. m. 14. <sup>i</sup> Pat. 3 *R. II.* p. 2. m. 4. <sup>j</sup> Claus. de iisd. Ann. in dorso. <sup>k</sup> Esc. 6. *R. II.* n. 47. <sup>l</sup> & Claus. 6 *R. II.* p. 1. m. 20. <sup>m</sup> Claus. 50 *Edw. III.* p. 2. m. 25. <sup>n</sup> Baron. Extinct. præd. <sup>o</sup> Mat. Par. in An. 1257. <sup>p</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. 1. p. 288. <sup>q</sup> Ib. p. 295. <sup>r</sup> Ib. p. 302. <sup>s</sup> Ib. p. 315. <sup>t</sup> Ib. p. 519.



This *Ralph Fitz-Nicholas* being so eminent a Person, I thought it not improper to mention him, as *Margaret Pipard* the Wife of the said *Warine de L'Isle* was his Heir, by whom he had Issue one Son *Gerard de L'Isle*, who died before him, so that, at the Time of his Decease, *Margaret* was his Daughter and Heir. But, before I treat of her, I shall give some Account of her Brother *Gerard de L'Isle*.

It is before recited, that, in 47 *Edw. III.*, his Father covenanted for him to marry *Anne* Daughter of Sir *Michael de la Pool*, Knight; and, at the Coronation of King *Richard the Second*, the King knighted *Edward*, Son of *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*; *John* Son of *Thomas* Lord *Roos*, of *Hamelack*; *Robert de Grey* of *Rotherfield*; *Richard* Son of *Gilbert* Lord *Talbot*; *Gerard* Son of *Warine de L'Isle*, *Michael* Son of *Michael de la Pool*, *Richard de Poynges*, *Robert de Haryngton*, and *Thomas de la Mare*, giving to each of them large Presents. This Sir *Gerard de L'Isle* was afterwards in the Wars of *France*, and being taken Prisoner, with *Michael de la Pool*, and *John de Beurle*, the King, the Twentieth of *January* 1379, 3 *R. II.*, sent *John Gavison*, and others, to ransom them, and those, appointed to the Custody of the Ports of *Dover* and *Sandwich*, had the King's Mandate for to let them pass without Molestation. It may be presumed, he died under his Imprisonment, for he was dead before his Father, and, in 6 *R. II.*, *Margaret* his Sister, was sole Heir to the said *Warine* Lord *L'Isle*, and, at that Time, the Wife of *Thomas* Lord *Berkley*, and of the Age of twenty-two Years.

In the Evidences at *Berkley Castle*, it appears that she was married to *Thomas* Lord *Berkley* in 41 *Edw. III.*, at *Wengrave* in *Buckinghamshire*, the Lord *L'Isle*'s House; and that when his Father, *Maurice* Lord *Berkley*, died (viz. in 42 *Edw. III.*\*) he was but in the sixteenth Year of his Age. Also, when *Gerard de L'Isle*, her Brother, died, her Father, *Warine* Lord *L'Isle*, went to *Berkley Castle*, and made it his Residence in his latter Days. And his Son-in-Law, having the Prospect of so great an Estate, covenanted<sup>y</sup> with him, That he and the Issue which he should beget on his Daughter, would, after his Death, always use, and bear the Arms of the said Lord *L'Isle*; which were, Gules, a Lion passant Argent. The Lordships and Lands, which he had by her<sup>z</sup>, were the Mannors of *Charleton*, *Tetcote*, *Clonton*, *Norbery*, *Langdon*, *Donn-Cary*, and *Larkbear*, in *Devonshire*; *Wengrave* in *Buckinghamshire*; *Stow* and *Church-Brampton* in *Northamptonshire*; *Chilton-Foliot*, *Nethercote*, *Draycote*, *Horewell*, *Chikeld*, *Frisbedon*, in *Wiltshire*; *Kingston-L'Isle*, *Hordwell*, *Coleot*, *Ordeston*, *Buden*, *Caldicote*, and *Cakewood*, in *Com. Berks*; *Shirebourne*, *Noke*, *Fretwell*, in *Oxfordshire*; and *Aylkwerton*, *Trevernake*, *Pensans*, *Moshole*, in the County of *Cornwall*; besides divers Advowsons of Churches, and many Lands and Tenements in other Places.

Which Lady *Margaret* died<sup>a</sup> at *Wotton-under-Edge*, 20 *Martii* 15 *R. II.*, and lieth buried in the Parish Church there, under a fair Tomb: *Thomas* her Husband surviving her a long Time, who<sup>b</sup> made his Will on Sunday, the Purification of the blessed Virgin, An. 1415 (3 *H. V.*) and bequeathed to the Fabrick of that Church, wherein his Body shall happen to be buried, a Cross gilt, with all the Relicks included therein: To his Daughter the Countess of *Warwick*, his best Pair of Mattins, as also one gilt Cup, with twenty Pounds contained therein: To *James* his Nephew, his next Heir Male (being Son of *James* his Brother, deceased) his best Bed, and great Cup of Jet, as also twenty Coats of Mail, twenty Breast-plates, and the like Number of Lances: And, departing this Life at his Mannor of *Wotton-under-Edge*, on Tuesday 13 July, 5 *H. V.*,<sup>c</sup> left *Elisabeth*, then the Wife of *Richard Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, his only Child by her the said *Margaret*, Heir to the Lordships and Lands of her Mother, as before-mentioned; and was, at the Death of her

\* Rymer, Tom. 6, p. 157, & seq.    <sup>y</sup> Ibid. p. 230.    <sup>w</sup> Rot. Fin. 6 *R. II.*, m. 25.  
<sup>x</sup> Esc. 42 *Ed. III.* n. 12.    <sup>y</sup> Ex Autog. apud Berkley.    <sup>z</sup> Ibid.    <sup>a</sup> Abbot Newland's Pedigree in *Castro de Berkley*.  
<sup>c</sup> Esc. 5 *H. V.* n. 50.    <sup>b</sup> Ex Registr. Chichley Vol. 1. 306, b. in Offic. Principal Cantuar.



Father, thirty Years of Age. She also brought to the Earl of *Warwick* all those Lands, whereof her Father died seized in Fee-Simple, or Fee-Tail General, which were about thirty Lordships, in the Counties of *Gloucester*, *Bucks*, *Wilts*, *Northampton*, *Devon*, *Cornwall*, *Oxon*, *Berks*; the City of *London*, *Bristol*, and other Places, besides Advowsons of Churches, &c.

The said *Richard Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, was one of the greatest Peers of the Realm, and signalized himself by many brave Actions in the Reigns of *Henry the Fourth*, *Fifth*, and *Sixth*, and <sup>d</sup> used these Titles in his Charters, *Ric. de Beauchamp Comes de Warrewyk & de Aumarle, Seignior L'Isle, & Capitayne de Rovent*.

By his Testament, bearing Date <sup>e</sup> at *Caversham* in *Oxfordshire*, 8 August, 1435, 15 *Henry VI*, he appointed his Executors to cause a goodly Tomb of Marble to be erected in the Abbey of *Kingswood* in *Gloucestershire*, over the Grave of *Elisabeth* his first Wife. And departing this Life the last of *April*, 1439, 17 *Henry VI*, as his monumental Inscription sheweth, on his magnificent Tomb, in our *Lady Chapel* in *Warwick*, left Issue, by the said *Elisabeth* his first Wife, three Daughters, his Heirs, viz. <sup>f</sup> *Margaret*, born at *Goodrest* in *Wedgnok-Park* near *Warwick*, the next Year after the Battle of *Shrewsbury*, who was second Wife to the famous *John Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*; *Eleanore*, born at *Walkinston* in *Essex*, 9 *Henry IV*, first married to the Lord *Roos*, and after to *Edmund Beaufort*, Marquis of *Dorset*, and Duke of *Somerset*; and *Elisabeth*, born in *Warwick Castle*, Wife to *George Nevile* Lord *Latimer*: Which *Margaret*, Wife to the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, died at *London*, 14 June <sup>h</sup>, Ann. 1467, 7 *Edw. IV*, and was buried under the Choir of the Cathedral of *St. Paul*, commonly called *St. Faith's Church*, in *Jesus Chapel*, where a Monument of one-hundred Pounds Value should have been erected, but, instead of it, this Inscription only remained on a Pillar there <sup>k</sup>:

“ Here, before the Image of *Ihesu*, lyeth the worshipful and right noble Lady, *Margaret* Countess of *Shrewsbury*, late Wife of the true and victorious Knight, and redoubted Warriour, *John Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, which worshipfully dyed in *Guien* for the Right of this Land, the first Daughter, and one of the Heirs of the right famous renowned Knight, *Richard Beauchamp*, late Earl of *Warwick*, which died in *Roan*, and of Dame *Elisabeth* his Wife; the which *Elisabeth* was Daughter and Heir to *Thomas* late Lord *Berkley*, and on his Side; and of her Mother's Side, Lady *L'Isle* and *Tyes*. Which Countess passed from this World, the XIII Day of *June*, the Year of our Lord 1468. On whose Soul the Lord have Mercy.”

The said *John Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, having distinguished himself by many brave Actions, was, in 31 *Henry VI*, constituted Lieutenant of the Dutchy of *Aquitain*, and under him <sup>m</sup> had these Captains of his Men at Arms and Archers, viz. *John* Viscount *L'Isle* (his eldest Son by *Margaret* his second Wife) *Sir Robert Hungerford*, the Lord *Molins*, *Sir Roger Camoys*, *Sir John L'Isle*, and *John*, the Bastard of *Somerset*: And, in Consideration of his great Charge, in that high Employment, had a <sup>n</sup> Grant of the Thirds, and Third of the Thirds, which were reserved to the King there.

The same Year he marched into the Enemies Country, took *Bourdeaux*, and put a Garrison into it; whereupon divers remote Cities sent to him <sup>p</sup>, promising to submit to his Authority. Thence hearing the *French* had besieged *Chastilion*, he advanced and gave them Battle, which, for a long Time, stood doubtful; but this renowned General, having been smitten from his Horse by a Cannon Bullet, died on the Spot, and his whole Army, thereupon giving Way, was pre-

<sup>d</sup> Dugdale's *Warwicksh.* p. 329. <sup>e</sup> Ex Regist. vocat. Rouf. Fol. 141. in Offic. Cur. Prerog. Cantuar. <sup>f</sup> Dugd. *Warw.* p. 329. b. <sup>g</sup> Ibid. <sup>h</sup> Esc. 7 E. IV. n. 44. <sup>i</sup> Stow's Survey of *London*, p. 369. a. <sup>k</sup> Ibid. and *Camden's Remains*, p. 378. <sup>l</sup> Rot. Vascen. 31 H. VI. m. 6. <sup>m</sup> Ibid. m. 4. <sup>n</sup> Ibid. <sup>o</sup> Polydore Virgil. p. 501. n. & 20. <sup>p</sup> Ibid. n. 30. <sup>q</sup> Ibid. p. 502. <sup>r</sup> Ibid. n. 10.



sently routed. This fatal Accident happened 20 Julii, 31 Henry VI, as the Inquisition taken after his Death shews; but, his Body being conveyed into England, and interred at *Whitchurch* in Com. *Salop*, a noble Monument is erected there for him, in the South Wall of the Chancel, with this Inscription, whereby it appears he was slain on 7 July:

*Orate pro Anima prænobilis Domini, Domini Johannis Talbot quondam Comitis Salopiæ, Domini Furnival, Domini Verdon, Domini Strange de Blackmere, & Mareſchalli Franciæ, qui obiit in Bello apud Burdews, VIIº Julii, Mccccliii.*

He had Issue, by *Margaret* his second Wife before-mentioned, *John Talbot* Viscount *L'Isle*, *Sir Humphry Talbot*, and *Sir Lewis Talbot*, on whom he entailed, in 21 Henry VI, the Mannors of *Penyard*, *Gredenbil*, and *Strangeford*, in Com. *Heref*. *Sir Humphry Talbot* married *Jane*, Daughter of *John Champenon*, and *Elisabeth* his Wife, but died without Issue by her, before the Year 1504: For then the said Lady *Jane Talbot* made her Will, dated the 10th of January, wherein she orders her Body to be buried in the Choir of the Church in the *Minories*, without *Aldgate*, *London*, nigh the Body of Mrs. *Anne Montgomery*, late the Wife of *John Montgomery*, Esq; and that her Executors cause a convenient Stone to be laid over her Grave, with the Picture of a dead Corpse, and Escutcheons of Arms of her late Husband *Sir Humphry Talbot*, and her, with a Title and Writing underneath, desiring all good People to pray for the Soul of her late Husband, who resteth buried at *St. Catharine's Mount*, and her Soul. Probat 4 Oct. 1505.

The said *John Talbot* Viscount *L'Isle*, in respect of his Descent from *Warine* Lord *L'Isle*, viz. Son of *Margaret*, eldest Daughter and Heir of *Richard Beauchamp* Earl of *Warwick*, by *Elisabeth* his Wife, Daughter and sole Heir of *Thomas* Lord *Berkley*, by *Margaret* his Wife, Daughter and sole Heir of the said *Warine* Lord *L'Isle*. And, in Consideration that the said *Warine*, and all his Ancestors, were seized *inter alia* of the Lordship and Mannor of *Kingston L'Isle*, in Com. *Berks*, and had the Name, Dignity, Barony, and Lordship of *L'Isle*, Time out of Mind, and had Place in Sessions, and other Privileges in Parliament, and Councils, as other Barons of *England* had for the same Time. And by Reason of the Affinity in Blood of the said *John Talbot*, Son of *John* and *Margaret*, as also being possessed of the said Lordship and Mannor of *Kingston L'Isle*, and for other special Considerations, the King grants to him, his Heirs, and Assigns, the Name and Title of *Baron L'Isle*, in as ample Manner, as the aforesaid *Warine*, or any of his Ancestors, enjoyed the same, Witnesses *John* Archbishop of *Canterbury* Chancellor, *William* Bishop of *Lincoln*, *William* Bishop of *Sarum*, *Humphry* Duke of *Gloucester* the King's Uncle, *John* Duke of *Exeter* his Kinsman, *Humphry* Earl of *Strafford*, *William* Earl of *Suffolk* Steward of the Household, *Sir Ralph de Cromwell*, and *Sir Ralph Boteler* Treasurer, *Adam Molynez* Keeper of the Privy-Seal, and others, dated at *Westminster*, 26 July, 22 Henry VI, by Writ of Privy-Seal, and by Authority of Parliament.

And, 30 Oct. 30 Henry VI, in Consideration of the great Actions of his Ancestors, his own Loyalty, and Services, the King created him Viscount *L'Isle*, to him, and the Heirs Male of his Body, and gives him Place and Precedency, next to *Henry* Viscount *Bourchier*; and grants to him an Annuity (for Support of the said Honour) of twenty Marks, payable out of the Issues of the County of *Salop*.

The Year after, 31 Henry VI, his Father being constituted Lieutenant of the Dutchy of *Aquitain*, and he one of the Captains under him (as hath been observed) he was by Indenture retained to serve the King there, for one Quarter of a Year, with two Bannerets, four Knights, seventy-three Men at Arms

<sup>1</sup> Esc. 32 H. VI. n. 29. <sup>2</sup> Registr. de Wykslop. <sup>3</sup> Claus. 20 H. VI. m. 5. in dorso. <sup>4</sup> Ex Registr. Holgrave, qu. 38. <sup>5</sup> Cart. An. 22 H. VI. n. 23. <sup>6</sup> Cart. ab An. 27 usque 39 H. VI. n. 22. <sup>7</sup> Ex Autog. penes Cleric. Pell.



on Horseback, and eight-hundred Archers on Foot; receiving, for himself, six Shillings *per Diem*; for his two Bannerets, four Shillings each; for his seven Knights, two Shillings each; for the Men at Arms twelve Pence, and, for the Archers, six Pence a Piece. But, in the Battle of *Chastilion*, before recited<sup>a</sup>, he had the hard Fate to be slain with his Father; being then seized<sup>b</sup> of the Mannors of *Wrockwardine*, *Chefswordine*, *Sutton-Madoc*, *Brogton*, *Tasley*, *Abberbury*, and *Batterley*, in Com. *Salop*.

He married<sup>c</sup> *Joan*, Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas Chedder*, of the County of *Somerset*, Esq; Widow of *Richard Stafford*, Esq; by whom he left Issue<sup>d</sup>, *Thomas Talbot* Viscount *L'Isle*, his Son and Heir and two Daughters<sup>e</sup>; *Elisabeth*, married to *Edward Grey*, after created Baron and Viscount *L'Isle*, and *Margaret*, to Sir *George Vere*, Knight, who had no Issue by her: Which *Joan*, his Wife, surviving him, died in 7 *Edw. IV* <sup>f</sup>, at which Time, *Thomas* Viscount *L'Isle*, her Son and Heir, was nineteen Years of Age, and then married to<sup>g</sup> *Margaret*, Daughter to *William Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*.

This *Thomas Talbot* Viscount *L'Isle*, being but<sup>h</sup> ten Years of Years of Age, at the Death of his Father, was committed<sup>k</sup> to the Tuition of *Margaret* Countess of *Shrewsbury*, his Grand-mother, who had only twenty Marks *per Annum* allowed for his Maintenance, during his Minority. And, after his Marriage, having much Contest with *William* Lord *Berkley* (after Marquis of *Berkley*) concerning certain Lands and Lordships, his Right, from *Margaret* his Grand-mother aforesaid, had the hard Fate to be slain in a Skirmish, between the same Lord *Berkley* and himself (with their Followers) at *Wotton-under-Edge* in Com. *Glouc.* 20 *Martii*, 10 *Edw. IV*, leaving his two Sisters his Heirs, as before-mentioned.

### GREY, Baron *L'Isle* and Viscount *L'Isle*.

THE Barony of *L'Isle* being granted, as before-mentioned, to *John Talbot*, and the Heirs of his Body, it reverted, on the Death of *Thomas* Viscount *L'Isle* his Son, to his Sisters and Coheirs, of which<sup>i</sup> *Margaret* dying without Issue, *Elisabeth*, the eldest, became sole Heir; and was married to Sir *Edward Grey*, Knight<sup>m</sup>, second Son of Sir *Edward Grey*, Knight, Lord *Ferrers* of *Groby*, in Right of his Wife *Elisabeth*, Daughter to *Henry*, and sole Heir to *William* Lord *Ferrers* of *Groby*, her Grandfather.

This Sir *Edward Grey*, therefore<sup>n</sup>, in 15 *Edw. IV*, had the Dignity and Honour of Baron *L'Isle* conferred on him, and the Heirs of his Body, by the same *Elisabeth*.

The Preamble to the Patent sets forth<sup>o</sup>, That *Warine* Lord *L'Isle*, deceased, being seized *inter alia* of the Lordship and Mannor of *Kingston L'Isle*, with the Appurtenances in *Berkshire*, had Issue a Daughter *Margaret*, Wife to *Thomas* Lord *Berkley*, and, after his Death, the said Lordship and Mannor descended to the same *Margaret*, and had Issue between them their only Daughter and Heir, *Elisabeth*, married to *Richard Beauchamp* Earl of *Warwick*, who left Issue by her *Margaret*, *Eleanor*, and *Elisabeth*: Which *Margaret*, the Daughter of *Elisabeth*, *John Talbot*, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, took to Wife, and had Issue by her *John Talbot*, Knight, unto whom the said Earl of *Shrewsbury*, in Part of the Property of the said *Margaret* (she being seized of the said Mannor and Lordship, and of all such Lands, &c. which were of the aforesaid *Elisabeth*, the Wife of the said *Richard*, at her Death, according to a Partition thereof made, between the same *Margaret* and her aforesaid Sisters) granted the Lordship and Mannor aforesaid, to him and his Heirs. And that he, the said *John*, had Issue Sir *Thomas Talbot*, Knight, late Viscount *L'Isle*, and *Elisabeth*, now the Wife of Sir *Edward Grey*, Knight, Lord *L'Isle*, and also *Margaret*, late the

<sup>a</sup> Esc. 7 E. IV. post Mort. ejusd. Johan. Vicecom. L'Isle. <sup>b</sup> Esc. 38 H. VI. <sup>c</sup> Lel. Coll. Vol. 3. p. 210. <sup>d</sup> Esc. 32 H. VI. n. 38. <sup>e</sup> Esc. 9 & 10 E. IV. n. 58. <sup>f</sup> Orig. 10 E. IV. Rot. 11. n. 15. <sup>g</sup> Esc. 7 E. IV. n. 4. <sup>h</sup> Ex Vet. Script. in Castro de Berkley. <sup>i</sup> Esc. 32 H. VI. n. 38. <sup>k</sup> Claus. 37 H. VI. n. 40. <sup>l</sup> Cart. 15 E. IV. n. 18. <sup>m</sup> Ex Stemmate de Gray, 4. D. 14. in Coll. Arm. <sup>n</sup> Cart. 15 E. IV. n. 18. <sup>o</sup> Ibid.



Wife of Sir *George Vere*, Knight, and died. After whose Death, the Lordship and Mannor afore said descended to the said *Thomas*, as Son and Heir of the said *John*. After whose Death, it descended to the afore said *Elisabeth* and *Margaret*, as Sisters and Heirs of the same *Thomas*: Which said *Elisabeth*, Sir *Edward Grey*, Knight, took to Wife; and afterwards, the afore said *Margaret* died, without an Heir of her Body begotten, whereby the said Sir *Edward Grey*, Knight, and *Elisabeth* his Wife, are seized of the said Lordship and Mannor, in Demesne as of Fee in Right of the said *Elisabeth*, and had Issue between them, lawfully begotten, *John*, and others. The King, therefore, in Consideration, that *Warine de L'Isle*, and all his Ancestors, had and obtained (by Reason of the Mannor and Lordship afore said) the Name and Dignity of a Baron, and Lord of *L'Isle*, from the Time whereof the Memory of Man is not to the contrary; and that he, and all his Ancestors, by such Name, obtained Place and Sitting, and other Preheminence in the Parliaments and Councils of the Kingdom, as other the Barons of *England* had: Also, contemplating his princely Estate, rendered more sublime by the Number of Subjects, and the Royal Throne so much the more exalted, and the Government of the Kingdom established, when there are in it Men of noble Condition, and of eminent Quality, &c. Therefore grants to the said *Edward*, that he and his Heirs, on the Body of the same *Elisabeth*, shall hereafter be esteemed, taken, and reputed to be Lords and Barons *de L'Isle*, and as Barons, Nobles, and Peers of the Kingdom, &c. according to the Estate of the said Barony of *L'Isle*, of ancient Time belonging or appertaining, as well in Sessions, as in all and every other the Preheminences, &c. as the afore said *Warine*, or any of the Barons, occupying or holding the afore said Lordship, &c. Witnesses *Thomas* Cardinal Archbishop of *Canterbury*; *Thomas* Bishop of *Lincoln*, Chancellor of *England*; *George* Duke of *Clarence*, and *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester*, the King's Brethren; *Henry* Earl of *Essex*, Treasurer of *England*; *Anthony* Earl *Rivers*, Chief Butler of *England*; *Thomas Russel*, Clerk, Keeper of the Privy-Seal; Sir *Thomas Stanley*, of *Stanley*, Steward of the Household; Sir *William Hastings*, of *Hastings*, Chamberlain of the Household, and others. Dated at *Westminster*, 14 March, 15 *Edw.* IV.

This *Edward Grey* Lord *L'Isle*, in 14 *Edw.* IV, was, by <sup>a</sup> Indenture, retained to serve the King in his Dutchy of *Normandy*, and Realm of *France*, with seven Spears, and fifty Archers, for a whole Year; and, on that <sup>a</sup> Account, received for the first Quarter's Wages, 172 *l.* 18 *s.* He was also with the King, 13 August, 1475, 15 *Edw.* IV, in the Field on the Side of a Village, called *Seyntrie*, within *Vermadosse*, near *Peron*, when, with the Assent of him and other Lords, the Offers, made by the *French* King for a Cessation of Arms, were accepted. In 1 *R.* III, he <sup>a</sup> was created Viscount *L'Isle*, in Consideration (as the Preamble of the Patent recites) of his noble Descent, and the Services that he and his Ancestors had performed. And, in 4 *Henry* VII, he was constituted <sup>a</sup> one of the chief Commissioners for choosing Archers in the County of *Warwick*, for the Relief of *Britanny*.

By his last Will and Testament <sup>a</sup>, which bears Date, 17 July, 1492, and the Probate thereof the 25th of August, in 7 *H.* VII, he ordered his Body to be buried in his Tomb in the new Chapel of our Lady, begun by himself to be built in the College of *Astley*, where the Body of *Elisabeth*, his late Wife, lay buried.

He bequeaths to *Jane* his Wife, during her Life, all his Lands and Tenements purchased in *Warwickshire*; as also, all his Lands in *Chilvercoton*, and Mannor of *Bedworth*, &c. in the same County, appointing her to cause some of the said Lands to be amortised, to endow and find a Priest perpetually to sing in the Chapel of *Astley* before-mentioned, for his Soul, and the Soul of his

<sup>a</sup> Ex Autog. penes Cleric. Pelles. <sup>a</sup> Rymer, Vol. 12, p. 846. <sup>a</sup> Rymer, Vol. 12, p. 14 & seq. <sup>a</sup> Rot. Cart. 1 *R.* III. m. 3. <sup>a</sup> Pat. 4 *H.* VII. in dorso. m. 20. <sup>a</sup> Ex Registr. vocat. Dogget. qu. 13. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



late Wife *Elisabeth*, as also, for the Soul of the said *Jane*, and all Christian Souls.

He bequeaths to *Margaret*, his Daughter, his Standing-cup covered, all gilt, and his Salt of Gold. To *Anne* his Daughter, which is married, a Standing-cup covered, all gilt. To *Elisabeth* his Daughter, a Standing-cup covered, all gilt, and a Salt covered, all gilt. And whereas he had intended to marry his Son and Heir, and with the Money given to him, by Reason of the said Marriage, to have preferred and married his said two Daughters, which resteth yet undone, to his great Discomfort: He wills that *Jane* his Wife, to whom, before all other Persons, he assigns the Rule and Governing, as well of his said Son, as of his Daughters, if she may obtain the Ward and Marriage of his said Son, and his Lands: That then she shall marry his said Son and Daughters, for their Honour and Weal, after her Discretion. And whereas he, and *Elisabeth* late his Wife, by their Letters Patents under their Seal of Arms, ordained his well beloved Brother *Thomas Grey*, their Steward of the Mannor of *Drayton* in Com. *Stafford*, with an annual Fee of 20 l. He requires and strictly charges, as well his Son and Heir, as all other Persons who shall have the Ward and Marriage of his said Son, as they will answer before God, that he or they suffer him to enjoy the said Office, during his Life, with the said Fee. And bequeaths to him a standing Cup of Silver covered, a Salt of Silver gilt, two of his Gowns, one of black Sartin furred, and the other with Cloth lined with Silk. Also two of his young Horses, and two Mares, in his Park of *Drayton*. The Residue of his Goods, Chattels, &c. after his Debts, and his Burial, and Funeral Expences paid, he bequeaths to *Jane* his Wife, whom he makes his sole Executrix, concluding:

And I beseech my especial and singular good Lord, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Chancellor of *England*, and the right worshipful and my full trusty Friend, Sir *Reynold Bray* Knight, to be the Supervisors of the said Testament. And to be good and special Mediators, unto my most beholden Sovereign Lord the King, for my said Wife and Children; lowly beseeching his Grace, to have them in his most noble Favour, Tuition, and Defence. And to suffer my said Wife to have the Ward, Marriage, Rule, and Guiding of my said Son and Daughters, before all other Persons. And I beseech my said Sovereign Lord, as for a poor Remembrance, to receive of my said Executrix my Tablet of Gold, enamelled of the Salutation of our Lady. And my said good Lord Chancellor, my high Standing-cup covered, of Silver, gilt and enamelled with Imagery. And also, my singular Friend *Bray*, a Cross of fine Gold set with a Ruby, and five Pearls, and my Gown of Crimson Velvet furred.

He left no Issue, by *Jane* his second Wife; but by *Elisabeth* his first Wife, beforementioned, Daughter of *Thomas Talbot* Viscount *L'Isle*, he had a Son *John*, who succeeded him, and three Daughters, viz. *Margaret*, Wife of *Henry Stafford*, Earl of *Wiltshire*<sup>x</sup>, who died without Issue by her, 24 March, 14 H. VII. *Anne* second Daughter, Wife of Sir *John Willoughby*<sup>y</sup>, Son and Heir of Sir *Henry Willoughby*, of *Wollaton* in Com. *Nottingham*, who<sup>z</sup> died without Issue by her in 3 Edw. VI; as appears by Inquisition taken at *Nottingham*, 23 March, 4 Edw. VI; wherein the Jury found, that Sir *Edward Willoughby*, Knight, was his Brother, whose Son and Heir, *Henry Willoughby*, Esq; was Cousin and Heir to the said Sir *John Willoughby*, and was killed in encountering the Rebels, at *Norwich*, 27 August, 3 Edw. VI, leaving *Thomas* his Son and Heir eight Years, nine Weeks, and one Day old. *Elisabeth*, the youngest, was first<sup>a</sup> married to *Edmund Dudley*, Esq; of the Privy-Chamber to King *Henry the Seventh*, by whom he was Father of *John* Duke of *Northumberland*; and was, in second Marriage, the Wife of Sir *Arthur Plantagenet*, who thereupon, in 15 Henry VIII, was<sup>b</sup>

<sup>x</sup> Ex. Registr. Honor. 31. in Cur. Prærog. Cant.

<sup>y</sup> Esc. 4 Edw. VI. n. 85 in Cur.

<sup>z</sup> Dugdale's Warw. p. 757 & Esc. 4 Edw. VI. n. 85 in Court of Wards.

<sup>a</sup> Esc. 20 H. VII.

<sup>b</sup> Pat. 15 H. VIII. p. 1.



advanced to the Dignity of Viscount *L'Isle*, with Limitation thereof to the Heirs Male of his Body by the same *Elisabeth*.

*John* Viscount *L'Isle*, Son and Heir of *Edward*, was made<sup>c</sup> one of the Knights of the *Bath*, in 19 *Henry VII*, at the Creation of *Henry* Prince of *Wales*, and<sup>d</sup> died on the 6th of *September*, in 20 *Henry VIII*, leaving *Muriel*, his Wife (one of the Daughters of *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*) big with Child, who was delivered 7 Days after his Decease, of a Daughter, named *Elisabeth*.

By his Last Will and Testament, bearing Date the 6th of *September*, 1504 (20 *Henry VII*.) wherein he writes<sup>e</sup> himself *John* Viscount *Lysle*, of hole and parfitte Mynde, and somewhat diseased and seke in Body. First, I bequeth my Soule to Almighty God, to our Lady Saynt *Mary*, and to all the Saynts in Heaven, and my Body to be buried where it shall please my Lord Tresaurier, and my Lady, my Wife, to ordre and dispose for me.

He bequeaths to the Mother-Church of *Salisbury* 10 s. to the Church of *Drayton-Basset*, a Gown of black Velvet, to make a Vestment; to the Chapel of *Kingston-Lysle*, a Pair of Vestments, at the Discretion of the Lady his Wife, and to the Church of *Sparsal* a Pair of Vestments.

He bequeaths to *Thomas Blount* his Gown of *French* Tawney, lined with black Sarcenet, two other Gowns, his Coat of black Damask, and his grey Hobby. To his Cousin *Thomas Hungerford*, his Gown of black Camblet furred with Fox, his Doublet of crimson Sattin, his Doublet of black Sattin, and his Riding-Coat of black Velvet. He bequeaths to *Richard Bennet*, his Chaplain, 4 Marks, and the like Sum to *Sir Oliver Poole*, his Chaplain; and Legacies to his Servants, which were numerous. And wills, that his Executors find a devout Priest to sing for his Soul two Years after his Decease.

He bequeaths to his Uncle *Thomas Gray*, and Dame *Isabel* his Wife, a Fee of 20 l. per Annum, out of his Mannor of *Drayton-Basset*. And to *Thomas Blount*, for Term of his Life, a Fee of 10 Marks, for the Exercising and Keeping of the Office of the Bailihip and Parkership of *Chaddeley-Corbet*, in the County of *Worcester*, besides all other Grants made to him, according to the Letters Patent under his Seal. And having enfeofed *Thomas* Lord *Howard*, *Edward Howard*, Knight, *Oliver Poole*, Clerk, and *Thomas Basset*, Gent. in his Mannor of *Payneswick*, in the County of *Gloucester*, the Mannor of *Ribbesford*, with the Advowson of the Church, and *Chaddeley-Corbet*, in the County of *Worcester*; the Mannor of *Bedworth*, with the Advowson of the Church, in the County of *Warwick*, and his Mannor of *Kybworth*, in the County of *Leicester*, by several Deeds bearing Date 5 *September*, 20 *Henry VIII*. His Will is, that *Thomas Blount* shall have, for his Life, 20 Marks Annuity, out of his Mannor of *Chaddeley-Corbet*, clear of all Charges: Also, that the said Feoffees make a good and sufficient Estate in Law to his Lady Dame *Muriel*, his Wife, of the Remainder of the said Mannor of *Chaddeley-Corbet*, and in all other the Mannors, with the Advowson of all the Churches aforesaid, with their Appurtenances, to hold for Term of her Life, the Remainder to his right Heirs for ever in Fee; and further bequeaths to her the Residue of all his moveable Goods, after his Debts paid, and his Will performed; and constitutes her and *Thomas Blount*, Executors. Which Will was proved 8 *October*, the same Year 1504.

It is further apparent, that *Elisabeth*, his only Child, before-mentioned, was not born till after his Decease, as he makes no Mention of her in his Will. But, in 4 *Henry VIII*, *Sir Charles Brandon*, Knight<sup>f</sup>, obtained a Grant of her Wardship and Marriage; and, in order thereto, was advanced to the Degree and Honour of Viscount *L'Isle*, and to the Heirs Male of his Body, by *Elisabeth Grey*, then Viscountess *L'Isle*<sup>g</sup>, as she is stiled in the Patent, 5 *Henry VIII*; but, she dying before Solemnising and Consummation of the said Mar-

<sup>c</sup> Anstis on Knights of the Bath, 4to, p. 47. Vol. 1. p. 466.

<sup>e</sup> Holgrave, qu. 17.

<sup>d</sup> Esc. 20 H. VIII. & Dugd. Warwicksh.

<sup>f</sup> Pat. 4 H. VIII. p. 2.

<sup>g</sup> Pat. 5 H. VIII.

pars 1.



riage<sup>h</sup>, he, in 15 Henry VIII, resigned the said Patent of Viscount *L'Isle*, to be cancelled in Chancery, in order to the King's granting the said Honour to *Arthur Plantagenet*, and his Heirs Male, by *Elisabeth*, Sister and Heir of *John Grey Viscount L'Isle*.

I am not unapprised, that *Dugdale*<sup>i</sup> (who quotes *Brook* for his Authority) reports, that the before-mentioned *Elisabeth*, contracted to Sir *Charles Brandon*, was the first Wife of *Henry Courtney Earl of Devon*, and that she died without Issue by him; but it is evident from the said Patent, of 15 Henry VIII, that she died affianced to Sir *Charles Brandon*, before Consummation.

Having thus proved, that *Elisabeth*, sole Daughter and Heir of *John Viscount L'Isle*, died without Issue, the next, in Succession, was *Elisabeth*<sup>k</sup>, Sister and Heir to the said *John Viscount L'Isle*, who was first married to *Edmund Dudley*, Esq; by whom she had Issue<sup>l</sup>, *John Duke of Northumberland*, her Son and Heir; but, by *Arthur Plantagenet* before-mentioned, she had no Male Issue. I shall therefore now recite the principal Actions of the said *Edmund Dudley*, and his Descendants.

The said *Edmund Dudley* was the Son and Heir of *John Dudley*, Esq; <sup>m</sup> second Son to *John Lord Dudley*, Knight of the Garter, and *Elisabeth* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *John Berkley*, of *Beverston* in *Gloucestershire*.

Which *John Dudley*, Esq; had to <sup>n</sup> Wife *Elisabeth*, one of the two Daughters and Coheirs of *John Bramshot*, Esq; Lord<sup>o</sup> of the Mannors of *Galton*, *Calbourne*, and *Whitwell*, in the *Isle of Wight*, as also of the Mannor of *Bramshot*, in Com. *Southamp.* from whence his Ancestors were denominated<sup>p</sup>, who were Heirs of the Families of *Tregois*, *Bobam*, and *Lisley*; and their Son and Heir, *Edmund Dudley*<sup>q</sup>, was 36 Years of Age on his Mother's Death, the 12th of *October*, 14 Henry VII.

Having been trained up in the Study of the Laws at *Grey's-Inn*, where his Arms were<sup>r</sup> then set up in a Window of the Chapel (which is a further Evidence of his Descent) he was such a Proficient, and his eminent Abilities were so conspicuous, that, in 1 Henry VII, that prudent Monarch made Choice of him to be one of his Privy Council, though he was then but in the 23d Year of his Age, *propter prudentiam singularem, fidem, & gravitatem*<sup>s</sup>, saith *Polydore Virgil*.

In 1492, 8 Henry VII, he was one of those great Men in the King's Army near *Bologne*<sup>t</sup>, who offered Propositions to King *Henry the Seventh*, for a Peace to be concluded between *England* and *France*, and requested him to comply therein: And accordingly the King commanded *Robert Bishop of Bath*, *Giles de Aubeny* Lord of *Aubeny*, Knight of the Garter, and Lieutenant-General of the Town and Marches of *Calais*, to treat with those deputed by the *French King*<sup>u</sup>; and in the Articles signed at *Pontile* near *Turon*, the 6th of *November*, 1492, the Duke of *Bedford*, Uncle to the King, and Admiral of *England*, Deputy of the *Cinque-Ports*, Keeper of the Privy-Seal, and the King's Lieutenant in *Calais*, was appointed Conservator of the said Peace. And, in 10 Henry VII, he obtained the Wardship and Marriage of *Elisabeth*, Daughter and Coheir of *Edward Grey*, Viscount *L'Isle*, as I have before recited.

In 14 Henry VII, 1499, the King calling together the three Estates of the Kingdom to meet at *Westminster*<sup>w</sup>, he was, with the Lord *Dacre* of the *South*, and *Richard Sackfield*, Esq; those of that Part of the Temporal Lords and Commons of the Diocess of *Chichester*, who assented to, and signed the Peace made with *France*, at the Staples on the Sea near *Bologne*, the 3d of *November*, 1492.

<sup>h</sup> Pat 15 H. VIII. pars 1. in Capella Rot. <sup>i</sup> Baronage of Engl. Vol. 1. p. 642. <sup>k</sup> Pat. 15 H. VIII. p. 1. ut supra. <sup>l</sup> Ex tumulo Amb. Comes Warw. fil. and her. Joh. Duc. Northumb. in Capella St. Mar. in Warw. <sup>m</sup> Ex Stemmate apud Penhurst penes Gul. Perry, Arm. <sup>n</sup> Esc. 14 H. VII. & <sup>o</sup> 2 H. VIII. & ex Tumulo Ambros. Comes Warw. apud Warw. <sup>p</sup> Ex Stemmate ut supra. <sup>q</sup> Esc. 14 H. VII. <sup>r</sup> Dugdale's Orig. Jurid. <sup>s</sup> Polyd. Virg. p. 567. n. 10 & 569. n. 30. <sup>t</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Vol. 12. p. 490. <sup>u</sup> Ibid. p. 499. <sup>w</sup> Ibid. p. 710 & seq.



In 19 *Henry VII*, being then <sup>x</sup> Speaker of the House of Commons in Parliament, he was to have been called to the Degree of Serjeant at Law, on the 13th of *November*, but petitioned that he might be discharged from taking that Degree <sup>y</sup>. Whereupon the King directed his Precept to *William Bishop of London*, then Lord-Keeper of the Great-Seal, commanding his Forbearance to make out any Writ for that Purpose. The next Mention, I find of him, is in 22 *Henry VII* <sup>z</sup>, when he obtained a Grant of the Stewardship of the *Rape of Hastings*, in *Com. Suff.*

But whether he, with *Sir Richard Empson*, another Lawyer, discerning King *Henry* to be of a frugal Disposition, did first project the Taking Advantage against such as had transgressed the Penal Laws, by exacting from them the Forfeitures according to those Statutes <sup>a</sup>: Or, whether the King perceiving so fair a Gap open, to take vast Sums of Money from his Subjects, and finding those Persons fit Instruments for his Purpose, put them on such Courses for filling his Coffers, is not clearly made out. But these were they whom he constituted <sup>b</sup> his *Judices Fiscales*, of whom the Lord *Verulam* saith, *Dudley was an eminent Man, and one that could put hateful Business into good Language*. Their Course was (as the same Author <sup>c</sup> observed) to proceed secretly to the Outlawry against Men, and then seize their Estates.

But King *Henry the Eighth*, in the first Year of his Reign, having, by his Proclamation <sup>d</sup>, divulged, that whosoever had received Injury by the Injustice of any, should, on Complaint to him, have Redress. This Liberty so encouraged those who had suffered (and were sufficiently embittered against them) that nothing would then satisfy but their Lives; on which the King gave Way, as *Stow* relates, that they might be legally proceeded against.

Thereupon this *Edmund Dudley* was committed to the Tower, and being arraigned at *Guilddhall* in *London* <sup>e</sup>, on *Monday, July 16, 1509*, 1 *Henry VIII*, before *Edward Duke of Buckingham*, *Henry Earl of Northumberland*, *Thomas Earl of Surry*, *George Earl of Shrewsbury*, *Thomas Earl of Derby*, *Thomas Prior of St. John's of Hierusalem in England*, *Sir Charles Somerset*, Knight, *Lord Herbert*, *Stephen Jennings*, then Mayor of the City of *London*, *Sir John Fineaux*, Knight, *Sir Robert Rede*, Knight, *John Boteler*, *William Grevile*, *Sir Thomas Lovel*, Knight, *Sir Edward Poynings*, Knight, *Sir Henry Marney*, Knight, *Sir Thomas Englefield*, Knight, and *Sir Thomas Drury*, Knight, Justices to inquire, &c. on an Indictment of divers High Treasons: And, being thereupon convicted, was beheaded on *Tower-hill* (with *Empson*, who had been tried at *Northampton*) on the 28th of *August*, 2 *Henry VIII*, by the King's special Precept <sup>f</sup>, and was buried in the *Black-Fryers Church*.

He was a long Time imprisoned in the Tower before he suffered; and it was reported, the Queen had procured him a Pardon, as *Stow* relates <sup>g</sup>, but the importunate Clamours of the People brought him to that unfortunate End. During his Confinement, he wrote a Book, intituled <sup>h</sup> *Arbor Reipublicæ*, dedicated to King *Henry the Eighth*, but never came to his Hand, as *Stow* writes.

In the Catalogue of the Manuscripts <sup>i</sup> of *England* and *Ireland*, printed at *Oxford*, 1697, it is said to be among the Manuscripts of *William Bromley* of *Bagington* in *Warwickshire*, Esq; and this Account is given of it:

“ The Tree of Commonwealth, by *Edmund Dudley*, Esq; late Counsellor to King *Henry the Seventh*, the same *Edmund* being, at the Compiling thereof, Prisoner in the Tower, in 1 *Henry VIII*.”

The Effect of this Treatise consisteth in three especial Points:

<sup>x</sup> Herbert's Hist. of H. VIII. p. 6. <sup>y</sup> Billæ Sign. 19 H. VII. <sup>z</sup> Pat. 22 H. VII. p. 2.  
<sup>a</sup> Bacon's Hist. of H. VII. p. 209. <sup>b</sup> Polyd. Virg. p. 613. n. 10. <sup>c</sup> Hist. of H. VII. ut  
antea. <sup>d</sup> Ibid. <sup>e</sup> Petit. in Parl. for Restit. of his Son, 3 H. VIII. <sup>f</sup> Stow's Annals,  
p. 409. <sup>g</sup> Ibid. p. 488. <sup>h</sup> Balei Cent. XI. de Script. Brit. p. 72. <sup>i</sup> Cat. Lib. MS. Ang.  
& Hib. Oxon. Tom. 2. p. 102.



*First*, Remembrance of God, and the Faithful of his holy Church; in the which, every Christian Prince had Need to begin.

*Second*, Of some Conditions and Demeanors, necessary in every Prince, both for his Honour, and Assurety of his Continuance.

*Third*, Of the Tree of Commonwealth, which toucheth People of every Degree, of the Conditions and Demeanors they should be of.

The Lord *Herbert*, in his Life of King *Henry the Eighth*, gives <sup>k</sup> this Account of him :

“ *Dudley*, a Gentleman of Birth, and of such Parts, as he was chosen Speaker of the Parliament in 19 *Henry VII*, having, with *Empson*, exceeded their Bounds, were detested of all, but especially the poorer Sort, who found it easier to hate than to pay. And new and strange Crimes were found and objected against them, as appears on their Indictment on Record, wherein they are accused of Conspiracy against the King and State. And *first*, that during the Sicknes of the late King, in *March* last, they summoned certain of their Friends to be in Arms at an Hour's Warning; and, upon the Death of the said King, to hasten to *London*. Out of which, and other Circumstances, it was collected by the Jury, that their Intention was to seize on the Person of the new King, and so to assume the sole Government: Or, when they could not attain this, to destroy him. Of which Crimes, how improbable soever, *Dudley*, in his Trial at *Guildhall*, *London*, *July*, 16, 1509, and *Empson* at *Northampton*, were found guilty by the Juries. And, the importunate Clamours of the People prevailing with the King, he, for Satisfaction to the Commonalty, commanded their Heads to be struck off, doing therein (as thought by many) more like a good King, than a good Master.”

This *Edmund Dudley* <sup>l</sup>, had to his first Wife *Anne*, Daughter to Sir *Andrew Windsor*, Knight; and, to his second, *Elisabeth*, Daughter of *Edward* Viscount *L'Isle*, before-mentioned, who survived him, and was secondly married to Sir *Arthur Plantagenet* Viscount *L'Isle* <sup>m</sup>, so created in 15 *Henry VIII*, by reason of his said Marriage with her, and to hold and enjoy the said Title to him and his Heirs Male, begotten on the said *Elisabeth*, Sister, and (then) sole Heir of *John Grey*, late Viscount *L'Isle*. By her first Husband *Edmund Dudley*, she had Issue three Sons <sup>n</sup>, *John*, *Andrew*, and *Jerome*; also a Daughter *Elisabeth*, married to *William* Lord *Stourton*.

*John Dudley*, the eldest Son, was scarce <sup>o</sup> eight Years of Age at his Father's Death, and had to his <sup>p</sup> Guardian *Edmund Guilford*, Esq; of the Body to the King, who, by his Petition <sup>q</sup> exhibited in Parliament, 3 *Henry VIII*, obtained <sup>r</sup> a special Act for the Repeal of the said *Edmund's* Attainder, and Restitution of the said *John* his Son, in Name, Blood, and Degree, so that he might enjoy all his Father's Lands, &c.

Being, therefore, so very young, many Years passed before he appeared in any publick Employment; but, in 15 *Henry VIII*, being in the 22d Year of his Age, he was in that Expedition under *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, General of those Forces sent into *France* against the Duke of *Bourbon*, and, for his valiant Behaviour <sup>s</sup>, was then knighted by the said Duke of *Suffolk*.

In 19 *Henry VIII*, he <sup>t</sup> accompanied Cardinal *Wolsey* into *France*, who was then sent Ambassador there; and, in 26 *Henry VIII*, being stiled <sup>u</sup> the King's Servant, he had a Grant of the Office of Master of the Armory in the Tower of *London*, for Life, with the accustomed Wages of twelve Pence *per Diem* for himself, and three Pence *per Diem* for his Groom.

<sup>k</sup> Hist. Eng. Vol. 2. p. 3 and 4. <sup>l</sup> Ex Stemmate Famil. de Dudley apud Penshurst. <sup>m</sup> Pat. 15 H. VIII. p. 1. <sup>n</sup> Ex Stemmate. <sup>o</sup> P. q. r. Petit. in Parl. 3 H. VIII. <sup>s</sup> Stow's Annals in 15 H. VIII. <sup>t</sup> Ibid. An. 19 H. VIII. <sup>u</sup> Pat. 26 H. VIII. p. 1.



In 31 *Henry VIII*, he was <sup>w</sup> Master of the Horse to the Lady *Anne of Cleve*, then landed in *England*, in order to her Marriage with King *Henry*: And, in 32 *Henry VIII*, in those triumphant Justs, holden at *Westminster*, on 1 *May*, and several Days after, he was the first and principal of the Challengers against all Comers, being in sumptuous Apparel, and his Horse trapped with white Velvet. And, growing further into the King's Favour, he was on <sup>x</sup> the 12th of *March*, in 34 *Henry VIII*, advanced to the Title of Viscount *L'Isle*, in Consideration (as the Preamble sets forth) not only of the acceptable and laudable Services of his beloved and faithful Subject, Sir *John Dudley*, Knight, variously done; but also his Vigilance, Foresight, Faithfulness, Valour, and illustrious Descent. To hold the said Title to him and the Heirs Male of his Body, and to enjoy Seat and Place in Parliament among the Viscounts of the Realm of *England*, and in all other the King's Dominions, with a Grant of an Annuity of 20 Marks, payable half-yearly, out of the Revenues of the Counties of *Warwick*, and *Leicester*, by the Sheriffs of the said Counties.

In the same 34 *Henry VIII*, he was <sup>y</sup> constituted Lord High Admiral of *England* for Life; at which Time, Sir *John Hayward* <sup>z</sup> gives this Character of him: That he was a Person very comely, and of a Spirit highly aspiring, neither wanting Skill, Industry, or Resolution to attempt great Matters.

In 25 *Henry VIII* <sup>a</sup>, he commanded a Fleet of 200 Sail, and landed the King's Army at *Leith* in *Scotland*, to which Place they set Fire, and having wasted *Edinburgh*, and scoured those Seas, he landed 28 *July* in the Haven at *Bologne* in *France*, with 900 Men: And having valiantly behaved at that Siege, on the Surrender thereof, he was left by the King his Lieutenant there, in *Sept.* 1544, with sufficient Forces, and Directions what to do on all Occasions.

Soon after, the Dauphin coming before the Place with an Army of 52000 Men, and laying close Siege thereto <sup>b</sup>, he made a gallant Defence, though the Walls were much shattered: And, when the Dauphin had entered the base Town, divers of the *English* being slain in the Defence of it, he, by a brave Salley, beat out the *French* again, with the Loss of above 800 of their Men, then esteemed the best Soldiers in that Realm.

On 8 *Jan.* 1546, 37 *Henry VIII*, the King styling him <sup>c</sup> his beloved and faithful Counsellor, Sir *John Dudley*, Knight of the Garter, Viscount *L'Isle*, Baron *Malpas*, Lord High Admiral of *England*, *Ireland*, and *Aquitain*, orders him, on the Intreaty of the King of *Portugal*, to permit all Persons carrying Wheat to that Country to pass unmolested.

On 27 *March*, 1546, the King (as the Patent <sup>d</sup> imports) fully confiding in the Loyalty, Wisdom, Valour, Industry, Diligence, Experience, and Integrity of his most beloved Cousin and Counsellor, *John* Viscount *L'Isle*, Lord High Admiral of *England*, &c. constitutes him his Lieutenant-General, and Commander in Chief of all his Forces at Sea, designed to go against the *French*, with Orders to invade their Dominions, and empowering him to muster all Officers and Soldiers, &c. and to hear and determine all Causes thereto belonging, as well relating to Life, &c. With a Mandate to all Persons to be obedient to him.

Whereupon he landed 5000 Men upon their Coasts, fired *Treport*, and other Villages, with the Loss but of one Man; and, the *French* making Head against him, he offered them Battle <sup>e</sup>, which they refused, returning with the Loss of all their Cost, as my Author observes.

The same Year being <sup>f</sup> styled *John* Viscount *L'Isle*, Baron of *Malpas*, and *Somerie*, Knight of the Garter, Lord of *Basset* and of *Tey*, and Lord High Admiral of *England*, &c. he was empowered with *Cuthbert* Bishop of *Durham*, and *Nicholas Wotton*, LL.D. Dean of *Canterbury* and *York*, to take the Oath of *Francis* the *French* King, for observing the Articles of Peace, signed

<sup>w</sup> Hollinshed, p. 919. b. n. 10.    <sup>x</sup> Pat. 34 H. VIII. p. 3.    <sup>y</sup> Ib. p. 7.    <sup>z</sup> Life of E. VI. p. 16.    <sup>a</sup> Stow's Ann. Herbert's Hist. of H. VIII. in Hist. of Eng. Vol. 2. p. 248.    <sup>b</sup> Life of E. VI. ut supra, p. 17.    <sup>c</sup> Rymer's Foedera, Tom. 15 p. 84.    <sup>d</sup> Pat. 37 H. VIII. p. 13. in Rymer, ut supra.    <sup>e</sup> Life of E. VI. ut antea.    <sup>f</sup> Rymer, Vol. 15. p. 98.



in the Tents of the Field near the Town of *Campens*, in the Confines of *Ardres* and *Guisnes*, 7 June, 1546: At which were also present *Henry* the Dauphin, the Duke of *Brittany*, the Cardinals of *Lorraine*, *Ferratia*, *Bellay*, *Castilione*, and *Mendon*; *John* of *Bourbon*, Count de *Anguyen*; *Charles* de *Bourbon*, Duke of *Monpensier*; the Lord *Hennebault*, Admiral of *France*; with many other Bishops, Earls, and Barons of *France*: And, of the *Englisch*, *Henry* *Manners*, Earl of *Rutland*; *Edward* Lord *Clinton*, and others: And our King took the Oath, 7 August, 1546.

On 16 Oct. following, he <sup>s</sup> was impowered, with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Lord Great-Master of the Household, the Treasurer of the Household, and others, by their Warrants made out to the Treasurers, Receivers, and all others having the King's Money in their Hands, to pay all Persons every such Sum or Sums of Money, as they shall appoint by their said Warrant, for past Reward, Conduct, Entertainment of Garrisons, Ordinary or Extraordinary, Fortifications, Provision of Victuals, Ordnance, and all Kind of Munition, and for all and every other Thing or Things, concerning the Expedition of any of the King's Affairs: And, that such Warrants so issued out by them, from 28 Sept. last past, shall be a sufficient Discharge to the said Treasurers, Receivers, &c. against him and his Heirs and Successors, and to remain in full Force till *Easter* next.

King *Henry* the Eighth now drawing near his End, I find no further Mention of him in that Reign, other than by the Last Will and Testament of that Monarch, bearing Date the 30th of *December*, 1546, 38 *Henry* VIII, he was <sup>h</sup> appointed by him one of his Executors, *Willing, commanding, and praying them, to take on them the Occupation and Performance of the same. And that they be Counsellors of the Privy-Council with our said Son Prince Edward, in all Matters concerning both his private Affairs, and publick Affairs of the Realm, and that none of them presume to meddle with any of our Treasure, or do any Thing appointed by our said Will, alone, unless the most Part of the whole Number consent, and by Writing agree to the same; but that the most Part of them may lawfully do, what they shall think most convenient for the Execution of our Will, without being troubled by our said Son, or any other, for the same.*

And, by his said Will, for the Kindness and good Service, his said Executors had shewn unto him, he bequeaths to each of them the following Legacies: First, To the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, 500 Marks; to the Lord *Wriothesley*, 500 l. to the Lord *St. John*, 500 l. to the Lord *Russel*, 500 l. to the Earl of *Hertford*, 500 l. to the Viscount *L'Isle*, 500 l. But, to the rest of them, he left only 300 l. each, viz. to the Bishop of *Durham*, Sir *Anthony* *Brown*, Sir *William* *Paget*, Sir *Anthony* *Denny*, Sir *William* *Herbert*, Justice *Montague*, Sir *Edward* *North*, Sir *Edward* *Wotton*, and Dr. *Wotton*.

In less than three Weeks after the King's Death, he was, by the Protector, removed from being Lord High Admiral, though, by Patent from the late King, he held it for Life <sup>i</sup>. And, on 17 Feb. 1547, 1 *Edw.* VI, Sir *Thomas* *Seymour*, Brother to the Protector, had a Grant of that Office in as full and ample Manner, as Sir *John* *Dudley*, Lord Viscount *L'Isle*, Baron of *Malpas*, Lord *Basset* of *Drayton* and *Tyasse*, High Admiral of *England*, &c. held or occupied the same. However, as some Compensation, he <sup>k</sup> was the same Day, 17 Feb. 1 *Edw.* VI, created Earl of *Warwick*, by reason of his Descent through his Mother, from *Margaret* the eldest Daughter and Coheir of *Richard* *Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*; and was also made Great Chamberlain of *England*. Likewise, soon <sup>l</sup> after, he obtained a Grant of *Warwick* Castle, the Seat of his Ancestors, with the Mannor, and divers other great Lordships and Lands in that County.

In the first Year of King *Edward* the Sixth, being <sup>m</sup> made Lieutenant-General of the Army, then sent into *Scotland*, by his Conduct and Courage principally,

<sup>s</sup> Rymer, Vol. 15. p. 102.

<sup>i</sup> Rymer, Vol. 15. p. 127.  
of E. VI. p. 15.

<sup>h</sup> Ex Registr. vocat Allen, qu. 32. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.

<sup>k</sup> Pat. 1 E. VI. p. 6.

<sup>l</sup> Pat. 1 E. VI. p. 9.

<sup>m</sup> Life



that signal Victory was obtained over the Scots at *Muscleborough*; and, observing the Valour and Deportment of such who were under his Command, he<sup>a</sup> conferred the Honour of Knighthood on several of them, being impowered to reward those he found meritorious.

On 4 *March* 1 *Edw.* VI, bearing<sup>o</sup> the Title of *John* Earl of *Warwick*, Viscount *L'Isle*, Baron of *Malpas* and *Somery*, Knight of the Garter, Lord *Basset* of *Drayton*, and *Tyasse*, and Great Chamberlain of *England*, he was commissioned with *John* Lord *Russel*, Keeper of the Privy-Seal, *Thomas* Lord *Seymour* of *Sudley*, Knight of the Garter, and Lord High Admiral, and Sir *William* *Paget*, Secretary of State, to settle all Matters with the *French* Ambassadors in *England*, relating to the Peace made between King *Henry the Eighth*, deceased, and *Francis* the *French* King; as also the Boundaries of the Marches of *Bologne*, &c.

In 3 *Edw.* VI, he commanded<sup>p</sup> all those Forces sent against the Rebels in *Norfolk*, headed by *Ket*, a Tanner, of which having slain about 5000, he took *Ket* himself, and settled all in Quiet there. Also 28 *Oct.* 1549, 3 *Edw.* VI, the King recites<sup>q</sup>, that, in Consideration of the good and faithful Services of *John* Earl of *Warwick*, Viscount *L'Isle*, Knight of the Garter, Great Chamberlain of *England*, and President of the Council of the Principality of *Wales*, he grants to him the Office of Lord High Admiral of *England*, *Ireland*, *Wales*, *Calais*, and *Bologne*, and Marches of the same; of *Normandy*, *Gascony*, and *Aquitain*, and High Admiral of his Fleet and Seas, with the same Powers as Sir *Thomas* *Seymour* Lord *Sudley* had, which were very extensive.

After which, surrendering<sup>r</sup> his Letters Patents into the *Chancery* to be cancelled, of the Office of Lord High Chamberlain of *England*, *William*, Marquis of *Northampton*, and Earl of *Essex*, was appointed thereto, 4 *Feb.* 1550, 4 *Edw.* VI. And, on the 20th of the same Month and Year, the King recites, That whereas *Henry the Eighth*, late King of *England*, granted to his most beloved Cousin and Counsellor, *Charles*, late Duke of *Suffolk*, deceased, the Office of Lord Steward of the Household, by the Name of Great Master of the Household, or the Great Master of the King's Household: And, whereas by Act of Parliament in *May*, 22 *Henry* VIII, it was enacted, That during the Time the late Duke of *Suffolk*, and his Successors in the said Office, should enjoy the said Post of Lord Steward, they should be called Lord Steward of the King's Household, as by the said Act appears. That attributing much to the Loyalty, Wisdom, and Virtue of his beloved Cousin and Counsellor, *John* Earl of *Warwick*, &c.<sup>s</sup> and having always experienced his Constancy in the Christian Religion, his Valour in War, Sedition, and Riots, his friendly and faithful Inclination towards him, and desiring his Abode and Residence in his Palace, and Attendance on his royal Person: By Advice of his Privy-Council, he grants to the said Earl of *Warwick*, the Office of Lord Steward, or Great Master of his Household for Life, with all Fees, Wages, &c. as the said Duke of *Suffolk*, Earl of *Wiltshire*, or any Steward of the King's Household, held or enjoyed. And commands, that the said Earl of *Warwick* have his Letters Patent without Fine or Fee, great or small, to his Use to be paid.

In 5 *Edw.* VI, he was employed<sup>t</sup>, with *William* Marquis of *Northampton*, in an Ambassy to the *French* King; and, on 20 *April*, the same Year<sup>u</sup>, was constituted Earl Marshal of *England*. And, after being<sup>v</sup> made Warden of all the Marches towards *Scotland*, he was, 11 *Oct.* the same Year<sup>x</sup>, advanced to the Dignity of Duke of *Northumberland*, at which Time there was no other Duke, except his Brother, the Duke of *Suffolk*, Father of Lady *Jane*.

Being therefore, superior to all others in Titles of Honour, and in Authority and Power; and observing the King very declining in his Health, he aspired to settle the Crown in his Family, and, to that End, brought about the Marriage of the Lord *Guilford* *Dudley*, his fourth Son (his three eldest having Wives living) with the Lady *Jane* *Grey*, eldest Daughter to *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Frances*, Daugh-

<sup>a</sup> MS. in Offic. Arm. [M. 9.] f. 50. b.      <sup>o</sup> Rymer's *Fœdera*, Tom. 15, p. 135, & seq.  
<sup>p</sup> Stow's Ann. in 3 E. VI.      <sup>q</sup> Rymer, p. 194.      <sup>r</sup> Ibid. p. 203.      <sup>s</sup> Ibid. p. 208.  
<sup>t</sup> Life of E. VI. p. 123.      <sup>u</sup> Pat. 5 E. VI. p. 4.      <sup>v</sup> Ibid. p. 7.      <sup>x</sup> Pat. 5 E. VI. p. 4.  
V O L. I.      G      ter



ter to *Mary*, second Sister to King *Henry the Eighth*. After which, by his Interest, and Power, a Patent was sealed by the King for the said Lady *Jane's* Succession to the Crown on his Demise, excluding his two Sisters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*. Which Letters Patent were subscribed by all the Privy-Council, as also the greatest Part, both for Number and Power of the Nobility, the King's learned Council, and all the Judges, except Sir *James Hales*, one of the Justices of the *Common-Pleas*. Some (as Sir *John Hayward* recites) being guided by particular Interest, for that they were possessed of much Monastery and Chantry Land, which, if Religion should alter through Queen *Mary's* Coming to the Crown, they might be in Danger to lose; and others by Fear of, or Obligation to this Duke, then so potent, and almost absolute in the Government of the State, whereby it was supposed he could make any Title good, either by his Authority or his Sword.

But I leave it to the Reader's Judgment, whether it may not be more justly said, they feared an Alteration in Religion, on Queen *Mary's* Accession to the Throne, through which View they were induced to alter the Succession. Sir *John Hayward* further relates, 'That he contrived to get the Princess *Mary* into his Hands, causing the King to write his Letters for her Coming to him in his Sickness. But she, being made sensible of the Design, when she was within half a Day's Journey of *London*, diverted her Course another Way.'

Being greatly in Favour with the King, he procured to himself many beneficial Grants. On 19 May, 5 *Edw. VI.* the King, in Consideration of the true, faithful, and acceptable Services, of his dear Cousin and Counsellor, *John Earl of Warwick*, Earl-Marshal of *England*, and Great Master and Steward of his Household, grants to him, his Heirs, and Assigns, for ever, the capital Mansion of *Otford*, together with the Mannor of *Otford*, in *Kent*, and the two Parks thereto belonging, with all Rights, Members, and Appurtenances thereto belonging, in the said County of *Kent*.

On the Demise of King *Edward the Sixth*, the Lady *Jane Dudley* was proclaimed Queen, 10 July, having been conveyed from the Court at *Greenwich*, to the *Tower*; where she was received as Queen, according to the Letters Patents, signed by King *Edward*, 21 June last past. The 12 July, the Queen and the Council with her in the *Tower* had Advice, That the Lady *Mary* was at *Keninghall Castle* in *Norfolk*, with the Earl of *Bath*, Sir *Thomas Wharton*, Son to the Lord *Wharton*, Sir *John Mordant*, Son to the Lord *Mordant*, and many of the Gentlemen of that County; and that the Earl of *Suffex* and his Son, *Henry Ratcliff*, were also coming to her.

On which the Council immediately concluded, to send the Duke of *Suffolk*, with other Noblemen and Forces, to fetch the Lady *Mary* to the *Tower*; but the Queen his Daughter with many Tears requested the whole Council, that her Father might remain with her; and thereupon the Council, as my Author observes, persuaded the Duke of *Northumberland*, to take it upon him, Saying that no Man was so fit therefore, because, he that had atchieved the Victory at *Norfolk* once already, was so feared, that none durst once lift up their Weapon against him; besides, that he was the best Man of War in the Realm, as well for the Ordering of his Camps and Soldiers, both in Battle, and in their Tents, as also by Experience, Knowledge, and Wisdom, he could animate his Army with witty Persuasions, and also pacify and allay his Enemies Pride, with his stout Courage, or else dissuade them, if Need were, from their Enterprize. Finally, said they, the Queen will in no wise grant, that her Father should take it on him, wherefore, we think it good, if it may please your Grace, it lieth in you to remedy the Matter.

It appears from the same Author, and others, that the Duke was not forward to take on him the Enterprize, being jealous of the Fidelity of the Council to him, and that during his Absence, they would more easily be wrought

<sup>1</sup> Heyward's Life of E. VI. p. 173, 176.

<sup>2</sup> Ib. p. 178.

<sup>3</sup> Pat. 5 E. VI.

<sup>4</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 610.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid.



on to deliver up the Queen his Daughter-in-Law. However, the very same Night, he sent for both Lords, Knights, &c. that were to go with him; and, the next Morning early, called for his Armour, at *Durham Place*, where he appointed all his Retinue to meet; and by his Order, Carts laden with Ammunition, &c. and Field-pieces were sent forward<sup>d</sup>. Also, that no Time might be lost, he the same Morning, went to the *Tower*, and moved the Council to send their Powers after him to *New-Market*, as had been before determined, which they promised to do. At which Time, he is said to make the following Address to the Council<sup>e</sup>:

‘ My Lords, I and these other noble Personages, with the whole Army, that now go forth, as well for the Behalf of you and yours, as for the Establishing of the Queen’s Highness, shall not only adventure our Lives amongst our Adversaries in the open Fields, but also we do leave the Conservations of ourselves, Children, and Families at Home here with you, as altogether committed to your Truth and Fidelities, whom if we thought ye would, through Malice, Conspiracy, or Dissension, leave us your Friends in the Briars and betray us, we could as well sundry Ways foresee and provide for our own Safeguards, as any of you, by betraying us, can do for yours. But now, upon the only Trust and Faithfulness of your Honours, whereof we think ourselves most assured, we do hazard our Lives, which Trust and Promise, if ye shall violate, hoping thereby of Life and Promotion, yet shall not God count you innocent of our Bloods, neither acquit you of the sacred and holy Oath of Allegiance, made freely by you, to this virtuous Lady the Queen’s Highness, who by your, and our Enticement, is rather by Force placed thereon, than by her own Seeking and Request. Consider also that God’s Cause, which is the Preferment of his Word, and Fear of Papists Entrance, hath been (as ye have here before always said) the original Ground, whereupon ye even at the first Motion granted your good Wills and Consents thereunto, as by your Hands Writing appeareth; and think not the contrary, but, if you mean Deceit, though not forthwith, yet hereafter God will revenge the same.

‘ I can say no more but in this troublesome Time, wish you to use constant Hearts, abandoning all Malice, Envy, and private Affections. I have not spoken to you in this Sort upon any Distrust I have of your Truths, of which always I have hitherto conceived a trusty Confidence; but I have put you in Remembrance thereof, what Chance of Variance soever might grow amongst you in my Absence; and this I pray you, wish me not worse good Speed in this Journey, than you would have to yourselves.’ On which one said:

‘ My Lord, if you distrust any of us in this Matter, your Grace is far deceived, for which of us can wash his Hands clear thereof? And if we should shrink from you, as from one that was culpable, which of us can excuse himself to be guiltless thereof? Herein your Doubt is too far cast. I pray God it be (said the Duke) let us go to Dinner; and so they sat down. After Dinner, the Duke went unto the Queen, where his Commission was by that Time sealed, for his Lieutenantship of the Army, and then took his Leave of her, as did other Lords, who were to accompany him.’

As the Duke came through the Council-Chamber, he took his Leave of the Earl of *Arundel*, who prayed God to be with his Grace, saying, He was sorry it was not his Chance to go with him, and bear him Company, in whose Presence, he could find in his Heart to spend his Blood, even at his Feet. The Duke, with the Marquis of *Northampton*, the Lord *Grey*, and others, immediately took their Barge, and went to *Durham Place*, and to *White-*

<sup>d</sup> Stow’s Annals, p. 610, 611.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid.



ball, where the same Night, they mustered their Men; and the next Day early, departed with about 600. As they rode through *Shoreditch*, the Duke said to the Lord Grey, *The People press to see us, but not one saith, God speed us.* The same Day, Sir John Gates, and others, went after the Duke.

Fox<sup>f</sup> in his Account of the Duke of Northumberland, relates, That having his Warrant under the Great Seal, he marched against the Lady Mary; and what made most for her, were the short Journies of the Duke, which by Commission were assigned to him, and appointed him by the Council, to the Intent that he might not seem to do any Thing, but by Warrant. So that, marching slowly on, the Lady Mary had Leisure to increase her Forces; which the Council at London perceiving, and that certain Noblemen stood by her, they proclaimed her Queen.

Stow<sup>g</sup> gives an Account, that the Duke wrote sharply to the Council in the Tower, for Succours of Men, as also of Ammunition, but a slender Answer was returned him; and from that Time forward, most of the Council consulted how to get out of the Tower, and the Marquis of Winchester, going out on 16 July, at 7 in the Evening, was fetched again to the Tower, about 12 o' Clock the same Night.

The Duke of Northumberland<sup>h</sup> was advanced, as far as St. Edmondsbury in Suffolk, but his promised Succours not coming to him, and having received from some of the Council, Letters of their Conduct, &c. he returned back to Cambridge.

On 19 July, the Council assembled themselves at Bainard's Castle, and secretly sent Sir John Mason, Clerk of the Council to the Lord Mayor, that he with the Sheriffs, Recorder, and such Aldermen as he liked, should meet them there, in an Hour. And being come, they were told they must ride into Cheap, to proclaim a new Queen; and accordingly Garter King of Arms proclaimed Queen Mary, the same Day; and the Earl of Arundel, and the Lord Paget, the same Night, rode Post to Queen Mary, with 30 Horse with them.

The Duke of Northumberland, then at Cambridge, had Knowledge of it the next Day, and about 5 of the Clock the same Night, with the Nobility, &c. went to the Market-Cross in the Town<sup>i</sup>, and himself proclaimed Queen Mary, throwing up his Cap, among others, in Token of Joy. Within an Hour after, he had Letters from the Council brought by one of the Heralds, dated at Westminster 20 June, in Form following<sup>k</sup>:

*In the Name of our Sovereign Lady Mary the Queen, to be declared to the Duke of Northumberland, and all others of his Band, of what Degree soever they be.*

‘ **Y** E shall command and charge in the Queen's Highness's Name, the said Duke to disarm himself, and to cease all his Men of War, and to suffer no Part of his Army to do any Thing contrary to Peace, and himself to forbear Coming to this City, until the Queen's Pleasure be expressly declared unto him. And if he will shew himself like a good quiet Subject, we shall then continue, as we have begun, as humble Suitors to our Sovereign Lady the Queen's Highness for him, and his, as for ourselves. And if he do not, we will not fail to spend our Lives, in Subduing him and his. *Item*, ye shall declare the like Matter to the Marquis of Northampton, and all other Noblemen and Gentlemen, and to all Men with any of them. And ye shall, in all Places where you come, notify it, if the Duke of Northumberland do not submit himself to the Queen's Highness, Queen Mary, he shall be accepted as a Traitor. And all we of the Nobility, that were Counsellors to the late King, will, to the uttermost Portion, persecute him, and his, to their utter Confusion.

<sup>f</sup> Book of Martyrs, Vol. 3. p. 12, 13.  
Annals of Queen Mary, p. 272, 273.

<sup>g</sup> Annals, p. 611.

<sup>h</sup> Ibid.

<sup>i</sup> Godwin's

<sup>k</sup> Stow ut supra.



Signed by *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Thomas* Bishop of *Ely*, Chancellor; *William* Marquis of *Winchester*, Treasurer; *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk*; the Earls of *Bedford*, *Shrewsbury*, and *Pembroke*; *Thomas Darcy* Lord Chamberlain, *W. Peter* Secretary, *W. Cecil* 2d Secretary, with others of the Council.

On which, the Duke gave Leave to every Man to depart; and soon after he was arrested in *King's* College, by *Slegge* Serjeant at Arms; but, other Letters coming from the Council, that all Men should go each his Way, the Duke said to those that kept him: 'Ye do me Wrong to withdraw my Liberty, see ye not the Council's Letters without Exception, that all Men should go whither they would.'

Whereupon, they who kept him, and the other Noblemen, set them at Liberty, and so continued they for that Night<sup>1</sup>, and the Earl of *Warwick* (the Duke of *Northumberland's* Son) was ready in the Morning, to have rode away; at which Time, the Earl of *Arundel* came from the Queen to the Duke, into his Chamber, who when he saw him, said, *For the Love of God, consider I have done Nothing but by the Consent of you, and all the whole Council.* My Lord (replied the Earl of *Arundel*) I am sent hither by the Queen's Majesty, and in her Name, I arrest you. *I obey it* (said the Duke) *I beseech you my Lord Arundel, use Mercy towards me, knowing the Case as it is.* My Lord (answered the Earl) you should have sought for Mercy sooner, I must do according to my Commandment. And thereupon committed the Charge of him, and of others, to the Guard and Gentlemen that stood by.

The 25th of *July*<sup>m</sup>, the Duke, with the rest, were brought to the *Tower of London*, under the Conduct of *Henry* Earl of *Arundel*, with a Body of Light Horsemen, &c. On *Friday* the 18th of *August*, he was arraigned<sup>n</sup> (a great Scaffold being set up in *Westminster* Hall) with *John* Earl of *Warwick* his Son and Heir, and *William Parr* Marquis of *Northampton*, before *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, High Steward of *England*, on that Occasion. The Duke of *Northumberland*, with great Reverence towards the Judges, protested his Faith and Allegiance to the Queen, whom he confessed grievously to have offended, and said he meant not to speak any Thing in Defence of his Fact, but requested to understand the Opinion of the Court in two Points:

'First, Whether a Man doing any Act by the Authority of the Prince's Council, and by Warrant of the Great Seal of *England*, and doing Nothing without the same, might be charged with Treason, for any Thing, which he might do by Warrant thereof?

'Secondly, Whether any such Persons as were equally culpable in that Crime, and those by whose Letters and Commandments he was directed in all his Doings, might be his Judges, or pass upon his Trial, as his Peers?

To which was answered, 'That the Great Seal, which he had for his Warrant, was not the Seal of the lawful Queen of the Realm, nor passed by Authority, but the Seal of an Usurper, and, therefore, could be no Warrant to him. And that, if any were as deeply to be touched in the Case as himself, yet, so long as no Attainder were of Record against them, they were Persons able, in Law, to pass on any Trial, and not to be challenged, but at the Prince's Pleasure.' After which Answer, the Duke used few Words, but confessed the Indictment, by whose Example, the other Prisoners, arraigned with him, did the like, and thereupon had Judgment.

The Duke, on Receiving his Sentence, said: *I beseech you, my Lords, all, to be humble Suitors to the Queen's Majesty, and to grant me four Requests.* First,

<sup>1</sup> Stow ut antea.  
V O L. I.

<sup>m</sup> Ib. p. 612.

<sup>n</sup> Ibid. p. 614, & Stype's Memorials, Vol. 2. p. 21, 22.  
H That



*That I may have that Death which Noblemen have had in Times past, and not the other. Secondly, That her Majesty will be gracious to my Children, which may, hereafter, do good Service, considering that they went by my Commandment, who am their Father, and not of their own free Wills. Thirdly, That I may have appointed to me some learned Man, for the Instruction and Quiet of my Conscience. And, Fourthly, that she will send two of the Council to commune with me, to whom I will declare such Matters, as shall be expedient for her and the Commonwealth. And thus I beseech you all to pray for me.*

Monday, 21 August (three Days after his Conviction) was designed for the Execution of the Duke<sup>o</sup>; and, by Eight o'Clock that Morning, was got together, on *Tower-Hill*, near 10,000 People, to have seen the Execution, the Scaffold being made ready, Sand and Straw brought, and all the Men, belonging to the *Tower Hamlet*, present, as also the Waiters of the *Tower*, the Guard, and the Sheriff's Officers; likewise every Man standing in Order, with their Halberts, and Lanes made, and the Executioner there also; when, on a Sudden, they were commanded to depart.

It is not to be doubted, but this Delay of his Execution was with Design of bringing the Duke to a Recantation of his Religion, with a Promise of Pardon. And it is a further Confirmation of it, that, on the same Day, the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen were sent for to the *Tower*, with the most substantial Citizens, and divers of the Privy-council (as is observed by the Journalist living at that Time) when, in Presence of all these, Mass was said before the Duke, and the rest of the Prisoners.

The next Day, the Duke being brought to the Scaffold on *Tower-Hill*<sup>r</sup>, after putting of his Gown of crane coloured Damask, he, leaning on the East Rail, said, 'Good People, all you that be here present to see me die, though my Death be odious and horrible to the Flesh, yet, I pray you, judge the best in God's Works, for he doth all for the best. And as for me, I am a wretched Sinner, and have deserved to die, and most justly am condemned to die by Law. And yet this Act, whereof I die, was not altogether of me, but I was procured and induced thereunto by others; I was, I say, induced thereunto by others. Howbeit, God forbid that I should name any Man unto you, I will name no Man unto you, and, therefore, I beseech you, look not for it. I, for my Part, forgive all Men, and pray God also to forgive them. And, if I have offended any of you here, I pray you, and all the World, to forgive me; and, most chiefly, I desire Forgiveness of the Queen's Highness, whom I have most grievously offended. And I pray you all to witness for me, that I depart in perfect Love and Charity with all the World, and that you will assist me with your Prayers at the Hour of Death.' The rest of his Speech, almost in every Point, was the like as he had said in the Chapel of the *Tower*, the Day before, saying when he had made Confession of his Faith, he had these Words: 'And here I do protest unto you, good People, most earnestly, even from the Bottom of my Heart, that this, which I have spoken, is of myself, not being required, nor moved thereunto, by any Man, nor by any Flattery, or Hope of Life; and I take Witness of my Lord of *Worcester* here, mine old Friend and ghostly Father, that he found me in this Mind and Opinion, when he came to me; but I have declared this only upon mine own Mind and Affection, and for the Zeal and Love that I bear to my natural Country. I could, good People, rehearse much more, even by Experience that I have of this Evil that hath happened to this Realm by these Occasions; but you know I have another Thing to do, whereunto I must prepare me, for the Time draweth away. And now I beseech the Queen's Highness to forgive me mine Offences against her Majesty, whereof I have a singular Hope, forasmuch as she has already extended her Goodness and Clemency so far upon me, that whereas she might forthwith, without



‘ Judgment, or any further Trial, have put me to most vile and cruel Death,  
‘ by Hanging, Drawing, and Quartering, forasmuch as I was in the Field in  
‘ Arms against her Majesty. Her Highness, nevertheless, of her most merciful  
‘ Goodness, suffered me to be brought to my Judgment, and to have my  
‘ Trial by Law, where I was most justly condemned. And her Highness hath  
‘ now also extended her Mercy and Clemency upon me, for the Manner and  
‘ Kind of my Death. And, therefore, my Hope is, that her Grace, of her  
‘ Goodness, will remit all the rest of her Indignation and Displeasure towards  
‘ me, which I beseech you all most heartily to pray for, and that it may  
‘ please God long to preserve her Majesty to reign over you in much Honour and  
‘ Felicity.’

After he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, saying to them that were about him, I beseech you all to bear me Witness, that I die in the true Catholick Faith; and then said the Psalms of *Miserere* and *De Profundi*, his *Pater Noster*, and Six of the first Verses of the Psalm *In te Domine speravi*, ending with this Verse, *Into thy Hands, O Lord, I commend my Spirit*. And, when he had thus ended his Prayers, the Executioner asked him Forgiveness, to whom he said, *I forgive thee with all my Heart, and do thy Part without Fear*. And bowing towards the Block, he said, *I have deserved a thousand Deaths*; then laid his Head on the Block, and was beheaded; whose Body, with his Head, was buried in the Tower, by the Body of Edward, Duke of Somerset; so that there lie, before the high Altar in St. Peter's Church, two Dukes between two Queens, viz. between Queen Anne, and Queen Catharine, all four beheaded.

I leave it to the Reader's Judgment, whether it may not be conjectured, by the latter Part of his Speech, that he was put in Hopes of Pardon; for what other Construction can be put on his Words, *And, therefore, my Hope is, that her Grace, of her Goodness, will remit all the rest of her Indignation and Displeasure towards me, which I beseech you all most heartily to pray for, &c.* Thuanus is of the same Opinion, who gives this Account \*.

Most have written, that, being a cunning Man, and fond of Life, he did this (meaning his Reconciling himself to the Popish Religion) in Hopes of Pardon, and that, when he looked round, and saw himself deceived, he repented of it.

Fox, who lived in those Times †, affirms, *That the Duke had a Promise made him of a Pardon (yea though his Head was upon the Block) if he would recant and bear Mass, and thereupon denied, in Words, that true Religion, which, before-time, as well in King Henry the Eighth's Days, as in King Edward's, he had oft evidently declared himself, both to favour and further.*

A particular Account ‡ of his valiant Exploits is delivered by an Eye-witness.

‘ All these valliant and noble Exploites weare attempted and atchieved by  
‘ the right honorable the Viscount Lisle, High Admirall of England, in the  
‘ Raigne of King Henery the Eighth, and after created Erl of War-  
‘ wick, and Duke of Northumberland, in the Raigne of King Edward  
‘ the Sixth.

First. **T**HE Bourding and Taking of the Admirall of *Sluise*, betweene *Dover* and the *South Downes*, being but Ship to Ship, and Sir *Thomas Seymer*, and *William Nicholles*, giving Chase to an other Ship.

Item, The Entering of *Edenborow*, and the Onset given to the Gate, he being the formost Man.

Item, The fyrst Journey to *Edenborough*, with the Landing of the *Vauntgard* given him, putting the Governour and Cardinal to Flight, and then returning

\* Thuanus's Hist. of his own Times, p. 444, 445.

† Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.

‡ Ibid.

Book of Martyrs, Vol. 3. p. 12, 13.



to *Leeth*, and the Entering the same vppon the Ordinaunce at the Bridge.

The Coming Home by Land, wheare the Vauntgard, at the *Pease*, putt to Flight the Lord *Hume*, with the Power of the Marches, *Tyndeill*, and all the Borders of *Scotland*.

The Siege of *Bullain*, wheare this Viscount lay, then Highe Admyrall of *England*, besydes the Mount on the East Syde, in the formost Tent next the Towne, during the Siege.

The said Admyrall received the Keyes of *Bullen*, of the Kings Maiestie, after it was rendred, and had the Keeping of the same, after the Kings Maiesties Departure into *England*.

The Repulse of the *Dolphins Camiasado*, given by the Admyrall at base *Bullen*, wheare a greate Number of *French* Men weare slaine and drowned.

The Journey against Mounfier *de Bies*, and the Putting him to Flight, with the Winning and Taking of his greate Artillery and Cariages.

The Entering in the Mouth of the River of *Sien*, wheare the *French* King, being that Time in Person, and all his Army by Sea, ready to set forth, but wold not fight.

The Meeting of the Galleyes betweene *Alderney* and *Garnsey*, and the Putting of them to Flight, 18 of them assaying the Admyrall alone.

The Coming of the *French* Fleete to *St. Ellens* Point, or the East Syde of the *Isle of Wight*, they being in Number 280 Sailes, besyde Galleyes, and the Yssuing out of the Admyrall with the *Englishe* Fleete, oute of *Portsmouth* Haven, being but 48 Sayles. The Enemy fledd.

The Journey to *Treiport*, with the Going on Land of the Admyrall, and the Burning of the whole Towne, and all the Shippes in the Haven.

The last Journey into *Scotland*, whear, he then being Erl of *Warwick*, was Lieutenant Generall of the whole Armye, of both Horse and Foote, vnder the Duke of *Sommersett*, and, in the Vauntgard, was sett vppon by Don *Lainerick* and the younge *Maxwell*; but he put the *Scotts* to Flight, and tooke a *Douglas*, and kylled many other, and lost very fewe.

The Day of Battell strucken vpp at *Muskelborough*, wheare the Lord *Gray*, with the Horsmen, gave the Onsett, contrary to Apointment, and weare repulsed; but he, with the Vauntgard, Ordinaunce, and Archers, standing fast, had that Day the Victory, and there were slaine of the *Scotts* 7000 Persons.

The Journey to *Norwiche*, and the Winning of the Towne, against the Rebels, wheare 280 of them weare slaine at the fyrst Incounter, and the Residue, being 9 or 10,000, yeelded themselues to the Kings Mercy.

This was drawne by Senior *Cork*, alias *Lancaster* Harald, who was with him in all these Exploites.

I am not unapprised of what has been related by Sir *John Hayward*<sup>u</sup>, against this Duke, and by other of our Historians, who have wrote after him, taking what he has said to be true, without Examination of the Facts. I shall not pretend fully to vindicate him, but shall state two or three Particulars, and leave the Reader to form a Judgment of his Character.

Sir *John Hayward* charges him with getting vast Sums of Money, by despoiling the Church of her *Chalices*, and an infinite Number of consecrated *Utenfils* of Gold and Silver, &c. *Stow* recites<sup>w</sup>, that, in the Months of *April* and *May*, 7 *Edw.* VI, Commissioners were directed through *England*, for all the Church Goods, remaining in Cathedral and Parish Churches, viz. Jewels of Gold, and Silver, Crosses, Candlesticks, Censers, Chalices, and all other such like, with their ready Money, to be delivered to the Master of the King's Jewels, in the *Tower of London*; and Coapes and Vestments of Cloth of Gold, Cloth of Tissue and Silver, to the Master of the King's Wardrobe in *London*. The other Coapes, Vestments, and Ornaments, to be sold, and the Money to be delivered

<sup>u</sup> Life of E. VI.

<sup>w</sup> Annals, p. 609.



to the King's Treasurer, Sir *Edmund Peckham*, Knight, reserving to every Church one Chalice or Cup, with Table-cloths for the Communion-board, at the Discretion of the Commissioners; which were, for *London*, the Lord-Mayor, the Bishop, the Lord Chief Justice, and others. This, it is presumed, is that which Sir *John Hayward* throws on the Duke, which no other Historian, of that Time, takes Notice of, and his Characters, in general, are inconsistent. As to the Charge, of the Duke's ordering Matters so, that the King declined in his Health, it is no Way proved; and the following Letter, which he wrote to Sir *William Cecil*, a little before his Majesty's Death, shews a Concern for his ill State of Health, and the Affairs of the Nation.

"I have receyved soche Lettres as came in your Packytt, for the which I hartelie thank you, wishing yt might have beyn so, as your Helth wolde have permytted you to have delivered them your silfe. It was styll sayde here, that you had but a Grudginge of an Ague; but now we heare the Contrary, and that you have byn thies thre or four Fytts grevously handelyd; for which I am right sorrye, trusting to God the worst ys past. Whereof I would be as glad as any Man, both for your own Comforte, as also for the Advancement of the King's waightie Affayres. Your Companion doth bear out the Burdeyn with as moche Payne as any Man can do, so moche ys his good Will towards the Service of his Master, and his Countrie, that, of a great deale of Payne, he maketh litle Appearance.

"Others we have, whos Sorte you are wel acquainted withal, that nether earnest Zeale, or Consideration of Tyme, can skarcely awake theym out of theyr wonted Dreames, and smothelie wynketh all Care from theyr Harts, how urgent or wayghtie soever our Causes ar. Which Thinge I can so yvel beare, as indeed of late, but for my Duty to the State, my Harte colde skarsly endure the Mannour of yt, specially in thies mooste careful Daies. Wel, I do herewith too much trouble you, and receyvyth no Plessir with so often remembring the Forgetfulness or, I sholde say, the Carelesnes of others.

"But now I will recompfort you with the joyfull Compford, which our Physicians hath, thies two or three Mornings, revyved my Spirits withal; which ys, that our soveraine Lord doth begin, very joyfully, to encrease and amende, they having no Doubt of the thorro Recoverye of his Highness, the rather, because his Majesty is fully bent to follow theyr Council and Advyce. And thus, with my hartie Commendations, I wish you perfytt Helth. From *Greenewyche*, this 7th of May, 1553.

To my very loving Friend,  
Sir *William Cecil*, Knt.

Your assured loving Frende,

Northumberland.

I shall now give some Account of Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Knight, his Brother, as he shared in his Misfortunes, though not in so unfortunate an End. On 28 October, 1550, 3 *Edw. VI*, being then a Knight, he obtained a Grant of the Office of Keeper of the Palace of *Westminster*, vacant by the Death of Sir *Anthony Denny*, Knight<sup>x</sup>; and, on 17 May, 4 *Edw. VI*, the King granted him an Annuity of 12*l.* 13*s.* and 4*d.* per Annum for Life, in Recompence for some Houses King *Henry the Eighth* took into his Hands, belonging to the Office of Keeper of the Palace of *Westminster*. On the Death of King *Edward the Sixth*, taking Part with his Brother, in endeavouring to support the Lady *Jane* on the Throne, he was, with the Duke, committed to the Tower, and on 19 August, 1 *Mary*, was arraigned<sup>z</sup> at *Westminster*, and, submitting himself to the Queen's Mercy, had Judgment passed on him. However, he did not suffer Death<sup>a</sup>

<sup>x</sup> Strype's Memorials, Vol. 2 in Reposit. p. 161.

<sup>y</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. 15. p. 233.

<sup>z</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 614.

<sup>a</sup> Strype's Memorials, p. 208.



with Sir *Henry Gates*, and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, on whom Sentence was pronounced at the same Time. And having obtained his Pardon, he was delivered out of the *Tower* on 18 *October*, 1554. I do not find he was in any Employment under Queen *Elisabeth*, but died without Issue, in 1559, 2d of Queen *Elis.* as should seem by the Probate of his Will, which is dated 22 of *November* that Year; but the Will<sup>b</sup> bears Date 21 *July*, 1556, the greatest Part whereof I have transcribed, and is as follows:

I, Sir *Andrewe Dudley*, Knight, beinge sicke of Bodye, but of good and perfitt Remembraunce, and consideringe that every Man is mortall, and not knowing the certeyn Tyme and Hower when it shall please Godd to call, and willinge to be in a Redyness, do constitute and make my last Will and Testament in Manner and Forme followinge. First, I bequeath my Soule to Almightye God, my Body to be buried at *Westminster*, where it shall please the Deane to bestowe; and whereas dyvers and sondrye Parsones have Goodes, Juells, and Plate of myn, and be indebted unto me in Manner and Forme followinge: That is to say, where my Lord of *Cumberland* hath Juells, Plate, Mony, Apparell, Horffes, Wapons, and other Things, to the full Vallue of 4000 Marks and more; and whereas *Oswald Wilkinson* my Servaunt did receave of my Debts at *Callice*, at the Hands of my Lord *Wentworth*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, and others, the Quenes Hignes Commissioners there, at *Guysnes*, and other on that Side the Sea, certeyn Somes of Money, amountinge to the Vallue of 180 *l.* And whereas *James Shelley*, Gent. doth owe unto me the Some of 200 *l.* which I lent him in redy Mony; and whereas there was due to me the Some of 30 *l.* by Maister *Duke*, at *Michaelmas* now one Yere past, for the Rente of one Yere and a Haulfe of *Westennmouth*, and owing unto me by *Hetferolde*, the Quenes Goldsmith, for certeyn Golde he hadd of myn, a Parcell whereof is received, and tenne Pounds which my Lorde of *Vrmond* doth owe me, which I lent him at *Guysnes*; and 5 *l.* owing unto me by my Lord of *Westminster*, which I lent him at *Bulleyn*. And the yerelie Rent of seven Nobles, due unto me by the Space of thre Yeres and a Haulfe, by *Thomas Malerth*, Yoman, at *Michaelmas* nowe one Yere past, and going out of certyn Lands and Tenements in *Surry*, called *Fredingburst*, and other Lands, as appereth by Indentures made betwene me the said Sir *Andrewe*, and the said *Thomas*. I geve and bequeth all and singular, the foresaide Plate, Juells, Apparell, Debts, Somes of Mony, and all other Things whatsoever due unto me by anythe Parsones aforesaide, unto my Nephewes *Ambrose Dudley*, *Robert Dudley*, *Henry Dudley*, my Sister *Jobson*, and my Sister *Carden*, equally (the two last were Daughters of his Mother, by *Arthur Plantagenet*, Viscount *L'Isle*) to be devided amonges them; and that the Parsones aforesaide shall pay, out of the foresaid Somes, Juells, Plate, Mony, and other the Premisses, the Somes hereafter ensewing: That is to say, to my Brother *Jerom Dudley* the Some of 200 *l.* to my Nephewe *Sidney* 200 *l.* to *Robert Nowell*, of *Grayes Inne*, the Some of 100 Marks, &c. further paying my Debts, which as I remember are little above 100 *l.* and geving to the poor Folkes 10 *l.* Also I geve to my Ladie, my Nephewe *Ambrose Dudley's* Wife, 100 *l.* which I lent him in Gold, and one Gowne which I delyvered in the *Tower*, furred with Sables, by Estimation worth 80 *l.* Also I geve to my Nephewe *Ambrose Dudley*, my Nephewe *Sidney* and his Wife, my Brother *Jobson* and his Wife, my House in *Tutbill-street*; and the best of my Garments and Apparell, whatsoever they be, I bequeath to my Brother *Jobson*, my olde Apparell to be bestowed amongs my Servaunts. The Residue of my Goods and Debts I will they shall stande and be at the Order, Discretion, and Disposition of my Executors, my Nephewe Sir *Henry Sidney*, my Brother in Lawe Sir *Frauncis Jobson*, and *Robert Nowell* of *Grayes Inne*, and my Overseers my Nephewes *Ambrose Dudley*, *Robert Dudley*, and *Henry Dudley*.

The Duke of *Northumberland* had to Wife *Jane*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *Edward Guilford*, Knight, by *Eleanor* his Wife, Sister and Heir of *Thomas West*,

<sup>b</sup> Ex Registr. Chanay, Qu. 60. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



Lord *La Warr*. Which Sir *Edward*<sup>c</sup> was Marshal of *Calais*, Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and Master of the Ordnance under King *Henry the Eighth*; whose Brother Sir *Henry Guilford*, in 2 *H. VIII*, for his Valour and Conduct, under *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, King and Queen of *Arragon*, was honoured with an Augmentation to his Coat of Arms, viz. On a Canton, a Pomgranate slipt, being the Arms of *Granado*, and was there also knighted. In 4 *H. VIII*, his own Sovereign conferred on him the Honour of Knighthood, and the Year after, constituted him Standard-bearer of *England*, which he carried at the Siege of *Terwin*. After which he was<sup>d</sup> made Master of the Horse to King *Henry the Eighth*, Comptroller of his Household, and Knight of the Garter. Their Father, Sir *Richard Guilford*, was knighted by King *Henry the Seventh*, at *Milford Haven*, and having been instrumental in settling that Monarch on the Throne, he made him one of his Privy-Council, as also a Banneret, having behaved himself with great Bravery against *James Lord Audley*, and his *Cornishmen*, in that Victory obtained over them at *Deptford-bridge* in *Kent*. And also, he was in that Reign, chosen one of the Knights of the most noble Order of the Garter. This Sir *Richard* was Son and Heir of Sir *John Guilford*<sup>e</sup>, who was Comptroller of the Household to King *Edward the Fourth*, and knighted at the Coronation of King *Richard the Third*, and was Son and Heir of Sir *William Guilford* of *Hempsted* in *Kent*<sup>f</sup>, Sheriff of that County in 11 *R. II*, and Son Heir of *John de Guilford*<sup>g</sup>, who having married *Joan*, Daughter and Heir of *William de Halden*, of *Halden* in *Kent*, brought that Mannor into the Family, on the Death of the said *William de Halden*<sup>h</sup>, who died in 50 *Edw. III*. But the Family of *Guilford* antiently wrote *Guldeford*, had been eminent in the County before, and Possessors of the Mannor of *Wickham* in *Kent*<sup>i</sup>, but were denominated from the Lordship and Mannor of *Guilford*, near *Rye* in *Sussex*, which was their antient Possessions, and bore for their Arms, A Salteir between 4 Martlets Sable.

Having set forth the Descent of the said *Jane*, Dutches of *Northumberland*, I shall now mention her Children by the Duke<sup>k</sup>, which were 8 Sons and 5 Daughters.

1. *Henry*, killed at the Siege of *Bologne*, An. 35 *H. VIII*, aged 19 Years.
2. *Thomas*, who died aged two Years.
3. *John*, who had the Title of Earl of *Warwick*, in his Father's Life-time. He was made<sup>l</sup> one of the Knights of the Bath, at the Coronation of King *Edward the Sixth*. In 5 *Edw. VI*, he<sup>m</sup> accompanied the Marquis of *Northampton*, in his Legation with the Habit of the Order of the Garter, to the *French* King. In 6 *Edw. VI*, he was<sup>n</sup> made Master of the Horse to the King, with the Fee of 100 Marks per Ann. after which he was chosen Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter. He was committed to the *Tower* with the Duke his Father, and received Sentence of Death with him; but had his Pardon<sup>o</sup> from the Queen, and on 18 *Oct.* 1554, the Lord Chancellor, and divers Lords of the Council, went to the *Tower*, and delivered him, and his Brothers, from their Imprisonment. After which, he immediately set out to visit his Brother-in-Law, Sir *Henry Sidney*, at his Seat in *Penshurst* in *Kent*<sup>p</sup>, where he died 21 *Oct.* 1554 about Midnight; so that it is probable, he came ill out of the *Tower*. He was married to *Anne*, Daughter to *Edward Seymour*, Duke of *Somerset*; which Match was made by the King, to reconcile that Duke, and his Father, then Earl of *Warwick*; but he had no Issue by her.
4. *Ambrose*, who was created Earl of *Warwick*, of whom I shall hereafter distinctly treat.
5. *Robert*, created Earl of *Leicester*, the great Favourite of Queen *Elisabeth*, whose Actions I shall also hereafter relate.

<sup>c</sup> Harris's Hist. of Kent, p. 263. <sup>d</sup> Ib. p. 440. <sup>e</sup> Ib. p. 431. <sup>f</sup> Ib. p. 426. <sup>g</sup> Ib. p. 263. <sup>h</sup> Esc. 50. E. III. n. 45. <sup>i</sup> Harris p. 37. <sup>k</sup> Ex Stemmate apud Penshurst. <sup>l</sup> Antis, on Knights of the Bath, p. 50. <sup>m</sup> MS. sub Effig. Julii C. 9. in Bibl. Cotton. <sup>n</sup> Pat. 6, E. VI, p. 5. <sup>o</sup> Stype ut antea, p. 208. <sup>p</sup> Ib. p. 202.



6. *Guilford*, who married the Lady *Jane Grey*, Daughter of *Henry Duke of Suffolk*, by *Frances*, Daughter to *Mary*, second Sister to King *Henry the Eighth*. This Marriage was the Cause of his Death, being beheaded with the Lady his Wife, who was proclaimed and crowned Queen, as before mentioned. Although they both ended their Lives so unfortunately, yet were they much regretted for their Innocence and Virtues; but left no Issue.

7. *Henry*, who, taking to a Martial Life, was slain at the Siege of *St. Quintin's*, in the 4th Year of Queen *Mary*, unmarried.

8. *Charles*, who died aged 4 Years.

Lady *Mary* eldest Daughter, married to Sir *Henry Sidney*, Knight of the Garter, Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, and Lord President of *Wales*, from whom descended the Earls of *Leicester* of the Name of *Sidney*; which Title became extinct in *Joseline*, the seventh Earl of *Leicester*, who died without Issue, the 7th of July 1743, and the only Heirs of that noble Family are *Mary* married to Sir *Brownlow Sherard* of *Lophorp* in *Lincolnshire*, Bart. and *Elisabeth* to *William Perry* of *Turvill Park* in *Buckinghamshire*, Esq. Which Ladies are Daughters and Coheirs of the Honourable Colonel *Thomas Sidney*, the sixth Son of *Robert Earl of Leicester*, and elder Brother of the said Earl *Joselin*. And by Virtue of an Entail, as well as the Descent, the Family Seats at *Penshurst Place*, as also, the Mannors of *Penshurst*, *Cepham*, *Hawden*, *East Ewburst*, *West Ewburst*, *West Leigh*, *Ensfields*, *Ford Place*, and *Remis-leigh*; as also, *Leicester House* in *Westminster*, with the Estates thereto belonging, did then center in them, as Joint Heirs of the Body of *Robert Earl of Leicester*, and are also Joint Heirs to the Barony of *Lisle*, confirmed by King *Edward the Fourth* to *Edward Grey*, and *Elisabeth Talbot* his Wife, and the Heirs of the Body of the said *Elisabeth*; as will hereafter appear.

*Margaret*, second Daughter of the Duke of *Northumberland*, died, aged 10 Years.

*Catharine*, third Daughter, was married to *Henry Hastings*, Earl of *Huntington*<sup>a</sup>, who died without Issue by her; and surviving him, deceased in 1620, and was buried by her Mother at *Chelsea*, Aug. 14.

*Temperance*, fourth Daughter, died, when a Year old.

*Catharine*, fifth Daughter, died at seven Years of Age.

The Dutcheſs of *Northumberland* had a melancholy Scene of it, her Husband and Son being beheaded, and the rest of her Sons under Sentence of Death, herself stripped almost of all Necessaries in Life, and turned out of her House; and so rigid were they, as to sell the Furniture thereof, and of every Thing else they could lay Hold of. This plainly appears from the following Warrant signed by the Queen, with her Seal of Arms, within a Garter, viz. *France* and *England* quarterly, the *Fleur de Lisses* being in the first Quarter<sup>b</sup>.

*Marye the Queen.*

**T**Ruſty and right wel beloved, we grete you well. And where you have ſeiſed to our Uſe certain Stuff, Apparell, and Silkes, apperteyning to the late Duke of *Northumberland*, and preſently remayning in the Cuſtody of *Nicholas Bourman*, of our Citie of *London* Hoſier; that is to ſay, *Fiſt*, one Pece of Clothe of Gold, conteyning five Yardes thre Quarters. Item, One other Pece conteyning 11 Yardes and a Half. Item, One other Pece conteyning 9 Yardes and Half and Half-quarter. Item, A Pece of wrought Velvet colord blake. Item, One other Pece containing 6 Yardes and a Quarter. Item, In wrought Velvet colord blake, containing 11 Yardes thre Quarters half a Quarter. Item, One Pece of *Luke's* Velvet, containing 6 Yards, three Quarters. Item, a Pece of *Crimſon* Velvet containing 9 Yardes and a Half. Item, Of *Purple* Velvet unſhorn, Half-yard. Item, A Payre of wide Sleeves of black Velvet embrodered with bone Lace of Gold and Silver. Item, Parchment

<sup>a</sup> Cole's Eſcaetr. Lib. 3. p. 200.

<sup>b</sup> Ex Regiſt. Eccleſ. Chelſea.

<sup>c</sup> Ex Orig. apud *Penshurſt*.  
Lace



Lace of Gold and Silver in divers Parcells containing 4 Yards. *Item*, A Gown of Crimsen Capha, and a Kirtell of white Damask for a Child. *Item*, One old Kirtell of white Silver and Satten. *Item*, Two old cast Kirtells, one Crimsen Velvet, and thother of Crimsen Satten. *Item*, Thre old Cassocks two of Velvet, and one of striped Satten. *Item*, Two old Taffata Frokes, one of Roset Velvet, and the other of Crimsen Satten, fore worne. We late you wite that, furthwith upon the Sight of thies our Lettres, being in that Behalf, your sufficient Warrant and Discharge towards us, ye make Delivery of the same Stuff, Apparell, Silkes and every Parcell therof, unto our trusty Servaunts, *John Herle*, and *William Ryce*, or to either of them repaying unto you, for that Purpose. Wherof, we require you not to faile. Yeven under our Signet, at our Mannor of *Richemont*, the 26th of *August*, the first Yere of our Reign.

To our trusty and right wel beloved Counsaillors, *Sir William Petre* and *Sir John Baker*, Knights.

By Inquisition taken at *Cookfield* in *Sussex*, 6 June 1 & 2 Ph. & Mar. the Jury found that she was Cousin and Heir of *Thomas West Lord la Warr*, who died without Issue, 25 Sept. 1 & 2 Ph. & Mar. viz. Daughter and sole Heir of *Sir John Guldeford*, Knight, by *Eleanor* his Wife, eldest of the two Sisters and Coheirs of the said *Thomas Lord La Warr*, and that *Sir Ambrose Dudley*, Knight, was her Son and Heir, who was pardoned for Life, though not restored in Blood. Whereupon, the three Daughters, Coheirs of *Dorothy* second Sister and Coheir of *Thomas Lord la Warr*, tendered their Livery, as Heirs to the Mannor of *Stratford Tony* in *Wiltshire*, the Mannor of *Blatchington*, and the Advowson of the Church in the County of *Sussex*, and Lands in *Somtynge* and *Cokeham*, in the same County.

She was a Lady of great Piety, Virtue, and Prudence, and by her Sollicitations, after the Marriage of the Queen with King *Philip*, she obtained Pardons for her Sons, principally by the *Spaniards*, who accompanied him into *England*, as appears from her last Will and Testament, wherein she expresses her Gratitude to them; and being all wrote with her own Hand, without the Advice of any learned in the Laws, as she herself says, I have transcribed it, *literatim*, being very memorable.

Here folowith my laste Will and Testament, wrytten with myn owen Hande, being perfytt in Memory, in the Yere of our Lord, MDLIV.

IN the Name of the Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Gooft. Amen. First, I bequeathe my Soule unto Almighty God, and my Bodye unto the Yearth, and to be buried in the Parishe Church of the House, where I dye, without any Solempnitie, for my Will is rather to have my Debtes paide, and my Children and Servaunts considered, than my Bodye that ys but Meate of Wormes; so that my Charge to myn Executors is, whiche be my Sonne, *Sir Henry Sidney* the Cheffe, *Sir George Blont* the second, my Cousin *Somerfield* that hath married *Thomas Masse's* Sister the third, and Mr. *Marow* of *Warwickshire*, the fourthe: That, after I am departyd from this Worlde, I will have no Ceremony of Openyng, but, after I am cold, let me be wonde up in a Shete, and put into a Coffyn of Woode, and so layde into the Grounde, with such Funerals, as parteyneth to the Buriall of a Corse. And 20 Nobles to be given to the poore Householdiers of the Parishe, and 40 Shillings to *Newgate*; 40 Shillings to *Ludgate*; 40 Shillings to the *King's-Bench*, and 40 Shillings to the *Marshalsey*. I do comytt into the Handes of myn Executors all the hole Landes of myne Inheritance. As my House of *Halles Owen*, with all Manner of Tenements, &c. in such ample Maner, as I had yt in my Lyfe-time. To Thuse and Performance of this my last Will, and for the Behofe of my Children, for to inherit my Landes, after my Legacyes and Debtes paide. The

<sup>t</sup> Escaetr. 1 & 2 Ph. & Mar. n. 22 & 122.

<sup>u</sup> Ex Regist. Moor, qu. 36.



Quenes Highnes shewing her Marcie, and King's Majestie, to my three Sonnes their Pardone, that they may enjoye my Landes. I bequeath to my Son *Ambrose Dudley* my House of *Halles Owen*, and a hundreth Pound : Land unto yt, to him, and his Heirs Male. To my Sonne *Robert Dudley* I bequeath 50 Marke Lande to hym, and his Heires Male : For Defaulte of Heires Male to retorne to my Sonne *Ambrose Dudlay*, and Heires Males. I bequeathe to my Sonne *Henry Dudley* 50 Marke Lande, out of myn Inheritaunce, as my Sonne *Robert's* must be, to hym and his Heires Male : For Lacke of Heires Male to retorne to my Son, *Ambros Dudley* and his Heires Males. I bequeathe to my Daughter *Katharyn Hastings* fiftie Mark Land out of myn Landes of Inheritaunce, to her and her Heires Males ; for Lacke of Heires Males, to return to my Sonne *Ambros* and his Heires Males. If it so chaunce, that my Lord *Hastings* do refuse her, or she hym, then she to have this fiftie Marke Land in Fee sympyll, to her and her Heires generall, and 400 Markes in Money, leved upon my Woodes of *Halles-Owen*, and of such Lande as my Will is shal be solde, which is the Lande I had by the Deathe of my Vncle the late Lord *Lawarre*. But firste I require myne Executors forthwithe to se my Debtes paide, and my Servaunts discharged, that hath in my House served me honestly, sence my Lord departed. I do owe to Mr. *Wasley*, Mercer of *Chepeside*, 69 l. 2 s. 8 d. as *Edward* of my Warderope can declare.

She then recites who she is further indebted to, which were only three more. She bequeaths to her Daughter, *Mary Sidney*, 200 Marks, and 200 Marks to her little Son ; but if he chance to dye, the Money to go to his Mother, and she chance to dye, the Money to go to her Son ; and if they both dye, to go to her Son *Sidney* ; because, having no Council by her, she thinks the Law will give it him. She further bequeaths to her Daughter, *Mary Sidney*, her Gown of black bard Velvet, furred with Sables, &c. and a Gown with a high Back, of fair wrought Velvet. To her Daughter *Catharine Hastings*, a Gown of new Purple Velvet, a Summer Gown, and a Kirtle of Purple Velvet to it and Sleeves. To *Elisabeth*, Daughter of the Lord *Cobham*, a Gown of black bard Velvet furred with Lisards, with some Furniture therein mentioned. To Sir *Andrew Dudley*, 20 l. Yearly, out of her Inheritance during his Life, when he hath his Pardon, and if he marry, to make his Wife a Jointure of it, during her Life. I give to my Lord, my Husband's Brother *Jerome Dudley*, his Board and his Aparil, as her Executors shall think proper for him, considering the State of him. To her Son *Ambros's* Wife, a new Gown of plain black Velvet furrid with Lizards, and a Kirtle of black Velvet, the Ground Satten, and Slevs. To her Son *Robert Dudley's* Wife, a Gown of wrought Velvet. To her Son *Henry Dudley's* Wife, a Gown of black pinkt Velvet. To the Lord *John Grey's* Wife, her Cousin, a Gown of wrought Velvet. To her Son, Sir *Henry Sidney*, the Hangings of the Gallery at *Chelsea*, that is Gold and Green, and with her Lords Arms and hers ; also a Chair of green wrought Velvet, with a long Cushion, and a Foot Carpet of *Turkey* Work. She bequeaths to the Dutcheffs of *Alva* her green Parot, having nothing worthy for her else, praying her Grace to continue a good Lady to all her Children, as she as has begun. To the Lord *Dondagoe Damondesay*, that is beyond the Sea, her little Book Clock, that hath the Sun, the Moon in it, &c. and her Dial, the one Leaf of it the Almanack, and on the other Side, the golden Number, in the Midst ; and with Commendations for the great Friendship he hath shewed her, in making her have so many Friends about the King's Majesty, as she has found. And she desires her Executors and Overseers to make her humble Commendations to the Duke of *Salvan*. To the Duke of *Mathenon*, to the Lords and Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, that did her Sons Good, beseeching them for God's Sake to continue the good Lords to her Sons, in their Needs, and her Trust is, that God will requite it to them. To her Brother Sir *Francis Jobson*, and to her Sister his Wife, the Verdere Hangings of her own Bed-Chamber.

She further wills to *Mary Sidney*, her Daughter, her own Nag, and her Saddle of black wrought Velvet, and her Clock again, she did so much set by, that

was



was the Lord her Fathers, praying her to keep it as a Jewel. Also her Son *Sidney* to have his Clock again. She bequeaths to several of her Acquaintance some of her Aparent and Furniture, and Legacys to her Servants.

And yf I dye afore this my Will be thorowe fynished, I shall desire mine Executors to be a Mene in my Behalfe, and mine Overseers, unto the Quenes Highness, and her most honourable Council, that this my Will, wrytten with myn owne Handes, may take Place, althoughe ytt be not made in such due Forme and Order, as it sholde have byne, and I had called to me any Man lernyd, or els of my Friends. But, even as miche as this is by Goddes Lawe and Mannes Lawe my verie owne Lande, by my Lorde my dere Husbandes Gifte, and confermed by the Quenes Highnes, with such Stuff and Apparell as I have. So that my very Harte and Mynde in the bestowinge of my Goodes and Landes, as I wolde have yt, myn owne self hath done yt. Althoughe I have not placed all Wordes in Order, but that a better Ordere with Council might have ben made, yet I praye myne Executors and Overseers to bear with me, and to take Paynes in the Readinge of yt, for I know you shall have moche a doo with all, for with great Weaknes hath this my last Testament beyn wrytten, but never lackynge Memorye when I dyd wryte yt. If none of myne Executors be nere Hande when I newly departe, the Folkes of my Housse to burye me with suche Service as is in the Church, till my Monthes Daye. I wolde myne Executors and Overseers, and my Household Servants, and that those that dwelles in *London*, have blacke Cootes, as every Man accordinge to their Degrees. And so to lett me have such Service as mine Executors shall thinke mete for me, considering non of my Children shall inherytt the Degree I dye in. My Will is earnestly, and effectually (that little Solempnitie be made for me, for I had ever have a 1000 Foldes, my Debts to be paide, and the Poore to be geven unto, then anye Pompe to be shewed upon my wretched Carke, that hath hadd at Tymes to moche in this World, full of all Vanities, Disseats, and Gilles; and who ever dothe trust to this transitorie World, as I did, maye happen to have an Overthrowe, as I hadd; therefore to the Wormes will I goe as I have afore wrytten, in all Poyntes, as you will answer yt afore God, and you breke any one Jott of it, your Willes hereafter may chaunce be aswell broken. I will at my Yeres Mynde have suche devyne Service, as myne Executors shall thynke mete, and a Stone layd upon my Grave accordingly, as the Hayrolde shall thinke mete, with the hole Armes of Father and Mothers, upon the Stone graven, nor in no wise to let me be opened after I am ded. I have not loved to be very bold afore Women, moche more I wolde be lothe to come into Thandes of any lyving Man, be he Physician or Surgeon. My Trust is the Quenes Highnes will be good and gracious Ladye, so moche for the faythfull poor Hart, I have all borne her, althoughe yt was little in Valewe for suche a Personage; that her Highness will not consente to have any Parte of my Will broken, as God will thinke she doth me most Right in so doinge in this my most humble Sutes for my Will. And my Sonnes all three I leave them all to the Kinges Majesties and her Highnes behynde me. I give Mystres *Clarensious* my tawny Velvet Jewell-Coffer; I give to my Lady *Pagitt* my high-backed Gowne of wrought Velvet; to my Lorde *Pagitt*, one of my black enamyled Ringes I did use to weare; to my Lady *Sandes*, another of them of the lesse Sorte. And, forasmoch as, upon further Deliberation, I have considered that many Doubts and Questions ben lyke to arise upon the Force and Sufficiency of this my Will, and specially because my three Sonnes, and my Brother Sir *Andrew Dudley*, stondyn presently atteynted of High Treason, so as my said Will cannot take Place according to my Meanyng in all Things, if I should be called out of this Lif, before my said Sonnes and Brother had opteyned the Kinges and the Quenes most gracious Pardone; therefore I do, by this my last Will, hooly give and bequethe to Sir *Henry Sidney*, Knight, Sir *George Blunt*, Knight, *John Somerford*, Esq; and *Thomas Marowe*, Esq; whom of this my Testament and last Will I make myne Executors, and to their Heyres forever, to  
the



the Uses of the same Sir Henry, Sir George, John Somerfeld, and Thomas Marowe, and their Heires forever al my Mannors, Landes, Tenements, and Hereditaments, with Thappurtenences, wheresoever they be, trusting in their Fidelitie, that they will have special Reguarde and Consideracyon to the Advancement and Help of my Chyldren, as to them shall seme good, according to my speciall Trust put in them; and I will, that all former Clawfes, Articles, and Sentences of this my Will, beinge contrary to Thentente and Legacie last aforesaid, other then for suche Annuyties as before for this my last Will ben bequeathed and paid out of any of my Landes, to any of my Servants, or to any other, shal be voyde, any Thing aforesaide to my Will to the contrary notwithstandinge, in Presens of us,

*E. Duddeley, Anne Yorke, Henry Sydney, William Bowdon.*  
*Probat. 23 May 1555.*

She was buried \* with great Solemnity on the 1st of Feb. 1554, two Heralds attending with many Mourners, 6 Dozen of Torches, and 2 white Branches, and a Canopy borne over her Effigies in Wax, in a goodly Hearse to the Church of *Chelsea*, where a Monument is erected to her Memory, on which is represented, in brasse Plates, her Effigies, with all her Sons and Daughters, viz. Henry, Thomas, John, Ambrose, Robert, Guilford, Henry, and Charles; Mary, Margaret, Catharine, Francis, and Temperance; with this Inscription:

Here lyeth interred the Right, Noble, and Excellent Princess, Lady Jane Guilford, late Dutches of Northumberland, Daughter and sole Heir of the Right Honourable Sir Edward Guilford, Knight, Lord Warden of the five Ports. The which Sir Edward was Son to the Right Honourable Sir Richard Guilford, sometime Knight and Companion of the most Noble Order of the Garter; and the said Dutches was Wife to the High and Mighty Prince, John Dudley, late Duke of Northumberland, by whom she had Issue eight Sons and five Daughters; and after she had lived forty six Years, she departed this transitory World, at her Mannor of *Chelsea*, the twenty second Day of January, in the second Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lady Mary the First, and in the Year 1555.

On whose Soul Jesus have Mercy.

Her eldest surviving Son, Ambrose Dudley, was attainted with his Father, the Duke of Northumberland, and, receiving Sentence of Death, remained Prisoner in the Tower<sup>y</sup>, till the 18 October, 1554. He took to a Martial Life from his Youth, and, in 3 Edw. VI, served under the Command of his Father, then General of those Forces, sent to suppress the Rebels in *Norfolk*; and, having<sup>z</sup> obtained a Pardon for Life, he afterwards served<sup>a</sup> at the Siege of St. Quintins in *Picardy*. In 4 and 5 Phil. and Mary, he was, by Act of Parliament, restored in Blood. Which Act<sup>b</sup> sets forth, That, by Reason of the Attainders of John, Duke of Northumberland the said Ambrose Dudley, and Robert Dudley, Knights, now remain out of all Name and Reputation, to their great Discomfort, inward Griefe, and daily Sorrow. And forasmuch as the said Ambrose and Robert be, and always, ever since the said Attainders, have been, and always hereafter intend to be, her Highnesses true and faithful Subjects: It may, therefore, please her Highness, &c. at their most humble Petitions, for the true and faithful Service which they had done, and intend to do, during

\* Strype's Memorials, Vol. 3. p. 208.

in Bibl. Harley.

<sup>a</sup> Hollinshed, p. 1133.

<sup>y</sup> Ibid.

<sup>z</sup> Cole's Esc. Lib. 2. Not. 61. A. 13.

<sup>b</sup> An. 4 & 5 Ph. and Mar. No. 12.

their



their Lives ; and having already given good Proove and Trial of their Fidelities, &c. it was therefore enacted, with the Assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and of the Commons, in Parliament assembled : That the said *Ambrose Dudley*, and *Robert Dudley*, Knights, the Lady *Mary Sidney*, and Lady *Catharine Hastings*, and every of them, and their Heirs, and the Heirs of every of them, from henceforth may, and shall be, by Authority of this Act, be restored and inhabited in Bloud and Name, and made Heire and Heires, as well to the said Sir John Dudley, Knight, late Duke of Northumberlande, their said Father, as also to any other their Auncestor or Auncesters, Lyneall or Collaterall, in such Manner and Forme, as yf the said late Duke, their Father, or they, or any of them, had never byn attainted, and as yf no such Attayndor, or Attayndors, were, or had byn had : The Corruption of Bloud betweene the said late Duke, their Father, and your said Subjects, or any of them, or the Corruption of Bloud betweene your said Subjects, and any other their Auncestor or Auncesters, or any Acte of Parlyament, or Judgment at the Common Lawe, concerning the Attayndor of the said late Duke, their Father, or of the said Sir Ambrose Dudley, or of the said Sir Robert Dudley, or any of them, or any other Thyng, whereby the Bloud of the said late Duke, their Father, or of the said Sir Ambrose Dudley, or of the said Sir Robert Dudley, or or any of them is, shulde, or might be corrupted, &c. And it was also enacted, That the said *Ambrose Dudley*, and *Robert Dudley*, the Lady *Mary Sidney*, and the Lady *Catharine Hastings*, and every of them, and their Heirs, &c. shall be enabled to demand, ask, have, hold, and enjoy, all such Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, &c. which, at any Time hereafter, shall discende, come, remayne, or revert from any their Auncestor or Auncesters, as yf the Duke, their Father, or any of them, had never byn attainted, and as though no such Attayndor of their said late Father, or of them, or any of them, had ever byn had or made. And that they, or any of them, and Theires of every of them, may, at all Times hereafter, use and have any Action of Suite, and make their or his Pedigres and Conveyance in Bloud, as Heires, as well to and from their said Father, as also to any other their Auncestor or Auncesters, Lyneall or Collaterall, as yf the said late Duke, their Father, or they, or any of them, had never byn attainted, and as yf no such Attayndor, or Attayndors, were, or had been had, the Corruption of Bloud betweene the said late Duke, their Father, and your said Subjects, or any of them, nor betweene your said Subjects, and any other their Auncestor or Auncesters, or any Acte of Parlyament, or Judgment at the Common Law, concerning the Attayndor of the said late Duke their Father, or of the said Sir Ambrose Dudley, or of the said Sir Robert Dudley, or any of them ; or whereby the Bloud of the said late Duke, their Father, or of the said Sir Ambrose Dudley, or of the said Sir Robert Dudley, or of any of them, is, or should be corrupted, to all Intents, Construtions, and Purposes.

In 1 *Elif.* he obtained <sup>c</sup> a Grant of the Mannor of *Kibworth-Beauchamp*, in Com. *Leicester*, to be held by the Service of Pantler to the Kings and Queens of this Realm, at their Coronation. Which Office and Mannor his Father, and other his Ancestors, Earls of *Warwick*, formerly enjoyed. In 2 *Elif.* <sup>d</sup> he was advanced to that great Office of Master of the Ordnance, for Life.

On *Christmas-day*, in 4 *Elif.* he had the antient Honour of his Ancestors conferred on him, viz. Baron *L<sup>s</sup> Isle of Kingston L<sup>s</sup> Isle in Berkshire*, in Consideration of his illustrious Blood, Fidelity, Valour, Prudence, and great Merits, as the Patent <sup>e</sup> recites. Also, the next Day, he was advanced to the Dignity of Earl of *Warwick*. The Preamble to which Patent <sup>f</sup> sets forth : ‘ The Queen, considering that the Way to increase her Royal Dignity, is by advancing Men to ‘ Titles of Honour, eminent for their Abilities and Valour, and of such the ‘ more she prefers, the brighter her Crown shines. And Sir *Ambrose Dudley*, ‘ Knight, Baron *L<sup>s</sup> Isle*, being lawfully descended from the illustrious and an-

<sup>c</sup> Pat. 1 *Elif.*
<sup>d</sup> Pat 2 *Elif.* p. 4

<sup>e</sup> Pat 4 *Elif.* p. 6.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid.



‘tient Race of the Earls of *Warwick*, as also the present eldest Son of *John*, late Duke of *Northumberland* and Earl of *Warwick*. She, therefore, being willing to restore the Family, has created him Earl of *Warwick*, by girding him with a Sword, and placing a Cap of Honour and Circle on his Head: To hold to him, and the Heirs Male of his Body, with Remainder to Sir *Robert Dudley*, Knight, Master of the Horse to her Majesty, otherwise called Sir *Robert Dudley*, Knight, Brother of the said Sir *Ambrose Dudley*, Knight, Baron *L’Isle*, and now Earl of *Warwick*, and to the Heirs Male of the Body of the said Sir *Robert*, with a Grant of 20*l.* annually, out of the Fee-farm Rent of the City of *Coventry*, payable by the Sheriff and Citizens of the said City. Dated at *Westminster*, 26 December, in 4 *Eliz.*’

On 1 October, 1562, <sup>g</sup> he was constituted Commander and General of all the Queen’s Forces in *Normandy*, the Patent reciting, That the Queen, for many just and necessary Causes, and by Advice of her whole Council, for her Defence, as well as of the *French King*, who, with the Queen his Mother, are Captives, she is proved to send a Body of armed Men into the nearest *Norman Port* to *England*; and it being necessary to send some noble, valiant, and just Person, as their Commander, and confiding highly in the Fidelity, Prudence, Valour, and Industry, of *Ambrose*, Earl of *Warwick*, she prefers him to the Command aforesaid.

He took Shipping at *Portsmouth* 17 October, but, by contrary Winds, was twice drove back to *Dover*; so that it was the 29th of the same Month before he landed at *Newhaven*, where he was joyfully received. *Stow* relates his Proceedings there <sup>h</sup>, to which I refer; but he behaved himself with great Honour and Bravery, and defended the Town from the Month of *September*, 1562, to the 29 *July*, 1563, and had divers Skirmishes with the Enemy. At length, being closely besieged, and *Montmorency*, Constable of *France*, sending a Trumpet to the Earl to surrender the Town, he sent Sir *Hugh Powlet* to assure him, the *English* were prepared to suffer the last Extremities, before they would yield up the Town without the Queen’s Orders. But, there being a raging Distemper in the Garrison, more perished by the Sickness, than the Sword, though the *English* gave the *French* a brave Repulse. Queen *Elisabeth* therefore, as *Cambden* <sup>i</sup> observes, having Intelligence of this, expressed, with Tears, her Commiseration of the sad State her People was reduced to, and, that she might no longer expose her bravest Men, sent Orders to *Warwick*, to capitulate on honourable Terms.

Sir *William Detbick*, Garter King of Arms in the Reign of Queen *Elis.* gives this Account of him:

‘He was sent with an Army to keep the Town of *Newhaven* in *Normandy*, where he had the Order of the Garter <sup>k</sup>, sent and delivered to him from the Queen’s Majesty, by Sir *Gilbert Detbick*, Garter King of Arms. He was an honourable, valiant, and friendly Man. And being there besieged by *Charles the Ninth*, King of *France*, he was forced to deliver the Town of *Newhaven*, because of the Plague; but standing on the Rampier at a Parley, *Contre droit d’Arms*, he was shot with a Bullet empoisoned, which consumed his Leg, and thereof, after he had lived several Years with great Pain and Impotency, endured his Leg to be sawed from his Body, and died within few Days, 20 February, 1589.’

This Sir *William Detbick* had the Order of his Funeral, and he was interred with great Pomp, in the Chapel at *Warwick*, on the 9 April, 1590. *Henry*, Earl of *Huntington* (who had married his Sister) was chief Mourner. And there attended at his Interment the Earls of *Kent*, *Bedford*, *Cumberland*, *Pembroke*,

<sup>g</sup> Pat 4 *Elif.* p. 2. in dorso & Rymer. *Elif.* in Hist. of Eng. Vol. 2, p. 392.

<sup>h</sup> Annals of *Elif.* p. 650, & seq.

<sup>i</sup> Annals of Queen *Funerals* M. S. Not. 31, in Bibl. Joh. Anstis Arm.



the Lords *Dudley*, and *St. John*; Sir *William Russel*, Sir *Henry Knevet*, Sir *John Harrington*, Sir *Fulk Grevil*, Sir *Drew Drury*, and Sir *Henry Lea*.

*Camden*, giving an Account of his Death, says of him <sup>1</sup>, *That he was a most excellent Person, and died without Issue.*

He married three Wives, first<sup>m</sup>, *Anne*, Daughter and Heir of *William Whorwood*, Esq; Attorney-general to King *Henry the Eighth*, by his first Wife, *Cassandra*, Daughter of Sir *Edward Gray*, Knight; which *Anne* died on 26 May, 6 *Edw. VI*, and *John*, her<sup>o</sup> only Son, by him, died before her. Whereupon he, secondly, married *Elisabeth*, Daughter of Sir *Gilbert Tailboys*, Knight, Sister and sole Heir of *George*, Lord *Tailboys*, Knight; and, thirdly, *Anne*, Daughter to *Francis Russel*, Earl of *Bedford*.

He departed this Life without Issue, and was buried in the Midst of our *Lady Chapel* at *Warwick*, towards the West End, where a curious Altar Monument is erected to his Memory, with his Effigies in Armour, and Mantle of an Earl lying thereon; his Head resting on a Mattress cut in Marble, his Hands conjoined in Prayer, and, at his Feet, a Bear couchant muzzled, all painted to the Life.

The Inscription about the Sides of the Tomb is as follows:

Here, under this Tomb, lyeth the Corps of the Lord *Ambrose Duddleley*, who, after the Deceases of his elder Brethren without Yssue, was Sonne and Heir to *John*, Duke of *Northumberland*.

To whom Queen *Elizabeth*, in the 1st Year of her Raigne, gave the Manor of *Kibworth Beauchamp*, in the County of *Leyc.* to be held by the Service of being Pantler to the Kings and Queens of this Realme, at their Coronation.

Which Office and Manour his said Father, and other his Ancestors, Earls of *Warwick* held. In the second Year of her Raigne, the said Queen gave him the Office of Master of the Ordinance.

In the fourth Year of her said Raigne, she created him Baron *Lisle*, and Earle of *Warwick*. In the same Year, she made him her Lievtenant General in *Normandy*, and, during the Time of his Service there, he was chosen Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter.

In the twelveth Year of her Raigne, the said Earle, and *Edward*, Lord *Clin-ton*, Lord Admiral of *England*, were made Lievtenants, jointly and severally, of her Majesties Army in the North Parts,

In the thirteenth Year of her Raigne, the said Queene bestowed on him the Office of chief Butler of *England*. And, in the XVth Year of her Reigne, was sworn of her Privy Councell.

Who departed this Life, without Issue, the XXith Day of *February*, 1589, at *Bedford House*, near the City of *London*; from whence, as himself desired, his Corps was conveyed and Interred in this Place.

Neare his Brother *Robert*, Earle of *Leicester*, and other his noble Ancestors (which was accomplished by his last Will) and welbeloved Wife, the Lady *Anne*, Countesse of *Warr*, who, in further Testimony of her faithfull Love towards him, bestowed this Monument, as a Remembrance of him.

*John Dudley*, Esq. second Sonne of *John*, Lord *Dudley*, and Knight of the Garter, married *Elizabeth*, Daughter and Heire of *John Bramshot*, Esquire, and had Issue *Edmund Duddleley*.

*Edmund Duddleley*, Esquier, one of the Privy Councell to King *Henry the 7th*, married *Elizabeth*, Sister and sole Heire of *John Grey*, Viscount *Lisle*, descended as Heire of the eldest Daughter, and Coheir of *Richard Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, and *Elisabeth* his Wife, Daughter and Heire of the Lord *Berkley*, and Heire of the Lord *Lysle* and *Ties*, and had Issue *John*, Duke of *Northumberland*.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. 2. p. 560. m. n. • Cole's Bsc. Lib. 2. p. 147



*John*, Duke of *Northumberland*, and Earle of *Warwick*, Viscount *Lisle*, and Knight of the Garter, married *Jane*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *Edward Guilford*, Knight, and *Eleanor* his Wife, Sister and Coheir of *Thomas*, Lord *la Warre*, and had Issue the said Lord *Ambrose*.

The said Lord *Ambrose Dudley* married to his first Wife *Anne*, Daughter and Coheir of *William Whorword*, Esquier, Attorney-general to King *Henry the Eighth*.

The said Lord *Ambrose* married to his 2d Wife *Elisabeth*, Daughter of Sir *Gilbert Taylbois*, Knight, Sister and sole Heir of *George*, Lord *Taylbois*.

The said Lord *Ambrose*, after he was Earl of *Warwick*, married to his third Wife the Lady *Anne*, Daughter to *Francis*, Earl of *Bedford*, Lord *Russel*, and Knight of the Garter.

*His Last Will and Testament being remarkable, I shall here insert it.*

**I**N the Name of God, *Amen*.<sup>p</sup> I *Ambrose*, Earl of *Warwicke*, Baron *Lisle*, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, Master of her Majesty's Ordinance, Chief Butler of *England*, and one of her Highness most honourable Privy Council, being of perfect Memory. Do constitute, make, and ordeyne, this my Last Will and Testament in Manner and Forme following: *First*, As a true Member of the Mistical Body of *Jesus Christ*, I do commend my Soul into the Hands of God, who, in the Person of his Son, redeemed it, hoping, and assuredly believing, to receive full Pardon and Forgiveness of all my Sins, by his Death, and to be made Pertaker of Life everlasting. And, for my Body, I reserve the same to be disposed in Christian Burial, according to the Discretion of my Executrix. And, touching my Worldly Estate, for that I have, as in Honour and good Conscience I am bound to have, a great and especial Care, that all my dewe Debts whatsoever should be well and truly paid and satisfied. And my dear and loving Wife, after my Death, in honourable Estate to be maintained, I have made one Deed indented, dated the 24th Day of this instant Month of *January*, containing a Limitation and Disposition of the Uses of divers my Fee Simple Lands, to my said dear and welbeloved Wife, *Anne*, Countess of *Warwick*, for her Advancements, upon Confidence that she will see my Debts and Legacys, by this my Will bequeathed, paid, and, for other Considerations in the said Deed expressed. I do now signify and declare hereby my Will and Meaning to be, that the said Deed shall be construed and taken of sufficient Force, to, and for, the several Uses and Purposes contained in the same. And I do, in Confirmation thereof, by this my Will, give and devise unto the said Lady *Anne*, my Wife, all the Mannors, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, in the same Deed mentioned, to have and to hold, to her and her Heirs for ever, to the Purposes in the same Deed declared, without any Condition whatsoever, upon the meer Confidence I repose in the said *Anne* my Wife, that she will perform my true Meaning therein. And, forasmuch as I rest very doubtful of the Estate of my Debts, how great and burthen some the same may grow, and be, I have therefore, in further Care of the Discharge of them (being the greatest worldly Burthen that can lye upon a Christian) by another Deed indented of Bargain and Sale, dated the 25th of this instant Month of *January*, bargained and sold, conveyed and assured, to my very good Lord, and Couzen, the Earl of *Kent*, and to others therein named, all my Fee Simple Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments whatsoever, within the Realms of *England* and *Wales*, as by the same Deed may appear. All which my said Lands, &c. conveyed, passed, or assured, by either of the said Deeds, my full Intent, Will, and Meaning is, should be chiefly imploied for the Discharge and Satisfaction of all my Debts, and Performance of this my Will. And, after the same shall be fully and conveniently accomplished, if so be all those the same Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, in both those Deeds contained,

<sup>p</sup> Ex Registr. vocat. Drury, n. 75, qu. 43, in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



besides the Mannor of *Wotton under Edge*, and the rest of the Lands, &c. in the same Deeds contained, which lye and be within the County of *Gloucester*; and the Mannor and Castle of *Chirk*, in the County of *Denbigh*, may, and will suffice, to a full Satisfaction and Payment of all my Debts, and the Performance of this my Will. Then my Request and Desire is, that my said wel beloved Wife will take such Order, and make such Conveyances by Will, or otherwise, of the said Mannor of *Wotton under Edge*, and other Lands, in the said County of *Gloucester*, as the same, after the Death of my said Wife, may come and remain, and be, to my right Heirs forever, chargeable with Leases for Lives, or Years, yealding the old Rents. And, touching the Mannor and Castle of *Chirk*, my like Desire and Request is (if my Debts may be satisfied, as aforesaid) that my said Wife will convey and assure out of the same, 50 *l.* yearly, to Sir *Robert Sidney*, my Nephew, during his Life, and one 50 *l.* yearly to *Thomas Sidney*, my Nephew, during his Life, with several Clauses of Distress. And after, to assure the said Mannor, and Castle, to my dearly beloved Sister, the Lady *Catharine*, Countess of *Huntingdon*, for Term of her natural Life, without Impeachment of Wast. And, after the Decease of my said Sister, the Inheritance of the said Mannor, and Castle, to be limited to my said two Nephews, and the several Heirs of their two Bodies lawfully begotten. And, for Want of Issue of the Body of the one, the Inheritance of the Whole to be and remain to the other, and to the Heirs of his Body. And, for Want of such Issue of both their Bodies, to remain to the right Heirs of me, the said Earl, for ever. And, if it so happen, that the Estate of my Debts cannot, within the Space of two Years next after my Decease, be satisfied and paid, or that the said Mannor or Castle of *Chirk* shall, by any Title whatsoever, be lawfully evicted from my said Wife, or Bargains, within the Space of two Years, aforesaid, then I will and bequeath to my said Sister the Summe of 1000 *l.* to be paid unto her, to whomsoever she shall name and appoint, within one Month next after the End of the said two Years. And my Desire further is, that if the said Mannor and Castle of *Chirk* shall be evicted lawfully from my said Wife, or Bargains, and yet, notwithstanding, there shall remain sufficient to pay my Debts, and to leave 100 *l.* yearly to my said Nephews, Sir *Robert Sidney*, and *Thomas Sidney*: Then my Wife shall assure unto my said Nephews 100 *l.* yearly, of the Lands and Tenements, contained in the said Deeds, if so much will be left remaining, over and above the Payment of my Debts and Legacys, in such Place or Places, as shall seem best to the Discretion of my said Wife. The Estates of the said Sir *Robert* and *Thomas Sidney*, to be, as is appointed, in the Mannor and Castle of *Chirk*, after the Decease of my said Sister, the Countess of *Huntingdon*. And for all the rest of the Lands, &c. that shall pass to the said Earl of *Kent*, and others, by my fore-recited Deed of Bargain and Sale (if any do remain, after my Debts and Legacys paid, and this former Part of my Will performed) my Will is, shall be disposed in this Manner: *First*, That my Wife shall have to her, and her Heirs, for ever, the Mannor of *Aberley*, alias *Abbotsley*, in the County of *Worcester*, and all the Right, Title, Remainders, and Reversion thereof; and the rest of the Lands, &c. by the said Deed of Bargain and Sale, to the said Earl of *Kent*, and others; and shall be disposed according to the honourable Consideration and Appointment of my said loving Wife. And whereas it has pleased her most excellent Majesty, of her gracious Favour and Goodness, to vouchsafe me, as next Heir to my late dear Brother, the Earl of *Leicester*, the Surplesage that may be made upon the Sale of the Lordship of *Denbigh* (the Merchants being satisfied their Debts and Interest growing on the same) which, as it is a Thing in her Majesties Power to dispose of, so do I most humbly beseech her, that she would afford my next Heirs in Blood, that is, my said Sister, Countess of *Huntingdon*, and my little Neice, *Elizabeth Sidney*, the Daughter and Heir of my late Nephew, Sir *Philip Sidney*, the like gracious Favour that her Highness intended to my self, that they may, by her Means, reap and have the Benefit of the same Surplusage,



and Overplus, of the Value, which the same, upon the Sale thereof to the best Worth, may yeald. Concerning all my Goods, Chattels, and Moveables, whatsoever, I do give and bequeath them to my aforesaid dearly beloved Wife, whom I do ordeyn and make my sole and only Executrix, of this my Last Will and Testament, requiring her to have an honourable Consideration of all my Servants, according to their special Deserts, and Times spent in my Service, as, in Part, I do declare, by a Codicil, hereunto annexed. And I do instantly intreat my very assured good Lords, the Lord *Burleigh*, Lord Treasurer of *England*, the Earl of *Cumberland*, the Earl of *Huntingdon*, to be Overseers of this my said Will; beseeching them to yield their honourable and friendly Furtherance to the said Executrix, for the better Performance of the same: And, in Testimony of my most dutifull and faithfull Heart towards her most excellent Majesty, whose Days I instantly beseech God to lengthen here upon Earth, to the Comfort of his Church, and this Realm, with much Happiness; and, after her Pilgrimage here ended, she may everlastingly reign with him. I do will and bequeath to her Highnes my best Jewell set with an Emerawde, most humbly beseeching her gracious Acception, notwithstanding the Baseness thereof; and that it would please her Highnes to continue her good Favour towards my said Wife, whom I leave to continue her most faithfull and devoted Servant, recommending this most effectually, as my last Petition to her Majesty. I do give and bequeath to my said very good Lord, the Lord Treasurer, my Collar of Gold of the Order, and my *George* annexed thereunto. And, to the Earl of *Cumberland*, my Brooche with Diamonds, with an Aggat therein; and, to my Lord of *Huntingdon*, my second best *George* and best Garter, and a Bason and Ewer of Silver, of forty Pounds, at the least: And, to my dear Sister, the Countess of *Huntingdon*, a Jewell worth 500 Marks: And, to my Neese, the Countess of *Pembroke*, a Diamond of 50 *l*. And to my very good Lord, the Lord Chancellor, my best *George*, with a Chain and Garter. To my Lord *Cobham*, and Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*, either of them, a *George*. To Mr. Secretary *Walsingham*, my honourable good Friend, a Bason and Ewer of Silver of 40 *l*. And to my little Neice *Sidney*, a Jewell of 100 Marks. And to Mr. Vice-Chamberlain, a Pair of gilt Livery Potts, of 20 *l*. And to Mr. *Roger Manners*, my best Foot-cloath, Nagg, and the best Furniture belonging to the same. In Witness whereof, I have hereunto put my Hand and Seal, the 8 and 20th Day of the Month of *January*, a Thousand five Hundred eighty-nine, and in the 2 and 30th Year of the Queens Majesties most prosperous Reign, *A. Warwicke*. By a Codicil at the same Time, he bequeathed to his Servants a full Years Wages, except to such as he left Legacies to, which are particularly named therein.

*His Countess made her Will, as follows:*

**A**NNE, Countess of *Warwick*, makes her Will <sup>a</sup> 11 Oct. 1603, 1 Jac. I. her Body to be buried at *Cheyneys*, in the County of *Hertford*<sup>b</sup>, without Pomp, at the Discretion of her Executors. She wills, that all her Debts she owes, either in Law or Conscience, be paid with convenient Speed: Of which, such as are due to the King, or the late Queen *Elizabeth*, or by the late Earl of *Leicester*, be discharged by her Mannors, Lands, and Tenements, in the County of *Gloucester*; and, for that Cause, she bequeaths the said Mannors, &c. to her loving Brother, Sir *William Russel*, Knight, Lord *Russel* of *Tbornhaugh*, and to Sir *Henry Cock*, and Sir *Moyle Finch*, Knights, for the Term of 1000 Years. And, concerning all her Lordships, Mannors, &c. she wills, according to the Conditions and Clauses contained in the Deeds and Writings she had caused to be drawn and purposed to perfect and finish (God willing) with Speed. Nevertheless, if by any Means the same shall not be perfected, or any Defect

<sup>a</sup> Ex Regist. Hart. qu. 13.

<sup>b</sup> It should have been *Buckingham*.



should be therein, she bequeaths 30 *l.* Rent Charge, *per Ann.* out of her Mannors, &c. in the said County of Gloucester, to her loving Cozin Oliver Lord St. John, and to her loving Friends, Sir Edmund Bowyer, Sir Arthur Atye, and Sir Thomas Fleming, Knights, and John Beer, Esq; William Holman, and Eustace Grubbe, Gent. and to their Heirs and Assigns for ever, towards the Maintenance of 10 poor People, 4 Men and 6 Women, in an Alms-House directed to be built at Cheyneys, aforesaid; and 20 *l.* more like Rent-Charge *per Ann.* payable for ever to the above-named Persons, and their Heirs and Assigns, out of her Mannor of Northbaw, in the County of Hertford. And she wills, that all Estates, Leases, and Grants, for Life, or Years by her, or her late Lord of Warwick, or both, be held and enjoyed according to their Intent and Meaning, and the Purport of the Deeds in that Behalf made. And her said Mannor of Northbaw, commonly called North Hall, and the Rectory thereof, and all her Lands, &c. there, or at Cuffeley, or elsewhere in the said County of Hertford, she bequeaths to her said dear and loving Brother, the Lord Russel of Thornhaugh, for Term of his Life, paying to his Son, her Nephew Francis Russel, a Rent-Charge of 50 *l.* *per Ann.* and, after the Decease of her said Brother, to be enjoyed by his Son, her Nephew, Francis Russel, and the Heirs Male of his Body; and, in Default, to the Heirs Male of the Body of the said Lord Russel; and, for Want of such Issue, by her Neice the Lady Anne Herbert, Wife of Henry Lord Herbert, Daughter and Heir of her late Brother, John Lord Russel, deceased; and, in Default, to her Sister, the Lady Margaret, Countess of Cumberland, and the Heirs of her Body; in Default, to her Sister Elizabeth, Countess of Bath, and her Heirs; in Default, to her Nephew, Edward Earl of Bedford, and his Heirs; in Default, to her Cozin, Henry Earl of Kent, and his Heirs; in Default, to Charles Grey, Esq; Brother of the said Earl of Kent; in Default, to her Cozin Oliver, Lord St. John of Bletsoe, and his Heirs; and, for Want of such Issue, to the right Heirs of her the said Countess of Warwick for ever. And that the Woods of her Park of Kendal, and her Lands, &c. in Kendal, or elsewhere, in the County of Westmorland, be sold by her Executors, towards the Preferment in Marriage of Elizabeth, Daughter of the said Lady Herbert; and that one Moiety of the said Park and Lands be enjoyed by her Neice, the Lady Herbert, and her Heirs; one other Quarter by her Sister the Lady Margaret, Countess of Cumberland, and her Daughter the Lady Anne Cliford, and the Heirs of their Bodies; one other Quarter by her Sister Elizabeth, Countess of Bath, and her Son, Edward Boucher, Lord Fitz-Warin. And her Mannors of Wotton under Edge, Simonds-ball, Arlingham, alias Elingham, Sayes, Cam, and Hinton, in the County of Gloucester, she bequeaths out of them, to Henry Bertie, Son of the late Lord Wiltoughby, deceased, 10 *l.* *per Ann.* during his natural Life. To her Physician, Dr. Wilkinson, 20 Nobles *per Ann.* To the Lady Catharine, Countess of Huntingdon, during her Life, 100 *l.* *per Ann.* and, after her Decease, to the Lady Elizabeth, Countess of Rutland, during her Life. And afterwards, the said Mannors, &c. she wills to Sir Robert Sidney, Knight, Lord Sidney, and the Heirs of his Body, paying the said Annuity. And she wills, that the said Lord Sidney, and the Heirs of his Body, discharging, within convenient Time, all Debts, &c. due, as aforesaid, to the Kings Majesty, &c. and saving harmless her Heirs and Executors, shall have the Lease and Term of one thousand Years, in Trust for such Intent made to her said Brother, the Lord Russel, Sir Henry Cock, and Sir Moyle Finch, to be surrendered to him the said Lord Sidney, and his Heirs; as also of the Moiety of the Mannor of Wotton under Edge, and of other Lands in the said Lease specified, made to her, or for her Use, by Sir Christopher Blunte, Knight, and his Lady the Countess of Leicester, for certain Years depending on her Life. She bequeaths her Lease and Term of the Parsonage of Hitchin, in Com. Hertf. to her Brother the Lord Russel, as also, the Remainder of her Lease and Term in the Mannor of Topsham, for an Augmentation to the Maintenance of the 10 poor People at Cheyneys. She leaves  
her



her Jewels, Plate, &c. among her Relations; and constitutes her Brother, the Lord *Russel*, Executor, together (for his better Assistance) with *Arnold Oldisworth*, and *Richard Danford*. *Probat.* 27 February, 1603.

The next of the surviving Sons to the said Duke of *Northumberland*, was *Robert Dudley*, the great Favourite of Queen *Elisabeth*, who created him Earl of *Leicester*. He <sup>a</sup> was first made Master of the Buck-hounds for Life, by King *Edward the Sixth*, in the 4th Year of his Reign; and the Year after, was sworn one of the 6 Gentlemen of the King's Privy-Chamber.

In the 1st of Queen *Mary*, though on the Apprehending of his Father, he was also (with him) sent to the *Tower* and attainted; yet was he with his Brothers <sup>b</sup> released, the 18 Oct. 1554; and in 4 and 5 *Phil.* and *Mary*, was made <sup>c</sup> Master of the Ordinance, at the Siege of *St. Quintins*. And from Queen *Elisabeth*, whether for that he had shared with her in that common Fate of Imprisonment, in the Reign of her Sister, or that by Reason of their Births, in one, and the same auspicious Hour, is not easy to determine, saith *Camden* <sup>d</sup>; but he received from her extraordinary Favours and Benefits.

In first Year of her Reign (11 Jan.) he had conferred on him <sup>e</sup> that eminent Office of Master of the Horse, with the Fee of 100 Marks, *per Ann.* And on 20 Dec. following, bearing the Title of *Robert Lord Dudley*, Master of the Horse, was the <sup>f</sup> first in Commission, for compounding by Fines, with all such as were desirous of being discharged from taking the Order of Knighthood, against the Queen's Coronation, according to the Statute in that Case made and provided. And in the same Year <sup>g</sup>, 4 June, was installed Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter.

In the 3d of *Elis.* he was made Constable <sup>h</sup> of *Windsor-castle*, and Forest of *Windsor*, and the Keeping of the great Park at *Windsor*, during Life. And increasing farther into the Esteem and Favour of the Queen, she in the 6th Year of her Reign, recommended him for an Husband to *Mary* Queen of *Scotland* <sup>i</sup>, promising her, if she would assent thereto, she would, by Authority of Parliament, declare her to be her Heir to the Crown of *England*, if she herself should die without Issue.

But the *French*, esteeming it prejudicial to their Interests for her to marry with him, or with some other Views, offered great Advantages to the Subjects of the *Scottish* Nation, in Case they would refuse it, suggesting to them, that Queen *Elisabeth* did not at all purpose what she made Shew of. Plain it is, that having given him large Possessions, her Majesty, before the End of that Year, advanced him to the Dignity of Baron of *Denbigh*, to him and his Heirs for ever, *viz.* on 28 Sept. <sup>j</sup> and the Day after, to that of Earl of the County of *Leicester*, in Consideration of his noble Blood, Loyalty, Valour, Prudence, and numerous Virtues; as also being lawfully descended from the illustrious and antient Earls of *Warwick*.

*Camden* relates, that his Advancement to the Dignity of Earl of *Leicester*, was by some thought the better to qualify him, for his Marriage with the Queen of *Scots*, though others suspected, that this Shew of Queen *Elisabeth* was merely to try, if the Motion would be accepted, and then to marry with him herself with less Dishonour.

The Queen had before, in the 5th Year of her Reign, granted him large Possessions <sup>k</sup>, *viz.* the Castle and Mannor of *Kennilworth*, with the Appurtenances, and *Astel Grove*, both in *Warwickshire*; the Lordships, Mannors, and Castles of *Denbigh* and *Chirk*, with other Possessions; and a Licence for transporting of Cloths, which he sold to *John Marsh*, and others the Company of Merchant Adventurers, for 6266 l. 13s. 4d. And, in that <sup>l</sup> Year, he had a Patent of the

<sup>a</sup> Pat. 4. E. VI.    <sup>b</sup> Stow's Annals.    <sup>c</sup> Strype's Mem. p. 208.    <sup>d</sup> Camden's Annals, p. 135.    <sup>e</sup> Pat. 1 Elis. p. 4.    <sup>f</sup> Rymer's Fœdera Tom. 15. p. 493.    <sup>g</sup> E. Tabell. in Capell. *Windsor.*    <sup>h</sup> Pat. 3 Elis. p. 5.    <sup>i</sup> Annals Elis.    <sup>j</sup> Pat. 6 Elis. p. 12. m. 18.    <sup>k</sup> Extracts of Grants to Rob. Earl of Leicester, MS. apud Penhurst.    <sup>l</sup> Ibid.



High Stewardship of the University of Cambridge, with the Fee of 4*l.* per Annum, dated 7 Julii, 5 *Elif.* and the Stewardship of New Windsor, dated 9 September the same Year. Also, <sup>m</sup> on 30 December, in 7 *Elif.* his Patent bears Date, for the Chancellorship of the University of Oxford. On 24 January, 8 *Elif.* he received the Order of St. Michael, with the Duke of Norfolk, which was conferred on them, by the Ambassadors of Charles the Ninth, King of France, at the Queen's Palace at Westminster <sup>n</sup>, and a particular Relation of his Installation, is given by Mr. Ashmole.

He was in much Estimation about that Time, for, in 7 *Elif.* he had a Patent of the Stewardship of the Bishoprick of Ely, confirmed by the Dean and Chapter of that Place; also the Office of Chamberlain of the County Palatine of Chester. And these following <sup>o</sup> were after conferred on him, the Stewardship of the Forest of Snoden, the Stewardship of Reading, the Stewardship of Abingdon, the Stewardship of Harrow on the Hill, from Roger, Lord North. The Stewardship of Tewksbury, Cleve, Swell, and Longney, with the Fees of 11*l.* per Ann. and the Bailifwick, with the Fees, 66*s.* and 8*d.* The Stewardship of Clun. A Patent of Master of the Game and Liberties, belonging to the Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, with Licence to muster his Tenants, &c. with a Fee of 10*l.* per Ann. A Patent, from the Archbishop of York, of the High Stewardship of his Possessions, and Master of his Game, with a Fee of 10*l.* The Stewardship of the Church of Norwich, with a Fee of 10*l.* A Grant of a Rent Charge of 6*l.* per Ann. from the Bishop of Winchester for Term of his Life, out of the Mannor of Tawnton, and other Lands in Somersetshire, confirmed by the Dean and Chapter. The Stewardship of the Lands of the Archbishop of Canterbury, and a Rent Charge of 10*l.* per Ann. granted by the Dean and Chapter of Christchurch, Canterbury. And a Patent in Reversion of the Stewardship of the Lands of the Bishop of London, with a Fee of 10*l.* per Ann. granted by Edwin, Bishop of London, and a Confirmation of the same from the Dean and Chapter. The Stewardship of the Honour of Tickball, with the accustomed Fee. The Stewardship of the City of Bristol, with the Fee of 4*l.* also the Stewardship of the Bishoprick, with the same Fee. The Stewardship of Evesham, with the Fee of 40*s.* The Stewardship of the Honour of Grafton. He was also chosen High Steward of the Mannor and Hundred of Andover, by the Bailiffs and Burgessees thereof; also Steward of the Town of Great Yarmouth, and Recorder of the Town of Malden in Essex.

In 14 *Elif.* he was constituted Warden of New Forest, in Com. Southamp. <sup>p</sup> the Earl of Arundel giving him an Assignment thereof, who had it from his Ancestor, the Earl of Arundel, who had a Grant thereof 16 February, 6 *Edw.* III. The Year before, he obtained an Act of Parliament, giving him, his Heirs, Executors, and Assigns, full Power, Authority, &c. to establish one Hospital, within the Town of Warwick, or within the Town of Kenelworth, in the same County of Warwick, at their Choice and Election, for the Finding, Sustentation, and Relief of poor, needy, and impotent People, to have a Continuance for ever. And that the same Hospital, so founded, should be incorporated, and have a perpetual Succession for ever, of such Head, Members, and Numbers of Poor, &c. as should be appointed by the said Earl, his Heirs, Executors, or Assigns, under their Hands and Seals, &c. And, being so incorporated, should have full Power, &c. to purchase and hold, to them, and to their Successors, for ever, Mannors, Lands, &c. within any County in England, so that the same exceed not the yearly Value of 200*l.* above all Charges and Reprises, &c. And that the same Hospital should have, and enjoy for ever, such a Common Seal or Seals, as the said Earl, &c. should appoint, &c. And should be ruled, governed, ordered, directed, and visited, by such Person or Persons, as should be nominated by the said Earl, &c.

Whereupon the said Earl, by Deed Poll of Incorporation, under his Hand and Seal, 21 November, 1585, 28 *Elif.* recited, That since the Making of the said

<sup>m</sup> Extracts of Grants to Rob. Earl of Leicester, MS. apud Penshurst. p. 369, 370.

<sup>o</sup> Grants præd. apud Penshurst.

<sup>p</sup> Ibid.

<sup>n</sup> Order of the Garter,



Act, he appointed a House in the Town of *Warwick* for the said Hospital, and had placed therein one Master, viz. *Ralph Griffin*, Professor of Divinity, and twelve poor Brethren, who, ever since the Making the said Act, had their Abode and Relief there, at the said Earl's Charge. Now the said Earl calling to Remembrance, that the good and charitable Deeds and Works of *Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick*, and other his Ancestors, being provided and intended for the Relief of the Poor within the said Town of *Warwick*, but instituted and ordeined, according to the Error and superstitious Ignorance of those former Times, are abrogated and taken away. And withall, being continually mindful of the great Mercy and Goodness of Almighty God, freely bestowed upon him many Ways, and especially by the singular Bounty and Favour of his most gracious Sovereign Lady *Queen Elizabeth*. And in respect thereof, by Authority of the said Statute, ordeins, establishe, and appoints an Hospital in the said Town of *Warwick*, to have Continuance for ever, for the Finding, Sustainment, and Relief of poor, needy, and impotent Men, and especially of such as should be hereafter wounded, maimed, or hurt in the Wars, in the Service of her Majesty, her Heirs and Successors. And did found and establish the said Hospital, to consist of one Master and 12 poor Brethren, to be called THE HOSPITAL OF ROBERT, EARL OF LEICESTER, IN WARWICK. And the said *Ralph Griffin* having lately been preferred by her Majesty, at the earnest Suit of the said Earl, to the Deanry of *Lincoln*, in the Cathedral Church of *Lincoln*: He thereupon ordeined, That *Thomas Cartwright* should be, during his Life, Master of the said Hospital, unless removed, or resigning, and, in that Case, such Person, as the Earl or his Heirs should appoint, should be Master. And did further ordein, That the 12 Persons, there named, then dwelling and abiding in the said Hospital, should be the then present 12 Brethren of the said Hospital. And that upon the Death, Resignation, Deprivation, or other lawfull Removing of any of them, such Person or Persons, as by the said Earl or his Heir, or Heirs, after his Death, should be named or appointed a Brother or Brethren of the said Hospital, should be the Brethren of the said Hospital for ever. And, if the said Earl, or his Heir, or Heirs, did not, from Time to Time, within three Months next after the said 12 Brethren, or any of them, should die, resign, be deprived, or otherwise lawfully removed from the said Hospital, then such Person and Persons, as from Time to Time, upon the Default of the said Earl and his Heirs, in Form aforesaid, should be appointed and preferred to be a Brother or Brethren, by the Bishop of *Worcester* for the Time being, and the Recorder of *Coventry* for the Time being, and the Recorder of *Warwick* for the Time being, or any two of them, under Hands and Seals, should be a Brother and Brethren of the said Hospital for ever. And he appointed the said Master and Brethren a Body Corporate and Politick, &c. and the Lands, Tenements, &c. thereof should be for ever, thereafter, ruled, governed, ordered, and directed, according to such Rules, Statutes, and Ordinances, as were thereto annexed, or, at any Time thereafter, should be set forth, made, devised, and established by the said Earl, by Writing or Writings under his Hand and Seal.

The said Earl, 26 November, 1585, also gave a Body of Ordinances, Statutes, and Rules, for the Order and Government of the said Hospital.

Whereby he appoints the Form of an Oath to be taken by the Master, That he will govern and order that Hospital, and the Poor thereof, according to the Laws, Statutes, and Ordinances of the Founder, and not consent or agree to any Act or Thing whatsoever, whereby the good Intent of the Founder may be made frustrate; but to keep, as near as he can, all the Statutes instituted by the Founder. And afterwards appoints, that the Brethren of the said Hospital shall take an Oath, To be obedient to the Master of the said Hospital, in all lawful and honest Things, not contrary to the Statutes and Ordinances of the Founder of the same, &c. but, living peaceably and quietly in this Hospital, shall, to the best of their Power, maintain and uphold the same.

And then goes on in the following Words:

7. ' Touching the Poor of the same Hospital, we will they shall be 12 in Number, besides the Master. And we ordein, that such poor and impotent Persons,



Persons, not having of their own to relieve themselves, as shall be hereafter maimed or hurt in the Wars, in Service of the Queen's Majesty, her Heirs and Successors, and especially such as shall be under the Conduct or Leading of us or our Heirs, or the Servants and Tenants of us and our Heirs, shall be preferred before all others, to the Places and Rooms, which shall become void in the said Hospital.

8. *Item*, We ordein, that none shall be preferred to any Place or Room in the said Hospital, but such as shall be born in the Counties of *Warwick* or *Gloucester*, or there dwelling and abiding, by the Space of 4 or 5 Years at the least.

9. *Item*, We will, that if there be no poor People, which have been maimed or hurt in the Wars, as is aforesaid, That then such poor and impotent Persons, as shall be decayed by Sickness, or some other Misfortune, and not by their own wicked Wastfulness, and riotous Consuming, and especially by the Servants and Tenants of us and our Heirs, shall be preferred to the Place and Room of a Brother in the said Hospital.

10. *Item*, We ordein that the lame and maimed Soldiers, and poor People of the Quality and Condition aforesaid, which shall happen to be in the Towns of *Warwick*, *Kenelworth*, and *Stratford upon Avon* in the said County of *Warwick*, or in the Lordships of *Wotton-under-Edge*, and *Erlingham*, in the County of *Gloucester*, shall be preferred to the Places and Rooms aforesaid before any other, viz. 1st. The Town of *Warwick*. 2dly. The Town of *Kenelworth*. 3dly. The Town of *Stratford upon Avon*. 4thly. The Lordship of *Wotton-under-Edge*; and 5thly, the Lordship of *Erlingham*, *alterius Vicibus*; And for Default of such poor and maimed People, in the Towns aforesaid, then, the same poor Brethren to be taken and chosen out of any Town in the said County of *Warwick*.

*Item*, We ordein, that such as shall be admitted a poor Brother of the said Hospital, after the Death of us the said Earl, shall be commended by the Minister and Church Wardens of the Parish, where he was last abiding, by Writing, under their Hands and Seals, to be of honest Life and Conversation.

The other Articles to the 24th relate, how the Brethren shall demean themselves, &c.

24. *Item*, That no Person shall be a Brother of this Hospital, or enjoy any Part of the Living or Benefit allowed, or to be allowed, for a Brother, if he shall have, any Manner of Way, any other Living, to the clear Value of 5 l. by the Year, or above. And if any hereafter shall be, *ipso facto*, to be deprived.

The rest of the Articles, to the 32d, contain Rules for the Behaviour of the Master and Brethren.

32. *Item*, We ordein that the Bishop of *Worcester*, the Dean of *Worcester*, and the Arch-Deacon of *Worcester*, for the Time being, or any two of them, after the Death of us the said Earl, shall be Visitors of the said Hospital, and that it shall be lawful for them, or any two of them, to visit the said Hospital, at any Time, at their Pleasures, so it be not above once in three Years, and to correct, punish, and reform all Abuses and Offences to be committed or done by the said Master and Brethren, or any of them. And to see those our Ordinances truly executed according to the true Meaning of the same. Provided always that the said Master and Brethren, or any of them, shall not be compelled to appear, or go, out of the Town of *Warwick*, to any such Visitation.

The 33d Article ordeins that these Statutes shall be written in a Table, and hang continually in the Hall of the said Hospital, &c. And the 34th ordeins that, the Revenue of the Hospital being divided into 4 Parts, the Master to have one 4th Part, and the Brethren the rest; also makes Orders for letting Leases of the Lands, &c. belonging to the said Hospital.

Having raised stately and magnificent Buildings, at *Kenelworth-Castle*, in *Warwickshire*,



*wickshire*, and enlarged the Chase, Parks, &c. thereto belonging, so that the Charges thereof (as Sir *William Dugdale*<sup>a</sup> relates) was no less than 60,000 *l.* he had the Honour of entertaining Queen *Elisabeth* and her Court there, for the Space of 10 Days in *July* 1575, 17 *Elif.* with excessive Cost, and Variety of delightful Entertainments, which are set forth in a *Mask*<sup>b</sup> written in Prose and Verse, by *George Gascoign*, Esq; intituled, *The Princelie Pleasures at Kenelworth-Castle*.

Upon the Queen's first Entrance, appeared a floating Island on the large Pool there, bright blasing with Torches, on which were clad in Silks the Lady of the Lake, and two Nymphs waiting on her, who made a Speech to the Queen in Meeter of the Antiquity and Owners of that Castle, which was closed with Cornets, and other loud Musick. Within the Base-court was a noble Bridge set up, of 20 Feet wide, and 70 Feet long, over which the Queen passed; on each Side whereof, on Posts erected, were Presents on them to her, by the Gods, viz. A Cage of wild Fowl, by *Silvanus*; divers Sorts of Fruits, by *Pomona*; of Corn, by *Ceres*; of Wine, by *Bacchus*; of Sea-Fish, by *Neptune*; of all Habiliments of War, by *Mars*; and of Musical Instruments, by *Phæbus*.

Also during the several Days of her Stay, various rare Shews, and Sports were exercised, viz. In the Chase, a Savage Man with Satyrs; Bear-baitings, Fire-works, *Italian* Tumblers, a Country Bride Ale, with running at the Quin-ting, and Morrice-dancing. And, that nothing might be wanting which those Parts could afford, the *Coventry* Men came, and acted the antient *Play*, long since used in that City, called *Hocks Tuesday*, setting forth the Destruction of the *Danes* in King *Ethelred's* Time, which pleased the Queen so much, that she gave them a Brace of Bucks, and 5 Marks in Money, to bear the Charges of a Feast.

Likewise on the Pool, there was a *Triton* riding on a Mermaid, 18 Feet long; as also *Arion* on a Dolphin, with rare Musick. The Costs and Expences of these Entertainments may be guest at, by the Quantity of Beer then drunk, which amounted to 320 Hogsheads of the ordinary Sort: And for the greatest Honour thereof, Sir *Thomas Cecil*, Son and Heir to the Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treasurer; Sir *Henry Cobham*, Brother to the Lord *Cobham*; Sir *Thomas Stanhope* (Ancestor to the present Earls of *Chesterfield*, *Stanhope* and *Harrington*) and Sir *Thomas Tresham*, were then knighted. And the next ensuing Year, this Earl obtained a Grant of the Queen, for a weekly Market at *Kenelworth*, on the *Wednesday*, with a Fair yearly on *Midsummer-day*.

In 1576, 19 *Elif.* *Walter Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, dying in *Ireland*,<sup>c</sup> this Earl lay under a Suspicion of poisoning him, having not, long after his Death, married *Lettice* Countess of *Essex*, his Widow, who was Daughter of Sir *Francis Knolles*, Knight of the Garter. In Answer to this, Sir *Henry Sidney*, Lord Deputy of *Ireland*,<sup>d</sup> wrote to the Council of *England*, 'That he had made a diligent Enquiry into the Affair, and found, that by the Earl of *Essex's* own Relation, it was usual for him to fall into a bloody Flux, whenever he was disturbed in Mind; that he was by no Means apprehensive of Poison, and his Body retained the same Colour in his Sickness, as in perfect Health; no Spot, no Infection appeared, no Falling off of the Hair or Nails, and when his Corps was opened, there were no visible Signs of Poison seen on him; and though his Physicians differed in their Judgments, yet none of them advised any Manner of Application against the Force of Poison, and his Cup-bearer was falsely accused of having intermingled it with his Wine.'

In 1578, the Duke of *Anjou* pressing for the Match that had been proposed between him, and Queen *Elisabeth*, and sending over Monsr. *Simier*, a very gallant Gentlemen, attended by a large Train of *French* Nobility; the Earl of *Leicester* was doubtful, whether the Marriage might not take Effect. The Earl, as it is said by our Historians, had sometime before, sounded the Queen's Disposition,

<sup>a</sup> *Warwicksh.* 2d Edit. p. 249.

<sup>b</sup> *Wood's Athenæ Oxon.* Vol. p. 150.

<sup>c</sup> *Pat.* 18 *Elif.* p. 6.

<sup>d</sup> *Camd. Annals*, p. 277, 278.

<sup>e</sup> *Ibid.*



in choosing him for a Husband, and not receiving a favourable Answer, he abandoned all Thoughts thereof, and privately married the Countess of *Essex*, as before related. This Marriage *Simiers* discovered to the Queen, apprehending his Lordship to be the greatest Bar to the Duke's Pretensions; and *Camden* relates, that she was so enraged thereat, that she commanded him not to stir from the Castle of *Greenwich*, designing to have committed him to the Tower, but was dissuaded from it, by the Earl of *Suffex*. On this (as the same Author recites) he repented it so far as it was thought he had some Intention to cause him to be murdered. And one Day, *Simiers* waiting on her Majesty in her Barge, not far from *Greenwich*, a Gun was discharged from a neighbouring Boat, and one of the Queen's Bargemen wounded through both his Arms; this was suggested to dispatch *Simier*, but on Enquiry, it appeared to have been wholly accidental, and the Man, who had been immediately apprehended, was set at Liberty.

The Duke of *Anjou* sending an Ambassy of the greatest Nobles in *France*, into *England*, in 1581, they were received by the Queen, with all Instances of Honour; and the Earl of *Leicester* was one of the Noblemen appointed to confer with them, and that engaged for their Diversion, in <sup>2</sup> Justings, Barriers, and Turney; but the People, in general, shewing great Discontent at the proposed Marriage, <sup>a</sup> it induced the Queen to issue her Proclamation, under a severe Penalty, that none of her Subjects should either strike or draw Weapon, within 4 Miles of *London* or the Court. And the Duke thinking his Presence might prevail more than the Oratory of his Ambassadors, who signified to him the Queen's Declination of Marriage, he came in Person to prefer his Suit; but having tarried in *England*, the Space of three Months, and finding his Application to be ineffectual, he set out on the 6th of *February* for *Sandwich*; the Earl of *Leicester* <sup>b</sup>, with a Train of 100 Gentlemen, and 300 others, of inferior Sort, accompanying him to *Antwerp*, as did also the Lord *Hunsdon*, and the Lord *Charles Howard*, who had each of them 150 Followers. The Confederates of the *Low-Countries*, believing it might please the Queen, had sent over their Agents, to the Duke in *England*, to desire he would be their Protector against the *Spaniards*; and the Queen promising him Aid, he accepted of their Proffer, <sup>c</sup> and on his Arrival at *Antwerp*, he with the Earl of *Leicester*, &c. who accompanied him, were entertained with great State and Solemnity, where having seen him invested in the Government of the said Provinces, viz. on 19 Feb. the *English* Nobility, with their Trains, returned to *England*.

In 1584, he prevailed on the Chief of the Nobility and Gentry of *England*, to subscribe an Association <sup>d</sup> by which they bound themselves to pursue unto Death, whosoever should attempt any Thing against Queen *Elisabeth*. And this by some Authors <sup>e</sup> is said to be in Hatred to the Queen of *Scots*, and that, a Plot being formed to set her at Liberty, he was for Making her privately away. His Aversion against the Queen of *Scots* <sup>f</sup> is supposed to have rose from a private View of conveying the Crown into the Family of the *Dudleys* (as *Heylin* asserts) by advancing the Earl of *Huntington* to the Throne, who had a Claim to the Crown, as being descended in a direct Line from *George* Duke of *Clarence*, and had married the Sister of the Earl of *Leicester*.

On 22 Oct. 27 *Elis.* being then Master of the Horse to the Queen, he was constituted Captain-General <sup>g</sup> of all such Forces, as do presently serve, or hereafter shall serve in the *Low-Countries*, for the Relief of the Inhabitants there. And was impowered to levy in *England*, or the Dominion of *Wales*, 500 able and sufficient Men of his Tenants and Servants to attend his Person beyond the Seas, and in his Passage thither, and returning from thence, them and every of them to imploy in his Service as he shall think convenient. Which Retainers and Followers, under his Hand and Seal, signifying the same, were during

<sup>a</sup> Camden's Annals, p. 339. <sup>z</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 689. <sup>a</sup> Ibid. <sup>b</sup> Ibid. 690. <sup>c</sup> Ibid.  
<sup>d</sup> Camden's Annals, p. 300. <sup>e</sup> Johnston Rer. Britan. p. 98. The Life of Mary Queen of  
*Scots*, p. 281, 288. <sup>f</sup> Heylin's History of the Presbyterians, p. 272. <sup>g</sup> Pat. 27 Elis. p. 2.  
 & Rymer's Fœdera, Tom. 15, p. 799.



the Time so imployed in his Service, to have the Queen's Protection for their Bodies, Lands, and Goods, any Law, Statute, or Restraint to the contrary thereof in any wise notwithstanding. With a Mandate to all Justices of Peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, &c. and all other Officers to be obedient thereto.

Before his Departure, the Queen admonished him to have a special Regard to her Honour<sup>h</sup>, and to attempt nothing which should be inconsistent with the Imployment to which he was advanced; and particularly she required him to search into their Method of Raising and Falling the Value of Money, that so the Soldiers might not receive their Pay at one Rate, and give it out at another; and very affectionately recommended to his Care the young Noblemen of the Country, and more especially the Sons of the late Prince of Orange.

On 8 December, 1585, he imbarqued<sup>i</sup> with 50 Sail of Ships, and those that went with him, or made Haste after him, were the Earls of Oxford, Northumberland, and Essex, the Lord Audley, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Sheffield, the Lord North, the Lord Borroughs, Sir William Russel, Sir Philip Sidney, Sir Robert Sidney, Sir Henry Stanley, Sir Gervase Clifton, Sir Thomas Shirley, Sir William Pelham, Lord Marshal of the Field, Sir Arthur Bassett, Sir Walter Walter, with many<sup>k</sup> other Persons of Distinction. On the 10th he arrived at *Flushing*, and with his whole Train (his Person being guarded by 50 Archers, bearing Bows and Arrows, 50 Halberds, and 50 Musqueteers) were magnificently entertained by Sir Philip Sidney, Governor of the Town for her Majesty, by *Grave Maurice*, second Son to the late Prince of Orange, by the Queen's Ambassador, and the States; and all Sorts of People expressed the greatest Joy on his Arrival. He was lodged in the Ambassador's House, and behaved with so much Courtesy and Affability, that he gained the Affections of all who approached him.

How he further proceeded, is related by *Hollinshead* and *Stow*; I shall only observe, that he was feasted and received with the greatest Honours, and all the Inhabitants were so overjoyed at the Arrival of the *English* Succours, that they entertained the whole Army at their own private Expence, and every Citizen strove to go beyond his Neighbour, in all the Offices of Friendliness and Civility that could be shewn to their welcome Guests. Which Kindness the Earl requited, and banqueted the States, and others, all the *Christmas* Holidays.

On the 25 January, the Earl was sworn unto the States<sup>l</sup>, and the States sworn unto the Queen, and to obey the Earl, her Lieutenant; and, on the 6th of February, they published a Placard, granting to him the chief Government, and absolute Authority, over the *United Provinces*. And gave to him, besides the Authority her Majesty had given to him, ' the highest and supreme Commandment, and absolute Authority above, and in all Matters of Warfare, both by ' Sea and Land, to execute and administrate the same, to the Resistance of the ' Enemy, even as his Excellency should think most commodious to the Preference of those Countries; and so further, to do all such Things as appertain ' to the Office of a general Captain. And furthermore, we commit the Administration and Use of Policy and Justice, over the aforesaid *United Provinces*, ' and associated Cities and Members of the same, into his Hands, to execute ' and administrate the same, with such Power and Authority, as have had, in ' Times past, all the other Governors of these *Low-Countries* before him, and ' especially, as have been exercised and lawfully administered in the Time of ' *Charles the Fifth*, &c. We, therefore, command all Governors of Provinces ' and Cities, all Admirals, Vice-Admirals, all Officers and Soldiers, by Sea and ' Land; and furthermore, all other Counsellors, Officers, Treasurers, Receivers, Bailiffs, Burgomasters, Magistrates, &c. of what Quality or Condition soever, to honour, respect, and obey him, as they ought to do, &c.'

The Lord Lieutenant immediately applied himself to his Charge<sup>m</sup>, and nominated Superintendants to act under him in the several Provinces, all of them

<sup>h</sup> Camden's History of Queen Elis. p. 326. <sup>i</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 711. <sup>k</sup> Hollinshead, p. 1424, and Stow præd. <sup>l</sup> Stow, p. 112. <sup>m</sup> Hollinshead, p. 1432.



Natives of the Country, and Members of the great Council; and visited most of the Towns in Person, where he was received with the highest Honours, and all imaginable Joy; the *English* Forces inspiring the Inhabitants with fresh Courage; which added to the Care and Sollicitude of the Prince of *Parma*, who was watchful of all Attempts made by the *English*. However, General *Norris* defeated the *Spaniards* in several Conflicts, and the Bravery of the *English* got them great Renown throughout the Provinces. General *Norris*, in his Letter from *Rawston*, near *Grave*, on the 6th of *April*, to the Lord Lieutenant, 'That intrenching himself within one Hour's March to *Grave*, having with him not above 300 Men, the Enemy attacked him with 3000, whereby his Forces were obliged to retreat; but, on Hearing of their March towards him, he had sent for 800 *English*, and meeting them about Half a Mile from their Retreat, he turned, and forced them to quit the Place, notwithstanding their Inequality, and had the Killing them above an *English* Mile, losing (as he writes) a great Company of brave Men, and most of their Leaders.' He concludes, that he will do the utmost in his Power, to the Hazarding of his Life, to do his Excellency Honour and Service.

On 23 *April*, the Earl of *Leicester*, being at *Utrecht*, kept <sup>n</sup> the Feast of *St. George* in the most honourable and magnificent Manner. The Streets of the City were ranked and set with eight Ensigns of Burghers, richly apparelled, wearing Scarves knit like Roses, white and red, upon their Arms, between whom, from his Lordship's Court, the Proceeding was on Horseback to the Cathedral Church called the *Dome*. First rode the Trumpeters, in Scarlet laid with Silver-lace, sounding, their Bannerols with his Lordship's Arms thereon displayed. Then followed the Colonels and principal Persons, and her Majesty's sworn Men, to the Number of forty Horse, richly adorned with Cloth of Gold, Silver, and Silks of all Colours. After came six Knights, four Barons, with the Council of Estates, the Earl of *Essex*, accompanied by the Bishop of *Cologne* Prince Elector; and the Prince of *Portugal* rid by himself. Next proceeded the Captain of his Lordship's Guard, the Treasurer, and Comptroller of his Household, bearing their white Staves. After whom followed two Gentlemen Ushers, and Portcullis Herald in a rich Coat, embroidered with the Arms of *England*.

Then came his Lordship (as *Hollinshed* saith) most Prince-like, invested in his Robes of the Order, guarded by the principal Burghers in the Town, who offered themselves to that Service, and his own Guard, which consisted of fifty Halberds, in scarlet Cloaks, edged with Purple and white Velvet. Being thus conducted to the Church, and paying his Reverence to her Majesty's Seat, erected on this Occasion, on the Right-hand, he took his Stall on the Left, which was situate some Degrees lower. After Prayers, and a Sermon preached by his Lordship's Chaplain, he proceeded to the Offering, first for her Majesty, then for himself, which he performed (to use the Words of my Author) *with such Decorum and princelie Behaviour, that all generallie spake most honourable of him.*

These Solemnities being over, his Lordship returned as he came, and the Company were most magnificently entertained at Dinner in his Excellency's Palace, which was very large, and, before his Time, belonged to the Knights of *Rhodes*. The Sumptuousness of the Feast, and the Devices used on that Occasion, &c. may be seen in *Hollinshed* and *Stow*.

The Honours paid to him, and the large Powers he had from the *States*, induced many about the Queen to think, he aimed at the Sovereignty of the Provinces; which caused her Majesty to dispatch her Vicechamberlain to him, with an expostulating Letter, in these angry Terms °:

'How contemptuously you have carried yourself towards us, you shall understand by this Messenger, whom we send to you for that Purpose. We lit-

<sup>n</sup> *Hollinshed*, p. 1433.  
Lib. 7. p. 477.

<sup>o</sup> *Camden's Hist. of Queen Elis.* p. 327, and *Strad. de Bello Belgic.*



‘ tle thought that one, whom we had raised out of the Dust, and prosecuted  
 ‘ with such singular Favour above all others, would, with so great Contempt,  
 ‘ have slighted and broken our Commands, in a Matter of so great Confe-  
 ‘ quence, and so highly concerning us and our Honour. Whereof, though you  
 ‘ have but small Regard, contrary to what you ought by your Allegiance, yet  
 ‘ think not that we are so careless of repairing it, that we can bury so great an  
 ‘ Injury in Silence and Oblivion. We therefore command you, that, all Ex-  
 ‘ cuse set apart, you do forthwith, upon your Allegiance which you owe unto  
 ‘ us, whatsoever *Heneage* our Vicechamberlain shall make known to you in  
 ‘ our Name, upon Pain of further Peril.’

She also wrote to the States-General, ‘ That, to her Disgrace, and without  
 ‘ her Knowledge, they had conferred the absolute Government of the Confede-  
 ‘ rate Provinces upon *Leicester* her Subject, though she had absolutely refused  
 ‘ it herself, &c.’ She therefore advised them ‘ to turn *Leicester* out of that  
 ‘ absolute Authority, whose Commission she had limited; not that she thought  
 ‘ their Cause unworthy to be favoured, but to provide for, and secure her own  
 ‘ Honour, which she esteemed more dear to her than Life itself.’

To these Letters the States returned a submissive Answer, excused what they  
 had done, by the Necessity of granting such an Authority to avoid Troubles  
 and Dissensions, gave a softer Sense to the Word *Absolute*, than was generally  
 meant by it, and laid before her the Inconvenience of recalling a Power they had  
 already given. And the Earl of *Leicester*, at the same Time, lamenting his hard  
 Fate, in having disoblged her, and, expressing his Sorrow for it, so wrought  
 on her Disposition, that she overlooked the Offence, and acquiesced in the De-  
 claration of the States. *Bentivoglio* intimates <sup>p</sup>, as though this Step must have  
 been before secretly made known to the Queen, or the Earl of *Leicester* would  
 not have accepted the Government without her private Consent. And *Strada*  
<sup>a</sup> more openly charges her Majesty with an ambitious View of seeking to add  
 the *Low-Countries* to her Dominions, by permitting *Leicester* to take upon him  
 the Sovereignty. But this is improbable. The Provinces had been twice offered  
 her, by a solemn Ambassy from the States; her Parliament had solicited the  
 Acceptance, and promised her Supplies to support it; and the universal Inclina-  
 tion to submit to her, in Conjunction with the Forces she had ready to send  
 over, must have rendered all Opposition impracticable.

It has been observed, that *Strada* was an *Italian* Jesuit in the Pay of *Spain*,  
 and, consequently, the *English* could expect no fair Representation from him,  
 who hated them as Hereticks, and as Enemies. Yet he says, the Earl of *Lei-*  
*cester* was such an absolute Master of his own Temper, that he could, as he pleased,  
 adapt it to any Man’s Humours or Designs. Agreeable to this, *Mezeray* calls him  
 a subtle, dextrous Courtier; and what other Historians cite, argues him to be a  
 Man of great Abilities, though the general Hatred and Envy of many People  
 suppressed his real Virtues, or imputed them to Artifice or Design, which might,  
 however, spring from a generous Disposition.

The last Mention of the Earl’s Actions, this Year, was his being at *Utrecht*, and  
 from thence he marched to *Arnheim*, with a considerable Force, to relieve the Be-  
 sieged in *Grave*; but after he had made himself Master of the Forts, and was  
 contriving in what Manner he might best succour the Besieged, the Governor  
 sent to the Prince of *Parma*, to treat of a Surrender, who was not unwilling to  
 grant him any Conditions, that, this Enterprize being dispatched, he might re-  
 pair to *Venlo*. Thereupon, the Garrison marched out with their Arms and Bag-  
 gage, and Colours flying. It is said, that Van *Hemart* <sup>r</sup> was induced to capitulate  
 by the Persuasions of an Harlot, and that the Earl of *Leicester* presently or-  
 dered him to be apprehended, and, for an Example of Terror, caused him,  
 and two other Officers concerned with him, to be put to an ignominious  
 Death.

<sup>p</sup> Hist. of the Wars of Flanders, Part 2, Lib. 4, p. 240.

<sup>a</sup> De Bello Belgic. Lib. 7. P. 477.

<sup>r</sup> Grot. de Reb. Belgic. Lib. 4. De Bello Belgic. Lib. 7, p. 488.



After this, the Earl of *Leicester* <sup>a</sup> took the strong Fort of *Nimeguen* on the 20 *May*, and having <sup>t</sup> drove the *Spaniards* out of the *Betawe*, an Island formed by the Rivers of *Rhine* and *Wael*, he next took the Sconce of *Barrikes-boofe*, a Place of great Importance, which was surrendered at Discretion. The *English* were no less successful at *Bergenopzume*, where the Lord *Willoughby* of *Eresby* set upon a Convoy going to *Antwerp*, seized 480 Waggon laden with Provisions, carried of 1000 Horses, slew 200 Men, and took 400 Prisoners.

The Lord Lieutenant thinking it convenient to take a Progress <sup>u</sup> through the Country, to dispose of every Thing to the best Advantage; whilst he was engaged therein, his Nephew, Sir *Philip Sidney*, and *Grave Maurice*, the Prince of *Orange's* Son, entered *Flanders*, and took *Axel* by Surprise; and, encouraged by that Success, made an Attempt upon *Gravelin*, which, upon private Notice, was to be delivered up, but the Design miscarried.

In the mean Time, the Lord Lieutenant <sup>w</sup>, remaining at *Utrecht*, had Information of 500 of the Enemy being entered the City, in the Habits of Countrymen, with Design to betray it; but, a strict Enquiry being made after them, there were three only to be found, who were committed to Prison.

The Duke of *Parma* laying Siege to *Reinberch*, a Town garrisoned by 1200 *English*, under Colonel *Morgan*, the Earl of *Leicester* <sup>x</sup> used all Means to relieve it; but finding his Army inferior to the Enemy, ill furnished with Provisions, and no Place of Retreat near at Hand, he strove to divert them from their Attempt, by laying Siege to one of their own Towns. He was then on the other Side of the *Rhine*, in the Province of *Overyffel*, not far from *Zutphen*, the most considerable Place in that Country, garrisoned by the *Spaniards*. To render the Conquest more easy, he determined <sup>y</sup> first to take *Doesburgh* on the River *Yffel*, which would prove serviceable in carrying on his great Design; and, as soon as the *English* had raised their Batteries, the Defendants demanded a Parley, and surrendered the Town to his Lordship, 2 *Sept.*

On 13 *Sept.* his Excellency <sup>z</sup> with his Army came before *Zutphen*, on the River *Yffel*, which drew the Duke of *Parma* from the Siege of *Reinberch*, and brought on an Engagement, 22 *Sept.* between great Detachments of both Armies. The *English* charged them so courageously, that they threw them into Disorder, and forced them to retreat; but the Enemy returning, the Victory for a long Time, stood doubtful. The Earl of *Essex*, General of the Horse, the Lord *Willoughby*, the Lord *Audley*, the Lord *North*, Sir *William Russel*, Sir *Philip Sidney*, Sir *William Stanley*, and Sir *John Norris* greatly distinguished themselves on this Occasion. The Enemy lost a considerable Number of their bravest Officers, and *George Cressia*, General of the *Albanois*, was taken Prisoner, after being unhorsed by the Lord *Willoughby*. But, the Duke of *Parma* coming in Order of Battle, with the rest of his Army, the Earl of *Leicester* judged the Attempt too hazardous, to venture a general Engagement, and ordered a Retreat to be sounded, whereby the Enemy sent Forces and Provisions into *Zutphen*: The greatest Misfortune sustained, in this Action, was the Loss of Sir *Philip Sidney*, whose exemplary Virtues gained him the universal Esteem of all *Europe*, and no Person, of any Age or Country, was more generally lamented.

The Earl of *Leicester*, however, continued the Siege, and, on the 4th of *October*, the great Fort demanded a Parley <sup>a</sup>; which being granted, Count *Hollock* stepped out to talk with them; but, in the Midst of the Conference, as the Count was speaking, he was shot through the Mouth, and took off the Jewel that hung at his Ear. To revenge this Treachery, the *English* repeated their Attacks, and the same Day made an Assault on the lesser Fort, Sword in Hand. Captain *Edward Stanley* was the 1st, who mounted the Breach, and perhaps truer Courage was never shewn <sup>b</sup>. He was opposed by the Captain

<sup>a</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 718.

<sup>t</sup> Camden's Elif. p. 328.

<sup>u</sup> Grot. de Reb. Belgic. Lib. 4.

& Stow's Annals.

<sup>w</sup> Stow. p. 733.

<sup>x</sup> Camden's Hist. of Q. Elif. p. 329.

<sup>y</sup> Stow, p. 736.

<sup>z</sup> Ib. & p. 737.

<sup>a</sup> Ib. p. 738.

<sup>b</sup> Camd. Elif. p. 333, Stow, p. 738. 739, Strad. de

Bello Belgic. p. 553.



of the Fort, who, standing alone in the Breach, aimed his Pike at his Breast, as he was entering. On which, with great Presence of Mind, laying Hold of the Pike, he strove with all his Force, to pluck him from his Post, if he refused to let go his Hold. But, finding his Strength insufficient to effect his Purpose, he suffered himself to be raised up, by his Competitor, on the Rampart; and his Soldiers following, so terrified the Garrison, with his unexpected Presence, that, deserting the Defence, as many as were able made their Escape by a back Door, and fled to *Zutphen*, leaving their Captain Prisoner. The Earl of *Leicester* knighted *Stanley* for his Courage, presented him with forty Pounds Sterling, and settled a yearly Pension on him for Life. He likewise knighted Captain *Reade*, who also shewed great Bravery on that Occasion. And the Enemy, much terrified, abandoned the great Fort the next Night. But the Earl judged it not convenient for his Army to continue any longer before *Zutphen*, till the Rigour of the Season should be abated, it being sufficiently blocked up by the Garrisons, which lay in the Towns round about it. Many Persons of Distinction of the *English* Nation having highly distinguished themselves, the Earl of *Leicester*, in Reward of their Merit, and his own Honour, conferred in his Camp the Dignity of Knight-Banneret<sup>c</sup>, on the Earl of *Essex*, the Lord *Willoughby*, the Lord *Audley*, and the Lord *North*; and knighted Sir *Henry Goodere*, Captain of the Guard, Sir *Henry Norris*, Sir *John Borroughs*, Sir *John Winckfield*, Sir *Roger Williams*, Sir *Robert Sidney*, Sir *Philip Butler*, Sir *Henry North*, Sir *Thomas Dennis*, Sir *William Knolles*, Sir *George Farmer*, Sir *George Digby*, Sir — *Steward*, Sir — *Beauford*.

On 15 Oct.<sup>d</sup> his Excellency, after Securing of *Deventry*, came to *Arnhem*, to visit his Nephew Sir *Philip Sidney*, whom he found past all Hopes of Recovery, and he died two Days after, to his infinite Regret, and was bewailed by him, with great Sorrow, shutting himself up, for a whole Day, as *Stow* relates.

On 29 Oct. his Excellency<sup>e</sup> arrived at the *Hague*, where the States-General were then assembled, who received him with Coldness, breaking out into Expostulation and Complaint, as their own Writers<sup>f</sup> affirm; and that, having entered on a Justification of his Proceedings, he strove to remove their supposed Misconstructions and Mistakes, and at last endeavoured to dissolve the Assembly; but not being able to bring about his Purpose, he declared his Resolution of returning into *England*, and left the Council in an angry Manner. However, as *Grotius* writes, he was afterwards brought to Temper, and told the *States*, that, by his Journey into *England*, he should be the more enabled to assist them in their Affairs, and provide a Remedy to all their Grievances.

That he sought to make Alterations in the State, and was engaged in a Design to remove the Commonalty from a Share in the Administration, is asserted by *Grotius*, who imputed it to the Haughtiness of his Temper, which could not bear to be controuled by Persons, who had been drawn from behind Shops and Counters, to make up a Part in the great Council. To effect his Purpose the more securely<sup>g</sup>, he ingratiated himself with the Clergy, whom he easily gained over to his Interest, by a dissembled Zeal (as *Brandt* saith) for Religion, and a great Shew of pretended Piety. He frequented the Church, on all publick Days, fasted and prayed often, received the *Holy Eucharist*, and warmly expressed his Inclination to propagate the Reformation, and extirpate Popery. Whereby the Ministers were almost unanimously attached to him, and, by their Influence, he formed a considerable Party among the People.

When the Day came for his Departure, by a publick Act, he gave up the Care of the Provinces into the Hands of the Council of State<sup>h</sup>; but privately the same Day, by an Act of Restriction, he reserved an Authority to himself, over all Governors of Provinces, Forts, and Cities; and farther took away

<sup>c</sup> *Stow's Annals*. p. 739.

<sup>d</sup> *Ib.* & p. 740.

<sup>e</sup> *Ib.* p. 741.

<sup>f</sup> *Bentivoglio's Hist.*

of the Wars of Flanders, p. 224. & *Grotius de Reb. Belgic.* Lib. 5.

<sup>g</sup> *Brandt's Hist. of the*

Reformation in the Low-Countries, Lib. 14.

<sup>h</sup> *Camden's Elis.* p. 330.



from the Council of State, and the Presidents of Provinces, their accustomed Jurisdiction. His Lordship, on the 18th of *December*, took Shipping<sup>1</sup> to pass from *Dort* to *Flushing*; but the Ice obliged him to land, and he passed in a Waggon for *Rotterdam*, and there imbarqued again, and on 23 *Nov.* arrived in *London*.

Whatever might be the Pretence for my Lord of *Leicester's* Leaving the *Low-Countries*, his Presence in *England*<sup>k</sup> was very acceptable to Queen *Elisabeth*. The late Conspiracies, which had been formed, in Favour of the Queen of *Scots*, had made a deep Impression on her Majesty, and she appears to have been now resolved to dispatch her Competitor. The Difficulty lay in what Manner it should be done; and she knew she could securely rely on Lord *Leicester's* Fidelity, whose Attachment to her Person, and Aversion to the Queen of *Scots*, she had been fully convinced of, by a long Course of Experience. When the Matter was brought before the Council<sup>l</sup>, his Lordship is said to have delivered his Opinion, to take her off by Poison; but this being opposed by Secretary *Walsingham*, who refused to give Ear to the private Insinuations of a Court Divine, whom he had sent to draw him into a Consent, it was at last determined to proceed against her by an Act in 27 *Elis.* for that Purpose, and the whole Privy-Council were constituted her Judges.

After Sentence of Condemnation had been pronounced against her, Queen *Elisabeth* was no less perplexed, in what Manner she should proceed to her Execution. She was very desirous to remove the Blame from herself; and the Earl of *Leicester*, observing it to be her Majesty's Inclination, again advised her to make her secretly away. And the Queen<sup>m</sup> seems so far to have come into his Sentiments, that she ordered her Secretaries, *Walsingham*, and *Davison*, to write to *Fotheringay*, where the Queen was imprisoned, to have her taken off by Violence. But the Keepers declined the Office, and, a few Days after, she suffered by the Hands of an Executioner.

About this Time, he<sup>n</sup> was constituted Lord Chief Justice in Eyre of all the Forests South of *Trent*; and, as appears from several Letters in the *Cabala*, was highly favoured by Queen *Elisabeth*. During his Absence from the *Low-Countries*<sup>o</sup>, the *Spaniards* had bribed *York*, and *Stanley*, two *Englishmen*, whom the Earl had appointed, the first, Governor of a Fort near *Zutphen*, and the other, of *Deventer*, to deliver those Places into their Hands, which, by the Treachery of *York*, so wrought on *Stanley*, as he complied; and the Loss thereof gave Occasion to loud Exclamation and Complaints against the Earl of *Leicester*<sup>p</sup>. Whereupon the States-General, immediately assembling, agreed to invest Prince *Maurice* with the full Power and Authority of Stadtholder, and Captain-General of *Holland*, *Zealand*, and *Friesland*, and to give him Command over all the Militia within the said Provinces. And, pursuant to this Determination, they obliged all their Officers to receive a new Commission from him, and to take a new Oath to the States; and discharged all Recusants whatsoever from the Service.

Queen *Elisabeth* was displeased with these Alterations in their Government, and resented the Diminution of the Earl of *Leicester's* Authority, as an Injury offered to herself; and, thereupon, immediately sent the Lord *Buckhurst*, her Kinsman, to enquire into, and complain of the Innovations introduced in the Absence of the Earl, and to settle all Differences between them: And the States, in Return<sup>q</sup>, assured her Majesty, that their late Proceedings were but provisional, and enforced through Fear of a general Revolt on the Loss of *Deventer*; but that, at his Lordship's Return, they would readily acknowledge both him and his Authority, in as ample a Manner, as if it had been granted to him at the first. Also, in their Letter to the Queen, *March* the 1st<sup>r</sup>, they repre-

<sup>1</sup> Stow, p. 741. <sup>k</sup> Vide Lord Buckhurst's Letter to the Earl of Leicester in the *Cabala*, &c. Part 2, p. 7. <sup>l</sup> Camden's *Elis.* p. 346. <sup>m</sup> Davison's Apology in the Appendix to the Life of Mary Queen of Scots, &c. <sup>n</sup> Pat. 28 *Elis.* p. 1. <sup>o</sup> Camden's *Elis.* p. 397. <sup>p</sup> Brandt's Hist. p. 409, & seq. <sup>q</sup> Bentivoglio's Wars of Fland. Lib. 4. p. 245. <sup>r</sup> Lord Buckhurst's Letter to Sec. Walsingham, in *Cabala*, part 2. p. 14. <sup>s</sup> *Cabala*, part 2. p. 5.



sent to her, they are infinitely sorry her Majesty should put on any sinister Conceit of their Actions and Proceedings, which they attribute to the Practice of their Enemies, &c. And, in a Letter from the Lord *Buckhurst*, to Secretary *Walsingham*<sup>a</sup>, it appears, ' They deny, they ever did any Act, or had Meaning to touch the Honour, either of the Earl of *Leicester*, or the *English* Nation, or to prejudice the Authority of his Lordship, whose speedy Return they so earnestly desired.'

But, notwithstanding these outward Professions of Regard, they were jealous of him<sup>b</sup>, and privately proceeded to straiten his Authority. And, in other Letters to the Queen, would have inserted a Clause, to limit his Command on his Return to them, had not the Lord *Buckhurst* interposed, and laid before them the Mischief it would have produced from his Lordship's Power with her Majesty.

These Proceedings were not agreeable to the Majority of the People, who were firm in the Interest of the Earl of *Leicester*, and threatened to be revenged of the States, if the Queen should take any Offence at their Alterations<sup>c</sup>. In *Friesland*, the Clergy offered her Majesty the Sovereignty of the *Low-Countries*, without any Restriction, having held two Synods on the Occasion: The Synod at *Sneek* presented a Petition to the Lord *Buckhurst*, in which they invited her Majesty to come to the Assistance of Christ, who threw himself and his Children into her Arms, and implored her Protection; and<sup>d</sup> several other Towns protested they would depend only on her Majesty; also, the Preachers at *Amsterdam* openly inveighed against the Magistrates from their Pulpits, and Libels were set up against the States. But, as the People seemed determined to take up Arms, the Lord *Buckhurst* signified to them, from her Majesty, that it was her Inclination to send back the Earl of *Leicester* to compose their Differences, by reassuming the Government. And this Expectation of his Lordship's Presence gave a Check to their Violence, and put a further Stop to the Proceedings of the States, who had begun to introduce a new Scheme of Government<sup>e</sup>. Prince *Maurice* was brought to profess all good Will and Amity to his Lordship, and Count *Hollock* promised to receive him with all Honour and Friendship; also the States-General and Council of State, both publicly and privately, assured the Lord *Buckhurst*, of all Duty and Fidelity to him.

But, before the Queen was prevailed on to give Consent to his Lordship's Return, she required<sup>f</sup> the Lord *Buckhurst*, by her Letter to him, to let the States know, she expected they should send an Army into the Field, on his Arrival, of 10 or 12 thousand Foot, and 4000 Horse; and, not only promise, but give Assurance, that 100000 *l.* arising from the extraordinary Contributions, should be delivered in such seasonable Times, as might serve to defray the Charges of the said Army, in the Hands of some Person of the Country who should be nominated by the Earl of *Leicester*, to supply the Place of Treasurer of the Army, and to be issued out by his Lordship's Direction, with the Privy of the Council of State. But, this Demand not being agreeable, the Lord *Buckhurst* acquainted the Queen<sup>g</sup> with their Sentiments, and that, on their Non-compliance, he had fully declared to them, he had no Commission from her Majesty to promise his Lordship's Return to them.

On this, they resolved to provide for their own Security<sup>h</sup>, and, to that End, established new Super-intendants on their Frontiers, &c. which was opposed by the Lord *Buckhurst*, as contrary to the 24th Article of their Contract, by which the Nomination of them was to appertain to her Majesty's Lieutenant; yet his Opposition met with no Effect: However, as their Perils increased so continually on them, there seemed no other Remedy to prevent their intire Ruin and Subversion, but a present Government, attended with a Supply of

<sup>a</sup> Cabala, part 2. p. 14. <sup>b</sup> Willis's Letters to the Earl of Leicester and Sec. Walsingham, in Cabala, Part 2. p. 9, 32, & sequ. <sup>c</sup> Brandt's Hist. Lib. 14. <sup>d</sup> Cabala, p. 9. <sup>e</sup> Lord Buckhurst's Letter to Sec. Walsingham, in Cabala, Part 2. p. 28. <sup>f</sup> Cabala, Part 2. p. 28. <sup>g</sup> Ibid.

<sup>h</sup> Cabala, Part 2. p. 32, 33.



Men and Money <sup>b</sup>. The Lord *Buckhurst*, out of a Sense of the Difficulties the States laboured under, and the Uncertainty of his Lordship's Return, drew up a new Scheme for the Government of the United Provinces, which very highly offended the Earl of *Leicester*, and seems to be the principal Motive of the Aversion and Hatred, he ever after expressed towards him.

By repeated Letters from *Ostend*, Lord *Buckhurst* had Information that the Enemy intended to besiege it, or *Sluyse*, or *Bruges*; and, if the Want of Victuals had not restrained them from entering on any important Design, the Country, in all Probability, must have fallen a Prey to the victorious Arms of the Duke of *Parma*. Thereupon the Lord *Buckhurst* laid open the Miseries to which the Provinces were reduced; and, in his Letter to the Lords of the Council, he thus expressed himself <sup>c</sup>:

‘ I Have so often and so earnestly written for Money to relieve the poor Soldiers here, and so plainly signified the great Poverty and Penury that they endure, with the fearful Danger that seemeth to approach us all, by Means of this woful Want of Pay, as if the same doth not really move; neither can I think that Writing will move: Yea, so long have I upheld these Provinces with the painted Pillars of Hope and Expectation (whom I found in a Manner desperate, and, as it were, believing certainly her Majesty would abandon them) as if neither Mean be established how to govern their Estate, nor Men transported to defend the Enemy, nor Money sent wherewith to pay the Soldiers; although the wonderful Work of God by that general Famine, which at this present overspreadeth the whole Country of our Adversaries, doth as yet preserve us from the Force and Fury of our mighty Enemy; yet have we certain Intelligence, that the Fruits of their Harvest coming, which will be ripe and ready before the Midst of *July*, give such abundant Hope unto them, to minister all Means of Plenty for their Army, as, except it please God Almighty, of his merciful Goodness towards us, it is without Compass of Man's Reason to believe how it is possible for this Estate, in any Sort, to sustain the Force and Fury of so resolute and so potent an Enemy; for, when the Hopes in her Majesty to relieve the Wants here doth once begin to sink, which (be your Lordships most assured) hath been the only Prop and Foundation, whereon this State hath stood so long: If that Hope, I say, shall once fail or fall, surely, if God stretch not forth his Hand from Heaven to defend them, it is no Ways possible for their own Power, and these contracted Forces of her Majesty, any long Time to preserve them.’

But, before the Lord *Buckhurst*'s Letter was received <sup>d</sup>, the Queen's Treasurer arrived with Money, to the great Satisfaction of his Lordship, and the Comfort of the distressed Soldiers. The Earl of *Leicester*'s Presence was only wanting, as the States were afraid to act any Thing of themselves, lest it should be interpreted to the Prejudice of his Lordship's Authority. The Queen, at last, became sensible of the Inconveniences attending any further Delay, and, after some fruitless Endeavours towards a Peace, gave Consent to his Lordship's Return. Before his Departure, several Letters passed between him and the Ministers of *South-Holland*, one of them as following <sup>e</sup>:

Gentlemen,

‘ THAT I did not return such an Answer to several of your Letters as you desired and expected, was not for Wanting of good Will towards serving the Cause of God, and defending the poor People; but it was, because I had not yet received her Majesty's Resolutions about what was farther necessary to be done for the Service of your Country. But the Queen having given me full Directions, with regard to the Forces she will send to your Assistance, and having laid her Commands upon me to return; I, therefore, postponing all private Views and Considerations, and abandoning all those Advan-

<sup>b</sup> Cabala, Part 2. p. 61, & seq.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid. p. 36.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid.

<sup>e</sup> Brandt's Hist. Lib.

<sup>14</sup> P. 413.

V O L. I.

Q

‘ tages,



‘ tages, which God has bestowed on me in this Kingdom, intend to hasten  
 ‘ over, and satisfy the Desires of a People, who have so often called for me ;  
 ‘ to which the Zeal and good Inclinations of some have more induced me, than  
 ‘ the Demerits of others, that suffer themselves to be made Tools for keeping  
 ‘ me back by Slanders and Detractions ; which I shall nevertheless enter into  
 ‘ my Book of Oblivion, that no Harm may befall those, who seek to do me  
 ‘ such Disservices. And, I hope, I shall never give the People any Cause to  
 ‘ diminish their good Will and Affection for me. In the mean Time, I entreat  
 ‘ you to go on in your Duty, and to admonish and excite those under your  
 ‘ Care to Peace and Vnity, to the End that they may more and more deserve  
 ‘ all the Benefits they receive. For the rest, I refer my self to my Arrival, and  
 ‘ so I recommend you, Gentlemen, to the Protection of the Almighty.

Given at *London*,  
*Jan. 7, O. S.*

Your good Friend,

*R. Leicester.*

The Duke of *Parma* began the Campaign with the Siege of *Sluys*, the most considerable Town in *Flanders*, except *Ostend*, that remained in Possession of the States. He first attacked the Fort of *Blanchenberg*, commodious for the conveying Succours to the Besieged by Land, which made little Resistance, as his Coming thither was unexpected, and no Provision made to oppose him. His next Step was to raise a Fort in the Island of *Casante*, to cut off all Relief by Sea<sup>f</sup>: But, before he could execute his Design, Sir *Roger Williams*, with 5 Companies from *Bruges*, entered the Town, and supplied it with Provisions and Ammunition to hold out a considerable Time against him.

Whilst this Town was besieged, the Earl of *Leicester*<sup>g</sup>, on the 18 *June*, was made Lord Steward of the Queen's Household ; and, setting Sail from *England* 25 *June*, landed in *Zealand* about the latter End of the Month. He brought<sup>h</sup> with him a considerable Supply both of Horse and Foot. Prince *Maurice*, and the Deputies of the States, attended on him at *Flushing*, to congratulate his Return, and left Count *Hollock* to watch the Motions of the Enemy. When they had conferred on Raising the Siege, it was determined to attempt it by Sea. To which End, they shipped 5000 Foot and 600 Horse, with all necessary Provisions, for the Relief of the Town. And, on the Fleet's Appearing in the Channel, the Earl of *Leicester* made Signs to the Besieged, that he was come to their Assistance : But, on Examination, finding the Channel blocked up, and the Passage secured, he saw it would be in Vain to proceed that Way. For three Days he continued in Suspence what Step to take, and then, weighing Anchor, he bent his Course towards *Ostend*, with a Resolution to succour the besieged by Land. The Earl of *Leicester* had no sooner landed his Forces, but he prepared to attack the Fort of *Blanchenberg*, and, joining the whole Garrison of *Ostend* to his Army, marched directly against it. The Loss of it was of no less Consequence to the Duke of *Parma*, than the Gaining of it would have been advantageous to the Earl ; and, therefore, the Duke leaving the Siege every where well provided, he led the Remainder of his Army to the Defence of the Fort against his Lordship. The *English* were ready to begin their Batteries, when the Duke of *Parma* came up ; but, on Sight of the Army, they deferred their Hostilities, and, after some Consultation, retired to *Ostend*, from whence they returned with the same Fleet, where they had before been at Anchor not far from *Sluys*, and the Duke of *Parma* again presented himself to their View ; whereby they found themselves under a Necessity to retire again, and never more attempt to raise the Siege.

The Loss of *Sluys* renewed the Misunderstanding<sup>i</sup> between the Earl of *Leicester* and the States, whilst the Blame of the Action was thrown, by each Party, on the Mismanagement of the other. The Earl complained of the States

<sup>f</sup> Cabala, Part 2. p. 42. <sup>g</sup> Stow's Ann. p. 743.  
<sup>2.</sup> Lib. 4. p. 246. <sup>i</sup> Ibid. p. 248.

<sup>h</sup> Bentivoglio's Wars of Fland. Part



Negligence, in not making sufficient Preparations, and not restraining the 1st Attempts of the *Spaniards* against the Town. And the States, in Return, virulently inveighed against his Lordship, and imputed the whole Misfortune to his ill Conduct, and the Delay of the *English* Forces. And, this Dissatisfaction increasing, they refused to establish him in that absolute Authority, which had been conferred on him at his first Arrival.

This Diminution of his Power was so highly resented by him, that he openly expressed his Displeasure against the States<sup>k</sup>; and the *Dutch* Writers charge him with having entered into indirect Practices to regain it, by forming Parties in his Progress through the Country, and conversing chiefly with the Ministers and private Persons; so that they, and the common People, were so overawed with his Appearances of Piety and his Zeal for their Interests, as to approve of all he did, and loudly exclaimed against the Proceedings of the States.

On 9 November, 29 *Elif.* the Queen recites<sup>l</sup>, that, at the humble Petition of the States-General of the United Provinces in the *Low-Countries*, and being deeply affected with the Misery and Oppression of the said Provinces, she had sent Robert Earl of *Leicester*, as Captain-General of the Auxiliaries sent there; but, having recalled him, to be present in Council with her, she therefore constitutes *Peregrine Bertie*, Lord *Willoughby*, Captain-General of her Forces there, &c.

*Camden*<sup>m</sup> relates, that the Earl of *Leicester*, on his Return, finding an Accusation was preparing against him by the Lord *Buckhurst*, and some other of his Enemies, for his Misconduct in the Management of Affairs in the *Low-Countries*, and that he was summoned to appear before the Council, privately implored the Queen's Protection, and earnestly besought her, 'Not to receive him with Disgrace upon his Return, whom, at his first Departure, she had sent out with Honour; nor bring down alive to the Grave, whom her former Goodness had raised from the Dust.' And, that the Queen was so pacified with his Expressions of Humility and Sorrow, as to pass by the Displeasure she had conceived against him, and admit him into her former Grace and Affection. The Day, when it was expected he should have given in his Answer, he took his Place at the Council-Table; and, when the Secretary had begun to read his Accusation, he rose up and interrupted him, complaining of being injured, and declaring that his publick Commission was limited by private Instructions; and, making his Appeal to the Queen, he evaded the Accusation, and came off in Triumph: And, by his Power with her Majesty, he so far prevailed, that a Censure was past on the Lord *Buckhurst*, who was confined thereupon to his House for several Months. The Points objected to his Lordship, with his Answers, and the Replies of the Earl of *Leicester*, are in the *Cabala*, Part 2, p. 55, & seq.

On the Incampment at *Tilbury*, to oppose the intended Invasion of the *Spaniards*, in the memorable Year 1588<sup>n</sup>, the Queen committed the Charge of the Army to the Earl of *Leicester*; and, having viewed them all, she, in a set Speech, expressed her Satisfaction in their Fidelity, and her Sense of the Earl's Merit, in these Words:

'I myself will be your General, Judge, and Rewarder of every one of your Virtues in the Field. I know already, for your Forwardness, you have deserved Rewards and Crowns; and we do assure you, in the Word of a Prince, they shall be duly paid you. In the mean Time, my Lieutenant-General shall be in my Stead, than whom never Prince commanded a more noble or worthy Subject; not doubting but by your Obedience to my General, by your Concord in the Camp, and your Valour in the Field, we shall shortly have a famous Victory, over those Enemies of my God, of my Kingdoms, and of my People.'

On that memorable Overthrow of the *Spanish* Fleet, the Camp broke up, and very soon after his Lordship departed this Life. He was retiring to his

<sup>k</sup> Bentivoglio and Brandt's Hist. p. 414, 415, 416.  
<sup>m</sup> Hist. Q. *Elif.* p. 400.

<sup>n</sup> Stow, p. 749.

<sup>l</sup> Rymer's *Fœdera*, Tom. 16. p. 13, 14.



Castle at *Kenelworth*, but in his Journey thither, he was taken ill of a Feaver at *Cornbury-Park* in *Oxfordshire*, of which he died without lawful Issue on the 4th of *Sept. An. 1588, 30 Elis.* ° at which Time he was Lord Steward of her Majesty's Household, General of the Army, and Earl Marshal of *England*. And *Camden* recites that the Letters Patents were actually drawn for creating him Lord Lieutenant under the Queen, in the Government of *England* and *Ireland*, but that the Lord *Burghley*, and the Lord Chancellor *Hatton*, prevented his obtaining them, by representing to her Majesty the Danger of entrusting too great a Power in any one Man's Hands. The same Author<sup>p</sup> gives this Character of him, 'He was esteemed a most accomplished Courtier, free and bountiful to Soldiers and Students, a cunning Time-server, and Respector of his own Advantages; of a Disposition ready and apt to please; crafty and subtle towards his Adversaries; much given formerly to Women, and in his latter Days, doating extremely upon Marriage. But whilst he preferred Power and Greatness, which is subject to be envied, before solid Virtue, his detracting Emulators found large Matter to speak reproachfully of him, and even when he was in his most flourishing Condition, spared not disgracefully to defame him by Libels, not without a Mixture of some Untruths.'

In a Book (which is scarce to be met with) entitled, *A Discourse upon Usurye, by Way of a Dialogue, &c.* by Thomas Wilson, Doctour of the Civill Lawes, one of the Masters of her Majesties honourable Courte of Requestes, seene and allowed, according to the Queenes Majesties Injunctions, 1572. There is this Character of the Earl of *Leicester*, in the following Epistle to him: \*

To the Right Honourable, hyghe and myghty Earle, hys most especiall and singuler deer Lord, the Lord *Robert Duddley*, Erle of *Leycester*, Baron of *Denbigh*, Master of the Horse to the Queenes Majestie, Knight of the noble Order of the Garter, Chauncelloure of the Vniverfitie of *Oxforde*, and one of her Hyhenes most honorable Prevy Counsell: *Thomas Wilson*, Doctour of the Civil Lawes, wisheth perfite Health, with Encrease of Honor, to Godds most holy Wil and Pleasure.

The *Stoike* Philosophers, &c. 'Thys I reache at, that where amongst a Number of Gawles and great Greefes in thys Commonweale, there spreadeth one especial Mischiefe, as yll, nay woorse than any Plague; my Meaning is to sett all other Faultes aparte, and to disclose this one above the rest unto your Lordship, that by your honorable Meanes and great Aucthoritye, it may at the leaste bee somewhat reformed, yf not altogether amended or taken away. I do meane, that ouglie, detestable, and hurtfull Synne of Usurie, which being but one Grossenes of Name, caries many a Mischief linked unto it in Nature, the same Synne beinge now so rancke throughout all *Englande*, not in *London* onelye, that Men have altogether forgotten free Lending, and have geven themselves wholye to lyve by fowle Gayning, makinge the Lone of Monye a Kind of Merchandize, &c.

*Ibid. p. penult.* -- 'Thus I have boldlye, and I trust with Godds Spirite, moved your Honor to loke well to your Charge and Callinge, desiring you to take in good Parte my good Meaning; for my Desire is, that my naturall Countrey might bee parfite and blessed, without Daunger of Evill, or Infection of Mischiefe, to corrupt this State, or destroy thys noble Land. And the boulder I am to deale thus with your Honor, before others, because I have knowne you, and that noble Race of youre Brethren, even from their yonge Yeares. And with your Honor, and that famous Erle of *Warwike* deceased, and your noble Brother, now Erle of *Warwike* lyvinge, I have had more familier Con-

<sup>o</sup> Stow, p. 750.

<sup>p</sup> History of Queen Elis. p. 416.

\* The Author, *Thomas Wilson*, of an antient Family (of which the present Sir *Thomas Wilson* now of *Vekfield* in *Suffex*, Bart. is the Head) was deservedly famed for his great Learning and Eloquence, and no less conspicuous for his Knowledge in Political Affairs, whereby he became principal Secretary of State, and of the Privy-Council to Queen *Elisabeth*, in which great Office he died, An. 1581. And it is said of him, *That he had his State among Equals, that made him not envied; his Observance to Superiors, that made him no Flatterer; and his Familiarity to Inferiors, that made him not Cheap.*

ference,



ference, then with the rest; and especially with your Honor (I doe thanke you most humblie therefore) I have had sufficient Proove of your carefull Mynde, even in Reading not onely of the *Latyn*, but also of the *Italian* good and sounde Wryters, to knowe and to understand the best used Government, and the chiefe Lawes that have ben made in all Ages. And as youre Mynde hath bene thus godly enclyned to knowe, so it appeareth very well you have ever had a good Mynde, to put youre Knowledge in Practise. And this must I saye, that Godds Providence is greatly shewed in thys Behalfe, and the Queenes Maiesties blessed Estate most evidently appeareth to bee the stronger, in that it hath pleased her Hyhnes, to have chosen so stayed and so discrete a Nobleman, as you are, to deale in the Affaires of the State. For, I knowe, and therefore will not feare to saye, that you have ben next, to the Queenes Maiesties most mylde and gracious Disposition, a greate Helpe and Meane of thys most calme and mercifull Governement, a Thing so joyfull to all good People, as nothinge can be more; although it hath playnely fallen out in Profe, that both the Queenes Mercie, and your Nature, hath ben greatly abused, &c. And again, in the same Page, he adds, 'But amongst all other needfull Advertisements, I doe wish that your Honor, and others of youre Callinge, shoulde never at any Tyme lett slippe anye good Occasion offered for the Welfare of *Englande*, much lesse to be carelesse in that greate Truste which is committed unto you. And therefore, as the Master of a Shippe hath ever an Eye to keepe a righte Course, a Physicion alwayes a good Mynde to heale his Paciente, a Capitayne evermore a carefull Heade to gette the Victory, even so my good Lord, I pray God you may bee a faythfull Counsellour to the Prince, and a watchfull Magistrate to the People, to the Advancement of Goddes most holy Woorde, and for the Welfare of thys Lande. And so to care for the whole Bodie of the State, that whilest you take the Defense of some one Parte, you do not leave other Parts of the State undefended, or smallye esteemed. Thus yf you doe, as I pray God you maie doe, and I hope in God, you will do no lesse: I doe well assure my selfe that Usurie, &c.'

From the Queenes Maiesties Hospital  
at Sainte *Katherynes*, thys twentye of  
July, 1569.

*Grotius*, *Strada*, and *Bentivoglio*, Writers of the Actions, and Administration of the Earl of *Leicester*, in the *Low-Countries*, shew a manifest Partiality, to cover the notorious Ingratitude of their Countrymen to Queen *Elisabeth*, and the *English* Nation. Yet they agree that his Lordship was Master of very great Virtues, or at least seemed to be. And other Historians say of him, that he was a very comly Person, of a noble and graceful Aspect, an engaging Behaviour and courtly Address, and of a Witt capable at once of entertaining agreeably, and designing deeply, which together with a Delivery and Presence, which had in them something, at once, great and engaging, commanded Attention and Respect.

He had the common Fate of Favourites, in being much aspersed, which induced his Nephew Sir *Philip Sydney*, to answer the most virulent Libel, that ever was published; and not doubting but the Curious will be pleased to see what that celebrated Person has said of the Earl of *Leicester*, I shall here introduce it, copyed from his own Hand-writing at *Penshurst* Place, and attested both by *Robert Sydney*, Earl of *Leicester*, his Brother; and *Robert*, the 2d Earl of *Leicester*, his Nephew.

The said Libel was 1st printed in 8vo, 1584, in Foreign Parts, and transmitted by the *English* Jesuits into this Nation, under the Title of *A Dialogue between a Scholar, a Gentleman, and a Lawyer*. And from the Colour of the Leaves, then usually called, *Father Parsons's Green Coat*. The Year after (1585) it was translated into *French*, and also printed Abroad, under the Title of *La Vie Abominable, Ruses Traisons, Murtres, Impostures, Empoisonnements, Paillardises, Atheismes, & autres tres iniques Conversations, due quelle*



*à Usè, & use Journallement, le my Lord de Lecestre, Machiaveliste, contre l'Honneur de Dieu, la Majeste de la Royne d'Angleterre, sa Princeffe, &c.* not mentioned where printed, but in 8vo, 1585.

It was after better known by the Name of *Leicesters Common-wealth*, being twice printed in 4to and 12ves, by that Title in 1641. And again reprinted with the Title of *Secret Memoirs of Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester*, 8vo. 1706. With a Preface by Dr. *James Drake*, who pretended it was printed from an old Manuscript.

The Answer given to it by Sir *Philip Sydney* seems to have been wrote immediately after the 1st Publication, An. 1584, but I never heard of any one that has seen it in Print. The Manuscript is as follows:

Of late there hath been printed a Book, in Form of Dialog, to the Defaming of the Earl of *Lester*, full of the most vyle Reproches, which a Witt used to wicked and filthy Thoughtes can imagin. In such Manner truly, that if the Autor had as well fained new Names, as he doth new Matters, a Man might well have thought his only Meaning had been, to have gyven a lyvely Picture of the uttermost Degree of Railing. A Thing contemptible in the Doer, as proceeding from a base and wretched Tong, and such a Tong, as, in the Speaking, dares not speak his own Name. Odious to all Estates, since no Man beares a Name, of which Name, how unfitli so ever to the Person, by an impudent Lyer, any Thing maj not be spokne; by all good Laws sharpli punished, and by all civill Companies, lyke a poisenous Serpent avoided. But to the Earl himself, in the Eis of any Men, who, with cleer Judgmenes, can value Thinges, a true and sownd Honour grows out of these dishonowrable Falshods. Since he maj justly saj, as a worthy Senatour of *Rome* once in lyke Cace did, That no Man, these twenty Yeeres, hath born a hatefull Hart to this Estate, but that, at the same Tyme, he hath shewd his Enmity to this Earl; testefying it herebi, that his Faith is so lynked to her Majesties Service, that who goes about to undermyne the one, resolvys withall to overthrow the other. For it is not now, first that evill contented, and evill mynded Persons, before the Occasion be rype for them, to shew their Hate against the Prince, do first vomitt it out against his Cownceilours; naj certainly, so stale a Devyse it is, as it is to be mervailed, that so fyne Witts, whose Inventions a fugitive Fortune hath sharpned, and the Air of *Itali* perchawnce purified, can light uppon no galanter Waj, then the ordinary Pretext of the very clownish Rebellious. And yet that this is their Plott of late, by Name, first to publish somthing against the Earl of *Lester*, and after, when Tyme served, against the Queenes Maiesti, by some of their own intercepted Discources, is made to manifest. He himself, in some Places, bringes in the Examples of *Gaveston*, Earl of *Cornwal*, *Robert Vere*, Duke of *Ireland*, and *Delapool*, Duke of *Suffolk*. It is not my Purpose to defend them, but I would fain know, whether they that persecuted those Cownceilours, when they had had their Will in ruining them, whether their Rage ceassed, before they had as well destroyed the Kynges themselves, *Edward*, and *Richard the Second*, and *Henry the Sixt*? The old Tale testefieth, that the Wolves, that mean to destroi the Flock, hate most the trewest and valiantest Dogges. Therefore the more the filthy Empostume of their wolvisch Malice breakes forth, the more undoutedli doth it rais this well deserved Glory to the Earl, that who hates *England*, and the Queen, must also withall hate the Earl of *Lester*.

And as for the Libell it self, such is it, as neither in respect of the Wryter, nor Matter writtne, can move, I think, the lightest Witts to give thereto Creditt, to the Discredditt of so worthy a Person. For the Wryter (whom in Truth I know not, and, loth to fail, am not willing to ges at) shews yet well inough, of what Kenell he is, that dares not testefy his own Wrytinges, with his own Name. And which is more base — (if any Thing can be more base then a diffamatori Libeller) he counterfaites him self, in all the Treatis, a Protestant, when any Man, with Haulf an Ey, maj easili see he is of the other



Parti; which filthi Diffimulation, if few honest Men of that Religion will use, to the Helping of themselves, of how many Carrets of Honesti is this Man, that useth it (as much as his poor Powr can) to the Harm of an other. And lastli, evident inough it is, to any Man that reedes it, what Poison he meanes to her Maiefti, in how goldne a Cup so ever he drefs it.

For the Matter writtne, so full of horrible Villeinies, as no good Hart will think possible to enter into any Creature, much less to be lykeli in so noble and well known a Man as he is, oneli thus accused to be by the railing Oratory of a shameles Libeller. Perchawnce he had redd the Rule of that Sicophant, that one shold bakbyte boldli; for, tho the Byte wear healed, yet the Skar woeld remain: But sure that Schoolmaster of his woeld more conningli have carried it, leaving som Shaddows of Good, or, at least, leaving out som Evill, that his Treatis might have carried som probable Shew of it: For as reasonable Commendation wins Beleef, and excessive getts onli the Praiser the Tytle of a Flatterer; so much more in this far wors Degree of Lying, it mai well rebound uppon him self, the vyle Reproch of a Railer, but never can sink into any good Mynd. The Suspicion of any such unspeakable Mischeevs, especialli it beeing everi Mans Cace, even from the Meanest to the Hyeft, whereof we daili see odious Examples, that even of the great Princes, the deer Riches of a good Name are fought in such Sort to be pickt away by such Night Theeves. For thorow the hole Book, what is it els, but such a Bundle of Railinges, as if it came from the Mouth of som haulf drunk Skold in a Tavern, not regarding whyle Evill weare spokne, what was fitt for the Person of whome the Railing was, so the Wordes wear fitt for the Person of an outrageous Railer. Diffimulation, Hypocrisi, Adultery, Falshod, Trecheri, Poison, Rebellion, Treason, Cowardis, Atheism, and what not, and all still so uppon the Superlative, that it was no Mervail, though the good Lawier, he speaks of, made many a Cros to keep him from such a Father of Lies, and in many excellent Giftes, passing all shameles Skoldes, in one he passeth him self with an unheard of Impudence, bringing Persons, yet alyve, to speak Thinges which they are reddi to depose, uppon their Salvation, never came in their Thoughtes. Such a Gentlewoman spake of a Matter no less then Treason, belyke she whispred, yet he heard her; such two Knightes spake together of Thinges not fitt to call Witnesse to, yet this Asses Eares wear so long, that he heard them. And yet see his good Nature all this Whyle woeld never reveal them till now, for Secretcy Sake, he puts them foorth in Print; certainly such a Qualiti in a Railer, as I think never was heard of, to name Persons alyve, as not oneli can, but do disprove his Falshods, and yet, with such Familiarity, to name them. Without he learnd it of *Pace*, the Duke of *Norfolkes* Fool, for he, when he had used his Tong, as this Heir of his hath don his Pen, of the noblest Persons, somtymes of the Duke him self, the next that came fitli in his Waj, he woeld saj he had told it him, of abundance of Charity, not oneli to flawnder, but to make bate. What therefore can be said to such a Man? Or who lives there, even Christ him self, but that so stinking a Breath maj blow Infami uppon? Who hath a Father, by whose Death the Son enherits, but such a nameles Historien maj saj his Son poisend him? Where maj two talk together, but such a Spirit of Revelation mai surmize thei spake of Treason? What neede more, or why so much? As though I douted that any woeld build Beleef uppon such a durty Seat, onely when he, to borrow a little of his Inkorn, when he plais the Statist, wringing veri unlukkili some of *Machiavels* Axiomes to serve his Purpos then indeed; then he tryumphes. Why then the Earl of *Lester* meanes and plots to be King him self, but first to rebell from the Prince to whome he is most bownd, and of whome he oneli dependeth, and then to make the Earl of *Huntington* King, and then to putt him down, and then to make him self. Certainli, Sir, you shoot fair, I think no Man, that hath Witt and Power to pronounce this Word *England*, but wil piti a Sicophant so weak in his own Faculty. But of the Earl of *Huntington*, as I think all indifferent Men will cleer him from any such foolish and wikked Entent of Rebellion, so I protest, before the Maiefti of God, who will confound

all



all Liers ; and before the World, to whome Effectes and Enocency will witness my Trewth, That I could never fynd, in the Earl of *Lester*, any one Motion of Inclination toward any such pretended Conceat in the Earl of *Huntington*. I say no Wit futur, for as for the present, or for drawing it to himself, I think no Devil so wicked, nor no Idiot so simple, as to conjecture ; and yet, beeing to him as I am, I think I shold have som Air of that, which this gentle Libel maker doth so particularli and peece meal understand, and I do know the Earls of *Warwick*, of *Pembroke*, my Father, and all the rest he names there, will answer the lyke. And yet such Matters cannot be undertakne, without good Friendes, nor good Friendes be kept without knowing somthing ; but the Earles Mynd hath ever been to serve oneli and truli, setting asyde all Hopes, all Feares, his Mistris, by undouted Right Queen of *England*, and most worthi to be the Queen for her roiall Excellencies, and most worthi to be his Queen, having restored his overthrown Hows, and brought him to this Cace ; that Curs for oneli Envy bark at. And this his Mynd is not oneli (though cheefli) for Faith knitt in Conscience and Honor, nor oneli (though greatli) for Gratefulness, where al Men know how much he is bownd, but even partli for Wisdomes Sake, knowing, by all old Lessens and Examples, that, how welcom soever Treasons bee, Traitors to all wyse Princes are odious, and that, as *Mutius* answered *Tulli*, who wrote to him how he was blamed for shewing him self so constant a Friend to *Cæsar*, that he douted not, even thei that blamed him woeld rather choos such Friendes as he was, then such as thei wear. For wyse Princes well know, that these violent Discontentements arise out of the Parties wicked Humors, as in sikk Folkes, that think, wyth Change of Places, to eas their Evill, which indeed is inward, and whome, nor this Prince nor that Prince can satisfy, but such as are ledd by their Fancies, that is to say, who leave to be Princes. But this gentle Libelmaker, becaws he woeld make an evident Proof of an unquencheable Malice, desperat Impudency and Falshod, which never knew Blufshing, is not content with a hole Dictionari of Slanders uppon these Persons living, but, as if he woeld rake upp the Bones of the Dead, with so apparent Falshods toucheth their Howses, as if he had been asfeard, els he shoold not have been streight fownd in that wherein he so greatli labours to excell. First, for *Hastinges*, he saith, the Lord *Hastinges* conspyred the Death of his Maister King *Edwardes* Sons ; lett any Man but reed the excellent Treatis of Sir *Thomas Moor*, compare but his Wordes with this Libelmakers, and then judg him, if he, who in a Thing so long since printed, and, as any Man may see by other of his Allegations of him diligentli redd, hath the Face to wryte so directli contrary, not caring, as it seemes, though a hundred thousand fynd his Falshod, so som dosen, that never redd Sir *Thomas Moores* Wordes, mai be carried to beleewe his horrible Slawnders of a Nobleman so long ago dead. I sett down the Wordes of both, becaws, by this oneli lyveli Comparison, the Face of his Falshod mai be the better sett foorth. And who then can dout, but he that lies in a Thing, which, with one Look, is fownd a Ly, what he will do, where yet there is though as much Falshod, yet not so easi Disproof.

Now to the *Dudleis*, such is his Bownti, that, when he hath powred out all his Flood of scolding Eloquence, he saith thei are no Gentlemen, affirming, that the then Duke of *Northumberland* was not born so ; in Truth, if I shoold have studded with my self of all Pointes of fals Invections, which a poisenous Tong could have spitt out against that Duke, yet would it never have come into my Hed, of all other Thinges, that any Man woeld have objected Want of Gentry unto him ; but this Fellow doth lyke him, who, when he had shott of all his railing Quiver, cald one Cuckold that was never married, becaws he woeld not be in Debt to any one evill Word. I am a *Dudlei* in Blood, that Dukes Daughters Son, and do acknowledg, though, in all Truth, I mai justli affirm, that I am, by my Fathers Syde, of ancient, and allwaies well esteemed and welmatched Gentry, yet I do acknowledg, I say, that my cheefest Honor is to be a *Dudlei*, and truli am glad to have Caws to set foorth the Nobility of that Blood whereof I am descended, which, but uppon so just Caws, without vain Glori, could



could not have been uttered; since no Man, but this Fellow of invincible Shamelessness would ever have cald so palpable a Matter in Question. In one Place of his Booke, he greatli extolleth the great Nobiliti, of the Hows of *Talbot*, and truli with good Caws, there beeing, as I think, not in *Europe* a subject Hows which hath joined longer Continuance of Nobiliti, with Men of greater Service and Loialty. And yet this Dukes own Grandmother, whose Blood he makes so base, was a *Talbot*, Daughter and sole Heir to the Vicownt of *Lisle*; even he, the same Man, who, when he might have saved him self, chose rather manifest Death, then to abandon his Father, that most noble *Talbot*, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, of whome the Histories of that Tyme make so honorable Mention. The Hows of *Graj* is well known; to no Hows in *England* in great Continuance of Honowr, and for Number of great Howses sprong of it, to be matched by none; but, by the noble Hows of *Nevel*, his Mother was a right *Graj*, and a sole Enheritrix of that *Graj* of the Hows of *Warwick* which ever strave with the great Hows of *Arundel*, which shoold be the first Earl of *England*; he was lyke-wise so descended, as that justly the Honowr of the Hows remained cheefli uppon him, beeing the onely Heir to the eldest Daughter, and one of the Heirs to that famous *Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, that was Regent of *Fravnce*; and although *Richard Nevel*, who married the yongest Sister, becaws she was of the hole Blood to him that was called Duke of *Warwick*, by a Point in our Law carried away the Enheritance; and so also I know not by what Right the Tytle, yet in Law of Herawldri and Descentes, which doth not consider those Quiddities of our Law; it is most certain, that the Honowr of the Blood remained uppon him cheefli who came of the eldest Daughter. And more undoubtely is it to be said of the Hows of *Barklei*, which is affirmed to be descended lineally from a King of *Denmark*, but hath ever been one of the best Howses in *England*, and this Duke was the oneli Heir general to that Hows, which the Hows of *Barklei* doth not deny; how soever, as somtymes it fals out between Brothers, there be Question for Land between them. Many other Howses might heerin be mentioned, but I name these, becaws *England* can boast of no nobler, and becaws all these Bloods so remained in him, that he, as Heir, might (if he had listd) have used their Armes and Name, as in old Tyme thej used in *England*, and do daili, both in *Spain*, *France*, and *Itali*. So that I think, it would seeme as great News as if thei came from the *Indies*, that he, who by Right of Blood, and so accepted, was the awncientest Vicownt of *England*, Heir in Blood and Armes to the first or second Earl of *England*; in Blood of Enheritance a *Graj*, a *Talbot*, a *Beauchamp*, a *Barklei*, a <sup>r</sup> *Lislaj*, shoold be douted to be a Gentleman. But he will sai, these great Honors came to him by his Mother, for these I do not deny they came so; and that the Mother, beeing an Heir, hath been, in all Ages and Contreis, sufficient to nobilitat, is so manifest, that, even from the *Roman* Tyme to modern Tymes, in such Cace thei might, if thei listd, and so oftne did use the Mothers Name; and that *Augustus Cæsar* had both Name and Empyre of *Cæsar*, onely by his Mothers Ryght, and so both <sup>r</sup> Moderns. But I will claim no such Priviledg, lett the singular Nobiliti of his Mother nothing avail him, if his Fathers Blood wear not, in all Respectes, worthy to match with hers. If awncient, undouted, and untouched Nobility be worthi to match with the most noble Hows that can bee: This Hows, therefore, of *Dudlei*, which, in Despyte of all Shamelesnes, he so doth deprave, is, at this Dai, a Peer, as we tearm it, of the Realm, a Baron, and, as all *English* Men know, a Lord of the Parliament, and so a Companion, both in Marriage, Parliament, and Tryall, to the greatest Duke that *England* can bear; so hath it been ever esteemed, and so, in the Constitutions of all owr Laws and Ordeineinces, it is allwaies reputed. *Dudlei* Hows is so, to this Daj, and thus it hath been Tyme out of Mynd; in *Harry the Fifts* Tyme, the Lord *Dudlei* was his Lord Steward, and did that pittiful Office in bringing Home, as the cheef Mourner, his victorious Masters dead Boddi; as who goes but to *Westminster*, in the Church maj see. I think



if we consider together the Tyme which was of *England* the most flourishing, and the King he served, who, of all *Englishe* Kinges, was most puissant, and the Office he bare, which was, in Effect, as great as an *English* Subject could have, it would seem very strange; so that Lord *Dudlei*, if he could out of his Grave heer this Fellow make Question, Whether his lawfull Posterity, from Father to Son, should be Gentlemen or no? But though he oneli had been sufficient to erect Nobility to his Successors, bringing, as the *Romanes* tearmed it, so noble an Image into the Hows, yet did he but receive his Nobility from his Awncestours, who had been Lordes of that very Seignory of *Dudlej* Castell, many Descentes before, even from King *Richarde the First* Tyme; at which Tyme Sir *Richard Sutton* married the Daughter and Heir of the Lord *Dudlej*; since which Tyme all descended of him, as dyvers Branches there bee, left the Name of *Sutton*, and have all been called *Dudleis*, which is now above fowr hundred Yeeres since; and both those Howses, of *Sutton*, and *Dudlei*, having been before that Tyme of great Nobility; and that *Sutton* was a Man of great Honor and Estimation, that very Match witnesseth sufficiently, it being a dainty Thing in that Tyme, that one of *Saxon* Blood, as *Suttons* Name testifieth he was, should match with such an Enheritryx as *Dudlei* was; the lyke Example whereof I remember none, but the great Hows of *Rabi*, who matched with *Nevell*, who of that Match, as the *Suttons* wear called *Dudleis*, so did thei ever since take the Name of *Nevell*; so, as of a Hows, which, these 400 Yeeres, have been still Owners of one Seignouri, the very Place it self, to any that sees it, witnessing; such as, for any that I know, in *England* none, but the noble Hows of *Stafford* hath the like, considering the Name of the Hows, the Length of Tyme it hath been possesst, the Goodliness of the Seat, with Pleasures and Roialties about it; so, as I think, any, that will not swear themselves Brothers to a reprochfull Tong, will judg of his other Slawnders by this most manifest; since all the World may see he speakes against his own Knowledg; for if either the Hows of *Dudlei* had been great ancientli, and now extinguished, or now great, and had not continewed from old Tyme, or that thei had been unentytled Gentlemen, so as Men must not needes have takne Knowledg of them, yet their Might have been cast som Vail over his Untruth; but in a Hows now noble, long since noble, with a Nobility never interrupted, seated in a Place which they have each Father and each Son continually owned, what should be said, but that this Fellow desyres to be known; sutable, having an untrew Hart, he will become it with an untrew Tong.— But perchawnce he will seem to dout, for what will not he dout, who will affirm that, which beyond all Dout is fals, whether my Great Grandfather, *Edmond Dudley*, wear of the Lord *Dudleis* Hows, or no. Certainli, he might, in Conscience and good Manners, if so he did doubt, have made som Distinction between the two Howses, and not in all Places have made so contemptible Mention of that Name of *Dudlei*, which is born by an other Peer of the Realm; and even of Charity Sake he should have bestowed som Father uppon *Edmond Dudley*, and not leave him not only ungentled, but fatherles. A railing Wryter extant, against *Octavius Augustus*, saith, his Grandfather was a Silversmith; an other *Italien*, against *Hu Capet*, though with most absurd Falshod, saith his Father was a Butcher. Of dyvers of the best Howses of *England*, there have been such foolish Dreames, that one was a Ferrers Son, an other a Shoemakers, an other a Milners, an other a Fidlers; foolish Lyes, and by any that ever tasted any Antiquities, known to be so. Yet those Howses had Luk to meet with honester Railers, for they wear not left fatherles clean, thei descended from some Boddi; but wee, as if we wear of *Deucalions* Brood, wear made out of Stones, have left us no Awncestours from whence we are come: But, alas, good Railer, yow saw the Prooves wear cleer, and therefore, for Honesty Sake, wear contented to omitt them; for, if either their had been Difference of Name, or Difference of Armes between them; or, if though in Name and Armes thei agreed, yet, if their had been many Descentes faln since, the Seperating of those Branches (as we see in many ancient Howses, it so falls out,



out, as thei are uncertain whether came out of other) then, I sai yet, a vaillant Railer maj venture uppon a Thing, where, becaws there is not an absolute Certainti, there maj bee som Possibiliti to escape; but, in this Cace, where not oneli Name and Armes, with oneli that Difference, which acknowledgeth our Hows to be of the yonger Brother, but such Neereness of Blood, as that *Edmond Dudleis* was no furdre of then Son to the yonger Brother of the same Lord *Dudlei*, and so as he was to be Lord *Dudlei*, if the Lord *Dudlei* had died without Heires; and, by the *Ferman* and *Italien* Manner, him self was to have been also called Lord *Dudlei*; that his Father, beeing called *John Dudlei*, married to the Daughter and Heir of *Bramshot* in *Sussex*; twas the oneli Descent between him and the Lord *Dudlei*, who was his Grandfather; his Great Grandfather beeing that noble Lord *Dudlei*, whome before I mentioned, and no Man need doubt that this Wryter doth not oneli know the Trewthe hereof, but the Proofes of this Trewth. This *John*, *Edmondes* Father, beeing buried at *Arundel* Castell, who married *Bramshot*, and left that Land to *Edmond*, and so to the Duke in *Sussex*, which, after the Duke sold, by Confiscation came to the Crown. This Tomb any Man at *Arundel* Castell maj see. This *Bramshot* Land I name, a Thing not in the Air, but which any Man, by the ordinari Course of those Thinges, maj soone know whether such Land did not succeed unto *Edmond* from his Father. So as where is this Enheritance of Land, and Monumentes in Churches, and the Persons them selves little more then in Mans Memory; truly this Libeller deserves many Thankes, that, with his impudent Falshod, hath given Occasion to set down so manifest a Truth.

As to the *Dudleis*, he dealls much harder withall, but no Whitt trewer: But therein I must confes, I can not alleag his uncharitable Tryumphing uppon the Calamities faln to that Hows, though they might well be challenged of a Wryter, of whom any Honesti wear to be expected; but God forbid I shoold fynd Fault with that, since, in all his Book, there is scarce any one Trewth els. But our Hows receaved such an Overthrow; and hath none els in *England* done so? I will not seek to wash awaj that Dishonour with other honorable Tears. I woold this Yland wear not so full of such Examples; and I think, indeed, this Wryter, if he wear known, might in Conscience cleer his Awncestowrs of any such Disgraces, they were to low in the Myre to be so thunderstricke; but this I may justly and boldli affirm, lett the last Fault of the Duke be buried.

And, in good Faith, now I have so far touched their, as any Man that list to know a Truth (if at least there bee any that can dout thereof) maj streight be satisfied. I do not mean to give any Mans Eis or Eares such a Surfett, as by answering to repeat his filthy Falshods, so contrari to them selves, as may well shew how evill Lies can be built with any Uniformity. The same Man, in the Beginning of the Boke, was potent, to use his Tearn, in that the Queen had Caws to fear him; the same Man, in the End thereof, so abject, as any Man might tread on him: The same Man so unfrendly, as no Man could love him: The same Man so supported by Frendes, that Court and Contrei wear full of them: The same Man extreemeli weak of Boddi, and infinitely luxurious: The same Man a Dastard to fear any Thing: The same Man so ventrous, as to undertake, having no more Tytle, such a Matter, that *Hercules* himself woold be afreid to do, if he wear heer among us: In som, in one the same Man, all the Faultes that in all the most contrary humord Men in the World can remain; that sure, I think, he hath redd the Devills Role of Complaynetes, which he meanes to putt up against Mankynd, or els he could never have been acquainted with so many wretched Mischeefes. But hard it wear, if every Goos Quill, could any Waj blott the Honour of an Earl of *Lester*, writtne in the Hartes of so many Men, thorow *Europe*. Neither for me, shall ever so worthy a Mans Name, be brought to bee made a Question, where there is oneli such a nameles and shameles Opposer. But becaws that, thow the Wryter hecrof doft most falsli laj Want of Gentry to my dead Awncestowrs, I have to the World thought good to saj a little, which, I will assure any, that list to seek, shall fynd confirmed with much more. But to thee, I saj, Thow therein liest in  
thy



thy Throte ; which I will be reddi to justefy uppon thee, in any Place of *Europe*, where thou wilt assign me a free Place of Comming, as within 3 Monthes after the Publishing heerof, I may undrestand thy Mynd. And, as till thou hast proved this, in all Construction of Vertew and Honowr, all the Shame thou hast spokne is thyne own, the right Reward of an evill tonged Shelm, as the *Ferman*, especialli, call such People. So again, in any Place, wherto thou wilt call me, provyded that the Place be such, as a Servant of the Queenes Majestie have free Access unto ; if I do not, having my Lyfe, and Liberty, prove this uppon thee, I am content that this Ly, I have givn thee, return to my perpetual Infamy. And this which I wryte I would send to thyne own Handes, if I knew thee ; but I trust it can not bee intended, that he should be ignorant of this printed in *London*, which knows the very Whispringes of the Prive-Chamber. I will make Dainti of no Basenes in thee, that art, indeed, the Wryter of this Book. And, from the Date of this Wryting, emprinted and published, I will three Monthes expect thyne Answer.

*The following Indorsements are on the Original.*

A Discourse in Defence of the Earle of *Leycester*. { This is Sir *P. Sidney*'s Brother's Hand-writing, viz. *Robert Sidney*, the 1st Earl of *Leicester*, of the Name of *Sidney*.

In my Uncles own Hand, worthy to be better known to the World. { This is the Hand-writing of *Robert*, 2d E. of *Leic*. Son and Heir to the aforesaid *Robert*, and Nephew to Sir *P. Sidney*.

I shall now proceed to give an Account of the Funeral of the Earl of *Leicester*, &c. His Corps was removed from *Cornbury Park* to *Warwick*, where he was interred in our Ladyes Chapel, adjoining to the Quire of the Collegiate Church, and a very noble Monument is erected to his Memory with his Effigies in Armour, lying on his Back, with his Earls Coronet on his Head, and the Effigy of his Countess lying by him, with this Inscription in Capitals,

#### DEO VIVENTIUM S,

SPE CERTA Resurgendi in Christo hic situs est illustrissimus *Robertus Dudleyus*, *Johannis* Ducis Northumbriæ, Comitis Warwici, Vicecomitis Insulæ, &c. Filius quintus, Comes Leicestriæ, Baro Denbighiæ, Ordinis tum S. Georgii, cum S. Michaelis Eques Auratus, Reginæ *Elizabethæ* (apud quam singulari gratia florebat) Hippocomus Regiæ Aulæ, sub inde Seneschalus, ab intimis consiliis ; Forestarium, Parcorum Chacearum, &c. citra Trentam summus Justiciarius ; Exercitus Anglici a dicta Regina *Elizabetha* missi in Belgio, ab Anno MDLXXXV. ad annum MDLXXXVII. Locum tenens & Capitaneus Generalis ; Provinciarum Confederatarum ibidem Gubernator generalis & Præfectus, Regniq[ue] Angliæ Locum tenens contra Philippum II, Hispanum, numerosa classe & exercitu Angliam Anno MDLXXXVIII invadentem. Animam Deo servatori reddidit, Anno salutis M.D.LXXXVIII. Die quarto Septembris. optimo & charissimo marito Mœstissima Uxor Leticia, Francisci Knolles ordinis S. Georgii Equitis Aurati, & Regiæ Thesaurarii filia, amoris & conjugalis fidei ergo posuit.

He first married, in the Reign of King *Edward the Sixth*, *Anne*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *John Robsart* of *Siderston* in Com. *Norf*. Kt. Lineal Heir Male to Sir *John Robsart*, Knight of the Garter in the Reign of King *Henry the Sixth*, one of the most valiant Commanders of his Time ; but this Lady dying on 8 Sept. 1560, at *Cunmore* near *Oxford*, his Lordship continued a Widower several Years ; and after having an illegitimate Son, named *Robert*, by the Lady



Lady Douglas Sheffield, Widow of John Lord Sheffield; he married on the 21st of Sept. 1578, at Wansted in Essex, Lettice Daughter of Sir Francis Knolles, Knight of the Garter, and Widow of Walter Devereux, Earl of Essex, by whom he had Issue one Son, Robert, Baron of Denbigh, for whom an Altar Monument is erected, by that of his Father, at Warwick, with his Effigies lying thereon, and this Inscription in Capitals :

Heere resteth the Body of the noble Imp. Robert, of Dudley, Baron of Denbigh, Sonne of Robert Erle of Leicester, Nephew and Heire unto Ambrose Erle of Warwicke, Bretherne, bothe Sones of the Mightie Prince John, late Duke of Northumberland; that was Cousin and Heire to Sir John Grey, Viscont Lysle, Cousin and Heire to Sir Thomas Talbot, Viscont Lysle, Grandson and Heire unto the Lady Margaret, Countesse of Shrewsbury, the eldest Daughter and Coheire of the Noble Erle of Warwike, Sir Richard Beauchamp, heere entered a Childe of greate Parentage, but of farre greater Hope and Towardness. Taken from this transitory unto the Everlasting Life, in his tender Age at Wansted in Essex, on Sondaye the 19 of July, in the Yere of our Lorde God 1584; beinge the 26 Yere of the happy Reigne of the most Vertuovs and Godly Princes Queene Elizabeth: And in this Place layed up emonge his Noble Auncestors, in assured Hope of the Generall Resurrection.

On the Right Hand of the Tomb of the said Robert Earl of Leicester, are the following Verses in gold Capital Letters, in two Columns, on a Tablet.

Upon  
The Death of the  
Excellent and Pious  
Lady Lettice, Countesse  
of Leicester, who dyed  
upon Christmas Day in  
the Morning, 1634.

1.  
Look into this Vault and search it well;  
Much Treasure in it lately fell;  
We all are rob'd, and all do say  
Our Wealth was carryed this a Way.  
And that the Theft might nere be found  
Tis buried closely under Ground:  
Yet if you gently stir the Mould,  
There all our Loss you may behold:  
There you may see that Face, that Hand,  
Which once was fairest in the Land.  
She that in her yonger Yeares,  
Matcht with two great English Peers;  
She that, did supply the Warrs  
With Thunder, and the Court with  
Starrs.  
She that in her Youth had bene  
Darling to the Mayden Quene;  
Till she was content to quitt  
Her Favour, for her Favourit.

2.  
Whose gould Threed, when she saw spunn,  
And the Death of her brave Son,  
Thought it safest to retire  
From all Care and vain Desire,  
To a private Countrie Cell,  
Where she spent her Dayes so well,  
That to her the better Sort  
Came as to an Holy Court.  
And the Poor that lived near  
Dearth nor Famine could not fear.  
Whilst she lived, she lived thus,  
Till that God, displeased with us,  
Suffered her at last to fall,  
Not from him, but from us all.  
And because she took Delight  
Christs poor Members to invite,  
He fully now requites her Love,  
And sends his Angels from above,  
That did to Heaven her Soul convey  
To solemnise his own Birth-Day.

Gerard Clifton.

The Earl of Leicester's Will being very remarkable, and wrote without any Assistance, I shall for the Satisfaction of the Curious, insert a Copy of it, from

Ex Evident. apud Penshurst.



the Original<sup>a</sup>, as it expresse the great Sense he had of Queen *Elisabeth's* Favours to him, and shews his Piety and Humility, as also the just Care he had for the Payment of his Debts, and Settling of his Estate.

THIS IS THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT of me *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, her Majestys Lievtenant General of all her Forces in the *Low-Countries*, and Governor and Captain-General of all the *United Provinces*, written with his own Hand the First of *August* in *Middleborough* 1578. First I take it to be the Part of every true Christian, to make a true Testimony of his Faith at all Times, and especially in such a Case and such a Time as this is. And, therefore, I do mean here faithfully to make a short Declaration to testify in what Faith I do live, and depart from this World, through the Grace of my Lord and Saviour to continue me in the same till the Separation of this Life and Body. And so I do acknowledge my Creation and Being, to be had and continued by the Providence of our Almighty God, the Creator of all Things both in Heaven and Earth, and do confess, that above all Deeds, that his divine Majesty hath done for Mankind, is the Gift of his blessed Son, Christ Jesus, to be the Redeemer and Saviour of his People that be faithfull, by whose only Merits and Passion, I verily believe, and am most assured of the Forgiveness of all my Sinnes, be they never so great or infinite, and that he only is the sufficient Sacrifice that hath appeased the Wrath of his Father, and that blessed Lamb, which innocently suffered all Torments, to bear the bitter Burden due to us miserable Wretches, for his most tender Compassion over all that have Grace to believe in him. All which his Graces Goodness and Mercy I most faithfully take hold on, being so promised by himself, who is the only Truth it self, that I am the Child of Salvation; and to be the Inheritour of his everlasting Kingdom, and to meet with him at the joyfull Day of Resurrection, with all the faithfull Children, and Saints of God. In this Faith I now live, and in this Faith I trust to change this Life, with continual Prayer to the Throne of Grace, to grant me, during this Pilgrimage of mine, a true, humble, and penitent Heart, for the due Recognition of all mine Offences, and the willing Amendment of the same, and to fly instantly to the sure Ankerholde my Lord and Saviour, Christ Jesus, to whom with the Father, and the Holy Spirit, be all Honour, Glory and Dominion, forever, *Amen*. Thus being in perfect Health and Memory, and having set down my Faith as a true Christian, and being uncertain of the Hour of Death, I think it my Part to settle my worldly Matters in as good Estate as I can, specially being hastily and suddenly sent over, and likewise having very little Leasure, since my Arrival, to get any Time for my private Buifness. But first my Will is, to commit this wretched Body of mine, when it shall please God to seperate it from the Soul, to the Order of my dear Friends, that shall be living as my Executors, and my Overseers of this my last Will and Testament, and they to take such Order for the Burial of my Body, as they shall think mete, always requiring that it may be done with as little Pomp or vain Expences of the World, as may be, being perswaded that there is no more vain Expences than that is a convenient Tombe or Monument I wish there should be. And, for the Place where my Body should lye, it is hard to appoint, and I know not how convenient it is to desire it; but I have always wished, as my dear Wife doth know, and some of my Friends, that it might be at *Warwick*, where sundry of my Ancestors doe lye, either so, or else where the Queens Majesty shall command, for as it was when it had Life, a most faithfull, true, loving Servant unto her, so living, and so dead, let the Body be at her gracious Determination, if it shall so please her. Touching my Bequests, they cannot be great, by Reason my Ability and Power is little, for I have not dissembled with the World my Estate, but have lived always above any Living I had (for which I am heartily sorry) least that, thro' my many Debts, from Time to Time, some Men have taken Loss by me. My Desire therefore is, and I do charge my Executors to have due Considera-

<sup>a</sup> Ex Regist. vocat. *Leicester*, qu. 1. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



tion, that if any Person shall justly after my Decease make such Complaint, that they may be satisfied as far as it shall be found in any Equity it is due unto them, with Advantage to them beside. I do here appoint my most dear welbeloved Wife, the Countesse of *Leicester*, to be my sole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament; and do require her, for all Love between us, that she will not only be content to take it upon her, but also to see it faithfully and carefully performed. And albeit there may many Imperfections be found with the Making of this Will, for that I am no Lawyer, nor have any Councel now with me to place Things in such Forme as some are able; yet as my true Meaning is I trust to expresse, that accordingly it may be interpreted, for I mean to make it as plain as I can. And first of all, before and above all Persons, it is my Duty to remember my most dear, and most gracious Sovereign, whose Creature under God I have been, and who hath been a most bountiful, and most princely Mistresse unto me, as well in advancing me to many Honours, as in maintaining me many Ways by her Goodness and Liberality. And as my best Recompence to her most excellent Majesty can be from so mean a Man, chiefly in Prayer to God, so whilst there was any Breath in this Body, I never failed it, even as for mine own Soul. And as it was my greatest Joy, in my Life Time, to serve her to her Contentation, so it is not unwelcome to me, being the Will of God to dye, and end this Life for her Service. And yet albeit I am not able to make any Piece of Recompence of her great Goodness, yet will I presume to present unto her a Token of an humble, faithfull Heart, as the least that ever I can send her, and with this Prayer withall, that it may please the Almighty God, not only to make her the oldest Prince, that ever he gave over *England*, but to make her the Godliest, the Virtouest, and the Worthiest in his Sight, that ever he gave over any Nation. That she may indeed be a blessed Mother and Nurse to this People, and Church of *England*, which the Almighty God grant for his Christs Sake. The Token I do bequeath unto her Majesty, is the Jewel with three great Emrodes with a fair large Table Diamond in the Middest, without a Foyle, and set about with many Diamonds without Foyle, and a Roap of fayre white Pearl, to the Number six Hundred, to hang the said Jewel at; which Pearl and Jewel was once purposed for her Majesty, against a Coming to *Wansted*, but it most now thus be disposed, which I do pray you, my dear Wife, see performed, and delivered to some of those whom I shall hereafter nominate and appoint to be my Overseers for her Majesty.

Next her Majesty I will now return to my dear Wife, and set down that for her, which cannot be so well as I would wish it, but shall be as well as I am able to make it, having always found her a faithfull, loving, and a very obedient, carefull Wife; and so do I trust this Will of mine shall find her no less mindfull of me being gone, then I was always of her being alive. I do give and bequeath to my said dear Wife, over and beside the Jointure I have made her, the Lease of *Drayton Bassett*, freely to give and dispose at her Will. *Item*, There be certain Parcels of Grounds, which I bought of the Earl of *Oxford*, being sometime belonging to the House of *Crambrooke*, and I reserved purposely to be joyned to the Park of *Wansted*, as also the Parcel of Ground, called *Watermans*, which I bought of the L. of *Buckburst*; both which I do also freely give and grant to my said Wife forever, with the Mannor of *Wansted*, already assured unto her. *Item*, I do give to my said Wife, during her Life, all other Lands and Tenements, which I did purchase in the Lordship of *Wansted*, beside that is past by Deed, with the House and Mannor, to her before. And, because I do give the House and Land of *Aldersbrooke*, which I bought of *Fuller* the Lawyer, to my base Son *Robert Dudley*, I do desire and pray my said dear Wife, that she will be pleased to give him also the great Pond before the Door of the said House, being Parcel of the Mannor of *Wansted*. Which House and Lands of *Aldersbrooke* I do also grant unto my said Wife, till my said base Son shall accomplish the Age of twenty Yeares. *Item*, I do give unto my said dear Wife all my Goods and Leases whatsoever, towards the Payment of



of my Debts, and her better Maintenance, saving such as I shall hereafter, in this my Will, limit and sett down for other Uses. *Item*, For that there is sixteen-thousand Pounds, due by me, to the Merchants of *London*, upon Mortgage of the Lordships of *Denbigh*, and others, and that neither my Leases, nor Goods, able to redeem them, and to pay other my Debts; I do give Power and Authority, by this my last Will, to such as I have made Assurance already, for the same Purpose, as if they want Power and Authority by any such former Act. I do give all Power and Authority, that is possible for me to give, either to my Executrix, and my Overseers, jointly together, or such of them as shall be living, to sell all my Lands and Leases, with the Parsonage of *Warrington*, which I have in *Lancashire*, and were sometimes the Lands of Sir *Thomas Butler*, Knt. and *Edward Butler*, Esq; his Son. All which Lands and Leases I do will in any wise to be sold for the Redemption of the Lordships of *Denbigh*, and *Chirk*, and the Overplus thereof, to go towards the Payment of my other Debts, for the better Ease and Reliefe of my Executrix; and for that the said Lands of *Butlers*, were intended at the first, by the said *Butler*, to be given to my said base Son, *Robert*, I do in Liew thereof give unto him the said Lordships of *Denbigh* and *Chirke*, &c. but after the Death of my dear Lord, and Brother, the Earl of *Warwick*, to whom, with all other my Lands, during his Life, I do give and bequeath; saving such as I have already granted to my said dear Wife, in Joynture, or shall grant unto her, by this my last Will and Testament. The Castle of *Kenelworth*, I do likewise give unto my said Brother, with all the Parks, Chases, and Lands, during his Life, and the Park and Paddock of *Rudfine* only excepted, which I always gave unto my Wife, during her Life, the Timber Woods of all which I do reserve from any Waste (Reparations necessary excepted) or if it shall please my Lord and Brother to build out the Gallery which I once intended, then to take such Timber as shall be convenient for the same. *Item*, I do will and give all such Stuff and Implements of Household; as I have heretofore stored the said Castle with, all to remain to the said Castle and House, and not to be altered or removed. I do also give two Garnish of silver Vessell, to remain, as the rest, to the said Castle, with two Basons and Ewers of Silver gilt, with other Plate for a Cupboard, to the Value of two hundreth Pounds, over and above the former Parcels of Vessell and Basons and Ewers. *Item*, I do give and grant, by this my Will, the said Castle, and Lands belonging to the said Castle, and which I have purchased to the same: Also, after the Decease of my Lord and Brother, to my base Son *Robert Dudley*, as also the Fee Farme of *Rudfyn*. I do give also to my dear Wife my House and Mannor of *Langley*, with all the Appurtenances, and the Use of all the Coppice Woods there, with the Lease of *Whitney*, until my said base Son accomplish the Years of one and twenty; both which, after, I do give and grant to *Robert*, my base Son, in such Sort as shall be limited unto him, with the rest of the Lands I give him. If he dye before the said one and twenty Year, then my said Wife to enjoy the said Lands and Leases during her Life. I give him also the Leases of *Grafton* Pasture, after the Decease of my said Wife. I doe also desire my good Lord and Brother, the Lands afore-said coming to his Hands, that it will please him to give some reasonable Stipend to the *Boy*, when he comes to more Years, for his Maintenance. In the mean Time, after the Decease of *Gabriel Bleke*, and his Wife, I do give and grant to the said *Robert*, all such Lands and Leases, as I have conveyed unto me from the said *Gabriel* forever; and the same Lands, Houses, and Leases, to enjoy presently after the Decease of the said *Gabriel Bleke*, and his Wife, now living. I do give and grant to my said base Son, also, after the Decease of my dear Wife, the Mannors of *Balsoll*, and *Long Itchington*, in the Countye of *Warwicke*, with all Appurtenances. I do likewise give and grant to my said base Son, the Mannors of *Cleobury* and *Eurnewood*, after the Decease also of my said dear Wife. *The Moyety of such Lands as was recovered from the Lord Berkeley, I do leave unbestowed; but to be imploied by my Lord and Brother upon such our next Heirs (for that it came by Descent) as he shall find living with him,* Sir Robert



Robert Sidney, *if he live to it*. And for all those Things which I have granted, whereof my dear Wife hath Interest, either during Life, or otherwise, if any mine Heirs or Assigns, shall go about to molest or disturb her Estate, and shall molest, and any Way, disturb her from any such Estate, granted to her either by Deed or Will from me; that immediately it shall be lawfull for her, during her Life, to enter and seize upon the Lands, that any such Disturber shall presently hold or enjoy from me, whatsoever it shall be. *Item*, If the Lands which was *Butlers* in *Lancashire*, cannot be sold in Sort to pay and redeem the Mortgage of *Denbigh* and *Chirk*, and to make six or seven Thousand Pounds more, at the least, towards my other Debts: Then it is my Will, that my Overseers shall, and my Executrix also, joyn with them, if so it be needfull, to bargain and sell both those Lordships of *Denbigh* and *Chirk*, and to make the most of it, and the Overpluss to go to the Payment of my other Debts. And then I do give and grant, by this Will, all the Lands and Leases in *Lancashire*, to my said *Robert* my base Son, forever. And for that there is certain of my Lands, charged with Rents and Tenths to her Majesty, and that I have certain free Rents in *Wales* to as great Value or more; my humble Request to her Highness, is, that it may please her to discharge those Rents from my other Lands, and to receive the other Rents in *Wales* for the same, which is no Loss to her Majesty at all, but as certain as the other. And where my base Son is young and casual, whether these my Gifts shall come unto him or no, if he dye before he be one and twenty Years old, unmarried and without Child; then, if my Lord and Brother be living, I shall require him to dispose of all those Lands, leaving them unto him as my right and lawfull Heir. Save only, that if my said base Son *Robert* should dye without Issue, and that the Mannor of *Denbigh* and *Chirk* be redeemed, I do give and bequeath forever the Lordship of *Chirk*, to my welbeloved Son in Law the Earl of *Essex*, as also my House in *London*, called *Leicester* House; if the said *Robert* my base Son dye without Issue, to whom I give and grant, as other the former Lands, after the Decease of my dear Wife, the said House, and the Remainder, if he dye without Issue, to my said Lord the Earl of *Essex*, my Son in Law, and to the Heirs of his Body lawfully begotten. And where, in one Article before touching my purchased Lands in *Wansted*, I left my said Lands undisposed, but during the Life of my said Wife: I do hereby, also, give and grant those purchased Lands, not passed unto her by Deed before, or not inclosed within the Park of *Wansted*, to *Robert* my base Son during his Life, and to the Heirs of his Body, if he have any lawfully begotten; otherwise if he dye without Issue, I do give and grant those Lands purchased in *Wansted*, to the Lord of *Wansted*, being any of the Heirs of the Body of my said dear Wife, forever. And where I have erected an Hospital for the Relief of certain poor Men, and do think that I have fully accomplished the same, of two hundred Pounds by Year, of sufficient Land and Rent, for the Maintenance of the Master and poor Men, according to a Rate set down; if any Want be, either of Default of Rent, or other Assurance, I do give Authority, by this my Will, to my Lord and Brother the Earl of *Warwick*, to make it up out of the Mannor of *Hampton*, in *Worcestershire*, called *Hampton magna*. If the said Hospital be fully made up to the aforesaid Summe, then, the said Mannor to come to my Brother, excepting any Estate made to my Wife for Joynture, whereof I am here uncertain. But if it be, and the Hospital do lack of the Value, I doubt not but she will be well content to suffer my Brother to make any such Conveyance, which shall not hinder her Joynture, to the Benefit of that poor House. *And do hope God will send her Life and Ability to provide some Means to joyn some good Deed to that House, in finding some Number of poor Women, such as shall not be idle, but to be set on Work in making Linnen Cloath, or such like; a Work of good Charity it will be, and I trust it shall not be the less thought on, to joyn with me, in that I have begun there: And by this Will I do give to my Hospitall two hundredth Pounds in Money, presently, for a Stock to relieve their Necessitys.*

V O L. I.

U

I have



I have in *Wales* a Lease of her Majesty of *Arnsteley* and *Cavilliock*, which Lease I give, after my Debts paid, to my good Son in Law, the Earl of *Essex*. And I have a Fee Farm, Parcell of that, which I will shall be imploied to the Maintenance of *two Schollars* in the *Univerſity* College in *Oxford*, allowing each of them twenty Pounds a Year a Piece; those Scholars always to be placed by my Wife during her Life; and after, by him that shall be left mine Heir, and so to be at the Appointment of mine Heirs forever. This Fee Farm I know not the Name of it, but the present Rent is about five Pounds a Year, and worth fifty or threescore Pounds, when the Years be out, which are above twenty, as I gueſs. In the mean While, I will charge my Lord of *Essex*, with the Payment of the Schollars Stipend, and to aſſiſt his Mother about the Setling of those Schollars, and to see the Lease I ſpeak of, to be conſidered of for the Furtherance of this Purpose. *Thomas Dudley*, and my Auditor, can tell you what this Thing is.

*Item*, I do give and bequeath to my beloved Godſon and Nephew, Sir *Robert Sidney*, Knight, my two Farms in *Kent*, of *Monſkton* and *Thornedeane*, which I hold of the Church of *Canterbury*, by Lease for Years; which Leases and Years I do give unto my ſaid Nephew, and to enjoy them after my Debts paid. And whereas I have appointed divers Mannors and Lands to my baſe Son *Robert Dudley*, the moſt whereof is after the Decease of my Lord and Brother the Earl of *Warwick*, and my dear Wife the Counteſs of *Leiceſter*; I think good to put my ſaid Brother in Remembrance, *if my baſe Son ſhould dye without Heirs of his Body, that, then, there may be good Conſideration had of this Gentleman our Nephew Sir Robert Sidney*. For my Will is, that my ſaid baſe Son ſhall have the State of those Lands thus limited, that is, during his Life, and if he have lawfull Iſſue of his Body, then the ſame Mannors and Lands to deſcend unto them; otherwiſe my Will is, that, after ſuch Default, those Lands may deſcend to Sir *Robert Sidney*, and his Heirs lawfully begotten; and for ſuch Default to the right Heirs of me and my Brother. Saving the Mannor and Lordſhip of *Chirk* and *Chirkland*, after the Decease of *Robert* my baſe Son without Iſſue of his Body, immediately to come to my Son in Law, the Earl of *Essex*, forever; as alſo my Houſe in *London* to him and the Heirs of his Body begotten, not hurting the State of his Mother during her Life. I do give alſo to my dear Wife my Stuff appertaining to *Wanſted*, as alſo the Moyety of the Stuff at *Leiceſter* Houſe. I do deſire alſo, that there may be ſome Stuff provided for *Langley*. And therefore I do appoint all ſuch Hangings and Stuff as I have over with me to be ſent and kept at *Langley*, and there left as well for the Uſe of my Wife, as to the Owner of that Houſe after her, as alſo to leave five hundreth Pounds Worth of Veſſell and Plate, to ſuch as ſhall be left mine Heir at her Death, to that Houſe. *Item*, that all other Plate and Jewels I give to my dear Wife, ſuch Parcels excepted, as I do hereby give to my Overſeers and Friends. And for my Overſeers, I doe hereby appoint and heartily deſire them, that they will for the long good Will between us, take it upon them, and to help, aſſiſt, and comfort, my dear and poor diſconſolate Wife; Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton* Lord Chancellor of *England*, my loving Brother the Earl of *Warwick*, and my very good Lord and Friend the Lord *Howard* High Admiral of *England*; truſting, that, as they will not deny my Requeſt, ſo they will be carefull to help my poor Wife for the Performance of this my laſt Will and Teſtament, who I know ſhall need the good Favours and Aſſiſtance of my good Friends, and whom I make my ſole Executrix. Not doubting but they ſhall find her willing every Way to the utmoſt of her Power, to do all I have committed to her Charge, not thinking good to trouble any other of my Friends, but herſelf, with my hard and broken Eſtate, being I know not how many Thouſand, above Twenty in Debt; and, at this preſent, not having in the World five hundreth Pounds towards it. And the harder will her Caſe be, if I receive not ſuch Debts, as are here due to me by the *States*, which I much fear; but I have appointed Lands to be ſold, and ſome Leases I leave to my Wife, to ſee how all, with all that I have left her to pay my Debts, which God grant to  
the



the good Satisfaction of my Creditors. And albeit I am not so able as willing to leave better Remembrances to their Lordships, yet desiring them to take a Remembrance of their faithfull Friend in good Part, I do send them each a poor Token. To my Lord Chancellor, mine old dear Friend, I do give one of my greatest Basons and Ewers gilt, with my best George and Garter, not doubting, but he shall shortly enjoy the Wearing of it, and one of his Armors he gave me. To my dear and noble Brother I leave to him, *first*, as dear an Affection as ever Brother bare to other. And, for a Remembrance, I send him a Cup of Gold, which my old Friend my Lord of *Pembroke* gave me, and a George, which hath the *French* Order and the *English* in one, with a plain Gold Chain at it. This Token he must keep in Remembrance, that his Brother was of both the Orders, and not only so, but also almost the oldest of both the Orders in both the Realms. But what is this but Vanity, and too much Vanity for me now to remember them? But my last and best Token to him shall be, to present a faithfull Sister and Handmaid to him, whilst you both live, which I pray God may be many Years together. To my Lord Admirall, whom I have found a most noble Friend, a fair gilt Bason and Ewer, with a fair Garter of ragged Staves, my best Sword, my best Horse, with the finest Furniture to him, and my fairest Piece, and Case of Pistolls. To my dear Sister of *Warwick*, a fair Cup of one hundreth Marks. To my good Son in Law the Earl of *Essex*, the best Armour I have, one my Lord Chancellor gave me, two my best Horses, with a George and Garter, in Hope he shall wear it shortly. To my dear Sister the Countess of *Huntingdon*, one Ring with Diamonds, and a fair little Salt of Gold. To my Lord Treasurer a faire standing Cup. To my Lord Chamberlaine, a George with a Chain. To my Lord *North*, a Bason and Ewer of forty Pounds. To my Father in Law Sir *Francis Knolls*, a fair Cup. To my Brother Sir *William Knolls*, a Ring and a Horse, with a fair Furniture and a Case of Pistolls. To my Brother *Francis*, I do bequeath a hundreth Pounds in Money. To Sir *Thomas Hennage*, my good old Friend, some Jewel, or Plate of forty Pounds Value. For my Servants, I will set down in a Bill under my Hand what I will have done for them, for I know you my Executrix shall be hardly able to do for them, yet do I trust to satisfie most of them, and that you will be as good as you may be able to the rest. *Memorandum*, That wheare I made *Gooderous* a Lease of *Woodgrange*, there be certain Things to be amended, or else the Lease will be Nothing worth to him; which Thing of *Woodgrange* I commit to your Charge and Use, till *Robert* do come to Years to have *Aldersbrooke*, and then my Will is, he have it; if he dye before, then yourself my Wife, during your Life, to enjoy it. And I will that he have at that Time also *Hamefrithe*, and certain Grounds I bought for Years, of *Humins*, lying in *Barkeking*, which will serve him for Hey at *Aldersbrooke*. All which also if he dye before those Years, to return to my Wife during her Life. Ended the fifth Day of July, 1587. R. *Leicester*.

Item, I do give the Dwelling, during his Life, in *Aldersbrooke*, to *Burgane*, my Secretarie, with so much Ground as is about it, to the yearly Value of fifty Pounds, untill he be provided of some other Thing to as good a Value, or that my base Son *Robert Dudley* do place him either in the House at *Highbate*, or elsewhere, to the Contentation of the said *Burgane*, with as much and as good in Profit as the other is. This was added by me the last of September, 1587. R. *Leicester*.

The *Probat.* bears Date, 6 Sept. 1588, and Administration was granted to the Lady *Lettice* Countess of *Leicester* his Relict, and Executrix.

It may be here proper to observe, that the Lands mentioned in his Will for the Maintenance of two Schollars at *Univrsity* College in *Oxford*, forever; are at *Armstrey*, and *Cavilliock*, in *South-Wales*, in the Occupation of *Valentine Hughs*, Esq. and are now lett at 140 l. per Ann. and the Mannors and Lands, belonging to the Hospital at *Warwick*, are so much increased, since the Death



of the Founder, that the Place of a poor Brother (of which there are twelve) is now worth near 40 *l. per Ann.* each. And the Masterhip of the said Hospital, with the Living of *Hampton* in *Arden* annexed, is 250 *l. per Ann.* Which Schollars of *Vniversity* College in *Oxford*; as also the Master, and Brethren of the aforesaid Hospital, are named and appointed, by Dame *Mary Sherard*, Wife of Sir *Brownlow Sherard*, Bart. and *Elisabeth Perry*, Wife of *William Perry*, Esq. The said Dame *Mary*, and *Elisabeth*, becoming the right Heirs of the Founder, on the Death of their Uncle *John Sidney* Earl of *Leicester*, in 1737<sup>x</sup>; and who as such, appointed (in the Life-time of *Joceline*, the last Earl of *Leicester*) the Reverend Mr. *Edward Tart*, the present Master thereof.

The Brethren wear the Livery of the said Earl of *Leicester*, and his Heirs, viz. a blew Gown, embroidered on the Sleeve with the Bear and ragged Staff, Silver.

Having now brought to a Period the Male Line of the *Dudley's*, I proceed to treat of the Descendants of Lady *Mary Dudley*, the Wife of Sir *Henry Sidney*, Knight of the Garter, and the only Child of *John Duke* of *Northumberland*, that left Issue, in whose Posterity, the Rights of her Family centered.

Which, Sir *Henry Sidney*, was the only Son and Heir of Sir *William Sidney*, Knight Banneret, who being a Person of great Note in his Time, I shall give some Account of him. He was the eldest Son and Heir of *Nicholas Sidney*, Esq; lineally descended from Sir *William Sidney*, Knight, Chamberlain to King *Henry the Second*, with whom he came from *Anjou*. Which *Henry*, before his Accession to the Crown, bearing the Title of Duke of *Normandy*, and Earl of *Anjou*<sup>y</sup>, grants and confirms to the said *William de Sidne*, Mili<sup>z</sup> (so wrote in the Grant) the Mannor of *Sutton*, with the Appurtenances, to him and to his Heirs in Fee, by the Service of one Knight's Fee. *Test. Cam. R. Com. de Clara*, and others; without any Date, sealed with the Print of a Man in Armour on Horseback, on both Sides the Seal: Also, in<sup>z</sup> another Grant, he is wrote *Willielmus de Sidnei Camer. Dni. Reg.* whereby he gave to *Roger Sidnei*, his Son, and his Heirs, all his Lands of *Cesford*, and *Lelleford*, with the Appurtenances. *Test. Waranio Saccavilla, Henr. de Neuburgbe, &c.* without Date. Sealed with a Man in Armour on Horseback.

In the 10th Year of King *John*, 1208<sup>a</sup>, Sir *Simon de Sidnei*, and *Beatrice* his Wife, on the Eve of *St. Matthew* the Apostle, acknowledge to have received of the Abbat and Convent of *Lewes* in *Suffex*, two Marks, due from the said Abbat at *Michaelmas* that Year. In Witness whereof, they have put the Seal of *William de la Mare*, their Brother. To this is appendant a round Piece of Paste, about 2 Inches and a Half, and thereon the Print of a Man on Horseback compleatly armed.

All our Genealogists agree, and the Records of the Family prove, that the said Sir *William Sidney*, Knight Banneret, was descended from them, so that I shall only proceed to relate what I find memorable of him.

In 2 *Henry VIII*, being one of the Esquires of the King's House (as *Stow* relates<sup>b</sup>) he was one of the Commanders of those Forces, sent under the Command of *Thomas Lord Darcy*, in Aid of the King of *Aragon* and *Castile*, against the *Moors*. And, when the Lord *Darcy* sailed for *England*, obtaining Leave of him to see the Court of *Spain*, he, with *Henry Guilford*, and *Weston Brown*, Esqs; went to *Madrid*, where they were highly entertained by the King, who conferred the Honour of Knighthood on *Guilford*, and *Brown*; but *William Sidneie* so excused himself, as *Hollinsbed* writes, that he was not knighted<sup>c</sup>. And, when they had sojourned there a While, they took their Leave of the King and Queen, and returned through *France* into *England*.

In 4 *Henry VIII*, the King having prepared a Fleet to cruise on the Coast of *France*, the Command of them was given to Sir *Anthony Oughtred*, Sir *Edward*

<sup>x</sup> Vide Writ of Mandamus issued from the Court of King's Bench, July 7, 1742. 16 Geo. II.

<sup>y</sup> Ex Orig. Charta apud Penshurst.

<sup>z</sup> Orig. Charta, Ibid.

<sup>a</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.

<sup>b</sup> Chron. p. 488.

<sup>c</sup> Hollinsb. Chron. p. 810.

<sup>d</sup> Ickingham.



*Ibingham*<sup>d</sup>, and this *William Sidenie*, with Orders to join the Admiral before the *Isle of Wight*; on which Junction, the King himself came to *Portsmouth*, to see his Navy together, and gave them a Banquet before they set Sail. And, the *French* preparing a great Fleet from *Brest*, an Engagement ensued on the 10th of *August* in the Bay of *Britany*, wherein the *French* fled. Also, in *March* following, a great Fleet being fitted out, this *William Sidnei* was again one of the principal Commanders; and had then <sup>e</sup> the Honour of Knighthood conferred on him, for his valiant Deportment, being in the Attempt made on Prior *John* and the *French* Fleet in the Haven of *Brest*, in which the Lord *Howard*, Lord High-Admiral, was drowned. And, before the End of that Year<sup>g</sup>, he is wrote Sir *William Sidneie*, Knight, and commanded in the Right Wing of the Army under the Earl of *Surry*, who obtained that great Victory over the *Scots* at *Flodden* Field, when *James the Fourth*, their King, was slain; and, for his Valour<sup>h</sup>, was then made a Banneret. In Consideration of these Services, 20 *July*, 5 *Henry VIII*<sup>i</sup>, the King grants to Sir *William Sidney*, Knight, an Annuity of 50 Marks *per Ann.* during his Life.

In 6 *Henry VIII*, he accompanied the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marquis of *Dorset*, and his four Brethren, the Lord *Clinton*, Sir *Edward Nevile*, Sir *Giles Capel*, and Sir *Thomas Cheney*, to *Paris*<sup>k</sup>, there to make Proof of their Skill in Arms, against the Dauphin of *France*, and nine other select Persons, whom he had taken for his Assistants at those solemn Jufts he had proclaimed for all Comers, being Gentlemen of Name and *Armes*, to be performed on the Coronation of the Princess *Mary* (King *Henry the Eighth's* Sister) then lately married to *Lewis the Twelfth*, King of *France*: Whereupon they landed at *Calais*, all in green Coats and Hoods, with Intent not to discover themselves till their Arrival at *Paris*. And, being at that grand Solemnity at the Coronation, the 5th of *November*, in the Monastery of *St. Dennis* in *France*, he was also at the Jufts began on the 7th of *November*, which continued for 3 Days, wherein 300 and 5 Men of *Armes* ran five Courses with sharp Spears, and the *English* (as *Stow* and *Hollingshed* write) performed as well as the best, not only in the Jufts, but also in the Turney and Barriers.

In 12 *Henry VIII*, on the Going over of the King and Queen, with great State into *France*, to the Meeting of King *Francis*, betwixt *Guisnes* and *Ardes*, and Jufts being thereupon held for 14 Days, he was one<sup>l</sup> in the 2d Band of the *English*, at those martial Exercises.

In 15 *Henry VIII*, he was one of the principal Commanders of those Forces sent into *France*, under the Duke of *Suffolk*; in which Year, several Places of great Strength were taken from the Enemy by the *English*, who remained in the Field till the latter End of *November*, when the Hardness of the Season induced the Duke of *Suffolk* to return to *Calais*. The King, who had prepared 6000 Men to be sent to him, was somewhat displeased at the Breaking up of his Army, without his Orders; but, hearing (as my Author writes<sup>n</sup>) *the reasonable Excuses of the Duke and his Captains, he was shortly after pacified, and after remaining at Calais a certain Time, their Friends having asswaged the King's Displeasure, they returned, and were received in as much Favour as before.*

In 16 *Henry VIII*, before the Feast of *Christmas*<sup>o</sup>, he was also one of those Challengers in Feats of Arms, which was proclaimed by *Windsor Herald*, and performed before the King at the *Tilt-yard* at *Greenwich*, who kept his *Christmas* there with great Mirth and princely Pastime; but *Francis Sidneie* is mentioned in *Hollinsbed*, which must be mistaken for this Sir *William Sidney*, as there was not any Person of that Name of *Francis*.

After this, I find no further Mention of him in the Reign of King *Henry the Eighth*, except that he was in Nomination<sup>p</sup> for one of the Knights of the Gar-

<sup>d</sup> Hollinsh. Chron. p. 815. n. 30.    <sup>e</sup> Ibid. p. 816. n. 30. a.    <sup>f</sup> Nom. Equit. in Bibl. Cotton. Claudius, C. 3.    <sup>g</sup> Hollinsbed, p. 826, a. and Stow, p. 492.    <sup>h</sup> Nom. Equit. præd.    <sup>i</sup> Pat. 5 H. VIII. p. 2.    <sup>k</sup> Stow's Chron. p. 496. and Hollinsbed, p. 833, 834.    <sup>l</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 508.    <sup>m</sup> Hollinsbed, p. 879. n. 60.    <sup>n</sup> Ibid. p. 881. n. 40 and 50.    <sup>o</sup> Ibid. p. 883.    <sup>p</sup> Antis's Regist. of the Garter, Vol. 2. p. 446, & seq.



ter, 23 April, 33 Henry VIII, and, in all succeeding Chapters of that most noble Order, in this King's Reign. Also, in 33 Henry VIII, the King grants to Sir William Sydney, Knight, and Anne his Wife, and his Heirs<sup>q</sup>, the Scite of the late Monastery of *Robertbridge*, and the Mannors of *Robertbridge*, *Posingworth*, *Warde*, *Sandore*, *Sutton*, *Woodrove*, *Lamberberst*, *Vdyam*, *Horsemounden*, and *Maddersham*, and the Rectories of *Salehurst*, *Mountfield*, and *Vdymer*, in Kent and Suffex. All which were granted in Exchange with the King, for the Mannors of *Kingston upon Hull*, and *Myton*, with divers other Lands of good Value, within the Counties of York and Lincoln. And, 3 June, 37 Henry VIII<sup>r</sup>, obtained a Grant of Free-Warren, and a Market and Fair at *Robertbridge*, 14 Sept.

This Sir William Sydney<sup>r</sup> was Tutor and Chamberlain, and Steward of the Household to King *Edward the Sixth*, from the Time of his Birth to his Coronation. And, on the Deaths of *Henry Duke of Suffolk*, and the Lord *Charles Brandon* his Brother, 14 July, 5 Edw. VI, he was found to be one of their Cousins and Coheirs, and was at that Time 70 Years of Age, and, with the other Coheirs, petitioned the King, for Livery of the Lands they died seized of, viz. Son of *Nicholas Sydney*, Esq; by *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of Sir William Brandon, Knight, and Sister to Sir William Brandon, Knight, Father to *Charles Duke of Suffolk*, Father of the said *Henry Duke of Suffolk*, and Lord *Charles Brandon* his Brother.

Which Sir William Brandon, Knight, 1st named<sup>r</sup>, married *Elisabeth*, Danghter to Sir Robert Wingfield, Knight, by *Elisabeth* his Wife, Daughter of Sir Robert Goussell, Knight, by *Elisabeth* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of Sir John Fitz Allan, Knight (by *Eleanor* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of John, Lord Maltravers) who was Brother of *Richard Fitz Allan*, Earl of Arundel, by *Eleanor* his Wife, Sister to *Henry*, the first Duke of Lancaster; whose Son, *Edmund Fitz Allan*, Earl of Arundel, married *Alice*, Sister and Heir of John, Earl of Warren, who derived his Descent from William, Earl Warren, and of Surry, who had to Wife *Gundreda*, Daughter of Baldwin, Earl of Flanders, who had also another Daughter, married to William, Duke of Normandy. And the said Sir William Brandon also derived his Descent from the King of Scotland, by the Marriage of John Fitz Allan, Earl of Arundel, with *Isabel*, Daughter of William de Albini, Earl of Arundel, who was the Grandson of William de Albini, Earl of Arundel, by *Alice*, Daughter of Alexander, King of Scots: And the said William was the Son of William, Earl of Arundel, by *Alice*, Widow of King Henry the First, and Daughter of Geffery, Earl of Brussels, and Duke of Brabant, by his Wife, who was a Daughter of the Emperor of Germany the 2d. So that, by this Match with the *Brandons*, the *Sidneys* are very nobly descended.

Sir William Sidney married<sup>u</sup> Anne, Daughter of Sir Hugh Pagenham, Knight, the Relict of Thomas Fitz William, Son and Heir of Sir Thomas Fitz William, and elder Brother of William, Earl of Southampton, who died without Issue in 34 Hen. VIII. She died before him, in the Reign of King Henry the Eighth, and was buried in St. Peter's Church, where a Monument, with her Effigies before a Desk, and a Book on it, was erected to her Memory. Out of her Mouth proceeds a Label, with these Words, *Sancta Trinitas, unus Deus, miserere nobis*. There is also the Figure of the Virgin Mary, with our Saviour on the Cross, and of two Sons, and seven Daughters. Underneath is this Inscription:

Of your Charitie pray for the Soule of Lady Anne Sidney, late Wife of Sir William Sidney, Knight, Steward of the Right Honorable Household of the most high and most renowned Prince Edward. The which Lady Anne deceased the XXII Daye of October, in the Yere of our Lord God M. CCCCC. XLIIII. On whose Soul Jesu have Mercy.

<sup>q</sup> Privat. Sigill. 33 H. VIII. & ex Evident. apud Penshurst.

<sup>r</sup> Philpot's Kent. p. 270. & Ex Tumulo apud Penshurst.

<sup>s</sup> Pat. 37 H. VIII. apud

Penshurst, deducing the Sydneys through the Brandons from William the Conqueror, &c.

<sup>t</sup> Ex Stemmate apud

<sup>u</sup> Ibid.



Only *Henry*, the eldest Son, survived to Maturity, and four Daughters. 1. *Mary*, wedded to Sir *William Dormer*, of *Ayscot* in *Buckinghamshire*, Knight, and Steward of the Honour of *Ampthill* in *Bedfordshire*\*, by whom he had Issue two Daughters; *Anne*, married to Sir *William Hungerford*, of *Farley* Castle in Com. *Wilts*, Knight, Son and Heir of *Walter*, Lord *Hungerford*, who had Issue by her three Daughters, his Coheirs; *Susan* married to *Michael Ernsey*, of *Cannings* in Com. *Wilts*, Esq; *Lucia* to Sir *John St. John*, of *Lidiard*, in the same County, Ancestor to the present Lord Viscount *St. John*; and *Jane* to Sir *John Kerne*, of the County of *Glamorgan*, Knight. The 2d Daughter of Sir *William Dormer*, was married to Don *Gomes Suares de Figuerou Cerdova*, Duke of *Feria* in *Spain*, by whom she had Issue Don *Lorenzo de Figueroa*, Duke of *Feria*, Ancestor to the Duke of *Feria* in *Spain*. There are Letters at *Penshurst*, to Sir *Henry Sidney* his Uncle, both from the Duke and Duchess of *Feria*, which will be published in the Collection of Letters.

2. *Lucy*, the Wife of Sir *James Harrington*, of *Exton* in *Rutlandshire*, Knight\*, who had Issue by her three Sons, Sir *John*, Sir *Henry*, and Sir *James Harrington*; and several Daughters. Sir *John Harrington*, the Eldest†, was created Lord *Harrington* of *Exton* in the 1st Year of King *James the First*, and had the Tutition of the Lady *Elisabeth*, Daughter to King *James*, till her Marriage with *Frederick*, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*; after which, going over with her, he died at *Wormes*, in *Germany*, 24 August, 1613. He left Issue, by *Anne* his Wife, Daughter and Heir to *Robert Kelway*, Esq; *John*, Lord *Harrington*, who died unmarried at *Kew*, in *Surry*, 27 February, 1613, and two Daughters; *Lucy*, married to *Edward Russel*, Earl of *Bedford*, but died without Issue by him, An. 1628. *Frances*, youngest Daughter, was married to Sir *Robert Chichester*, Knight of the *Bath*, who had Issue by her *Anne*, wedded to *Thomas*, Lord *Bruce*, Father to *Thomas*, Earl of *Ailesbury*, and dying 22 March, 1627, was buried at *Exton*.

Of the Daughters of Sir *James Harrington*, by *Lucy Sidney* his Wife, *Elisabeth*, the Eldest, was married to Sir *Edward Montagu* of *Boughton*, in Com. *Northamp*. Knight, by whom she had Issue six Sons; *Edward*, the first Lord *Montagu* of *Boughton*, Ancestor to *John*, the present Duke of *Montagu*. And, from Sir *Henry Montagu*, the third Son, are descended *Robert*, the present Duke of *Manchester*, *George*, Earl of *Hallifax*, and others. Also, from the sixth Son, Sir *Sidney Montagu*, is descended *John*, the present Earl of *Sandwich*, the honourable *Edward Wortley*, Esq; and others. *Frances*, 2d Daughter, was married to Sir *William Lee*, Knight.

*Margaret*, 3d Daughter, was wedded to Don *Benito Hispano*, of the Family of the Duke of *Fantago*, in *Spain*.

*Catharine*, 4th Daughter, was the Wife of Sir *Edward Dimock*, Knight, Champion of *England*.

*Mary*, 5th Daughter, was married to Sir *Edward Wingfield*, Knight.

*Mabell*, 6th Daughter, was wedded to Sir *Andrew Noell*, Knight, Ancestor to the right Honourable *Baptist Noel*, now Earl of *Gainsborough*.

*Sarah*, 7th Daughter, was the Wife of *Francis*, Lord *Hastings*, who died in the Life-time of his Father, *Henry*, Earl of *Huntingdon*, and Ancestor to the present Earl of *Huntingdon*.

*Theodosia*, youngest Daughter, was married to *Edward* Lord *Dudley*.

*Anne*, 3d Daughter of Sir *William Sidney*, was married to Sir *William Fitz William*, of *Milton*, in Com. *Northamp*. Knight, Treasurer of Wars in *Ireland*, and Lord Deputy of that Realm, in the Reign of Queen *Elisabeth*, and had Issue by her Sir *William Fitz William*, Knight, Ancestor to *John*, Earl *Fitz William*, of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and Baron of *Milton*, in the Kingdom of *England*. Also three Daughters, of which *Philippa*, the 2d, was married to Sir *Thomas Coningsby*, of *Hampton Court*, in *Herefordshire*, Knight, Ancestor to *Margaret*, the present Countess of *Coningsby*; and *Margaret*, the Youngest,

\* Ex Stemmate de Famil. Sydney, apud Penshurst. † Ex Stemmate de Harrington, & Inscript. Tumuli apud Exton in Com. Rutl. ‡ Pat. 1, Jac. 1, p. 14.



was wedded to *John Byron*, Esq; Son and Heir to Sir *John Byron* of *Clayton*, in the County of *Lancaster*, Knight, lineal Ancestor to *William*, now Lord *Byron*.

*Frances*, 4th Daughter of Sir *William Sidney*, was married to *Thomas Ratcliff*, Earl of *Suffex*, whom she survived, dying at *Bermondsey*, *March* the 9th, and was buried, in great Pomp, at *Westminster*, the 15th of *April*, 1589, leaving no Issue. By her last Will, bearing Date <sup>z</sup> 6 *December* 1588 (31 *Elis.*) she bequeathed her Body to be buried in the Mynster near unto the Collegiate Church of *St. Peter* in *Westminster*, and, if her Tomb should not be finished in her Life-time, her Executors should bestow 200*l.* or more, if Need required, for the Making thereof, with her Picture in Alabafter Stone, and other Garnishing; and a Superscription be engraven thereon, declaring her Name and Pedigree, and that she was the Wife of *Thomas*, late Earl of *Suffex*. She also willed that her Executors should purchase a perpetual Annuity of 20*l.* a Year, to the Use of a godly and learned Preacher, who for, and in her Name, should read two Lectures in Divinity, weekly, every Week, for ever, in the said Church, on such several Days, as no other Sermons or Lectures were to be read there. Which Preacher to be admitted, by the Dean of the said Church of *St. Peter* at *Westminster*, for the Time being. And that her Executors also bestow one-hundred Pounds amongst poor and godly Preachers in *London*, and the Suburbs thereof.

And also where, sithence the Decease of my said late Lord, the Earl of *Suffex*, I have, in Devotion and Charity, purposed to make, and erect some goodly and Godly Monument, for the Maintenance of good Learning. And, to that Intent, have yearly gathered, and deducted out of my Revenues, so much as conveniently I could. I do therefore now, in Accomplishment and Performance of the same my charitable Pretence, what, with the ready Money which I have so yearly reserved, and with a certain Portion of Plate, and other Things which I have purposely left, Will and ordein, that my Executors shall bestow and employ the Summe of five-thousand Pounds, over and besides all such my Goods, as in this my present Will remain unbequeathed, for the Ereccion of a new Colledge, in the Vniversity of *Cambridge*, to be called the *Lady Frances Sydney Suffex Colledge*, and Purchasing some competent Lands, for the Maintaining of a Master, and of ten Fellows, and twenty Schollars, Students there, according to the laudable Custom of the said Vniversity; if the said 5000*l.* and the Remainder of her Goods unbequeathed will thereunto extend. But if, by the Judgment of her Executors, it be thought not sufficient to erect and found a new College in her Name, and for the Maintenance thereof, as she intended, then that the said 5000*l.* &c. be employed for the Enlarging of *Clare Hall*, in the said Vniversity of *Cambridge*, and for Purchasing so much Lands, to be annexed to the said College, or Hall, for ever, for the Maintenance of so many Schollars there, according to the Rates, &c. then used, in the said Vniversity. Which Colledge, from thenceforth, shall be called, *Clare, and Lady Frances Sydney Suffex College, or Hall*.

She bequeaths to her welbeloved Nephew, Sir *Robert Sydney*, Knight, a standing Testerne of crimson Velvet, outer Vallance and inner Vallance, and Bases below, of crimson Velvet, all cut with Cloth of Silver, richly embroidered in Gold, with her Arms, and five Curtains of crimson Tafeta, striped with silver Lace, a Quilt of crimson Satten, embroidered with Scollop Shells of Cloth of Silver. Also much other rich Furniture, therein mentioned, being in several Rooms. Likewise all her Plate, Jewels, &c. not bequeathed, among which was a Cup of Gold, weighing, with the Cover, 26 Ounces, with a Porcupine standing on the Top. Also a Porcupine, with a Roll of Gold, set with Pearl, being her said Nephews Arms and hers. She bequeaths to Sir *William Fitz William*, Knight, 200*l.* and to her Sister, the Lady *Fitz William*, several Jewels and Furniture; and to her Nephew, *John Fitz William*, 40*l.* to make him a Chaine. To her Nephew, Sir *John Harrington*,

<sup>z</sup> Ex Registr. vocat. Leicester, in Cur. Prærog. Cant. qu. 82.



and his Lady, much Furniture and Jewels. To her Niece, the Lady *Montagu*, a trained Gown of black Velvet, embroidered all over with broken Trees, a large Kirtle, embroidered, and a Suit of Aglets enamelled, with a Suit of Buttons, with Garnets, and Pearls of 120. And to her Nephew, *Edward Montagu*, a Suit of Hangings, of the Story of *Holifernes* and *Judith*, and much rich Furniture, in the Chamber thereto belonging; also all her silver Plate belonging to her Cushion Cloath, and the Plate in her Cupboard in her Bedchamber, with a Pair of gilt Andirons, with great Bowls at the Feet, like Lions Heads.

She appoints Executors, her Nephew, *Sir John Harrington*, her Cousin, *Mr. Henry Bosvil*, her welbeloved Friend, *Mr. Bond*, Dr. in Divinity, for the great Virtue she had always conceived in him; her welbeloved Friend, *Mr. Robert Forth*, Dr. of the Civil Law, for the like great Virtue she had perceived of his fair Dealing; her good Friend, *Mr. Gabriel Goodman*, Dr. in Divinity, for his godly and virtuous Inclination. And, for the better Execution of this her last Will and Testament, she constitutes her honourable good Friend, the Earl of *Kent*, for the great Honour, Wisdom, Zeal in Religion and Virtue, which is noted in him, the chief and principal Executor of the same, to whom she bequeaths, as a special Legacy, her fair Bason and Ewer, wrought richly with Stories enamelled, weighing 100, 60, and 17 Ounces; and a Cup of Gold to be bought for him, to the Value of 100*l*. And appoints her good Friend, the Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury* Supervisor, and bequeaths to him several Pieces of her Plate.

The beforementioned *Sir William Sydney*, obtained in 6 *Edw. VI*, Letters Patent<sup>a</sup> under the Great Seal, for good Services done, in the Offices of Chamberlain, and Chief Steward of the Household, to him the King, in the Lifetime of his Father, King *Henry the Eighth*, to his Death, &c. Of all that his Mannor of *Penshurst*, with Lands called *Court Lands*, and *South Park*, in the Parishes of *Penshurst*, and *Chedingstone*, in Possession of *Anthony Nevill*, Esq; The Lands, called the *Green*, before the Gate, rough Garden, and the Close adjoining to the Churchyard of *Penshurst*, and divers Lands, called *Broad Meads*, and 11 Acres of Meadow in *Marchop*, late in the Tenure of *Sir Ralph Fane*, Knight, of *Felony* attainted and convicted, deceased. And all those Lands, called *Hawsgbafelde*, the *Hernrarie*, or lower Ground, the Horse Pasture, and the great Conyberry Field. And all those Lands near the Palace of *Penshurst*, abutting on Lands called *Cleydons*. And a Messuage called *Well Place*, and the nether Lodge, with two Gardens. And certain Edifices and Lands, called *Martens*, *Eylond*, and *Bishops Eylond*, late Parcel of the Park of *Penshurst*, *Leigh*, and *Chedingstone*, containing, by Estimation, 379 Acres. And those Lands called *Ashore*, late Parcel of the Park of *Penshurst*, lying in *Penshurst*, *Bidborough*, *Leigh*, and *Tunbridge*, containing 300 Acres; with 26 Acres, late Parcel of the Park of *Northlands*, and divers other in *Penshurst*, *Bidborough*, &c. particularly mentioned. And the Capital Messuage, or Palace of *Penshurst*, with the Park called *Northlands Park*, containing 250 Acres. Also all that Mannor of *Yenfelde*, alias *Enfelde*, with the Appurtenances, in the Tenure of *Sir George Harper*, Knight; the King's Lands and Rents in *Cephram* and *Hawden*, those Meadows and Pasture Lands, called *Lee Park*, alias, *the North Park of Leigh*, in the Parish of *Leigh*, containing 300 Acres. And the Advowson and Right of Patronage of the Church and Rectory of *Cowden*, with all their Appurtenances in the said Town and Parishes, or Hamlets, of *Penshurst*, *Chedingstone*, *Leigh*, *Bidborowe*, *Tunbridge*, *Spelhurst*, *Cephram*, *Hawden*, *Hever*, *Sevenocke*, and *Cowden*, or elsewhere, in the County of *Kent*, Parcel of the Possession of the said *Sir Ralph Fane*, Knight; and Free Warren, &c. in the Parks aforesaid. And all Messuages, Lands, Tenements, Commons, Woods, Reversions, Services, Advowsons, &c. and Rights of Patronage of Churches, Chapels, Chantries, Tithes, Glebes, Courts-leet, View of Frank Pledge, &c. Fisheries, &c.

<sup>a</sup> Pat 25, Apr. 6 E. VI, 1552, apud *Penshurst*.



and all other Rights thereto belonging. And all Trees, Woods, &c. all Reversions, Rents, and yearly Profits, &c. as fully, and in as ample Manner, as the said Sir *Ralph Fane*, Knight, the late Duke of *Buckingham*, the late Earl of *Wiltshire*, or any of them, or of their Ancestors, had and enjoyed the same; and as fully as the same came to the King, by Reason of the Attainder, &c. of the said Sir *Ralph Fane*, or to his late Father, by the Attainder of the said late Duke of *Buckingham*, or ought to have come. To hold to the said Sir *William Sidney*, his Heirs and Assigns, for ever. And the King, at the same Time, grants to the said Sir *William Sidney* all Goods, Chattels, Household Stuff, &c. which were then, or on the 2d of *October*, or afterwards, were in, or about the said Capital Mansion of *Penshurst*, or in the said Mannor, Parks, and Premises, and which were late the said Sir *Ralph Fane's*; to hold to the said Sir *William Sidney*, of the King's Gift, without Account. As also all the Issues, Rents, &c. from the Time of the Attainder of the said Sir *Ralph Fane*, viz. on the 27th of *January* last past.

He resided mostly at *Baynard's Castle*, in *London*, where he made his last Will, bearing <sup>b</sup> Date the 8th of *December*, 1548, the 2d of *Edward the Sixth*, and bequeathed his Body to be buried in the Chapel of our Lady, in the North Isle of the Collegiate Church of *St. Anthony*, in *London*, if he died in that City, or the Suburbs thereof; but if in any other Place, that then his Body should be buried in the Parish Church thereto belonging. By which Will it appears, that he was possessed of a great Estate in the Counties of *Kent*, *Sussex*, and *Southampton*, which he left to *Henry Sidney*, his Son and Heir, whom he constituted his Executor, with *Thomas White*, Esq; and orders them to give one-hundred Pounds to the Poor, at his Decease, and six Pounds, thirteen Shillings, and four Pence Yearly, for three Years, to be distributed as they think proper.

A raised Tomb, with an Arch over it, is erected to his Memory in the Chancel of the Church of *Penshurst*, and thereon engraved this Inscription:

Here lyethe Syr *Wylliam Sydney*, Knyght and Bannoret.  
Sometime Chamberlen, and after Steward to the moste  
Myghte & Famous Prynce Kynge *Edward* the VI<sup>th</sup>, in the  
Tyme of his being Prynce, & the fuste of that Name, being  
Lord of the Mannor of *Pensburste*. Who dyed the X<sup>th</sup> Day  
Of *February*, in the VII<sup>th</sup> Yere of the Reigne of Kynge *Ed-  
ward* the VI<sup>th</sup>, and in the Yere of our Lord God A M<sup>i</sup>. fyve  
Hundred fiftie & three. On whose Soule Iesu have Mercy.

On the Sides of this Inscription, are Escutcheons of Arms of his 4 Daughters and their Husbands; and, over them, is engraven Sir *William Dormer*, *Marie Sydney*, Sir *James Harrington*, *Lucy Sydney*, Sir *William Fitz William Anne Sydney*, Sir *Thomas Ratcliff-Sussex*, *Frances Sydney*.

Round the Edges of the Tomb, is

I knowe that my Redemer liveth, & that I the last Daye shall ryse from the Yearth, & shall be clad againe with myne owne Skinne, & in myne owne Fleshe I shall se God, whom I my selfe shal se, and myne Eyes shal loke upon, and none other. This Hope is layd up in my Bosome.

*Henry Sydney*, his only surviving Son, was, from his Infancy <sup>c</sup>, bred and brought up with King *Edward the Sixth*, who treated him with great Familiarity, even as a Companion, and was many Times his Bedfellow, having the Advantage of his Father's being Chamberlain and Steward to that Prince.

On the Accession of King *Edward* to the Crown, he was then reputed, for his Virtues, fine Composition of Body, Gallantry, and Liveliness of Spirit, the

<sup>b</sup> Ex Registr. vocat Tash, qu. 14, in Cur Prætog. Cant. Castrat.

<sup>c</sup> Hollinshed's Chron. p. 1548, &



most compleat young Gentleman in the Court <sup>d</sup>, and for the singular Love, and intire Affection, that virtuous and learned Prince had ever shewn him, he was made one of the four principal Gentlemen of his Privy-Chamber. And such Delight had he in his modest and ingenious Conversation and Company, as he rarely gave him Leave to be absent from him, and drew his last Breath in his Arms at *Greenwich*.

On the 11th of *Oct.* 1550, he <sup>e</sup> was knighted, with the great *William Cecil* (after Lord *Burghley*) and *Henry Nevile*, all three of the Privy-Chamber to the Sovereign; and, immediately after, was sent Ambassador into *France*, about very important Affairs, being at that Time not fully 1 and 20 Years of Age <sup>f</sup>, and performed his Charge with that singular Spirit, Wisdom, and Dexterity, as gained him great Commendation.

In 4 *Edw.* VI, he was <sup>g</sup> constituted chief Cup-Bearer to the King for Life; and, 21 *Feb.* that Year, obtained the <sup>h</sup> Office of chief Cypherer to the King for Life, with a Fee of 50 Marks *per Ann.* and Power to appoint a Deputy. Also, in the same Year, 4 *Jan.* 4 *Edw.* VI, he and Sir *Henry Gates* were <sup>i</sup> Challengers at Tilt and Tournay, against the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, and 17 others, who ran six Courses before the King, and were commended for their Accomplishments therein.

In 5 *Edw.* VI, bearing the Title of one of the Gentlemen of the Sovereign's Privy-Chamber, he <sup>k</sup> accompanied the Marquis of *Northampton*, in his Legation with the Habit of the Order of the Garter, &c. to the *French King Henry the Second*. After his Return, he was married to the Lady *Mary Dudley*, eldest Daughter of *John Earl of Warwick*, then Lord High-Steward of the King's most honourable Household, and Lord-President of the King's Majesty's most honourable Privy-Council; which Titles he bears in the Indenture of Covenants <sup>l</sup> made with Sir *William Sydney*, Knight, concerning this Marriage; dated in *May*, 5 *Edw.* VI, whereby the said Earl of *Warwick* covenants to convey, *inter alia*, the Mannor, Mansion-House, and Park of *Halden* in *Kent*, to the said Sir *Henry Sydney*, and the Lady *Mary Dudley* (Daughter of the said Earl) and to the Heirs of their two Bodyes, Remainder to Sir *Henry Sydney*, and the Heirs of his Body.

On the 10th of *April*, in 7 *Edw.* VI, the King, in Consideration <sup>m</sup> of the good, true, faithful, and acceptable Services, of his beloved Servant, Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight, one of the 4 principal Gentlemen of his Privy-Chamber, confers on him, during Life, the Office of Chief Steward of his Mansion and Mannor of *Otford*, in the County of *Kent*, with the Gardens, Orchards, &c. As also Chief Steward of the Honour of *Otford*, and Bailiff of the Mannors of *Otford*, *Gravesend*, and *Mylton*: And, the Office of Steward of his Woods of the Honour of *Otford*, and of the great Park of *Otford*: And, of the Office of Steward of the Mannor of *Swanescomb*, in the said County of *Kent*: Which Office *George Brook*, Knight, Lord *Cobham*, lately had for Term of his Life, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of his Court of Augmentations and Revenues, dated at *Westminster*, 18 *Jan.* 3 *Edw.* VI, and surrendered to the said Sir *Henry Sydney*, to be cancelled in *Chancery*. And the King further grants to the said Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight, the Office of Chief Steward of his Mansion of *Knoll*, in the said County of *Kent*, with all Gardens, Orchards, &c. thereto belonging, as also Chief Steward of the Park of *Knoll*, with the Herbage and Paunage, and all Woods and Underwoods, &c. within the Mannor of *Knoll*. And the Office of Sub-Steward of the Mannor of *Knoll*, &c. which Sir *Robert Southwell* held for Term of his Life, with all Advantages, Commodities, and Emoluments thereunto belonging, and all Powers to appoint Deputyes to officiate for him; for which he was to receive, as his Wages, of Steward of the Mansion of *Otford*, 10 *d.* *per Diem*; and of the Gardens and Orchards, 4 *d.* *per*

<sup>d</sup> Hollinshed's Chron. p. 1548, & Castrat. <sup>e</sup> Burnet's Hist. Reformation in King Edward's Journal. <sup>f</sup> Hollinsh. præd. <sup>g</sup> Pat. 4 *Edw.* VI. p. 1. <sup>h</sup> Bill. Sign. 4 *Edw.* VI. <sup>i</sup> King Edward's Journal, præd. <sup>k</sup> Ashmole's Order of the Garter, p. 394. <sup>l</sup> Ex Orig. Cart. 5 *Edw.* VI. apud Penshurst. <sup>m</sup> Ex Orig. Pat. 7 *Edw.* VI. apud Penshurst.



*Diem* ; and for Chief Steward of the Honour of *Otford*, 6 l. 13 s. 4 d. and for the Office of Bailiff of the Mannor of *Otford*, 2 d. per Day ; and for *Gravesend* and *Mylton*, 4 d. per Day ; and for the Office of Steward of the Woods at *Otford*, 2 d. per Day ; and for the Gardens and Orchards, &c. 4 d. per Day ; and for the Office of Steward of the great Park at *Otford*, 6 l. 3 s. 4 d. and for the Office of Sub-Steward of the Honour of *Otford*, with the Mannor and View of frank Pledge, Courts-Leet, and Law-Days, the Fee of 6 l. per Ann. and for Sub-Steward of the Mannor of *Swanescomb*, 40 s. per Ann. And for the Office of Chief Steward of the Mansion of *Knoll*, and all the Gardens, Orchards, &c. 60 s. and 10 d. per Ann. and for the Office of Steward of the Park of *Knoll*, 6 l. 1 s. 8 d. per Ann. and of the Office of Steward of the Woods and Underwoods, within the Mannors of *Knoll*, 30 s. per Ann. and for the Office of Steward and Sub-Steward of the Courts, and View of frank Pledge to the said Mannor of *Knoll* belonging, 60 s. per Ann. To which Grant, Sir *Richard Sackvyle*, Knight (Chancellor of the Court of Augmentations) was a Witness ; at *Westminster*, 10 April, 7 Edw. VI.

18 May, 7 Edw. VI, he had a Licence to retain, over and above his menial Servants, fifty Persons, Gentlemen and Yeomen, and to give them his Livery Badge or Cognizance. And that the said fifty Persons, so retained, shall be discharged, and exonerated of all Forfeitures, Losses, or Penalties to the King, his Heirs, and Successors, by Force of any Statute, &c. Also pardons the said Sir *Henry Sydney* all and every Trespass, Forfeiture, Penaltie, Summe or Summes of Money owing, or whatever was by him done or perpetrated, since the 25th of January, in the 1st Year of his Reign.

In the same Year<sup>o</sup>, 4 July, 7 Edw. VI, (and but three Days before the King's Death) he obtained a Grant of the Mannor and Borough of *Wotton-Basfet* in *Wiltshire* ; and was undoubtedly in such Esteem with that good King, and so close an Attendant upon him, that he died in his Arms, as beforementioned ; which it may justly be presumed was a great Grief to him, who was so highly in his Favour, that, if he had lived, his eminent Abilities could not failed to have advanced him to the highest Posts and Honours.

From whence I conjecture, that his Sorrow for the King his Master induced him to retire to his Seat at *Penshurst*, whereby he was not involved in the Calamities which befel the Duke of *Northumberland*, his Father-in-Law : And it's evident, Queen *Mary* was so well satisfied with his Conduct, that she conferred on him several Marks of her Favour.

In the 1st Year of her Reign, 28 May<sup>p</sup>, she grants to him the Wardship and Marriage of *Robert Pakenham* ; and, on the 8th of November following, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal, she<sup>q</sup> ratifies and confirms the several Letters Patent granted to him, and his Father, Sir *William Sydney*, by King *Edward the Sixth* ; particularly the Letters Patent of 25 April, 6 Edw. VI, to Sir *William Sydney*, then deceased, of the Mannor of *Penseherste*, &c. as also, Grants of Lands in other Counties in Fee, by Letters Patent, dated 23 June, 7 Edw. VI. Also recites other Letters Patent of 21 Feb. 4 Edw. VI, of the Office of Chief Cypherer to the said Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight, then *Henry Sydney*, Esq;. And of 3 April, 7 Edw. VI, to Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight, one of the four Knights of his Majesty's private Chamber, and one of the principal Gentlemen of the said Chamber, of the Office of Otter Hunter, for Life, in Reversion. And other Letters Patents of 10 April, 7 Edw. VI, of the Office of Keeper of the Capital Messuage or Mansion of the Mannor of *Otford* in *Kent*, with the Appurtenances ; and of the Office of Chief Steward of the Honour of *Otford*, Bailiff of the Mannor of *Otford*, Keeper of the great Park of *Otford*, and Sub-Steward of the Honour of *Otford*, and Steward of the Mannor of *Swannescomb*, and Keeper of the Capital Messuage of *Knoll*, and of all Gardens and Orchards thereto belonging, and Keeper of the Park of *Knoll*, and of all Woods and Underwoods in the Mannor of *Knoll*, and Chief Steward of the said Mannor, to hold the said Offices for Life. All

<sup>n</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

<sup>o</sup> Bill. Sign. 7 Edw. VI.

<sup>p</sup> Bill. Sign. 1 Mar.

<sup>q</sup> Ibid. which



which Offices the Queen confirmed to the said Sir Henry. Also recites other Letters Patent of 22 April, 6 Edw. VI, of a Demise to the said Sir Henry Sidney, his Executors, &c. of the Mannor of *Marshfelde*, &c. in *Glocestershire*, for 39 Years, at 80 l. per Ann. Rent: Likewise other Letters Patent of 20 Feb. 7 Edw. VI, of the Mannor of *Weston*, with the Appurtenances in *Suffolk*, to him, his Executors, &c. for 31 Years, at the Rent of 91 l. 7 s. 1 d. Also other Letters Patent, 8 April, 7 Edw. VI, of the Park called the *Little Park* of *Oxford* (then disparkt) and of all Lands, &c. for 30 Years, at the Rent of 20 l. per Ann. Also other Letters Patent of 23 April, 7 Edw. VI, of the Mannor of *Tibourne*, with its Appurtenances, in the County of *Middlesex*, and the Scite and Capital Messuage, heretofore in the Tenure of *Richard Jaquett*, &c. for 35 Years, at the Rent of 16 l. 11 s. 8 d. all which Leases the Queen confirmed. And, it may be presumed, that, the said *Richard Jaquett* holding the said Mannor of *Tibourne*, wherein Felons, &c. are now, and for Time of out Mind, have been executed, the Name of the Executioner has corruptly been called *Jack Ketch*.

In 1 and 2 Ph. & Mar. (4 May) he<sup>r</sup> with *John Somerfield* obtained a Grant of the 3d Part of the Mannor of *Hales Owen*, in Com. *Salop*.

On 28 April, 2 and 3 Ph. & Mar. he<sup>s</sup> was constituted Vice-Treasurer, and General Governor of all the King and Queen's Revenues in the Kingdom of *Ireland*. He embarked for that Kingdom, with *Thomas Ratcliff*, Lord *Fitz-Walter*, Lord Deputy of that Realm, (who married *Frances*, his Sister, and was after Earl of *Suffex*) and arrived at *Dublin* on *Whitsunday*, 1556. Sir *Henry Sidney*, brought over with him 25000 l. to provide against the *Scots* Islanders, and the *Irish* Rebels. On the 1st of *July*, they marched to *Ulster* against the *Scots*, and on the 18th following, defeated them, with the Loss of 200 slain on the Spot; in which Engagement, Sir *Henry Sidney* behaved with the greatest Valour, killing *James Mac Connel*, one of their principal Leaders, with his own Hand.

On 12 Nov. 1557<sup>r</sup>, Sir *Henry Sidney*, Treasurer of Wars, and Sir *Hugh Curvin*, Lord Chancellor, were constituted by Patent, dated at *Westminster*, Lords Justices of *Ireland*, and were sworn at *Christ-Church*, on Sunday the 5th of *December*, and Sir *John Stanley*, the Marshal, delivered them the Sword, with whom it was left for that Purpose. But on the 6th of *February* following<sup>w</sup>, Sir *Henry Sidney*, by the Queen's Command, and under her Commission, bearing Date the 18th of *January*, was sworn sole Lord Justice; the King and Queen (as is expressed in<sup>s</sup> the Patent) having especiall Trust and Confidence in the approved Fidelity, Wisdom, and Discretion of their trusty and wel beloved Councillor, Sir *Henry Sidney*; whereupon, he immediately attackt *Arthur O Molloy*, Chief of *Fercalia*, then in Rebellion, and overrunning his Country made *Theobald O Molloy* Governor thereof. After which by a Cess (or Tax) in the Pale, he furnisht the Forts of *Maryburgh*, and *Philipsburgh*, with Provisions<sup>r</sup>. And on his Return to *Dublin*, made Proclamation, that no Corn should be carried out of the *English* Pale, which with other good Regulations, and Receiving the Submission of *O Reyley*, was as much as could be performed in so short Space, to advance the *English* Interest, surrendering the Sword to *Thomas* Earl of *Suffex*, the 27th of *April*, 1558.

But the said Earl of *Suffex*, leaving the Kingdom the same Year<sup>r</sup>, he reinstated Sir *Henry Sidney* Lord Justice, till his Return the 10th of *November* following.

On the 6th of *June*, in the 1st Year of Queen *Elisabeth*, he was constituted Vice-Treasurer, and Treasurer of Wars in *Ireland*, and to receive the usual Salary from the Death of Queen *Mary*, and sworn of her Privy-Council; also on 29 Dec. the same Year, was constituted Justice and Governor of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, in Consideration of the Loyalty, Wisdom, and Industry of her be-

<sup>r</sup> Bill. Sign. 1 & 2 Ph. & Mar. <sup>s</sup> Patent & 3 Ph. & Mar. p. 13. in dorso. <sup>t</sup> Cox's Hist. of Ireland, p. 303. <sup>u</sup> Ib. p. 305. <sup>w</sup> Ib. p. 336. <sup>x</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

<sup>y</sup> Cox, p. 306, & 307. <sup>z</sup> Borlace's Reduction of Ireland, p. 120, and Cox, p. 307.



loved Councillor, Sir Henry Sydney <sup>a</sup>, as Queen *Elisabeth* recites in her Patent; and that she appointed him with the Advice of her Council.

In 2 *Elif.* he <sup>b</sup> was constituted Lord President of the Marches of *Wales*; after which, the same Year, he went over to his Government of *Ireland*, <sup>c</sup> where though he continued but a short Time, yet, by his prudent Demeanor, <sup>d</sup> he obliged *O Neal*, who had disclaimed the *English* Jurisdiction, to a Submission to her Majesty, and to continue quiet, till he resigned to the Earl of *Suffex*, who <sup>e</sup> took on him the Government, 30th of *August* the same Year.

In 5 *Elif.* <sup>f</sup> desiring his Discharge for all Disbursements he had been at on Account of his being Vice-Treasurer, and Receiver-General of the Revenues in *Ireland*, and Treasurer of Wars; the Queen, the 8th of *June*, commissions *Thomas* Earl of *Suffex*, Lord Deputy, *Hugh*, Arch-Bishop of *Dublin*, Chancellor, and others, to examine and state his Accounts; and on sufficient Proof thereof, to discharge him the said Sir Henry Sydney, his Heirs and Executors, against the Queen, her Heirs and Successors.

Also in the said 5 *Elif.* 1562, on the War in *France*, between the *Princes* of the *Blood* and the *Guises*, the Queen entertaining some Jealousies that the *English* would be involved therein. And being informed that the *Guises*, to gain *Anthony* of *Bourbon*, King of *Navar* had promised to procure him in Marriage, the Queen of *Scots*, with the Kingdom of *England* for her Portion. Also, that through the Help of *Spain*, and Interposition of the Pope, the then Marriage of the King of *Navar*, should be dissolved, his Wife being a Heretick; for which Cause also Queen *Elisabeth* should be dispossessed of her Throne. Whereupon as *Camden* writes <sup>\*</sup>, she dispatched to *France*, Sir Henry Sydney, a Person of approved Abilities, and great Reputation, to Fathom this Business, and persuade the Heads of each Party to an Accommodation. But Things were now gone too far to admit of any Remedy; therefore Sydney returning out of *France*, he was immediately sent to the Queen of *Scots*, to adjourn the Interview which she had desired with the Queen of *England*, till the ensuing Year, or till the Wars of *France* were ended.

In the same Year, *Ambrose Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick* (whose Sister Sir Henry had married) being elected one of the Knights of the Garter, the Queen commissions the Duke of *Norfolk* her Lieutenant to install Sir Henry Sidney in his Place, the Earl being beyond the Seas, on the Queen's Affairs, as the Commission sets forth; and that her Majesty, by her special License, had appointed Sir Henry Sydney to be his Deputy. And accordingly he was installed with great Magnificence; Mr. *Ashmole* having <sup>b</sup> observed, that the Mantle was born before him by Garter, in the same Manner as is used to Knights, personally installed, and that he also proceeded before the Alms Knights, the only Instance he had met with, when a Proxy was installed.

The Year following <sup>c</sup>, Sir Henry was himself elected a Knight of that most Noble Order, with *Charles the Ninth*, the *French* King, and the Earl of *Bedford*, and was installed with them, on 14 *May*, 6 *Elif.* His Plate is in the 8th Stall in *St. George's Chapel* at *Windsor*, wherein he is stiled, *The thrice valiant Knight, Deputy of the Realm of Ireland, and President of the Council in Wales*, 1564.

On 13 *Oct.* 7. *Elif.* (retaining his Place of Lord President of *Wales*) he was <sup>k</sup> again constituted Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, with Powers to confer all Offices in that Kingdom, except the Offices of Chancellor, Treasurer, Sub-Treasurer, Chief Justice of the *Bench*, Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*, and Master of the *Rolls*. And to present to all Ecclesiastical Benefices, viz. Vicaridges, Parsonages, Prebends, Chancellors, Deans, and all other Dignities whatsoever, except Arch-Bishops, and Bishops. On the 13th of *January* following <sup>l</sup> he land-

<sup>a</sup> Ex Origin. Pat. 1. *Elif.* apud Penhurst.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. Cambr. p. 400.

<sup>c</sup> Borlace præd. p. 121.

<sup>d</sup> Cox, p. 312.

<sup>e</sup> Ib. p. 313.

<sup>f</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penhurst.

<sup>g</sup> Hist. of Q. *Elif.* in Hist. of

Eng. V. 2. p. 317.

<sup>h</sup> Appendix no. 53. in *Ashmole's* Order of the Garter.

<sup>i</sup> Regist. Garter. p.

377, 378.

<sup>j</sup> Ib. p. 324, 325.

<sup>k</sup> Ex Origin. Pat. 7 *Elif.* apud Penhurst.

<sup>l</sup> Cox's Hist. of Ire-

land, p. 317.



ed at *Dublin*, and was received with great Joy (as my Author<sup>m</sup> relates) being a Person, whose excellent Government that Kingdom had long experienced. When he received the Sword, he made an eloquent Speech, setting forth what a precious Thing good Government is, and how all Realms, Commonwealths, Cities, and Countries do flourish and prosper, where it's maintained.

He told them<sup>a</sup> also, ' What a continual Care the Queen's Highness hath had, and yet hath, not only for the good Guiding and Ruling of the Realm of *England*, but also of *Ireland*, which she earnestly desireth and wisheth to be preserved, as well in Peace as War. That she had made great Choice, from Time to Time, of the most grave, wise, and experienced Councillors for the one, and the most valiant, skilful, and expert Men of Arms for the other. That, both in Peace and Wars, the publick State of the Commonwealth, and every Member therein, might be conserved, defended, and kept in Safety, under her Government. And, for the Performance thereof, her Majesty, besides the Revenues of the Crown of *Ireland*, did Yearly, far above any of her Progenitors, expend, of her own Coffers out of *England*, many thousand Pounds. All which her excessive Expences, and continual Cares, she made the less Account of, so that her Realm and Subjects of *Ireland* might be preserved, defended, and governed.

' That, notwithstanding her Majesty might have made better Choice of many others, who were better able to hold her Place in this Realm, both for Honour, Wisdom, and Experience, yet her Pleasure was to cast this heavy Charge and Burden upon him: Which he was the more unwilling to take upon him, because, the greater the Charge was, the more unable and weak he was to sustain the same. Nevertheless, being in good Hope, and well promised of her Highness's Favour and Countenance in his well Doings, and having his Confidence in them, her Highness's Councillors, associated to him, to join, aid, and assist him in his Government, he was, and is, the more ready to take the Sword in Hand, in Hope that his Government shall be to the Glory of God, the Honour of her Majesty, the Benefit of the Commonwealth, and Preservation of the whole Realm.

' Closing his Speech with his earnest Request to the said Lords present, for their Aiding and Assisting him in her Majesty's Service.'

His Instructions were signed by the Queen 5 *October*, 1565, and were to this Effect: *First*, That a Privy Council be named and established, and sworn before the Lord Deputy, as usual, and he was directed to consult and advise with them, and they were to respect and reverence his Quality, and both were to conspire the Good of the Realm. That Religion, and Knowledge of the Scriptures, should be propagated, and encouraged by Doctrine, Example, &c. And the Church Lands and Estates preserved from Waste and Alienation. That the Law be administered uprightly, and insufficient Judges and Officers removed, and a Sheriff placed in every County. That the Army be kept orderly, not oppressing the Subject; that Musters be once a Month, and Enquiry made, whether the Soldiers be *Englishmen* or not, and how paid. And that Care be taken of the Revenues of the Crown.

The Historian<sup>o</sup> relates, that he found the Kingdom almost ruined, by intestine Fews and Dissensions; that the *English* Pale was overrun with Thieves and Robbers; the Countryman so poor, he had neither Horse, Arms, nor Victuals for himself, and the Soldiers so beggarly, that they could not live without oppressing the Subject, and were grown insolent, loose, and idle, and suspected of the State, by their Marriage with the *Irish*. Also, as to Religion, there was but small Appearance of it, the Churches being uncovered, and the Clergy scattered, and scarce the Being of a God known to those ignorant and barbarous People.

<sup>a</sup> Hooker, p. 111.

<sup>a</sup> Cox, p. 318.

<sup>o</sup> Ib. p. 319.



These Disorders the Lord Deputy remedied as fast as possible, but *Shane O-neal's* Rebellion was the most troublesome to him; and the Queen sent Sir *Francis Knolls*, her Vicechamberlain, to confer with him about his Suppression<sup>p</sup>. He arrived at *Dublin* the 7th of *May*, and they resolved the Service should be performed the following Winter, and that the necessary Preparations should be made for it against that Time; the Army then not exceeding 1200 Men, until Colonel *Randolph*, with 700 Soldiers, was sent from *England* to *Derry*, and there they intrenched, till Sir *Henry Sydney* came to them.

In the History of *Ireland*, his prudent Conduct, and indefatigable Industry, in suppressing *O-neal* (who was killed 2 *June*, 1567, and his Head sent to the Lord Deputy) is fully related<sup>q</sup>, and that he returned to *Dublin* with the Applause of the People, and there received the Submission of the *O Reyles*, by Indenture, on 28 *November*. And, about the same Time, beautified the Castle of *Dublin* with stately additional Buildings, which yet remain.

*Camden* relates<sup>r</sup>, ' That *Ulster* was resettled in a peaceable Condition; but *Munster* was, in the mean Time, under violent Commotions, occasioned by the unhappy Rivalry of two Kinsmen, the Earls of *Ormond*, and *Desmond*, who could not agree about the Extent of their Jurisdiction; insomuch that the Matter came to a Battle near *Dromelin*, and it was argued before the Council Board in *England*. But, the Case being intricate, they were referred to the Lord Deputy in *Ireland*, where the Evidence and Witnesses were near at Hand. But as they were upon the Level, as to Power and Interest, and had Spirits formed in the same Mould, so they resolved the Matter should be decided, not by the best Law, but the longest Sword. Sir *Henry Sydney* interposed his Authority and Forces, but *Ormond*, willing to set the better Face on his Cause, procured the Lord Deputy to be impeached as a Favourer of *Desmond*.'

Sir *Richard Cox* gives this Account of those Affairs: ' That, howsoever his good Services were relished in *Ireland*, where the Fruits of them were felt and perceived, yet, in *England*, they were so little regarded, that no Mention was made of them in any of the publick Dispatches; but, on the Contrary, the publick Letters, to the Lord Deputy, were full of Reprimands and and sharp Reflections, on Account of the Insolencies of the Earl of *Desmond*. Therefore, he at length prevailed to get Licence to go for *England*, and carried with him the Earl of *Desmond*, the Baron of *Dungannon*, *O Connor Sligo*, *O Carol*, and others. When he came to *Hampton Court*, with 200 Gentlemen in his Train, it happened that the Queen was looking out at the Window, and seeing them, was surprised thereat, until she was told, it was the Lord Deputy of *Ireland*; and then she replied<sup>s</sup>, *It was well enough; for he had two of the best Offices of the Kingdom*. And being come in, he was well received by the Queen, but, after a While, was told by some of the Courtiers, *That the Scuffle in Ulster was not worthy to be called a War, since the principal Rebel (Shane O Neal) was but a Beggar and an Out-law*. But the Earl of *Desmond* and *O Connor* were sent to the Tower, and Sir *John of Desmond* was fetched from *Ireland*, and imprisoned in the same Place.

It has been already mentioned, that the Earl of *Ormond* impeached the Lord Deputy of being partial to the Earl of *Desmond*, though without any just Cause, as is explained by Sir *Henry Sydney's* Letter to Mr. Secretary *Cecil*, dated 7 *April*, 1566. The Whole shews an uncommon Integrity, and true Honour, and will be printed in the Collection, with the Claims of those Earls; but I shall here recite one Paragraph of it:

' I assure you, Sir, I woulde withall my Harte, that you knewe and felt all my Thoughtes and Conceits that I have of any Man, or any Matter, touching the Service in this Lande (so simple is myne Intendement) as sensible as I feale them my self. I have great Cause to rejoyce, that my ill composed

<sup>p</sup> Cox, p. 321.

<sup>q</sup> Ibid. p. 326.

<sup>r</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. 2, p. 410.

<sup>s</sup> Hooker, p. 118.  
Lettres



‘ Lettres found foe gracious Acceptation. I ment well, writte truly, an, as I  
 ‘ thought. I will never unpressid, upon my Alleageaunce, deale in the great Mat-  
 ‘ ters of my Lord of *Ormounde*, untill another Chauncellor come, or some other  
 ‘ Commissioner, out of *Englande*, to be joyned with me, for the Hearinge and  
 ‘ Determyninge of that Cause; for, howe indifferentlye soever I shall deale, I  
 ‘ knowe it will not be thought favorably enoughe on my Lord of *Ormounds*  
 ‘ Side. And I assure you, Sir, if I served under the cruellest Tirant that ever  
 ‘ tyrانىsed, and knewe him affected on the one or the other Side, in a Matter  
 ‘ betweene Partie and Partie referred to my Judgement, I woulde rather offend  
 ‘ his Affection, and stand to his Misericord, then offende myne owne Conscience,  
 ‘ and stande to Godes Judgement. Moche more I dare be boulde uprightly to  
 ‘ doe, servinge and lyvinge under so christian and just a Princes as I doe. And  
 ‘ before God, Sir, this I protest to you, that I write not this in Prejudicacion of  
 ‘ my Lord of *Ormounds* Cause, for I knowe not, nor conjecture not, but that it  
 ‘ may as well fall out, on my Lord of *Ormounds* Side, as on the others; but I  
 ‘ finde that I am forejudgid of. Therefore I beseeche you, Sir, let me have  
 ‘ some other, then any yet is here, to be joyned with me, before I shall enter  
 ‘ into the Discussion of the Matter, as well for the finall Sentensinge of it, with-  
 ‘ out further Appeale, as for Advoydinge Infamie to my selfe.’

In another Letter to Secretary *Cecil*, dated 17 *October*, 1569, he gives the State of the Controversy, which the Reader will also find in the Collection of Letters. And in one to him, 14 *February*, 1569, he sets forth his miserable Condition, by being Lord Deputy.

It is to the Glory of Queen *Elisabeth*’s Reign, that she had the Wisdom to distinguish and employ Persons of eminent Abilities, Integrity, and Honour; and there cannot be a greater Instance of it, than in her Choice of Sir *Henry Sydney*, whose Letters to her Majesty, to her Council, the great *Cecil*, *Walsingham*, and others of her Ministry, shew how true a Judgment he made of Men, and of all Affairs under his Cognisance; as well as his Piety, prudent Conduct, and all moral Virtues, which are fully manifested therein; and will be a lasting Monument of his great Worth, and a laudable Example to Posterity. Which Letters giving a more perfect Account of the *Irish* Affairs, during his Government, than as yet hath been published, I shall observe from them, what is further memorable of his Character and Conduct, as also from *Hollinshed*’s Chronicle, wrote by *Edmund Molineux*, Esq; his Secretary.

He was four several Times Lord Justice of *Ireland*’, and three Times, by special Commission, sent Lord Deputy out of *England*. In his first Deputation, he suppressed the Rebellion of *Shane O Neal*, and floored the Top of the Castle of *Dublin* with the Arch Rebel’s Head. In his second, he suppressed the most dangerous Insurrection, begun and long continued by some of the *Butlers*. In the third, the Commotion of the Earl of *Clanricard*, and his two graceless Sons, *Shane*, and *Ulick Bourke*.

Immediately after his 1st Arrival, he caused the old Statutes of *Coine* and *Liv-  
 verie* (the antient festering Sore of that Country) to be revived and duly executed against several Persons of Note, who were therewith sharply touched. Whereupon followed, a long Time after, great Good to the Nation in general, and a speedy Reliefe to the poor distressed People of that Realm. On his Advice, the remoter Provinces were governed by Presidents, after the Imitation of the Marches of *Wales*; giving his Opinion, that there could not be either a better, or more expedite and easie Means to reform and civilize that barbarous Country, than by Universal Justice, administred amongst them, whereby the Poor might be delivered from the antient Exactions and Tyranny of their Lords, by whom they were daily oppressed.

He both devised, and saw executed, the Distribution of the *Irish* Countries

† Calstrated Sheets of *Hollinshed*, p. 1548, & Seq.



into Shires, whereby ensued the Currency of the Queens Writts, which before were not regarded. He advanced and increased the Revenues of the Crown, by Impost upon Wines, Compositions with the *Irish*, for Rents and Services, and other commendable Means; as out of Casualties, creating Rents certain, of 10,000 *l.* Yearly. And intended, and would have brought a far greater Increase, if he had not met with Opposition, from the Chiefs there, who spared neither Money nor Interest, to prevent his Bringing the Kingdom to bear its own Charges, which he was fully intent upon. He repaired the Castle of *Dublin*, which for a long Time before was ruinous, and of no Account, filled only with mechanical Persons, and some of worse Sort. But he left it a convenient and proper Mansion, for the Governor to reside in; and has ever since been so applied.

He built the Bridge of *Athlone*, over the River *Shanon*, arched it with Free stone, strong Wall and Battlement, and made it of that Strength, Spaciousness, and Breadth, as greatly benefited the Country; the Swiftness of the Stream, over which it was built, being not before passable. And thereby a Passage was opened out of the *English* Pale, into *Conaught*, and the Rebels more daunted and appalled, and kept in greater Awe and due Obedience, than any Policie before used. He likewise began the Walling and Fortifying the Town of *Carrigfergus* in *Ulster*, re-edified the Town of *Athenrie* in *Conaught*, and strengthened that of *Athlone* with Gates and other Fortifications. Also laid the Foundation and Plan of the Bridge of *Catherlogh*; made a strong Gaole at *Molingar*, and walled the same with Stone, to imprison Rebels, Thieves and other Malefactors. Likewise begun many other needfull and necessary Works in other Places, tending to the Advancement of the Service, which he left for his Successors to finish.

He found the Records of the Kingdom in an open Place, subject to Wind, Rain, and all Weather; and so neglected, that they were taken for common Uses. Whereupon with great Care and Diligence, he caused them to be perused and sorted, and placed within the Castle of *Dublin*, in a Room well boarded, with a Chimney for a Fire, so that neither by the Moisture of the Walls, or any other Means, they could receive Prejudice. And several Divisions were made, for laying them separate; and one of Discretion and Skill, appointed to look after them, with an Assignment for his Labour. He also caused the Statutes and Ordinances of the Realm, which lay hid, and hardly known (but kept in Safety) to be searched, surveyed, and viewed, by Men of the best Learning, Skill and Discretion, he could select, giving them express Charge, to peruse all, and collect so many thereof, as they should think necessary, and expedient to be made publick. Which being perused, he caused them to be printed, that every one might know the Laws and Statutes of his Country, and obey them. And having, by Experience, found Defects in the Administration of Justice, by Reason of Kindred, Affinity, Corruption, Partiality, &c, he earnestly applied to the Queen, and her Council, to have *English* sent over to supply the chief Places of Justice. And for the better Increase of her Majesty's Revenues, he prayed the like might be sent in the Rooms of the Attorney and Solicitor General.

He had the greatest Desire to advance the Publick Service, and esteemed all those who were of that Mind. Wheresoever he sojourned, he had that gallant Behaviour and Comeliness of Person, as gained him the Hearts of many, and such universal Esteem of all Sorts of People to him, that they were ever desirous of his Abode with them. He was a perfect Orator, having such Readiness in Speech, flowing Eloquence, sweet Delivery, and excellent Memory (for he rarely forgot any Thing, he either read or heard) as he was specially observed to have no Equal. He was curious in the Stile of his Letters, or whatever he committed to Writing; yet, when he had given Instructions for some Matters to be written, and brought to him to sign, which he found couched in a Manner, he did not approve of, he would not publicly disgrace the  
the



the Writer, but encouraged him to mend his Fault, willing him to remember better.

He had a singular Gift in Dispatch of common Causes, which induced all People to desire to have them heard before him. And to satisfy their Humours and Affections, or more compleatly to perform the full Measure of his Charge, and being desirous of Hearing and Helping all he could, he applied himself greatly thereto, sparing no Pains, but endured the utmost Toil to dispatch them. Many were beholding to him, for as much as in him lay, he provided for all his Friends and Followers, and was so earnest to advance their particular Suites, that he would sometimes speak to her Majesty about them (when he thought them deserving) or to the Council, or Chief of the Ministry. At each Time he was sent Deputy into *Ireland*, he had a new Secretary: The first was *Edward Waterhouse*, who was knighted, and preferred by him, so that he became one of her Majestys Council in *Ireland*. The 2d was *Edward Tremain*, Esq; whom he preferred to be one of the Clerks of the Council, Attendant on her Majesty. The 3d was *Edmund Molineux*, Esq; whom he left unprovided at his Death, grieved his Fortune was so bad in his Decline, as to be unable to help him, often saying he had quailed under his Hands (for that was the Term he used) but he hoped Time, or some good Man (in Respect of his publick Service) would repair that he could not do.

He was, by Nature, so tempered with Piety, Modesty, and Patience, as he seldom shewed Heat or Anger, how great soever the Offence was. He was a sincere Friend, where he professed Friendship, and would not forsake them, but on most just, certain, and known Causes, which he could not smother, and would not hide from the Party; and was not revengefull to any that had offended him. Being of that even Temperature and Perfection, as it was hard to judge, whether to attribute more Commendation and Praise to his Government in Time of Peace, than to his Conduct and Valour in War; having in both been fortunate. It appears from his Letters to Queen *Elisabeth*, wrote with great Spirit, and an Indignation of all which was sordid, that he traveled through the whole Kingdom; and the State hereof he represents to her Majesty, in a most pathetick Manner, and with an ardent Desire to redress whatever he found grievous to the Subject. In these Journeys he was sometimes in Perile, but would comfort his Followers, with these Words, *My good Friends, and most loving Companions*. And wheresoever he came, his principal Care was to foresee their Wants, and provide for their Necessities. And when it so fell out (as sometimes it did) that he had not wherewithall to supply them, his kind Speeches, so sincerely, and compassionately delivered, wrought so much on them, that they were fully contented and satisfied; knowing him to be always most upright in Justice, and naturally inclined to help every one in Distress.

He highly favoured all Men of Letters and Sciences, and greatly encouraged them, oftentimes saying, *Science was to be honoured, in whom soever it was to be found*. He would never, in publick Assemblies, Consultations, Field, or Feast, omit any Thing that appertained to his Office or Honour. He always delighted to keep an orderly, liberal, and honourable House (greatly to the Relief of the Poor) according to the Dignity of his Place and Calling. He had Steward, Treasurer, Controuer, Auditor, Clerk Comptroller, Clerk of his Kitchen, and Master-Cook, besides ordinary Clerks, and inferior Officers, who could in their Degrees, well and skilfully, execute their several Places, and knew in Honor, State, Ceremonie in Assemblies, Solemnities, and Feasts, how to serve him as he should be. The Accounts of his Expences, both in his Government, and in his private Affairs, were drawn out monthly for his Perusal, which are yet at *Penshurst*, and shew how splendidly he lived, and what Care he had in the Application of the publick Revenues. He had a Regard to his Honour in all his Transactions, and a gratefull Mind to those who had shewed any Acts of Friendship to him, or from whom he had received any Benefit. He made  
great



great Additions to his Seat at *Penshurst*, and over the Tower into the Entrance thereof, is this Inscription :

The most Religious and Renowned Prince, *Edward the sixth*, Kinge Of *England, France, and Ireland*, gave this House of *Pencester* with The Mannors, Landes, and Appurtenavnces there unto belonginge Unto his trustye, and welbeloved Servavnt, Syr *William Sydney*, Knight-Banneret, serving him from the tyme of his Birth, unto his Coronation in the Offices of Chamberlayn and Stevard of his Household; in commemoration of which most worthie and famous Kinge Sir *Henrye Sydney*, Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter, Lord President of the Counsell, established in the Marches of *Wales*, Sonne and Heyer to the aforementioned Syr *William* Caused this Tower to be buylded, and that most excellent Princes Armes to be erected, *Anno Domini 1585*.

His Knowledge of Affairs in *Ireland*, was far greater than any one of his Time, as well of the natural Temper, Behaviour, and Manners of the People in general, as of each particular Province, and the whole Government : So that his Successors built on his Foundations, and framed their Designs after his Devices and Policy. His immediate Successor was *Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton*, who requested his Opinion in what Manner he should act to serve his Queen and Country. His Answer to him is in the Collection of Letters, wherein it appears, that his sole Views were to benefit, as much as in him lay, both her Majesty's Service, and the Welfare of that Kingdom. He had a perfect Knowledge of the Soil, Havens, Ports, Promontories, Necks of Land, Creeks, or whatsoever else could be known, from the North to the South, or from the East to the West ; not any Man having seen, or observed so much of that Kingdom, as he had done. His long and painful Journies over the severall Provinces, and his circular Discourses thereon (as he called them) will be published in the Collection of Letters, and shew what has been asserted to be evident, and apparent.

He often invited Gentlemen of the ancient *Irish*, and reclaimed them to Civility, Comeliness in Habit, and Cleanliness in Diet, House and Lodging : Which partly, in Respect of the great Love and Affection they bore to him, and partly, of friendly Fear to offend him, many afterwards observed and followed ; so that it may justly be said, he was the first that civilised the *Irish* Nation. Amongst many other of his Excellencies, it was thought a rare Virtue in him, that, being lusty, well liked, and full-bodied, he could content Nature, and satisfy himself with so little Sleep as he did, seldom keeping his Bed above six Hours (if he was in Health) neither would he take in the Day-time any Kind of Repose. And, in his Travels, were it in Post on special Service, or otherways, he often wearied most of his Train and Company, having that Ability and strong Constitution of Body, that few could endure the continual Labour and Toil at all Times and Seasons as he could ; nor that Hardness of Diet, for the Time, as himself would do, when the Service required it : Nothing ever offended him more than Unkindness and Ingratitude, especially where he (and the World thought) he had deserved otherwise (whereof, in the Course of his Life, he had some Part) but, though he could not help shewing some Uneasiness, his Revenge was generally on himself, it went no further. In all his Concerns, his sincere, plain, and open Dealing, was ever such, that his usual Phrase was, *My Word is my woorst, and so they shall find it*. He was naturally of a pleasant Disposition, merry in Conversation with his Friends, and in Council grave, discreet, and judicious ; well read in History and Antiquities, as also in most Languages, which he attained both by Conference and Travel. And was stored with such Principles of Civil Policy and Government, as delighted and instructed those who heard him : Likewise, so friendly, courteous, and affable



to all his Assistants, Collegues, and Companions, as they intirely loved, and greatly honoured him.

He had an Intention, which proceeded by Degrees, to Motion in Parliament, to have erected some publick Schools and Nurseries of Learning, which, in Time, might have become a University; and which has since happened.

For the better Reformation, and Civilising of the Savageness of that People, he offered a large annual Revenue of his own for the Furtherance of so good a Purpose. But, though in the Beginning a great Appearance was shewn to have many worthy and rich Furtherers, it ended only in Words, they failing in their Promises. It was his hard Fortune to have his Services subject to the Ear, and not to the Eye, whereby his noble Virtues, and Merits, were sometimes undervalued, and disregarded, and, consequently, his Services liable to Misreport, Slander, and Calumnation; as appears from his Letters to the Queen and her Council.

He held both the chief Offices of *Ireland* and *Wales* together, and was likewise Companion of the most noble Order of the Garter, which was as much Honour as a Subject could well have, those Offices being never before or since held by any, at one and the same Time; which caused him some Envy, but unjustly; for, in Truth (as *Molineux* observes) *in these Services he spent his Youth, and his whole Life; sold his Lands, and consumed much of his Patrimony, to the Hinderance of his Posterity, without any great Recompense or Reward.*

How he impaired his Health in the publick Service, is apparent from the following Case (amongst several Memorials) yet remaining in his Majesty's Office of Papers and Records of State, which being very remarkable, I have here inserted it.

Feb. 1567.

*The State of Sir H. Sidneys Bodie \*.*

**M**Y Lord President, being of the Age of XXXVI Yeares, went into *Ireland* a hole Man, not towched with the Stone, and so remaind one Yere and a Half, or there about. And ther, after long Greif, advoided two Stones, which were verye big, and such as fewe Men have bene knowen to have advoided. After this, he toke his Journey into the North Parts of *Irelande*, and so continued void of Paine and Greif, untill his Arrival in *England*, which was about VIII Weeks after. And then at *Chester* felt the like Greif as at the first, and so continued in Paine untill *Christmas* Eve, at what Tyme being ferched with Surgeons, he advoided one other Stone, broken by the Surgion his Instruments in divers Peeces, for that it was so great, that otherwise it cold not have bene taken forth, for all the Peices, laied to gither, might make the Quantity of a Nutmegge. And after, for a fewe Daies, he had some Excoriation in the Part by which it passed, which cuered, he remaind well untill now of late, feeling himself troublid with the like Paine as before. And, therefore, mistrustith that some other Stone is againe in the Bladder, for Helpe whereof he requirith our Advices, aswell for the Cuer of his present Estate, as also for farther Direction of his Bodie, to be preserved from Breeding of the Stone, which Disease he fearith the more, because his Father died of the same.

The State of the Question conteineth the special Points of Cuering and Preserving the Partie diseased; but, because both were to long to deside, we, leaving the Cuer to his own Phisitians, will broch onlie Preservation, which chiefly doth appertaine unto our Purpose.

Preservation consistith in due Order and Usage of Diet and Medicins, nether of the which two Things can be limitted, but by Consideration of the Partie diseased, and the Causes of the Disease.

*Temperatura Corporis.*] My Lord semith to have bene in his Youth of a sanguine Complexion, and of a very good Constitution of Bodie; but now, at this

\* MS. Ireland 1557, 1559. Lib. 5. p. 259. in his Majesty's Office of Papers and Records of State.



Present, by Disorder in Diet, through his Calling and Service, he seemith somewhat changed ; and, by Reason of grosse Feading, and such like, he hath verie much distempored divers Parts of his Bodie ; as namelie, his Hedde, his Stomack, Liver, Kidneys, and Bladder. And therby is always subject to Distillacions, Coughes, and other rumaticke Disseases. And also the Stone of the which he most complaineth ; and by Reason of the great Moisture and Grosseness of Humors, to the which his Lordship is now enclined, it is to be feared, lest, in Process of Tyme, he will be molished allsoe with Joint Aches and Gowtes.

*Locus Affectus.*] The Stone in my Lord seemith to take his Beginnings and Ruding in the Hollownes of the Reignes, but is increasid and perfectid in the Bladder, so that both Parts be affectid, but the Bladder especially.

*Causa.*] The Causes are grosse and slymie Fleame, with some Collar and Hardeness thorough Distemperature of the Parts affectid, and the natural Imbecillitie of the same, wherby it apperith that the Constituicion of my Lords Bodie, at this Present, is verie apt to breade the Stone.

*Prognostica* I.] My Lord, ever before being free from the Stone, hath, within this half Yere, advoided III Stones at two severall Tymes, of that Quantitie, that they hardelie and painefully had Issue, being drawen with Surgeons Instruments ; which is a plaine Argument, that his Lordship is not onlie apt to engender the Stone, but also standith in great Daunger ; for, before he advoid them, they will growe to that Bignes, that they will not passe him but by Cutting, which is not done without great Daunger, and yet maketh not perfect.

II.] The Stone in my Lord is *Morbus hereditarius*, and, therefore, unlesse he carefully follow good Counsell, he will hardely or never be perfectly cuered ; the Aptnes of Nature apperith, for that he, within a Yeare and a Half, partlie thorough the Default of the Country wherin he abode, partlie thorough the Office in the which he servid, not being able to follow Order, bredde Stones of so great Quantitie.

III.] The more Stones my Lord doth advoid, and the more often, the weaker the Parts affected are made, and the Disease more incurable, Custom being joynid to the naturall Disposition ; and therefore it behoveth his Lordship, without Delaie, to seeke for Remedie.

IV.] Because the Reines and the Bladder are affectid, the Cuer will be the harder, and likewise the Preservation.

V.] Whoever hath a Stone of enie Bignes, conformid ether in his Kidnes or Bladder, if he be of enie Age, can never be cuerid.

#### *Preservatio.*

For better Preservation of Helth, and Eschewing of this evident Danger, which otherwise will insue, it behoveth him to call to Remembraunce this old Proverbe Νεφριλεκοι εὐχέλαι: The Use of all Things must be moderat to them that are prone to the Stone: And, therefore, he must advoid all Excesse, and unreasonable Use, as well of Exercise, Meat, as also of Heate, Coldness, and Moisture, taking good Reguard upon what Meates he feedeth, in what Season, and with what Appetite, he beginnith and endeth his Meales. When, where, and how much he exercisith his Bodie ; where he makith his Abode ; when, and where, he takith his Rest, and how he yeldith to the Affects of his Minde ; but, especially, he must advoid all Things which may encrease ether Moistness or Grosseness of Humors, and seeke of the contrary Side, to drie, extenuat, and incyde all slymy Matters.

And therefore, the Place of his Aboade, must be in Aier, nether cold, nor moist, but drie with temperat Heat, as much as may be, advoiding specially all Places full of Bogges, Fenns, and Marshes, where the Winds do blow commonlie from the South, and South-west, where Foggs, Mists be often, and long continewe ; where the Houses be dampishe, moldy, and ill favoring.

He must exercise his Bodie moderatlie, ether by Walking or Riding, or such like Gesture, in the Morning (before he feedith) abroad, if the Wether be  
faier,



faier, but farr from all moist Places, and standing Waters. Within Doors, if the Aier be clowdie, misty, or disposed to Raine. Such Exercises as do much heat or strein the Back, as Leaping, Running, Valting, Dauncing alofte, Riding Poste, long Journeys, or uppon a sturring Horse, Gallopping the Felde, cladd in hevie Armuer, and such like, are very hurtefull for the Stone. After Meat, and in the Night, Rest is holesome, so that it passe not Measure, for long Sitting givith great Occasion to the Stone. After Exercise, his Lordship must repose befoer Dinner a While.

His Meates must be of one Kind, or such as have like Quality or Facility of Concoction, on the which also, he must feade moderatly. He must advoid all Meates that have in them superfluous Moisture, which increase grosse and flymy Humours, or are harde to be concocted, such as his Lordship, of late, hath beene accustomed to doe, which, whether they were of Beast or Fowle, being never so drie rostit, yeldid much supperfluous Moisture, and gave present Matter to ingender the Stone. For the like Considerations, his Ldship maie not feede much of such Females, the Males whereof be of themselves to moist. His Bred must be made of good Wheat, well levenne, seosened, and bakid. His Drink must be cleare, well bruid, and stale, or good old *Gascoine* Wine. Drink made of Wheat Malt, and Otes, is not good. All newe Wines, all thick Beare, and also all futtell Wines at Meates, Aqua Vitæ, or such like Compounds, after Meat, be verie hurtefull. The Supper must be less than the Dinner.

My Lord maie not sleep between Meales, ne go to Bed within two Howers after Supper. He maie not sleape uppon his Back, ne in a Bedde of Downe, ne yet uppon or neigh the Grounde, or in the open Aier, especially in the Night Watching, in the Night abroad; in the Feild greatly hurteth.

He must not studie after Meates, immediatlie, nor much occupye his Minde, but passe the Tyme with pleasant Disports, giving himself to Mirth, advoiding as well Pensivenes and Cares, as Anger; which, of all other Affections, do most cause the Stone. And so in all Things, Mediocrity must be observed, according to the Rule of *Hippocrates*, Labor, cibus, potus, somnus & per omnia Mediocria.

When and how his Lordship must supply the Defect of Nature, we leve to the Consideration of his Phisitian, as we do also the Prescription of a moer particular Diet, and more peculiar Medisines for the Disease.

Yf his Lordship shall kepe this Order of Diet, and further use such Medcines, as his Phisitian shall from Tyme to Tyme devise, as Occasion shall offer: We doubt not, but, by the Help of God, he shall, in Tyme, be either perfectly cuerid, or long preservid; and, without this exact Diet, it will be very hard, or rather impossible, thorough the natural Imbecillity, to remove such Inconveniences, as his Lordship is like to fall into. Wherefore he must be the more carefull in Observance of this Order here prescribed.

He was strict and precise in the Observation of good Order, and would seldom break it in any Respect, but on evident, known, and just Cause; or, when he was over-ruled, by such as had his Sovereign's Power to direct and command him. Extraordinary Courses he always utterly disliked, especially when Order was perverted, or Justice hindered; which gained him such good Will every where, and even among the Officers of the Queen's Household, as they often wisht he had been honoured with a White-Staff, to have been amongst them.

He was a most endearing, kind, and loving Father to his Children, and observing in them high Minds, and great Courage, which drew them by Degrees to Excess in Expences, and more than an ordinary Liberality, he would sometimes fatherly advise them, That, if they meant to live in Order, they should ever be thoughtful whose Sons they were, and seldom think whose Nephews they were; alluding to their Uncles, the Earls of *Warwick* and *Leicester*. He was also an affable, courteous, constant, and honourable Master to his Servants: For he would often say, *It was an easy Matter for them to keep him, but hard to recover his Love and Favour, if they had once lost him.* And, when any of his noble and loving Friends commended him, for Making much of his old Ser-

vants



vants (for few, that came to him, ever went from him, except such as were advanced by him to better Preferments) he would pleasantly answer, *Lord, I give thee Thanks, that, of those thou gavest me, I have not lost one.*

By his Last Will and Testament<sup>a</sup>, bearing Date, 8 Jan. 1581, and the Probat thereof 25 May, 1586.

He wills to his Son, *Robert Sidney*, his Mannor of *Scampton*, with the Appurtenances, in Com. *Lincoln*, to him and his Heirs Male; in Default, to his Son, *Sir Philip Sidney*.

To his Son, *Thomas Sidney*, his Lands and Tenements, known by the Name of *Hanbecke*, alias *Hanby Grange*, late in the Tenure of *Edmond Hasykwood*, Esq; or his Assigns, and to the Heirs Male of his Body; in Default, to *Philip Sidney*, his Heirs and Assigns for ever; and decrees his dearly beloved Brother-in-Law, *Henry Earl of Huntingdon*, to take on him the Guardianship of his said Son *Thomas*, till he arrives at the Age of 21 Years, and to have all such Lands, &c. he had bequeathed to his said Son *Thomas*, for his Finding. And that his Son, *Sir Philip Sidney*, should have the Order, Rule, and Government of his Son, *Robert Sidney*, till he come of Age.

He bequeaths to said Son, *Sir Philip*, all his Plate, Furniture, &c. at *Penshurst*, and the Residue of his Estate, and constitutes him sole Executor. And appoints his Brothers, *Henry Earl of Huntingdon*, *Ambrose Earl of Warwick*, and *Robert Earl of Leicester*, Overseers; and bequeaths to every of them, for a Remembrance, one Piece of Plate, of the Value of 25 l. current Money.

*Sir Fulke Grevil*, Lord *Brooke*,<sup>b</sup> in his Life of *Sir Philip Sidney*, gives this Character of him, ' *Sir Henry Sidney* was a Man of excellent naturall Wit, large Heart, sweet Conversation; and such a Governor, as sought not to make an End of the State in himself, but to plant his own Ends in the Prosperity of his Countrey. Witnes his sound Establishments, both in *Wales*, and *Ireland*, where his Memory is worthily gratefull unto this Day.'

He died at *Ludlow* on the 5th of May, 1586, aged 57 Years, wanting a Month, and 15 Days: And the Queen, being certified thereof<sup>c</sup>, ordered *Sir William Dethick*, *Garter King of Arms*, to prepare all Things appertaining to his Office, for his Funeral. Accordingly, *Garter*, and the other Heralds, coming to *Worcester*, ordered the Corpse, robed with Velvet, to be brought from *Ludlow*, which was solemnly conveyed into the Cathedral Church at *Worcester*, and there placed: And, after a Sermon preached by one of his Chaplains, the Corpse was conveyed into a Chariot covered with Velvet, hung with Escutcheons of his Arms, &c. And, being accompanied with Mr. *Garter*, and the other Heralds, with the principal Domesticks of the Deceased, and Officers of the Court at *Ludlow*, they proceeded on their Journey to *London*, and from thence to *Penshurst*, where, on Tuesday 21 June, 1586, he was interred in the Chancel of the Church of that Place, attended from his House, by a noble Train of Lords, Knights, Gentlemen and Ladies.

He married the Lady *Mary Dudley*, eldest Daughter of *John Duke of Northumberland*. As she was by<sup>d</sup> Descent of great Nobility, so was she, by Nature, of a large, ingenious Spirit. She survived him but a very short Time, dying in August following<sup>e</sup>; and on the 11th of that Month, 1586, had Sepulture with him, in the Chancel at *Penshurst*. They had Issue three Sons, *Sir Philip*, *Sir Robert*, and *Sir Thomas Sidney*, and four Daughters, whereof the eldest died an Infant, as did *Margaret*, the 2d Daughter, who lies buried at *Penshurst*, near the Tomb of *Sir William Sidney*, with this Inscription in Capitals, on a plain Stone laid over her Grave:

<sup>a</sup> Ex Regist. Windsor, qu. 27.  
William Dethick. MS. Not. A. 31. in Bibl. Joh. Anstis, Arm.  
Sir Philip Sidney, p. 5.

<sup>b</sup> Life of Sir Philip Sidney, p. 5.

<sup>c</sup> Funerals of Sir  
<sup>d</sup> Sir Fulk Grevil's Life of  
<sup>e</sup> Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst.



Here lyeth *Margarete Sydney*, Daughter  
Of *Syr Henry Sydney*, Knyght, and the Lady  
*Mary* his Wyfe. Which *Margarete* departed  
This Lyfe the Yere of our Sallvation A M<sup>t</sup>.  
CCCCCLVIII, and in the fifte and sixt Yere  
Of the Reigne of Kyng *Phylyp* & Quene  
*Mary*, when she was one Yere and thre  
Quarters old. On whose Soule Jhu have Mercy.

Another of his Daughters lived to near the Age of 20, but died unmarried,  
and lies buried in the Chancel, in the Collegiate Parish Church of *Ludlow*, where  
a Monument is erected to her Memory, with this Inscription :

Heare lyethe the Bodye of *Ambrozia Sydney* III<sup>th</sup>  
Daughter of the right honorable *Syr Henry Sydney*,  
Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, Lord President  
Of the Counsell of *Walles*, &c. And of the Ladye *Marye*  
His Wief, Daughter of the ffamous Duke of *Northumberland*,  
Who dyed in *Ludlow Castell*, the 22<sup>th</sup> of *Februarii*,  
1574.

The only surviving Daughter was *Mary*, married to *Henry* Earl of *Pembroke*,  
from whom the present Earl is descended. *Robert Dudley*, Earl of *Leicester*,  
her Uncle, the great Favourite of Queen *Elisabeth*, made the Match for her  
(and paid Part of her Fortune) which *Sir Henry Sidney* acknowledges as a Fa-  
vour to him, by his Letter from *Dundalk* in *Ireland*, bearing Date, 4 *Feb.*  
1576, which will be printed in the Collection.

She was a most ingenious Lady, and composed severall of the *Psalms* in  
Verse ; also translated, *A Discourse of Life and Death*, written in French, by  
*Phil. Mornay*. Done into English, by the Countesse of *Pembroke*.

Dated, the 13 of *May*, 1590. At *Wilton*.

At *London*. Printed for *William Ponsonby*, 1600.

Likewise, *The Tragedie of Antonie*. Doone into English by the Countesse of  
*Pembroke*.

Imprinted at *London*, for *William Ponsonby*, 1595.

Dated at *Ramesbury*, 26 November, 1590.

She lived to a very advanced Age, and died at her House in *Aldersgate-street*,  
in *London*, 25 *Sept.* 1621, and was buried in the Chancel of the Cathedral  
Church of *Salisbury*.

This Epitaph was also made on her :

Vnderneath this sable Herse  
Lyes the Subject of all Verse ;  
*Sydneys* Sister, *Pembrokes* Mother ;  
Death, ere thou has killed another  
Faire, and learn'd, and good as she,  
Tyme shall throwe a Dart at thee.

Marble Pyles let no Man rayse  
To her Name, for after Daies.  
Some kinde Woman, borne as she,  
Reading this, like *Niobé*,  
Shall turne Marble, and become  
Both her Mourner, and her Tombe.



I shall now proceed to treat of Sir *Philip Sydney*, the eldest Son and Heir of Sir *Henry*. He was born at *Penshurst*, the 29th of *November*, 1554<sup>f</sup>, and had the Name of *Philip*, from King *Philip* of *Spain* (then lately married to Queen *Mary*) who was his Godfather. The celebrated Poet, *Ben. Johnson*<sup>g</sup>, commemorates the Place of his Birth, with these Lines on *Penshurst*:

Thou hast thy Walks for Health as well as Sport ;  
Thy Mount, to which the *Dryads* do resort,  
Where *Pan* and *Bacchus* their high Feasts have made,  
Beneath the broad Beech, and the Chesnut Shade :  
That taller Tree, which of a Nut was set  
At his great Birth, where all the Muses met.

This Tree is yet standing in the Park, and called *Bear's Oak*, probably alluding to one of the Cognizances of the Family. While he was very young, he was at School at *Shrewsbury* (being near to his Father, then Lord President of *Wales*) and so forward in his Learning, that, at 12 Years of Age, he sent two Letters to his Father, one in *Latin*, and the other in *French*, and how properly Sir *Henry* answered, will be seen in the Collection of Letters. Of his Youth, Lord *Brook*<sup>h</sup> observes, That, though he lived with him, and knew him from a Child, yet he never found him other than a Man : With such Steadiness of Mind, lovely and familiar Gravity, which carried Grace and Reverence far above his Years. This Eminence in Nature made his worthy Father stile him, saith the Lord *Brook*, the Junseer, *Lumen familie sue*. For his further Improvement, he was sent to *Christ Church* in *Oxford*<sup>i</sup>, where continuing till he was about 17 Years of Age, under the Tuition of Dr. *Thomas Thornton*, Canon of that House ; he was, in 1572, sent to Travel : For Queen *Elisabeth*, 25 May, in that Year, grants her Licence<sup>k</sup> to her trusty and welbeloved *Philip Sydney*, Esq; to go out of *England*, into Parts beyond the Seas, with three Servants and four Horses, &c. to remain the Space of two Years, immediately following his Departure out of the Realm, for his Attaining the Knowledge of foreign Languages.

In his Travels, the Lord *Brook*<sup>l</sup> relates, That, though so young, he gained Reverence among the chief learned Men Abroad. And King *Charles the Ninth* of *France*, was so taken with his Deportment, and extraordinary Merits, that he made him one of the Gentlemen of his Chamber. And thereupon, by his Sign Manual, and under his Seal, certified, to the Great Chamberlain of *France*, the Masters in Ordinary of his Household, and the Master and Comptroller of his Chamber, for Monies, &c. That considering how great the House of *Sidenay* was in *England*, and the Rank it had always held near the Persons of the Kings and Queens, their Sovereigns, and desiring well and favourably to treat the young Sir *Philip Sidenay*, for the good and commendable Knowledge in him : He had retained and received him in the State of Gentleman in Ordinary of his Chamber, to serve him hereafter, and to receive the Honours, Authorities, Wages, Rights, Hostellages, Profits, and customary Emoluments thereunto appertaining, during Pleasure. With Command to his faithful Councillor, and first Gentleman of his Chamber, to take of the said S. Baron of *Sidenay*, the usual Oath in such Case required, &c. Willing also that these Presents be registered among the Papers and Writings of his Chamber, &c. And, on the Back of the Paper, is endorsed<sup>m</sup> :

‘ We *Albert de Gondy*, Count of *Doyen*, Baron of *Reus*, Marquis of the Isles, &c. of *Marly* and *St. Sarque*, Knight of the Order, Councillor of the King in his Privy Council, First Gentleman of his Chamber, Governor and Lieutenant General of *Metz*, and the Country of *Metsin*.’ We have, this Day, received

<sup>f</sup> Wood's *Athenæ*. Oxon. Vol. 1. p. 182. <sup>g</sup> Vide his Works, 8vo. Vol. 3, p. 177.

<sup>h</sup> Vide his Life, p. 6 & 7. <sup>i</sup> Wood's *Athenæ*. Oxon. Vol. 1, p. 182. <sup>k</sup> Ex Original, apud *Penshurst*.

<sup>l</sup> Life, p. 8.

<sup>m</sup> Ex Origin. apud *Penshurst*.



the S. Baron of *Sidenay* the Younger, in the State of Gentleman in Ordinary to the King, and he received and took the Oath, in such Case requisite and customary. At *Paris*, 9 *August*, 1572.

GONDY.

He was at *Paris* on the 24th of *August* <sup>n</sup>, after he departed from *England*, on which Day was the Massacre; but being in the House of Sir *Francis Walsingham*, the Queen's Ambassador, he received no Hurt. His Uncle, the Earl of *Leicester*, was under great Concern for him, and sent for him Home, as the underwritten to Secretary *Walsingham* shews:

' Where we understand, that the *English* Gent. who were in *Paris* at the Time of the Execution of the Murther, were forced ° to retire to your House, where they did wisely; for your Care of them, we and their Friends are beholding to you, and we think good that they be advised to return Home; and namely, we desire you to procure for the Lord *Wharion*, and Mr. *Philip Sidney*, the Kings Licence and safe Conduet to come thence, and so we require you to give them true Knowledge of our Minds herein.'

Sept. 9, 1572.

Signed, *William Burleigh, Robert Leicester,*  
with others of the Privy Council.

That able Minister, who had Influence in all Countries, and had a Hand in all Affairs, did, as Lord *Brook* writes <sup>p</sup>, confess to him, that Sir *Philip Sydney* did so overshoot him at his own Bow, as those Friends, which at first were Sir *Philip's*, for this Secretary's Sake, within a While became so enamoured of him, as now he held them by his Son-in-Law's native Courtesy: And that Don *John of Austria*, Vice-roy in the *Low-Countries* for *Spain* <sup>q</sup>, when this Gentleman was on his Travels, and came to kiss his Hand, he gave him Access at first, as in Condescension to a Youth and Stranger of Figure; yet, after a While, when he had taken his just Altitude, he found himself so stricken with this extraordinary Planet, that the Beholders wondered to see, what ingenious Tribute the haughty Prince paid to his Worth, giving more Honour to this hopeful young Gentleman, than to the Ambassadors of mighty Princes.

He also says <sup>r</sup>, The Prince of *Orange* protested unto him, that, if he could judge, Queen *Elizabeth* had one of the ripest and greatest Councillors of State in Sir *Philip Sydney*, at that Day, in *Europe*. To the Trial of which, he would pawn his Credit, till her Majesty had employed him. Likewise his <sup>s</sup> Uncle, the Earl of *Leicester*, in the End acknowledged, that by him, whilst he lived, he held up the Honour of his Authority in the *United Provinces*, and found Reason to withdraw himself from that Burden after his Death. And he further says, p. 39. Indeed he was a true Model of Worth, a Man fit for Conquest, Plantation, Reformation, or what Action soever is greatest or hardiest amongst Men; withall, such a Lover of Mankind and Goodness, that whoever had any real Parts, in him found Comfort, Participation, and Relief, to the utmost of his Power. For, like *Zephrus*, he gave Life where-ever he blew: The Universities, Abroad and at Home, accounted him a General *Mæcenæ*s of Learning, dedicated their Books to him, and consulted him on every Invention, or Improvement of Knowledge. Soldiers he honoured, and they so revered him, as no Man thought he marched under the true Banner of *Mars*, that had not obtained *Sydney's* Approbation. Men <sup>t</sup> of Affairs in most Parts in *Christendom* corresponded with him. But why speak I of these (saith the Lord *Brook*) with whom his own Ways and Ends did concur: Since to descend, his Bounty was such, there was not an approved Painter, skilfull Engineer, an excellent Musician, or any other Artificer of Fame, that made not himself known to this famous Spirit, and found

<sup>n</sup> Wood ut supra.    <sup>o</sup> Digs's Compleat Ambassador, p. 250.    <sup>p</sup> Life of Sir Ph. Sidney, p. 35.  
<sup>q</sup> Ibid. p. 27.    <sup>r</sup> Life, p. 31.    <sup>s</sup> Ibid. p. 34.    <sup>t</sup> Which appears from a Volume of Letters in all Languages, from the most learned Men in all Countries, still remaining at Penshurst.



in him a true Friend without Hire ; so that he was the common Rendezvous of Worth in his Time.

I shall now proceed to recite his most memorable Actions : From *Paris* he travelled through *Lorrain*, and by *Strasburgh* and *Heidelburgh*, to *Frankfort*. At the last Place he staid some Time, and became acquainted with the famous *Languet*, Minister of the Elector of *Saxony*, the greatest Prince in *Germany*, who was so taken with his Behaviour and Deportment<sup>u</sup>, ' That he quitted his several Functions, and became a Nurse of Knowledge to this hopeful young Gentleman, and without any other Hire or Motive, than their Sympathy of Affections, he accompanied him in the whole Course of his three Years Travel.' In 1573<sup>w</sup>, he removed to *Vienna*, where he staid till *September*, and then went into *Hungary*, and from thence into *Italy*, where he continued all the Winter. Most of the Summer, 1574, he spent in *Germany*; and the next Spring he returned by *Frankfort*, *Heidelburgh*, and *Antwerp*, Home into *England*, where he arrived about *May*, 1575.

In 1576, he was sent by the Queen<sup>x</sup> to *Rodolph* the Emperot, to condole the Death of *Maximilian*, being not much more than one-and-twenty Years old ; and was impowered to visit and treat with other Princes in *Germany*; which he performed in such exquisite Order, as he exceedingly satisfied her Majesty therein, both by his Letters and Reports, and gained himself great Credit and singular Commendation. In all Places where he took up his Abode, the following Inscription under his Arms was set up :

Illustrissimi & Generosissimi Viri  
Philippi Sidnæi Angli,  
Pro-regis Hiberniæ filii, Comitum Warwici  
Et Leicestriæ Nepotis, Serenissimi  
Reginæ Angliæ ad Cæsarem Legati.

The next Year, 1577, in coming to *England*, he saw that gallant Prince, Don *John* of *Austria*, Vice-roy in the *Low-Countries* for the King of *Spain*, and *William* Prince of *Orange*. After his Return, the same Year, I find he had some Dispute with *Thomas*, Earl of *Ormond*, on the Behalf of his Father, Sir *Henry Sydney*; and though he was the Queen's Kinsman, and high in her Favour, Sir *Philip* could not refrain shewing his Resentment to that noble Peer, whereof *Edward Waterhouse*, Esq; in a Letter to Sir *Henry Sydney*, bearing Date from the Court at *Oatlands*, 16 *September*, 1577, relates these Particulars<sup>y</sup> :

' Some litell Occasions of Discurtesies have passed betwen the Erle of *Ormond*, and Mr. *Philip Sidney*, because the Erle lately spoke unto him, and he answered not, but was in dead Silence on Purpose; because he imputeth to the Erle, such Practises as have bene made to alienat her Majesties Mind from your Lordship. But thes Contraverfies are, I think, at the fardest; for the Expectation of my Lord Chancellors Coming, hath put all *Irish* Causes to Silence till he be herde; and the Erle of *Ormond* saith, he will accept no Quarrell from a Gentleman that is bound by Nature to defend his Fathers Causes, and who is otherwise furnishid with so mayny Vertues, as he knows Mr. *Philip* to be. And, on the other Side, Mr. *Philip* has gon as farr, and shewed as much Magnanimity, as is convenient, unless he could charge him with any Particularities, which I perceive he yet cannot, other then with a general Defence of the Countrey Ways, wherein all the Nation here, as I think, be culpable, saving the Lord of *Donsany*, who, for ought that I hear, hath not medled in the Matter, nor will not, &c.'

He was naturally of a warm and high Spirit, so jealous of his Honour and Reputation, that he could not brook the least Intrenchment on either, not even

<sup>u</sup> Lord Brook's Life, p. 9.  
p. 1554.

<sup>y</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

<sup>w</sup> Wood ut supra.

<sup>x</sup> Castrated Sheets of Hollinshed,

from



from Persons of the highest Rank ; and much less from his Equals or Inferiors. As may appear in that Instance of *Edmund Molineux*, Esq; Secretary to the Government of *Ireland*, whom he threatened with Death, if he continued to divulge any of the Letters he sent to his Father. His Letter to Mr. *Molineux* on this Topic, in *May 1578*, will be printed in the Collection, with the ingenious, respectful, and affectionate Answer ; which probably produced the Reconciliation between them, that evidently occurs in their future Correspondence.

In 1579, being neither Magistrate nor Councillor (as Lord *Brook* writes, p. 71.) he shewed himself, for several weighty Reasons, opposite to the Queens Marrying with the Duke of *Anjou*, which he addressed to the Queen herself by Letter, and will be published in the Collection. The Lord *Brook* takes Notice of it, and saith, that if any one should think it a dangerous Error, in his opposing himself against his Sovereign's Pleasure, he must answer, ' That his Worth, Truth, Favour and Sincerity of Heart, together with his real Manner of Proceeding in it, were his Privileges. Because his Course was not by Murmur among Equals or Inferiors, to detract from Princes ; or by a mutinous Kind of bemoaning Error, to stir up ill Affections, but by a due Address of his humble Reasons to the Queen herself, to whom the Appeal was proper ; and her princely Heart was a Sanctuary to him. So that howsoever he seemed to stand alone, yet he stood upright, kept his Access to her Majesty as before ; and a liberal Conversation with the *French* ; revered amongst the Worthiest of them for himself ; and born in too strong a Fortification of Nature for the less Worthy to attack him, either with Question, Familiarity, or Scorn. In this Freedom, even while the greatest Spirits and Estates seemed hood-winked, or blind, and the inferior Sort of Men made Captive, by Hope, Fear, or Ignorance ; did he enjoy the Freedom of his Thoughts, with all Recreations worthy of them.'

And in this Freedom of Heart, being one Day at Tennis, *Edward Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, a Peer, born great, greater by Alliance (having married a Daughter of the great *Cecil*) and Superlative in the Queens Favour, abruptly came into the *Tennis-Court*, and forgot to intreat that, which he could not legally command. And finding this Unrespectiveness in himself (though a great Lord) not respected by Sir *Philip*, he grew to expostulate, more roughly. The Returns of which Stile, coming to a Heart, that understood what was due to itself, and what it owed to others (seemed through the Mists of my Lords Passions, swoln with the Wind of his Faction then reigning) to provoke in yeelding. Whereby the less Amazement, or Confusion of Thoughts, he stirred up in Sir *Philip*, the more Shadows this great Lords own Mind was possessed with, till at last with Rage (which is ever ill disciplined) he commands them to depart the Court. To this Sir *Philip* coolly answers his Lordship, *That had he expressed Desire, in milder Characters, perchance he might have lead out those, that he should now find, would not be driven out with any Scourge of Fury.* This Answer (like a Bellows) blowing up the Sparks, of already kindled Anger, made my Lord scornfully call Sir *Philip*, by the Name of *Puppy*. In which Progress of Heat, as the Tempest grew more and more vehement within, so did their Hearts breathe out their Perturbations in a more loud and shrill Accent. The *French* Commissioners had that Day, Audience in those private Galleries, whose Windows look into the *Tennis-Court*. They all instantly drew to this Tumult, every Sort of Quarrells sorting well with their Humour, but especially this ; which Sir *Philip* perceiving, and rising with inward Strength, by the Prospect of a mighty Faction against him, asked my Lord with a loud Voice, that which he heard clearly enough before. Who like an Echo (that still multiplies by Reflections) repeated this Epithet of *Puppy*, the 2d Time. Sir *Philip* resolving, in one Answer to conclude, both the attentive Hearers and passionate Actor, gave my Lord the *Lye*, impossible as he averred to be retorted, in Respect, all the World knowes, *Puppys are gotten by Dogs, and Children by Men.*



Hereupon those glorious Inequalities of Fortune in his Lordship, were put to a Kind of Pause, by a precious Inequality of Nature in this Gentleman. So that they both stood silent a While, like a dumb Shew in a Tragedy; till Sir *Philip* sensible of his own Wrong, and the foreign and factious Spirits that attended; and yet even in this Question between him, and his Superior, tender to his Countrys Honour; with some Words of sharp Accent he led the Way abruptly out of the *Tennis-Court*; as if so unexpected an Accident, were not fit to be decided further in that Place. Whereof the great Lord construing it in a wrong Sense, continues his Play, without any Advantage of Reputation; as by the Standard of Humours in those Times it was conceived.

A Day Sir *Philip* remains in Suspense, when hearing nothing of, or from this Lord, he sends a Gentleman of Worth, to awake him out of his Trance: This stirred up a Resolution in his Lordship to send Sir *Philip* a Challenge. But these Thoughts in the great Lord wandered so long between Glory, Anger, and inequality of State, as the Lords of her Majesties Council took Notice of the Differences, commanded Peace, and laboured a Reconciliation between them. Yet needlessly in one Respect, and bootlessly in another. The great Lord being (as it should seem) either not hasty to adventure many Inequalities against one, or inwardly satisfied with the Progress of his own Acts: But Sir *Philip* was on the other Side confident, that he neither had, nor would lose, or let fall any Thing of his Right. Which her Majestys Council quickly perceiving, recommended this Work to herself.

The Queen, who saw that by the Loss, or Disgrace of either, she could gain nothing; presently undertakes Sir *Philip*, and lays before him the Difference in Degree, between Earls and Gentlemen; the Respect Inferiors owed to their Superiors; and the Necessity in Princes to maintain their own Creations, as Degrees descending between the Peoples Licentiousness, and the anoynted Sovereignty of Crowns; how the Gentlemans Neglect of the Nobility taught the Peasant to insult upon both. Whereunto Sir *Philip*, with such Reverence as became him, replied: *First, That Place was never intended for Privilege to wrong, witness herself, who, how Sovereign soever she were, by Throne, Birth, Education, and Nature; yet was she content to cast her own Affections into the same Moulds her Subjects did, and govern all her Rights by the Laws.* Again he besought her Majesty to consider, *That although he were a great Lord, by Birth, Alliance, and Grace; yet he was no Lord over him; and therefore the Difference of Degrees, between free Men, could not challenge any other Homage than Precedency. And by her Fathers Act (to make a Princely Wisdom, become the more familiar) he instanced the Government of King Henry the Eighth, who gave the Gentry free, and safe appeal to his Feet, against the Oppression of the Grandees; and found it Wisdom, by the stronger Corporation in Number, to keep down the greater in Power: Inferring else, that if they should unite, the Overgrown might be tempted, by still coveting more, to fall (as the Angels did) by affecting Equality with their Maker.* These Truths did not displease the Queen, though he did not obey her Commands.

Whereupon, the same Year he retired from Court; and in that Summer 1580, its conceived he wrote the eloquent and entertaining Romance, called *Arcadia*, whereof there has been printed 14 Editions; which he dedicated to his Sister the Countess of *Pembroke*; and theres a Room at *Wilton*, the lower Pannels whereof are finely painted, with Representations of the Stories mentioned therein.

His noble and generous Disposition to relieve all who were in Distress, appears from several Instances, as well as from his Letters; and he was so universally applauded for it, that his Fame spread even beyond the Bounds of *Europe*. In 1580, on the Death of the King of *Portugal*, there were three Competitors for the Succession, which induced the *Spaniards* to possess themselves of that Kingdom. Of the Competitors, only Don *Antonio* gave them any Disturbance, and he applied himself to Sir *Philip Sidney*, for his Assistance. His Letter bears Date from *Tunis*, the 3d of May, 1581, wherein he acquaints



him with the State of his Affairs, and who had promised him their Aid; concluding, *though many more should go, if I did not see you in the Company, I shall say, Numerum non habet illa suum.* He stiles him his *illustrious Nephew*, Philip Sidney. The Letter, with a Translation, will be printed in the Collection.

In 1581, the *French Treaty of Marriage* was renewed, and Sir *Philip Sidney*,<sup>a</sup> was among those noble Gallants, that performed in the Jufts, Barriers, and Turney, for the Entertainment of the Duke of *Anjou*, and his Train. And at his Departure from *England*, in *February* the same Year, the Earl of *Leicester*, and the Chief of the *English Court*, attending him to *Antwerp*, he was<sup>b</sup> among them.

In 1583, *John*, Prince Palatine of the *Rhine*, being made a Knight of the Garter, gave<sup>c</sup> his Procuration to Sir *Philip Sydney*, to receive his Stall, and in his Name to take Possession of it; and thereupon, he was knighted by the Sovereign at *Windsor-Castle*, the 13th of *January*, the Morning before he proceeded to take Possession thereof.

In 1585, he projected an Expedition into *America*,<sup>d</sup> which he fashioned to become Head of himself. And as the Scope of it was mixt both of Land, and Sea-Service, so had it accordingly distinct Officers, chosen by Sir *Philip*, out of the chief Persons of those Martial Times. The Project was contrived between him, and Sir *Francis Drake*, that they both should equally govern, when they had left the Shoar of *England*. And while Things were providing at Home, Sir *Francis* was to bear the Name, and by the Credit of Sir *Philip*, all Particulars were to be abundantly supplied. But this Affair dropt, the Queen being unwilling to risk a Person of his Worth, in an Imploiment so remote, and of so hazardous a Nature; and sent her Royal Command to him delivered by a Peer of the Realm, to quit the Enterprize.

Being therefore frustrated in that Design, he was upon his Return to Court, instantly made Lord-Governour of *Flushing*, with the Rammekyns, &c. and General of the Horse, under his Uncle, the Earl of *Leicester*, in both which Charges, his Carriage testified to the World, Wisdom and Valour, with Addition of Honour to his Country.

On his 1st Entrance into the *Low-Countries*, he contrived<sup>e</sup> the Surprise of *Axil* (July 1586) in the Execution of which, he behaved like a most consummate General, reviving the antient and secure Discipline of Order and Silence in their March; and after their Entrance into the Town, placed a Band of choice Soldiers, to make a Stand in the Market-place, for Securitie to the rest: And when the Service was done, rewarded that Obedience of Discipline in every one, liberally out of his own Purse.

Also in the Enterprize, intended for the Surprise of *Gravelin*, he was resolute not to hazard so many principal Gentlemen, with such gallant Troops and Commanders, which accompanied him; yet because he kept this steady Council in his own Bosome, there was Labouring on every Side, to obtain the Honour of that Service. To which he made this Answer: That his own Coming thither was to the same End, wherein they were now become his Rivals, and therefore assured them, that he would not yield any Thing to any Man, which by Right of his Place, was both due to himself, and consequently Disgrace to him to execute by others. Therefore he would never consent to hazard them that were his Friends, where he found Reason to make many Doubts, and so little Reason to venture himself. Yet as a Commander, concluding something fit to be done, equally for Obedience and Trial, he made the inferior Officers try their Fortune by Dice on a Drum-head. The Lot fell on Sir *William Brown*, his own Lievtenant, who with a choice Company, presently departed, receiving this provisional Caution from Sir *Philip*, that if he found Practise and

<sup>a</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 689. <sup>b</sup> Camden's Annals, in Hist. of Engl. Vol. 2. p. 484. <sup>c</sup> Ashmole's Order of the Garter, p. 436, 438. <sup>d</sup> Lord Brook's Life of Sir Ph. Sidney, p. 82. & seq.

<sup>e</sup> Pat. 27 Elis. p. 13. m. 23.

<sup>f</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 732.



not Faith, he should through down his Arms and yeeld himself Prisoner; protesting, that if they took him, he should be ransomed; if they broke Quarter, his Death most severely revenged.

The Leader, following his Generals Commandment, discovers the Treason, throws down his Arms, and is taken Prisoner; and its agreed that Sir *Philip* Penetration and Judgment, saved the Lives and Honour of the *English* Army, by not hazarding so many of them in that treacherous Expedition.

His Fame and high Deserts, were now so well known, that he <sup>s</sup> was in Election for the Crown of *Poland*; but Queen *Elisabeth* refused to further his Advancement, not out of Emulation, but out of Fear to lose the Jewel of her Times.

In those Discontentments, and Quarells, which naturally accompany great Spirits in the best governed Camps, how discreetly did Sir *Philip* ballance the brave *Hollock*, made Head of a Party against his Uncle: When putting himself between Indignities, offered to his Sovereign, through the Earl of *Leicesters* Person; and yet not fit for a supreme Governours Place to ground a Duel upon; he brought those passionate Charges, which the Count *Hollock* addressed upwards to the Earl, down by Degrees upon himself. Where that brave Count found Sir *Philip*, so fortified with Wisdom, Courage, and Truth; besides the strong Band of former Friendship standing for him in the Counts noble Nature; that by coming to Terms of Expostulation, there was wrought through himself, if not a Kind of Unity between the Earl of *Leicester*, and the Count *Hollock*, yet at least a finall Surcease of all violent Jealousies, or factious Expostulations. ‘ To be short (says the <sup>h</sup> Lord *Brook*) not in Complements and ‘ Art, but real Proof given of his Sufficiency above others; in a very little ‘ Time his Reputation, and Authority, amongst that active People, grew so ‘ fast, as it had been no hard Matter for him, with the Disadvantage of his ‘ Uncle, and Distraction of Affairs in those Parts, to have raised himself a ‘ Fortune there. But in the whole Course of his Life, he did so constantly ‘ ballance Ambition with the safe Precepts of divine and moral Duty, as no ‘ Pretense whatsoever could have entised him, to break through the Circle of a ‘ good Patriot.

In the same Year, when that unfortunate Stand was to be made before *Zutphen*, to stop the Issuing out of the *Spanish* Army; with what Alacrity soever he went to Actions of Honour, yet remembring upon just Grounds the antient Sages describe the worthiest Persons to be ever best armed, he had compleatly put on his; but meeting the Marshal of the Camp lightly armed, the unspotted Emulation of his Heart, to venture without any Inequality, made him cast off his Curassies; and so, by the secret Influence of Destiny, to disarm that Part, where he unhappily received the Wound which occasioned his Death. His Uncle, the Earl of *Leicester*, bemoans his hard Fate, in a Letter to Sir *Thomas Heneage*, Captain of the Queen’s Guards, dated 23 September, 1586; which being communicated to me<sup>i</sup>, I shall recite what is most remarkable therein, of this most famous and immortal General. It begins:

Sithens my other Letters of the 20th, yt fell oute, that, Yesterday Morninge, some Intelligence was broughte, that the Enemy was bringing a Convoe of Victuall, garded with 3000 Horse. There was sente out to ympeache it 200 Horse and 300 Footemen, and a Nombre more, both Horse and Foote, to second them. Among other young Men, my Nephew, Sir *Philip Sydney*, was, and the rather, for that the Coronell *Norrice* himself went with the Stande of Footemen to second the rest; but the Vanguard of the Prince was marched, and came with this Convoe, and, being a mystie Morninge, our Men fell into the Ambuscade of Footemen, who were 3000, the moste Musketts, the rest Pykes. Our Horsemen being formoste, by their Haft indeede, would not

<sup>s</sup> Wood’s *Athæne Oxon.* Vol. 1. p. 183.  
Oldys de Greys Inn, Gent.

<sup>h</sup> Life, p. 141.

<sup>i</sup> Ex Autog. penes William

turne,



‘ turne, but passed throughe, and charged the Horsmen that fledde at the Backe  
 ‘ of their Footemen so valientlie ; albeyt they were 1100 Horfe, and of the verie  
 ‘ chieffe of all his Troupes, they brouke them, being not 200. Many of our  
 ‘ Horses were hurt and killed, among which was my Nephewes owne. He  
 ‘ wente and changed to another, and woulde needes to the Charge again, and  
 ‘ onste paste those Musketters ; where he receyved a fore Wounde upon his  
 ‘ Thighe, three Fingers above his Knee, the Bone broken quite in Peeces ; but,  
 ‘ for which Chance, God did sende such a Daye, as I thinke was never many  
 ‘ Yeres seene, so fewe againste so many.’

Here the Earl proceeds, to enumerate the Commanders and other Persons of  
 Distinction in the Engagement, Colonel *Norrice* who had the Charge of the  
 Foot, my Lord of *Essex*, Sir *Thomas Perrot*, ‘ and my unfortunate *Phillip* (saies  
 ‘ the Earl) with Sir *William Russel*, and divers Gentlemen ; and not one hurte,  
 ‘ but only my Nephew. They killed four of their Enemies chief Leaders, and  
 ‘ carried the valient Count *Hannibal Gonzaga* away with them upon a Horfe ; al-  
 ‘ so took Captain *George Cresier*, the principal Soldier of the Camp, and Cap-  
 ‘ tain of all the *Albanes*. My Lord *Willoughbie* overthrew him at the first En-  
 ‘ counter, Horfe and Man. The Gentleman did acknowledge it himself. There  
 ‘ is not a properer Gentleman in the Worlde towards, than this Lord *Willough-*  
 ‘ *bie* is ; but I can hardly prayse one more than another, they did all so well ; yet  
 ‘ every one had his Horfe killed or hurt. And it was thought very strange,  
 ‘ that Sir *William Stanley*, with 300 of his Men, should pass, in spight of so many  
 ‘ Muskets, such Troops of Horfe, three several Times, making them remove  
 ‘ their Ground, and to return with no more Los than he did. Albeyt I must  
 ‘ say yt was too much Los for me, for this young Manne, he was my greatest  
 ‘ Comforte, next her Majestie, of all the Worlde, and, if I could buy his Liefte  
 ‘ with all I have, to my Sherte I would geve yt. How God will dispose of him  
 ‘ I know not, but feare, I must needes, greatly, the Worste ; the Blow in so  
 ‘ dangerous a Place, and so great ; yet did I never heare of any Manne that did  
 ‘ abide the Dressinge and Settinge his Bones better then he did : And he was  
 ‘ carried afterwards in my Barge to *Arnheim*, and I heare, this Daye, he ys still  
 ‘ of good Hearte, and comforth all aboute him as much as maye be. God of  
 ‘ his Mercie graunte me his Liefte, which I cannot but doubt of greatly. I  
 ‘ was abroad that Tyme in the Fielde, givinge some Order to supplie that Busi-  
 ‘ ness, which did indure almoste twoe Owres in continuall Fighte ; and metinge  
 ‘ *Phillip* commynge upon his Horsebacke, not a lytle to my Greafe. But I  
 ‘ woulde you had stode by to heare his most loyall Speeches to her Majestie ;  
 ‘ his constant Minde to the Cause, his lovinge Care over me, and his moste reso-  
 ‘ lute Determination for Deathe, not one Jot appalled for his Blow ; which ys the  
 ‘ moste greevous that ever I sawe with such a Bullet ; ryding so a longe Myle  
 ‘ and a Halfe, uppon his Horfe, ere he came to the Campe ; not ceasing to  
 ‘ speak still of her Majestie ; being glad yf his Hurte and Deathe mighte any  
 ‘ Waye honour her Majestie ; for hers he was whileste he lyved, and Gods he  
 ‘ was sure to be yf he dyed : Prayed all Men, to thinke that the Cause was as  
 ‘ well her Majestie’s as the Countrie’s ; and not to be discouraged, for you have  
 ‘ seene such Successe, as maye encorage us all ; and this my Hurte is the Ordi-  
 ‘ nance of God, by the Happe of the Warre. Well, I praye God, yf it be his  
 ‘ Will, save me his Liefte ; even as well for her Majestie’s Service Sake, as for  
 ‘ myne own Comforte.’

The rest of the Letter, relates to their Enemies Retreat, the Prisoners taken,  
 and the chief *Spaniards* who were at the Charge, with the Number of their  
 Forces ; the hazardous Enterprises of the Lord *North*, who, though bruised on  
 the Knee with a Musquet-Shot, yet, leaving his Bed, hastened to this Rencontre,  
 one Bcot on, and the other off, and went (as the Earl says) to the Matter very  
 lustily, &c. Signed *Roberte Leycester*.



As too much cannot be remembered with regard to Truth of this great Man ; I shall now recite what the Lord *Brook* writes <sup>k</sup>, of his Behaviour to the Time of his most unhappy End : ‘ The Horse he rode upon, when he was wounded, was rather furiously choleric, than bravely proud, and so forced him to forsake the Field, but not his Back, as the noblest and fittest Biere to carry a martial Commander to his Grave. In which sad Progress, passing by the rest of the Army, where his Uncle, the General was, and being thirsty, with Excess of Bleeding, he called for Drink, which was presently brought him ; but, as he was putting the Bottle to his Mouth, he saw a poor Soldier carried along, who had eaten his last at the same Feast, gaily casting up his Eyes at the Bottle. Which Sir *Philip* perceiving, took it from his Head, and delivered it to the poor Man, with these Words, *Thy Necessity is yet greater than mine.* And, when he had pledged this poor Soldier, he was presently carried to *Arnheim*.’

But of this it must be observed, that the Earl of *Leicester* says, in the Letter beforementioned, that, after his Wound was dressed, he was put in his Barge, and carried to *Arnheim* ; which Circumstance the Lord *Brook* might not know ; but he gives this further <sup>l</sup> Account, ‘ That the principal Chirurgions of the Camp attended him, with a true Zeale, compounded of Love and Reverence, to do him Good, and (as they thought) many Nations in him. When they began to dress his Wound, he, both by Way of Charge and Advice, told them, that while his Strength was yet entire, his Body free from Fever, and his Mind able to endure, they might freely use their Art, cut and search to the Bottom : For, besides his Hope of Health, he would make this further Profit of the Pains he was to suffer, that they should bear witness, they had a sensible natured Man under their Hands, yet one to whom a stronger Spirit had given Power above himself, either to do, or to suffer. But if they should now neglect their Art, and renew Torments in the Declination of Nature, their Ignorance, or Overtenderness, would prove a Kind of Tyranny to their Friend, and consequently a Blemish to their Science.

‘ With Love and Care well mixed, they began their Cure, and continued it sixteen Days, not with Hope, but rather such Confidence of his Recovery, as the Joy of their Hearts overflowed their Discretion, and made them spread the Intelligence of it to the Queen, and all his noble Friends in *England*, where it was received, not as private, but publick good News.

‘ Yet there was an excellent Chirurgion of the Count *Hollock*’s, who, looking with no less zealous Eyes than the rest, saw and presaged more Despair. The Count himself lay, at the same Instant, hurt in the Throat with a Musquet-Shot, yet did he neglect his own Extremity to save his Friend, and, to that End, had sent him to Sir *Philip*. This Chirurgion returning one Day to dress his Master’s Wound, the Count cheerfully asked him how Sir *Philip* did : And being answered, with a heavy Countenance, that he was not well ; that worthy Prince (having more Sense of his Friend’s Wounds than his own) cried out, *Away Villain, never see my Face again, till thou bring better News of that Man’s Recovery ; for whose Redemption, many such as I were happily lost.*

‘ After the sixteenth Day was past, and the very Shoulder-bones of this delicate Patient worn through his Skin, with constant and obedient Posturing his Body to their Art ; he judiciously observing the Pangs his Wound stung him with by Fits, together with many other Symptoms of Decay, few or none of Recovery, began rather to submit his Body to these Artists, than any farther to believe in them. During which Suspense, he one Morning, lifting up the Clothes for Change and Ease of his Body, smelt some extraordinary noisome Savor about him, differing from Oils and Salves, as he conceived ; and, either out of natural Delicacy, or, at least, Care not to offend others, grew a little troubled with it ; which they that sat by perceiving, besought him to let them know what sudden Indisposition he felt : Sir *Philip* ingeniously told it, and

<sup>k</sup> Life, p. 144.<sup>l</sup> Ibid. p. 145.



desired them as ingeniously to confess, whether they smelt any such noisome Thing, or no. They all protested against it upon their Credits. Whence he presently gave this severe Doom upon himself, that it was inward Mortification, and a welcome Messenger of Death.

Shortly after, when the Chirurgions came to dress him, he acquainted them with these piercing Intelligences, between him and his Mortality. Which though they opposed, by Authority of Books, Pareleling of Accidents, and other artificial Probabilities; yet moved they no Alteration in him, who judged too truly of his own Estate, and from more certain Grounds, than the Vanity of Opinion in erring Artificers could possibly pierce into. So that afterwards, how freely soever he left his Body subject to their Practise, and continued a Patient beyond Exception; yet did he not change his Mind; but as having cast of all Hope, or Desire of Recoverie, made and divided that little Span of Life which was left him, in this Manner:

First he called the Ministers unto him; who were all excellent Men of divers Nations, and before them made such a Confession of Christian Faith, as no Book, but the Heart, can truly and feelingly deliver. Then desired them to accompany him in Prayer, wherein he besought Leave to lead the Assembly, in Respect (as he said) that the secret Sins of his own Heart were best known to himself, and, out of that true Sense, he more properly instructed to apply the eternal Sacrifice of our Saviour's Passion and Merits to him. His religious Zeal prevailed with this humbly devout and afflicted Company: In which well-chosen Progress of his, howsoever they were all moved, and those sweet Motions witnessed by Sighes and Tears, ever interrupting their common Devotion: Yet could no Man judge in himself, much less in others, whether this Rack of heavenly Agony, whereupon they all stood, were forced by Sorrow for him, or Admiration of him; the Fire of this *Phoenix* hardly being able, out of any Ashes, to produce his Equal, as they conceived.

Here this first Mover stayed the Motions in every Man, by staying himself. Whether to give Rest to that frail wounded Flesh of his, unable to bear the Bent of Eternity, so much affected, any longer; or whether to abstract that Spirit more inwardly, and by chewing it, as it were, the Cudd of Meditation, to imprint those excellent Images in his Soul; who can judge but God. Yet, in this Change, there was little or no Change in the Object. For, instantly after Prayer, he entreated this Quire of Divine Philosophers about him, to deliver the Opinion of the antient Heathen, touching the Immortality of the Soul. First to see what true Knowledge she retains of her own Essence out of the Light of herself; then to paralelel with it the most pregnant Authorities of the old and new Testament; as supernatural Revelations, sealed up from our Flesh, for the Divine Light of Faith to reveal, and work by. Not that he wanted Instruction or Assurance; but because this Fixing of a Lover's Thoughts upon those eternal Beauties, was not only a Cheering up of his decaying Spirits, but, as it were, a Taking Possession of that immortal Inheritance, which was given unto him by his Brotherhood in Christ.

The next Change used, was the Calling for his Will, which though it may seem a Descent from Heaven to Earth again; yet such was the Goodness of his Nature equally dispersed, into the greatest and least Actions of his too short Life, that this Will of his remains a Witness to the World, that those sweet and large, even dying Affections in him, could no more be contracted with the Narrowness of Pain, Grief, or Sickness, than any Sparkle of our Immortality can be privately buried in the Shadow of Death.

Afterwards he called for Musick, especially that Song which himself had intitled *Lacuisse rompue*; partly (as I conceive by the Name) to shew that the Glory of mortal Flesh was shaken in him; and, by that Musick itself, to fashion and enfranchise his heavenly Soul into that everlasting Harmony of Angels, whereof these Concords were a Kind of terrestrial *Echo*: And, in this supreme



‘ preme and middle Orb of Contemplations, he blessedly went on, within a circular Motion, to the End of all Flesh.

‘ The last Scene of this Tragedy, was the Parting between the two Brothers, the Weaker shewing infinite Strength, in suppressing Sorrow; the Stronger infinite Weakness, in expressing it: So far did invaluable Worthiness, in the dying Brother, inforce the Living to descend beneath his own Worth, and, by abundance of childish Tears, bewailed the Publick in his particular Loss: Yea so far was his *true Remission* of Mind transformed into Ejaculation; that Sir *Philip* (in whom all earthly Passion did even, as it were flash like Lights ready to burn out) recall those Spirits together, and with a strong Virtue, but weak Voice, mildly blamed him for relaxing the frail Strengths left to support him, in his final Combat of Separation at Hand. And, to stop this natural Torrent of Affection in both, took his Leave with these admonishing Words:’

*Love my Memory, cherish my Friends; their Faith to me may assure you they are honest; but, above all, govern your Will and Affections, by the Will and Word of your Creator, in me beholding the End of this World, with all her Vanities.* And with this Farewel, desired the Company to lead his Brother away, and soon after died, aged 32.

Thus saith the noble Author, <sup>m</sup> ‘ You see how it pleased God to shew forth, and then suddenly withdraw this pretious Light of our Sky; and in some Sort adopted Patriot of the States General. Between whom and him, there was such a Simpathy of Affections; as they honoured that exorbitant Worth in Sir *Philip*; by which Time and Occasion had been like enough to metamorphose this new Aristocracy of theirs, into their antient and much honoured Form of *Dukedom*. And he again applauded that universal Ingenuity, and prosperous Undertakings of theirs; over which perchance he felt something in his own Nature, possible in Time to become an elect Commander.’

After his Death, which was <sup>n</sup> on the 16th of *October*, 1586, at *Arnheim*, the States of *Zeland* became Suiters to her Majesty, and his noble Friends, that they might have the Honour of burying his Body, at the publick Expence of their Government. Which Request was not permitted, the Queen, in Regard to his great Worth and Accomplishments, giving Order for his Burial at her own Expence.

Whereupon his Corpse was brought from *Arnheim* to *Flushing* <sup>d</sup>, and there kept 8 Days; from whence, on the 1st of *November*, he was brought to the Sea-side, the *English* Garrison, of 1200 Men, being under Arms, marching 3 and 3, the Ensigns trailing; the Burghers of the Town following; and his Body embarked under a triple Discharge of the small Arms, and great Ordnance. On the <sup>e</sup> 8th of *November*, he was landed at the *Tower* Wharf, and after conveyed to the *Minories* without *Aldgate*, where he lay in State for some Time, till his magnificent Funeral, on the 16th of *Feb.* following, in *St. Paul's Cathedral, London*, where, on a Tablet, fastened to a Pillar, was this Inscription:

A briefe Epitaph upon the Death of that most valiant, and perfect honourable Gentleman, Sir *Philip Sidney*, Knight, late Governor of *Flushing* in *Zealand*, who received his Deaths Wound at a Battell neare *Zutphen* in *Gelderland*, the 22 Day of *September*, and died at *Arnhem* the 16 Day of *October*, 86. Whose Funerals were performed, and his Body interred, within this Cathedral Church of Saint *Paul* in *London*, the 16 Day of *February* next following, in the Yeare of our Lord God, 1586.

<sup>m</sup> Lord Brook, in his Life, p. 161.

<sup>n</sup> Stow's Annals, p. 730.

<sup>o</sup> Ibid. p. 739.

<sup>p</sup> Wood's Athenæ, Oxon. Vol. 1, p. 184.



*England, Netherland, the Heavens, and the Arts;  
The Souldiers, and the World hath made fix Parts  
Of noble Sidney; for who will suppose,  
That a small Heape of Stones can Sidney enclose?*

*England had his Body, for she it fed,  
Netherland his Bloud, in her Defence shed:  
The Heavens have his Soul, the Arts have his Fame,  
The Souldiers the Grief, the World his good Name.*

His Burial was ordered by *Robert Cook, Clarencieux* King of Arms: First proceeded 32 poor Men in black Gowns, according to his Age; then Serjeants of the Band, Fife and Drum, Ensigns trailed; Lieutenant of Foot, Corporals, Trumpets, Guidon trailed; Lieutenant of his Horse, Conductors to his Servants; the Standard borne by a Gentleman; his Gentlemen, and Yeomen Servants, 60; Physicians and Chirurgeons, Steward of his House, Esquires, of his Kindred and Friends, 60; Knights of his Kindred and Friends, 12; the Preacher and Chaplains; the Penon of his Arms borne; the Horse for the Field, led by a Footman; a Page riding with a broken Lance; a barbed Horse led by a Footman; a Page on Horseback carrying a Battle-Axe, the Head downward; Yeomen-Ushers to the Heralds; the great Banner borne by a Gentleman; *Portcullis* bearing the gilt Spurs; *Bluemantle* the Gauntlets; *Rouge Dragon* the Helmet and Crest; *Richmond* the Shield of Arms; *Somerset* the Coat of Arms; *Clarencieux* King of Arms; Gentleman-Usher to the Corpse; 2 Bannerolls; the Corpse covered with a velvet Pall, carried by 14 Yeomen; 2 Bannerolls following; Sir *Robert Sidney*, chief Mourner; Mourners Assistants; 4 Knights; two Gentlemen-Ushers to the Noblemen; the Earls of *Huntington, Leicester, Pembroke, and Essex*; Barons *Willoughby* and *North*, Supporters of the Pall; States of *Holland* 7 [from the 7 Provinces] in Black; the Sword-Bearer of *London* on Horseback; the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen on Horseback, in their scarlet Gowns lined with Ermin; the Company of Grocers in *London*, in their Livery Gowns, 120 [Sir *Philip* being free of their Company]; Citizens of *London* practised in Arms, marched 3 and 3, in the Front, the Captain, Lieutenant, and 3 Targets; Musketeers 4 Ranks, Drums and Fife; Small-Shot 20 Ranks; Pikes 20 Ranks; Halberds 4 Ranks; Chief Officers of the Field, Drums, Fife, and Ensign; in the Rear, Halberds 3 Ranks, Pikes 15 Ranks, Drums and Fife, Small-Shot 15 Ranks, Musketeers 3 Ranks, &c. and, when the Corpse were interred, they honoured him with a double Volley of Shot.

So general was the Lamentation for him, that, for many Months after, it was<sup>a</sup> accounted indecent for any Gentleman of Quality, to appear at Court or City, in any light or gaudy Apparel. King *James* honoured him with an Epitaph of his own Composition: The Muses of *Oxford*, lamenting much for his Loss<sup>b</sup>, composed Verses to his Memory, printed in *Quarto* at *Oxon*, 1587: The most ingenious University of *Cambridge*, did likewise greatly lament his Death, in Verses of their Composition, published by *Alex. Nevile*, one of their Members, *Quarto*, 1587.

The Lord *Brook* hath given an excellent Character of his Will; and, it being not already communicated to the Publick, I shall here insert it:

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN<sup>c</sup>, I Sir *Philipp Sydney*, Knight, fore wounded in Body, but whole in Mind, all Praises be to God, do make this my Last Will and Testament, in Manner and Form following: First, I bequeath my Soul to Almighty God that gave it me, and my Body to the Dust from whence it came. *Item*, I give and bequeath, and do endow Dame *Franclucis Sidney*, my Wife, of the one Half of all my Mannors, Lands, Tenements, Rents, Rights, and Reversions, with all and singular the Appurtenances and Commo-

<sup>a</sup> Life of Sir Ph. Sydney, before his *Arcadia*, p. 17.  
Leicest. qu. 57. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.

<sup>b</sup> Wood, præd. 185.

<sup>c</sup> Ex Regist.



dities whatsoever, for and during her natural Life only. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my Brother *Thomas Sydney*, and to the Heirs Male of his Body lawfully begotten, so much of my Lands as is now worth yearly C l. *English* Money, or may so be lett by Year, to be assigned and set out to him by my Brother *Robert Sydney*, so soon as conveniently he may, after my Death; and, if he do not so assigne the same, then I beseech and will, that the Right Honourable the Earl of *Huntingdon*, by himself, or some other chosen by him, do it; always excepted, that it be not assigned, out of the Mannor of *Penshurst*, nor of any Parcel thereof. *Item*, I will, and absolutely authorise, the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, and my Brother *Robert Sydney*, or either of them, to sell so much of my Lands lying within the Countys of *Lincoln*, *Sussex*, or *Southampton*, as shall pay all my Debts, as well those of my Father, deceased, as of mine own; beseeching them to hasten the same, and to pay the Creditors with all possible Speed, according to that Letter of Attorney, which Sir *Francis Walsingham* already hath, sealed and subscribed by me to that End. Which Letter of Attorney, I do hereby confirm and ratifie, so far forth, as concerneth for that Purpose, to all Effect of Law. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, and to the Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten, and, for Default of such Issue, to my Brother *Thomas Sydney*, and to the Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten, all other my Lands, Tenements, Rights, Reversions, and Commodities whatsoever, with all and singular their Appurtenances, together with the Reversion and Inheritance in Fee, of all those Lands, with the Appurtenances, which I have before bequeathed to my Wife, during her Life natural. And the Remainder of those Lands which I have also bequeathed to my Brother *Thomas*, and to his Heirs Males, upon this Condition, that he, the said *Robert Sydney*, or his Heirs, do well and truly pay to *Elizabeth Sydney*, my Daughter, the full and entire Sum of four thousand Pounds of *English* Money, at, or before, the Feast of *St. Michael the Arch Angel*, which shall be in the Year of our Lord God, one thousand five hundred eighty and eight. And that he, or his Heirs, do also pay yearly such Annuities, as hereafter, in this my Will, I have bequeathed to my Servants, in Consideration of their Services. Which Sum of four thousand Pounds, so to be paid by my said Brother, I give unto my said Daughter for her Portion. And pray the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, or the other, whom the Law shall appoint Tutors over her, to put to the best Behoofe, for the better Preferment of my said Daughter, either by Purchase of Land or Lease, or other good and godly Use, but in no Case to let it out for any *Usury* at all. Provided always, that if Dame *Frances Sydney*, my Wife, be now with Child with Issue Male, and that that Issue Male liveth, that then my Will and Bequest to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, of my Lands, with their Appurtenances, aforesaid, be merely void to all Effect, as though it had never been; any Clause, Word, Sentence, or Construction to the Contrary, notwithstanding. And then I will and bequeath, that my Daughter, *Elizabeth Sydney*, shall have two Parts of all my Lands before bequeathed to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, for and untill she, or her Tutors for her, have clearly received, or may well receive, the Sum of four thousand Pounds, for her Portion, as aforesaid. But, if so be my Wife be now with Child with Issue Female, then I will, that my Brother *Robert Sydney* shall have my Lands, to him and his Heirs Males, as before I have bequeathed, paying further to that Issue Female, my Daughter, the Sum of one thousand Pounds *English* Money, at the Feast of *St. Michael the Arch Angel*, which shall be in the Year of our Lord God, one thousand five hundred eighty and eight. Which Sum, together with the said four thousand Pounds, before bequeathed to *Elizabeth Sydney*, my Daughter, and by my Brother *Robert* to be paid; I then will, to be equally divided between them, and the one to have as much as the other, in every Condition. *Item*, I will, that if my Wife be now with Child of Issue Male, and that that Issue Male dye without Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten, that then my Lands shall revert and come to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, and to the Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten, as before is bequeathed.



*Item*, I give to my most honourable good Lord, the Earl of *Leicester*, one hundred Pounds, as a Token of my devowed Service, and great Love, which I have ever borne to him in all Duty. *Item*, I give to my singular good Lord, the Earl of *Warwick*, one hundred Pounds, as a Remembrance of my Duty and great Love to him. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my dear Sister, the Countess of *Pembroke*, my best Jewell beset with Diamonds. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my most honoured good Ladys, the Countess of *Huntington*, the Countess of *Warwick*, and the Countess of *Leicester*, every one of them a Jewell, the best I have. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my very good Friend, Sir *William Russell*, my best gilted Armour. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my dear Friends, Mr. *Edward Dyer*, and Mr. *Fulke Grevell*, all my Books. *Item*, I give and bequeath to Mr. *Edward Wotton* one Fee Buck, to be taken yearly out of my Park at *Penshurst*, during his Life natural. *Item*, I give, grant, and bequeath to my Servants *Henry White*, *Henry Lyndley*, and *Griffith Madox*, several Annuities of forty Pounds by Year, to every one of them, for and during their Lives natural; to issue out and go out of those my Lands before bequeathed to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, and by him or his Heirs, or the Occupiers of those Lands, yearly to be paid to every of them, during their Lives natural, according to the true Meaning of this my Will, any Clause before written to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding. *Item*, I give to my Servant *Philip Jordayne*, and to his Wife, and to the longer Liver of them, one Annuity of thirty Pounds by Year, to be paid unto them by my Brother *Robert Sydney*, out of the said Lands before to him bequeathed, for and during their Lives natural, and the longer Liver of them. *Item*, I give to my Servant *Adrian Molgueros* one Annuity of twenty Marks by Year, for and during his Life natural, to be paid unto him, as to the other before is set down. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my Servant *Stephen*, now Prisoner in *Dunkirk*, the Sum of two hundred Pounds, to be paid unto him, either there, to redeem him thence, if there be no other *Mean*, or, after his Coming out, for his better Maintenance: Beseeching, most humbly, the Right Honourable the Earl of *Leicester*, and the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, to be a *Mean* for his Deliverance, to whose good Favour I commend the State of him, having lain so long in Misery. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my Servant *Tristram Gibbs* the Sum of twenty Pounds; and I do specially commend him to the good Favour of my Brother *Robert Sydney*, and pray him, to have a favourable Care over him, and of my Servant *Philip Jordayne*. *Item*, I give to every Gentleman, my Servant in Ordinary, which came with me in *November* last to *Flushing*, and have, since that Time, waited on me, the Sum of ten Pounds; and, to every other Gentleman, my Servant in Ordinary, five Pounds. And I give to all my Yeomen, which, in *November* last, came with me to *Flushing*, and since have waited on me, five Pounds; and to every other my Servants now in Ordinary, three Pounds. *Item*, I give and bequeath to Dr. *James*, for his Pains taken with me in this my Hurt, the Sum of thirty Pounds. *Item*, I give to the five Surgeons, which take Pains with me, in this my Hurt, to every of them, the Sum of twenty Pounds. *Item*, I will, that my Wife cause three Rings to be made, and, in every of them a Diamond, to be presented and given, one to the Right Honourable the Earl of *Huntingdon*, one other to the Right Honourable the Earl of *Pembroke*, and the third, to my very good Lady, the Countess of *Sussex*, in Token of my very dutifull Love to every of them. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my most honoured good Father-in-Law, Sir *Francis Walsingham*, one hundred Pounds; and to that most honourable Lady, the Lady *Walsingham*, my good Mother-in-Law, one hundred Pounds, to bestow in Jewells, or other Things, as pleaseth them to wear for my Remembrance. *Item*, I give and bequeath to my Servant, *John Vvedale*, in Consideration that he hath voluntarily released unto me his Title of *Ford-Place*, which I gave him, and in Consideration of his long and very faithfull Service to me, the Sum of five hundred Pounds *English* Money, to be paid unto him by my Executrix, immediately after my Death; and I pray the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, and other my very honourable good Friends,



Friends, to favour him much for my Sake, and to let him have Access unto them, and their Countenances and Help in his good and honest Causes, whensoever he shall need them. *Item*, I pray and beseech the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, to favour my Servant, *John Langford*, and to be the *Mean* to her Majesty, that he may have the Keeping of *Oxford Park*, or to use other good *Mean*, as it pleaseth him, that my Servant may still enjoy the same hereafter, as heretofore he hath done by the Grant of my Father. *Item*, I will, that my Brother *Robert Sydney* shall also pay to mine Executrix, out of those my Lands to him bequeathed, as aforesaid, all my Legacys given by this my Will, and that she again pay them according to my Bequest and Meaning. Or else I will and authorize the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, to sell so much Lands as I have bequeathed to my Brother *Robert*, as he may, with the Sum of Money which he shall receive for the same, pay to mine Executrix, and she again, to pay them over all those Legacys whatsoever, which I have bequeathed, as aforesaid. *Item*, I pray mine Executrix to be good, and to give so much Money, as to her Discretion shall seem good, to those mine old Servants, to whom by Name particularly I have given nothing to; referring it to her, as she shall think good. *Item*, The rest of all my Goods, moveable and immoveable, and all my Chattels, I give and bequeath to my most dear and loving Wife, Dame *Frances Sydney*, whom I make my sole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament. And I constitute and appoint the Right Honourable the Earl of *Leicester*, the Earl of *Huntingdon*, the Earl of *Warwick*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, and Sir *Francis Walsingham*, jointly and severally, Supervisors of this my Will and Testament: Beseeching them to have an honourable Care to see the Things performed, according to my true Meaning therein contained. Given under my Hand and Seal at *Arham*, the last Day of *September*, one thousand five hundred eighty and six, and in the eight and twentyeth Year of the Reign of my most gracious Sovereign, Queen *Elizabeth*, of *England*, &c. *Ph. Sydney*. I give and bequeath to my dear Friend, *William Hungate*, one Ring to be made for him, with my Name engraven in it, of twenty Pounds Vallue, for him to wear in my Remembrance. *Item*, I give to her Majesty, my most gracious Sovereign, one Jewell, worth one hundred Pounds, which I pray Sir *Henry Goodier*, my good Cousin and Friend, to present to her Royal Highness, as a Remembrance of my most loyal and bounden Duty to her Majesty. *Item*, I will, that a Jewell, of twenty Pounds Value, be bought and presented in like Manner by him, to my singular good Friend, Sir *Thomas Hennage*, in Token of my great Love unto him. Signed, sealed, and delivered to *Henry Lyndley*, the Day and Year aforesaid, in the Presence of Us, *William Hungate*, *John Vvedale*, *Phillippi Jordan*, *George Digby*, *Henry Goodier*.

A CODICIL to be annexed to my Will, on *Monday* the seventeenth of *October*, a thousand five hundred eighty six. *First*, I add unto my Will these Parts and Legacys following: I give and bequeath to Captain *Richard Harte* the yearly Annuity of ten Pounds, to issue and go out of my Lands, before bequeathed to my Brother *Robert Sydney*, during his Life natural. *Item*, I give to Mr. *Temple* the yearly Annuity of thirty Pounds by Year, to be in like Manner paid, during his Life natural. *Item*, I give and bequeath to *Ivert*, the Bone-setter, twenty Pounds. *Item*, I give to Mr. *Marten*, my Surgeon, twenty Pounds. *Item*, I give to *Roger*, my Apothecary, six Pounds 13 s. 4 d. *Item*, I give to the four Surgeons, before named in my Will, viz. *Goodridge*, *Kelley*, *Adrian*, and *John*, every of them ten Pounds a Piece more. *Item*, I give to the Doctor, that came to me Yesterday, twenty Pounds more. *Item*, I give to my most honourable Lord, the Earl of *Leicester*, my best Hangings for one Chamber, and the best Piece of Plate I have. *Item*, I give to my beloved and much honoured Lord, the Earl of *Essex*, my best Sword. *Item*, I give to my noble Lord, the Lord *Willoughby*, one other Sword, the best I have. *Item*, I give to Mr. *Gifford*, Minister, twenty Pounds. *Item*, I give to Mr. *Fountain*, the Minister,



Minister, twenty Pounds. *Item*, I give to my good Friends, Sir George Digbie, and Sir Henry Goodere, either of them a Ring.

Ge. Digby. H. Goodere.

Philip Sydney.

Which Will was proved in the *Prerogative* Court of *Canterbury*, 19 June, 1589, and Administration granted to the Lady Frances, his Relict, and Executor.

The Authors that have given Characters of Sir Philip Sydney, and his Writings, are too numerous to insert; I shall, therefore, only mention, what the learned Camden has said of him and his Family: 'The River Medway runs by Penshurst, the Seat of the antient Family of the Sidneys, descended from William de Sidney, Chamberlain to King Henry the Second; of which Family, was Henry Sidney, the famous Lord Leivt. of Ireland, who, by the Daughter of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, and Earl of Warwick, had Philip and Robert: But Philip is not to be omitted without an unpardonable Crime; (the great Glory of that Family, the great Hopes of Mankind, the most lively Pattern of Virtue, and the Darling of the learned World) who hotly engaging the Enemy at Zutphen, in Gelderland, lost his Life bravely. This is that Sidney, who as Providence seems to have sent into the World to give the present Age a Specimen of the Antients; so did it on a suddain, recall him, and snatch him from us, as more worthy of Heaven than Earth, Thus where Virtue comes to Perfection, it is gon in a Trice; and the best Things are never lasting. Rest then in Peace, O Sidney (if I may be allowed this Address) we will not celebrate your Memory with Tears, but Admiration; whatever we loved in you (as the best of Authors, <sup>u</sup> speaks of that best Governour of Britaine) whatever we admired in you, still continues; and will continue in the Memories of Men, the Revolutions of Ages, and the Annals of Time. Many, as inglorious, and ignoble, are buried in Oblivion; but Sidney shall live to all Posterity, For as the Grecian Poet has it, *Virtue's beyond the Reach of Fate*.

It was 1st propos'd for him to be married to a Daughter of the famous Secretary Cecil, on the Recommendation of his Uncle, Robert Earl of Leicester; as appears from his Fathers Letter to the Secretary 14 Feb. 1569: But he took to Wife, Frances, only Daughter of the memorable Sir Francis Walsingham, Principal Secretary of State to Queen Elisabeth, by whom he left a Daughter, Elisabeth, born in 1585. <sup>w</sup> Scipio Gentilis, an eminent Civilian, wrote a Latin Poem, on her Nativity, entitled, *Nereus, sive de Natali Elizabethæ, illustriss. Philippi Sydneæ filiæ*. Lond. 1585. She was married to Roger Manners, Earl of Rutland; and by Inquisition taken after her Decease at East Grinstead in Sussex, 30th of Oct. in the 10th Year of King James the First, it appears that <sup>x</sup> she died without Issue, on the 1st of Sept. in the said 10th Year of King James; and that Robert, Viscount Lisle, Lord Sydney of Penshurst, is Uncle, and next Heir of the aforesaid Elisabeth, Countess of Rutland, and was of the Age of 48 Years and upwards: And by her Decease, was Heir to the Scite, Circuit, and Precinct of the late Monastery, or Abbey of Roberts-bridge, with the Mannor, &c. in Sussex. Also of the Mannor and Appurtenances, called Udiam, lying in the Parishes of Ewberst, Whatlington, alias Whatling, Sedlescombe, and Salerst, in the said County; and of one House for Casting of Iron in Ewberst aforesaid, and of divers Lands there, called Bad-lands: Also of the Mannor and divers Lands, called Halden, lying in Halden, Tenterden, Bowden, Biddenden, and Benenden, in the County of Kent. As also of the Gift of the Master and twelve Brethren of the Hospital, called *The Hospital of Robert, Earl of Leicester, in Warwick*,

Which Robert, Lord Visct. Lisle, so mentioned in the Inquisition, to be Un-

<sup>t</sup> Britania in Kent, Edit. 1695. p. 191.

<sup>u</sup> Tacitus of Agricola.

<sup>w</sup> Wood, p. 185.

<sup>x</sup> Efc. 10 Jac. 2. Sussex, no. 52.



cle and Heir to the said *Elisabeth*, Countess of *Rutland*; was also, by her Decease, Heir to *Ambrose Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick*, and *Robert Dudley*, Earl of *Leicester*, being 2d Son of Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight of the Garter, and the Lady *Mary Dudley* his Wife, Daughter of *John*, Duke of *Northumberland*, Father of the said Earls. He was <sup>y</sup> baptised at *Penshurst* 28 Nov. 1563, 6 *Elif.* And had a generous Education, both at Home and Abroad. <sup>z</sup> Having spent some Time in the University of *Oxford*, he, in 1578, was sent to travel, and to attain foreign Languages, as appears from a Letter of his Father, Sir *Henry Sydney*, to him, dated 24 *March* that Year, whereby we are informed that he was under the Direction of the famous Mr. *Languet*, Dr. *Lubetyus*, and Dr. *Sturmius*, at *Straßburg*; but the whole Letter is very remarkable, and will be printed in the Collections.

He took early to a Martial Life, and when his Uncle, the Earl of *Leicester*, was sent over with the Queens Forces, into the *Netherlands*, he <sup>a</sup> embarked with him, on the 8th of *December*, 1585, and arrived at *Flushing*, two Days after. He <sup>b</sup> was in that Engagement, with his Brother Sir *Philip Sidney*, and for his Valour was knighted by the Earl of *Leicester*, on 7 *Oct.* 1586.

Queen *Elisabeth*, by Letters Patent under the great Seal, dated 28 *Jan.* 31 *Elif.* 1588, grants to her beloved and faithful Subject, Sir *Robert Sidney*, that immediately without any Probation of his Age, or Prosecution of his Inheritance, out of the Hands of the Queen, her Heirs or Successors, according to the Course of the *Chancery*, or according to the Law and Course of the Court of Wards, and Liverys, or the Law of *England*, he should enter <sup>c</sup> into all, and singular the Baronys, Manors, &c. of which Sir *Philip Sidney*, his Brother, were possessed, or any of the Ancestors of the said Sir *Robert Sidney*. Also on 16 *July* 1588, he was <sup>d</sup> constituted Lord Governour of *Flushing*, one of the Cautionary Towns in the *Netherlands*. And the same Year was sent by the Queen to the King of *Scots*, <sup>e</sup> to compliment him for his Respect towards her Majesty, and to return him Thanks on his Conduct in the *Spanish* Invasion; as also to acknowledge his generous and cheerfull Adherence to the common Cause, and to promise the like Assistance on her Majestys Part, should the *Spaniards* attempt to land in *Scotland*. And returned <sup>f</sup> with Assurances, that the King would stand firm to her Interest, and would defend and assist those of the Protestant Religion. <sup>g</sup> The University of *Oxford*, soon after his Return, conferred on him the Degree of M. A. And in 1593, he was sent Ambassador to the King of *France*, to recommend to him the Protestant Religion, and its Professors, and to take Care of the *English* Affairs at that Court. Where he so demeaned himself, that *R. White*, Esq; 4 *Oct.* 1595, advertises him, of Sir *Roger Williams* being come from *France*, who told him, 'That the French King, in very great Kindness, asked hym for you (i. e. Sir *Robert Sidney*.) and said at his Table many good Words of you, and willed hym, to put you in Mynd of the Hownd you had promised hym. Madam, in like Sort, asked very graciously where you were. He thinkes you shall doe well to wryte to the King, and to her, as Occasion serves.

In 1597 (40 *Elif.* being joined in Command <sup>h</sup> with Sir *Francis Vere*, over those *English* Auxiliaries, which had been sent against the *Spaniards*, in Aid of Prince *Maurice* of *Nassau*, he shared in the Honour of that Victory, then obtained, at *Turnholt* in *Brabant*; when by their Conduct and Courage, 2000 *Neopolitans* and *Germans*, with their Generals, were slain. Of which Engagement, *Camden* observes, that he must leave it to the Pens of those who manage the History of the *Low-Countries*, to do Right to the Courage and Bravery of Sir *Robert Sidney*, and Sir *Francis Vere*, and to let the World know, how bravely they behaved themselves.

He was both before, and about this Time, in that Credit with the most

<sup>y</sup> Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst.

Annals, p. 711.

<sup>b</sup> Ib. p. 738.

<sup>z</sup> Wood's Athenæ Oxon. Vol. 1. p. 762.

<sup>c</sup> Pat. 31 *Elif.* apud Penshurst.

<sup>a</sup> Stow's

<sup>d</sup> Pat. eod Ann. apud

Penshurst.

<sup>e</sup> Camden's Annals in Hist. of Engl. Vol. 2. p. 549.

<sup>f</sup> Wood ut antea.

<sup>g</sup> Camden's Annals, ut supra, p. 574.

<sup>h</sup> Ib. p. 597.



considerable Persons of the Court (as the Letters to him, which will be published in the Collection shew) that the Queen was strongly solicited to make him a Baron, and to confer on him, the Place of Lord Chamberlain of her Household. The Earl of *Essex* (the Favourite of Queen *Elisabeth*) in the Sicknes of the Lord *Hunsdon*, Lord-Chamberlain, which terminated in his Death, 23 July, 38 *Elif.* 1596, wrote to him as follows :

*Robin,*

I am nott in Case to write largely either in Complements, or of Affaires. I do write affectionatly to you, as I must do ever : And wish thatt nott my Wordes, butt some other reall Demonstration, might make you know how much you are beloved of

PS. Love the Bearer, this honest valiant  
Captayne, the more for my Sake,  
for I will be thankfull for yt, and  
he will deserve yt.

*Your trew Freind,*

*Essex.*

20th of Febr.

Superfcribd,

To my Honorable Frind, Sir *Robert Sidney*,  
Knight, L. Governour of *Ulshing*.

*Robin,*

I do beleve now that my Lord Chamberlayne will dy. And I am resolved, yf his Lordship do teake himself to an other World, to deale earnestly and confedently for you, I know Lord *Brooke* doth resolve to try both his Credit with the Queen, and all his Frendes in this Cause. But I will protest unto the Queen against him, and avow, thatt I will think yt is the Reward of his Slanders and Practise against me, yf the Queen shold lay Honor upon him. Of these Thinges I will geve you Accompt; and so, with my best Wishe, I rest

You know by my Hand  
that this is my Wyves  
Pen and Inke.

4 March, 1596.

*Your trew Freind,*

*Essex.*

Superfcribed,

For my Lord Governor of  
*Flushing*, my very Deere  
and Honorable Frend.

Notwithstanding this Assurance, the Lord *Brook* was made Lord Chamberlain, and died in that Office.

Soon after the Earl, declining in Queen *Elisabeths* Favour, was drawn by his Followers and Dependants into those extravagant Designs, that brought his Head to the Block. The Friendship between his Lordship and Sir *Robert Sydney*, grew from their Services in the Warrs of the *Low-Countries*, and was cemented by his Uncle *Robert Dudley*, Earl of *Leicester*, having married the Earl of *Essex's* Mother, as also by the Intermarriage of this *Robert*, Earl of *Essex*, with Sir *Philip Sydneys* Widow. But tho' Sir *Robert Sydney*, was at some Meetings with his Lordship, and his Friends (whereof the Lord *Buckhurst*) in a Letter to him at *Flushing* (which will be published in the Collection) mentions the Queens Knowledge of his being at a Banquet, &c. and her Displeasure thereat; yet he had the Wisdom to be no Ways concerned in their Intrigues. And in 1601 (44 *Elif.*) when that unfortunate Nobleman endeavoured to raise an Insurrection, he was so far from being concerned therein, that he was one of the Commanders of those Forces imploied against him; and was sent by the Lords, to the Earl, to persuaide him to surrender.

<sup>1</sup> Camden, ut antea.



On King *James's* Accession to the Throne, he had his Patent renewed <sup>k</sup>, as Governor of the Town of *Flushing* and Castle of *Rumekins*, viz. on 22 April, 1603. And by Letters Patent, bearing Date the 13th of May following <sup>l</sup>, was advanced to the Dignity of a Baron of this Realm, by the Title of Lord *Sydney*, Baron of *Penshurst*, in *Kent*; in Consideration (as the Patent imports) of his noble Descent; his Wisdom and Prudence in several Negotiations; and his Conduct and Valour in the Wars in the *Low-Countries*. On which it may be observed, that his Aunt *Catharine*, Countess of *Huntington*, and his Niece, *Elisabeth*, Countess of *Rutland*, were then living, and Heirs of the Body of *Edward Grey*, and *Elisabeth Talbot* <sup>m</sup>, who had a Patent, in 15 *Edw. IV.*, to hold the Honour of Baron *L' Isle*, to them and the Heirs of the Body of the said *Elisabeth* his Wife lawfully begotten; with Seat and Voice in Parliament, as her Ancestors the Barons *L' Isle* had held.

Also the Lord *Sydney*, on 25 July, the same Year (being the Day of the King and Queen's Coronation) was <sup>n</sup> made Lord Chamberlain to the Queen; who afterwards constituted his Lordship general Surveyor <sup>o</sup> of all her Honours, Castles, Lordships, Mannors, Woods, Lands, &c. within the Realm of *England*. And, the Year after, he was <sup>p</sup> one of the chief of the Nobility and Officers of State, that signed the Patent for creating *Charles*, Duke of *Albany*, Duke of *York*.

In the same Year (2 *Jac. I.*) the longest Suit, that had ever been in *Chancery*, was compromised between his Lordship and *Henry Lord Berkley*, by the Arbitration of Sir *Thomas Forster*, Knight, Serjeant at Law, and Sir *Henry Montagu*, Knight, Recorder of the City of *London*; bearing Date 5 March, 1604, 2 *Jac. I.* <sup>q</sup>. By the said Arbitration, it was awarded, That the Borough of *Wotton*, Forriens of *Wotton*, *Wotton* Liberty, *Wotton* Mannor, and all other Villages, Parishes, and Hamlets, of late heretofore claimed to be within the supposed Hundred of *Wotton*, are and ought to be within the Hundred of *Berkley*, and so shall hereafter continue and be accounted of the Hundred of *Berkley*. And that there is not, nor ought to be, any such Hundred of *Wotton* in the County of *Gloucester*. And that all and every the Parishes, Villages, and Hamlets of *Wotton*, *Nibley*, *Cromeball*, *Huntingford*, *Bradley*, *Synwell*, *Wortely*, *Symondsfall*, *Comb*, *Uley*, *Oulpen*, *Arlingham*, *Cowley*, *Cam*, *Dursley*, *Woodmancote*, and *Kingscote*, supposed to have been within the said Hundred of *Wotton*, are within the said Hundred of *Berkley*. And that the Liberty and Return of Writs, &c. within the aforesaid Parishes, do of Right belong, &c. to the said *Henry Lord Berkley*, and to his Heirs.

And it is further awarded, That there is, and ought to be, a View of frank Pledge, and whatsoever to a View of frank Pledge appertaineth, of all the Resiants and Inhabitants within the Borough of *Wotton*. And a Leete and View of frank Pledge, &c. within the Mannor of *Wotton* Forrein, the Towns, &c. of *Nibley*, *Synwell*, *Wortley*, *Symondsfall*, and *Comb* only, as appertaining and belonging to the said Mannor of *Wotton*, and *Wotton* Forrein. And that the said Leet or Leets shall for ever hereafter be used and enjoyed, &c. by the said Lord *Sydney*, or the Owner or Owners thereof. And that the said Lord *Berkley*, his Heirs or Assigns, or any Steward or Officer, &c. under him or them, shall not hereafter claim, &c. or take on him or them, to hold, keep, &c. any Leet or View of frank Pledge, within the said Borough or Town of *Wotton*, or Mannor of *Wotton* Forrein, in the said Villages, &c. of *Nibley*, *Wortley*, *Symondsfale*, *Synwell*, or *Comb*, or of any Resiants, &c. therein. In Witness whereof, to the one Part of the Indentures Tripartite, remaining with the said Lord *Berkley*, the said Lord *Sydney*, and the said Arbitrators, set their Hands and Seals. And to another of the said Indentures, remaining with the said Lord *Sydney*, the said Lord *Berkley*, and the said Arbitrators, set their Hands and Seals. And to the 3d Part of the said Indentures, remaining with the said Arbitrators, as well the

<sup>k</sup> Rymer's *Fœdera*, Vol. 16. p. 501.

<sup>l</sup> Pat. 1 Jac. p. 14.

<sup>m</sup> Ex Rot. Cart. 15

E. IV. n. 18 in Turr.

<sup>n</sup> Vincent on Brook, p. 311.

<sup>o</sup> Ex Evident. apud Penshurst.

<sup>p</sup> Pat. 2 Jac. I. p. 21. m. 5.

<sup>q</sup> Ex Original. apud Penshurst.



said Arbitrators, as the said Lord *Berkley*, and Lord *Sydney*, set their Hands and Seals.

This Law-suit had been carried on in *Chancery* for seven Generations, from the Death of *Thomas*, Lord *Berkley*, who died on *Sunday*, the Purification of the Virgin, 3 *Hen. V.* 1415, leaving an only Daughter, *Elisabeth*, his sole Heir, married to that great Peer, *Richard Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, from whom, through the *Talbots*, *Greys*, and the *Dudleys*, the Estate descended to this *Robert*, Lord *Sydney*.

On the 4th of *May*, 3 *Jac. I.* he<sup>r</sup> was advanced to the Dignity of Viscount *L' Isle*. The Preamble to the Patent sets forth, That the King's most beloved and faithful Subject, *Robert*, Lord *Sidney* of *Penshurst*, Lord Chamberlain of his most beloved Consort, Queen *Anne*, is sprang from the most illustrious Blood of the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earls of *Warwick*, and *Leicester*, and Viscount *L' Isle*. And maturely considering the most grateful and most faithful Services that the said Lord *Sydney* performed for his most beloved Sister, Queen *Elisabeth*, in the Wars; as also his auspicious, faithful, and prudent Embassies to Princes in foreign Parts. Also his Wisdom, Valour, Dexterity, Integrity, and Fidelity shewed to him and his Crown, he creates him Lord Viscount *L' Isle*, and to the Heirs Male of his Body. And, for the better Support of the Honour, grants to him and them, an Annuity of twenty Marks, issuing out of the Counties of *Warwick* and *Leicester*.

The King, 3 *June*, in the 5th Year of his Reign<sup>s</sup>, grants to *Robert*, Viscount *L' Isle*, the Office of Steward of the Courts of his Mannors of *Timberwood*, *Raynehurst*, and *Blackmanstone*, with the Members, in *Kent*. And of *Peckham*, alias *East Peckham*, *East Farleigh*, and *Bexley*, in the same County, Parcel of the Lands and Possessions of Sir *Thomas Wyatt*. Also of the Mannor of *Maydstone*, with the Appurtenances, in *Kent*, Parcel of the Lands and Possessions of *Reginald*, late Cardinal *Poole*. To hold by him, or sufficient Deputies, during Pleasure; with all Fees, Allowances, &c.

On the 4th of *June*, 8 *Jac. I.* he<sup>r</sup> was, among the chief of the Nobility and Court, one of the Witnesses to the Creation of *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*.

It further appears, that, in the Year 1613, he was appointed to conduct the Princess *Elisabeth* (married to *Frederick*, Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*) to the Town of *Bacharach*, in his Dominions. And made great Preparations for their Reception at his Government of *Flushing*, where they were to land; as is evident by Letters from Sir *John Throgmorton*, Deputy-governor, in the Collection. The Elector was so taken with his gallant Behaviour and Deportment, as he earnestly requested him to accompany his Highness, and his Consort the Princess, to the City of *Heidelberg*; to which Request he complied, and was entertained there with great Honour, and with princely Diversions<sup>u</sup>, mentioned by *Stow*. They landed at *Vlissing*, 28 *April*, and the Lord Viscount *L' Isle* took his Leave of the Prince and Princess, 14 *June*.

In 14 *Jac. I.* the King being solicited by the States of *Holland*, that he would be pleased to render into their Hands, the Town of *Vlissing* in *Zeland*, with the Castle of *Ramekins*, and the *Brill* in *Holland*, with the Forts, &c. thereto belonging; held by Way of Caution, till such Sums of Money, as they owed to *England*, were reimbursed, on such reasonable Conditions, as should be agreed on for the Payment of the said Monies<sup>w</sup>. Thereupon, the King recommending the Consideration thereof to the Judgment of the Lords of his Privy-council; they, after mature Deliberation and Examination of Circumstances; and finding the Towns meerly Cautionary, wherein the King could challenge no Interest or Property; gave their Opinions, that it was better, on fair and advantageous Conditions, to render them, than longer to hold them at so heavy a Charge. On which the King, 22 *May*, 14 *Jac. I.* 1616<sup>x</sup>, Commissions

<sup>r</sup> Pat. 3 *Jac.* p. 12.

p. 688.  
& seq.

<sup>s</sup> Ex Evident. apud *Penshurst*.

<sup>u</sup> *Annals*, p. 308, & seq.

<sup>t</sup> *Rymer's Fœdera*, Vol. 16,

<sup>w</sup> *Rymer's Fœdera*, p. 783, 784.

<sup>x</sup> *Ibid.* 784.



and orders his right trusty and welbeloved Cousin, *Robert* Lord Viscount *L' Isle*, Lord-chamberlain to his most dear Consort the Queen, and Governor of the Town of *Vlissing* and Castle of *Ramekins*, in his (the King's Name) to render and yield up into the Hands of the said States of the *United Provinces* (or to such Persons as shall be by them deputed) the aforesaid Town of *Vlissing*, &c. with all Artillery, Ammunition, &c. performing, in all Points, such Instructions, as he should receive under the Hands of the Lords and others of his Council, concerning the Rendering up the said Town, &c. And further commands him to discharge all subordinate Officers, Captains, Soldiers, &c. And these Letters Patent, or the Enrolment, or Exemplification thereof, should be his sufficient Warrant and Discharge.

On 7 July, 1616, he was<sup>y</sup> installed, at *Windsor*, one of the Knights of the most noble Order of the Garter, at which Time he was Lord-chamberlain of the Household to Queen *Anne*; as appears by his Plate on the 11th Stall, yet remaining there.

On 26 April, 1618, 16 Jac. I, he<sup>z</sup> was commissioned, with *Charles*, Earl of *Nottingham*, *Edward*, Earl of *Worcester*, *Henry*, Earl of *Southampton*, *Thomas*, Earl of *Arundel*, and Earl of *Montgomery*, all Knights of the Garter, to examine the Registers, &c. of that most noble Order; and where any Thing should be found obscure, to make it clear; where Contrariety appeared, fitly to reconcile it. In the Preamble to the Commission, the King recites, That he had a special Care to uphold the Dignity of the said most noble Order, as appeared by his Choice of noble and worthy Persons. And, in Consideration of the Knowledge and Experience he had of the Understanding, Wisdom, and Confidence, he reposed in the Lord Viscount *L' Isle*, &c. and in their Faithfulness and Sincerity, being Men of Honour, and Knights Companions of the said Order, he commissions them, as aforesaid. Accordingly the Lord Viscount *L' Isle*, with three of the Commissioners, had divers Meetings, and debated several Things represented to them. And, at a Chapter held at *Whitehall*, 19 May, 20 Jac. I, they presented to the Sovereign nine Articles, subscribed with their Hands, which, for the Honour of the Order, they thought necessary to be observed. Whereupon the King, and 12 of the Knights Companions, confirmed them on the 22d of May following, in a Chapter held at *Whitehall*.

In 16 Jac. I, by Letters Patent, bearing Date the 2d of August, 1618, he was<sup>a</sup> dignified with the Title of Earl of *Leicester*, wherein the Preamble being remarkable, I shall insert it:

The King, &c. To all Arch Bishops, Dukes, &c. Greeting. Wee do esteem it to be the highest Part of Royal Dignity, by a benigne Aspect, not only to ennoble, but to advance to a higher Degree of Nobility, and to dispense the most eminent Honours amongst wise and valiant Persons. Wee, therefore, judging our Royal Crown to be as resplendant, and to shine forth the brighter, by our Royal Attention, in promoting Men of transcendent Virtue and Merit, and excelling in Council, to exalted Honours, as by the Jewels with which it is adorned. Contemplating, therefore, the Nobility, Candour, and Integrity, of our welbeloved and faithful, *Robert* Viscount *L' Isle*, Baron *Sidney* of *Penshurst*, Chamberlain to our most dear Consort, Queen *Anne*, and Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter: Who, with incessant Labour and Vigilancy, hath, for many Years past, always manifested himself a stout and faithful Subject, as well to our most dear Sister, Queen *Elisabeth*, as to us, and to this our Kingdom: And also calling to Mind the great Deserts of his most worthy Father, Sir *Henry* *Sidney*, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, Councillor to our said Sister, and President of the Council within the Marches of *Wales*, and Deputy of her Kingdom of *Ireland*: And the noble Descent of the said *Robert*, Viscount *L' Isle*, Cousen of the late famous Earls of *Warwick* and *Leicester*. Likewise revolving in our Mind his most acceptable Services and true Desert,

<sup>y</sup> Ex Collect. Tho. Meller.

<sup>a</sup> Pat. 16 Jac. I, p. 11.

<sup>z</sup> Ashmole's Order of the Garter, p. 195, 196.



as well in the Office of Governour of *Flushing* in *Zeeland*; as in his Embassies in *Scotland*, *France*, and *Germany*, and other his publick Services, concerning the State of our Kingdom: All which he hath ever accomplished with great Fidelity and Dexterity. Besides his good and acceptable Services performed to our most dear Confort the Queen. Wee therefore advance the said *Robert*, Viscount *Lisle*, to be Earl of *Leicester*, &c. with a Grant to him, and his Heirs Male, of an Annuity of 20 l. per Ann. payable out of the Customs and Subsidies of the Port of *London*, by the Hands of the Customers, or Collectors.

In 18 *Jac.* I, 1620, he was, <sup>b</sup> in a special Commission, with *Edward*, Earl of *Worcester*, Lord Privy Seal, *Thomas*, Earl of *Exeter*, and others of the Privy-council, to inquire into all and singular Apostacies, in Matters of Faith, Religion, Schisms, unlawful Conventicles, tending to Schism, against the Religion and Government of the Church established.

The Offices and Titles of Honour he held, as also the Letters to him (which will be published in the Collection) wrote by Persons of the first Distinction, both in the Camp, and in the Court, demonstrate his great Worth; and in Effect, shew that he had few who were superior to him, in Abilities and Judgment. Sir *John Trogmorton*, Deputy Governor of *Flushing* (on a Dispute between him, and the Serjeant-Major) by his Letter, dated at *Flushing*, Feb. 15, 1611; says he had been a Captain, in continual Action 22 Years, and the most Part of that Time with his Lordship.

He was married in the Life-time of his Father to <sup>c</sup> *Barbara*, only Daughter and sole Heir of *John Gamage*, of *Coyty*, *Rhogied*, and *Lavibangel*, in the County of *Glamorgan*, Esq; Son and Heir of *John Gamage*, Esq; and *Wenlian* his Wife, <sup>d</sup> paternally descended from *Jestin*, Prince of *Glamorgan*, and *Morganock*, as the *Welch* Heralds assert. And the Family of the *Gamages* descended from *Pain de Gamage*, who coming over with *William the Conqueror*, had of his Gift, the Lordships now called *Gamage-hill*, in *Gloucestershire*, and *Maunsel-Gamage*, in *Herefordshire*: From whom, in lineal Descent, was *William Gamage*, who married, about the Reign of King *Edward the Second*, *Sarah*, 4th and youngest Daughter of Sir *Payne de Turberville*, the 7th, in lineal Descent, from Sir *Payne Turberville*; the 3d <sup>e</sup> of the twelve Knights, that came with *Robert Fitz Hamon*, when he conquered *Glamorganshire*, and had of his Gift, the Castle and Lordship of *Coyty*. Which Sir *Payne Turberville*, the Father of *Sarah*, married to *William Gamage*, as aforesaid, had three other Daughters, and a Son, Sir *Richard Turberville*, who dying without Issue, <sup>f</sup> entailed the Lordship of *Coyty* on the Heirs Male of Sir *Roger Berkerolls*, Knight, who had married *Catharine*, his eldest Sister; and in Default of such Issue on Sir *Richard Stackpool*, Knight, who married *Margaret*, the 2d Sister, and their Heirs Male; in Default on Sir *John de la Beer*, Knt. and *Agnes* his Wife, 3d Sister, and their Heirs Male; and for Want of such Issue, on *William Gamage* and *Sarah* his Wife, 4th and youngest Sister of the said Sir *Richard Turberville* <sup>g</sup>; Which Line of *Berkrolles* failed in the Heirs Male, by the said Sir *Roger*, who left an only Daughter and Heir, *Wenlian*, married to Sir *Edward Stradling*, of *St. Donats*, in Com. *Glamorg.* Knt. The Line of Sir *Richard Stackpole*, of *Pembrokeshire*, Knt. also failed in the Heirs Male; Sir *George Vernon*, of *Hadden*, in Com. *Derb.* being his Heir General, whose two Daughters, and Heirs, *Dorothy* was the Wife of Sir *John Manners*, Ancestor to the present Duke of *Rutland*; and *Margaret*, the youngest, was married to Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Knt. 2d Son of *Edward*, Earl of *Derby*. Also the Male Line of Sir *John de la Beere* failed in two Daughters and Co-heirs, *Elisabeth*, the Wife of Sir *Oliver St. John*, Ancestor to the present Lord Visct. *St. John*, and ——— married to *William Bassett*, of *Glamorganshire*, Esq; So that the <sup>h</sup> Inheritance of the Castle and Lordship of *Coyty* centered in the

<sup>b</sup> Rymer's Fœdera, Vol. 17. p. 200, & seq.

<sup>c</sup> Powel's Hist. of Wales, p. 125, 126.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid.

<sup>e</sup> MS. de Gamage præd.

<sup>f</sup> Ex Stemmate apud Penshurst.

<sup>g</sup> Ibid.

<sup>h</sup> MS. de Famil. de Gamage apud Penshurst.



Family of *Gamage*, by the said Entail; and the Heir thereof, *Babara*, Countess of *Leicester*, brought that, and other Lordships, to her Husband, *Robert Sydney*, the first Earl of *Leicester*<sup>1</sup>: She was buried at *Penshurst*, 26 of *May*, 1621; whereupon his Lordship married, 2dly, *Sarah*, Daughter and Heir of *William Blount*, and Widow of *Sir Thomas Smith*, of *Bidborough* in *Kent*; but the Earl dyed in a few Months after his 2d Marriage, leaving no Issue by her, viz. at *Penshurst* 13 *July*, 1626, 2 *Car.* 1, in the 63d Year of his Age, and was there buried, the 16th of the same Month. The Arms of this Earl, with several Quarterings, are impaled with his 2d Wife *Blount's* Arms and Quarterings, in *Chidingstone* Church in *Kent*.

His Lordship had 1 Issue, by his 1st Lady, 1. *Sir William Sydney*, Knt. born at *Flushing*, who died at *Baynards Castle* in *London*, unmarried, on the 3d of *December*, early in the Morning, and was buried on the 6th of the said Month, 1612, 10 *Jac.* 1. in the Chancel of the Church at *Penshurst*.

2. *Henry Sydney*,<sup>m</sup> born at *Flushing*, who died young, and was there buried.

3. *Philip*, who died young. *Rowland White*, Esq; in his Letter to *Sir Robert Sydney*, dated 25 *Sept.* 1595, relates, that Mrs. *Mary*, and *Catharine Sydney*, doth much profit in their Books. Mr. *William* dances a Galliard in his Doublet and Hose, Mr. *Philip* can go alone.

4. *Robert Sydney*, his only surviving Son and Heir, who on his Father's Death, in 2 *Car.* 1, was so found by Inquisition, now in the Chapel of the Rolls.

Also eight Daughters. 1. Lady *Mary*<sup>n</sup> married 27 *Sept.* 1602, to *Sir Robert Wroth*, of *Durance*, in the County of *Middlesex*, Knt. The famous Poet, *Ben Johnson*<sup>o</sup>, has several Epigrams, on this Lady *Mary Wroth*, and her Husband, *Sir Robert*; of which antient Family of *Wroth*, the present Earl of *Rockford* is the Heir, and in Possession of *Loughton-hall* in *Essex*, one of the Seats thereunto belonging. 2. Lady *Catharine*, Wife of *Sir Lewis Mansel*, Knt, and died at *Baynards-Castle* in *London*, the 8th of *May* and was brought to *Penshurst*, and buried there, the 13th of *May*, 1616. *Elisabeth*, 3d Daughter, died unmarried 1 *November* 1605. Lady *Philip*, 4th Daughter (so wrote in the Register of *Penshurst*) born 18 *August* 1594,<sup>\*</sup> married to *Sir John Hobart*, eldest Son to *Sir Henry Hobart*, Bart. Lord Chief Justice of the *Common Pleas*. *Bridget*, 5th Daughter, and *Alice* 6th Daughter, are buried in the Chancel of *Penshurst* with this Inscription in Capitals:

Here lyeth *Bridget* and *Alice Sydney*, Daughters of *Robert Sydney*, Knight, and Lord of THE House and Manor of *Penshurst*, and of Lady *Barbara* His Wife. Which *Alice*, being of THE Age of six Moneths, Died the xxv of *March* Anno 1599. And *Bridget*, of THE Age of Two Yeres And fower Moneths, Died the last of *June* the same Yeere.

Lady *Barbara*, 7th Daughter, was<sup>p</sup> married to *Thomas Viscount Strangford* of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and of *Ostenhauger* in *Kent*; and 2dly, to *Sir Thomas Culpeper*, of *St. Stephens*, near *Canterbury*. She was baptised 22 *Dec.* 1599; the Earl of *Worcester* was her Godfather; and the Countess of *Nottingham*, and the Lady *Buckhurst*, Godmothers. *Vere*, 8th Daughter, died unmarried and was buried at *Penshurst*, 23 *July*, 1606.

*Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, only surviving Son and Heir, beforementioned, was born at *Baynards-Castle*, *London*. *Rowland White*, Esq; in his Letter to *Sir Robert Sydney* at *Flushing*, acquaints him, that his Lady was brought to Bed of a goodly fat Son, *Monday* 1 *Dec.* 1595, 9 of the Clock at Night; and that

<sup>1</sup> Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst.

<sup>k</sup> Ibid.

<sup>l</sup> Ibid.

<sup>m</sup> Vincent on Brook, p. 311.

<sup>312.</sup> <sup>n</sup> Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst.

<sup>\*</sup> Vide his Works, Vol. 3.

<sup>o</sup> Vincent ut antea.

<sup>p</sup> Ex Stemmate.



there Days before, she was taken ill of the Measles, was full of them, and had withall a great Cough, and gentle Feaver, and was much afflicted at his Absence. That the Child was also full of the Measles, mostly in the Face, yet sucked the Nurse, as well as any Child could, and cried as strongly, so that there was great Hopes of his Living. And by another Letter, dated 3 Jan. 1595, he gives him an Account, ' That his Son was christned on *New Years* Eve, by the Lord *Montjoy*, the Lord *Compton*, and the Lady *Rich*; they named him *Robert*, by the Lady *Rich*'s Desire. They gave three very fair standing Bowles, all of one Fashion, worth 20 l. each. There was at the Baptism the Lady *Cumberland*, and her Daughter; the Lady *Essex*, her Daughter and Son; the Lady *Dacres*, and her Daughter; with many others:'

After being well grounded in Grammar-Learning, he was sent to the University of *Oxford*, where he became an industrious Student, as appears by a Letter <sup>a</sup> from his Tutor to the Viscountess *Lisle*, his Mother, bearing Date at *Oxford*, the 11th of *April*, 1608. On leaving the University, his Father conferred on him a Company in his Regiment at *Flushing*,<sup>r</sup> and after surrendered to him the Command of the said Regiment. In 1616, he was made Knight of the Bath, at the Creation of *Charles*, Prince of *Wales*; and bearing the Title of Lord Viscount *Lisle*, was chosen one of the Knights for the County of *Kent*, in that Parliament, which met in the 18th Year of King *James the First*,<sup>s</sup> and one of the Knights for *Monmouthshire*, in 21 Jac. 1. as also in the first Parliament of King *Charles the First*.

In 1618, he married the Lady *Dorothy Percy*, eldest Daughter of that great Peer, *Henry* Earl of *Northumberland*, by *Dorothy* his Wife, Daughter of *Walter Devereux* Earl of *Essex*, who was Son<sup>t</sup> of *Cicely Bouchier*, Sister and Heir of *Henry Bouchier* Earl of *Essex*, Son and Heir of Sir *William Bouchier*, Viscount *Bouchier*, Son and Heir of *William* Earl of *Essex*, by<sup>u</sup> *Anne* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Gloucester*, 6th Son of King *Edward the Third*. By Indenture, 11 July, 1618, 16 Jac. 1, his Father, then Lord Visc. *Lisle*,<sup>w</sup> settled on him, after his Marriage, and on the Lady *Dorothy* his Wife, Daughter of *Henry*, Earl of *Northumberland*, an Annuity of 200 l. per Ann. payable out of his Mannors of *Penshurst*, *Cepham*, *Ensfield*, &c. And, if he should cease to enjoy the Profits of Colonel of a Regiment in the *Low-Countries*, agrees to give him 400 l. per Ann. more.

In 1620, being ill used by *James Hay*, Lord Viscount *Doncaster* (a great Favourite of King *James*, who had married the Lady *Lucy*, his Wife's Sister) he thought proper to resent it; and has left, in his own Hand-writing, the Occasion thereof, as follows:

*The Lord Viscount Lisles \* Relation of the Difference he had with the Lord Doncaster, after Earl of Carlisle.*

I Had often desyred to know of my Lord *Doncaster*, what the Reason of his Strangenes unto me was, and hauing for that Cause forborne his Hous for some Time, when my Father lay at *Marblane* (An. 1620) I writt vnto him to that Purpose (the Coppy of my Letter, and his Answere, I haue yet) but could neuer know of him what I had donn, or what he had bin told of me, or what he suspected I had bin faulty in towards him; but still continued an vncertain and vnequall Fashion towards me, sometimes kinde, sometimes otherwise, with Neglect, and sometimes like a Stranger, with much Ceremony: Yet for some Reasons (especially the Loue which was between our Wiues) I frequented his Hous again, desyring only an outward Familiaritie, and neuer hauing it in my Ambition to be his Bosome Freind. This continued untill his first Returne out of *France*; then I went to *London* to congratulat his Arriual, when I found him courteous and respectiue, but not kinde nor fa-

<sup>a</sup> Ex Original. apud Penshurst.

<sup>r</sup> Ex Autog.

<sup>s</sup> Ex Collect. Br. Willis Arm.

<sup>t</sup> Vincent on Brook. p. 183, 184, & 187.

<sup>u</sup> Rot. Fin. 7 H. V. m. 26.

<sup>w</sup> Ex Evi-

dent apud Penshurst.

<sup>x</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.



miliar to me, as I saw him to many others: Yet when I had acquainted him (out of my Respect vnto him) with my Purpose to part with my Regiment, hauing no Meanes to beare the great Charges which it drewe me vnto, he offered me his Assistance, but did Nothing at all in it, till the Night before his Departure, and then spoke concerning that Business with my Lord of *Buckingham*, but to no Purpose or Effect, as I found afterwards. At his Going away, when I thought I had some Interest in him, I spoke some little Complement vnto him, offering vnto him my Seruice vpon any Occasion, wherein I might be vsfull, or seruiceable vnto him, and he gaue me only this Answer: *That he did much respect my good Parts, and was my humble Seruant.* This I thought strange, but yet, becaus he was then ready to take his Coach, I found it fitt to say no more vnto him, but to obserue how he would be at his Return again. Besydes when I offered to waite vpon him to *Douer*, or some Part of his Way, he told me, it would be too much Trouble for me, and that he would haue Nobody to go with him, but those that wer to go into *France*; becaus he went in Hast; and yet he spoke vnto Sir *Henry Rich*, Sir *Thomas Badger*, and some others to go with him, and had a Coach appointed in *Southwarke* to carry them, and bring them back again; this I thinke no Man will say, I had Reason to take kindly. At his last Returne, I went to see him at *Hanworth* (2 *August*) whither he came with the *French* Ambassador, Sir *Henry Rich*, Sir *Robert Killigrew*, and some other Company. At our Meeting I saluted him with as much Respect, and Gladnes of his Return, as I could express. He sayd Nothing to me, but that he was glad to finde me there, and then presently went from me to the other Company. And when I presented him with my Fathers Seruice, and told him that he would haue waited vpon him, but that he was not able; he sayd I am sorry my Lord is so lame.

From *Tuesday* till *Sunday* Night, he stayd there, in all which Time, he neuer spake Word vnto me, vnless it were to take an Argument out of anothers Mouth to crosse me, as he often did; and neither vsed me as a Stranger with Ceremony, nor as a Freind with Familiarity; but lett me be in his Hous, and sitt at his Table, without taking any Notice at all of my being there. Vpon *Sunday*, at his Going to Court, I told him I would go away next Day; he asked me, when will your Lordship come again? I told him I could not tell; and this was our Parting at that Time: For what I meant to say vnto him, I had no Time to do, by Reason of much Company; and therefore that I might a little expostulat his Neglect of me, and the Reason of it, I writt vnto him from *Croydon*, and desyred my Wife, to delyuer it vnto him, as she did (6 *August*) but he sent me an Answer by my Groome (the Coppy of my Letter, and his, I haue still). In my Letter, I am sure I intended Nothing, and I thinke expressed Nothing, but a ciuill Taking my Leau of him, since I was no welcome Man unto him. In his, ther were especially three Things, which I meant to speake with him, for they brought not only Discurtecy, but Reproofe, and I thought Letters would neuer bring the Business to any End, good or bad. So hauing Occasion to go to *Petworth* (13. of *August*) to waite vpon my Lord of *Northumberland*, and meete my Lords of *Pembroke*, and *Mountgomery* there, I found my Lord *Doncaster*; and there he kept his Word, That he would be a Stranger vnto me, for he neither spake unto me, nor saluted me, neither did I to him.

The next Morning I went vp into his Chamber, I protest vnto God, without any Desyre to quarrell with him, or to putt an Affront vpon him, as it may appeare by this. *First*, Becaus it was in my Lord of *Northumberlands* House, whom I would not haue willingly disquieted; and further, that I went, without any Kinde of Weapon in the World about me, into his Chamber, where he had not only Weapons, but 4 or 5 Seruants. My Desyre was, if it had bin possible to make a quiett End between vs, and yett I must confess I was resolu'd, though it were in his own Chamber, and amongst his Men, I would neither patiently receiue ill Language, nor any other Injuries. He was sitting in his Withdrawing Chamber, within the Parloir at *Petworth*, in the Window



Window where the Table is, and his Men pulling on his Breeches and Stockings, being soued together. I came gently into the Chamber, and made a Reuerence unto him; he stood vp vpon one Legg, and saluted me only with a strange Looke, as wondring to see me there. I told him I desyred to speake two or three Words vnto him, but that I would attend vntill he were at Leasure, if then he were not. Then he sayd, presently my Lord, for I haue but one Stocking to putt on, and so he sate down again in his Chayre; and I walked vp and down the Chamber a pretty While, and sometimes looked upon a Mapp, that hang there. At the last he rose, and came vnto me, and we went into another Window, on the other Syde of the Chamber; his Men stayd where they were, and might see what was donn, but I thinke could not heare any Words, that were spoken: Now these are the three Things, which I meant to speake of. *First*, he writt, that he perceiued I had taken a Resolution to be a Stranger vnto him, and his Hous, which had no other Foundation then an vnjust Imagination of mine own Brain. In this Point, I thought to giue him Satisfaction, and to shew that it was otherwise. *Secondly*, he prayd God I might be more constant in this Resolution, then euer as yet he knew me in any. In this Point, indeed I expected Satisfaction, or Reason why he should say so. *Thirdly*, he writes, that I shoulde finde him eternally a Stranger. Of this I meant to say something but not much, for I cared least for it. So thus I began, he standing with his Back to the Window, and I stoad before him, and both bare headed. My Lord, there hath bin a little Business between your Lordship and me, to which I wish there were some End putt; (to this he answered Nothing, so I proceeded) and, to that Purpose, I come now to waite vpon you: Hauing lately receiued a Letter from your Lordship, wherein I finde some Things that I thinke strange. Then he sayd, *What are those?* I answered, *Why? Your Lordship writes that yt was an vnjust Imagination of my own Braine. Now I beseech your Lordship to consider, that it was not so, for many other haue obserued the same that I haue.* Then he sayd, *My Lord, I do not vnderstand, what you meane by that Not so.* Then I (perceiuyng his Hart was not inclined to Concord with me) answered, *My Lord, it is a Thing that is only in me, and no Man but myself can tell how it is, and therefore I must say, That it is not so.* Then he, *By God, but I say it is so.* Then I, *Truely but I must say still it is not so?* Then he, *Then I must say, you say vnttrue.* Then I, *My Lord, it is fals.* Then he, *You ly.* Upon that I gaue him a Blow on the Face, and lett my Hatt fall to haue both my Hands free, and so we shuffled a little; I had his Head up against the Window, and held him by the Face, till his Men came in. Then thay pulld away my Cloke from me, and afterwards pulld me from him, but strooke me not. He stood still with his Back to the Window, and came not neare me; and one of his Men in pulling me from him sayd, Gods Wounds, my Lord, what do you meane to do? I answered, *What's that to you? He hath giuen me ill Language in his own Chamber, and that hath made me do as I haue donn.* So I went towards the Doore, but most Part backward, becaus I durst not well truit them, for they might haue donn me some Mischiefe behinde: When I came to the Doore, I turned to go out, and one of his Men catched me by the Breeches, and would haue pulld me back; but I gaue him a Blow backward, with my Elbow, and went out; and, as soone as euer both my Feete were ouer the Threshold, the Doore was locked; then I mist my Hatt, but, becaus the Doore was locked, I couldnt go in to fetch it: Hard by the Doore, I mett *Peter Dodsworth*, my Lord *Percys* Man (who can wittness that I made no Hast down the Stayres, and that the Doore was presently locked, and none followed me ouer the Threshold.) I sayd to him, *Peter*, there hath hapned a Difference between my Lord *Doncaster* and me, and his Men haue gotten away my Hatt, and haue locked the Doore, so as I cant go in to recouer it; therefore, I pray thee go about, and see if they will giue it you; so he went, but they had no Minde to open the Doore vnto any Body, and therefore he came back without it; and, when he knocked at the Doore, Nobody would answer: I went into my Lord *Percys* Chamber, to where I told what had hapned:



ned: And I assuring myself (I protest to God) that I was much aforehande (for I knewe I strooke first, and had him at Disadvantage enough, untill his Men parted) and that therefore, perhaps he might send vnto me, I made Hast to be gonn, becaus I would not stay till my Lord Chamberlain and my Lord of *Moungomery* should know of it, who perhaps might commaund me to stay; so I tolde my Lord *Percy* that I desyred to be gonn; but, while my Horses were making ready, he went and told all to his Father, who presently sent for me to his Bed, and asked me what had hapned; and I told him all, from my Lord *Doncasters* ill Vsing me at his House vnto the very End.

And then he sayd my Lord *Doncaster* had told him, the Night before, of some Vnkindnes between us, and had shewed him my Letter, and that he meant this Morning to bring us both together, that Things might be made well again. I told him, I was sorry that this had hapned vnder his Roofe; I had no Desyre of quarelling, but, hauing receiued the *Ly*, I thought I was forced to do as I had donn; but besought him to pardon me, if he were displeased for the Disquieting of his Hous: Then I desyred his Lordship to be pleased to lett me go away; but he by no Meanes would suffer me, but sayd he would rise, and go vp to my Lord *Doncaster*, to see if he could bring vs to a Reconciliation; for he was very sorry for this Accident, both in Respect of the two Sisters his Daughters, and our Wiues (to whom this would be a great Griefe, and occasion that they should not enioy one anothers Company so much as they had) and besydes, in Respect of himself, and his Sonn, who he sayd should not well know how to carry themselves to us, without Exception of one Syde or other: Then I answered him, *My Lord, for a Reconciliation, I thinke, it will not be, for I had Reason to thinke, my Lord Doncaster loued me not before, and I am sure he loues me wors now then he did; but, for my Part, I am in your Lordships Hous, and euery where your Seruant; therefore, since you commaund me to stay, I will not go, but will putt myself into your Lordships Hands, to do what it shall please you to ioinyne me to do:* So he thanked me very much, sayd he would presently rise, and I went with my Lord *Percy* into his Chamber, and there I stayd. My Lord of *Northumberland* went up to my Lord *Doncaster*, and, hauing talked with him a good While, came vnto me again; and told me, that my Lord *Doncaster* had spoken many Words of Complement concerning me (as how much he had esteemed my good Parts, and loued my Person, and that, for all this Accident, he would not hinder my Fortune any Way; that he knew I was in a State, that did more require his Lordships Assistance, then that did wherin himself was, yet he would neuer seeke to diuert any good Inclination of his Lordship to help me (to which my Lord of *Northumberland* answered: *No, my Lord, I thinke so, for I may do what I list.*) Then I answered: Why, my Lord, if my Lord *Doncaster* require nothing of me, I am sure I have donn as much or more to him, then he hath donn to me, and therefore I desyre nothing of him, meaning Satisfaction; so he went out of the Chamber (being one of the Cloister Chambers) and I followed him; but, as soone as euer he was out of the Doore that goes out of the Cloister into the Garden, he turned back to me, and beckoned to me, that I should not come out, but stay within; so I did, and he went on: But afterwards I thought with myself, that it might be, he had espyed my Lord *Doncaster* going towards the Bouling Greene; and, indeed, it was so: And, considering that it was not fitt for me to stay there, yet would not go out, because my Lord of *Northumberland* had commaunded me otherwise, I sent *James*, my Lord *Percys* Barber, to desyre his Lord to do me the Fauour to come thether, as he did; and, as soone as my Lord came, I said thus vnto him, My Lord, your Father, hath commaunded me to stay in this Place, and I obey him; but I beseech your Lordship to tell him, that it is much for my Disadvantage to stay within Doores, and my Lord *Doncaster* abroad; so he went to his Father, and brought me Word back from him, that he would not haue me, by any Meanes, to come into the Bouling Greene, but that we two should go into the Birch Walk, as we did; where my Lord of *Northumberland* came vnto vs, and, laying his Hand vpon me, sayd to my Lord *Percy*, *This Man will putt himself into my Hands, but by Gods*  
*Lord,*



*Lord, my Lord Doncaster will not*; and seemed to be angry that he would not, as I thinke he was: So he talked with his Sonn a pritty While, and then left us together again; and by and by I desyred my Lord *Percy* that we might go into the Bouling Greene, but, before we came into the Garden where the Roses are, all the Lords, and the rest of the Company, were gonn in; so we followed them, and, iust as we were comming into the Hous, Sir *Edward Francis* whispered to my Lord *Percy*, who then presently told me, that his Father had sent to desyre that I would not come vp with my Sword, becaus my Lord *Doncaster*, hauing none, might take it as an Affront. Now, indeede, I had putt on mine, becaus I thought to go away, but I took it of, and deliuered it to my Lord *Percy*, who sent it into his Chamber; so we went vp into the Dining Roome, where all the Lords were, and my Lord *Doncaster*: All of them expecting the Comming of my Lord and Lady of *Buckingham*, my Lord Tresorer, and other Company; so we were a great While in the Roome together, as if there had bin no Difference; only we spake not one to another. Indeede, afterwards, my Lord Chamberlaine, my Lord of *Mongomery*, Sir *Ben. Rudyer*, and I, being in the Withdrawing Chamber, my Lord of *Mongomery* sayd to me, I pray thee, Cousin, tell me how the Busines was this Day; so I begann, but my Lord Chamberlaine (as if he would not haue it told to him, being a Priuy Councellour) went a little further, but I thinke he might heere what was sayd; so when I had told all, my Lord of *Mongomery* seemed to like very well of what I had done, so did also Sir *Ben. Rudyer*; and this was all that past before Dinner; only I made this little Obseruation, that when all the Company (as is sayd before) stayed in the great Chamber, expecting the Comming of the Lords and Ladys, Sir *George Goring* came in alone, and, as I thought, looked strangely vpon me, wherby I imagined he had heard of the Busines. As soone as he entred the Chamber, my Lord *Doncaster* seised vpon him, tooke him into a Corner, by which, and theyr Earnestnes, especially his, I assured myself, that he made a Relation vnto him of what had passed; the like he did unto Sir *Hen. Rich*, who yet held the same Court Countenance, which he had used before, towards me. At Dinner, I sate almost right against my Lord *Doncaster*, but neither of us tooke Notice of the other. After Dinner, my Lord Marquis, and the other Lords, said they would go to Boules; so all of them, and the other Company, went down into the Bouling Greene, and I among the rest. But there was no Bouling; it seemed they had our Busines in their Consideration, for sometimes my Lord Marquis and my Lord Chamberlain were together, talking alone; sometimes my Lord of *Northumberland* with them, and sometimes my Lord *Doncaster*, and my Lord *Mongomery*, and my Lord Tresorer; and then changed, and went vp and down from one unto another, I thinke for Half an Hower: All the While I stode still, with the Gentlemen that were there; and my Lord *Percy*, Sir *George Goring*, Sir *Hen. Rich*, Sir *Ed. Francis*, Sir *John Leedes*, Mr. *Alford*, and some others at the Place where the Boules were kept. There we talked of nothing but Bouling, and Making Matches. At last, my Lord of *Mongomery* came to me, and sayd thus to me, *Faith, I would there were an End of this Busines*: Why (my Lord) sayd I, *there is an End of it already, I think*: No, sayd he, but this is not enough, and you neede not be unwilling, for you are very well; but, sayd I, my Lord, he goes vp and down yonder among you, and tells what he list, and I have not told it vnto any butt to you: Pish, said he, never feare that, for, by God, the more he speakes of it, the wors it is for him. Then my Lord Chamberlaine came vnto me, and sayd iust as his Brother had donn; and I told him I would do what pleased him: Why, sayd he, you are very well, what would you haue more? You haue strucken a Priuy Councellor, how the King will take that, by God I cannot tell; and, therefore, I thinke it will be best for you, if there be a good End made of the Busines now: Therefore, I pray, lett there be no Repitition nor Speech of being before hand: So I told him, *Well, my Lord, as please you*. Then he left his Brother and me together, and went to my Lord Marquis, and, after a few Words, they two went out of the Bouling Greene,



and tooke my Lord *Doncaster* with them ; butt, I protest, I neither knew whether they went, for I saw them not go out, but mist them presently. When they were gonn, then my Lord of *Northumberland* came where my Lord of *Mongomery* and I were, and, taking him by the Hand, sayd, Come, will you go along with me ? And my Lord of *Mongomery* pulld me with him by the Hand. Sayd I, My Lord, would you have me go ? Yes (sayd he) Yet, becaus I would have those that were neere to marke that they carried me away, I spoke aloud to my Lord of *Northumberland*, thus : *My Lord, doth your Lordship call me ? I, sayd he, pray come away ;* so as we three went together ; he told me wherfore they went, that there might be a fayr End between us, and that Time might perhaps worke that Friendshipp between us, which ought to be between so neere Allyes ; and therefore, I pray make no Repitition, nor speake of being aforehand : Why, sayd I, my Lord, I thinke this is to little Purpose, for no Man can make my Lord *Doncaster* loue me ; and I thinke all is donn that will be donn, for I assure myself, he will not meddle with me, and I find not myself any Thing at all aggrieved, that I should meddle with him : Well, sayth he, for all that, pray come along : Nay, sayd I, my Lord, I will go with you, and do what you will haue me : So we went into the Birch Walk, where the other Lords were, *Buckingham*, Chamberlaine, and *Doncaster*. When we came neere them, I went and saluted my Lord Marquis, for I had not seene him a good While, and, as I thought, he saluted me with a kinde Fashion and Countenance. Then my Lords of *Northumberland* and *Mongomery* went away, and left us four together (and then I perceiued that my Lord *Doncaster* had refused to putt himself into my Lord of *Northumberland*s Hands, expecting my Lord of *Buckingham*s Comming that Day, to putt that Complement upon him, and so had him there as his Freind ; or perhaps he suspected Partiality in our Father in Law). Then my Lord Marquis turning himself fully to me (for so I protest to God he did) and directing his Speech to me, he spake a good While, and in the Beginning, like an Orator, with Amplifications ; but this, I am sure, was the Purpose of his Speech : *How good a Thing Concord was among Men, and especially among Brothers, and especially among worthy Brothers, and therefore I am very sorry for this vnfortunat Accident ; and therefore my Lord Doncaster hauing done me the Fauour to make Choyce of me, as I thinke you haue of this noble Lord* (pointing to my Lord Chamberlaine) *we both, out of Respect to your Persons, and the Dutys of our Places, do desyre to put an End vnto this Business, and that Time may produce the Effect that we wish : And, therefore, I desyre you, that there may be no Repitition made, nor Speech of being afore hand.* Why, sayd my Lord *Doncaster* (vpon that) doth any one say that he is afore hand ? (I, according as I had promised, sayd nothing) but my Lord Chamberlaine slightly answered him, *No my Lord, I heare no Body say so.* Then I, addressing myself to my Lord Marquis, sayd,

*My Lord, I did for a great While much desyre my Lord Doncasters Fauour ; I thinke it was his Fault that I haue not still donn so ; and, therefore, if he desyre my Friendshipp, and my Love, I desyre his.* Then my Lord *Doncaster* sayd, *I am so much this noble Lords Seruant* (shewing my Lord Marquis) *that I will perform whatsoeuer he commaunds me, and therefore I am like enough to esteeme my Lord Lifle as my Freind.* Then I, turning first to my Lord Marquis, sayd, *My Lord, I am as much your Seruant as any Man ; and will go as far, and do as much for your Seruice as any Man, at least as I am able.* Then turning to my Lord *Doncaster*, sayd I, *Like enough, my Lord, What do you mean by that ? If you bring but like enough to me, I haue but like enough for you :* Nay (sayth he) *I say like enough, because it hath not bin so before.* (This, I confess, I could neither vnderstand when he spoke it, nor since). Why then, sayd I, *Like enough be it.* And so we all came away, and comming down, I sayd to my Lord Chamberlaine, we being alone, *Looke you, my Lord, I knew this would be all, for he will neuer loue me again ; and comes with his like enough.* Why, tis no Matter (sayd he) *a Man cannot tell what Time may do ; but you answered him with like enough too, and so all is well ;* and this is all.



Since there are, as I heare, some Things reported falsly, for they are Villaines, and Lyars, whosoever inuented them, and so I will prove them. They say, that, as he gaue me the *Ly*, he flurtd vp the Sleeue of his Gownd to my Face; but I sweare, to my Knowledge, he stirred it not. I see they would faine say he strooke me first; but that is so fals, as they haue not Impudence enough to say it; and sure, if a Man had a Minde to strike, he would rather do it with his Fitt, then a Veluet Sleeue, for so was his. Some, as I heare, do add Villaine to the *Ly*, but that is fals too.

That which is most obiected against me, is, that I left my Cloke and Hatt behinde me. It is true I did so, but to that I can say this for my self: First when I stroke him, I lett my Hatt fall (for I spoke with him with my Hatt in my Hand) that I might haue both my Hands at Liberty; likewise, my Cloke his Seruants pulld from me, taking me from him; and, when we were parted, I thought neither of Cloke nor Hatt, but, being angry, I went to the Doore. And first they cannot say I runn from them, for I went almost all the Way backward, and besydes, whill we two were alone, I am sure I made very little Shew of Desyre to leaue him, or of Feare of him: If he had made me go away, I protest to God I should curs the Day of my Birth; furthermore, I would faine know why they shutt the Doore so soone after me, and would not open it again. Nor so much as speake to any that knocked, unles they thought I would come back again to fetch my Hatt, and they were either afraid, or unwilling I should, or both: Nay more, I protest when I mist my Hatt, I would haue gonn to fetch it, if the Doore had not bin locked, or if I had thought of it when I went out. Neither was it Feare made me forgett it, for I saw him stand still at the Window all the While, till I was at the Doore; but I must confesse I was in Passion. Another Thing was, that my Lord of *Buckingham* should say unto me, that my Lord *Doncaster* was so modest, that he would not speake of being aforehand, and I could not; as I am a Christian, he spake no such Thing to me; if he had, why should my Lord *Doncaster* haue taken Hold of that which my Lord Marquis spoke to me (as it is written aboue) of being aforehand? The last is, that I had a Knock, and the Print of a Knuckle on my Forhead; I am sure he had a sound one upon his Cheeke, as many can wittness, and I protest I neuer saw any on my Face. Thus far his Lordship thought proper to leave under his own Hand, in Vindication of his Honour.

As his Lordship was in the House of Commons in three several Parliaments, till he succeeded to the Honour of Earl of *Leicester*, he was distinguished there for his eminent Abilities, and his Penetration and Judgment, where the Interest of his Country was concerned. The Observations he made, of Men and Affairs, shew his great Learning and Capacity, which are now at *Penshurst*, in his own Hand-writing. And I find, by his Journals and Papers, that he resided mostly at *Penshurst*, till he entered on the Stage of publick Business.

In 1632, he was appointed Ambassador Extraordinary to the King of *Denmark*, and thereupon made the ingenious *James Howell*, Esq; his Secretary, whose Letters have been so much esteemed, that there has been 6 Editions of them, since their being first published, in the Reign of King *Charles the First*. In one to his Father, dated at *London*, 5 May, 1632<sup>a</sup>, he acquaints him: ‘ That the Earl  
‘ of *Leicester* is to go Ambassador Extraordinary to the King of *Denmark*, and  
‘ other Princes of *Germany*, to condole the late Death of *Sophia*, Queen Dowager  
‘ of *Denmark*, our King’s Grandmother. She was the Duke of *Mecklenburgh*’s  
‘ Daughter, and her Husband, *Christian the Third*, dying young, her Portion,  
‘ which was 40,000 *l.* was restored her; and, living a Widow 44 Years, died  
‘ worth 2 Millions of Dollars; so that she was reputed the richest Queen in  
‘ *Christendom*. By the Constitutions of *Denmark*, the Estate is divisible amongst  
‘ her Children, whereof she had five; the King of *Denmark*, the Duchesse of  
‘ *Savoy*, the Duchesse of *Brunswick*, Queen *Anne*, and the Duchesse of *Holstein*.  
‘ The King, being Male, is to have two Shares; our King, and the Lady E-

<sup>a</sup> Howel’s Letters, 7th Edit. p. 215, 216.



‘ *lisabeth* is to have that which should have belonged to Queen *Anne* ; so he is  
 ‘ to return by the *Hague*. It pleased my Lord of *Leicester* to send for me, to go  
 ‘ Secretary in this Ambassage, assuring me, that the Journey should tend to  
 ‘ my Profit and Credit ; so that I have accepted of it, for I hear very nobly of  
 ‘ my Lord, &c.’

In another Letter <sup>b</sup> to the Earl of *Leicester*, at *Petworth*, dated 13 *August*, 1632, he informs him, That he had received 2000 *l.* in old Gold, of Sir *Paul Pinder*, for his Lordship’s Use, as also of Mr. *Bourla’mach*, Bills of Exchange for 10,000 Dollars, payable at *Hamburg*. And that his Allowance had begun, since the 25th of *July* last, at eight Pounds *per Diem* ; and was to continue, till his Return to his Majesty : That Sir *John Pennington* was appointed, to take his Lordship, and his Company, on Board at *Margets* : Which being performed <sup>c</sup>, the Wind stood so fair, that they were at the Mouth of the *Elve* the *Monday* following. In another Letter <sup>d</sup>, he acquaints the Earl of *Rivers*, that he is returned from *Germany*, whence there came two Ambassadors Extraordinary in one of the Ships Royal, the Earl of *Leicester*, and Sir *Robert Anstruther* ; but for my Lord of *Leicester*, I believe there never was so much Business dispatched in so short a Compass of Time by any Ambassador, &c.

His Lordship has left an exact Journal of his Ambassy, with Observations of the King, and of his Court and Country, with their unpolished Manner of Behaviour in that Age ; which will be printed (from the Original at *Penshurst*) in the Collection. His Lordship took over with him his two eldest Sons, and returned to *England* in less than three Months, arriving in *Margat Road* on *Thursday* Night late, 29 *November*, 1632.

His Lordship, in 1633, had that publick Spirit and Regard to Merit, as to prefer the learned and pious Dr. *Henry Hammond* to the Living of *Penshurst*, then vacant, and in his Gift. The celebrated Dr. *Fell*, Dean of *Christ Church*, who wrote the Life of Dr. *Hammond*. gives this <sup>e</sup> Account : ‘ In the Year 1633, the Reverend Dr. *Frewen*, the then President of his College (afterwards Lord Archbishop of *York*) gave him the Honour to supply one of his Courses at the Court ; where the Right Honourable the Earl of *Leicester* happening to be an Auditor, he was so deeply affected with the Sermon, and took so just a Measure of the Merit of the Preacher thence, that the Rectory of *Penshurst* being at that Time void, and in his Gift, he immediately offered him a Presentation : Which being accepted, he was inducted on the 22d of *August*, in the same Year.’ And thenceforth, from the scholastick Retirements of an University Life, applied himself to his Ministerial Function at *Penshurst*, where he was distinguished for his Piety, administering the Sacraments, relieving the Poor, keeping Hospitality, reconciling Differences amongst Neighbours, visiting the Sick, and catechising of Youth. The learned Author relates divers Instances of it, whilst he continued at *Penshurst*, from whence he was driven, <sup>f</sup> about the Middle of *July*, 1643, his Conformity to the Church becoming a Crime, and with Difficulty he maintained himself there till that Time, the Committee of the Country having summoned him before them, and used their best Arguments of Persuasion, Threatenings, and Reproaches, to make him resign. But he still went on in his regular Practice, and continued it till the Time before-mentioned, when, an Attempt in Behalf of the King being in his Neighbourhood, it was supposed his Doctrine and Example had some Influence ; and, on the Defeat, the good Dr. was forced to withdraw himself, 25 *July*, early in the Morning, in a mean Habit. This Digression of what happened, whilst he was at *Penshurst*, will not, I hope, be thought improper, as the Dr. was so eminent ; and first preferred by this Earl of *Leicester*.

In *May*, 1636, the King sent his Lordship, Ambassador Extraordinary into *France*, as he writes in his Journal, and that he took with him his two eldest

<sup>b</sup> Howel’s Letters, 7th Edit. p. 217.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid. p. 220.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid. p. 227.

<sup>e</sup> Life of Dr. Hammond, prefixed to his Works, p. 4. & seq.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid. p. 8.



Sons<sup>s</sup>. The King allowed his Lordship, during his Ambassy, four-hundred Pounds a Month, for his ordinary Entertainment, and extraordinary Services. His Negotiations, his Observations of the King of *France*, his Court, &c. will be published in the Collections. And it appears, that he lived more honourably, than any foreign Minister at *Paris*, in the highest Esteem of the King and his Ministers.

In the Year 1639, King *Charles* (as his Lordship writes in his Journal) ‘ sent for me to come out of *France*, at the Beginning of our unhappy Troubles and Differences with the *Scotts*: I was then in good Favour at the Court, made a Privy-councillor, and the King commanded me to follow him to *Yorke*; which I did, but it was not Gods Will that the King should follow the Advice which I gave him, to accomodate his Differences with the *Scotts*, and not to make *Warr*, where nothing was to be gained, and much might be lost (which the World hath since seen to be very true). The King then commanded me to return into *France*, in the same Quality of Ambassador Extraordinary, and there to stay till further Order from him: So I returned to *London*.

‘ During my Abode there, a Marriage was concluded between my eldest Daughter, *Dorothy Sydney*, and the Lord *Spencer*, which was consummated at *Pensberst*, 20 *July*, 1639. Being to return to *France*, as I did in *August* the same Year, I took my Son *Robin Sydney* with me, who was then about 13 Yeare old: My Wife was to follow me thether, which she did, with my new Son-in-Law, and my Daughter, his Wife, and arrived at *Paris* much about *Michalmas*; her two eldest unmarried Daughters, *Lucy*, and *Anne Sydney*, also came thither with her, and the others were left at *Pensberst*, with a Gentlewoman their Governess, Sister to Sir *Dodmore Cotton*, being very young, the Eldest about 10 Years old.

‘ In *May* 1641, I came into *England* by the Kings speciall Commandment, and the Death of my Lord of *Strafford* hapning at that Time, the King to performe his Promises often made unto me, to employ and advance me further in his Affaires, declared me Governor of *Ireland*, at the Councell Table, and soon after gave me Commission under the great Seal of *England*, to be Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*; but it pleased God, that, which should have bin for my Good, became unto me an Occasion of Falling, though not by my Fault, as I can make it appeare to any just and reasonable Man.

‘ Notwithstanding this Designation of me to that great Employment, the King commanded me to returne into *France*, to finish my Ambassage there, and to come into *England*, towards the Winter, to meete him in *London*, at his Returne out of *Scotland*, whether his Majestye was to go, as he did in *August*; and that then I should receive my full Dispatch and Instructions for that Government.

‘ In *August* that same Year 1641, I returned into *France*, and having there dispatched my Business, both for the Kings Service, and my own private Affaires, I took my Leave of that King and Court; and, bringing away my Wife and Family, we arrived at *London*, about the 5 or 6 of *October* that Year. And, at my Coming away, the *French* King gave me a Jewell, valued at 1200 *l.* and the Queen of *France* gave my Wife another Jewell, valued at 600 Pounds, but hardly worth so much\*.

V O L. I.

L I

‘ All

\* Letters of Privy Seal, at *Penshurst*. \* The King of *France* wrote to all his Lievts, commanding them to shew his Lordship in his Return to *England*, thro’ their respective Jurisdictions, all the Favour, Grace, and Assistance, that he should require. And in his Letter to King *Charles* expresses, ‘ The Care, the Wisdom, and Affection, with which the Earl of *Leicester* had always carried himself during his Embassy, for maintaining the good Understanding and Correspondence between both Crowns, which had given him perpetual Satisfaction and Contentment; and was one Motive, why he would have desired his Continuance longer at his Court, as he the King of *England* declared in his Letters, had not an Opportunity offered to employ him otherways; that he could not let him depart without these Tokens of his Affections, his Behaviour, during his Stay, having been most agreeable to him.’ But since it was, for so considerable a Charge as that of  
Lieu<sup>d</sup>



‘ All that Winter I stayd at *London*, till 25 *July* 1642, when on some Business I came to *Pensheberst*, with the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*, and much other Company. The Troubles increasing in the Kingdom, which was now divided into the Kings Quarters, and the Parliaments Quarters, from *Wales* I could not receive my Rents, after our *Lady-Day* 1643, which was in the Kings Quarters. But I found Meanes by the Way of *Bristol*, to get Part of my Rents for three half Yeares, though not all my sayd Rents.’

By an Order signed 20th of *July* 1642, by *H. Manchester*, *W. Say* and *Seale*, and *E. Newburgh*, Commissioners of his Majestys Treasury, his Lordships Allowance for 400 *l.* per Month, during his Ambassy into *France*, was stated, to the 25th of *November*, 1641, on which Day he returned into his Majestys Presence; and 3033 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* was then ordered to be paid to him. And 333 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* was remaining in Arrear. It further appears, that the Lords and Commons, 19 *Dec.* 1642, ordered his Ldship, ten Pounds, per Diem, as General of the Army in *Ireland*. And the Lords Justices of *Ireland*, *John Borlace*, and *Henry Tichborne*, ordered Sir *Adam Loftus*, Knight, Vice-Treasurer, and Treasurer of Warrs in *Ireland*, to pay out of such his Majestys Treasure, as remained in his Custody, to their very good Lord, *Robert Earl of Leicester*, 100 *l.* a Month for his Lordships Diet; 59 *l.* 6 *d.* per Day, for his Lordships Retinue of 50 Horsemen; 3000 *l.* per Ann. in Lieu of Cesse; an Allowance of 235 *l.* per Ann. in Lieu of 235 Beeves, formerly paid out of the County of *Cavan*. And an Allowance of 240 *l.* per Ann. likewise formerly allowed out of the Tyths of *Dunboyne*.

In *June* 1644, his Lordship came from *Oxford* to *London*, and so to *Penshurst*, and sent for his Son, *Robert Sydney*, out of *France*, as he writes in his Journal.

His Estate, whilst he was with the King, being liable to Sequestration, the Countess of *Leicester*, by her Brother the Earl of *Northumberland*'s Interest, got it taken of, and on that Occasion, sent the following Memorial to the Parliament:

Whereas a Sequestration of the Estate of the Right Honorable the Earle of *Leicesters*, in the Countie of *Kent*, is intended by the Committee in that Countie, in Pursuance of the Ordinances of Parliament, of the First of *April*, and the Nineteenth of *August* last, in that Countie: The Right Honorable, the Countesse of *Leicester*, hauing Notice thereof, doth on the Behalf of the said Earle her Husband, assert, That the Earle of *Leicester* is not a notorious Delinquent nor Papist; that he hath not voluntarily or willfully absented himself from the usuall Place of his Abode. But hauing his Majesties Comission to be Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and General of his Majesties Armie there, did, with the Leauē, and by the Directions of both Houses of Parliament, depart from the Cittie of *London*, towards *Dublin* in *Ireland*, about the Beginning of *November* last, and vsed all Diligence to repayre thither, by the Way of *Chester*; but before his Lordship could ship himself and his Family at *Chester*, he was comanded by his Majestie to returne thence to *Oxford*, and there to attend his Majesties further Dispatch; that his Lordship, before his Comming from *Chester*, acquainted the Parliament with the Command his Majestie had laid vpon him, and attended their Answer neere a Moneths Space; that afterwards, upon a second Command of his Majestie, he did repaire to *Oxford*, and attended his Majestie for his Dispatch, which he hath most earnestly sollicitated euer since; and as soone as he can receiue the same, he will hasten to his Charge in *Ireland*, with all Expedition; that during the Time of his Lordships continuing at *Oxford*, where he yet remayneth by his Majesties Comand, he hath not done any Thing, which may be called an Offence to the Parliament.

And therefore the Countesse of *Leicester*, conceiuing the Earle not to be con-

Lieutenant of *Ireland*, he could more easily bear it. Dated at *Amyens*. 4. Oct. (N. S.) 1641.  
Signed *Louis*.

cerned



cerned in that Ordinance, desireth that the Committee for Sequestracions in *Kent* will either leaue the said Earles Lands, and other Estate, free from Sequestration, or certifie to the Committee of Lords and Comons in Parliament, vpon what Grounds they proceed for the Sequestracion, to the End they may giue such further Order therein, as they in their Wisdomes shall thinke meete.

Whereupon the following Order was made :

XI. October 1643. *At the Committee of Lords and Comons for Sequestracion of Delinquents Estates.*

V P O N Perusall of the Certificat of the Committee of *Kent*, and the Reasons inclosed, no Cause appears to this Committee of Lords and Comons, for the Sequestracion of the Earle of *Leicesters* Estate, and therefore, they think fit, and order, that the Sequestracion and Stay thereof, already made, be discharged.

*Jo. Wylde.*

Notwithstanding this Order, when his Lordship came to his Seat at *Penshurst*, he was under some Difficulties on Account of the Sequestration of his Estate, as appears by the following Letter from his Son, *Algernon Sydney* :

*My Lord,*

I attended the last Weeke upon the Committee of Sequestrations, but they did not sit. I had some Expectation that they would this Day ; but the Painted Chamber is taken up this Afternoone, by the Commissioners, for the Tryall of the King. I have spoken with diuers, concerning your Lordships Businesse, and find them all of Opinion, it cannot be denied. The only Difficulty is in getting a Committee to sit, for all Mens Braines are soe full of the great Businesse, that they will not giue themselues Leaue to think of any other. The Proposition of the Caualliers, for the Sauing of the King, doth not obtaine soe much as a Hearing. This Day they are againe to be sent out of Towne, by Order of the House of Commons, to the Generall. The Lords sate Yesterday, passed the Ordinances for Mony, for the Army, and Navy, and are now very seasonably passing an Ordinance to make it Treason, for any King to make Warre upon the Parliament, and haue desired a Conference with the House of Commons, to know, wheather thoes Votes, that goe under their Names, asserting all iust Power to be originally in the People themselues, to be the Representatiue of the People, and that to the Validity of any Law, passed by them, neither the Assent of King nor Lords is necessary, weare passed by them. I think, that if the House of Commons had not bin very hasty in turning the Ordinance, for the Kings Tryall, into an Act of their owne, and contented themselues with their owne Power, the Lords are now in a Temper to haue giuen their Assent, if they had receiued a second Message from us. My Lord of *Northumberland*, I think, intends to come to the House ; our Admirall hath not bin their yet ; he is soe sick as not to come thither, but takes Liberty to goe to any other Places ; he is in great Uncertainty, and knowes not yet which Party to ioyne with. I will endeauour, if it be possible, to get your Lordships Businesse heard this Weeke ; Mr. *Windham* hath promised me to be there ; Mr. *Hales* excuseth himself, he neuer hauing practised there. My Brother *Robert*, I heare, is made Lieutenant Colonell to my Lord of *Oxford*, old *Berinton* being dead, which is the Cause wee doe not see him hear. I am

*Leicester House, Jan. the 10, 1648.*

*Your Lordships.*

I am in great Hast called away, so that I cannot write to my Lady. I desire your Lordship to tell hir that I will be at the Committee the next Weeke, if she thinks that my being there will be any Wayes seruiceable to her Ladyship.

This



This Letter, relating to the Sequestration of his Estate, I thought proper to insert here; but the other Letters of that famous Person, which are very memorable, will be published in the Collection.

In *June* 1649, on the Recommendation of the Earl of *Northumberland*, the Parliament placed the Duke of *Gloucester*, and Princess *Elisabeth*, with the Countess of *Leicester*, allowing for them 3000 *l. per Ann.* and for 10 or 11 Servants, which they brought with them; and they continued at *Penshurst*, till the latter End of *August* 1650; where there is yet remaining two Pictures of the Duke; one with a Black behind him in the Royal Livery.

The Parliament, 13 *June*, 1649<sup>a</sup>, ordered the Earl and Countess of *Leicester*, to take Care that no other Ceremony be used to the King's Children, than is used to Noblemens Children of this Nation. However, they were treated with such Regard, both by the Earl and his Countess, that the Princess *Elisabeth*, dying soon after her Removal from *Penshurst*, left, at her Decease, to the Countess of *Leicester*, a Jewel, in Recompence for the Care and Respect shewn to her. But this Bequest was the Cause of great Trouble, both to the Earl and his Countess, and was not finally adjusted till after the Restoration of King *Charles the Second*, as appears by the following Certificate, under the Earl of *Leicester's* Hand<sup>b</sup>.

15 May, 1660.

The chief and most necessary Papers, concerning the Diamond Jewell, and the Necklace of Perle, which the Princess left with me, and disposed of by her Will, are in the Hands of the Officers of the *Exchequer*, having bin brought thether, and remained there ever since the Informations putt into that Court against me and my Wife, in the Name of the Attorney Generall, for the Lord Protector, because no Iudgment was giuen in the Cause by the Court, as the Hearing thereof in *Easter Terme*, as I remember, 1659; or, if they were taken from the said Officers, they are with Mr. *Robert Raworth* a Counseller of *Graves Inne*.

LEYCESTER.

The Proceedings, relating to the Jewels, were not determined till the Year 1659, when the Earl was obliged to deliver them; and, the Case being remarkable, the Curious may be desirous of the Particulars.

Mr. *Lovel*, who is mentioned in the Earl of *Clarendon's* History of the Rebellion, for his Integrity, and other Qualifications, as being Tutor to the Duke of *Gloucester*, &c. was with the Princess when she died, and signed the following Testimonial:

Memorandum, That on, or aboute the sixt Day of *September*, *Anno Domini* 1650, the Princess *Elizabeth* lying sicke, but being of perfect Vnderstanding and Memory, did declare, in the Presence and Hearing of me *Richard Lovell*, concerneing certaine Jewells of hers, which then were in the Custodye of the Earle of *Leycester*, That her former Will should stand; only she appoynted, that the Neckelace of Perle (by her formerly willed to her Sister the Princess of *Orange*) or the Worth thereof, shold be to her Brother, the Duke of *Glocester*, in Case he shold haue Neede thereof, which she left to the Consideration and Iudgment of the said Earle of *Leycester*, into whose Custodie and Possession she had voluntarily deliuered the same.

And that the said Earle of *Leycester* shold haue, and detaine the Jewell of Diamonds, which she had alsoe voluntarily deliuered vnto him.

Some other little Things alsoe the Princess said she had left with my Lady of *Sunderland*, which she gaue to her, in Case she shold dye. In Witnes whereof, I haue herevnto set my Hand, the 5th Day of *October*, *Anno Domini* 1650.

RIC. LOVELL.

<sup>a</sup> Whitlock's Memorials, p. 349.

<sup>b</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



The following Case<sup>c</sup> was delivered to *Oliver Cromwell*, Protector, which shews the Proceedings thereon.

*Concerning the Jewells deposited by the late Princesse Elizabeth, one of the late Kings Children, with the Earle of Leycester, and her Disposeall thereof.*

In Aug. 1650.] **T**HE said Lady deposited with the Earle of *Leycester* 2 of her Jewells, the one her Necklace of Pearle, and thother her Jewell of Diamants.

With this Desire, that his Lordship wold be pleased to take the Care and Custody of them, vntill such Tyme as she shold, by a Lettre, or some other sure Token, desire his Lordship to returne them to her.

Soone after, and whyles she remayned in his Lordships House, she gave his Lordship Directions how she wold have them disposed of, in Case she shold die.

6 September, 1650.] The said Lady, being remoued to the *Isle of Wight*, and lyeing vpon her Death Bed, did then declare, before credible Wittnesse, that her former Will, concerning the said 2 Jewells, shold stand, with this Alteration, that her Brother, the Duke of *Glocester*, shold haue her Necklace of Pearle, or the Value thereof. And that the Earle of *Leycester* shold haue, and detain to himselfe and his Wife, her Diamant Jewell, which she had formerly deliuered into his Custody, and died.

22 November, 1651.] The Countesse of *Leycester* obtayned her Letters of Administration, with the Words of the deceased Ladies Will and Mind, formed into a Nuncupative Will, annexed therevnto, approued before the then Judge of the Prerogative Courte, vnder the Seale of their Office belonging therevnto, which now remaines, with other Papers, in Mr. *Scobells* Custody, Clarke to the late Parliament.

And thus stands the Earle of *Leycesters* Clame to the Diamant Jewell, in Right of himselfe and his Wife, their Interest therein being inseparable.

26 January, 1649.] An Act of Parliament is published, declaring the Goods and Personall Estate of the late King, Queen, and Prince, to be forfeited by their seuerall Delinquences, and exposing them to Sale, for Payment of their Debts, and noe otherwise.

This Act extending only to the Sale of the said late King, Queen, and Princes Goods, and Personall Estate, the said Earle and Countesse conceiued themselves not comprehended therein, or concerned to make any Discouery of the said Jewells soe disposed of as aforesaid.

17 July, 1651.] But almost 12 Monethes after the Death of the said Lady, and her Gift of the said Jewells, as aforesaid, an additionall Acte was published for Sale of the late King, Queen, and Princes Goods, as before, with this Clause in the very Close thereof, viz. That the Goods and Personall Estate of, or belonging to any Child or Children of the late King and Queen, bee, and are hereby declared to be within the Intent and Meaneing of this and the former Acte, as if the same had beene particularly named, to all Intents and Purposes.

In this Acte, the said Earle and Countesse conceiued themselves concerned, to make Discouery of the said Jewells vnto the Trustees appoynted by the said Acte, within the Tyme prescribed by the same, to escape the Penalty thereof, which was done accordingly; and withall, the said Earle made Clame to the Necklace of Pearle, in Right of the Duke of *Glocester*, and to the Diamant Jewell, in Right of himselfe and his Countesse. And produced vnto them the Lettres of Administration, obtayned by the Countesse of *Leycester*, with the said Ladyes Will, vnder the Seale of the Prerogative Court.

And afterwards had seuerall Debates with the said Trustees, concerning his said Clame to, and Interest in the said Jewells; but they being not satisfied therewith, nor admitting his Clame thereof:

<sup>c</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



23 December, 1651.] Ordered the said Earle of *Leycester* forthwith to pay vnto the Treasurers, in the said Acts named, the Summe of 2000 l. within 7 Dayes after the Date thereof.

The Countesse of *Leycester* herevpon made her Address to the Parliament by Petition, to take the Iustnes of her Ladyships Clame into Consideration, and to giue Order therein.

8 January, 1651.] The Parliament, upon Reading of the said Petition, ordered, That the Petition be referred to the Committee, for remoueing Obstructions in the Sale of the late King, Queen, and Princes Goods, to examine the Busines, and to state the Matter of Fact, and to reporte it to the House for their farther Consideration. And the Trustees, in the meane Tyme, forbear all Proceedings concerning the Jewells, mentioned in the Petition.

Shortly after, the said Committee examined the Busines, before whom diuerse Witneses were produced, on the Behalfe of the said Earle and Countesse, who proued :

1. That the said Jewell of Diamants was giuen to the said Lady, by the late Prince of *Orange*, and soe neuer belonged to the late King, Queen, Prince, or Crowne of *England*; but her Interest therein, and Power of disposing thereof, was euer cleerely in, and of her selfe.

2. That she was aboue 14 Yeares of Age, at the Tyme that she disposed thereof, as by her Will; and soe had a legall Capacity, in and of herselfe, to dispose thereof.

3. That she did dispose thereof, as by the Will is declared.

4. That she was of sound Mynd and perfecte Memory, at the Tyme of such her Disposeall thereof.

And likewise heard the Clame on the Behalfe of the said Trustees, and ordered a Reporte thereof to be made to the House, but neuer had any Oportunity to make the same, and the Parliament is now dissolued.

2 May, 1652.] Since which Dissolution, the said Trustees haue renewed their Demand of the said Jewell of Diamants, neglecting the Order of Parliament of 8 January, 1651, aforesaid.

3 May, 1652.] To this the Earle caused Returne to be made, and the said Order of Parliament to be deliuered vnto them.

But they regarded it not, declaring that they conceiued they had now againe the same Power to proceed againste the said Earle, for not Deliuering the said Jewell, as if the said Order had neuer beene made, and that they adhere to their former Order, of the 23 December, 1651.

Herevpon, the Earle addressed himselfe to the General, in whose Care it now rests to doe his Lordship Justice in the said Jewell.

*Observations vpon the Earle and Countesses Tytle to the said Jewell.*

1. That this Jewell was giuen to the deceased Ladie, by the late Prince of *Orange*, and soe it was her owne, not the late Kings, Queens, or Princes, nor the Crownes.

2. That, it being soe her owne, she had an absolute Power and Capacity in her selfe, to dispose thereof.

3. That she did dispose thereof, as by her Will, in Presence of credible Witneses.

4. That she was about 14 Yeares of Age when she gaue the same, as by her said Will, and at her Death.

5. That she was of sound Mynd and Memory, at the Tyme of such her said Gift.

All which was duellie proued and manifested, before the Committee for remoueing Obstructions.

*Obfer-*



*Observations upon the Case, as to the said 2 Acts of Parliament.*

1. That the said Acts do declare the late King, Queen, and Princes Goods only, and none else, to be forfeited for their severall Delinquencies.

But the said deceased Lady was neuer yet declared a Delinquent.

2. That, therefore, the said King, Queen, and Princes Goods are exposed to Sale, for Payment of their Debts, as by the said Acts, not others Debts.

The said Lady owed no Debts that yet haue beene hearde of.

3. That the first Acte, for Sale of the said late King, Queen, and Princes Goods, was published 26 January, 1649, and extended only to the Goods of the late King, Queen, and Princes, and no others.

4. That an additionall Acte was published 17 July, 1651, about 2 Yeares after, entitled, An additionall Acte for Sale of the late King, Queen, and Princes Goods, &c. Personall Estate, and no otherwise, saueing that, in the Close thereof, the Goods and Personall Estate of any Child, or Children, of the late King and Queens, are hereby declared to be comprehended within that and the former Acte, as if they had beene particularly named therein.

Without declaring the deceased Lady guilty of any Cryme, by which she might forfeite what was her owne.

But as if it were meant only for the Recouery of the said Jewell, from the said Earle and Countesse, to whom she had giuen the same, as aforesaid.

And as if it were intended thereby, that the Innocent shold be punished equally with the Guilty.

It appears from his Lordship's Journal, the Letters sent to him; and other Authorities; that from the Time of his leaving the King, and retiring to *Penshurst*, he never stirred from that Seat, but took to a studious Course of Life, and has left, in Manuscript, Essays on divers Subjects. When the Restoration of the Royal Family drew near, the Earl of *Northumberland* sent to him to take his Place in the House of Peers, without any Oath, or Engagement. Upon which, his Lordship came to Town, and concurred in those Votes for the Return of the King and the Royal Family. How he was received, is related in his Journal, as follows:

' Tuesday, 29 May, 1660, King Charles the Second made his Entry into London, and passed to *Whitehall*, where the House of Peeres, and House of Commons, severally, met, and saluted his Majestye, and welcomed him with Orations by their Speakers, the Earl of *Manchester* of the one, *pro tempore*, and Sir *Harbottle Grimston*, of the other. I saluted his Majestye among the rest, and kissed his Hand; but there was so great Disorder and Confusion, that the King scarce knew, or took particular Notice of any Body.

' Thursday, 31 May, a Messenger came to my House, and warned me to come to *Whitehall*; the like he did to the Earl of *Northumberland*. We went together, not knowing for what; and, having stayed a Whyle in the Kings Withdrawing Chamber, we were called into the Councell Chamber, and there, contrary to his and my Expectation, we were sworn Privy Counsellors, as was likewise the Earl of *Manchester*, and others, that, and the next Day.

' Having attended the Parliament till it was adjourned, 13 Sept. 1660; and afterward, the King and Council: My Health and Business requiring it, I intended to go into the Country; and, Friday 12 Oct. 1660, after the King and Council was risen, I went to the King, and sayd, Sir, I have not the Vanity to thinke that your Majestye will misse me, or take Notice of my Absence; but, having the Honor to be your Servant, I thought it would not agree with my Duty to go from hence, without your Leave and Permission, which I beseech your Majestye to grant, that I may go into the Country for my Health. The King, with a favourable and smiling Countenance, sayd, With all my Heart; but how long will you stay. Sir, sayd I, To myself I have proposed to stay a good Whyle, unless your Majestye command the contrary. Whether do you go, sayd the King still with a smiling Countenance). Sir, sayd I, to my House in Kent. Well, sayd



‘ sayd the King, *And when will you come again?* Sir, sayd I, *It is for my Health that I go; but, if your Majestyes Service require it, I shall not consider either my Health or Life itself, but will be where you please to command me.* I thank you, sayd the King, *but, for the present, I have no Occasion to stay you: I wish you a good Journey.* I pray God to bless your Majestye, sayd I, *with Health, long Life, and all Happines.* I thank you, sayd the King again, with the same favourable Countenance; and gave me his Hand, which I kneeling down, kissed, and so came from him; who stayd to let me say more to him, if I would. The like favourable Entertainment he gave me, the first Time also (which I had forgotten) in the Councell Chamber, when I was sworn; for he came to me, and gave me many gracious Expressions of his Favour, and more than ordinary good Opinion and Esteem.

As his Lordship came heartily into the King’s Restoration, so was he for establishing his Majesty on the Throne by necessary Laws. In the Session of the Parliament beforementioned, he made this Speech<sup>a</sup>, on Taking the Oath of Allegiance:

‘ Your Lordships appointed *Thursday* for the Time, when all the Lords should take the Oath of Allegiance; and, I hope, all have taken it, or will take it. And, though therein I differ from the Opinion of a noble Lord [the Lord Roberts] I conceive that your Lordships take that Oath as Peers of *England*, and Members of this House; not as Subjects only; for, I think, that whatsoever is communicable to, or required of any Sort of Men, and of every Man of that Sort, and of none else; is required of them, as they are of that Sort. But the Taking this Oath is by your Lordships required of every one of your Lordships, and of none else here: Therefore, it is required, as you are Peers: But, whether the Peers take it as Peers, or otherwise, it is not material; but, that the Peers take it, I think, is very reasonable. And though a noble Lord of the Barons Bench [the Lord Wharton] seemed the other Day very tender in imposing the Taking this Oath, upon the Peers, least, for the not Taking of it (as I understood him) any one of your Lordships should be deprived of his Session here, which is his Inheritance: I am of another Opinion, for though I grant and acknowledge that Sessions in this House is the Inheritance of every one of your Lordships; yet your Lordships I am sure remember, from whence you have that Inheritance; from the King: And, certainly, for that Inheritance, we owe this Expression of Gratitude and Fidelity to the King that gives it us. And, besides, as Sessions in this House is the Inheritance of your Lordships, so our Allegiance is the Kings Inheritance: And, if one must be (of which I see no Necessity) it were better to disinherit one, or more private Men, than the King; nay, my Lords, the Fidelity of the Kings Subjects, *and of your Lordships, the best of his Subjects*, is the Kings best Inheritance. For his Majestyes Dignity and Power, and the Security of both, exists in the Fidelity of his Subjects. And the Destruction of his Majestyes Dignity and Power, comes from the Default of the Fidelity of his Subjects; as by sad Experience we have lately seen. And truly, my Lord, I am of Opinion, that not only all your Lordships, but every Subject ought to take this Oath, to assure the King of their Fidelity. And I know not why any one should have Session and Vote in this House, or Benefit of the *Kings Protection*, or any *Being in England*, that will not take it. Therefore I humbly move,

‘ *That every Peer or Person, that hath Right of Session, in this House, from these illustrious Princes that sit there [Dukes of York and Gloucester] even to me, the unworthiest of all this noble Assembly, or to the youngest Baron that is come, or that shall come into this House, be obliged, by a certain Time sett, to take this Oath; or not to have Vote or Session in this House.*

After some Pause (none answering his Lordship) he said, ‘ I think it the Order of this House, *That if any Peer make a Motion, and no other Peer speak against it, it ought to be ordered.* This I desire may be done. If there be any Opposition, and the Question be put, I desire to have my Dissent entered

<sup>a</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

‘ before



‘ before the Question be put, in case that the Question should be carried in the Negative.’

Also, on the Debate on the Act for Vesting the Power of the Militia in the King, his Lordship argued strenuously for it. Among other Instances, he sayd, ‘ The Persons in the County of *Kent*, where I have a poor Dwelling, there are some noble and wealthy Persons, Commissioners in this Act ; but, as I have heard, there are others of very low Condition, and vile Affections ; infomuch that, the *Quorum* being but five, one more might make up a *Quorum*, of those that condemn’d the King to Death ; as *Livesey*, *Dixwell*, and *Say*, who, I think, are in the List, and others as bad as they. No Person is excepted. The Peers wronged, as Lord *Roberts* said, and great Inequality used in the Assessments, &c.’ Whereof his Lordship mentioned several Particulars ; and moved, ‘ That no Commissioner, or Commissioned Officer, shall exercise any the Powers or Authorityes contained in the Act, &c. untill he, in the Presence of five, or more of the said Commissioners, shall first acknowledge in these Words following : *I do acknowledge and declare, that the War undertaken by both Houses of Parliament in their Defence, against the Forces raised in the Name of the late King, was not Just and Lawfull : And that Magistracy, and Ministry, are the Ordinances of God.*’

From the King’s Reception of his Lordship, and his great Services and Losses, it is highly probable he might have been imployed in the Administration, if he had desired it ; the Earl of *Clarendon*, Lord Chancellor, being very much his Friend, as is evident by the Correspondence between them (which will be published in the Collection) and General *Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*, had been preferred by him, to be his Lieutenant-Colonel, and had served under the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, his Son. But it appears from his Lordship’s Papers and Letters, that he chose a retired Life, and very seldom came to Town ; and not at all in his latter Years. His Proxy in the House of Peers he left with *Algernon* Earl of *Northumberland*, whose Sister he had married ; and the Letters, that passed between them, shewed such a Sympathy in Affections, and sincere and faithful Friendship, as is hardly to be paralleled.

The Earl of *Clarendon* professing the greatest Regard to his Lordship he sent to him the following Relation, 29 August, 1661, on his Promise to interest himself, that his Arrears in *Ireland* should be paid him ; and, containing some remarkable Passages, I shall here insert it from his own Hand-writing.

*Coppy of a Relation concerning my Arreres in Ireland, with a Coppy of the late Kings Letter to me, 29 Nov. 1642, and a Coppy of the sayd Kings Letter to the Marquis of Ormond, 14 Jan. 1643, for the Payment of my Arreres.*

**I**N *Aprill* 1641, it pleased the late King, of blessed Memorie, to send for the Earle of *Leycester* to come into *England* out of *France*, where hee was then, and had bin, during five Yeres before (*viz.* from *May* 1636) Ambassador Extraordinary for his Majestie to the *French* King. Soone after the Earle of *Leycesters* Arrivall at *London*, and very few Dayes after the Death of the Earle of *Straford*, *viz.* 19 *May*, 1641, it pleased his gracious Majestie, at the Councill Board, to declare his Intention, to conferre vpon the Earle of *Leycester*, the Government of his Majesties Kingdome of *Irland* ; and accordingly granted his Commission vnder the Great Seale of *England*, bearing Date the 14<sup>th</sup> of *June*, 1641, in the 17 Yeare of his Majesties Reigne, to the Earle of *Leycester*, to bee his Majesties Lieutenant Generall and Generall Governour of his Majesties sayd Kingdome, and Generall of his Majesties Army and Forces then present and future, with all Authorities, Stipends, &c. belonging and perteyning to the sayd Office, during his Majesties Pleasure, as by the sayd Comission it may appeare. In *July*, the next Moneth of the same Yere, the King sent the Earle of *Leycester* back into *France*, to finish some Negotiations there concerning his Majesties



Service; comanding him to returne into *England* againe, by the Time that his Majestie himself should bee returnd out of *Scotland*, whether his Majestie did then shortly intend to goe, as hee did in *August* following; and that then the Earle *Leycester* should receiue his Majesties further Comandments for the Government of *Ireland*. In Obedience to his Majesties Orders, the Earle of *Leycester* (haueing sent many Servants, and much of his Goods, out of *France* into *Ireland*, by Sea) came into *England* in *October* of the same Yeare. And, in *November* following, the Earle of *Leycester* attended the King at his Majesties Returne out of *Scotland*, expecting his Dispatch to goe into *Ireland*. But, in Regard that a great Rebellion was then raised, and the Rebels had possessed themselves of the greatest Part of that Kingdome, it pleased the King to deferre the Sending of the Earle of *Leycester* thither, vntill such Supplyes were provided, as were necessary for the Prosecuting of that Warr, and Reducing the Rebels to their due Obedience; to which End, it pleased the King earnestly to recomend to the Parliament, then sitting at *Westminster*, the Managing of the Affaires of that Kingdome, coniuring them to provide all Things necessary for that Service. The Troubles then growing high betweene the King and Parliament, the King departed from *London* in *January* 1641; but comanded the Earle of *Leycester* to attend the Parliament, to hasten the Supplyes for *Ireland*, according to his Majesties Desire, often times signified to the Parliament: But the Earle of *Leycester* could procure no Money of the Parliament, for the Satisfying of the Souldiers in *Ireland*, that Money which was raised of the Adventurers, and otherwaies, being converted to other Vses. Att the last, the Parliament having assured the Earle of *Leycester*, that 55000 *l.* should bee forthwith sent into *Ireland*; and the King haueing comanded him to waite vpon his Majestie, to receiue his full Dispatch for *Ireland*, in *July*, 1642, the Earle of *Leycester* went to *Yorke*, where the King then was, and there attended, as likewise all the While that his Majestie was at *Nottingham*, and as farre as *Stafford*: But, hearing that the Parliament had stopd the Money designed for *Ireland*, as aforesayd, the Earle of *Leycester* (having sent a great Part of his Traine of Servants and Horses to *Chester*, to stay for him there, and leauing another Parte thereof at *Lichfeild*, to stay for him there also) with his Majesties Knowledge and Approbation: He returned to *London* about the End of *September*, to sollicite the Supplyes of Money, and other necessary Provisions, for his Majesties Service in *Ireland*; but not prevailing in his Solicitations, and choosing rather to goe empty, then not goe at all, the Earle of *Leycester* took his Iourney towards *Ireland*; but, falling sick by the Way, hee had much adoe to gett to *Chester*, where he continued very sick some Parte of *November* and *December*. Nevertheles, hee omitted not to give Order for the Providing of Vessells to transport his Traine into *Ireland*, as likewise for his owne more decent Passing the Sea (having the Honour to bee the Kings Lieutenant). At his Setting forth from *London*, hee had written to the then Lords Justices in *Ireland*, to send over Captaine *Barkly* with the Kings Pinnace, which hee then comanded. The Earle of *Leycester* (having provided Vessells ready at *Leerpoole*, and in *Chester* Water, for the Transportacion of his Goods, Servants, and Horses, which were many; and Captaine *Barkly* comeing to him at *Chester*, to tell him that the Pinnace was at *Beaumorrays*) prepared himself for his Iourney, though in *December*, the worst Time of the Yeare. And, intending to depart from *Chester* to *Beaumorrays*, hee receiued the Kings Order the 8th of *December*, signed by his Majestie, and dated the 29th *Novemb.* comanding him to repaire in Person to his Majestie then at *Oxford*; the Copy whereof follows:

Charles R.

**R**ight trusty and right welbeloved Cozen and Councillor, Wee greete you well. Wee haue with Sorrow vnderstood of your Sicknes, and are much troubled that such Indisposition of Health is still vpon you, as renders you vn-able, as yet, to vndergoe your Passage by Sea into *Ireland*: And, since you are still remaining on this Side, Wee haue thought good to advise with you before  
your



your Departure, vpon some Affaires much importing the Good of Vs, and Our Service : Wherefore, Our Pleasure is, that, as soone as your Health will permitt, you repaire to Vs in Person, when Wee shall communicate to you the Busines for which Wee send for you. In the meane Time, Wee wish you may speedily recover your perfect Health. Given at our Court at Oxon. 29 November 1642.

The Earle of *Leycester* would faine have serv'd the King in the Government of *Ireland*, to which his Majestie had designed him ; and therefore hee tooke the Boldnes to write vnto the King by his Secretary, whom hee sent expressely, hoping that his Majestie, vpon further Consideracion, might bee pleased to change his Mind : But, his Majestie being resolu'd to the Contrary, the Earle of *Leycester* receiued a second Order at *Chester*, 17 December, from Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, by his Majesties Comand, confirming the former. In Obedience to which, the Earle of *Leycester* went from *Chester*, about the End of December, and at *Worcester* mett with a third Order from Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, signifying, that the King expected him at *Oxford* ; where the Earle of *Leycester* arrived about the 8 or 9 of January, 1642-3, and was graciously receiued by his Majestie. Many Moneths hee attended at *Oxford*, in Hope and Expectacion that it would please the King to send him into *Ireland*, and pressed his Dispatch with as much Earnestnes, as might consist with his Dutie and Reverence to his Majestie, to whom hee often represented the hard Condicion wherein hee was, being obleigd to keepe a great Traine of Servants and Horses at *Dublyn*, another at *Chester*, and another at *Oxford*, to the Mainteyning of which, hee receiued nothing out of *Ireland*, nor from his Majestie. To which, it pleased the King to giue very gracious Returnes, with Promises of Recompence and Satisfaction. But, after a long Attendance at *Oxford*, from the Begining of January 1642-3, to the End of November 1643, it pleased the King to determine the Earle of *Leycesters* Comission, and to conferre the Government of *Ireland* vpon the Marquis of *Ormond* ; yet his Majestie was so gracious, as to tell the Earle of *Leycester* divers Times, that hee did it not for any Displeasure to him, or Distrust of him, but that the Necessitie of his Affaires requiring a Peere in *Ireland*, obleigd him to make that Change ; and that, for the Earle of *Leycesters* full Contentment, hee would bestow vpon him some other Office nearer his Person (and named one or two) with a Pension of 2000 *l.* a Yeare, and Payment of all the Arreares due vnto the Earle of *Leycester*, from his severall Entertainments in *Ireland* ; in Performance whereof, it pleased his Majestie to write his gracious Letter to the Marquis of *Ormond*, the Copy whereof follows :

Charles R.

Right trusty, &c. Whereas wee formerly disigned our right trusty, &c. the Earle of *Leycester* to bee our Lieutenant Generall, &c. of *Ireland* (of whose Fidelitie and Affection to our Service, though wee were well perswaded ; yet finding it fitt to place that great Charge and Trust in your self, who had performed vnto vs so many eminent Services) on the 29 of November last, wee determined his Comission : Whereupon our sayd Cousin having represented vnto vs the severall Particulars granted by vs vnto him, and praying Payment of his severall Entertainments : Accordingly, Wee haue thought fitt to recomend the same in an especiall Manner vnto you, to cause Payment to bee made vnto him, or his Assignes, with all convenient Speed, of all Arreares growne due vnto him, as our Lieutenant Generall, Generall Gouvernor, and Generall of our Army from the 20th of June 1641 (being the Day of the Date of his Comission) to the 29th of November last, which was ye Day, that wee declared to the sayd Earle, that wee had appointed another Governour there. And because the Accounts thereof (and of his sequent Preseures) are not as yet calculated (which wee require you to give Order to one of our Auditors to performe) wee doe hereby particularly direct to bee forthwith paid vnto his Assignes, the Sume of one thousand Pounds, as Parte of his aforesaid Arreares, it being to discharge his Debts in that Kingdome, and to enable him  
to



to bring away his Servants and Goods from thence. But, out of that thousand Pounds, wee intend not any Defalcacion shall bee made for Oates or other Provisions issued out of our Stores in that Kingdome; hee representing to vs, that those Provisions did not cost vs any Thing, but were Parte of the Provisions layd vp especially for his owne Vse. Our further Pleasure is, that the Troope of Horſe, conſiſting of 110, and Foote Company of 100, of our old ſtanding Army, and which wee gaue to the ſayd Earle, ſhall ſtand and remaine, and that they bee neither diſſolued nor reduced to any leſſe Number, then as they are entred vpon the Liſt of our Army, nor bee diſpoſed of to any Perſon whatſoever without his Conſent; the Arreares and growing Entertainements of both which, our Pleasure is, ſhall be from Time to Time paid vnto him, and Warrants of full Pay accordingly orderd on that Behalf. Our further Pleasure alſo is, That the Regiment of Foote which he raiſed by our Authoritie, and ſent over into that our Kingdome, and his Company in the ſayd Regiment, remaine likewise to him, and bee not otherwiſe diſpoſed of till our further Pleasure ſignified. And whereas the ſayd Earle hath deſired Allowance for Waggonſ, as all other Officers of our Army, according to their Qualities have had: Wee recomend the ſame to your Conſideracion to give him Satisfaction therein. And whereas (though hee transported not himſelf) a great Part of his Family was ſent over by him, and his Attendance of vs in ſeverall Places of this Kingdome was no leſſe chargeable to him, then if hee had gone over himſelf: And therefore hath beſought vs, to allow him the ſame Proporcion of Money, as the Earle of *Strafford* (then Viſcount *Wentworth*) was allow'd for his Transportation, when hee went firſt over to bee Governour of that Kingdome. Wee are pleaſed and require that you cauſe the ſame to bee audited and allowd him; and that, his Arreares and growing Entertainements vpon all theſe Particulars being calculated, you acquaint vs therewith by one of our Secretaries: Wee intending that the ſayd Earle, ſhall in his Payments, in ſuch Manner, receiue the Fruite of theiſe our Letters, as may beſt ſtand with the other important Services in that our Kingdome. And for ſo doing, *Ec.* given, *Ec.* Oxon. 14 Jan. 1643.

But this Letter and Order hath bin ineffectuall; only 1000 *l.* or Part thereof, according to the ſayd Letter, was paid at *Dublin* for the Diſcharge of ſome Debts, and to bring away the Earl of *Leyceſters* Traine from thence. Neither hath the Earl of *Leyceſter* receiued any Recompence or Satisfaction according to his late Maſtys gracious Intentions and Promiſes, but hath bin conſtrained to part with 1000 *l.* a Yeare Land, to diſcharge Parte of thoſe Debts wherewith thoſe Lands were charged in the Time, and by Reaſon of his Employments; beſides other Debts of the ſame Kinde yet remaining, charged vpon his Eſtate; and beſides the Loſſe of his Plate and Goods at *Cheſter*, and *Beaumonts*, to the Value of 3000 *l.* at the leaſt. So as having ſerved the late King many Years faithfully, and to his Maſties Satisfaction, as hee hath bin many Times pleaſed to acknowledge.

The Earl of *Leyceſter* is impaired in his Fortune, to the Value of many thouſand Pounds, ſince hee had the Honour to be in his Maſties Employments. And the King, ſince his happy Returne into *England*, having ſet forth his gracious Declaration, for the Satisfying of thoſe Officers that had Comiſſions for Employments in *Ireland*, before the Yeare 1649, the Earl of *Leyceſter* conceiueing, and being adviſed by his Freinds, that hee was comprehended therein, made his Claime knowne to the Comiſſioners in *Ireland*; but they would not admitt the ſayd Claime, as hee is informed, for two Reaſons: 1. Becauſe (as they conceiue) his Maſties Declaration, and Inſtructions, comprehend not the Generall Officers, or, as they call them, Staff Officers. To which it may bee answered, that there ſeemes to bee but little Reaſon, that the ſuperiour Officers ſhould bee excluded, when the inferiour Officers are included. 2. Becauſe the Earl of *Leyceſter* hath not bin, nor ſerued Perſonally in *Ireland*, which is acknowledged; but yet to that alſo it may be ſayd, That, all the Time of the Duration of his Comiſſion, hee was in the Kings Employments and Service, and by his Maſties



jesties speciall Comandment, attending his own Royall Person. But it is conceiued, that these Answers will not preuaile, without further Order and Authoritie from his Majestie. It is therefore humbly desired, that the King will bee graciously pleased to signifie his Pleasure to the Lords Justices, or to the Comissioners, or to whom, and in what Manner his Majestie shall thinke fitt, that the Earl of *Leycesters* Accounts shall bee stated with all convenient Expedition, and his Arreares satisfied, in Regard of his great Expences, and Losses, in the Time of his being employed in the late Kings Service; and according to the Intention of his sayd Majestie, expressed in the Letter aforementioned, and the Earl of *Leycester* shall ever pray for his Majesties long Life and Happynes.

Among others of the Royal Family, that came over to congratulate the Restoration of the King, was *Elisabeth*, Queen of *Bohemia*, his Majesty's Aunt, and only surviving Daughter of King *James the First*; the happy Mother of a Protestant Heir to these Kingdoms, the Princess *Sophia*, from whom our most gracious Sovereign is lineally descended, and, as Heir to her, inherits his Crown. She had been married to the Elector *Palatine*, on *February* the 14th, 1612; and having been out of *England* 49 Years, and survived all the Misfortunes of her Family, came now to her native Country to die in Peace, arriving at *London* May 17, 1661. She was for some Time at *Drewry-House*, with the Earl of *Craven*; but being too close there, King *Charles the Second* wrote the following Letter to the Earl of *Leicester*, which was delivered to him at *Penshurst* by Dr. *Frazer*, her Physician<sup>a</sup>.

*Whithall*, 28 Jan. 1662.

MY Lord *Lefester*, I send this Bearer, Dr. *Frazer*, to desire a Curtosy of you in the Behalfe of the Queene of *Bohemia*. He will tell you the Particulars, and the Reason of it. I shall only add, that, in doing of it, you will oblige

Your affectionate Frinde,

Charles R.

Whereunto, his Lordship returned this Answer<sup>b</sup>, by the same Bearer.

S I R,

TO the Honor that I have even now received by those Lines which it hath pleased your Majestye to write unto me, by Doctor *Frazer*, it is not in my Power to make any proportionable Return: That which comes nearest to it, and all that I can do, is to present unto your Majestye the sincere Profession of a perfect and ready Obedience to all your Commandments; and that my poore House, my self, and whatsoever I may call mine, are, and shall ever be at your Majestyes Service: For there is nothing that I desire, or shall so much endeavour, as to give your Majestye a full Assurance of my being, in all Humility,

Your Majestyes most faithfull and

most obedient Subject and Servant,

LEYCESTER.

His Lordship, immediately after, sent his Steward to Dr. *Frazer*, with the following Letter<sup>c</sup>:

S I R,

ACcording to your Direction, I have sent this Bearer to receive from you the Commands of the Queene of *Bohemia*, concerning my House, if it please her Majesty to make Use of it. I confess that I was in a Streight, but

<sup>a</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.



you may be my Witness, that I quickly resolved thereupon. Before your Coming hether, I had no Desyre nor Intention to let my House ; for, as old as I am, I do a little consider my innocent Pleasure, and I think that a pretty pleasant Place. I consider my Health and the Ayre of the House. I consider my little privat Busines, and the convenient Scituation of the House for it. I consider the Honor of wayting on the King sometimes, when his Majestye will give me Leave ; and the Neernes of the House to the Kings Pallace. But, above all, I consider my Duty and Obedience to the Kings Commandment : And, next to that, I consider the Opportunity of contributing somewhat to the Service of the Queen of *Bohemia*, whose humble Servant I am, and have bin these many Yeares. And I shall think it a great Happines to me, if the Ayre of my House may contribute to the Recovery of her Health, or that I my self may be any Way serviceable to her Majestye. And I heartily wish, that your Art and Care may be so directed and assisted, by the Blessing of God, as to restore her Majestye to her perfect Health again. This is all the Trouble, that at this Time shall be given you by

*Your humble Servant,*

*Penshurst,*  
4 Feb. 1661.

LEYCESTER.

The Bearer will propose some few Things, which I presume will not be thought unreasonable.

Afterwards the Earl of *Craven* made the following Request to his Lordship, by Letter :

*My Lord,*

**I**N Pursuite of your Respect to the Kings Desires, and your Complaisance to the Queen of *Bohemia*, whome your Lordship has professed alwaies soe much to honour : Shee enjoyes att present the Benefitt of *Leicester* Howse ; and that your Lordship should not beleieve that there is lesse Entertainment on her Majesties Part, or of those who are intrusted to serve her, the two Hundred Pounds, which was required by Mr. *Spencer*, as advanced for three Months Lonage, has bin payd him. The which, I hope, will induce your Lordship to add to your former Orders, for the better Convenience of the Queenes Ladies, some Roomes, that may be spared, from the necessarie Putting aside of your Goods. Your Lordship is of a Race, to have a greater Reguard to the Accomodation of that Sex ; and I am confident when you are informed, that as yett they have none at all ; not so much as to lodg them with any reasonable Fittingness, becoming either theire Persons or Conditions : Your Lordship will give Command for that which may pull an Obligation uppon you, and the Queene theire Mistresse, without any Inconveniencing the Propertie of those Goods you reserve a part. There are some other Things, which Mr. *Spencer* and I have discoursed ; which, according as your Lordshipp shall relish, I should be glad to receive your Reply unto ; to the Intent that I may be just to all. And your Lordshipp may be confident, that, what Agreement soever may be made, there shall be ever a like Punctuallitie in mee, to performe itt. And has the Queene has commanded mee to assure your Lordshipp of her continued Affection towards you, soe you may be confident that shee will never proceede otherwaies then in that Way, for ought she may stand in Neede of your Kindnes to her : And your Lordshipp may please to reley uppon mee, to serve you according as you shall please to lett me know, what may be most agreeable to your Mynd, either concerning your Howse, or ought else : For truly, my Lord, I have a greate Defference for you ; and shall ever approve my self to bee

*My LORD,*

the 8th of Februarie  
1661.

*Your Lordshipps most faithfull,  
affectionate humble Servant,*

CRAVEN.

To



To this the Earl of *Leicester* returned the following Answer :

*My Lord,*

I Am obliged to your Lordship for your good Opinion of me, and I verily beleeve that I shall not forfeit it by Want of Reverence to the Queene of *Bohemia*, or of Civility to her Ladyes. And if it had been known, that the uppermost Roomes, or Garrets, could have been usefull to them, my Servant *Spencer* would not have proposed the Reservation of them for any Use of mine : But they were thought unserviceable to Persons of that Condition, and fit only to keep such Pictures, Furniture, &c. as were not worthy to be left in the Queenes Sight, nor their Use offerd to her Majestyes Service : But now I hope the Ladyes are as well accomodated, as they can be in that little House ; which was not built for a Levie, but only for a privat Family. I appointed *Gilbert Spencer* to returne unto your Lordship the Reply which you required of me, concerning some other Particularities : And I am perswaded, that your Lordship hath received it as reasonable ; and therefore agreeable to your Judgment ; and if your Lordship be pleased to direct me, how I may, in any other Thing, render me acceptable to the Queene, you will do me a great Favour : As also, wherein I may, better then in Words, give you reall Testimonies of my being

*Your Lordships most humble*

*and affectionat Servant,*

LEICESTER.

The Queen lived but a very little Time in his Lordship's House ; for she departed this Life in it, the 13th of *February*, 1662 ; and thereupon his Lordship wrote a very elegant Letter to the Earl of *Northumberland*, condoling her Departure ; which will be printed in the Collection. But the following Letter to the Earl of *Craven*, I shall here insert :

*My Lord,*

THE Advantage you have had of me, in the Occasions and Opportunities of expressing your Devotion to the Servis of the excellent Queen, lately deceased, tempteth me to acknowledge your Lordship, more then my self, her Servant : But, that being an Honor I cannot allow to any Body, I know not how to determine the Contention, or suppress my Emulation better, then by congratulating your Merit and good Services, and lamenting my own Want of both ; which makes me inferior to your Lordship in that Competition, as also in every other Thing.

To so much of the Letter, which your Lordship did me the Favour to write unto me, as contained Busines, or somewhat like it ; my Answer was first hindred by my present Indisposition, and then prevented by the sad Event, which happened soone after I received it ; but, for the Civility of it, I must thinke my self still indebted to you, even after I have returned my humble Thanks for it, with the Presentation of my earnest Desyer, to be esteemed by you, as I am,

*Your Lordships most humble*

*and affectionat Servant,*

LEICESTER.

His Lordship, for some Time before his Death, had a very ill State of Health, and was altogether resident at *Penshurst* Place ; where, by a regular and abstemious Way of Living, he survived till the 2d of *November*, 1677, when he departed this Life, aged eighty-one Years and eleven Months. The Countess his Wife died before him, on the 19th of *August*, 1659, and was buried in the Chancel of *Penshurst*, the 23d of the same Month <sup>d</sup>, where the Earl had also a Sepulture, on the 8th of *November*, 1677.

<sup>d</sup> Ex Registr. Eccl. de *Penshurst*.



The Countess was distinguished for her good Sense, fine Breeding, and excellent Oeconomy. Her Letters, which are wrote with great Spirit, give some Account of the Intrigues of the Court of King *Charles the First*, and will be published in the Collection. The Earl of *Leicester's* Letters contain the Occurrences of his Times, wherein are many Particulars not hitherto known; and the Correspondence he kept with the most considerable Persons, then living, shew the great Value and Esteem they had of him; as well as his great Learning, and Application in all Affairs he was concerned in. There are two Volumes of his Lordship's Letters, relating to his Negotiations, in his Majesty's Office of Papers and Records, for Business of State; which I have examined, and such of them have been transcribed, as were wanting of what he had preserved; and will be printed in the Collection.

I shall now add the Characters given of him. *Borlace*, in his Reduction of *Ireland*, p. 222, gives this Account of the Earl of *Leicester*: 'On the Removal of the Earl of *Strafford*, in 1641, he was nominated Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, a Person acceptable on all Accounts, having never been engaged in the publick Current of the Times, a Virtue very remarkable; but often employed on the noblest Embassies Abroad and at Home; whereby he was a fit Instrument to serve his Prince in so eminent an Employment (on the Loss of such a Minister of State as the Earl of *Strafford*) who by his Knowledge in Martial Affairs, and other his great Abilities, would have been, no Doubt, abundantly capable to have reduced the *Irish* to a due Obedience. But though he had sent over Servants, and much Furniture into *Ireland*, and lay a long Time at *Chester* for a Dispatch, he yet never came there, much to the Regret of many that wished well to that Service.'

Sir *William Temple*, in his Miscellanies, gives this Character of him, *That he was a Person of great Learning and Observation, as well as of Truth*; of which he relates some remarkable Particulars.

The Earl of *Clarendon* recites, 'That he was a Man of great Parts, very conversant in Books, and much addicted to the Mathematicks, and tho' he had been a Soldier, and commanded a Regiment in the Service of the States of the *United Provinces*, and was afterwards employed in several Ambassies, as in *Denmark*, and in *France*, was in Truth, rather a speculative, than a practical Man, and expected a greater Certitude in the Consultation of Business, than the Business of this World is capable of; Which Temper proved very ill-convenient to him, through the Course of his Life. He was after the Death of the Earl of *Strafford*, by the concurrent Kindness of both the King and Queen, called from his Ambassy in *France*, to be Lieutenant of the Kingdom of *Ireland*; but in a very short Time after, unhappily lost that Kindness and Esteem: And being, about the Time of the King's coming to *Oxford*, ready to embark at *Chester*, for the Execution of his Charge, he was required to attend his Majesty, for farther Instructions, at *Oxford*; where he remained; and though he was of the Council, and sometimes present, he desired not to have any Part in the Business; and lay under many Reproaches and Jealousies, that he deserved not: For he was a Man of Honour and Fidelity to the King, and his greatest Misfortunes proceeded from the Staggering and Irresolution in his Nature.'

The Earl of *Clarendon* further relates, 'that the Earl of *Leicester* was the only Peer at *Oxford*, who followed the King, that refused to sign a Letter from the Peers on his Majesty's Behalf, to the Council in *Scotland*. The Earl's Reasons, for not Signing that Letter, are already mentioned, with an Account of his Conduct, from his being Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, to the Time he quitted the King's Service. So that I leave it to the Judgment of the impartial Reader, how just the Accusation may be, of a *Staggering and Irresolution in his Nature*. But his Letters, which are to be published in the Collection, will

\* Vide his Works, Vol. I. p. 276.

† Hist. of the Rebell. 8vo. Vol. III. p. 201.

\* Hist. of the Rebell. 8vo. Vol. III. p. 411, 412.



clearly evince, that he was of a humane Disposition, well grounded in his Principles, and steady to the Established Church, and Monarchical Constitution.

The noble Author himself, <sup>h</sup> seems to be conscious, that the Earl of *Leicester* was not well used, delivering his Thoughts, why he refused to sign the Letter before mentioned, in these Words: ' Whether he had not yet digested, ' his late Deposal from the Lieutenancy of *Ireland*, to which the Marquis of ' *Ormond* was deputed, and thought the Disobligation of it not capable of a ' Reparation, or whether he thought the King's Fortune desperate, and resolved ' not to sacrifice himself, to any popular Displeasure; and not to provoke the ' Parliament farther than by not concurring with them; or whether he had it ' then in his Purpose to be found in their Quarters, as shortly after he was, ' did in the End positively refuse to subscribe the Letter, and thereby was ' the Occasion of a Mischief, he did not intend. For both their Majesties, in ' their secret Purpose, had designed him to succeed the Marquis of *Hertford*, ' in the Government of the Prince: For which he would have been very pro- ' per; but upon this so affected a Discovery of a Nature, and Mind, liable to ' no Kind of Compliance, the King could not prosecute his Purpose; and so ' the Government of that hopeful and excellent Prince was committed to the ' Earl of *Berkshire*, for no other Reason, but because he had a Mind to it, be- ' ing most unfit for that Province.'

As I have perused his Lordship's Letters, Journals, and Miscellanies, &c. as well as those Letters wrote to him, which he kept in exact Order, marking the Time, he received them, and explaining the Cyphers therein; they sufficiently shew, he was esteemed by Persons of all Ranks, and Professions. And I think it will appear, that there was not a Nobleman of more Virtue, and Learning, truer Honour, or sounder Judgment, in his Time. He was well read in the Classics, and spoke elegant *Latin, French, Italian, and Spanish*; so that he purchased most of the curious Books in those Languages, published whilst he was Abroad on his Ambassies; and several learned Men made him Presents of their Works. He was industrious in searching into the Interests of the several Kingdoms and State of *Europe*; and no less studious of the Nature and Constitution of his own Country, than in the Religion professed therein; his Observations in his Ambassies, and on Political Government, with several Essays on divine and moral Subjects, in his own Hand-writing, are yet remaining at *Penshurst* Place, the Seat of the Family. His Leaving the King at *Oxford* could not justly be imputed to any Thought of complying with the Parliament, and his Going into their Quarters proceeded from his Houses, and Estate, being under their Jurisdiction; and he had followed the King, till he was reduced to the greatest Necessity. It is apparent, that he went to *Chester*, in order to go over to *Ireland*, at a Time there was very little Provision made for his acting offensively against the *Irish* Rebels; yet under all Disadvantages, he was determined to embark for that Kingdom; but falling dangerously ill, it was impossible to effect it till his Recovery, and then he was commanded to attend the King at *Oxford*, where he found the Marquis of *Ormond* had procured for himself the Government of *Ireland*. It is likewise certain, that he never was of the Parliament Faction, and *Oliver Cromwell* exacted annual Engagements from him under his Hand, not to oppose the Commonwealth. The close Interest of his Son, the Lord *L' Isle*, with that Party, might be some Means of their suffering his Lordship to live quietly; yet it appears that both the Lord *L' Isle*, and his Brother, *Algernon Sydney*, who had been sent over to *Ireland* by his Lordship; were on their Return from thence (the King having charged them to come directly to him) taken into Custody by the Parliament, on their Landing in *Lancashire*, whereby they could not comply with his Majesty's Command, who being therewith offended,

<sup>h</sup> Hist. of the Rebellion, p. 412.



they then engaged with the Army. King *Charles the Second*, on his Restoration, had those Sentiments of the Earl of *Leicester's* Principles, and Honour, that he received him very graciously, and two Days after his triumphant Entry, through his City of *London*, he was sworn of his Privy-Council, with the Earl of *Manchester*, and others, who had contributed to his Settlement on the Throne, as already mentioned. He was truly a most indulgent Husband, tender Father, generous Friend, and a strict Observer of all moral Virtues.

His Lordship's last Will and Testament, bears Date \* the 28th of *Sept.* 1665, which, with necessary Alterations, he confirmed by several Codicils; the last whereof is dated the 6th of *April*, 1675. He therein bequeaths to his Daughter *Dorothy*, Countess Dowager of *Sunderland*, one-hundred Pounds; and to his Daughter the Lady *Lucy Pelham*, one-hundred Pounds, to buy each of them a Ring; to be paid by his Executors, within a Month, or sooner, after his Decease.

He bequeaths to his eldest Son, *Philip* Lord Viscount *Lisle*, all his Books, Papers, and Globes, in his Library, Evidence-House, and Study, in his Mansion of *Penshurst* in the County of *Kent*; and in his Study and Evidence-House, in his Mesuage called *Leicester* House, in the County of *Middlesex*; with all his Books in other Places: The said Books, &c. to be used by his said Son Viscount *Lisle*, during his Life; and after his Decease, to remain to his Grandchild *Robert Sidney*, his eldest Son, for his Use, during his Life; and after to remain from one Heir to another, *That is to say, to every of them, who, for the Time being, shall hold and enjoy his Mannors, Lands, and Tenements, by Virtue of, and attending to the Indentures of Settlement thereof.* And desires and requires his said Son *Lisle*, and his Grandson, and those Heirs to whom he has given his Books, &c. as aforesaid, to carefully preserve the same, for the Benefit of those that shall succeed them, as he had done in his Time, and largely increased them.

He gives to his Son *Henry Sidney* all his Plate, Silver Dishes, &c. marked with his late dear Wife's Arms only: And all the Jewels, Medals, Cabinets, Pictures, Books, and other Things which were his said Wife's; and which she gave to his said Son *Henry*, with his Consent. And he bequeaths to his said Son *Henry Sidney* the Diamond Jewel, which the Princess *Elisabeth*, Daughter of the late King, by her Will, gave to himself and his Wife, *as a Testimony of her being well satisfied, with the Entertainment and Service, which she received in my House, whilst she lived therein, by Order and Direction of the then Parliament.* Also all the Money or Lands due unto him, in Satisfaction for his Allowances and Entertainments, as Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and General of the Army there, and as Colonel and Captain of Horse and Foot, by Commission under the great Seal of *England*, dated in the Month of *June*, 1641.

He gives to his Son *Robert Sidney* all his Money due to him on a Judgment which he obtained in the Court of *Common-Pleas*, against *Thomas Buckley*, Esq. commonly called Lord *Buckley*. Also to his Sons *Robert*, and *Henry Sidney*, equally between them, all Money due to him from the late King for his Allowance, as being Lord Ambassador Extraordinary from his Majesty to the King of *France*, as appears from the then Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, and also by Warrant of the now Lord Treasurer, for the Payment thereof.

He makes and ordains the Earl of *Sunderland*, his Son *Henry Sidney*, and Sir *John Pelham*, Bart. his Executors; and gives to them all his ready Money, Mortgages, and other his Personal Estate, not before given, towards the Performance of his Will.

And whereas, upon the Conclusion of the Marriage of his Son *Philip* Lord Viscount *Lisle*, he did by Indentures bearing Date, 16 May 24 Car. I. settle his Mannors, Lands, and Tenements on Sir *John Temple*, Knight; *Hugh Potter* and *Thomas Dorral*, Esqrs; *Miles Smith*, and *Thomas Elliot*, Gent. his Trustees; by which he had Power by any Deed or Writing under his Hand or Seal, or by his last Will, to nominate and appoint such Person or Persons, as he should

\* Ex Registr. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



think fit to hold *Leicester* House, and the Estate there, for 99 Years; he charges the same with 4000 *l.* payable by his said Son, the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, in two Years, to his Executors, for the Use of his younger Sons *Robert* and *Henry Sidney*. Also, by the said Indentures, one and twenty thousand Pounds being limited and appointed to be raised and paid, out of the Mannors, Lands, &c. in the said Indentures specified for the Uses therein expressed: He, by several Codicils to his Will annexed, on Alterations which happened by Deaths, &c. leaves his whole Personal Estate to his youngest Son *Henry Sidney*, except 5000 *l.* that he bequeaths to his 2d Son *Algernon*.

His Lordship had Issue, by the Lady *Dorothy Percy* his Wife, six Sons, whereof four survived to Maturity, *Philip*, *Algernon*, *Robert*, and *Henry*, of whom I shall distinctly treat; also nine Daughters.

1. Lady *Dorothy*, highly celebrated by the famous *Waller*, for her excellent Beauty and Virtues<sup>a</sup>, married 11th *July* 1639, at *Penshurst*, to *Henry Lord Spencer*, after created Earl of *Sunderland*, and by him had Issue *Robert* Earl of *Sunderland*, Grandfather to *Charles* the present Duke of *Marlborough*, and the honourable *John Spencer*, Esq. and others. She 2dly (after living a considerable Time a Widow) married<sup>b</sup> on the 8th of *July*, 1652, *Robert Smythe* of *Sutton* at *Hone*, and *Bounds* in *Kent*, Esq. Son and Heir of Sir *John Smythe*, Knight (by *Isabella* his Wife, Daughter of *Robert Rich*, first Earl of *Warwick*) Son and Heir of Sir *Thomas Smythe*, Uncle of *Thomas Smythe* created Viscount *Strangford*, who had to Wife *Barbara* Daughter of *Robert Sidney*, the 1st Earl of *Leicester*. The Countess of *Sunderland*, by her 2d Marriage, had Issue *Robert Smythe*, Esq. Governor of *Dover* Castle; who, by *Catharine* his Wife Daughter of *William Stafford*, of *Blatherwick* in *Northamptonshire*, Esq. had Issue *Henry*, Father of *Sidney-Stafford Smythe* of *Bounds* in *Kent*, Esq. the present Judge of the Marshal's Court, who married *Sarah*, eldest Daughter of Sir *Charles Farnaby* of *Kippington* in *Kent*, Bart.

2. *Lucy*, christened at *Penshurst*, *March* 7th, 1623<sup>c</sup>, and buried there *Feb.* 23, 1624.

3. Lady *Lucy*, christened at *Penshurst*, *July* 7th, 1625, and married there, 20 *Jan.* 1647, to *John Pelham*, Esq. Son and Heir to Sir *Thomas Pelham*, Bart. by whom she had Issue *Thomas* Lord *Pelham*, Father of his Grace, *Thomas* Duke of *Newcastle*, Principal Secretary of State to his Majesty; and of the Right Honourable *Henry Pelham*, 1st Commissioner of the Treasury, Chancellor of the Exchequer, and of the Privy Council to his Majesty. And *Elizabeth* her eldest Daughter was married to the Honourable *Edward Montagu*, Esq. who had Issue by him *George* late Earl of *Hallifax*, Father of the present Earl.

4. Lady *Anne*, who took to her Husband (without the Consent of her Father) the Revd. Mr. *Joseph Cart*, his Chaplain, and had Issue by him a Son, *Sidney Cart*, and two Daughters, who all died very young, and were buried at *Leigh* in *Kent*, where their Father was Rector.

5. Lady *Mary*, christened at *Penshurst*, *Nov.* 3, 1629, who was buried there, the 4th of *June* 1648, unmarried.

6. Lady *Frances*, christened at *Penshurst*, 18 *Dec.* 1630, and buried there, the 3d of *October*, 1651, unmarried.

7. Lady *Isabella*, christened at *Penshurst*, 30 *Sept.* 1634, and married there, 22 *August* 1650, to *Philip Smythe* Lord Viscount *Strangford*, and died without Issue by him.

8. Lady *Elizabeth*, who died unmarried, and was buried at *Penshurst*, 7 *Oct.* 1650.

9. Lady *Diana*, who also died unmarried, and was buried at *Penshurst*, the 23d of *June*, 1670.

<sup>a</sup> Ex Registr. Eccles. de *Penshurst*.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Ex Registr. Eccles. de *Penshurst*.



I shall now proceed to treat of *Philip* the eldest Son of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*. He had a liberal Education, and from his Youth had been trained up in Legantine Affairs, attending on his Father to *Denmark*, and after in the *French* Court. He had a Troop of Horse under his Uncle, the Earl of *Northumberland*, General of the Forces, sent by King *Charles the First*, against the *Scots*; and after his Father, the Earl of *Leicester*, was made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, he had the Command of a Regiment of Horse, and with his Brother *Algernon*, Captain in the same Regiment, went over to that Kingdom, and did good Service against the *Irish* Rebels.

Before his Return from *Ireland*, with his Brother *Algernon Sidney*; the King ordered them on their Allegiance to come to *Oxford*, which the Parliament hearing of, sent into *Lancashire*, where they landed, and had them taken into Custody. The King, thinking this was by their own Management, was greatly offended with them; and thereupon they entered into the Measures of the Parliament. And the <sup>d</sup> Lord Viscount *Lisle*, in 1644, had 1000 *l.* allowed him for his Services in *Ireland*.

On 21 *Jan.* 1645, they <sup>e</sup> voted *Philip* Lord Viscount *Lisle* to be General Governor of the Kingdom of *Ireland*; and, on the 31<sup>st</sup> of the same Month, came to a Resolution <sup>f</sup>, that the Committee of both Kingdoms receive from the Lord *Lisle* his Propositions touching *Ireland*. Also, on 16 *Feb.* following, voted <sup>g</sup> him an Allowance of 1200 *l.* a Month for his Salary.

On 13 *May*, 1646, the Commons sent an Ordinance to the Lords <sup>h</sup>, to enable the Lord *Lisle*, Lieutenant of *Ireland*, to raise 6000 Foot, and 850 Horse, to be sent to that Kingdom.

*Dec.* 22, 1646, the Lord Viscount *Lisle* <sup>i</sup> delivered Proposals to the Parliament, for Supplies and Money to carry on the Wars in *Ireland*, and that he was ready to go over thither in Person. His Lordship landed at *Cork*, the Beginning of *March*, and immediately sent a Detachment into the Rebels Country, which did good Service there, as *Whitlock* writes <sup>k</sup>.

Whilst he was in *Ireland*, the House voted, 6 *March*, 1646, that 7 Regiments of Foot, 3000 Horse, and 1200 Dragoons, out of the Army in *England* should be sent to that Kingdom; all Places in *England* being reduced to the Obedience of the Parliament; but, *Cromwell* having ambitious Designs in View, this Order had no Effect.

The Year after, the Commons having <sup>l</sup> voted Major General *Skippon* to be Field Marshal of *Ireland*, the Lord *Lisle* thought it an Infringement on his Power; and sent Letters to the Parliament, which were received, 13 *April*, 1647 <sup>m</sup>, giving therein an Account, that he was ready to take the Field, and would do all the Service he could, but, at the same Time, expressed his Willingness to return, if they were not satisfied with his Conduct.

On the 21<sup>st</sup> of *April* following <sup>n</sup>, the House of Commons received an Account from the Council War in *Ireland*, that the Soldiers were in great Want there; and that the Lord Viscount *Lisle* was very careful to get Supplies for them, and to do them Service. But, whilst the House was employed, how to send Part of the Army to *Ireland* (the King being in Custody) and many being unwilling to go there, as *Whitlock* writes <sup>o</sup>, the Lord *L'Isle* returned from thence, 27 *April*, 1647. And, on the 7<sup>th</sup> of *May*, reporting to the House the State of Affairs in *Ireland* <sup>p</sup>, his Lordship, with his Brother Colonel *Algernon Sidney*, and Sir *John Temple*, had the Thanks of the Commons, for their good Services in *Ireland*.

For the Trial of the King, the Lord Viscount *L'Isle* <sup>q</sup> was nominated one of his Judges, but refused to act, and did not once come among them, retiring to *Penshurst*, as the Earl of *Leicester* has observed in his Journal.

<sup>d</sup> *Whitlock's Memorials*, p. 87.    <sup>e</sup> *Ibid.* p. 194.    <sup>f</sup> p. 196.    <sup>g</sup> *Ibid.* p. 198.    <sup>h</sup> p. 210.  
<sup>i</sup> p. 235.    <sup>k</sup> p. 243.    <sup>l</sup> p. 246.    <sup>m</sup> p. 247.    <sup>n</sup> p. 248.    <sup>o</sup> *Ibid.*    <sup>p</sup> p. 249.  
<sup>q</sup> *Dugdale's View of the Troubles in Eng.* p. 367.



After the cruel Murder of the King, the Parliament proceeding to form their Commonwealth, voted, 14 Feb. 1648, a Council of State, consisting of 38; and<sup>p</sup>, thereupon, nominated the Lord Viscount *L'Isle* to be one of that Number, with the Earls of *Pembroke*, *Salisbury*, *Mulgrave*, and *Denbigh*, and the Lord *Grey of Groby*, &c. Also, in 1649, some Alterations being made in the Council of State, he was then again nominated<sup>q</sup>, with the Earls of *Salisbury*, *Denbigh*, &c. His Lordship's Letters to the Earl of *Leicester* his Father (which will be published in the Collection) disclose many secret Passages of those Times.

In 1652, he was nominated, to go Ambassador Extraordinary from the Commonwealth of *England*, to the Queen of *Sweden*, but never went.

In 1653<sup>r</sup>, on *Oliver Cromwell's* being proclaimed Lord Protector, he was one of his Council of 21 Persons; and, on his Going in State to the Parliament<sup>s</sup>, the Lord Viscount *L'Isle*, General *Montagu* (after Earl *Sandwich*) and *Whitlock*, stood with drawn Swords by the Earl of *Warwick*, who carried the Sword of State before the Protector. His Lordship was also<sup>t</sup> one of his House of Lords, summoned by Writ, 11th of *December*, 1657. And his Name was<sup>u</sup> to the Proclamation of *Richard Cromwell*, the Protector's Son, 3 Sept. 1658; but, when he resigned, the Lord Viscount *L'Isle* concerned himself no farther in publick Affairs.

After the Restoration of King *Charles the Second*, his<sup>w</sup> Lordship obtained a general Pardon, bearing Date the 30th of Oct. 1660, 12 Car. II; and, during his Father's Lime-time, resided at *Shene*, near *Richmond* in *Surry*, where he entertained himself with some of the greatest Wits of the Age.

Sir *William Temple* addresses several Letters to him there, with fine Compliments; and I have heard it well attested, that he set a-part one Day in the Week for Entertainment of Men of Letters.

In 1677, he succeeded his Father, and became Earl of *Leicester*, but always declined being concerned in publick Affairs. Nevertheless, I have been informed by those who knew his Lordship, that King *Charles the Second* consulted him in private on Affairs of State; yet he could never be brought to accept of any Employment at Court.

On King *William's* Accession to the Throne, he retained the same Sentiments as to publick Business; and dying at *Leicester-House* in *London*, the 6th of *March*, 1696-7, aged more than 80 Years, was buried with his Ancestors at *Penshurst*, the 17th of the same Month.

He married<sup>x</sup>, on the 19th of *May*, 1645, the Lady *Catharine*, Daughter of *William Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, and of his Wife, *Catharine Howard*, youngest Daughter of *Thomas* Earl of *Suffolk*; by whom he had Issue two Sons, *Robert*, his Successor, and *Algernon*, and two Daughters, *Dorothy*, and *Elisabeth*, born 13th of *August*, 1652. The youngest Son, *Algernon*<sup>y</sup>, died young, and was buried at *Penshurst*, the 10th *June*, 1648; and the youngest Daughter, *Elisabeth*, died also young; but the eldest Daughter was married to *Thomas Cheek*, Esq; 2d Son of Sir *Thomas Cheek*, of *Pirgo*, in the County of *Essex*, Knight. The Lady, their Mother, died at the Age of 24 Years, in *Northumberland-House*, *London*<sup>z</sup>, on the 18th of *August*, 1652, being 5 Days after she was delivered of her youngest Daughter, *Elisabeth*, and was buried the 22d of *August*, in the Chancel of the Church of *Penshurst*, belonging to the Family.

I shall now proceed to treat of *Algernon*, the 2d Son of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*. His noble Father was careful in giving him a learned Education; and, in 1632, when he went Ambassador to *Denmark*, took him with him; as also, when he was Ambassador in *France*.

The Countess his Mother, in a Letter to the Earl at *Paris*, dated 10 Nov. 1636, acquaints his Lordship, That she bears him much commended by all that come from thence, for a huge deal of Wit, and much Sweetness of Nature.

<sup>p</sup> Whitlock, p. 376. <sup>q</sup> Ibid p. 425. <sup>r</sup> Rapin's Hist. of Engl. 8vo, Vol. 13. p. 95. <sup>s</sup> Whitlock's Memorials, p. 661, 662. <sup>t</sup> Ibid. p. 665. <sup>u</sup> p. 675. <sup>w</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penshurst. <sup>x</sup> Journal of the Earl of Leicester. <sup>y</sup> Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst. <sup>z</sup> Journal, at antea.



On the Breaking out of the Rebellion in *Ireland*, he had a Commission for a Troop of Horſe in his Father's Regiment, and went over with his Brother, the Lord Viſcount *L'Ifle*, into that Kingdom, where he behaved very gallantly againſt the Rebels.

In 1643, he had the King's Permiſſion to come to *England*; and the Earl of *Leiceſter* gave him this Licence <sup>a</sup>:

*By the Lord Lieutenant Generall of Ireland.*

**W**Hereas his Maſteſty is graciouſly pleaſed to giue Permiſſion vnto *Algernon Sidney*, Captayne of a Troope of Horſe for his Maſteſtyes Service in *Ireland*, to be abſent from the ſayd Troope, and to come ouer into *England*. Theſe are to will and require you, that you forbear Impoſing any Cheque vpon him and the fix Horſes allowed to him, in his Entertaynment from his Maſteſty, during the Space of fower Monthes next to come. Whereof you may not fayle. And, for ſo doing, this ſhal be a ſufficient Warrant. Given at *Oxford*, the 22th of *June*, 1643.

To Sir *Robert King*, Knight,  
or his Deputy or Deputys.

*Leyceſter.*

But, landing in *Lancaſhire*, he was, by Order of Parliament, brought in Cuſtody to *London*, where he was prevailed on to take a Command under them; and <sup>b</sup> 2000 *l.* was ordered him for his Arrears. The Order of the Houſe of Commons was as follows:

*Die Jovis ult. Auguſti 1643.*

A Letter <sup>c</sup> was read from the Committee att *Liverpoole* and *Mancheſter*, and an intercepted Letter, there taken from Captayne *Sidney*, newly come out of *Ireland*, to *Orlando Bridgman* at *Cheſter*, of his Intencions to goe to the Kinge, were read:

*Ordered,*

That a Letter bee written to the Deputy Leiutenants and Committees in the Countie of *Lancaſter*, to ſend vpp in ſafe Cuſtody the Lord *Liſle*, Captayne *Sidney*, and Sir *Richard Grinville*, guarded with a ſtrong Convoy: And that the Committees and Deputie Leiutenants in the Counties betwixt this and *Lancaſhire*, reſpectively, doe appointe a good Convoy with the ſaid Perſons, through their ſeveral Counties, and that a Stay bee made of all their Goods and Armes, till this Houſe take further Order. And Mr. *Aſhurſt* is to prepare this Letter, and to write the ſame accordingly.

*H. Elſynge, Cler. Parl. d. Com.*

*Mr. Aſhurſt's Letter.*

*Gentlemen,*

**T**HE Houſe of Commons doth take ſpeciall Notice of your great Care and Diligence in Staying and Securing the Perſons and Goods of ſuch, who, at this Time, come out of *Ireland*; for which, they haue commanded mee to giue you Thankes, and to aſſure you, that they will euer haue a tender Regard to you and your County, who, vpon all Occaſions, haue ſhewed ſo much Faithfulnes and Zeale to the Publike.

For the Particulars in your laſt Letter, I am to acquaint you, that it is their Pleaſure, that the Perſons of the Lord *Liſle*, Captaine *Sidney*, and Sir *Richard Greenwill* bee ſent vp with a ſtrong Convoy, according to the Direccions in the incloſed Order. And that all their Goods and Armes bee depoſited into ſafe Hands, vntill the Houſe take further Order. This being all that I haue in Charge, I ſhall only adde, that I am

*September 5,*

*1643.*

*Your, &c.*

<sup>a</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penſhurſt.

<sup>b</sup> Whitlock's Memorials, p. 237.

<sup>c</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penſhurſt.  
Another



Another Letter was sent by the Speaker, to Sir *William Brereton*<sup>d</sup>, as follows :

*S I R,*

**A**mongst the many Evidences of your Care and Zeale to the Publike, the House hath taken speciall Notice of your often representing to them their Danger, by the frequent Comeing ouer either of the Rebels, or other Soldiers, out of *Ireland*, at this Tyme; and, for Prevencion of that Mischeife, haue passed this inclosed Ordinance, which they hope you will make good Vse of. For the Persons of the Lord *Lisle*, Captaine *Sidney*, and Sir *Richard Greenville*, they haue sent their Direccions to *Liuerpoole*, that they bee brought vp hither to *London* with a safe Convoy, where in they doubt not of your best Assistance. And, vpon this Occasion, I am to assure you, and those worthy Gentlemen of your Country, that ioyne with you, That, as the House haue observed Gods great Goodnesse in preferuing you in so many Dangers, and prospering you in so many difficult Vndertakings, so they haue taken speciall Notice of the great Courage, Care, and vnwearyed Paines, which haue beene manifested, not only in your owne Defence, but in your ready Assistance of all neighbouring Counties. And haue commaunded me to giue you Thankes, and desire you, in their Names, to do the like to all the Gentlemen in your Country, with you, who haue deserued so well of the Comon Wealth. And, as they assure them selues, that you will make Vse of your Chiefe Comaund with a great deale of Wisdome and Tendernefs towards those worthy Gentlemen, so they hope that all those Gentlemen will haue the like Respect to you: And both labour in a Bond of Loue to preferue Vnity, as your greatest Strength, and to auoyd Diuision, as a certaine Ruine to your Country; which wee know you study to preferue. And this being all I haue in Comaund (only to assure you, that as the House hath euer heretofore, so they will euer, hereafter, bee ready to afford you all Suplies and Assistance in their Power) I shall only adde, that I am,

*S I R,*

September 5, 1643.

Your assured loving Freind,

*Wm. Lentball.*

The Earl of *Manchester*, Serjeant-Major-General of the several Counties of *Essex*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Hertford*, *Cambridge*, *Huntingdon*, and *Lincoln*, constitutes, 10 May, 1644, *Algernon Sydney*, Captain of a Troop of Horse, within his own Regiment, consisting of one hundred, to be raised for the Defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdom<sup>e</sup>. And Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, Knight, Commander in Chief of all the Forces, raised for the Defence of the Kingdom, constitutes him Colonel of a Regiment of Horse, raised, and to be raised, for the Service aforesaid. Dated the 2d of *April*, 1645.

Also, *Philip*, Lord Viscount *L'Isle*, Lieutenant-General of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and General of the Forces there, by the Power and Authority to him given, by an Order of the Lords and Commons of *England*, in Parliament assembled, bearing Date the sixth Day of *July* last past, constitutes and appoints *Algernon Sydney*, Colonel of a Regiment of Horse, to serve in this present Expedition for *Ireland*, &c.

It appears by the Earl of *Leicester's* Journal, that he was Lieutenant-General of the Horse in *Ireland*, and Governor of *Dublin*; and that before he went into that Kingdom, he had the Government of *Chichester*, and was in the Battles of *York*, and other Places. Also, that on the 8th of *April*, 1647, early in the Morning, the House of Commons being then thin, and few of my Sons Friends present (saith the Earl) 'it was moved by Mr. *Glyn* the Recorder, that Colonel *Jones*, should be made Governor of *Dublin* in Chief, and not Deputy-Governor to *Algernon Sydney*, pretending that *Jones* would not go, unless he might

<sup>d</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.

<sup>e</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.

<sup>f</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.



‘ be Governor : Which was not true, *Jones* having accepted of the Place of Deputy-Governor from the Committee at *Derby-house* ; who had also appointed the Lord *L’ Isle*, to commission his Brother *Algernon* to be Governor of *Dublin*, which he had done before they went into *Munster*. This Motion of the Recorder, was seconded by old Sir *Henry Vane*, who pretended, that his Conscience moved him to be of Opinion, that since the House had thought proper to recall the Lord *L’ Isle*, it was not fitt to let his Brother, *Algernon Sydney*, remain Governor of so important a Place as *Dublin*. Sir *William Armyne*, and others, opposed this Motion, alledging, if they had used one Brother ill, they ought not to do Injustice to the other, who had so well deserved of them. But it was carried against him; and the Government was conferred on *Jones*. After which Resolution, it was moved, *That some Recompence might be given to Algernon Sydney, according to his Merit*, to which the House assented without Opposition. And *Whitlock* <sup>2</sup> writes, that, on 27 April 1647, Colonel *Sydney* had the Thanks of the House for his good Services in *Ireland* ; and \* was afterwards made Governor of *Dover*.

He was, by Inclination and Principle, so grounded in his Opinion for a Commonwealth, that when *Cromwell* had assumed the Government, he refused to act under him ; or his Son *Richard Cromwell* who succeeded him in the Protectorship : During which Time he lived retired at *Penshurst*, and other Places, when it is conceived he began to write his *Discourses on Government*. But on the Resignation of *Richard*, and the Restoration of the long Parliament, and their Speaker *Lenthall* ; they, on the 7th of May 1659, having voted a Declaration to secure the Liberty and Property of the People, both as Men and Christians, without a single Person, King, or House of Peers, he then came into their Measures. Whereupon on 13 May following, <sup>b</sup> he was named, by that Parliament, one of the Council of State, with the Lord *Fairfax*, Sir *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Sir *Horatio Townshend*, Sir *Henry Vane*, *Whitlock*, and others.

On 5 June, 1659, he was nominated, with Sir *Robert Honywood*, and *Whitlock*, to go Commissioners to mediate a Peace between the Kings of *Sweden* and *Denmark*. *Whitlock* recites, <sup>i</sup> that he was not willing to undertake this Service, especially being joined with those who would expect Precedency of him, and he knew well the over-ruling Temper, and Height of Colonel *Sidney*, and therefore endeavoured to excuse himself by Reason of his old Age and Infirmities. Whereupon the Council at length gave him Leave to stay in *England*, so that only Colonel *Sydney*, and Sir *Robert Honywood*, went on that Ambassy, which was not ended on the Restoration of King *Charles the Second*.

His Letters to his Father, the Earl of *Leicester*, give a full Account of his Negotiations there, and are very curious and remarkable. It further appears, that the King would not suffer him to return to *England*, and thereupon he travelled through *Germany* to *Brussels*, where he resided for some Time, and from thence went to *France*, <sup>k</sup> having the following Licence from the French King :

To all Governours and our Lieutenants-Generall, &c. Greeting, Mr. *Sydney*, Son to the Earl of *Leicester*, having desired, notwithstanding the War against *England*, that he might change his Place of Abode from *Germany*, to go to *Montpellier*, to which we having assented : We Command you to let him pass freely through your severall Jurisdictions, with his Domesticks, to *Montpellier*, without Interruption, and to shew him all the Favour, and aid him as far as you can. Given at our Castle of *Vincennes*, 3 Aug. 1663.

Signed *Louis*.

He afterwards travelled into *Italy*, and made his Abode at *Rome*. His Observations on the Courts, and Manners of the Countries he past through, more particularly of the Cardinals and People of Distinction at *Rome*, are very learned and entertaining ; and will be published in the Collection of Letters, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Memorials, p. 249. \* Ib. p. 463. <sup>a</sup> Whitlock, p. 679. <sup>i</sup> Ib. p. 681. <sup>k</sup> From the Original.



It does not appear, that he had acted farther, than several who had been preferred by King *Charles the Second*; it being certain, that though he was nominated one of the Judges of his Royal Father, he had no Concern in his Murther; so that he was hardly used, in being forced to forsake his Country. But the Earl of *Leicester*, shewing a Desire of seeing him before he died, and *Robert* Earl of *Sunderland*, his Lordship's Grandson, being in Favour with King *Charles the Second*, he obtained his Majesty's Leave for his Return, in 1677; as also his Pardon.

On the 13th of *November*, 1677, he was at *Penshurst*, and then<sup>m</sup> gave a Discharge to the Executors of his Father's Will (*Robert*, Earl of *Sunderland*; *Henry Sydney*, Esq; his Brother, and Sir *John Pelham*, Bart.) for the Legacy left him therein, of 5000, and 100 l.

As he joined with those that opposed the Measures of the Court, the King took great Offence at it, which in the End proved fatal to him.

In 1678, he stood Candidate for Member of Parliament for *Guilford*, but the Court opposing, he lost his Election. I find among his Papers, at *Penshurst* Place, the following Account.

Algernoon Sidney, Esq; his Case concerning the Election for the Towne of Guilford in Surry.

**B**Efore the Election, Colonell *Sidney* went to the Mayor, and acquainted him of his Intentions to stand for the Towne of *Guilford*; and desired him to acquaint the Corporation therewith; to which the Mayor answered, that both himselfe and they were engaged to Mr. *Delmaboy*, and that it was the Custome of the Towne, for the Electors to vote as the Magistrates (who were the Mayor and Aldermen) did.

Colonell *Sidney* informed the Mayor, that he heard Mr. *Delmaboy*'s Party had given out, that he was incapable of being chosen a Burgesse for that Towne, because he was no Ffreeman; to prevent which Objection, he did tender himselfe to him, and desire he might be made Free of the Towne of *Guilford*; to which the Mayor answered, it did not depend upon him, but upon the rest of the Majestrates, and that he would propose it to them, and returne the Colonell their Answer, which he never did.

Vpon the Day of Election, the Colonell went againe and renewed his Desire of being made Free of the Towne; to which the Mayor answered as before, but never returned the Colonell any Answer.

The Mayor, upon the Colonells Goeing to him, which was the *Fryday* Seavennight before the Election, desired to know when the Election would be; to which the Mayor replied, *Ifryday* next, or *Munday* Seavennight; and withall promised, whatever Day it was, that the Colonell should have timely Notice thereof. Upon which, on the *Thursday* after, the Colonell came downe Part of the Way, but hearing the Pole for the County was not over (which ended not till *Fryday* Morning) did not come to *Guilford* till *Fryday*, expecting the Election to be on *Munday*, as before agreed. But the other Party, hearing the Colonell was come, prevailed with the Mayor, at past 12 a Clock on *Fryday*, to proclaime the Election the next Day at 9, which was *Markett Day*, and never knowne before.

At the Time of the Election, and after the Precept read, the Recorder asked who stood, and being answered (amongst the rest of the Competitors) Colonell *Sidney*, he asked if he was a Freeman; and being answered no; he, in the Court Howse, where the Election was, openly declared before the Electors, he could not be chosen, although he had the Plurality of Voices; so as many of those, that were for the Colonell, refused to pole, and others, that were for him, would give no Voice upon the Account of what the Recorder said.

<sup>1</sup> Rapin's Hist. of Eng. 8vo. Vol. XIV, p. 334.  
V O L. I.

<sup>m</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.

R r

Severall



Severall of those, that would have poled for the Colonell, were laughed at and affronted, and refused their Pole, because they did not pronounce the Colonell's Name right.

They refused severall that had Voice to be poled for the Colonell, and admitted severall that had not, for Mr. *Delmaboy*; as Almsmen, and others, that received the Charity of the Corporation.

Severall that would have voted for the Colonell, were threatened, that, if they did not vote for Mr. *Delmaboy*, they should not receive the Benefitt that others did of a considerable Revenue that belongs to the Towne, and perticularly the Landlord of the *Crowne-Inne*, where the Lord *Longford* owed a considerable Summe of Money (Three-hundred Pounds and upwards) upon the Account of the Election of Knights of the Shire; that if he voted for the Colonell, and not for *Delmaboy*, he should never be paid, or at least not in a long Time; in which Matter the whole Towne were almost concerned, and in Probability the same Argument might be used to many of them, as well as to the Man of the *Crowne*.

One Mr. *Penn*, a Quaker, appearing for the Colonell, was called into the Court, and hindred from encouraging such as were for the Colonell, and told by the Recorder he was a Jesuite (in Affront to the Colonell) to whom the Recorder would have tendred Oathes (at that Time contrary to Law) and at last the Mayor turned him out of the Court, and forbid him to appeare amongst the Colonell's Party, to the great Discouragement of them; and more perticularly to such as were of the same Perswasion with Mr. *Penn*; amongst which Party, the Colonell had severall Voices.

Mr. *Penn*, therein mentioned, was the famous Sir *William Penn*, who appears to be greatly in his Interest, by the following Letters to him.

1st, 1st Month, 79.

Deare Friend,

I Hope you gott all well Home, as I by Gods Goodness haue done. I reflected vpon the Way of Things past at *Guildford*, and that which occurs to me, as reasonable, is this: That so soon as the Articles or Exceptions are digested, show them to Serjeant *Maynard*, and gett his Opinion of the Matter; Sir *Francis Winington*, or *Wallope*, haue been used in those Occasions too. Thou must haue Councel before the Committee, and to advise first vpon the Reason of an Address or Petition, with them, in my Opinion, is not imprudent, but very fitting. If they say, that, the Conjuncture considerd; thy Qualifications, and Alliance, and his Ungratefulness to the House, they beleive all may amount to an unfair Election; then I offer to waite presently vpon the Duke of *Buckingham*, Earl of *Shaftsbury*, Lord *Essex*, Lord *Halifax*, Lord *Hollis*, Lord *Gray*, &c. to use their utmost Interest in reversing this Business. This may be done in five Dayes, and I was not willing to stay till I come, which will be with the first. Remember the Nonresidents on their Side, as *Legg*, &c. I left Order with all our Interest to bestirr themselves, and watch, and transmitt an Account to thee dayly. I blest God I found all well at Home. I hope the Disapointment so strainge (140 Pole Men as we thought last Night considerd) does not moue thee; thou (as thy Friends) had a conscientious Regard to *England*; and to be putt aside, by such base Ways, is really a Suffering for Righteousness; thou hast embarqu't thy selfe with them, that seek, and love, and chuse the best Things; and Number is not Weight with thee. I hope it is retrieveable, for to me it looks not a fair and clear Election. Forgett not, that Soldiers were made free 3 Weeks agoe, in Prospect of the Choice (and, by the Way, they went, we may guess, for *Delmaboy*'s Sake) and thy selfe so often putt by, a Thing not refused to one of thy Condition. Of the Lower House, the Lord *Cavendish*, and especially Lord *Russell*, Sir *Jo. Coventry*, *Powell*, *Saycevrill*, *Williams*, *Lee*, *Clergis*, *Boskewen*,



*Boskowen, Titus.* Men, some able, some hott, and fitt to be neerly engaged in the Knowledge of these Things. 'Tis late, I am weary, and hope to see thee quickly. Farewell.

*Thy faithfull Friend,*

WILLIAM PENN.

It appears, that the Colonel did not think it proper to pursue his Claim. And, that Parliament, which met at *Westminster* in *March* following, being dissolved, Mr. Penn sent the following Letter to him :

*Wiston, 29th 5th Month, 79.*

I Am now at Sir *John Faggs*, where I and my Relations dined. I haue pressed the Point with what Dilligence and Force I coulde ; and to say true, Sir *John Fagg* has been a most zealous, and, he beleives, a successfull Friend to thee. But, vpon a serious Consideration of the Matter, it is agreed that thou comst down with all Speed ; but that thou takest *Hall-land* in thy Way, and bringest Sir *John Pelham* with thee, which he ought the less to scruple, because his haueing no Interest, can be no Objection to his Appearing with thee ; the commonest Civility, that can be, is all desired. The Burrough has kindled at thy Name, and takes it well ; if Sir *John Temple* may be credited, he assures me it is very likely ; he is at Work dayly. An other, one *Parsons*, treats to Day. But for thee, as well as him selfe, and mostly makes his Men for thee, and perhaps will be perswaded, if you two carry it not, to bequeath his Interest to thee, and then Captain *Goreing* is thy Colleague ; and indeed this I wish, both to make the Thing the easier, and to prevent Offence. Sir *John Pelham* sent me Word, he heard that his Brother, *Henry Sidney*, would be proposed to that Burrough, or already was, and, till he was fure to the Contrary, it would not be decent for him to appear ; of that thou canst best inform him. That Day you come to *Bramber*, Sir *John Fagg* will meet you both ; and that Night you may lye at *Wiston*, and then, when thou pleasest, with us at *Wormingburst*. Sir *John Temple* has that Opinion of thy good Reasons to perswade, as well as Quality to influence the Electors, that, with what is and will be done, the Business will prosper ; which, with my true good Wishes that it may be so, is all at present, from

*Thy true Friend,*

W. PENN.

Sir *John Fagg* salutes thee:

The Colonel was not chose, the Interest being before made by Sir *John Pelham*, for his Brother, *Henry Sidney* (after Earl of *Romney*) who was elected, and sat in Parliament for *Bramber*, as will hereafter berelated.

In 1683, he was accused of being concerned in the *Ryebouse Plot* ; and, after the Lord *Ruffel* had been examined, he was next brought before the King and Council <sup>n</sup>. He was so wise to say, he would make the best Defence he could, if they had any Proof against him ; but he would not fortify their Evidence by any Thing he should say : So that his Examination was very short ; and, there being no <sup>o</sup> Sort of Evidence against him, his Commitment was against Law ; for he was <sup>p</sup> not taken up directly as a Plotter, but for a Republican and Fanatick.

He lay some Time in the *Tower*, and was brought thence by *Habeas Corpus*, on the 7th of *November*, 1683, to the *King's Bench Bar*, where he was arraigned on an Indictment of High Treason <sup>q</sup>. To which he pleaded not Guilty, and desired a Fortnight's Time for preparing Evidence ; which being granted, he came to his Trial on the 21st of *November*, and was found Guilty.

<sup>n</sup> Burnet's Hist. of his own Times, Vol. 1, p. 548.  
p. 403.

<sup>q</sup> Ibid.

<sup>o</sup> Ibid.

<sup>p</sup> Hist. of Engl. Vol. 3,



A Jury was returned<sup>r</sup>, consisting, for the most Part, of very mean Persons, and those tried beforehand how tractable they would be, and, some of them not being Freeholders, he excepted to them. But *Jefferies*, Lord Chief Justice, told him, that had been overruled in the Lord *Russel's* Case, and could not be allowed to him. This was one of his bold Strains, as Bishop *Burnet* writes, for the Lord *Russel's* Jury consisted of Citizens, on his being tried in *London*, and in that Case it was customary. But this Trial was in *Middlesex*, where it had always been allowed to challenge the Jury, whether they were Freeholders or not.

Four Witnesses were produced against him, *Rumsey*, *West*, *Keeling*, and the Lord *Howard* of *Esrick*. The three first gave a particular Account of the Plot, but said nothing directly against the Prisoner; only they said they heard of a Council of Six, and that he was one of them. Yet even in that they contradicted one another; *Rumsey* swearing he had it from *West*; and *West* swearing that he had it from him; which was not observed till the Trial came out. If it had been observed sooner<sup>s</sup>, it is thought *Jefferies* would have ordered it to be struck out, as he did all that *Sidney* had objected on the Point of the Jury, because they were not Freeholders.

The Lord *Howard* deposed (as before at the Trial of the Lord *Russel*) ‘ That, after the Earl of *Shaftsbury's* Flight, the chief Persons concerned in the Conspiracy, in his Time, began to consider, they had gone so far, that it would be unsafe for them to make a Retreat; and that in so great an Affair, consisting of so many Particulars, it would be necessary to have some select Council; and that therefore they resolved to erect a Cabal among themselves, which usually consisted of six Persons, the Duke of *Monmouth*, the Earl of *Essex*, the Lord *Russel*, Colonel *Sidney*, Mr. *Hamden*, Junior, and the Deponent; and this was about the Middle of *January* last. They met at Mr. *Hamden's* House, where it was agreed, their proper Province was to take Care of the Insurrection: That the chief Things they debated were, *Whether that Insurrection should begin first in London, or in the Country; then what Counties or Towns were fittest, and most ready for Action: Then what Arms were to be got, and how to be disposed: Then that it was necessary to have a common Bank of twenty-five or thirty thousand Pounds, to answer the Occasions of such an Undertaking: But that the greatest Point was, to order it so, as to draw in Scotland into a Consent with them; because it was requisite, that all Kinds of Diversion should be given to the King's Forces.* That, about ten Days after, every one of the same Persons met again, at the Lord *Russel's* House: That they then came to a Resolution of sending to the Earl of *Argyle*, to settle a Correspondence with him, and that a Messenger should be dispatched into *Scotland*, to invite some *Scotchmen* hither, who best understood the State of *Scotland*; to give an Account of it. That the Persons determined to be sent for, were Sir *John Cockram*, the Lord *Melvil*, and one of the Name of *Campbel*: That Colonel *Sidney* was intrusted to take Care of a Messenger; and he told the Deponent, he had sent *Aaron Smith*: Then they agreed not to meet again, till the Return of the Messenger: That all this Debate at the Lord *Russel's*, went without Contradiction, all there present giving their Consent: That, as for Raising Money, every one was to think of raising it in such Way, as it might be collected without giving Cause of Jealousy: That, after this, the Deponent met no more with them; but when he returned out of the Country, he was informed, that *Aaron Smith* was come back, and that Sir *John Cockram* was also come to Town.’

To all this Colonel *Sidney* objected: *First*, The great Improbability of Erecting a Council of Six; and that Persons, so little knowing one another, should presently fall into so great and intimate a Friendship. As to the Duke of *Monmouth*, he said, he never spoke with him above three Times in his Life; one Time was when Lord *Howard* brought him to his House, and cozened them

<sup>r</sup> Burnet's Hist. p. 570.

<sup>s</sup> Ibid. p. 571.

both;



both ; telling the Duke, the Colonel had invited him, and the Colonel, that the Duke invited himself ; and neither of them was true. He said the Lord *Howard* was too infamous by his Life, and the many Perjuries not to be denied, to be credited, and took Notice of his varying in his Evidence, with Respect to the Lord *Ruffel* and him. He alledged the Lord *Howard's* Indigence, and his Owing him Money, which Debt might probably be cancelled by his Conviction. He proved, by the Testimonies of the Earl of *Clare*, the Earl of *Anglesey*, of Mr. *Philip* and Mr. *Edward Howard*, Dr. *Burnet*, Mr. *Ducas*, and Mr. *Blake*, that the Lord *Howard* had confessed, *That he could not get his Pardon, untill he had done some other Jobbs ; untill he was past the Drudgery of Swearing.*

But what was most urged and aggravated against him (as only the Lord *Howard's* Evidence made any Thing against him) was a Manuscript found in his Closet among his Papers, in Answer to a Book wrote by Sir *Robert Filmer*, intitled *Patriarcha*, wherein he endeavoured to prove the Divine Right of Monarchy, on the eldest Son's succeeding to the Authority of the Father ; insinuating thereby, that the Kings of *England* were invested with absolute and unlimited Power. By the Manuscript it appeared, that Colonel *Sidney*, in Answer to this, asserted, that Princes had their Power from the People, with Restrictions and Limitations ; and that they were liable to the Justice of the People, if they abused their Power to the Prejudice of the Subjects, and against established Laws. This, by an *Innuendo*, was said to be an Evidence to prove, that he was in a Plot against the King's Life. And it was insisted on, that this ought to stand as a second Witness.

As to the Manuscript, the Colonel said, it was not proved to be wrote by him, and that a Similitude of Hands was not a legal Proof in Capital Charges, though it was in Civil Matters. That whatever was in those Papers, were his own private Thoughts, and Speculations of Government, never communicated to any, and that it had been wrote some Years ago. So that it could not be pretended to be a Proof of a late Plot. That the Manuscript was not finished ; so it could not be known how it would end : That the fiftieth Part of it was not produced, nor the Tenth of that offered to be read. *Jefferies*, the Chief Justice, interrupted him very rudely, probably to put him in a Passion, to which he was subject ; but he maintained his Temper to Admiration. The Solicitor-general aggravated his Writings, as a Proof of his Intentions, pretending it was an Overt-Act, for he said *Scribere est agere*. *Jefferies* delivered it as Law, and said that all the Judges were of the same Mind : That if there were two Witnesses, the one to the Treason, the other only to a Circumstance, such as the Buying of a Knife ; these made the two Witnesses, which the Statute required in Cases of Treason. With these wretched Subtilties, and positive Directions from the Bench, the Jury (which all agree had been packed) were induced to bring him in Guilty. This was the first Precedent, that any Person lost his Life on an Indictment of High Treason, for Writing any Thing, without Publishing it. The Lord Chief Justice *Jefferies* shewed such great Partiality, that he told the Jury<sup>u</sup>, *The Prisoner was born a Traytor*. But, from what has been already related, his Ancestors had eminently served the Crown, and their Country.

The learned Sir *John Hawles* has well remarked, ' He was merely talked to Death, under the Notion of a Commonwealth's Man ; and found guilty by a Jury who were not much more proper Judges in the Case, than they would have been, if what he had wrote had been done by him in *Syriack* or *Arabick*. ' And that it was observable, ' the Indictment against him was never presented to the Grand Jury, before they came into the Hall, and yet they found it immediately. The greatest Part of the Evidence (as it was in my Lord *Ruffel's* Case) ' was only Hear-say, &c. '

When he was brought into Court to receive Sentence, he then repeated his Objections to the Evidence against him<sup>w</sup>, in which Judge *Withins* interrupted

<sup>u</sup> Burnet, p 572.

<sup>w</sup> Hist. of Engl. Vol. 3. p. 404.

<sup>w</sup> Burnet, Ibid.



him, and by a strange Indecency gave him the *Lie* in open Court; which he bore patiently. His Execution was respited for three Weeks, the Trial being universally cried out upon, as a Piece of most enormous Injustice. He sent to Lord *Hallifax* (after Marquis of *Hallifax*) who was his Nephew (having married Lady *Dorothy Spencer*, Daughter of *Henry*, Earl of *Sunderland*, by Lady *Dorothy* his Wife, Daughter of *Robert Sydney*, Earl of *Leicester*) the Heads, and main Points of his Defence; desiring he would lay it before the King. Which Lord *Hallifax* performed, praying his Majesty to review the whole Matter. Whereupon \* *Jefferies* told the King, in his furious Way, that *Sidney must die, or he must die*. When all Application failed, and he saw the Warrant for his Execution, he expressed no Concern at it: And the Change that was in his Temper amazed all that went to him. He told the Sheriffs that brought the Warrant, he would not expostulate upon any Thing on his own Account (for the World was now nothing to him) but he desired they would consider how guilty they were of his Blood, who had not returned a fair Jury, but one packed, and as they were directed by the King's Solicitor: He spoke this to them, not for his own Sake, but for their Sake<sup>y</sup>. One of the Sheriffs was struck with this, and wept.

He wrote a long Vindication of himself, which Bishop *Burnet* says he read, and that he summed up the Substance of it in the Paper he gave to the Sheriffs; and, suspecting they might suppress it, he gave a Copy of it to a Friend. It was a Fortnight before it was printed, though the Speeches of those, who died for the Popish Plot, were published the very next Day: And it would not have been suffered to have been printed, but that written Copies were daily dispersed. He met Death with an Unconcernedness, that became one who had set up *Marcus Brutus* for his Pattern. He was but a very few Minutes on the Scaffold on *Tower Hill*; he spoke little, and prayed very short, and his Head was cut off at one Blow, on the 7th of *December*, 1683, aged about 61. The next Day, he was <sup>z</sup> buried with his Ancestors at *Penshurst*, viz. 8 *December*, 1683.

The Paper, he delivered to the Sheriffs, sets forth his Innocence, and the unnatural Treatment he had undergone, in such pathetick Terms, and strong Reasoning, that it would be Injustice to his Memory, to leave it out here. He thus begins:

*Men, Brethren, and Fathers; Friends, Countrymen, and Strangers.*

**I**T may be expected that I should now say some great Matters unto you; but the Rigour of the Season, and the Infirmities of my Age, increased by a close Imprisonment of five Months, do not permit me.

Moreover, we live in an Age that makes Truth pass for Treason: I dare not say any Thing contrary unto it, and the Ears of those who are about me will probably be found too tender to hear it. My Trial and Condemnation doth sufficiently evidence this.

*West*, *Rumsey*, and *Keyling*, who were brought to prove the Plot, said no more of me, than that they knew me not; and some others, equally unknown to me, had used my Name, and that of some others, to give a little Reputation to their Designs. The Lord *Howard* is too infamous by his Life, and the many Perjuries not to be denied, or rather sworn by himself, to deserve Mention; and, being a single Witness, would be of no Value, though he had been of unblemished Credit, or had not seen and confessed that the Crimes committed by him would be pardoned, only for Committing more; and even the Pardon promised could not be obtained, till the Drudgery of Swearing was over.

This being laid aside, the whole Matter is reduced to the Papers said to be found in my Closet by the King's Officers, without any other Proof of their being written by me, than what is taken from Suppositions upon the Similitude

\* *Burnet*, p. 572.

<sup>y</sup> *Burnet* ut antea.

<sup>z</sup> *Ex Regist. Eccles. de Penshurst.*



of an Hand that is easily counterfeited, and which hath been lately declared, in the Lady Car's Case, to be no lawful Evidence in Criminal Causes.

But, if I had been seen to write them, the Matter would not be much altered. They plainly appear to relate to a large Treatise, written long since, in Answer to *Filmer's* Book, which, by all intelligent Men, is thought to be grounded upon wicked Principles, equally pernicious to Magistrates and People.

If he might publish to the World his Opinion, that all Men are born under a Necessity derived from the Laws of God, and Nature, to submit to an absolute kingly Government, which could be restrained by no Law, or Oath; and that he that has the Power, whether he came to it by Creation, Election, Inheritance, Usurpation, or any other Way, had the Right; and none must oppose his Will; but the Persons and Estates of his Subjects must indispensably be subject unto it; I know not why I might not have published my Opinion to the contrary, without the Breach of any Law I have yet known.

I might, as freely as he, publickly have declared my Thoughts, and the Reasons upon which they were grounded; and I am persuaded to believe, that God had left Nations to the Liberty of setting up such Governments as best pleased themselves.

That Magistrates were set up for the Good of Nations; not Nations, for the Honour and Glory of Magistrates.

That the Right and Power of Magistrates, in every Country, was that which the Laws of that Country made it to be.

That those Laws were to be observed, and the Oaths taken by them, having the Force of a Contract between Magistrate and People, could not be violated without Danger of dissolving the whole Fabrick.

That Usurpation could give no Right, and the most dangerous of all Enemies to Kings, were they, who, raising their Power to an exorbitant Height, allowed to Usurpers all the Rights belonging unto it.

That such Usurpations being seldom compassed without the Slaughter of the reigning Person, or Family, the worst of all Villanies was thereby rewarded with the most glorious Privileges.

That, if such Doctrines were received, they would stir up Men to the Destruction of Princes, with more Violence, than all the Passions that have hitherto raged in the Hearts of the most Unruly.

That none could be safe, if such a Reward were proposed to any, that could destroy them.

That few would be so gentle as to spare even the best, if, by their Destruction, a wild Usurper could become God's Anointed; and, by the most execrable Wickedness, invest himself with that Divine Character.

This is the Scope of the whole Treatise: The Writer gives such Reasons as at present did occur unto him, to prove it. This seems to agree with the Doctrines of the most revered Authors of all Times, Nations, and Religions. The best and wisest of Kings, have ever acknowledged it. The present King of *France* has declared, that Kings have that happy Want of Power, that they can do nothing contrary to the Laws of their Country; and grounds his Quarrel with the King of *Spain*, Anno 1667, upon that Principle. King *James*, in his Speech to the Parliament, Anno 1603, doth in the highest Degree assert it: The Scripture seems to declare it.

If, nevertheless, the Writer was mistaken, he might have been refuted by Law, Reason, and Scripture; and no Man, for such Matters, was ever otherwise punished, than by being made to see his Error; and it has not (as I think) been ever known, that they had been referred to the Judgment of a Jury, composed of Men utterly unable to comprehend them.

But there was little of this in my Case; the Extravagance of my Prosecutors goes higher: The abovementioned Treatise was never finished, nor could be in many Years; and, most probably, would never have been. So much as is of it, was written long since, never reviewed nor shewn to any Man; and the  
fiftieth



fiftieth Part of it was not produced, and not the Tenth of that offered to be read. That which was never known to those who are said to have conspired with me, was said to be intended to stir up the People, in Prosecution of the Designs of those Conspirators.

When nothing of particular Application to Time, Place, or Person, could be found in it (as has ever been done by those who endeavoured to raise Insurrections) all was supplied by *Innuendo's*.

Whatsoever is said of the Expulsion of *Tarquin*, the Insurrection against *Nero*, the Slaughter of *Caligula*, or *Domitian*, the Translation of the Crown of *France* from *Moroveus* his Race to *Pepin*, and from his Descendents to *Hugh Capet*, and the like; was applied, by *Innuendo*, to the King.

They have not considered, that, if such Acts of State be not good, there is not a King in the World, that has any Title to the Crown he wears; nor can have any, unless he could deduce his Pedigree from the eldest Son of *Noah*; and shew, that the Succession had still continued in the eldest, of the eldest Line; and been so deduced to him.

Every one may see, what Advantage this would be to all Kings of the World; and whether, that failing, it were not better for them to acknowledge, they had received their Crowns by the Consent of willing Nations; or, to have no better Title to them, than Usurpation and Violence; which, by the same Ways, may be taken from them.

But I was long since told, that I must die, or the Plot must die.

Lest the Means of destroying the best Protestants in *England* should fail, the Bench must be filled with such, as had been Blemishes to the Bar.

None but such as these would have advised with the King's Council, of the Means of bringing a Man to Death; suffered a Jury to be packt by the King's Solicitors, and the Under-sheriff; admit of Jurymen who are not Freeholders; receive such Evidence as is abovementioned; refuse a Copy of an Indictment, or suffer the Statute of 46 *Edw. III.* to be read, that doth expressly enact, *It should in no Case be denied to any Man, upon any Occasion whatsoever*; over-rule the most important Points of the Law without Hearing. And whereas the Statute, 25 *Edw. III.* upon which they said I should be tried, doth reserve to the Parliament all Constructions to be made in Points of Treason; they could assume to themselves, not only a Power to make Constructions, but such Constructions, as neither agree with Law, Reason, or common Sense.

By these Means I am brought to this Place. The Lord forgive these Practices, and avert the Evils that threaten the Nation from them.

The Lord sanctify these my Sufferings unto me; and, though I fall as a Sacrifice to Idols, suffer not Idolatry to be established in this Land. Bless thy People, and save them. Defend thy own Cause, and defend those that defend it. Stir up such as are faint; direct those that are willing; confirm those that waver; give Wisdom and Integrity unto all. Order all Things so, as may most redound to thine own Glory. Grant that I may die glorifying thee for all thy Mercies, and that, at the last, thou hast permitted me to be singled out, as a Witness of thy Truth; and even by the Confession of my Opposers, for that *Old Cause*, in which I was from my Youth engaged, and for which thou hast often, and wonderfully declared thyself.

On the Revolution, such Regard was had to his Innocence, and Justice to his Memory, that the Parliament made it one of their 1st Acts to repeal his Attainder, viz. 13 Feb. 1688, 1 *W. & M.* whereof the Preamble, &c. is in these Words<sup>a</sup>:

‘Whereas, *Algernone Sydney*, Esq; in the Term of *St. Michael*, in the five and thirtieth Year of the Reign of our late Sovereign Lord, King *Charles the Second*, in the Court of *King's-Bench* at *Westminster*, by Means of an illegal Return of Jurors, and by Denial of his lawfull Challenges to divers of them,

<sup>a</sup> Ex Cop. de Orig. apud *Penshurst*.  
for



‘ for Want of Freehold, and, without sufficient legal Evidence, of any Treasons committed by him ; there being at that Time produced a Paper found in the Clofet of the said *Algernoon*, supposed to be his Hand-writing, which which was not proved by the Testimony of any one Witness, to be written by him ; but the Jury was directed to believe it, by comparing it with other Writings of the said *Algernoon* : And, besides that Paper so produced, there was but one single Witness, to prove any Matter against the said *Algernoon* : And, by a partial and unjust Construction of the Statute, declaring what was his Treason, was most unjustly and wrongfully convicted, and attainted, and afterwards executed for high Treason. May it therefore please your most excellent Majesties, at the humble Petition and Request of the Right Honourable *Philip* Earl of *Leicester*, Brother and Heir of the said *Algernoon* *Sydney*, and of the Right Honourable *Henry* Viscount *Sydney*, of *Sheppey*, the other Brother of the said *Algernoon*, That it be Declared and Enacted, &c. That the said Conviction and Attainder be repealed, reversed, &c. And, to the End, that Right be done to the Memory of the said *Algernoon* *Sydney*, deceased, Be it further Enacted, That all Records and Proceedings, relating to the said Attainder, be wholly cancelled, and taken off the File, or otherwise defaced and obliterated, to the Intent that the same may not be visible in after Ages : And, that the Records and Proceedings, relating to the said Conviction, Judgment, and Attainder, in the Court of *King’s-Bench*, now remaining, shall and be forthwith brought into the said Court, this present *Easter* Term, and then and there taken off the File and cancelled.’

His *Discourses on Government* were published on the Revolution ; but there are yet at *Penshurst*, in his Hand-writing, Treatises in *Latin*, and *Italian* ; as also, an *Essay on Virtuous Love*, in *English*.

The 3d Son *Robert*,<sup>b</sup> baptized at *Penshurst*, *Sept.* 19, 1626, was a fine Gentleman both in Person and Address. The Countess of *Leicester* his Mother in a Letter, dated at *Penshurst*, to the Earl her Husband at *Paris*, gives him a very great Character, being then about 12 Years of Age ; which Letter, being remarkable, will be published in the Collection.

In 1639, the Earl his Father coming into *England*, and returning to his Ambassy in *France*, in *August*, the same Year, he took with him this *Robert* *Sydney*, then about 13 Years old, as his Lordship writes in his Journal ; and that, having learned there all his Exercises very well, he sent him from thence to *Holland* about *Michaelmas*, 1644. It appears by a Letter from Lieutenant *William Carne*, to the Earl of *Leicester*, dated *May* 12, 1643, that his Lordship, before that Time, had procured him a Company in the Service of the States-General ; and another Letter of his Brother *Algernon* *Sydney*, dated 10 *Jan.* 1648, gives an Account to his Father that he was made Lieutenant-Colonel of a Regiment there ; which, on the Breaking out of the War with the *Dutch*, was sent for to *England*, and is yet subsisting, and called the *Holland* Regiment. The Commission of King *Charles* the 2d, to this Colonel *Robert* *Sydney*, bears Date 31 *May* 1665. He died unmarried<sup>c</sup>, and was buried at *Penshurst*, *Aug.* 12, 1668.

The 4th and youngest surviving Son, was *Henry* *Sydney*, who, for his great Abilities and Merits, was advanced to the Honour of Earl of *Romney*. He was born at *Paris*, *An.* 1641, during his Father’s Ambassy at the *French* Court, and was brought over to *England*, with the Countess his Mother in *October*, the same Year, as the Earl writes in his Journal. He was, from his Youth, much favoured and beloved, as well by his Father, as his Mother, who, on her Death-bed, recommended the Care of him in an especial Manner to the Earl. Who by a Codicil to his Will, bearing Date the 5th of *April*, 1675, left to him and his Heirs for ever the Mannor and Estate of *Long-Itchington* in *Warwickshire* ; as also by his said Will, twenty-five Thousand Pounds, charged on

<sup>b</sup> Ex Registr. Eccl. de Penshurst.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.



his Estate in *Leicester Fields*, &c. And his Mother, on her Decease, left him an Annuity of 200 l. *per Ann.* for the Term of 21 Years, purchased in Dec. 1653, of Sir *Edward Radcliffe*, of the County of *Cumberland*, in the Name of *Ant. Hinton*, in Trust for her Use; also an Annuity of 100 l. *per Ann.* during the Life of *Dorothy Countess Dowager of Sunderland*; also Lands and Tenements in *Blackets* and *Bixley* in *Kent*, which she had purchased in her own Name for the Sum of 5800 l. He had a very liberal Education, and, in his Father's Life-time, took to a Military Life. In 1685, *Aristotle's Rhetorick, or the true Grounds and Principles of Oratory*, was dedicated to him, with this Title,

To the Honourable Colonel *Henry Sidney*, Ambassador Extraordinary, from his late Sacred Majesty, to the States of *Holland*.

He had the Command of a Regiment in 1678, as his Warrant to *Lemuel Kingdom*, Esq. Paymaster of his Majesty's Land Forces, to pay 3240 l. for Cloathing it, shews. It appears from Sir *William Temple's* Memoirs, that *Robert Earl of Sunderland* (Grandfather to the present Duke of *Marlborough*) reposed an entire Confidence in Colonel *Sidney*, who was his Uncle, though they were about the same Age. Upon the new Constitution of the Council, An. 1679<sup>d</sup>, Mr. *Sidney* was sent by the Earl of *Sunderland* to Sir *William Temple*, to bring him over to his Interest; and Sir *William* acknowledges<sup>e</sup>, that at the Earl of *Sunderland's*, and Mr. *Sidney's* Pressing of him, to suffer several small Things he had written, to be printed under the Title of *Miscellanea*, he consented thereto; they thinking that he, who had such a Part in the King's Affairs, ought to stand as well as he could with the House of Commons; and that, by the Publication, they would see, he was not a Man of the dangerous Principles pretended; and that he might assure the whole World, of his being Author of no Books, that had not his Name.

On the 7th of July 1675<sup>f</sup>, he obtained from his Majesty a Grant during Life (on the Surrender of *Sidney Godolphin*, Esq.) of the Office, Of Gentleman and Master of the Robes, for the Providing of Robes, Apparel, and other Necessaries, for the Use of the King, his Heirs and Successors. And to receive 5000 l. *per An.* out of the Exchequer, payable half-yearly, to the End, Provisions, incident to the Place, may be paid more Husband-like, and bought cheap. The 1st Payment to commence from Lady-Day last past; of which 4500 l. to be for the Maintenance of the Charges incident to the said Place; and to be accounted for, Annually. And the other 500 l. to remain to the said *Henry Sidney*, Esq. in Lieu of the ordinary Fees and Vailes, upon the Measures and Poundage of the Payment of Moneys, heretofore taken by the Officer in that Place. But if it should be necessary to expend more, than the said Sum of 4500 l. that then, on the Delivery of his Account, he should receive the full Charge of what he had so laid out.

On the 15 July following, 1679, <sup>g</sup> he kissed his Majesty's Hand, and took his Leave of him, on his Going Envoy Extraordinary to the States-General. The Prince of *Orange* had then projected an Alliance against *France*, and most of the *German* Princes were much disposed to come into it. Bishop *Burnet* writes<sup>h</sup>, that the Earl of *Sunderland* entered into a particular Confidence with the Prince of *Orange*, which he managed by his Uncle Mr. *Sidney*, who was Envoy to *Holland* in the Year 1679: In which Ambassy, Mr. *Sidney* so ingratiated himself with the Prince, as to have the highest Measure of his Trust and Favour, that any *Englishman* ever had. Sir *William Temple*<sup>i</sup> observes, That ' Mr. *Sidney* sending over a Memorial, given him by the Pensioner *Fagel*, representing the sad Consequences Abroad of his Majesty's not Agreeing with ' his Parliaments; the Danger of his Allies, and of the Protestant Religion; ' and thereupon, though not directly, yet seeming to wish, that the King would ' not break with them, though it were even on the Point of the Bill of Exclu-

<sup>d</sup> Memoirs, Part 3. in Sir Wm. Temple's Works, p. 336.

Patent. apud Penshurst.

673, 674.

<sup>e</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.

<sup>f</sup> Memoirs, Part 3. in his Works, Vol. 1. p. 355.

<sup>g</sup> Ib. p. 738.

<sup>h</sup> Hist. of his own Times, p. 479.

<sup>i</sup> Ex Origin.

tion.



‘ fion. This being believed a Thing directed and advised from hence by Lord  
 ‘ *Sunderland*, as a Matter that would be of Weight to induce the King to pass  
 ‘ the Bill; and also his Voting in the Lord’s House, not only against the  
 ‘ King’s Mind, but against his express Command, was the Cause of the Earl’s  
 ‘ Remove from the Secretary’s Office, and the Council.

Mr. *Sidney* was also recalled from *Holland*, and returned in June 1680<sup>k</sup>; for, on the 20th of May that Year, the Lords of the Admiralty sent Orders to Captain *Fausby*, Commander of the *Henrietta* Yacht, to be at the *Brill* in *Holland*, the 28th of May, where being arrived, he should attend 8 Days for *Henry Sidney*, Esq. his Majesty’s Envoy Extraordinary to the States-General (in Case he should not happen to be on the Place at his Arrival) and receive him on Board, together with his Baggage, Company, and Servants, and to transport him, or them, into the River of *Thames*, as high as *Greenwich*.

In the Parliament, that met at *Westminster*, the 21st of October, 1680<sup>l</sup>, he was one of the Members for *Bramber* in *Suffex*; and, in that Session, were warm Debates on the Bill of Exclusion of *James Duke of York*. Mr. *Sidney*<sup>m</sup> spoke and voted for it. And on the sudden Dismission of the Grand Jury, by the Judges, when a Bill was presented against the Duke of *York*, as a Popish Recusant, which occasioned the House of Commons to examine into the Matter; Mr. *Sidney*, towards the Close of the Debate, made this Speech<sup>n</sup>:

Mr. Speaker, ‘ I would beg Leave to observe to you, because I think it  
 ‘ may be necessary to be considered by your Committee, what an Opinion was  
 ‘ given not long since by some of these Judges about Printing; which was  
 ‘ that Printing of News might be prohibited by Law; and accordingly, a Pro-  
 ‘ clamation issued out. I will not take on me to censure the Opinion, as il-  
 ‘ legal, but leave it to your further Consideration. But I remember there was  
 ‘ a Consultation held by the Judges a little before; and they gave their Opini-  
 ‘ on, that they knew not any Way to prevent Printing by Law; because the  
 ‘ Act for that Purpose was expired. Upon which some Judges were put out,  
 ‘ and new ones put in; and then this other Opinion was given. These Things  
 ‘ are worthy of a serious Examination. For if Treasurers may raise Money,  
 ‘ by Shutting up the Exchequer, Borrowing of the Bankers, or Retrenchments;  
 ‘ and the Judges make new Laws, by an ill Construction, or an ill Execution  
 ‘ of the old ones: I conclude that Parliaments will soon be found useles; and  
 ‘ the Liberty of the People, an Inconvenience to the Government. And there-  
 ‘ fore, I think Sir, you have been well moved to pass your Censure on some  
 ‘ of these illegal Proceedings by a Vote; and refer the farther Consideration to  
 ‘ a Committee.’

Sir *Francis Winnington* spoke on the same Side, and then the House came to these Resolutions:

*Resolved*, That the Discharging of a Grand Jury by any Judge, before the End of the Term, Assizes, or Sessions, while Matters are under their Consideration, and not presented, is arbitrary, illegal, destructive to publick Justice, a manifest Violation of his Oath, and is a Means to subvert the fundamental Laws of this Kingdom.

*Resolved*, That a Committee be appointed to examine the Proceedings of the Judges in *Westminster-Hall*, and report the same, with their Opinion, to this House.

On King *James*’s Coronation, 23 April 1685, being Gentleman and Master of the Robes, he attended on his Majesty, and the Crown, being too big for his Head, was often in a tottering Condition. Whereupon Mr. *Henry Sidney*, supporting it once with his Hand, pleasantly said to the King<sup>o</sup>, *This is not the first Time our Family hath supported the Crown.*

<sup>k</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.

<sup>m</sup> Rapin’s Hist. of Eng. 8vo. Vol. 14, p. 268.

1, p. 459.

<sup>l</sup> List of Parliament in Chamberlain’s State of England.

<sup>n</sup> Proceedings of the House of Commons, Vol.

<sup>o</sup> Rapin’s Hist. of Eng. 8vo. Vol. 15, p. 8.



The unjust Proceedings, against his Brother, could not but be fresh in his Memory; and though the Earl of *Sunderland*, his Nephew, was prime Minister; yet he had so strong an Attachment to the Religion and Liberties of his Country; and withal too much Honour to enter into the Measures of that bigotted Monarch. Which joined to that particular Confidence the Prince of *Orange* was well known, over *England*, to repose in him at this Time (as Bishop *Burnet* writes)<sup>p</sup> was the Cause that all, who desired to recommend themselves to the Prince, did it through his Hands. He was so apprehensive of the Dangers, this might cast him in, that he travelled almost a Year round *Italy*. But Matters ripening in *England*, towards a Revolution, he returned to *Holland*; and, by the Prince's own Order, the Conduct of the whole Design<sup>q</sup> was chiefly deposited with him: And all the Transactions of that grand Affair centered in him.

He was particularly zealous in the Interests of the Prince of *Orange*, and so desirous to free his Country from Popish Tyranny, that before he went out of *England*, he disposed of his whole Fortune there, to serve him; which was very great for a younger Son, as I have before observed.

He had<sup>r</sup> the Command of a Regiment, on the Expedition of the Prince into *England*; was one whom he principally consulted after his Landing, and continued in the Esteem and Confidence of King *William*, whilst he lived. The Day after the Proclamation of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, he<sup>s</sup> was appointed, by their Majesties, one of their most Honourable Privy-Council; and made one of the Gentlemen of the Kings Bed-chamber, with the Duke of *Ormond*, the Earl of *Oxford*, the Lord Viscount *Mordaunt* (after Earl of *Peterborough*) the Lord *Lumley* (after Earl of *Scarborough*) and the Lord *Churchil*, after Duke of *Marlborough*. Also<sup>t</sup> was constituted, 16 *March* 1688, Colonel of his Majesty's Regiment of Foot-Guards.

On 9 *April* following, 1 *Will. & Mar.* 1689, he<sup>u</sup> was advanced to the Dignities of Baron of *Milton*, and of Viscount *Sydney*, of *Sheppey* in *Kent*. The Preamble to the Patent sets forth, 'That the Royal Dignity in nothing shines more, than when Honours are conferred on Persons, whose splendid Birth, heroick Actions, and steady Loyalty, Industry and Merits, recommend them. Therefore, their Majestys, in their first Creation of Peers, determined, that the renowned *Henry Sidney*, Brother of the Earl of *Leicester*, should have Place among them. Being descended from the most antient and illustrious Family of the *Sidneys*, and by his Mother from the *Percy's*. And whose great Uncles, *Robert [Dudley]* Earl of *Leicester*, and *Philip Sidney*, shined bright in the *Dutch Wars*, the one being chief Governor of the *United Provinces*, and the other, the great Ornament of his Family, and of the Age he lived in, to his immortal Glory. And as the said *Henry Sidney* had, hitherto, not only supported the Honour of his Birth, but also increased it in War, both by Land and Sea; as well as by his political and prudent Negotiations, wherein with no less Glory, he discharged his Ambassy to the States of *Holland*. Whereas also his firm Loyalty, to Us, and the Kingdom of *England*, being as conspicuous, as his Labour, and Trouble in our Service; more especially in the great Care and Distinction he shewed in Treaties, for the Preservation of his Country in the late Expedition, wherein he disposed all Things so happily, for the *English* Interest, as redounds to his great Glory. And when he was made by Us one of our Council, and rewarded by Us, with a Place among the Chief of our Army; in him appeared all the Qualities of a brave General. In Consideration whereof, and seriously revolving in our Mind, in what Manner We should be grateful, and shew the Value of his Merits, We have determined that he shall be employed in the Administration

<sup>p</sup> Hist. of his own Times, p. 763, 764.

<sup>q</sup> Ibid. <sup>r</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. III. p. 550.

<sup>s</sup> Ex Orig. Pat. 1 W. & M. apud Penshurst.

<sup>t</sup> Ibid. <sup>u</sup> Diary of K. William's Expedition, Succession of Colonels of his Majestys Forces, p. 8.



of the high Affairs of the Kingdom, and be in the Number of the first of those to be made Peers by Us. Know, &c.

Whereupon he attended at their Majesties Coronation the 11th of *April* 1689; and on the <sup>w</sup> first of *Oct.* following, was constituted Lord Lieutenant of the County of *Kent*, and of the City of *Canterbury*. Also on the 3d of the same Month and Year <sup>x</sup> was constituted Vice-Admiral, and Commissary of the County of *Kent*, and the Ports thereof, with all Powers &c. thereto belonging.

His Lordship attended on King *William* in *Ireland*; and before the Battle of the *Boyne*, his Majesty held a Consultation and long Discourse, with the Prince of *Denmark*, Duke *Schomberg*, Duke of *Ormond* <sup>y</sup>, Lord Viscount *Sidney*, and other chief Officers, on their Observations of the Enemy. Whereupon his Lordship having given Proofs of his Conduct, and Valour, in the Victory then obtained; as also at the Siege of *Limerick*, where he commanded in the Trenches, as Major-General, <sup>z</sup> and took a strong Redoubt by Assault: Therefore, in Consideration of his Services, he was constituted with *Thomas Coningsby*, Esq; Lords Justices of *Ireland*, on his Majesty's Leaving that Kingdom, *Sept.* 5, 1690.

It appears by Letters, sent to the King, which were delivered by his Lordship immediately after the Battle of the *Boyne*, that on the Desertion of *Dublin*, by King *James's* Forces, the Protestants were in the utmost Consternation, fearing the Plundering of the City. On the said Desertion, *Longford*, *Ross*, *William King*, *S. Lymerick*, *Thomas Newcomen*, *Edward Roscarrick*, *Anthony Medenns*, and *Dud. Loftus*, met, and desired the honourable *Robert Fitz-Gerald*, to take on him, and execute the Office of Governor of the said City and Castle till his Majesty's Pleasure should be known. Whereupon the two following Letters were delivered to the King by his Lordship:

Royall Sir,

SINCE your Majesties happy Success, near *Drogheda*, the late King, about 4 a Clock in the Morning, took Horse, and went as we hear, and believe, towards *Munster*, having assembled a small Council last Night about 11 a Clock. My Lord *Tyrconnell*, General *Lauson*, and the other Grandees of the Army, came to Town late in the Morning; the remaining Forces, which we compute with those then in the City to be about 5000 Men, having been in Armes, but never willing to unite or make a fighting Body. Since then, the most eminent in the Army, both the Lord Chancellors, the Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, and all the Popish Judges, with the Mayor, and many of the most remarkable Citizens, of that Religion, have left the City; which is now by the Flight of the Governor, and his Deputy, absolutely in your Majesties Dispose, and, by the Blessing of God, in perfect Peace and Quietness; and the Keys of the City and Castle in the Hands of Mr. *Fitz-Gerald*, who is ready, with several Thousands of your Majesties Subjects, with great Joy to lay them at your Majesties Feet, whose Presence is much longed for and desired; and the rather, because there is none now in Armes here, but the few Gentry and some Citizens, who do, with all their Endeavors, take Care to preserve this Place for your Majesties Service, who are

Your Majesties most dutifull and

obedient Subjects,

Fitz-Gerald,

Bishop Lymerick,

and others.

<sup>w</sup> Ex Orig. Pat. 1. W. & M. apud Penshurst. Eng. Vol. III. p. 598.

<sup>z</sup> Ibid, p. 605.

<sup>x</sup> Pat. 1 W. & Mar. ut antea.

<sup>y</sup> Hist. of



Dublin Castle, July 3d, 1690, Thursday at 8 in the Morning.

Royall Sir,

SINCE our last, wee presume to acquaint you with our Condition, and with what further Advances wee have made: Wee have put a few Protestants here into the best Posture of Defence wee can, but are not able to preserve our selves without the Assistance of your Majesties Arms. Wee therefore most humbly beseech your Majestie, speedily to send such Forces, as to your Majestie shall seem meet, for the Preservation of this Citty, and the Inhabitants of it; for wee are certainly informed, that the Army, which have deserted this Place, are withdrawn no further then the *Naas* (which is within 12 Miles of this Citty) and wee fear the Unruliness of the Rabble, least wee should not be able to contain them within the Bounds of their Duty.

Since the Writing of the above, wee are informed, that, within 6 Miles of this Citty, there is a considerable Body of Horse and Foot remaining, who wee are told are upon their Return to this City; and there are three Ships come into this Harbour, commanded by Capt. *Dover*, and have landed some of their Men, who are all the Forces we have in Town, except some few Gentry and Citizens. Wee are

Your Majesties most humble

Subjects and Servants,

Fitz-Gerald, Meath,

Lymerick, and several others.

His Lordship made but a short Stay in *Ireland*, returning to *England*, in *December* following; for his Majesty knowing his eminent Abilities, and having had Experience of his Fidelity, was pleased not long after to recall him from being one of the Lords Justices of *Ireland*, and to constitute him one of his Principal Secretaries of State; for which Office he took the<sup>a</sup> usual Oath at the Council Board the 12th of *December* 1690. And on the 8th of *January* following he had the King's<sup>b</sup> Warrant, to the Commissioners of the Treasury, and Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, for the Payment of the yearly Sum of 1850 *l.* the accustomed Salary, for the Execution thereof, payable by 462 *l.* 10 *s.* a Quarter, without Accompt. To which, <sup>c</sup> on the 10th of the same Month, 100 *l.* *per Ann.* more was added. And his Majesty, taking further into Consideration his great Services, was pleased to grant him several Estates in *Ireland*, forfeited by those who were in the Rebellion against him, in that Kingdom.

In the Preamble to one of the Grants, it sets forth, in Consideration of the many faithful and great Services, performed unto their said Majesties, by the said *Henry*, Lord Viscount *Sidney*, as well in their Kingdom of *England*, as of *Ireland*, while he served in the Army, where the King was personally engaged in the War there. And afterwards as one of the Justices of the said Kingdom of *Ireland*, during which Time he had expressed a constant and more particular Zeal for, and hath been greatly concerned in the present Settlement of the said Kingdom of *Ireland*.

The Affairs of *Ireland* were immediately under his Lordship; and Addresses were made to him, from most Persons who had any Concerns in that Kingdom. There are Letters from the Lord *Coringby* (after Earl of *Coringby*) whereof I shall insert the following, as it shews his Attachment to him:

Dublin, Nov. the 7th, 1691.

My Dearest Lord,

I Have inclosed sent your Lordship a Breviat of the Bill for Disposing of *Irish* Estates, intended to be past last Sessions; with some Notes in the Margent.

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. III, p. 610.

<sup>b</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.

<sup>c</sup> Pat. 2 W. & M.



By all Means, my Lord, dont lett his Majestye be complemented out of some Interest in the Estats heer; which he will most certainly be, if he first passes this Act, and leaues his Proportion to be sett out afterwards.

I can't yett gett a Cotype of the Outlaws, it is soe longe, there being about 3000 Names.

Pray, my Lord, dont forgett the Affair of the Farthings; it will be very well worth your While, and I hear the Duke of *Ormond* is putting in for it; I should be troubled to diliver all those Materialls, I haue soe carefully saued, into any other Hands.

I long to hear how the Settlement of this Country is like to goe on. I dont desire to haue any Share in't, but for their Majestyes Seruis, and I confesse upon that Account I am uneasie, knowing that the future Wellfare of it depends upon the Measures now taken; and if they should proceed from the Suggestions of the *Irish* with you, I know them soe well; but especially the Characters of such who are most likely to be consulted; that I can't but fear the Consequences.

I hope your Lordship will honor me with an Answer to some Particulars in my last Letters. I am for ever and ever,

My Dearest Lord,

Your Lordships most obedient and

most humble Servant,

THO. CONINGSBY.

Sir *Richard Cox* (after Lord Chancellor of *Ireland*) also sent his Lordship the following particular Relation of what had been done in *Ireland*:

Dublin, 8 October, 1691.

My most Honourd Lord,

NOW that I have layd aside the Sword, and have again resumed the Gowne, I hope I shall find Leisure to give you a full and perfect Account of this War, and particularly of this Campagne, which has been exceeding troublesome, and no less glorious. It was opened in a happy Houre, and the cheap and speedy Reduction of *Ballymore* was a propitious Omen of the great Success that was to follow. The Passing the *Shenin*, and the Takeing of *Athlone* in the Face of the *Irish* Army, was an Action hardly equalld in History; it was an Attempt soe daring, that nothing but Success could determine, whether it should be reputed Rash or Brave. As for the Battle of *Agbrim*, there was nothing more strange in it, then that the Enemy made a braver Resistance then they were wont. To which, neverthelesse, they were encouraged by the Scituation of the Place, and the Strength of their Retrenchments. And after all, they found more Security in the Darknes of the Night, then either in their Fortifications or their Valour. Soe that, if the Battle had begun two Hours sooner, that Day had made an End of the War. And as it was, their Losse was exceeding great, viz. 1 Generall, 3 Major Generalls, 7 Brigadeers, 22 Collonels, 17 Leivtenant Collonells, and ten Majors, and about 7000 private Souldiers.

The Consequence of this great Victory was the Surrender of *Galway*. And, now that *Limrick* is likewise in our Hands, you may not onely conclude that this War is at an End; but also, that, if Matters be well handled, there can never be an *Irish* Rebellion in this Kingdom any more.

Nor doe I doubt but that this Affair will be well managed, for I am sure that nothing is more true, then that the Rebels generally hate our King above all Mankind, as one that has dissappointed them of the fairest Hopes that ever they had. And therefore they will be allways hankering after their Prince of *Wales*, in whom all their Hopes are fixd, and whose Interest centers with their own in the Subversion of the present Government. Nor is their Hatred less implacable



to the *Engliſh*, as appears by the barbarous Murders they daily comitt; and is yet more manifeſt by ſome Inſtances which I ſend you in a ſeperate Paper, rather then interrupt the Series of this. And therefore I conclude, that the King and Kingdom of *England* can have no Security, but in the Impotence of this rebellious Generation; and that therefore they will weaken them all they can, by Methods honeſt and diſcreet, without making it a War of Religion, or giving any juſt Diſtaſt to the Confederates.

But, leaveing the Politicks to Stateſmen, my Buſineſs is to proceed as an Hiſtorian, and give you an Account of my Government at *Cork*. Where my Freinds feared I ſhould be ſhipwrackt, being to ſayle betwixt *Scylla* and *Charibdis*, the Army and the Enemy. But haveing Credit with the Generall, and uſeing it modeſtly, I ſoon got rid of ſuch of the Army as were moſt troubleſome, and kept a ſtrict Correſpondence with the reſt, and often borrowed Money for them in their Diſtreſs, and did them all other good Offices that I could; ſoe that I had a good Underſtanding, or rather a Freindſhip on that Side. And as for the Enemy, I uſd them like Nettles, and ſqueezd them (I mean their vagabond Parties) ſoe hard, that they could ſeldom ſting. Haveing, as I beleeve, killd and hangd not leſs then 3000 of them, whiſt I ſtaid in the County of *Cork*. And taken from them, in Cattle and Plunder, at leaſt to the Value of 12000 *l.* which you will eaſily beleeve, when you know that I divided 380 *l.* between one Troop (Collonell *Townſends*) in the Begining of *Auguſt*. After which Collonell *Beecher* and the Weſtern Gentlemen got a Prey worth 3000 *l.* beſides ſeveral other leſſer Preys, taken by ſmall Parties, that are not taken Notice of.

I ſhould not be juſt to my ſelf, if I did not let you know, that, tho I could have had what Share I pleaſd of theſe Preys, yet I never took to the Value of ſix Pence; for my Heart was in the Cauſe, and I was ſoe well pleaſd to have the Service done, that I quitted all to the Encouragement of the Men, who both wanted and deſervd it.

What I have to add is, that tho the Militia, in the beſt of Times, conſiſted but of 26 Troops, and 16 Companies, I have brought them to 36 Troops in ſix Regiments, and 26 Companies in three Regiments of Foot; ſoe that I have kept a Fronteer 80 Mile long, from *Tallow* to *Sherkin*; and have ſupplied two and twenty Garifons, and ſent 1000 Men to the Camp, who had the Honour to guard the Paſs at *Killaloo*, whiſt the Artillery was marching from *Connaught*; and afterwards, being poſted at *Annabeg*, had the good Fortune to reſcue 200 Proteſtants, and 46 good Horſes, out of an Iſland within a Mile of *Limrick*.

But I ſhould have mentiond, that tho at laſt we had but two Regiments of the Army, viz. *Churchills* and *Hafterings*, left in the County of *Cork*, yet the Army ſometimes by themſelves, and ſometimes with the Help of the Militia, did keep thoſe important Poſts of *Fformoy* and *Ballymacgooly* all the Summer. And did many good Services againſt the Common Enemy, and in generall agreed better with the Militia, then at firſt I expected they would.

But that which you will moſt wonder at, is, that all this did not coſt the County of *Cork* above 1200 *l.* nor did I looſe above ſix or eight Men in all the Expeditions that I orderd: You have already had an Account of ſome Loſſe we ſuffered in *May*, when Major *Culliford* went to *Newmarket*; and of a greater Loſs, when Capt. *Barry* went to *Caſtleowne*; but, theſe Sallyes being made without my Privity, I doe not place to my Account; and if I did, both Loſſes did not exceed 30 Men of the Militia, now that the Priſoners are returnd.

Nevertheless I was not without Enemyes; but they were ſuch as neither contributed Purſe nor Perſon to the Cauſe, any more than they were forced. And of this Sort there were ſome on the Grand Jury, who, I beleeve, came on Purpoſe to doe Miſchief. But, haveing Right and Authority on my Side, I found it no difficult Matter to baffle ſome, and convert others. Soe that the Country Buſineſs was done, and they, of their own Accord, preſented me the enclosed Addreſs, to which you will not find the Names either of Captain *Mills*, or  
Robert



*Robert Mead*; tho they were both upon the Jury. But I have tyred you with this tedious Scroll, and therefore will onely add that I am ever,

My L O R D,

Your most obliged and

most obedient Servant,

RICHARD COX.

To the Right Honorable Richard Cox, Esq; one of the Lords Justices of Assize for the Province of Munster, and Governor of the County of Cork, and County of the Citty of Corke.

WE the Grand Jury of the County of Corke, being sensible of your Lordships Zeale and Dilligence in their Majestyes Service, and the Benefit this County has received by your Industry and Conduct, in the Time of its greatest Danger; and the great Success which it has pleased God to give your Endeavours for our Preservation, doe think our selves obliged, in the Name of the whole County, to return your Lordship our humble and hearty Thanks for the indefatigable Pains you have taken in our Affairs, and the affectionate Concerne, which you have in all your Actions manifested for us. And we make it our humble Request, That your Lordship would be pleased to continue among us, if it may stand with your Convenience; and if not, that you would depute such of the Commissioners of Array, to manage this County in your Absence, as may follow and observe your Measures, in Hopes they may be blessed with the same Success. And as we shall allways be forward to serve your Lordship in any Thing within our Power; soe we pray your Lordship, wherever you are, to persevere in the same Affection and Concerne for this County, which will allways acknowledge it self in the highest Degree obliged to you, as we are in particular, who are,

May it please your Lordship,

Your Lordships most humble Servants,

|                  |                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|------------------|
| Jo. Gibbins,     | Connor Callahan, | Dig. Foulk,      |
| Robert White,    | Hen. Rice,       | Richard Newman,  |
| J. Mountford,    | John Watkins,    | Richard Travers, |
| Samuell Hoskins, | Matthew Deane,   | War St. Leger,   |
| William Taylor,  | John Travers,    | Robert Sanders.  |

On the 4th of May<sup>d</sup>, 3 Will. and Mar. (being then Secretary of State) his Lordship had a Patent, constituting him Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Constable of Dover Castle, and Chancellor, and Admiral of the Cinque Ports, and the Members of the same, with all Wages, Fees, Profits, &c. in as ample Manner as William Cobham, Knight, Lord Cobham, deceased, or Henry Cobham, Lord Cobham, Henry, Earl of Northampton, Edward, Lord Zouch, George, Duke of Buckingham, or James, late Duke of Richmond and Lenox, deceased, or James, late Duke of York, had or enjoyed.

His Lordship, in a very grand Manner, was sworn into the Office on Bredenstone Hill near Dover<sup>e</sup>, where he arrived the latter End of May, 1694; and on the first of June, being attended by all the Officers of the Cinque Ports, the Chancellor of the Ports made him a congratulatory Speech, expressing the great Satisfaction the Ports had, in having him for their Warden, &c. opening to him the Rights and Privileges of the said Ports, and concluded with a Recommendation of them to his Lordship's Protection. This great Post he held to his Death; after which it was conferred on Prince George of Denmark; and his im-

<sup>d</sup> Pat. 3 W. & M. apud Penshurst.  
V O L. I.

• Harris's Hist. of Kent, p. 482, 483.  
X x

mediate



mediate Predecessor was *James, Duke of York*, who did not fill up the same when he came to the Crown.

On Delivery of the Seal of Secretary of State to his Majesty, 3 *March*, he was constituted <sup>f</sup>, on the 28th of the same Month, 4 *Will. III*, Lord Lieutenant-general, and General-governor of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and General of the Forces there.

Whilst he was preparing to go for *Ireland*, and the King being beyond the Seas, Sir *Rowland Gwin*, Treasurer of their Majesties Chamber, having reflected on his Lordship's Integrity and Honour, he was cited before her Majesty in Council, to shew what Ground he had for his Aspersions. And not being able to make good his Accusation, he was turned out of his Place, and this Order in Council, from the Court at *Whitehall*, was published *April 7, 1692* :

' A Complaint having been made by the Lord Viscount *Sidney*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, against Sir *Rowland Gwin*, for Words spoken on the 21st, or 22d Day of *March* last by him, reflecting upon his Lordship, as if he had taken Money for Disposing of Places in *Ireland*; and Sir *Rowland Gwin* having been required by her Majesty, to shew what Grounds he had for speaking the said Words, (for doing whereof, he had Time given him to this Day). And now being called in and heard; and not being able to make out the said Matter, or to shew any Ground for speaking the said Words: Her Majesty thereupon, in Council, was pleased to declare, *That the said Words were groundless and scandalous; and that her Majesty was fully satisfied of the Falshood of the same.*

His Lordship landed at *Dublin* the 5th of *August*, 1692, and, having received the Sword from the Lords Justices, the Lord Chancellor made a short Speech to him to this Effect <sup>g</sup> :

' That it being usual, on such Occasions, to give his Excellency an exact Account of the Condition and Affairs of the Kingdom; they now thought it wholly unnecessary, being sensible his Lordship was thoroughly acquainted therewith.

' That their Majesties could not have fixed on a Person, more to the Mind, and general Satisfaction of the Kingdom, than his Excellency; and that they were in Hopes, the Work which was so successfully begun, in bringing the Nation out of the Ruin it was involved, into an entire Peace, whereunto his Excellency had been the greatest Contributor; they did not doubt, but it would now be fully perfected.'

On his Return from *Ireland*, he was constituted <sup>h</sup>, 28 *July*, 5 *Will. III*. Master-general of the Ordinance, Armour, and Habiliments of War, to officiate by himself, or sufficient Deputies, with all Authorities, Privileges, Wages, Fees, Perquisites, &c. as *George*, late Lord *Dartmouth*, *Frederick*, late Duke of *Schomberg*, or any other, had enjoyed. Likewise, on the 20th of *November*, 1693, in the same 5th Year of his Majesty, the King <sup>i</sup> constitutes his right trusty and wellbeloved Councillor, *Henry, Viscount Sydney*, Master-general of his Ordinance, &c. Colonel of his first Regiment of Foot Guards, and Captain of a Company in the said Regiment. It was then vacant by the Death of the beforementioned Duke of *Schomberg* (who was killed at the Battle of *Martaglia* in *Italy*) and his Lordship was continued in the Command of the said Regiment till his Decease; when he was succeeded by *John*, Duke of *Marlborough*, whose glorious Victories over the *French* has made his Memory immortal.

The King had such particular Confidence in his Lordship, that, about this Time; and indeed whilst his Majesty lived, he was, by all Ranks of People, thought to be his Prime Minister. And by Letters Patent, bearing Date 24 *May*, 6 *Will. III* <sup>k</sup>, was created Earl of *Romney*, in the County of *Kent*.

<sup>f</sup> Pat. 4 *W. III*, apud *Penshurst*.

<sup>g</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. 3. p. 661.

<sup>h</sup> Pat. 5 *W. III*, apud *Penshurst*.

<sup>i</sup> Ex Origin. apud *Penshurst*.

<sup>k</sup> Pat. 6 *W. III*, apud *Penshurst*.



The Preamble recites, That the Virtues of the *Sydneys*, known for many Years, shine more and more in his welbeloved and faithful Councillor, *Henry*, Viscount *Sydney*, whom, for his apparent Merits, he had ranked amongst the Viscounts of his Realm. And considering with what Wisdom, Loyalty, and Valour, he had discharged the Places committed to his Trust, when he was of his Privy-council, of his Chamber, Secretary of State in *England*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, Warden of the *Cinque Ports*, and Constable of *Dover* Castle, Lord Lieutenant of *Kent*, Master of the Ordnance, and Colonel and Commander of his Regiment of Guards; therefore nothing was more equitable, than to promote him to a higher Degree of Honour.

And the King at the *Hague*, 24 *October*, 1694, in the sixth Year of his Reign, reposing especial Trust and Confidence in the Loyalty, Courage, and Experience in Military Affairs of his welbeloved Councillor, *Henry*, Earl of *Romney*, Master-general of his Ordnance, constitutes him Lieutenant-general of his Forces.

In the same Year, his Lordship<sup>1</sup> was commissioned, with *John Glover* (by whose Insight, Discovery had been made) to inquire into all Prizes taken in *Guinea*, or Parts under the *African* Company, whereof the King's Moiety was not accounted for; and obtained a Grant thereof. Also, 20 *March*, 7 *W. III*<sup>m</sup>, had the like Commission, and Grant, of the several Prizes taken, and carried into *Jamaica*, *Barbados*, *New-England*, *Virginia*, or other his Majesty's Colonies, in the *West-Indies*.

On the 22d of *April*, 1697, his Majesty leaving the Kingdom<sup>n</sup>, he was declared one of the Lords Justices for the Administration of the Government during his Absence. And, in this Year, was so vigilant for the Safety of the Kingdom, that he ordered a Survey to be taken of the Fortifications of *Portsmouth*, the Harbour, &c. when the following Report was made:

*Sir Martin Beckman's Report concerning the present Condition of Portsmouth, the Point, Blockhouse-Point, the Dock, Portbridge, and Gosport.*

I Have, pursuant to my Order from the Honourable the Ordnance Board, bearing Date the 31st of *March*, and the Memorials of the 28th of *March*, and 1st of *April* last, survey'd, and taken Notice of such Repairs as is most necessary to be done at the respective Places here above mencioned. *Portsmouth* is in that ill Condition, that, if not timely taken Care of, it will demolish it selfe. The Earthworke doth not founder in the Moat from the Superficies of the Ramparts, as is reported, but it sinks within the Ramparts, and boyles up under the Foundation in the Moat, and the Facing falls inward in the Ramparts, and in some Places it swells out at the Bottome, and even the stone Wall or Scarpe it selfe; soe that the Lieutenant Governor, Colonel *Gibson*, has been obliged to cause the Cannon, in some Places, to be drawne back from the Plattformes or Batterys, as especially at *Gays*, and *Towne-Mount* Bastions; the Reason of this is, That the Foundations are not well secured, and not deep enough by 10 Foot, and the Scarpe of Stone have noe Counterforts, which make the Weight of the Ramparts press out of the stone Wall. To speak in short, the whole Place is extreemly ill proporcioned, and the Profile worse of all. The Parrapets have noe Height nor Thickness as it ought to have, of which I have often told the late King *Charles*, and King *James*; but all what the late Engineer, *Sir Bernard de Gomme*, was pleased to doe; was approved off, as from an Oracle.

And I kept from having any Thing to doe with the Fortifications, till I succeeded him; and then the Fortifications was laid aside, and the Army by Land, and the Fleet, was accounted the Walls of *England*, &c.

<sup>1</sup> Pat. 6 *W. III* apud *Penshurst*.    <sup>m</sup> Pat. 7 *W. III*.    <sup>n</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. 3. p. 734.  
<sup>•</sup> Ex Autog. apud *Penshurst*.



*Portbridge* ought to be repaired; and the Rivulet from Sea to Sea, to be soe secured, that noe Passage may be there, but thro' the Fort; as sheweth my Designe hereto annexed.

*Blockhouse-Point*, and the Point at *Portsmouth*, ought alsoe to be at least soe secured, as I have sett downe in the Estimate.

Colonel *Gibson* shewed me a Place 200 Paces from the old Worke att *Blockhouse Point*, where the Sea went over twice the last Winter, for 100 and more Paces in Length, which made the Banke flatt, and lower by 3 Foot, then it was; which, I fear, if the Sea works a Passage there, it will fill up the whole Harbour where the Men of Warr rydes, and soe utterly spoyle that famous Port, if not secured. The Bank or Neck of Land is about 60 Foot over from Sea to Sea, at high Water or Spring Tydes.

The Dock at *Portsmouth* is in noe Manner of Defence, the slight Works, that were in Hast made there, are all ruined, and can be noe less, for the present, done to it, then what I have set downe for its Repaire in the Estimate.

I have allsoe taken Notice of the Works at *Gosport* in the Estimate; tho' it is not mencioned in my Order; yet I thought it necessary to be done; for whoever is Master of that Place, is as much Master of the Harbour, as *Portsmouth* is. I have only designed the Graft to be at present but 30 Foot wider then now it is, and secured with Pallizadoes, and a double Barrack for 150 Men, or 3 Companys.

23d June, 1697.

On 16 July, 1698, he<sup>r</sup> was again constituted one of the Lords Justices of the Kingdom, during his Majesty's Stay beyond the Seas; and, on the 18th of August the same Year, he authorised Sir *Richard Cox*, Knight, one of the Judges of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, *Charles Deering* of *Dublin*, in the said Kingdom, Esq; *James Allet*, Esq; and *Thomas Carter*, Esq; of *Dublin*, aforesaid; to contract and agree with all and every of his Tenants of the Kingdom of *Ireland* (being Protestants) and others (being Protestants) for Selling, Assuring, and Conveying to them, and their Heirs, any Part or Parts of his said Lands, &c. for the best Price or Prices they could get for the same, rendering yearly to him, his Heirs and Assigns, not less than one third Part, of the severall and respective yearly Values or Rents, due and payable to him, out of the respective Lands, &c. so to be sold. And, on such Contract or Agreement, &c. made, and the Receipt of the respective Sums, &c. in his Name, and for his sole Use and Benefit, to convey and assure to them, their Heirs and Assigns, all such Lands, &c.

Whereupon they made severall Contracts and Agreements, as Letters and Papers now at *Penshurst* shew. It is probable, his Lordship was then apprised of the Intention of the House of Commons, to resume the *Irish* Forfeitures. For, in 1699, Commissioners having been appointed by the House of Commons, to inquire and take an Account of the forfeited Estates in *Ireland*, they gave an Account, That the Earl of *Romney*, in Consideration of Services done, had three Grants of 49517 Acres: The Earl of *Albemarle* two Grants of 108,620 Acres in Possession and Reversion; and *William Bentinck* Lord *Woodstock*, 135,820 Acres of Land, &c. And, the Commons bringing in a Bill to apply all the forfeited Estates to the Use of the Publick<sup>a</sup>, their Proceedings were ill relished at Court: On which the House waiting on the King with an Address relating thereto, his Majesty returned this Answer:

' Gentlemen,

' I was not only led by Inclination, but thought myself obliged in Justice, to reward those who had served well; and particularly in the Reduction of *Ireland*, out of the Estates forfeited to me, by the Rebellion there,' &c. Which being reported to the House, they resolved<sup>i</sup>, That whosoever advised

<sup>r</sup> Hist. of Eng. Vol. 3. p. 755.

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Eng. præd. p. 771, 772.

<sup>i</sup> Ibid. p. 773.



it, had used his utmost Endeavors to create a Misunderstanding and Jealousie, between the King and his People.

However, the Commons, believing the Bill would be rejected by the Lords, tacked it to the Land-Tax Bill, which created such warm Debates in Conferences; that the King, to prevent a Rupture between them, thought it proper to interest himself therein: So that their Lordships gave their Concurrence to it.

It doth not appear, either by the Journals of Parliament, or the Accounts of those Times; that the Earl of Romney, notwithstanding his Grants, interested himself, so as to draw an Odium on him, or the Displeasure of the House of Commons: Who, indeed, had such a Regard to his Services and Merits, that his Grants were excepted out of the Act for the Resumption of them. And they had the better Opinion of him, as he was not concerned in the Treaty of Partition.

By the Duke of Shrewsbury's Warrant<sup>s</sup>, 30 April, in the 12th Year of his Majesty's Reign, directed to the House-keeper of the Palace of Hampton-Court, he signified his Majesty's Pleasure, to deliver to the Earl of Romney the Keys and Possession of three Rooms over the King's Apartment there, which lye next to the Master of the Robes, and were formerly appointed for the Earl of Jersey. By which it is evident, his Majesty was desirous of having his Lordship near to him. And, on the 24th Day of June, 1700, the Earl of Jersey certifies, that, in Obedience to his Majesty's Warrant, he had sworn Henry Earl of Romney, into the Place and Quality of Groom of the Stole to his Majesty, in the Room of William Earl of Portland; to hold, &c. with all Rights, Profits, &c. as the said Earl of Portland, or any other Groom of the Stole, enjoyed the same.

Whereupon the Earl of Jersey<sup>u</sup>, by his Warrant, 24 December, 12 W. III. directed Henry Lowman, Esq; House-keeper and Wardrobe-keeper of his Majesty's Palace at Kensington, to deliver to the Earl of Romney the Keys and Possession of the Rooms and Offices at Kensington, formerly belonging to the Earl of Portland. Also, on 23 April, 13 W. III, he had the King's Warrant to the Commissioners of the Treasury; reciting, That Edward Earl of Jersey, Chamberlain of his Household, by Warrant under his Royal Sign Manual, had, in Obedience thereto, on the 24th of June last past, 1700, sworn and admitted Henry Earl of Romney, into the Place of Groom of the Stole, and first Gentleman of his Bed-chamber, in the Room of William Earl of Portland. His Will and Pleasure therefore is, That they pay, or cause to be paid, out of the Treasure applicable to the Use of the Civil Government, to the said Henry Earl of Romney, or his Assigns, the annual Sum of two-thousand Pounds, to commence from the said 24th of June last past. The first Payment to be made for three Quarters, which became due at the said 24th of June, and the subsequent Payments, as they shall thenceforth quarterly become due.

After this, I find his Lordship's Titles thus ranked<sup>w</sup>, 'Henry Earl of Romney, Viscount Sidney of Sheppey, and Baron of Milton in the County of Kent, 'Lord Lieutenant of the same, and of the City of Canterbury, Vice-Admiral 'of the same, Lord Warden of the Cinque-Ports, Constable of Dover Castle, 'Master of the Ordinance, Lieutenant-General of his Majesty's Forces, Colonel 'of his Majesty's own Regiment of Foot-Guards, one of the Lords of his Majesty's most honourable Privy-Council, Groom of the Stole, and first Gentleman of his Majesty's Bed-Chamber.' Which great Offices evidently shew, that he was in the utmost Favour of King William; and, by several Addresses to his Lordship yet remaining at Penshurst, it further appears, that he was reputed to have the first Direction of Affairs in the Government.

On the Accession of Queen Anne, her Majesty, 22 June, in the first Year of her Reign<sup>x</sup>, renewed his Patent for the Office of *Custos Rotulorum* of the County

<sup>s</sup> Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.

<sup>t</sup> Ex Orig.

<sup>u</sup> Ex Orig.

<sup>w</sup> Ex Evident. apud Penshurst.

<sup>x</sup> Ex Orig. Pat. 1 Q. Anne.



of *Kent*, which had been granted to him by King *William* (as it is recited) 26th of *September*, in the first Year of his Reign. Also<sup>y</sup>, on 29 *July* following, was constituted Lord-Lieutenant of the County of *Kent*, and of the City and County of *Canterbury*, which he had held from the 3d of *October*, in the 1st Year of King *William* and Queen *Mary*. And, in both Patents, he is stiled of the Privy-Council to her Majesty Queen *Anne*.

On the<sup>z</sup> 25th of *August*, in the said first Year of the Queen, he obtained of her Majesty, by Privy-seal, 1860 Ounces of Plate, belonging to the late King *William*, that had been delivered into the Jewel Office. Wherein it is recited, that King *William* ordained, amongst the Rules established for the Office of Groom of the Stole and first Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to his Royal Person: That all his Chamber Plate, Utensils, and Goods, which should be in the Custody of his Pages, or any other belonging to his Bed-chamber at the Time of his Death, should be to the only Use and Benefit of the said Groom of the Stole for the Time being. And whereas *Edward Yardley*, Esq; of the Jewel Office, had certified, That there had been delivered to the Pages of the Bed-chamber and Back-stairs 2250 Ounces of gilt and white Plate, of which 1860 Ounces had been, since the Decease of the King, brought back to the Jewel Office, and the other 390 Ounces certified to be lost in *Flanders*: The Queen grants, for her and her Successors, the said Plate to the said Earl of *Romney*.

His Lordship's Place of Lord Warden of the *Cinque Ports*, the Queen conferred on his Royal Highness Prince *George* of *Denmark*; and that of Master of the Ordnance on his Grace *John* Duke of *Marlborough*: But the Command of the First Regiment of Foot Guards his Lordship held to the Time of his Decease, the Duke not succeeding thereto till 25 *April*, 1704.

And the Queen, in Consideration of his Lordship's Services, granted to him a Pension of 1200 *l. per Annum*; of which there was unpaid of the said Pension at his Lordship's Decease three Quarters of a Year, viz. 900 *l.* And there was likewise due at his Decease one Year's Patent Fee, as Master of the Ordnance, viz. from *Midsummer* 1701, to *Midsummer* 1702, amounting to 175 *l.* 18 *s.* 4 *d.* all which the Honourable *John* *Sidney*, Esq; his Nephew and Executor, received.

His Lordship, by his Last Will and Testament, bearing Date the 12th of *April*, 1699, and a Codicil, dated 21 *July*, 1702, desires to be buried decently, according to his Quality, in the Parish where he should happen to die: And bequeaths to the Poor of the Parish of *St. Martin's* in the Fields, in the County of *Middlesex*, the Sum of 150 *l.* To the Poor of *Penshurst* in the County of *Kent*, 150 *l.* and to the Poor of *Leigh* in the said County, 150 *l.*

He bequeaths all his Honours, Castles, Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements, &c. to his Nephew *John* *Sidney*, second Son of the Earl of *Leicester*, and to the Heirs Males of his Body; and, for Want of such Issue, to his Nephew *Thomas* *Sidney*, Brother to the said *John*, and the Heirs Males of his Body, and for Want of such Issue, to his right Heirs for ever.

And whereas King *William*, by his Letters Patents of Lease, dated the 31st of *August*, in the 9th Year of his Reign, granted to him, for the Term of 31 Years, his Majesty's Palace called the *Queen's House*, in *East Greenwich* in the County of *Kent*, and his Park there called *Greenwich Park*, and several Parcels of Land there, Part of the Places called the *Old Tiltyard*, and the *Queen's Gardens*, and other Hereditaments; under a Proviso and Agreement, that his Majesty may resume the same, on Payment of so much Money, as he, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, should expend on the Premises, not exceeding 5000 *l.* And whereas his said Majesty had, by other Letters Patent, granted to him several Offices, Fees, Perquisites, &c. relating to the *Queen's House*, and *Greenwich Park*, and Mannor of *East Greenwich*, and other Mannors and Hereditaments of his said Majesty: He gives and bequeaths to his said Ne-

<sup>y</sup> Ex Pat. 29 Jul. 1 Q. Anne, apud Penshurst.

<sup>z</sup> Privat. Sigil. 1 Q. Anne.



phew *John Sidney* the said *Queen's House, Greenwich Park, &c.* and all other the Premises in or by the said Letters Patents granted, &c.

He bequeaths to his Nephew *Thomas Pelham*, all his Cabinets, and all that shall be in them at his Decease, except the Writings of the several Estates he had bequeathed, or any Notes, Bonds, Securities, or other Writings relating to Money: And to his Nephew *Henry Pelham* of *Lewes in Sussex*, Esq; all his Plate and Furniture in his House in *St. James's Square*, except his Pictures, which he bequeaths to his Nephew *John Sidney*.

He bequeaths to his Nephew the Earl of *Leicester* all his Books; and desires the same may be placed and kept at *Penhurst*, for the Use of his Lordship, and those who shall succeed him in that Seat. And further bequeaths to him the Clock which was his late Majesty's.

He bequeaths to his Nephew *Thomas Sidney*, the Sum of 1000 *l.* and to the Earl of *Sunderland*, the Diamond Ring which was given him by his late Majesty King *William*, when he was Prince of *Orange*.

He constitutes Executors, his Nephews *Thomas Pelham*, *Henry Pelham*, and *John Sidney*; and leaves to their Discretion the Expences relating to his Funeral and Interment, and Mournings on Occasion of his Death. And whatever remains of his Personal Estate, after his Debts, Legacies, and Expences, relating to their Executorship and Trusts, be fully satisfied and discharged, shall be vested in them for the Purchase of Lands and Hereditaments; which, together with his real Estate not devised, shall be settled to the Use of his said Nephew *John Sidney*, and the Heirs Males of his Body, and, for Want of such Issue, to his said Nephew *Thomas Sidney*, and the Heirs Males of his Body, and, for Want of such Issue, to his right Heirs for ever.

\* His Lordship died of the Small Pox, unmarried, at his House in *St. James's Square*, on the 8th of *April*, 1704; and on the 18th of the same Month was buried in the Chancel of *St. James's Church, Westminster*, where a Monument is erected to his Memory, near the Communion Table, with this Inscription:

To the Memory of the Right Honourable  
*Henry Sidney*, Earl of *Romney*, Viscount *Sidney*  
of *Sheppey*, and Baron of *Milton* in the  
County of *Kent*,

Lord Warden of the *Cynque Ports*, Constable of *Dover-*  
Castle, Master General of the Ordnance, and sometime  
Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

Lieutenant General of the Forces of His late Majestie King *William*  
the 3d, First Lord of His Bed-chamber, and one of the Lords of His  
Most Honourable Privy Council, and also Privy Councillor to Her  
Present Majestie Queen *Anne*,

Who dy'd *April* the 8th, *Anno Dom.* 1704, in the 63d Year of his Life,  
and was here inter'd.

The Honourable *John Sidney*, second Son of his Nephew  
*Robert* Earl of *Leicester*,

Dedicated this as a lasting Monument of his  
Gratitude and Affection.

He was graceful in his Person, and of a sweet and affable Disposition: Of great Humanity, and very benevolent to all in Distress. He lived in the highest Splendor, in a most generous and hospitable Manner, so that few envied him the Favour of his Royal Master. It is also much to his Honour, that, tho' he was at the Head of Affairs for so many Years, and tho' several of the King's Ministers had fallen under the Displeasure of the House of Commons, he was never charged by them with Corruption, or Avarice, or Errors in his Administration. And, considering the Estate he inherited, he left it not at all improved.

\* Ex Registr. Eccl. S. Jac. Westmon.



I now return to *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, eldest Son and Heir, and Successor to *Philip* Earl of *Leicester*. Which *Robert*, in his Father's Life-time, was summoned to Parliament among the Barons by Writ, 11 July, 1689, 1 W. & M. by the Title of *Robert Sydney* of *Penshurst*, Knt. <sup>b</sup>; and the same Day was introduced in his Robes, between the Lord *De la War*, and the Lord *Osfulton*, and placed on the Barons Bench. And voted as a Baron, till he succeeded his Father in the Earldom of *Leicester*, Anno 1697.

His Lordship married *Elisabeth*, only Daughter to *John Egerton* Earl of *Bridgwater*, by his Wife the Lady *Elisabeth Cavendish*, Daughter of *William* Duke of *Newcastle*, by whom he had Issue 15 Children, whereof 9 died young, and 4 Sons and 2 Daughters survived him.

His Lordship made his Will on the 14th of *December*, 12 W. III. An. 1700; Wherein <sup>c</sup> he gave to the Poor of the Parish of *St. Anne's, Westminster*, 50 l. To the Poor of the Parish of *Penshurst*, 50 l. To the Poor of the Parish of *Leigh* in *Kent*, 40 l. He constitutes his loving Brother-in-Law, the Honourable *Charles Egerton*, Esq, *Sir Henry Monson*, Bart. and *Thomas Bromfield*, his Executors. And appoints his honoured Uncle, *Henry* Earl of *Romney*, Guardian of all his Sons, under the Age of 21 Years, at the Time of his Death; and of their Estates, during their respective Minorities. And the Lady *Elisabeth*, Countess of *Leicester*, his Wife, during her Widowhood, and *Sir Henry Monson*, and the Survivors of them, Guardians of his Daughters, the Lady *Elisabeth* and Lady *Catharine*, during their Minorities.

He died on the 10th of *November*, 1702, and was buried at *Penshurst* the 23d of *November* following, where a sumptuous Monument of white Marble is erected to his Memory, in the Chancel of the Church. The Cornish is composed of 7 Cherubs, whereof two are supporting an Earl's Coronet, and on the Top are two Porcupines (the antient Crest of the *Sidneys*) with these Inscriptions underneath in gilt Letters:

#### ROBERT SIDNEY

The eldest Son. He had Wit Judgment  
and Beauty to so great a Degree that daily  
increased the surprising Admiration  
Of all that knew him.

He died in 1680  
the 6th Year of his Age.

#### FRANCES SIDNEY

The 4th Daughter, in all Respects a  
perfect Copy of her eldest Brother.

So that she was all  
that could be wished.

She died in 1692  
the 6th year of her Age.

In the Middle, are two Angels supporting an Urn; on each Side of them two grey Marble Pillars. And below them are two Oval Compartments of white Marble, with these Inscriptions in black Letters:

To the Dear Memory  
Of ROBERT SYDNEY Earl  
Of *Leicester*, Viscount *Lisle*,

Baron *Sydney* of *Penshurst*, 4th Earl of this Family.

He married the Lady ELIZABETH

EGERTON, Daughter to the Earl of *Bridgwater*,  
with whom he lived 30 happy years, had 15 Children, of  
which 9 died young, whose Figures are plac'd here.

<sup>b</sup> Journal Dom. Procer. 1 W. & Mar. <sup>c</sup> Ex Regist. Horn. qu. 200. in Cur. Prærog. Cantuar.



*Robert* the eldest Son, the 2d, and 6 Daughters buried in this Place.

6 survivd him, whereof 4 were Sons, and 2 Daughters.

His Person was Gracefull and Beautifull; his Mind truly Noble & Great. Of a quick Wit, good Judgment, A Sweet Temper and pleasing Conversation. He had an Honest Heart,

A gratefull & generous Spirit; and upon all Occasions ever strictly Just and Good.

A faithfull Freind, the best of Husbonds. A most kind & tender Father. A true lover of the Interest of his Country, and the Church of *England*.

He died in the 53d Year of his Age, the 10th of *November* 1702, & was buried under this Monument.

Which in true Affection to his lov'd Memory is erected by his disconsolate Afflicted Wife.

On the other Oval Compartment is this Inscription;

To the Memory

of *ELIZABETH* Countess of

*LEICESTER*, the happy and only Wife

of her dear Lord *ROBERT* Earle of

*LEICESTER*, whose Death she survived 7

tedious Years, having lost in him her better

life. The Affection and sollicitude for her Children

which was constantly very great for all,

forced her a little into the World, and not

wholly giving up her self to what was

most agreeable to her, luling her self in

her infinite sorrow. The great desire of her

life was, to make a good Wife, and a good

Mother; and did so. She died in the 57th

year of her Age, in 1709, and is buried

under here, in the same Vault, with

Her dear Lord.

These Inscriptions are here plac'd

by her own Directions.

Their two Daughters, were *Lady Elizabeth*, born the 31st of *May*, 1681, married to *Sir Harcourt Masters*, Knt. one of the Aldermen of *London*, and, dying without Issue by him *March* 23, 1727, was buried at *Penshurst* the 1st of *April* following. And *Lady Catharine*, born 21st of *August*, 1685, married to *William Barker* of the *Inner Temple*, Esq; and was buried at *Penshurst*, 29 *Sept.* 1722, leaving Issue a Daughter, christened *Sidney*, who died unmarried *An.* 1736, and was buried at *St. Anne's, Westminster*.

<sup>d</sup> The eldest surviving Son *Philip*, born the 8th of *July*, 1676, was elected one of the Knights of the Shire for the County of *Kent*, to that Parliament which met at *Westminster* 22d *Nov.* 1695; and, in 1702, succeeding his Father, was Earl of *Leicester*.

He married *Anne*, one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *Sir Robert Reeves* of *Thwates*, in *Com. Suff.* Bart. by *Mary* his Wife, Sister of *Richard* the first Lord *Onslow*, by whom he had Issue a Son and a Daughter, who died before they were a Year old, and were buried at *St. Anne's, Westminster*.

His Lordship made <sup>e</sup> his Will 20th *June*, 1704, in the 3d Year of *Queen Anne*: And bequeathed to his Sister-in-Law, *Madam Mary Reeve*, his Diamond Ring, his *Turky Stone* Ring, set with Diamonds, and his Hair Ring, set with

<sup>d</sup> Ex Collect. Br. Willis, Arm.

<sup>e</sup> Ex Regist. Gee, qu. 103.



Diamonds. And, after Legacies to his Servants, he bequeaths *all the Rest and Residue of his Goods, Chattels, Monies, Plate, Debts and Estate whatsoever, after his Debts shall be paid, Legacies satisfied, and Funeral Expences discharged*, to his loving Wife *Anne*, Countess of *Leicester*, whom he appoints his sole Executrix.

His Lordship departed this Life on the 24th of *July*, 1705, and was buried at *Penshurst* the 4th of *August* following; but, leaving no Issue, his Honours and Estate devolved on his Brother *John*, the 2d surviving Son of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*.

Which *John* Earl of *Leicester* (born 14 *Feb.* 1688) being under the Guardianship of his Uncle, *Henry* Earl of *Romney*, he preferred him first to be an Ensign, in his Majesties own Regiment of Foot-Guards, whereof the Earl had the Command. And serving under King *William* in *Flanders*, he was promoted to a Company in the same Regiment, with the Rank of a Lieutenant-Colonel. In the Reign of Queen *Anne*, he served under *John*, Duke of *Marlborough*, and very much distinguished himself, in the famous Battle of *Hockstet*, where *Marshall Tallard*, the *French* General, was taken Prisoner. And the same Year, the Earl of *Romney* dying, he made him his Heir.

In 1705, on his Brother's Decease he became Earl of *Leicester*, on which he surrendered his Command in the Army to his Brother, Colonel *Thomas* *Sidney*.

During the Remainder of the Queens Reign, he had no Imploiment at Court; but on the Accession of our late Sovereign to the Throne, he was made one of the Lords of his Bedchamber, and constituted Lord Warden of the Cinque-Ports, and Governor of *Dover* Castle in 1717.

In 1725, on the Erection of that Degree of Knighthood of the Order of the *Bath*, into a regular Military Order for ever, he was chose one of the Knights Companions of the said Order, with other Lords, and Persons of high Degree, who were installed with great Solemnity in King *Henry the Seventh's* Chapel, in the Abbey of *Westminster*. Also the same Year, was constituted Captain of the Yeomen of the Guards to his Majesty.

On the Accession of our present Sovereign, he was continued in his Post of Captain of the Yeomen of the Guards, and appointed Lord-Lieutenant of the County of *Kent*. And surrendering his Place of Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard; he was, on the 24th of *November*, 1731, declared Constable of the Tower of *London*, and at the same Time sworn of his Majesties most honourable Privy-Council. His Lordship died unmarried on the 27th of *Sept.* 1727, and was buried at *Penshurst*, with his Ancestors, the 11th of *October* following.

The next in Succession was the honourable *Thomas* *Sidney*, Esq; 3d surviving Son of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*; which *Thomas* was born the 27th of *November* 1683, and succeeding his Brother *John*, Earl of *Leicester*, in his Command in the 1st Regiment of Foot Guards, served under the Duke of *Marlborough*, till he quitted the Service the latter End of the Reign of Queen *Anne*. On the Accession of our late Sovereign, he was constituted Colonel of the Royal *Irish* Regiment of Dragoons; and dying in the Life-time of Earl *John*, his Brother, on the 27th of *January*, 1728, was buried at *Penshurst*, the 15th of *February* following. He married *Mary*, youngest of the two Daughters and Coheirs of Sir *Robert* *Reeves*, Bart. before mentioned, by whom he left two Daughters, his Coheirs, *Mary*, married in 1738 to Sir *Brownlow* *Sherard*, Bart. and *Elizabeth*, also married the same Year to *William* *Perry*, Esq; Which Ladies, by the Death of *Joceline*, 7th Earl of *Leicester* (the youngest surviving Son of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*) who died at *Penshurst* Place, *July* 7, 1743, without Issue, are the sole Heirs of this noble Family, as also Heirs to the Barony of *Lisle*, first treated of (through the *Beauchamps*, *Talbots*, *De Greys*, and *Dudleys*, Earls of *Warwick* and *Leicester*, Viscounts and Barons *Lisle*;) who had Summons to Parliament, in the Reign of King *Edward the Second*; and in succeeding Times (as I have shewn) has been confirmed by divers Letters Patent.

And



And since their Accession to the Estate, there is erected in the Chancel of *Penshurst* (near the Monument of Sir *William Sydney*) a handsome Tomb of white Marble, with a grey Marble Pyramid, against which, are the Crests and Supporters of the Family, curiously engraved, as also an Escutcheon of 80 Coats of Arms (the Quarterings of the Family) finely painted; with the Motto, *Quo Fata Vocant*.

Under the Pyramid, Supporters, &c. is this Inscription in black Letters:

TO THE MEMORY

of the most Noble Lord, PHILIP SIDNEY, the 5th Earl of *Leicester*, Viscount *Lisle*, and Lord *Sidney* of *Penshurst*, Son and Heir of *Robert*, the 4th Earl of *Leicester*, here interred, who was Son and Heir of *Philip* Earl of *Leicester*, Son and Heir of *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, Son and Heir of Sir *Robert Sidney*, Knight, created Earl of *Leicester*, by King *JAMES the first*; which last named *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, was Nephew and heir of *Ambrose Dudley*, and *Robert Dudley*, Brethren, Earls of *Warwick* and of *Leicester*,

Sons of the high and mighty Prince, JOHN DUDLEY, Duke of *Northumberland*,

whose Grandson and Heir, the said Earl *Robert Sidney*, was, after the Deaths of his said Uncles, his Aunt *Catharine*, Countess of *Huntington*, and his Niece *Elizabeth*, Countess of *Rutland*, who all died without Issue:

Which Duke of *Northumberland* was Son and Heir of *Elizabeth Grey*, Viscountess *Lisle*, Daughter and sole Heir of *Edward Grey*, and *Elizabeth Talbot* his Wife, Created Baron *Lisle*, to them and the heirs of their Bodies Issuing for ever, by Patent, 15th of *Edw. the 4th*.

PHILIP, the 5th Earl of *Leicester*, married *Anne*, eldest Daughter and Coheir of Sir *Robert Reeves*, of *Thwaites*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Bart.

by whom he had a Son, and one Daughter, who all died in the first Year of their Ages; and his Lordship departing this Life on the 24th of *July*, 1705, was succeeded by *John* his Brother and Heir.

JOHN, the 6th Earl of *Leicester*, was Cousin and heir of *Henry Sidney*, Earl of *Romney*, and one of the Lords of the Bed-chamber, and Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and Governour of *Dover-Castle*, and chose one of the Knights Companions of the most Honourable order of the Bath, in the Reign of King *George the first*, and under King *George the second* he was Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard, Constable of the *Tower of London*,

Lord Lieutenant of the County of *Kent*, and one of his Majestys most Honourable Privy Council; who deceasing unmarried on the 27th of *Sept.* 1737,

his Nieces *Mary*, and *Elizabeth Sidney*, Daughters and heirs of his Brother, the Honourable *Thomas Sidney*, third surviveing Son of *Robert*, the 4th

Earl of *Leicester*, became his Joint-heirs, and Legal Representative.



THOMAS SIDNEY, their Father, married *Mary*, youngest Daughter, and after the Death of her Sister, *Anne*, Countess of *Leicester*, without Issue, Sole heir of Sir ROBERT REEVES, Bart. which *Thomas*, dying on the 27th of January, 1728-9. was here interred, as was also the said *Mary* his Widow.

*Joceline*, the 7th Earl of *Leicester*, youngest Brother, and heir Male of Earl *John*, died without Issue, on the 6th of July, 1743,

and also lyes here interred with his Brethren, in whom the Title of Earl of *Leicester* expired; so that the aforesaid *Mary* and *Elizabeth* his Nieces, are his Heirs, and also the only heirs of their Noble Ancestors abovementioned, of whom

*Mary* the eldest, is the Wife of Sir BROWNLOW SHERARD of *Lophorpe* in *Lincolnshire*, Bart.

and *Elizabeth* of WILLIAM PERRY,

of *Turville-Park* in *Bucks*, Esq.

who erected this Monument in the Year 1743.

F I N I S



# THE INDEX.

| A.                                   | Page               | Page                             |
|--------------------------------------|--------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>A</b> DRIAN                       | 112                | wick 9, 10, 20, 46, 65           |
| Albemar, Earl                        | 172                | Beckman, Sir Martin              |
| d'Albini Philip                      | 8                  | Bedford, Earl, Francis           |
| William Earl of Arundel              | 78                 | Edward                           |
| Alice, Queen                         | 80                 | Bedford, Earl                    |
| Alford                               | 125                | Beecher, Col.                    |
| Allet, James                         | 172                | BERKLEY, Lord Thomas             |
| Alva, Dutcheſs                       | 34                 | 12, 39, 72. Lord Henry           |
| Angleſey, Earl                       | 157                | Lord Maurice 9. Lady Margaret 9, |
| Anjou, Duke                          | 49                 | 12. James                        |
| Anne, Queen                          | 27                 | Beauford, Sir                    |
| Angoleſme, Counteſs, Iſabell.        | 8                  | Berkley, Captain                 |
| Anſtruther, Sir Robert               | 128                | Berkerolls, Sir Roger            |
| Argenten, Richard                    | 3                  | Berkſhire, Earl                  |
| Aragon, King, Ferdinand              | 31                 | Bertie, Henry                    |
| Queen, Iſabell.                      | 31                 | — Peregrine                      |
| Argiſle, Earl                        | 156                | Beer, John                       |
| Armyn, Sir William                   | 152                | Bellay, Cardinal                 |
| Arundel, Earl                        | 23, 24, 25, 45, 78 | Bennet, Richard                  |
| Arundel Fitz Alan, Earl, Richard     | 5, 8               | Blake                            |
| Arundel, Earl, Edm.                  | 4                  | Bleke, Gabriel                   |
| Arundel, Earl, Thomas                | 118                | Blont, Sir George                |
| Aſhley Cooper, Sir Anthony           | 152                | Blount, Thomas                   |
| Athol, Earl, David                   | 4                  | William                          |
| Atye, Sir Arthur                     | 43                 | Blunt, Sir Chriſtopher           |
| Audley, Lord James                   | 31. Lord           | Bond, —, DD.                     |
|                                      | 50, 53, 54,        | Bourbon, Duke                    |
|                                      |                    | Bourman, Nic.                    |
| <b>B.</b>                            |                    | Bowyer, Sir Edm.                 |
| Badger, Sir Thomas                   | 122                | Bohemia, King John               |
| Baker, Sir John                      | 33                 | Queen Eliz.                      |
| Barker, William                      | 177                | Borlace, John                    |
| Barry, Captain                       | 168                | —                                |
| Baſingham, William                   | 3                  | Bofcawen                         |
| Baſſet, Arth. 50. Tho. 15. Wm.       | 119                | Bofvill, Henry                   |
| Bath, Earl 22. Counteſs, Eliz.       | 43                 | Boteler, John                    |
| Bath, Biſhop, Robert                 | 16                 | Sir Ralph                        |
| BEAUCHAMP Family                     | 178                | Bourchier, Henry Viſcount        |
| Beauchamp, Elianor 12. Eliz. 12, 13. |                    | Bourke, Ulick                    |
| Margaret                             | 12, 13             | Bourchier, Henry, Earl of Eſſex  |
| BEAUCHAMP, Richard, Earl of War-     |                    | William, Viſcount                |
| V O L. I.                            |                    | A a a                            |



|                                      | Page   |                                       | Page          |
|--------------------------------------|--------|---------------------------------------|---------------|
| Bourbon, Co. d'Anjou, John           | 20     | Catherine, Queen                      | 27            |
| Bologne, Earl, Reginald              | 1      | Cavendish, Lord 156. Lady Elizabeth   | 176           |
| Bowden, William                      | 36     |                                       |               |
| Brabant, Duke, Geffry                | 78     | Cecill, Sir William 25, 29, 83, 89,   | 113.          |
| Bradeburn, Henry                     | 4      | Lady Catherine 149. Sir               |               |
| Bramshot, Heir                       | 67     | Thomas 48. Robert                     | 109           |
| John                                 | 16, 39 | Cecill, William Earl of Salisbury     | 149           |
| Brandon, Sir Charles, Knight 15, 16. |        | Champernon, John 11. James            | 11.           |
| Duke of Suffolk 18. Lord Charles     |        | Elizabeth                             | 11            |
| 78. Sir William                      | 78     | Charles, King 1st 129. 2nd 135, 146,  | 153           |
| Bray, Sir Reginald                   | 14     |                                       | 89            |
| Brereton, Sir William                | 151    | Clanrichard, Earl                     | 157           |
| Bridgman, Orlando                    | 150    | Clare, Earl                           | 13, 49        |
| Bridgwater, Earl, John               | 176    | Clarence, Duke, George                | 117, 143      |
| Britany, Duke                        | 20     | Clarendon, Earl                       | ib.           |
| Briton, William 1. Tho. 3. Alice 3   | 3      | Cheedder, James 12. Thomas            | ib.           |
| Briwere, William                     | 2      | Cheek, Sir Thomas 149. Thomas         | ib.           |
| Bromfield, Thomas                    | 176    | Cheney, William 4. Thomas             | 77            |
| Bromley, William                     | 17     | Chester, Earl, R.                     | 2             |
| Brook, Lord 98, 101, 104, 106, 109.  |        | Clarges                               | 154           |
| George, Lord Cobham                  | 83     | Cleve, Lady Anne                      | 19            |
| Brown, Sir Anthony 20. Sir William   |        | Clifford, Roger 3. Lady Anne          | 43            |
| 103. Weston                          | 176    | Clifton, Sir Gervase                  | 50            |
| Bruce, Robert                        | 4      | Clinton, Lord ———                     | 77            |
| Brunswick, Dutchess                  | 127    | Lord Edward                           | 29, 39        |
| Buckley, Lord Visc. Thomas           | 146    | Cobham, Lord 34, 42, 48. Lord         |               |
| BUCKHURST, Lord 55, 56, 57, 59,      |        | William, and Lord Henry               | 169           |
| 71, 115, 120                         |        | Cock, Sir Henry                       | 42, 43        |
| Buckingham, Duke Edward 171          |        | Cockram, Sir John                     | 156           |
| Duke George 154, 169. Marquis        |        | Cologne, ———, Bishop                  | 31            |
| 125, 126, 127                        |        | Compton, Lord ———                     | 121           |
| Burgane ———                          | 75     | Coningsby, Thomas 165. Earl, 166, 167 |               |
| Burgh, Hubert                        | 2      | Cork, senior, alias Lancaster         | 28            |
| Burghersh, Bartholomew               | 7      | Cornwall, Duke, Edward                | 5, 6          |
| Burnet, Bp. 156, 157, 158, 162       |        | Cotton, Sir Dedmore 129. Sir Rich-    |               |
| Burroughs, Lord                      | 50     | ard                                   | 30            |
| Sir John                             | 54     | Coventry, Sir John                    | 156           |
| Burleigh, Lord 42, 60, 99            |        | Courtney, Henry Earl of Devon         | 16            |
| Butler, Sir Edward                   | 72     | Cox, Sir Richard                      | 167, 169, 172 |
| Sir Philip                           | 64     | Craven, Earl                          | 141, 142, 143 |
| Sir Thomas                           | 72     | Crester, George                       | 105           |
| C.                                   |        | Crombwell, Sir Ralph                  | 11            |
| Camoy's, Roger                       | 10     | Cromwell, Oliver, Protector 133, 149, |               |
| Callahan, Connor                     | 169    |                                       | 152           |
| Canterbury, Archbishop, Simon 2.     |        | Cromwell, Richard                     | 149, 152      |
| Robert 11. Thomas 13---14, 20,       |        | Crumwell, ———                         | 148           |
| 25, 3                                |        | Culliford, ———, Major                 | 168           |
| Cantilupe, William                   | 3      | Culpeper, Sir Thomas                  | 120           |
| Capel, Sir Giles                     | 79     | Cumberland, Lord 30. Earl 38, 42.     |               |
| Carden, Mrs. ———                     | 30     | Countess Margaret 43. Lady ———        |               |
| Carne, William                       | 161    |                                       | 121           |
| Carr, Lady ———                       | 159    | Curwin, Sir Hugh                      | 85            |
| Cart, Joseph 147. Sidney             | ib.    | D.                                    |               |
| Cartwright, Thomas                   | 46     | Dacre, Lord ——— 16. Lady              | 121           |
| Caster, Thomas                       | 172    | Damondehay, Lord Dondagoe             | 34            |
| Castile, King, Alphonfus             | 8      | Daubeney, Lord Giles                  | 16            |
| Castilione, Cardinal                 | 20     |                                       |               |

Darcy,



# The INDEX.

iii

|                                           | Page                    |                                        | Page                            |
|-------------------------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Darcy, Thomas 25.                         | Lord Thomas 76          | 17, 18, 34, 39, 66, 67.                | Francis 75.                     |
| Dartmouth, Lord George                    | 169                     | George 112, 113.                       | Henry 30,                       |
| Davison, Secretary                        | 55                      | 31, 32.                                | Lady Jane 22.                   |
| Deane, Matthew                            | 169                     | 18, 19, 30, 34.                        | John 16, 18, 39,                |
| Delmahoy                                  | 153, 154                | 67.                                    | Margaret 32, 83.                |
| Deering, Charles                          | 172                     | Lady Ma-                               | ry 32, 96, 97.                  |
| De Beurle, John                           | 9                       | Dudley, Robert                         | 30, 34, 36, 37, 38, 71, 72, 74. |
| De Bies, Monsieur                         | 28                      | DUDLEY, Robert Lord Denbigh, and       | Earl of Leicester 31, 44, 69,   |
| DE GREY Family                            | 12                      |                                        | 97, 115, 179                    |
| Denbigh, Earl                             | 149                     | Dudley, Temperance 32.                 | Thomas 31, 74                   |
| Denmark, King 127.                        | Queen Sophia            | Duke                                   | 30                              |
| ib. Prince George 164, 165, 169, 174      |                         | Dungannon, Lord                        | 88                              |
| Dennis, Sir Thomas                        | 54                      | Durham, Bishop                         | 19, 20                          |
| Denny, Sir Anthony 20, 29.                | Sir Thomas 17           | Dyer, Edward                           | 111                             |
| Dethick, Sir William, <i>alias</i> Garter | 38                      | E.                                     |                                 |
|                                           | 96                      | Egerton, Charles                       | 176                             |
| De la Beer, Sir John                      | 119                     | Elizabeth, Princess 117, 132, 133, 146 |                                 |
| De Lisle, Gerard 9.                       | Waren 9                 | Elliot, Thomas                         | 146                             |
| De la Mare Thomas 9.                      | William 76              | Ely, Bishop, E. 2.                     | Thomas 25                       |
| Del More, Thomas                          | 8                       | Empson, Sir Richard                    | 17, 18                          |
| De la Pool, Duke of Suffolk 62.           | Mi-                     | Englefeild, Sir Thomas                 | 17                              |
| chael                                     | 19                      | Ernsey, Michael 79.                    | Susan 79                        |
| De Poynges, Richard                       | 9                       | Essex, Earl 21, 50, 51, 53, 54, 73,    |                                 |
| Derby, Earl, Thomas                       | 17                      | 74, 112, 115.                          | Henry 13.                       |
| Desmond, Sir John                         | 88                      | Walter                                 |                                 |
| Despenfer, Hugh                           | 4                       | Devereux 121.                          | William 121.                    |
| Desmond, Earl                             | 88                      | Lord                                   |                                 |
| Devereux, Walter, Earl of Essex           | 48,                     | 105, 154, 156.                         | Lady 121.                       |
|                                           | 69                      | Coun-                                  | tess Elizabeth 48, 49           |
| Digby, Sir George                         | 54                      | Exeter, Earl, Thomas 119.              | Duke,                           |
| Dixwell, ———                              | 137                     | John                                   | 11                              |
| Dodsworth, Peter                          | 123                     | F.                                     |                                 |
| Dormer, Sir William, and Lady Mar-        | garet 79, 82            | Fagel, Pensionary                      | 162                             |
| Dorral, Thomas                            | 146                     | Fagg, Sir John                         | 155                             |
| Donfany, Lord                             | 100                     | Fairfax, Lord 152.                     | Sir Thomas 151                  |
| Dorset, Marquis                           | 77                      | Fane, Sir Ralph                        | 81, 82                          |
| Dover, ——— Captain                        | 166                     | Farmer, Sir George                     | 54                              |
| Drake, Sir Francis                        | 103                     | Farnaby, Sir Charles                   | 147                             |
| Drury, Sir Drew.                          | 39                      | Fausby ——— Captain                     | 162                             |
| Dublin, Chancellor, Hugh                  | 86                      | Fell, Dr. Dean of Christ Church        | 128                             |
| Ducas ———                                 | 157                     | Feria, Duke                            | 79                              |
| DUDLEY Family                             | 16, 65, 178             | Ferrers, Earl, William 2.              | Lord Wil-                       |
| Dudley, Lady 30.                          | Lord 39, 65, 66,        | liam                                   | 12                              |
|                                           | 67                      | Filmer, Sir Robert                     | 157, 159                        |
| Lord Guilford                             | 21, 32                  | Finch, Sir Moyle                       | 42, 43                          |
| John Duke of Northumber-                  | land 14, 16, 113, 179   | Fineaux, Sir John                      | 17                              |
| DUDLEY, Ambrose 30.                       | Earl of War-            | Fitz Alan, Edm. Earl of Arundel        | 78.                             |
| wick 31, 33, 34, 36, 37, 38, 39,          |                         | Richard                                | 78                              |
| 179.                                      | John Earl of Warwick 31 | John                                   | 78                              |
| DUDLEY, Sir Andrew 18, 29, 30,            |                         | Fitz Gerald, Robert                    | 165, 166                        |
| 34, 35.                                   | Catherine 32.           | Fitz Hamon, Robert                     | 119                             |
| Charles                                   |                         | Fitz Herbert, Peter 2.                 | Matthew 2                       |
| 32.                                       | Eliz. 14.               | Fitz Nicholas, Ralph                   | 9                               |
| Edmund 14, 16,                            |                         | Fitz Walter, Lord                      | 83                              |
|                                           |                         | Fitz Warine, Lord Edward               | 43                              |
|                                           |                         | Fitz Warine, Henry 3.                  | Warine 3                        |

Fitz



|                                       | Page              |                                        | Page                 |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------|----------------------------------------|----------------------|
| Fitz William, John 80.                | William 4.        | Grey, Lord John 34.                    | Thomas 14.           |
| Sir William 80, 82.                   | Lord 80.          | 15. Robert, of Wilton Lord             | 42                   |
| Lady Anne                             | 82                | Grey — Lord,                           | 23, 154              |
| Flanders, Earl Baldwin 78.            | Ferrand 1         | Grevil, Sir Fulk 39, 111.              | William              |
| Fleming, Sir Thomas                   | 43                | 17. Fulk, Lord Brooke                  | 96                   |
| Forster, Sir Thomas                   | 116               | Griffin, Ralph, D. D.                  | 46                   |
| Forth, Robert, L. L. D.               | 81                | Grimston, Sir Harbottle                | 135                  |
| Foulk, Dig                            | 169               | Grubbe, Eustace                        | 43                   |
| Fountain, ———                         | 112               | Guilford, Edmund 18.                   | Edward 30,           |
| Frances, Lady, Neice to Hen. VIII.    | 32                | 31. Sir Edward 33, 36, 40.             | Sir                  |
| France, King Lewis 8.                 | Charles IX.       | Richard 31, 36.                        | Henry 34, 76.        |
|                                       | 38                | Sir Henry                              | 41                   |
| ——— Dolphin                           | 20                | Guilford, Lady Jane, Dutchess          | 36                   |
| Francis, Sir Edward                   | 125               | ——— Elianor                            | 30                   |
| Frazer, Dr.                           | 141               | Gwin, Sir Rowland                      | 170                  |
| Frewen, Dr.                           | 128               | H.                                     |                      |
|                                       | G.                | Hales, Sir James 22.                   | Mr. — 131            |
| GAMAGE Family                         | 119               | Hallifax, Lord                         | 154                  |
| Garner King of Arms                   | 24                | Marquis                                | 158                  |
| Gascoign, George                      | 48                | Earl, George                           | 147                  |
| Gates, Sir Henry 29, 83.              | Sir James         | Hamden, ———                            | 156                  |
|                                       | 24                | Hammond, Dr. Henry                     | 128                  |
| Gavison, John                         | 9                 | Harper, Sir George                     | 31                   |
| Gaveston, Earl of Cornwall            | 62                | Harte, Richard                         | 112                  |
| Geinvile, Sir Richard                 | 150, 151          | Hatton, Sir Christopher 42, 60, 74, 75 |                      |
| Gibbons, Jo.                          | 169               | HARRINGTON Family                      | 79                   |
| Gibson, Col.                          | 171               | Harrington, Sir James 82.              | Sir John             |
| Gifford                               | 112               | 38, 39, 80, 81.                        | Robert 9. Lady       |
| de Glamorgan, William                 | 3                 | Lucy                                   | 82                   |
| Gloucester, Duke 132, 133.            | Hum-              | Hastings, Lord 34, 64.                 | Lady Cathe-          |
| fry 11. Richard, 13.                  | Thomas            | rine                                   | 34, 37               |
|                                       | 121               | Hastings, Sir William                  | 13                   |
| Glover, John                          | 171               | Hafylwood, Edmund                      | 96                   |
| Glyn — Recorder                       | 151               | Hay, James, Viscount Doncaster         | 121,                 |
| Godolphin, Sidney                     | 162               |                                        | 124                  |
| Gonzaga, Hanibal                      | 105               | Hayward, Sir John 19, 22, 28, 29       |                      |
| Goodier, Sir Henry                    | 54, 113           | Hawles, Sir John                       |                      |
| Goodridge                             | 112               | Hennage, Sir Thomas 52, 75, 104,       |                      |
| Goodman, Gabriel, D. D.               | 81                |                                        | 112                  |
| Gooderous, ———                        | 75                | Hennebault, Lord                       | 20                   |
| Goring — Captain 155.                 | Sir George        | Henry VIII, King                       | 39, 40               |
|                                       | 125               | Herbert, Lord — 18.                    | Charles 17.          |
| Goufell, Sir Robert                   | 78                | Henry, 43.                             | Sir William 20. Lady |
| Gray, Sir Edward 39.                  | William,          | Anne 43.                               | Lady Elisabeth 43.   |
| Chancellor                            | 2                 | Lady Margaret                          | 43                   |
| GREY, Viscount L' Isle Family 12, 178 |                   | Herle, John                            | 33                   |
| Edward, Viscount L' Isle 13.          | John              | Hertford, Earl 20.                     | Marquis 145          |
| 39, 69. Elisabeth, Lady 12, 13,       |                   | Hetferolde, ———                        | 30                   |
| 14, 179                               |                   | Hinton, Anthony                        | 162                  |
| Grey, Anne 14.                        | Lady Jane 13, 14, | Hobart, Sir John                       | 120                  |
| 21, 22, 29, 32.                       | Isabell 15.       | Hollis, Lord                           | 154                  |
| Margaret                              | 14                | Hollock, Count                         | 50, 56, 104          |
| Grey, Charles                         | 43                | Holstein, Dutchess                     | 127                  |
| Grey, Lord of Groby 12, 149.          | Ed-               | Honeywood, Sir Robert                  | 152                  |
| ward                                  | 12, 32, 116       | Hoskins, Samuel,                       | 169                  |

Howard,



# The INDEX.

iv

|                                     | Page                   |                                | Page                    |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------|
| Howard, Lord 74, 77.                | Lord Charles           | Lenthall                       | 152                     |
| 49. Lord Thomas 15.                 | Lady                   | Lindsey                        | 157                     |
| Catherine 149.                      | Sir Edward, Knt. 15.   | Lincoln, Bishop 2, 14.         | Thomas 13.              |
| Muriel 15.                          | Philip and Edw. 157.   | William                        | 11                      |
| Howard of Escrick, Lord             | 156.                   | LISLE, Family 1, 16, 65.       | Barony 12               |
| Thomas, Duke of Norfolk             | 15                     | LISLE, Viscount 10, 149, 157.  | Ed-                     |
| Howell, James                       | 127                    | ward 18. John 6, 10, 11.       | Robert                  |
| Hughs, Valentine                    | 75                     | 113. Thomas 12, 14.            | Warine                  |
| Hungate, William                    | 112                    |                                | 11, 12, 13              |
| HUNGERFORD Family 79.               | Lady                   | Loftus, Sir Adam 130.          | Dud. 165                |
| Anne 79.                            | Thomas 15.             | London, Bishop, Edwin 45.      | Wil-                    |
| Walter 79.                          | Sir William 79         | liam                           | 2, 17                   |
| Hunfdon, Lord                       | 28, 49, 115            | Longford, Lord                 | 154, 169                |
| Huntingdon, Earl 42, 49, 63, 64,    |                        | Lorrain, Cardinal              | 20                      |
| 110, 111, 112.                      | Earl Henry 32,         | Lovel, Richard 32.             | Sir Thomas 17           |
| 38, 96.                             | Countess 75, 111, 116. | Lowman, Henry                  | 173                     |
| Catherine                           | 41, 42                 | Lubetius — Doct.               | 114                     |
| I.                                  |                        | Lymerick, Bishop               | 165                     |
| James, King of England              | 1                      | Lyndley, Henry                 | 111, 112                |
| James, —, Doctor                    | 111                    | M.                             |                         |
| Jaquett, Richard,                   | 85                     | Madox, Griffith                | 111                     |
| Jefferys, Lord Chief Justice        | 156                    | Malerth, Thomas                | 30                      |
| Jennings, Stephen,                  | 19                     | Maltravers, Lord, John         | 78                      |
| Jersey, Earl Edward                 | 173                    | Manchester, Earl               | 130, 135, 146           |
| Jobson, Sir Francis 30, 34:         | Mrs.                   | Manners, Henry Earl of Rutland | 20.                     |
| —                                   | 30                     | Roger, Earl 113.               | John 119. Roger         |
| John —                              | 112                    |                                | 42                      |
| Johnson, Ben.                       | 120                    | Mansel, Sir Lewis              | 120                     |
| Jones, —, Col.                      | 151, 152               | Marlborough, Duke, Charles     | 147                     |
| Jordayne, Philip                    | 111, 112               | John                           | 162, 164, 170, 174, 178 |
| K.                                  |                        | Marney, Sir Henry              | 17                      |
| Keeling                             | 112                    | Marrow, Thomas                 | 33, 35, 36              |
| Kelly                               | 112                    | Marsh, John                    | 44                      |
| Kent, Earl 38, 40, 41, 81.          | Edmund                 | Marten                         | 112                     |
| 4, 9.                               | Henry 43               | Mary, Queen                    | 22, 24                  |
| Kerne, Lord, James 79.              | Sir John 79            | Mason, Sir John                | 24                      |
| Killegrew, Sir Robert               | 122                    | Masse, Thomas                  | 33                      |
| King, William                       | 169                    | Masters, Sir Harcourt          | 177                     |
| Knevet, Sir Henry                   | 38, 39                 | Mathenon, Duke                 | 34                      |
| Knolls, Sir Francis 38, 48, 69, 75. |                        | Maurice, Grave                 | 51, 53, 55, 56          |
| Sir William 54, 75.                 | Lettice 69             | Maynard, Serj.                 | 154                     |
| L.                                  |                        | Mead, Robert                   | 169                     |
| Lemuel, Kingdom                     | 162                    | Meath, Bishop                  | 165                     |
| Lancaster, Earl 4.                  | Duke Henry 78          | Mecklenburgh, Duke             | 127                     |
| Langford, John                      | 112                    | Mills — Capt.                  | 168                     |
| Languet                             | 114                    | Melvil, Lord                   | 156                     |
| Latimer, Lord Geo. Nevile 19.       | La-                    | Mendon, Cardinal               | 20                      |
| dy Elisabeth                        | 10                     | Monk, Duke of Albemarle        | 137                     |
| Laufon, General                     | 165                    | Montjoy, Lord                  | 121                     |
| Lea, Sir Henry                      | 38, 39                 | Molineux, Edm.                 | 89, 91, 93, 101         |
| Lee —                               | 154                    | Molins, Lord, Robert 10.       | Adam 11                 |
| Leeds, Sir John                     | 125                    | Molgueros, Adrian              | 111                     |
| Legg —                              | 154                    | Monmouth, Duke                 | 156                     |
| Leicester, Earl 41, 42, 48, 49, 95, |                        | Monson, Sir Henry              | 176                     |
| 96, 109, 111, 112, 118, 119, 137,   |                        | MONTAGU Family                 | 79                      |
| 138, 139, 140, 141.                 | Earl John, &           | Montagu, Edward 81, 147.       | Sir Hen-                |
| Joceline 76.                        | Earl Robert 32, 39,    | ry 116.                        | Justice 20. — Gene-     |
| 46, 69, 113, 164.                   | Countess 43, 111       | ral 149. — Lord                | 80                      |
| VIO L. I.                           |                        | B b b                          | Montgomery,             |



|                                                                                                                    | Page                         |                                                                                                                           | Page               |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| Montgomery, Earl                                                                                                   | 118, 122, 124, 125, 126, 127 | Parma, Duke                                                                                                               | 53, 58             |
| Montgomery 38. John 11. Anne                                                                                       | 11                           | Parr, William, Marquis of Northampton                                                                                     | 25                 |
| Moor, Sir Thomas                                                                                                   | 64                           | Parsons —                                                                                                                 | 155                |
| Mordant, Lord 22. Sir John                                                                                         | 22                           | Peckham, Sir Edmund                                                                                                       | 29                 |
| Morgan — Colonel                                                                                                   | 53                           | PELHAM, Henry 147, 175. — Sir John 147, 153. Lord Thomas 147. Sir Thomas 147. Tho. 175. Sir William 52. Lady Lucy         | 146                |
| Mountford, J.                                                                                                      | 169                          | Pembroke, Earl 25, 38, 61, 73, 109, 111, 112, 122, 125, 126, 130, 149. Countess 42, 97. 102, 111. Earl Audomar 4. William | 2, 8               |
| Mulgrave, Earl                                                                                                     | 149                          | Penn, Sir William                                                                                                         | 154, 155           |
| N.                                                                                                                 |                              | Pennington, Sir John                                                                                                      | 128                |
| Navarr, King, Charles                                                                                              | 5                            | PERCY Family 164. Percy, Lord 123 124, 125. Lady Dorothy 147. Robert                                                      | 2                  |
| Newburgh, Earl                                                                                                     | 130                          | PERRY, William 32, 76, 178, 180. Elisabeth                                                                                | 32, 76             |
| Newcastle, Duke, Thomas 147. William                                                                               | 176                          | Perrot, Sir Thomas                                                                                                        | 105                |
| Newman, Rich. 169. Newcomen Thomas                                                                                 | 165                          | Peterborough, Earl                                                                                                        | 164                |
| NEVELL Family                                                                                                      | 66                           | Peter William                                                                                                             | 25                 |
| Nevile Anthony 81. Sir Edward                                                                                      | 77                           | Petre William                                                                                                             | 33                 |
| Sir Henry 83. Hugh 2. Richard                                                                                      | 65                           | Philip, King of Spain                                                                                                     | 33                 |
| Nicholas Fitz Ralph                                                                                                | 8                            | Pinder, Sir Paul                                                                                                          | 128                |
| Nicholles, William                                                                                                 | 27                           | Pipard, William 8. Thomas 8. Margaret                                                                                     | 9                  |
| Norfolk, Duke 45, 86. Thomas                                                                                       | 25                           | Plantagenet, Sir Arthur 14, 16, 18. Viscount Lisle                                                                        | 30                 |
| Normandy, Duke, William                                                                                            | 78                           | Plumpton, Peter                                                                                                           | 2                  |
| Norrice, Col.                                                                                                      | 104, 105                     | De la Pool, Michael 8. Sir Oliver                                                                                         | 15                 |
| Norris, Sir John 53. Sir Henry                                                                                     | 54                           | Portland, Earl, William                                                                                                   | 173                |
| North, Lord 50, 53, 54, 75, 109. Roger, Lord 45. Sir Henry                                                         | 54                           | Portugal, Prince                                                                                                          | 51                 |
| Northampton, Earl, Henry                                                                                           | 169                          | Potter, Hugh                                                                                                              | 146                |
| Northampton, Marquis 21, 23, 24, 25, 31                                                                            |                              | Powel —                                                                                                                   | 154                |
| Northumberland, Earl 148, 50, 143. Algernoon 137. Henry, Earl 17, 121, 122, 124, 125, 126, 127, 130, 131, 132, 135 |                              | Powlet, Sir Hugh                                                                                                          | 36                 |
| Northumberland, Duke 21, 23, 24, &c. 29, 30, 32, 64, 84. Dutchess Jane 31. John, Duke 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 69, 76   |                              | Poynings, Sir Edward                                                                                                      | 17                 |
| Nottingham, Earl, Charles 118. Countess                                                                            | 120                          | R.                                                                                                                        |                    |
| Nowell, Robert                                                                                                     | 30                           | RABI Family                                                                                                               | 66                 |
| O.                                                                                                                 |                              | Radcliff, Sir Edward                                                                                                      | 162                |
| O Carrol —                                                                                                         | 88                           | Randolph — Colonel                                                                                                        | 88                 |
| O Molloy, Arthur 85. Theobald                                                                                      | 85                           | Ratcliff, Thomas, Lord Fitz-Walter                                                                                        | 85                 |
| O Neal — 86, 89. Shane                                                                                             | 88                           | Ratcliff, Henry                                                                                                           | 22                 |
| O Ryley —                                                                                                          | 85, 88                       | Raworth, Robert                                                                                                           | 132                |
| Onslow, Lord, Richard                                                                                              | 177                          | Reade — Capt. 54. Sir Robert                                                                                              | 17                 |
| Orange, Prince                                                                                                     | 134, 162                     | Reeve, Madam Mary 177. Sir Robert                                                                                         | 177, 178, 179, 180 |
| Ormond, Lord 30. Earl 88, 89, 100. Marquis 139. Duke 145, 164, 165, 167                                            |                              | Rice, Henry                                                                                                               | 169                |
| Oughtred, Sir Anthony                                                                                              | 76                           | Rich, Sir Henry 122, 125. Lady                                                                                            | 121                |
| Oxford, Earl                                                                                                       | 50, 71, 131, 164             | Richmond, Duke, James                                                                                                     | 169                |
| P.                                                                                                                 |                              | Rivers, Earl 128. Anthony                                                                                                 | 13                 |
| Paget, Sir William 21. Lady 35. Lord                                                                               | 24                           | Robarts, Lord                                                                                                             | 136, 137           |
| Pakenham, Robert                                                                                                   | 84                           | Robfart, John 68. Anne                                                                                                    | 68                 |
| Palatine, Elector, Frederick                                                                                       | 117                          | Rochford, Earl                                                                                                            | 120                |
| Palmer, Sir Thomas                                                                                                 | 29                           | ROMNEY, Earl, Henry Sidney 161, 174, 175, 176, 179                                                                        |                    |
| I                                                                                                                  |                              | Roos, Lord 10, 165. Thomas 9. Lady                                                                                        |                    |



# The INDEX.

vii

|                                                    | Page           |                                         | Page          |
|----------------------------------------------------|----------------|-----------------------------------------|---------------|
| Lady Elianor                                       | 10             | Somerfet, Bastard, John                 | 10            |
| Roscarrick, Edward                                 | 165            | Somerfet, Duke, Edward                  | 27, 28.       |
| Rumsey                                             | 156, 158       | Beaufort, Edmund 10. Dutche's E-        |               |
| de Rosse, Robert                                   | 22             | lianor, <i>ibid.</i>                    |               |
| Rudyer, Sir Benjamin                               | 125            | Southwell, Sir Robert                   | 83            |
| Russell, Lord 20, 42, 43, 44, 154,                 |                | Southampton, Earl, Henry                | 118           |
| 155, 157. Lord John 21. Francis                    |                | Spencer, Lord 129. Lord Henry           | 147           |
| 43. Thomas 13. Sir William 39                      |                | Gilbert                                 | 142           |
| 50, 53, 105, 106, 111                              |                | Stackpool, Sir Richard                  | 119           |
| Rutland, Countess, Elisabeth                       | 43, 115        | STAFFORD, Family                        | 66            |
| Ryce, William                                      | 33             | Stafford, Richard 12. William           | 147           |
| S.                                                 |                | Stafford, Henry, Earl of Wiltshire      | 14.           |
| Sacheverel                                         | 154            | Countess of Wiltshire <i>ibid.</i>      | Earl          |
| Sackfield, Richard                                 | 16             | Humfry                                  | 11            |
| Sackville, Sir Richard                             | 80             | Stanhope, Sir Thomas                    | 48            |
| SAINT JOHN, Family                                 | 79             | Stanley — 55. Edward 53, 54.            |               |
| Saint John 20, 59. Of Bletfoe, Lord                |                | Sir Henry 50. Sir John 85. Sir          |               |
| 43. Lord Viscount 79. Lady Lucy                    |                | Thomas 13, 119                          |               |
| <i>ibid.</i> Edmund 7. Sir Oliver 43, 119          |                | Steward, Sir —                          | 54            |
| Saint Leger, War                                   | 169            | Stourton, Lord William 18. Lady E-      |               |
| Salisbury, Earl 5, 149. William Lonspè             |                | lizabeth <i>ibid.</i>                   |               |
| 1, 2. Bishop Will. 11                              |                | Stradling, Sir Edward                   | 119           |
| Salvan, Duke                                       | 34             | Strafford, Earl                         | 129, 140, 143 |
| Sanders, Robert                                    | 169            | Strangford, Viscount                    | 120           |
| Sandes, Lady                                       | 35             | Strange, Lord John of Blackmere         | 7.            |
| Savoy, Duche's                                     | 127            | Sturmius, — Doctor                      |               |
| Say, —                                             | 137            | Suffolk, Earl 5. Earl Thomas 149.       |               |
| Say and Seale, Viscount                            | 130            | William 11                              |               |
| Scarborough, Earl                                  | 164            | Suffolk, Duke 21, 22, 25, 77, 78.       |               |
| Scobell — Mr.                                      | 133            | Charles 78. Henry 32, 78                |               |
| Schomberg, Duke Frederick                          | 170            | Sunderland, Earl, Henry 146. Robert     |               |
| Scopham, Ralph                                     | 3              | 147, 153. Sunderland, Earl —            |               |
| Scotland, King, Alexander 78. David                |                | 146, 175. Countess 132, 146. Coun-      |               |
| 5. Queen 49                                        |                | te's Dorothy 162, 163, 164              |               |
| Seleby, William 1. Thomas <i>ibid.</i>             |                | Surry, Earl, John Warren 4. Earl        |               |
| Seymour, Sir Thomas 20, 21, 27.                    |                | — 77. Earl Thomas 17                    |               |
| Lady Anne 31                                       |                | Suffex, Earl — 22, 49. Earl Tho-        |               |
| Seymour, Edward, Duke of Somerfet                  | 31             | mas 80, 82, 85, 86. Countess —          |               |
|                                                    | 156            | 111. Lady Frances 82                    |               |
| Shaftsbury, Earl                                   | 156            | Sutton, Sir Richard                     | 66            |
| Sheffield, Lord John 50, 69. Douglas 69            |                | SYDNEY, Sir William and Family          |               |
| Shelley, James                                     | 30             | 76, 96, 97, 113, 114, 117, 118, 119,    |               |
| SHERARD, Sir Brownlow 32, 34, 76,                  |                | 120, 164, 179. Algernon 153             |               |
| 178, 180. Lady Mary 32, 76                         |                | SYDNEY, Sir Henry 30, 31, 32, 33,       |               |
| Shirley, Sir Thomas                                | 50             | 34, 35, 36, 48, 76, 153, 155            |               |
| Shrewsbury, Earl, George 17. Earl                  |                | Sydney, Lord                            | 116, 117      |
| — 25. Duke 173. Countess Mar-                      |                | SYDNEY, Sir PHILIP                      | 41, 50, 53,   |
| garet                                              | 6              | 54, 61, 62, 105, 109, 164               |               |
| Simier, Monfire                                    | 48, 49         | SYDNEY, ROBERT, Earl of Lei-            |               |
| Skippon, General                                   | 148            | cester 41, 43, 50, 54, 73, 74, 109,     |               |
| Slegge, —                                          | 25             | 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 117, 118, |               |
| Sligo, O Connor                                    | 88             | 176, 179                                |               |
| Smith, Aaron 156. Miles 146. John                  |                | Sydney, Thomas 32, 41, 110. Mrs.        |               |
| 147. Robert <i>ibid.</i> Sir Thomas                |                | — 30. Elisabeth 41, 110. Mary           |               |
| 120, 147. Smith, Viscount Strang-                  |                | 34, 37. Dame Franciscis 109, 110,       |               |
| ford <i>ibid.</i> Philip <i>ibid.</i> Sidney Staf- |                | 112, 113                                |               |
| ford <i>ibid.</i>                                  |                | SYDNEY, Earl, John 174, 175, 178,       |               |
| Somerfeld, John                                    | 33, 35, 36, 85 | 179                                     |               |
|                                                    |                | SYDNEY,                                 |               |



|                                                                                                | Page                    |                                                                                                                                                                       | Page                                                                                                                                                                                                |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| SYDNEY, Thomas, Colonel                                                                        | 174, 175, 178, 179, 180 |                                                                                                                                                                       | 72, 73, 74, 95, 96, 111, 112, 118, 149. Duke 65. Earl Ambrose 40, 69. John 20, 21, 22, 83. Richard 11, 39. Robert 147. Countess Anne 40, 42. Elisabeth 9, 10, 11, 12. Mary 9. ——— Countess 43, 111. |
| SYDNEY, Josceline, Earl of Leicester                                                           | 32, 178, 180            |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| T.                                                                                             |                         |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Tailboys, Sir Gilbert                                                                          | 39, 40                  | Waterhouse, Edward                                                                                                                                                    | 91                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| TALBOT, Family                                                                                 | 65, 178                 | Watkins, John                                                                                                                                                         | 169                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Talbot, Lord Gilbert 9. Sir Humfry                                                             |                         | Wenhunwen                                                                                                                                                             | 2                                                                                                                                                                                                   |
| 11. Sir John 11, 12. Sir Lewis 11                                                              |                         | Wentworth, Lord                                                                                                                                                       | 30                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| TALBOT, Viscount Lisle, JOHN                                                                   |                         | West, Lord la Warr, Thomas 30, 33, 34, 40. Lord 176                                                                                                                   |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| 11. THOMAS 69. Earl of Shrewsbury, JOHN, 10, 11. Sir Thomas                                    |                         | West ———                                                                                                                                                              | 156, 158                                                                                                                                                                                            |
| 12. Margaret, Countess of Shrewsbury, 10, 12                                                   |                         | Westminster, Lord Bishop                                                                                                                                              | 30                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Talbot, Elisabeth 32, 116. Lady Jane                                                           |                         | Wharton, Lord 22, 99, 136. Sir Thomas 22                                                                                                                              |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| 11. Margaret <i>ibid.</i>                                                                      |                         | White, Henry 111. Robert 114, 169. Thomas 82                                                                                                                          |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Tart, Edward                                                                                   | 76                      | Whitlock, ———                                                                                                                                                         | 149, 152                                                                                                                                                                                            |
| Tatshall, Robert                                                                               | 3                       | Whorwood, William                                                                                                                                                     | 39, 40                                                                                                                                                                                              |
| Taylor, William                                                                                | 112, 169                | Williams ——— 154. Sir Roger 54, 58, 114                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Temple, Sir John 112, 146, 147, 155; Sir William 143, 149, 162                                 |                         | Willoughby, Lord 50, 54, 105, of Eresby 53. Sir Henry 14. Henry <i>ibid.</i> Sir John <i>ibid.</i> Sir Edward <i>ibid.</i> Thomas <i>ibid.</i> Lady Anne <i>ibid.</i> |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Throgmorton, Sir John                                                                          | 117, 119                | Wilkinson ——— M.D. 43. Oswald 30                                                                                                                                      |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Tichburne, Henry                                                                               | 130                     | Winchester, Earl 2. Marquis, William 24, 25. Bishop 2                                                                                                                 |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Titus, ———                                                                                     | 155                     | Winckfeild, Sir John                                                                                                                                                  | 54                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Touchet, William                                                                               | 4                       | Wingfeild, Sir Robert                                                                                                                                                 | 78                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Townshend, Horatio                                                                             | 152                     | Windham, Mr. ———                                                                                                                                                      | 131                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Travers, John and Richard                                                                      | 169                     | Withins, Judge                                                                                                                                                        | 157                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Tresham, Sir Thomas                                                                            | 48                      | Winnington, Sir Francis                                                                                                                                               | 154, 163                                                                                                                                                                                            |
| TREGOIS, Family                                                                                | 16                      | Wolfey, Cardinal                                                                                                                                                      | 18                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Turbeville, Sir Paine 119. Sir Richard <i>ibid.</i>                                            |                         | Woodstock, Ld. William Bentinck                                                                                                                                       | 172                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| le Tyes, Henry                                                                                 | 4                       | Worcester, Earl, Edward 118, 119, 120                                                                                                                                 |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Tyrconel, Lord                                                                                 | 165                     | Worcester, Bishop 47. Dean <i>ibid.</i> Archdeacon <i>ibid.</i>                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| V                                                                                              |                         | Wotton, Nicholas, LL. D. 19, 20. Sir Edward 20                                                                                                                        |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Vane, Sir Henry                                                                                | 152                     | Wriothesley, Lord                                                                                                                                                     | 20                                                                                                                                                                                                  |
| Vere, Sir Francis 114. Sir George 13, 119. Vere, Earl of Oxford 101. Vere, Marquis 13. Duke 62 |                         | Wroth, Sir Robert                                                                                                                                                     | 120                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Uvedale, John                                                                                  | 111, 112                | Wyatt, Sir Thomas                                                                                                                                                     | 117                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| W.                                                                                             |                         | Wylde, Jo.                                                                                                                                                            | 131                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Wahull, John                                                                                   | 3                       | Y.                                                                                                                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Wales, Prince Charles 121. Henry 15. Lewelin 2                                                 |                         | Yardley, Edward                                                                                                                                                       | 174                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Wallop, ———                                                                                    | 154                     | York, ——— 55. Duke, James 169, 170. Anne 36                                                                                                                           |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Walsingham, Sir Francis 42, 55, 56, 99, 110, 111, 112, 113                                     |                         | Z.                                                                                                                                                                    |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Walter, Sir Walter                                                                             | 50                      | Zouch, Lord Edward                                                                                                                                                    | 169                                                                                                                                                                                                 |
| Warine, Fitz Gerald                                                                            | 3                       |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Warren, Earl, John 78. William <i>ibid.</i>                                                    |                         |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| WARWICK, Family                                                                                | 38, 39, 65              |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
| Warwick, Earl 10, 12, 25, 28, 61, 63,                                                          |                         |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                                                                     |

## LETTERS



---

# LETTERS

## A N D

# MEMORIALS of STATE.

---

Collections made by Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight of the Garter, Lord President of the Marches of *Wales*. *Touchinge the Antiquitie, Aucthoritie, and Jurisdiction of the Lord President and Councell of the Marches of Wales; and touching the Aucthoritie of the Lord President, when he hath not been in Place with the Councell.*

**T**H E Lorde President and Counsaill of the Domynion and Pryncipalitie of *Wales*, and the Marches of the same, were established in the Tyme of Kinge *Edward the IIIIth*, and ever sythens, untill the Making of the Statutes of *An. 27, 30, 33, 34, and 35 of Hen. VIII.* had Contynuanee. Who, before that Tyme, by Commissions and Instruccions from the King, harde and determyned Causes arrising within that Pryncipallitie, as also in the County of *Worcester*, and other *English* Shires adjoining. And have, since the Making of those Statutes, by Commission and Instruccion, likewise hard and determyned Causes; taking the Benefitt of that Statute in further Strengthnyng of their Aucthoritie. And thereby the hole Countrey of *Wales* have ben, by the Government of the same Lord President and Counsaill, sythens the Establishment of the same, brought from their disobedient, barbarous, and (as may be termed) lawles Incivilitie, to the civill and obedient Estate they now remayne. And all the *English* Counties, bordering thereon, brought to be af-frayed from such Spoyles and Felonyes, as the *Welsh*, before that Tyme, usually by invading their Borders, annoyed them with.

By the Statute of *An. 27 Hen. VIII.* the Domynion, Countrey, and Pryncipalitie of *Wales*, and divers Marches, were divided into xii Shires; whereof viii were antient Counties, and iiij new made Counties. And the Statutes, *An. 31, 33, 34, and 35 Hen. VIII.* are Recitalls, and Declarations of that Statute, viz. That there shalbe, and remayn a Lord President and Counsaill, &c. with all Officers and Incidents, &c. in Manner and Forme, as it had been before that Tyme used and accustomed. And for the better Strengthnyng the Aucthoritie of the Lord President and Counsaill (to deale in Causes as may be gathered) it followeth in the Statute, *An. 34 and 35 Hen. VIII.*

*Item,* That there shalbe and remayne a Presidente and Councell in the said Domynion and Principallitie of *Wales*, and the Marches of the same, with all Officers, Clercks, and Incidents to the same, in Maner and Forme, as hath been heretofore vsed and accustomed; which President and Councell shall have Power and Aucthoritie to heare and determine, by their Wisdomes and Discreacions, such Causes and Matters, as be, or hereafter shalbe assigned to them, by the Kings Majestie, as heretofore hath been accustomed and vsed.

\* Ex Autog. apud Penhurst.



Vpon these Wordes, it is thoughte that the Authoritie and Jurisdiction of the said Lord President and Councill, doth principally consist in the Hearing and Determinacion of Causes and Matters, by their Wisedomes and Discreacions, to them by her Majestie assigned, as heretofore hath been accustomed and vsed.

Nowe, to make Declaracion, what hath been assigned by the Prince, in formour Tyme, to the said Lord President and Councill, these be the Wordes :

A°. 17, H. VIII.] Instruccions geven by the Kings Highnes, and signed with his gracious Hande, to the right reuerend Father in God the Bishopp of *Excester*, President of Councill, with his dearest Daughter the Princeesse; the Lord *Dudley*, Chamberlayne, the Lord *Ferrers*, Stuard of Howshould, Sir *Iohn Porte*, Knight, Justice; and so namynge the rest, &c. whom his Highnes, of speciall Trust and Confidence, hath appoynted to be Counsaillours, attendaunt vpon the Person of his dearest Daughter the Princeesse, and also Comissioners in the Parties of *Wales*, and Marches of the same, for Execucion of the Matters hereafter mencioned.

*First*, In asmuch as by Reason of the longe Absence of any Prince makinge continuall Residence eyther in the Principalitie of *Wales*, or in the Marches of the same: The good Order, Quiet, and Tranquillitie of the Countrey there about, hath greatly been altred and subuerted, and the due Administration of Iustice, by Meanes of sondry Contrarieties, hetherunto hindred and neglected. And for that also it should be greatly to the Damaige and Hurt of the Kings lovinge Subiects in the said Principalitie and Marches, which myght fynde them selves greaved or offended, to repaire for makinge and exhibitinge their Complaynts before the Kings most honorable Councill, or to pursue their Accions and Quarrells in the Kings ordinary Courts, kept at his Pallace of *Westminster*. And to Thentent further, that the said Countreyes may hereafter be reduced vnto the pristine and sound good Estate and Order, due Justice administred, poore Mens Causes rightfully redressed, Offendours and Malefactours to be punished, good Men condignly cherished and rewarded, and also the Parties there about, by Meane of good Hospitallitie, refreshed. The Kings Highnes therefore, by mature Deliberacion and substanciall Advise of his Councill, hath determyned to send, at this Tyme, his dearest, best beloved, and only Daughtour, the Princeesse, accompanied and established with an honourable, sadd, discrete, and experte Councill, to reside and remayne in the Marches of *Wales*, and the Parties thereabouts, whom his Highnes hath sufficiently furnished with ample Comissions and Auctoritie, aswell for Thadministration of Justice, as for all other Things requisite and expedient to be done concerninge the Premisses; that is to say, a Comission of Oier, and Determiner; another for Thadministration of Justice, and Decicion of Causes, Greeves, and Complaynts, to be made betweene Partie and Partie; and so proceeding with like Remembraunce of the rest of their Comissions, concludeth in this Sorte. All which the Kings speciall Trust and Confidence is, they will duely, truely, and effectually execute, accordinge to the Purporte and Tenor of the same: For the better Performance whereof, and of all other Things which may concerne the Premisses, certeyne Articles be devised by his Highnes to be observed, kept, and fulfilled by the said Councill, as followeth:

Of these Instruccions and Articles, there is an ould Parchement Booke remayninge in Thoffice of the Clerck of the Councill there at this presente, which is delivered to the right Honorable Sir *Henrie Sydney*, of the noble Order of the Guarter, Knighte, Lord President of the same Councill, to be shewed by the said Lord President, for Mayntenaunce and Defence of the Jurisdiction and Auctoritie aforesaid, where the said Sir *Henrie* hath been Lord President, from *Anno secundo* of the Queens Majestie, that nowe is, hetherunto.

The



The Lord President and Councell aforefaid being thus established, to have Continuance, are to be directed by her Maiesties Instruccions, as heretofore hath been accustomed.

It appereth by theese ould Instruccions recived, and by diuerse other Orders, Rules, and Remembraunces, what Causes the said Lord President and Councell have, and might have taken into their Audience, by Reason of their Instruccions and Comissions, before the Statute for their Establishment, as aforefaid.

It appereth also, that the Meaning of the Prince was ; that, for such Causes that did arysse within this Comission, the same should be heard and determined before the said Lord President and Councell, and not at his Courts at *Westminster* ; for Prouff whereof,

The ould Instruccions aforefaid.

A Letter from the Lord Chancelour of *England*, to Bushopp *Sampson*, Lord President, commending the Heareinge of a Cause, beinge within this Comission.

Another Lettre from Sir *John Gaige*, Chancelor of the Duchie of *Lancaster*, to Bishopp *Sampson*, Lord President, to the like Effecte.

The Lord President and Councell are sworn to the Performance of her Majesties Instruccions, by the which receaving their Direccion for the Hearinge of Causes, as aforefaid, they have been accustomed to receive the Complaynts of such Persons, as shall fynde them selves greeved to be vexed in her Majesties Courts at *Westminster*, for Matters by her Majestie appointed to be heard and determined before the said Lord President and Councell.

A Lettre from Bushopp *Sampson*, Lord President, Sir *Roberte Townshend*, Justice, and others of the Councell to the Lord Chancelor of *England*, declaring that the Writ of *Certiorari* hath not been allowed in this Courte, from any the Kings Courts at *Westminster*.

That the Justices of Assises in their Circuit within this Comission, have conformed them selves to the Proceedings of the said Lord President and Councell ; may appeare by severall Lettres, to be shewed in the Tyme of Justice *Morvyn*, and Justice *Portman*.

That the Lord President and Councell shall geve Direccion to the Shireff and Justices of Peace, of each County within this Comission, for the Service of the Prince to them signified, from her Majestie or the Lords of the Councell.

Seuerall Lettres from the Lords of the Councell from Tyme to Tyme extant.

That the Lord President and Councell shall certefie the Elleccion of Shireffs for *Wales*, and afterwards, by *Dedimus Potestatem*, to receive their Recognisances and Othes, may appere by the Statute.

Lettres from the Lord Chancelor of *England* to Bushopp *Sampson*, Lord President, sheweth some what therof.

The Lord President beinge within the Realme, and from the Place where the Councell make Abode, is to geave Direccion to the rest of the Councell, and to be made Pertaker of Matters of Importance, as the Heade of the Body of the Councell ; and his Assent to be hadd to the Proceedings in Matters of Importance, may appere by severall Orders taken in *An. 2, 3, and 4* of Kinge *Edward*, before the said Lord President and Councell ; some whereof beringe Date at *Sbrowesbury*, some at *Worcester*, some at *Ludlow*, and subscribed by *John*, Earle of *Warwick*, then Lord President ; in Testemony of his Assent to that which was done by the rest of the Councell in his Absence : He that nowe supplyeth Thoffice of Clerck of the Councell, then servinge vnder Mr. *Evans*, deceased, that was then Clerck of the Councell, brought these Orders to Bushopp *Hatfield*, to the said Lord President, and procured his Hand to the same, as may appere.

The severall Lettres, and Mynuts of Lettres, betweene Bushopp *Heath*, Lord President, then beinge at *London*, and the Councell then beinge in the Comission, shewe, that he, then beinge Lord President, gave Direccion to the rest of the Councell, althoughe he was absent from the Place.

Touchinge



Touchinge the Diets and Order of the Howshould, and what Allowaunce hath been, and howe the same hath been encreased, and vpon Consideracions, and in whose Tymcs; is to be knowen by the Instruccions from Tyme to Tyme; whereof some Remembraunces are presently deliuered, as remayne in Thoffice of Clerck of the Councell.

Also, touchinge the Fines, and the Disposicion thereof, the Instruccions from Tyme to Tyme serue as Warrant for the same. There is a Recorde, for the Payment of certayne Fees, to be made by this Councell, to certayne Gentlemen of the Comission for the Princes Seruis; but whether the same were to be payed out of the Diets, or Fynes, is not certeynly knowen.

*Remembrances<sup>b</sup> of principall Matters, in the Instruccions sent down with Prynces Mary, for Proufs of the Causes and Lymitts assigned to the Counsaill in the Marches of Wales. An. 17 H. VIII.*

**A** Ppointement of the Prynces Counsaill and Comissioners, in the Parts of *Wales*, and the Marches of the same, for Execucion of the Matters mentioned in the Instruccions *Fol. 2*

The Cause why Matters within the Marches shalbe determyned by the Counsaill there *Fol. Eod.*

The Princes, with her Counsaill, to resyde and remayne in the Marches of *Wales*, and the Parts thereabouts *Fol. Eod.*

The Authoritie of the Counsaill by Comissions *Fol. Eod.*

The Tenor of their Comissions *Fol. 3*

The principall Cause of establisshing of the Counsaill in the Marches for the Admystracion of Justice *Fol. 6*

The Princes fyrst Arryvall at *Thornebury*, in the Countie of *Gloucester*, and after her House there setled, to proceade to the Execucion of the Comission of *Oier* and *Terminer* *Fol. Eod.*

Vpon Bills at the Sute of the Partie, Proces to be made at the Sute of the Plaintieffs, with all reasonable Speed, retornable at a convenient Day ensuyng; and thervpon the Defendants to answer, and the Plaintieffs to reply *vsq;* *ad exitum*, as by theyr Discreacionsshal be thought reasonable, so that Justice be had and mynistred, &c. *Fol. 7*

1. Twoe of the Comissioners to sitt at euery Sessions of the Peas, to be holden in euery of the Counties of their Comission *Fol. 8*

2. The Counsaill, or iiij of them, to determyne Matters for Title of Landes *Fol. Eod.*

3. The Counsaill to take into theyr Audience, and into theyr Rule and Determyneacions by theyr Discreacions, all Causes of Sutes, and other Variaunces and Debates depending, or growing in any of the Shires, Counties, or other Places, of any of theyr Comission *Fol. Eod.*

4. In which said Causes, yf any of the Parties comytt any Contempt, Resistance, or Disobedience, either of there Apparaunce, or contrarie to the Mediacion, Direccion, or Determyneacion, to be made or decreed, by the sayd Counsaillours, &c. Attachement to be adwarded against hym, and sent vp to the Privie Counsaill; or ells to be deteyned in Ward, vntill the Kings Pleasure knowne, or that the said Person assent and agree to the Decree and Determyneacion of the said Counsaill, and accordingly, indede, to execute and performe the same *Fol. 9*

If any Person complayne to the Counsaill of any Wrong done to them, the Defendants shalbe sent for by Proces, and yf they disobey, Attachement to be adwarded, and vpon Apparaunce, Order to be taken as shall stand with ryght and good Conscience.

<sup>b</sup> EX Autog. apud Penshurst.



The Comissioners shall take Bandes of all and singuler Gentlemen, and Noblemen, within the Lymitts of their Comission, that they shall not maynteyne any Matter, nor be confederat against the Lawe Fol. 10

The Counsaill shall dailie attende to the Reading of Bills put to them, and to answer them; and theyr Answers shalbe endorced by the Clerk of the Counsaill, excepte greate Causes, touching the Kings Realme; or his Lordships lett it 11

5. The Counsaill, within the Precynct of their Comissions, to compound with all Offendors, for all Forfeitures of Obligacions and Recognizances 15

Consideracion to be taken, to a Matter within the Towne of *Beawdeley*, which is nowe annexed to the Countie of *Worcester*, by the Statute of An. 34, & 35, H. VIII. Eod.

6. The Counsaill to compound and make Fynes with all Maner of outlawed Persons, nowe being within the Precynct of theyr Comission 16

*An Account of what Money was annually allowed to the Courtnsell and Commissioners, in the Marches of Wales, An. 3 Edw. VI.*

THE whole Some of Money, by the Kings Majesty, allowed to his Comissioners in the Marches of *Wales*, aswell towards and for the Diet; as for all other Chardges there arrysing, admounteth yearly to

Payed by the Quarter (that is to saie) at euery Payment } CCxviij l. xvij s. x d. ob.

*Fees of the Comissioners thereof paied.*

|                                          |        |        |         |
|------------------------------------------|--------|--------|---------|
| Sir Thomas Bromley, Knight, per Ann.     | xij l. | vi s.  | vij d.  |
| Sir John Pakyngton, Knight, per Ann.     | x l.   |        |         |
| Sir Rice Maunxell, Knight, per Ann.      | x l.   |        |         |
| Sir Thomas Holcroft, Knight, per Ann.    | x l.   |        |         |
| David Brooke, Sergeant at Lawe, per Ann. | vj l.  | xij s. | iiij d. |
| Sir John Prife, Knight, per Ann.         | xij l. | vj s.  | vij d.  |
| Sir Adam Mytton, Knight, per Ann.        | vj l.  | xij s. | iiij d. |
| Richard Hassall, Esquier, per Ann.       | vj l.  | xij s. | iiij d. |
| George Willoughby, Esquier, per Ann.     | xij l. | vj s.  | vij d.  |
| Richard Germyn, Esquier, per Ann.        | v l.   |        |         |

Sum total is lxxxxv l.

|                                                                                     |         |       |       |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------|-------|-------|
| Twoe Messengiers, per Ann. xl s. a peece                                            | iiij l. |       |       |
| William Armerer, for keaping the Kings Highnes Armor at Ludlowe, per Ann.           | ix l.   | ij s. | vj d. |
| William Austy, for Solliciting of the Comissioners Causes aboue at London, per Ann. | v l.    |       |       |
| For the Receipte and Portage of the Diet-money, per Ann.                            | v l.    |       |       |

The Treasurer of the Kings Majesties Chamber, for making speedie Payment of the said Diet-money and in good Money, per Ann. } v l.

|                                             |       |         |        |
|---------------------------------------------|-------|---------|--------|
| The Clerke of the said Treasaurer, per Ann. |       | xxvj s. | vij d. |
| The Porter there, per Ann.                  | ij s. | vij d.  |        |

Sum total is xxix l. xi s. x d.

Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



## Officers Waiges.

|                                                              |         |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|---------|
| The Stuard of the Houshold, <i>per Ann.</i>                  | iiij l. |
| The twoe Cooks, xl s. <i>per Ann.</i> a Peece                | iiij l. |
| Twoe Laborers of the Kitchyn, xx s. a Peece, <i>per Ann.</i> | xl s.   |
| The Butler, <i>per Ann.</i>                                  | xl s.   |
| The Panter, <i>per Ann.</i>                                  | xl s.   |
| The Yoman of the Celler, <i>per Ann.</i>                     | xl s.   |
| The Cater, <i>per Ann.</i>                                   | xl s.   |
| The Almner, <i>per Ann.</i>                                  | xx s.   |
| The vnder Breuer, <i>per Ann.</i>                            | xx s.   |

Sum total is xx l.

And it hath been vsed to allowe out of the Groffe }  
 Some aboue remembered, towards the Diet of the }  
 said Comissioners, weekly (that is to saie) for all } xiiij l. vi s. viij d.  
 Victualls, Fuell, and Implements of Houshold }

And also to allowe towards fforeyn Expences (that }  
 is to saie) for Rewardes, Carraiges, and all other } C Marks.  
 Chargies not before remembred, *per Ann.* }

*Sir Henry Sydney to the<sup>d</sup> Lords and others of the Queens Highness (Queen Mary) most honourable Privie Counsaill.*

**M**YN humble Duetie to your Right Honorable Lordships. Like as I have in myn other Letters of the last Despeche from hence, amongst the generall Aduertisements of the State, present of this Realme, made mencion of the Wants and Neade we have here of Artillary, Municion, and other Habillyments for the Warre: So nowe haue thought it expedient to addresse vnto your Honors this Berar *Thomas Elyot*, Mr. Gunner here; toguether with the Proporcion herin enclosed, touching the Supply of the said Wants. And haue iudged it no lesse mete to requier the Complement therein expressed, both to the Refourniture of suche Things as we ar vtterly destitute (with which no Service can be done); as also to be in Stoare and a Readynes for all Events to come; Ihan thought the said Berar, for the present, most fitt to be sent for the chosing, trying, and sorting of the Things nowe requyred in this Proporcion: Whose Knowledge with long Experience and paynfull Practise here, in Things belonging to his Feate, with Honesty, Fidelitie, and Discrecion, may in this Exployte also serue to great Purpose. And whear, in this Proporcion, your Lordship may thinke straunge the Demaunde of fower Thousand of Leade: It may pleas the same tunderstone, a great Part therof to be ment for and towarde the Covering of a certein Tower within the Castle of *Dublin*, whose Rowf was taken down by my Lord of *Suffex*, and a Platfourme thereon made; and theruppon a Cannon planted, to the great Force of that the Queenes Maiesties Piece, and Terror of thevill disposed Sort: So as, if the same be not in Tyme couered agayn, it wilbe the fynall Decaye of that Tower; beside the Losse we haue in the meane, of the neither Rowmes there, for the Bestowing of Powder, and other Munycions wherof (being as it is) we can lay there nothing. And whear likewise it may be thought by your Wisdomes, that the Fawcions and Fawconnetts, mencioned in the said Proporcion, sholde be here to small Purpose: It is neuertheles thought here very convenient to haue some of them; both when Occasion sholde require (as perhappes it might come to passe hereafter, for Repressing of great Attempts, the Number of Souldiors decreasing) the same to serue for the Felde, convenient to be

<sup>d</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



Caried; or ells vppon any sodeyn Landing, or Doubt of Landing of Enemyes, to be easely drawen forth for Repulse of suche Hostilitie: Where also there remeyneth here, disperfed in sondry Places of this Realme, certein grosse and huge Pieces of Ordnances, the Note wherof this Berar shall exhibit and make further Declaracion therin to your Honnors; for that the same both lacking their Cariadge, and also serving here to small Purpose, but rather stande in perill of taking away, if foreyn Enemyes sholde here arryve; it may please your discrete Wisdomes to consider the same, and (so seaming good unto you) to take Order for the Conveighaunce therof from hens thither at Tyme and in Sort convenient. I thought it my Part, for the good Lykelyhood of good and necessary Purpose, to remember the said Fawconnes and Fawconnetts, remitting the Nomber to your honorable Discrecions, beseeching your Lordships, weighing Thimportaunce of the necessary Fourniture, to tender Thexpedition of the said Berar; and further to haue Consideracion to supplye his Lacke of curraunt Moneye, wherof we cannot here get the half for our Moneye; being one the gretest Extremitie we fynde; and namely, when for vrgent Occasions (as at this Tyme one) some ar to be sent thither from hens, besides thunyuersall Smart growing euery weys therby: It may therefore pleas your Honnors, as well to ponder this State of owers, as also for Thinstaunt to cause this Man to be conveniently furnished with Money for his Expences, comyng and going, and for the Cariage, Conveighaunce, and Transportacion of this his Chardge. Requiring further, that it may please your Lordships to repose firme Credit in his Trueth, of long Tyme tried, and to his Iudgement and Discrecion in the Choyse and Sorting of the Things, wherto his Knowledge (best of any other we haue) doth serue. And, lastly, to haue your honorable Respects towards the Man for his long Seruice, well and worthely bestowed here, meriting to haue Favour in his honest and resonnable Causes and Pursuits. So humbly taking my Leaue. At *Dublin*, this xiiiith of *Aprill*, 1559.

Your honorable Lordships at Comaundement,

H. SYDNEY.

Queen Elisabeth to Sir Henry Sydney\*, on the Quarell between Thomas Earl of Ormond, and the Earl of Desmond, Anno 1565.

Harry,

IF our partiall shendar Managing of the contentious Quarrell betwene the two *Iriscbe* Irells, did not make the Way to cause thes Lines to passe my Hande, this Gebourest shuld hardly have cumbered your Yees; but, warned by my formar Fault, and dreading worfar Hap to come, I rede you, take good hede that the good Subjects lost State be so revenged, that I here not the rest be won to a right By-way to brede more Traytors Stoks, and so the Gole is gone. Make some Difference twixt tried, iust, and false Frinde. Let the good Servis of well Desarvers be never rewarded with Los. Let ther Thank be suche as may incorege mo Strivars for the like. Suffer not that *Desmonds* deninge Dedes, far wide from promised Workes, make you trust to other Pleage, than ether him selfe or *Ibon*, for Gaige: He hathe so well performed his *Inglesche* Vowes, that I warne you trust him no longer than you see one of them. *Prometheus* let me be, and *Prometheus* hathe bine myne to long. I pray God your olde strainge Shepe late (as you say) retorned in to Fold, wore not her wolvy Garment upon her wolvy Bak. You knowe a Kingdome knowes no Kindered, *Si violandum jus regnandi causa*. A Strength to harne is perilous, in the Hande of an ambitious Hed. Wher Myght is mixt with Wit, ther is to good an Accord in a Government. Essayes be oft dangerous, spetially whan the

\* Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.



Cupberar hathe receved fuche a Prefarvatif, as, what met so ever betide the Drinkars Draught, the Carier takes no Baine therby. Belive not, thogh the fwere that they can be ful found, whose Parents foght the Rule that the full fayne would have. I warrant you, thei wyll never be accused of Bastardy; you wer to blame to lay it to ther Charge, they will treace the Steps that others have pased befor. If I had not espied, thogh very late, *Leger de main*, used in thes Cafes, I had never plaid my Part. No, if I did not se the Balances holde awry, I had never my selfe come into the Wayhous. I hope I shall have so good a Coustumer of you, that all under Officers shall do ther Duty amonge you. If aught have bine amys at Home, I wyll pache, thogh I cannot hole it. Let us not, nor no more do you consult so longe, as til Advis come to late to the Givers: Whare than shall we wische the Dedes, while all was spent in Wordes; a Fole to late be wares, whan all the Perrell is past. If we still advise, we shall never do; thus are we ever knitting a Knot, never tied; yea, and if our Webbe be framed with rotten Hurdells, whan our Lome is welny done, our Worke is new to begin. God send the Wever true Prentiffes again, and let them be Denizins, I pray you, if the be not Sitecins; and fuche to as your anciant Aldermen, that have, or now dwell in your official Place, have had best Cause to comende ther good Behaviour. Let this Memoriall be only committed to *Vulcanes* base Keping. Without any longer Abode, than the Leafure of the Reding therof, yea, and with no Mention made therof to any other Wight. I charge you, as I may comande you. Seme not to have had but Secretaries Letters from me.

*Your lovinge Maistres,*

ELIZABETH R.

*Sir Henry Sydney ' to his Son Philip Sydney, at School at Shrewsbury,  
An. 1566. 9 Eliz. then being of the Age of XII Years.*

I Have reaceaved too Letters from you, one written in *Latine*, the other in *French*; which I take in good parte, and will yow to exercise that Practise of Learninge often: For that will stand yow in moste steade, in that Profession of Lyf that yow are born to live in. And, since this ys my first Letter that ever I did write to yow, I will not, that yt be all emptie of some Advyses, which my naturall Care of yow provokethe me to wishe you to folowe, as Documents to yow, in this your tendre Age. Let your first Actyon be, the Lyfting up of your Mynd to Almighty God, by harty Prayer, and felyngly dysgest the Woordes you speake in Prayer, with contynuall Meditation, and Thinkinge of him to whom you praye, and of the Matter for which you praye. And use this as an ordinarye, at, and at an ordynarye Hower. Whereby the Time yt self will put yow in Remembraunce to doe that, which yow are accustomed to doe. In that Tyme apply your Study to to fuche Houres as your discrete Matter dothe assign yow, earnestlye; and the Time (I knowe) he will so lymitt, as shalbe both sufficient for your Learninge, and saf for your Health. And mark the Sens, and the Matter of that yow reade, as well as the Woordes. So shall yow bothe enrieche your Tonge with Woordes, and your Wytte with Matter; and Judgment will growe as Yeares growyth in you. Be humble and obedient to your Master, for unles yow frame your selfe to obey others; yea, and feale in your selfe, what Obedience ys; yow shall never be able to teache others how to obey yow. Be curteese of Gesture, and affable to all Men, with Diversitee of Reverence, accordinge to the Dignitie of the Person. Ther ys nothinge, that wynneth so muche with so lytell Cost. Vse moderate Dyet, so as, after your Meate, yow may find your



Wytte fresher, and not duller, and your Body more lyvely, and not more heavye. Seldome drinke Wine, and yet sometime doe, least, beinge enforced to drinke upon the sodayne, yow should find yourselfe inflamed. Vse Exercise of Bodye, but suche as ys without Peryll of your Yointes or Bones. It will encrease your Force, and enlardge your Breathe. Delight to be cleanly, as well in all Partes of your Bodye, as in your Garments. It shall make yow gratefull in yche Company, and otherwise lothsome. Give your self to be merye, for yow degenerate from yowr Father, yf you find not yowr self most able in Wytte and Bodye, to doe any Thinge, when yow be most mery : But let your Myrthe be ever void of all Scuriltee, and bitinge Woords to any Man, for an Wound given by a Woorde, is oftentimes harder to be cured, then that which is given with the Swerd. Be you rather a Herer, and Bearer away of other Mens Talke, then a Begynner or Procurer of Speeches, otherwise yow shalbe counted to delight to heare your self speake. Yf you heare a wise Sentence, or an apt Phrase, commytte yt to your Memorye, with respecte of the Circumstaunce, when yow shall speake yt. Let never Othe be hard to come out of your Mouthe, nor Word of Rybaudrye; detest yt in others, so shall Custome make to your self a Lawe against hit in your self. Be modest in yche Assemble, and rather be rebuked of light Fellowes, for Meden lyke Shamefastnes, then of your sad Friends for pearte Boldnes. Thinke upon every Woorde that yow will speake, before yow utter hit, and remembre how Nature hath rampared up (as yt were) the Tonge, with Teeth, Lippes, yea, and Here with out the Lippes, and all betokeninge Raynes, or Bridles, for the loose Use of that Membre. Above all Thinges tell no Untruthe, no not in Trifels. The Custome of hit is naughte, and let it not satifie yow, that, for a Time, the Hearers take yt for a Truthe; for after yt wilbe knowen as yt is, to your Shame; for ther cannot be a greater Reproche to a Gentellman, then to be accounted a Lyare. Study and endeavour your self to be vertuously occupied. So shall you make such an Habite of well doinge in yow, that yow shall not knowe howe to do Evell, thoughe you wold. Remember, my Sonne, the noble Blood yow are descended of, by your Mothers Side; and thinke that only, by vertuous Lyf and good Action, yow may be an Ornament to that illustre Famylie; and otherwise, throughe Vice and Slouth, you shalbe counted *labes generis*, one of the greatest Curses, that can happen to Man. Well (my litell *Philippe*) this is ynough for me, and to muche I fear for yow. But, yf I shall finde that this light Meale of Disgestion nourishe any thinge the weake Stomake of your yonge Capacitie, I will, as I find the same growe stronger, fead yt with toefter Foode.

*Your lovinge Father, so long as you lyve in the Feare of God,*

H. Sydney.

\* *Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland, to Mr. Secretary Cecill.*

**A**lbeit my Lettres of Yesterdaies Date (as I take it) weare not gone at the Arryvall of *William Peirs* here this Morninge : Yet I thought good to lett them passe, and accompany them with this other of myne, in Ainswere of yours received by him. For, I assure you, Sir, I woulde, with all my Harte, that you knewe and felt all my Thoughtes and Conceiptes, that I have of any Man, or any Matter touchinge the Service in this Lande (so simple is myne Intendment) as sensible I feale them my self. I have greate Cause to reioice, that my ill composed Lettres founde soe gracious Acceptacion. I ment well, writte truly; an as I thought. I will neuer, vnpressid, vpon my Alleageaunce, deale in the great Matters of my Lord of *Ormounde*, vntill an other Chauncellor come, or some other Commissioner out of *Englaunde*, to be ioyned with me, for the

\* Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.

V O L. I.

E e e

Heareinge



Heareinge and Determyninge of that Cause ; for, howe indifferently foeuer I shall deale, I know it will not be thought favorably enoughe on my Lord of *Ormoundes* Side. And, I assure you, Sir, if I served vnder the cruellist Tirant that ever tyrانىsed, and knewe him affected on the one or the other Side, in a Matter betweene Partie and Partie referred to my Iudgement, I woulde rather offende his Affection, and stande to his Misericord, than offende myne owne Conscience, and stande to Godes Iudgment. Moche more I dare be boulde vprightly to doe, seruinge and lyvinge vnder soe Christian and Iust a Princes as I doe : And, before God, Sir, this I protest to you, that I write not this in Preiudicacion of my Lord of *Ormoundes* Cause, for I know not, nor coniecture, but that it may as well fall owt on my Lord of *Ormoundes* Side, as on the others ; but I finde that I am foreiudgid of. Therefore, I beseeche you, Sir, let me have some other, then any yet is here, to be ioyned with me, before I shall enter into the Diffussion of the Matter, as well for the finall Sentensinge of it, without further Appeale, as for advoidinge Infamie to my self.

I pity Mr. *Stukeley*, as you doe, and now he repairethe into *Englande* ; he hoped here to have setled, beinge well allied to dyvers Noble Men here, and in great Towardnes to marry the Earle of *Worcesters* Sister.

If any Good come of the Intelligence of *Oneills* Intendement, *Stukeley* is to be thanked for it. And for the Weight of th' Office which I recommended him to, only by my particuler Lettres to you, my Lord of *Penbrooke*, and my Lord of *Leicester*, from all which I had before received very favorable Lettres in his Behalf. Suche it is as heretofore, and no longer agoe, then in my Lorde *Lenardes* Governement, the Marshall of his Hall was Marshall of the Armie. And the Office was, and is, of the Deputies Gifte. The Bargaine for the Lande, as in my other Lettres I writte, was made betweene *Bagnall* and him, before I knewe of it : And, that beinge his, I knowe noe Man, if the Queene wolde have Peace withe *Oneill*, that better coulde please him, nor no Man, if her Highnes woulde have Warre, that more woulde annoy him ; and this moved me to consent to it, and yet I nether desier it, nor perswade it. I spare particularly to wright, howe to make this intended Warre on *Oneill*, till the Arryvall of Mr. Vicechamberlaine ; for that my Opyinion then may carrie withe it Resolution of vs bothe, and others ; but for the Tyme, what Yeare soever, the Queene will beginne this Warre : Yt must be begonne aboute the middest of *September*, and not to be looked to be ended, before *Midfomer* followinge. In which Tyme, by the Grace of God, if the Warre be dilligently followed, he may be subdued to Order, killed, or an other established in his Place, whereby the Queen shalbe in good Sewerty to have Service of that Countrey at Pleasure, where now she hathe none. Her Landes, Rightes, and Dueties, due to her by others, and now detayned from her by him. And Peace and Quiet emonge her People, where there is now nothinge but Warre and Distruccion, and soche a Subiection as may be equall in Obedience withe the best of the *Irishe*. But if her Highnes meane soche a totall Extirpacion of him, and his, soe as there shall neuer be *Oneill* more ; and either to bringe the People to the iust Rule of *Englishe* Lawe, or to banishe them quite, and vnpeople the Soile, by Inducement of Collonies, *hoc aliud est*, but yet optable and fezible, but with moche more Charge and Tyme : For then looke for noe sounde Freindshippe at anye original *Irishe* Hande, for eche will thinke that his Staffe standethe next to that Dore. And withall, the Conquest of *Leix*, and *Offaully*, is to be remembred, which I am suer hathe cost the Queene, and this Countrey, more then woulde purchase so moche Rent, tenne Tymes tolde, in *Englande*. Good Mr. Secretary, let me knowe her Majesties Pleasure, in the Choice of theis Proceedings, which will expedite a Resolution of our Consultacion, and shorten our Discours of the same.

Who foeuer shal be Chauncellor here, and have no other Lyving here, but 500 *l.* yerelie for his Office. Yf his Lyvinge be not the greater in *Englande*, he shall eyther lyve here like a Miser, or come Home a Begger, as I am lyke to doe. I write plainelie that whiche I knowe certainelye.



Yf ever there be Faulte founde for Partiality in Sir *Warbame Sentleger*, let it be my Faulte, aswell as his; he hath already done good Service to the gret Quiet of the Countye of *Waterforde*; doubtles, he is an honest and a sufficient Man. O, Sir, I never promised that the Countrey shoulde beare the Charge of the Counsell in *Mounster*; I doe not, nor never I will doe, any Thinge els but my true Service, and the Imployment of my vttermoſt Indeavor; nor I wot not whie it shoulde be looked for in *Mounster*, which was never had in *Walles*, nor the Northe of *Englande*: Let my Discourses be considered, and coniecture of the Succes. I intend to plant withe Reason, and water withe Iustice; but God must give the Increase.

I beseeche you, Sir, remember the Order for the Starre-Chamber, and Warraunt for Leade.

I perceive it is thought, that I am a Staie of Sir *Nicholas Arnolde*s Aboade here. Oh the Mallice of Man. Sir, I never staied him, savinge, at my firste Comminge, he tolde me, that if he might staie one Monethe, or somewhat more, he woulde make Declaracion of just Checke, and Controllmente, to the Queenes Advantage, of a great Masse of Money. I required him, that he woulde make Speede, the rather for that I had no Authentie to make out Warraunte, but accordinge to his Controllmente, and Checke: He saide he woulde, but yet I have it not; but nowe he saiethe, I shall. Three Monethes are past, and more, in which Tyme, suer he hath bene litell idell; I have callid vpon him daily for it, or to goe away, and leave the rest, to give it me, and yet I staie him (as they saie). Yt is saide, that I sought this Office. My Declaracion thereof I at large have written, in my Lettres to the Lordes of the Counsell, which I beseeche you, Sir, as I maie have Cause to think you love me, speake of publickley. Yt is saide also, that I have been an evill Speaker of the Erle of *Sussex*. God deeme me to die without Conscience, or Confession of Synne, if ever I spake worse of him, then I have done to you; and spare not you to speak, to my Condemnacion, the worst that I have saide of him to you. I write not this to flatter him, soe farre fourthe as he is my Foe: But that Evill come to me and myne, I pray God, that I wishe to him. My Wief returnethe you freindly Commendacions, multiplyed by Millions on her Parte, bothe to your self and to my Lady. And now I beseeche you, Sir, remember that I have passed three Monethes of my three Yeres Peregrination, in this Purgatory, the vttermoſt Tyme promised by her Majestie of my Service here. But if the Daies might be shortned for the Elect Sake, happy weare I. And thus with my hartly Commendacions to you, and to my Lady your Wief, I wishe you both a longe happie Lief. In Hast, this xvijth of *Aprill*, 1566.

*your assured to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

P. S. I must be in the Confines of *Oneills* Countrey, the laste of this Monethe, to parle withe him; or els he will do Hurte, before I shall be ready to offende.

*Sir Henry Sydney, to Mr. Secretary Cecill.*

S I R,

**A**Lbe it, I have lytle to saye vnto you at this Tyme, that hath not bene ymparted by me to Mr. Vicechamberlaine, whose Wisdom, Dilligence, and Habilytie, to conceyve the State of this Countrey, might excuse me to write any Thinge particulerlie of the same. Yet lyke as, before his Comminge, my Lettres of the vijth of *Marche*, directed to the Right Honorable the Earle of *Leicester*, and ymparted withe the Queenes Majestie, and the hole Counsaile, did premonishe you of the Perill ymynent to this Estate; soe have I thoughte it my Part, vpon soche other Occurrentes, as fall out vpon *Oneilles* Practizes,



Practizes, to let you vnderstand what he hathe done, since our late Dispatch of  
*William Peirs*. at

*Maguier*, the Capten of *Fermanaughe*, hathe beene of late invadid by *Oneill*, and totally expelled owte of his Countrey; who beinge not able to withstande the Force of his Enemye, fled into *Oreileighs* Countrey, his near Kinsman, for Succour, bringinge with him the Number of 5000 Kyne, besides other Studde and Goodes, whiche was immediately taken from him by *Oreylleighs* Sonnes, Servaunts to *Oneill*. He, vpon Respect never to violate his Fidellitie and Obedyence to her Majestie, is with some Difficultie escaped from thence, and hathe presented himself before me to ymplore her Majesties Justice and Comysfession towards him. His Brother, beinge nowe become *Oneilles* Servaunte, is possessed by him of the mors Part of that Countrey: All which *Maguyer* himself might have possessed with all Quietnes, if he woulde but have consented to have bent his Freindshippe to *Oneill*, and to that Point, to have alienated his Obedience from her Majestie. You see nowe, by this Expulsion of *Maguyer*, one Degree towards the Tyranizing over the rest; suspected by me in all my former Lettres. And to this there is come to my Knowledge, by the Report of a Servaunt of myne owne, one *Dowglas*, an *Englishe Scott* (whom I sent latelie into *Scotlande*, for my necessary Provisions of Jacks, Sculles, and soche like) that *Oneill* hathe had a Gentleman of his Countrey, remayninge a good While withe the Earle of *Argile*; which Earle, at my Mans beinge at *Edenboroughe*, brought him thither to the Courte, where he had good Entertainement, duringe his Abode.

The Erle, as my Man vnderstode, hath confessed himself to be moche beholdinge to *Shane*, in that he offered him Releif here, in the Tyme of his Banishment; for which Cause he saiethe he meanithe to visite him this Sommer. *Oneill* havinge nowe learned, that a Man of myne hathe discovered his Mans beinge withe th'Erle of *Arguile*, at the Courte, hathe excused to me, by an honest and grave Gentleman, Mr. Justice *Doudall*, that the Cause of his Servaunts Repaire to the Courte, was, for that th'Erle was desirous to shewe the monstrous Glybbe, which he ware vpon his Heade; and that otherwise he sent him, but vpon ordynary Message, in Respecte of the Allyance betwene them. All this confirmethe my Opyinion of some great Confederacye and Combynacion of the *Skotte* and *Shane*. And, therefore, to you I vtter it, requiringe you to way the Circomstances, and to declare this to the Queenes most excellent Majestie, who if she provide not for theis Mischeifes in Tyme, must look for none other Yssue herein, then happened to *Callayes*, in the Raigne of her Highnes Sister, Queene *Marie*. And havinge made a Choice of you, to reveale theis Thinges, bothe because you doe conceive the Daunger of the Practise, the vtter Maime and Dishonor, that shoulde ensue to her Majestie, if any other shoulde subdue or tyranise this Realme: I doubt not but you will earnestly ioyne with Mr. Vicechamberlaine, for a spedie and a necessary Resolucion in theis great Causes of Ymportauce, concerning the Chastefinge of *Oneill*, before he growe more stronge and perillous; and soe, withe my most hartly Thanks, for the Friendships which I daily fynde at your Hands, I bid you as my self Farewell. Ffrom *Killmayneham*, the ixth of June, 1566.

Your assured, lovinge Freinde,

H. Sydney.

Sir Henry Sydney's Letter to Mr. Secretary Cecill, sent by Sir William Fitz-William.

S I R,

I AM most hartely glad to here of your Recovery, which Almighty God perfectly confyrme, and longe contynue. I receaved the Queenes and yours, of the xiiijth of the last, the xvth of this present; Coppies of the Queenes  
weare



weare to common, for here weare dyvers, before the Arryvall of the Oryginnall; the Interpretacion and Amplification, by the Bringers whereof, was soche as I feare, will, and hathe done more Hurt to the comon Quiet of this Countrey, then the Procurer of the Lettre, or any one Man wilbe able to doe Good; for wheareas Coine and Lyvery was soe extinguished, as it was noe wheare harde of, in the Countyes of *Waterford* and *Kilkenny*, and soche a Confidence and Corage conceived of all Hands, that it shoulde neuer be put in Vse againe, but that the Queene, of her Justice and Pity of so many Thousanddes of her oppressed Subiectes, woulde see the auneyent Lawes of this her Realme, nowe revyued, to be obayed. It is nowe bruted by some of theis Coppy Carryers, that I am commaunded, by that Lettre, to suffer Coyne and Lyvery to contynue, to the vnspeakeable Greif of all the Honest and Grave; and to the great Reioysinge of the Light and Lewde; and most of all, to the Derogation of the Authoritye of Lawe; for that fyve severall Parliamentes have made the Takeinge of it Felony, and some one Treason, or ells my Memorye failethe me. For my Discreditt I force not, for I trust, before this Tyme, her Highnes is resolved to revoke me, accordinge to my humble and earnest Suite made, aswell by my Lettres sent by *Peirs*, as my Suite by Mr. Vicechamberlaine; and doubtles, Sir, moche better, and more for the Queenes Service it shalbe, to revoke me, then to kepe me in Discreditt, as nowe I am, beinge dyrected by a pryvate Mans Parswacion, grounded vpon a bare Reporte, in Matters of Waight, publike, and concernynge the vnyversall State of the Realme. And I assure you, Sir, there was of the Earle of *Ormounds* faithfull, discrete, and well trusted Followers, that of themselues lamented to me that Parte of the Lettre, sayinge that *Olypher Grace* only procured my Lord of *Ormound* to move the Queene soe to write; for my Parte I am content to be seilent in it, and in anye Thinge of mine owne Invencion, and will invent noe more; vppon Trust that I am already revoked. But, if the Countrey finde Offenders in it accordinge to Lawe, doubtles I will not hinder the Lawe, it is against my Oathe. All other Thinges materiall in the Lettre weare done before the Receipt of it, as the Forbiddinge of the Commyssioners in *Mounster* to deale in any Matters betwene the Earles, before the Earle of *Ormoundes* Retorne; and the Discharge of the Lord of *Dunboine* from any Captentry in the County of *Tipporary*, which, inclusive, is done by takeinge away Coyne and Lyvery; and soe dothe it from the Erle of *Ormounde* the Captentry of the County of *Kilkenny*, which I thinke wone Coyne and Lyvery soe great a Patronage. Of this Lettre I would make larger Answer, weare I not in Hope to vnderstand of my Revocation from this miserable and accursed Iland, by the next East Wynd. If I be constrayned, with Confirmation of any Continuance to tarry here any longer, I will write more largely of this and other Matters. In the meane Tyme, Sir, procure Regarde, with Execution, to be had to this Countrey, accordinge to former Devyses and Advertisments; and I pray you, Sir, acquaint your self withe that which I did nowe write to my Lord of *Leceister*, and perswade her Maiestie, and the Lordes of her Councell, to consider it, and to provide with Spede for this Countrey. If they doe not, if I have any Iudgement, we shall see as evill an Event of *Irelande*, as (with wofull Memory) we may remember of *Callaies*. I can doe no more but speake and wryte; on there Charge be it that may doe. Howe I have delt withe your Cosen *Bryan FitzWilliam*, I leave to his Report. Suerly I have delt in my Conscience truly with the Queene, and yet freindly withe him. I beseeche you, Sir, be good to this Bringar, my Brother *FitzWilliam*. In my Conscience he is a true Man in all his Service and Charges to the Queenes Maiestie; what fryuolous Obiections weare made againste him, by *Brymyngiam*, for a huge Debt, of late written of against him to Mr. Vicechamberlaine, you may vnderstande, by other of them, or by the Informer, *Brymyngiam*. Doubtles I durste be bound, vpon Forfeite of all my Lande, that he hathe not wittingly deceaved the Queene in nothings; and for his Checks, I doe not thinke that the Queene shall gaine moche aboute that which he hathe ever confessed. In Det



sure I thinke he is, and yet farre from that Somme which hath beene reported. He hath deserved well, which is not to be forgotten, if it weare but one Dayes Service : In which he saued the Honor of our Nation in this Lande, and the Lyves of as many *Englishe* Men as weare on Foote that Daie in the Feilde. I pray you, Sir, freinde him, for in Trothe he is honest. *Oneill* fortifyethe stronglie, the Castells wone of *Odonell* and *Maguier*. The Earle of *Arguile* wilbe withe him in *July* next ; he hath fled all his Cattell beneathe *Armaughe* farre. I send you herewith the Deposition of certaine Parsons, toucheing a Prodige of late seene in *Couley*, in this Realme ; doubtles there was soche a Thinge seene. I have no more, but beseeching Almighty God to bles you, and yours, with a longe happy Lief, I take my Leave of you. From *Kilmaynham*, in Haste, as may appeare by the Writinge of it, this xxiiiith of *June*, 1566.

*Your assured Freinde to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

PS. I pray you, Sir, commende me most hartely, and my Wief, to my Lady *Bacon*, and to my Lady, your Wief.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, sent by Sir Nicholas Arnold.*

*My dearest Lorde,*

SINCE this Gentleman, *Sir Nicholas Arnolde*, dothe now repaire into *Englande*, to render Accompt of his longe and painefull Service, least my Science might be an Argument of my Condemnacion of him, I thought good to accompany him with theis my Lettres, certyfyinge your Lordship, by the same, that I finde he hath beene a marvelous painefull Man, and very dilligent in Enquiry for the Queenes Advantage, and in proceadinge in the same more seuerely, then I woulde have wished him, or would have beene my self in semblable Service ; but he sayethe he followed his Instruccions. Doubtles the Things whiche he did deale in, are very darke and intricate, by Reason of the longe Tyme passed without Accompt. And he greatly impeached, for Lacke of an Auditor, as I take it. In Trothe, what will fall out of it, I cannot saye, but I feare he hath written too affirmatively vpon *Brymyngehams* Informacion : It is reported by some of his Adversaries, that he shold triumphe greatly vpon a Lettre, supposed to be sent him lately from your Lordship, as thoughe, by the same, he shold be encouraged to proceed more vehemently against the Erle of *Sussex*, and to make his Abode longer here, then ells he woulde. And that he shoulde vse this Bravery, either by sheweinge this Lettre, or by Speech to me and to others. My Lord, I beleue the Hole of this to be vntrue ; and, for so moche as concernethe my selfe, I assure your Lordship is a starke Lie ; for albeit he hath shewed me, as I beleue, all the Lettres your Lordship hath sent him, since myne Arryvall here, and a good many sent before, yet in none of them is there any soche Matter conteined ; neither yet did he to me, or, to my Knowledge, to eny other, of any Lettre sent by your Lordship, make any soche Bravery, or like Construccions, as is reported.

My dearest Lord and Brother, without any Respecte of me, or any brother-like Loue borne me by you ; but even for our naturall Countrees Cause (wherevnto, of late, not a litell to your farre spreadinge Fame, you shewe your self most willingly to put to your indefatigable and moche helpinge Hande) helpe to revoke me from this Regiment, for, beinge not credited, this Realme will ruin vnder my Rule, haply to my Shame ; but vndoubtedly to *Englandes* Harme. Yea and will vnder any Man, whom the Queene shall sende, thoughe he have the Force of *Hercules*, the Magnanimity of *Cæsar*, the Dillygence of *Alexander*, and the Eloquence of *Tully* : Her Highnes withdrawinge her gracious Countenance. Yea if it be but thought, that her Highnes hath not a resolute and vnremoveable Lykeinge of him ; as for noe Tale she will direct him to saile by



any other Compas then his owne. His Shippe of Regiment, who so ever he be, shall soner rushe on a Rocke, then rest in a Haven. I write not this, as though I thought Governours here could not erre, and soe erre, as they should be revoked. For I knowe and confesse, that any one may soe erre, yea, without any evill Intent to her Highnes Crowne or Countrie, as it shalbe convenient and necessary to revoke him; but let it be done then withe Spede. Yea if it be but conceived, that he be insufficyent to governe here, I meane of the Soveraigne, or Magistrates, retire him, and send a newe Man to the Helme. *Episcoparum eius accipiat alter*: Soe as my Counsaile is (and you shall fynde it the soundest) that the Governours Contynuaunce here, and his Countenaunce there, be concurrent and correlative. For, while her Highnes will emploie any Man here, all the Countenaunce, all the Creditt, all the Commendacion, yea and most absolute Truste that may be, is litell enoughe. Cause once Appearinge to withdrawe that Opynion, withdrawe him to, if it be possible, even in that Instaunt. Of this I woulde write more largely, and more partyculerly, and to the Queenes Maiestie, and to all my Lords, weare it not, that my many Lettres in this Forme already written, togeather withe sondry Arguments of my crased Credit there, did put me in Hope of a speedy Redemption from this my misereable Thraldome. A Resolution of which, my Hope, my dereft Lord, procure me with Speede: I have no more, but *Sub umbra alarum tuarum protegat me Deus*. In Haste I take my Leave of your Lordship, wishinge to the same present increasinge, and immortall Felycitie. From *Kilmaynham*, the xxviiiith of June, 1566.

Your Lordships bounden, faste,

and obedient Brother,

H. Sydney.

PS. I assure your Lordship, I doe knowe that Sir *Nicholas Arnold* hathe spent, above all his Enterteignement, 500 *l.* Sterlinge in this Realme. I meane he hathe spent so moche in this Realme.

Sir Henry Sydney, to Robert Earl of Leicester, sent by the Archbishop and Primate of Ardmaghe.

My dereft Lord,

I Have long forborne to send any Advertysementes into *England*, because, since the first Daie of this Monthe, I have beene howerly in Expectacion for Newes from thence, and especially for the Supplie of Men and Money necessary for the Extirpacion of the Tyraint and Traytor *Shane O'Neill*. And albeit this Bearer, my Lord Prymate, havinge seene, and, I suppose, noted the Actions of the Rebelle, can sufficiently report and testifie the Insolency of him: Yet have I thought good to advertise to your Lordship thus moche of his Doinges. About the xxvith of this laste Monethe, I was certainly informed, that he would fourthwith repaire to the Borders with his hole Force to invade the *Englishe* Pale; wheather he came indeede, and therein confirmed my Opynion in my former Lettres to the Queenes Maiestie, wherein I iudged, that, after the Begynninge of *August*, he woulde breake out into Warre. His Comynge knowen, yt was thought mete, that I, likewise, withe a convenient Force, should repaire to *Dundalke*, whiche Force gathered thoroughe the Willingnes of the People within twoe Daies, I repaired thether withe the Garrison, and the Countrey People, to the Number (as I suppose) 1500 Foote-men, and six hundreth Horsemen; and, in the meane Season, received Lettres of him of dyvers Effecte, some humbly vrgeinge a Parlyament, and others full of Insolency, refusinge to be any Subiecte to those that shoulde kepe or assiste his Servaunt *Maguyer* (as he tearmed him). Notwithstandinge, beinge advertised that he had taken an Othe to give vs Battell, if we issued out of *Dundalke*, I marched forthe to the Hill Foote wheare he incamped, and there

contynued



contynued till the Eveninge, without any Matter offered, savinge smale Skirmishes. The next Daie, likewise, we went agayne to the Mouthe of his Paartis, and thorough the greatest. All which Tyme he kept himself in his Fastnes, without offeringe any Fight, savinge withe a fewe Horsemen, and certayne Kearne, whereof Part weare slayne; on our Part none hurte, savinge one of the Earle of *Kildares* Gentlemen wounded, with a *Scottishe* Arrowe, and the Earle himself, with desperate Followinge of a Horseman into a Pace, shot throughe his Sloppe of his Hose with a Callyver, but not hurt. At our Retorne to *Dundalke*, yt was thought meete that necessary Force shoulde be lefte to defende the Townes, and that the rest shoulde repaire, some being therevnto constrained thorough the Want of Victualls. Within twoe Daies after my Departure thence, *Oneill* made a Rode into the Pale, and for Lacke of due Observation of my former Commaundements (wherein the People were willed to stripe their Houses) he burned certayne Villages in the Border, whereof the cheif was the *Haggard*. The next Day he repaired to *Dundalke*, and beseiged that Towne, wheare I had lefte the Soldiers vnder the Leadinge of Captayne *Bryan Fitz Williams*. The Towne was, of it self, so ruynous, as it was skarse gardable; and, besides, of soe great Circuite, that it offered no small Disadvantage to the Defendaunts. The *Irish* entred the Towne, but had soch a Welcome, as the Traytor losse there of his Gentlemen so many, as, I was credlie enformed, there weare seventene of there Countrey Horselytters filled with deade Courses, and sent to be buried at *Ardmaghe*; besides those that he buried neire the Towne, which, as some of them have confessed, weare about the Number of a hundreth. Those, that weare slayne within the Walles, doe nowe garnishe the Gates withe there Heades. But soche was the Repulse, as he coulde not procuer any more of his Men to followe the Enterprise. And fuer, my Lord, it was manfully and honorably defended. From thence he departed towardes *Carlingforde*, where he made a Shewe, as thoughe he would have attempted that Towne. Nevertheles, he did nothings, but departed withe Speede to the fardest Parte of *Ulster*, to treat with the *Scottes* to have Assistaunce of them. I am certaynly informed, that he offered to them of *Kintier* all *Clandeboy*, all the geld Kyne of his Cuntrey; to delyver *Soreleboye*, and to give them Pledge and Assuraunce for his Fidelytie towards them. But I, feareinge this before hand, have so temporysed withe the Capteine of *Kintier* *Sorley* his Brother, that they have vtterly refused his Requestes, as I am certainly advertysed, and, without Hope of Ayde and Releif from thence, he is nowe returned againe to the Borders.

To avoyde alsoe that Practise that he might make in *Connaught*, I lately sent for the Earle of *Clanrycarde*, and Mr. *William Ewter*, vpon whose Factions all the intestine Warres in *Connaght* hathe growen; they bothe repayed vnto me this laste Weeke to *Dublyn*, vttered their Greife the one against the other, had the same ordered and determyned, and the Freindshipe compounded by solemne Oathe and Profession; on which they bothe departed satisfied, promisinge Ayde, and themselves in Persons, withe all the Lords of that Province, to serve her Maiestie this Iorney, and to come vpon *Oneill* thorough *Tyreconell*. And, lyke as I am made beleive, that Mr. *William* hathe never heretofore repaired to any Governour, soe have I noted in him that Conformytie and Shewe of Constancy, that I have not founde in any other of his Sorte. For, albeit th'Erle of *Thomonde*, very rashely and vndutyfully (as I here) hathe invaded his Countrie in his Absence, and wounded twoe of his Brethren: Yet, afer his Departure from me, heareinge of this, he sent me Worde, that, thoughe it weare an Iniury able to discourage him, yet woulde he not breake any Parte of his Promise made to me on the Behalf of the Q. Maiestie. My Lord, I thinke my self not a lytell bounde to God for this newe compounded Amyttee, by which Meanes I stand assured of good Obedyence throughe the most Part of that Province of *Connaught*. But lyke as herein I fynde myself well satisfied, and hope also, that I have soe temporysed with the *Scottes*, as they will not be hastily allured to ioyne with the Rebelle: Soe when I have Regard to the



the Doinge in *Mounster*, I finde there great Cause to doubt Disquiett; for as, in my last Letter by *Finche*, I partly touched the Desparacion of *Desmonde*. So nowe have I not only founde great Arguments of his Wilfulnes by soche Things as I have lerned from Sir *Warham Scintleger*, but alsoe feare some ill Effectes of his late Doings in those Parts: For this I learne for certaine, that he is retyred into the County of *Kerry*, and hathe spoyled the Lord *Fitzmoryce*, and one other of his Name, beinge his owne Kynsman, and there remaynethe with a Band of twoe thousande Men. He giveth fourthe alsoe to his Freindes, which cometh to my Eares, that Promise is broken withe him in *England*, and the Articles infringed taken betwene him, and the Earle of *Ormounde*. And even this Daie I received Letters from the Portryfs and Sovereigne of *Clo-minell*, that th'Erle threatnethe to distrene of them for Rente, which th'Erle of *Ormondes* Offyicer hath already taken. Sir *Moryce Fitzgarold* alsoe doubtethe his Invasions, into which Riotts and Rowts yf he hedlonge fall, and soe into the Forfeiture of the Bandes acknowledged, your Lordship may iudge howe farre from Reformation those Partes wilbe. For Preventinge whereof, I have omytted noe Pointe of Lenytie or Perfwacion, nether to charge him vpon his Duty and Allegiaunce, neither to remember what he is lyke to be, nor what he ought to be, espeacially in this perilous Tyme. I have partly thus touched to your Lordship the presente Condicion of *Ulster*, *Connaught*, and *Mounster*.

The fourthe Parte I fynde soe lovinge, conformable, and dutyfull, as in all *Leinster*, I see not a Thing somoche to be hated amongs honest Men, as the Ingratitude of him whom your Lordship somoche commended, I meane, Sir *Edmounde Butler*, who bothe vnnaturally and dishonorably hathe procured Letters to me from the Queenes most excellent Maiestie, heavie and bitter to so innocent a Mynde as (I thanke God) I beare; wherein it apperethe, that for a Matter of xvj d, he stode indicted, and shoulde be arrayned, and therefore was I commaunded not to suffer his Lief or Lybertie to be touched. And althoughe I have partly heretofore, upon the Speache that soche a Lettre shoulde come, offered my Excuse to the Lordes of the Counsaile: Yet am I not satisfied, till I make your Lordship iudge of my Dealings towards him, which I protest, before God, weare these: After that th'Erle of *Kildare*, the Viscounts of *Baltinglas* and *Mountgarrett*, the Barons of *Delvin* and *Upperofferye*, Sir *Edmond Butler*, and Sir *Barnaby Fitz-Patricke*, and others, were indicted, Sir *Edmonde* was the firste that brought it to my Knowlege, who added further, that he shoulde by and by take his Triall, if the Iudge weare not commaunded to stay his Proceadinge. Wherevpon I wrote ymmediatly to the Cheif Iustice, not to proceade; wherevnto he obeyed. The next Day, metinge withe Sir *Edmonde*, I tolde him the Daunger, offeringe to him the Q. Maiesties Pardon, which he accepted, and had it not to himself onely, but, I suppose, to the Number of a hundrethe Rascalls of his Servaunts and Followers. After this, I gave him bothe Countenance and Creditt, moved thereto bothe by our olde Acquaintance, Education, and Service of the most vertuous Prince, the Kinge then our Master; and alsoe thorough the Commendacion of your Lordships earnest Lettres, which I shewed vnto him, to declare your Lordships Favour and Devotion, and thereby the Encrease of my Goodwill and Obligacion of Freindshippe. After all which Actions, and when I had of speacials Affection paid vnto him the full of his Entertainment, which no one of this Garrison can saye in Effect: I receved this Fruite of my well sown Seede, which provethe the Insufficiency of my Iudgment, to overweene of him that hathe soe well requyted me. Your Lordship may now iudge of my Dealings, and wheather my Seueritye have mynistred Cause of Offence, or my Lenytie or Remyssnes have not beene the greater Faultes. I saye this, but to declare my self as I am, and not as I am reported, and yet able (I thanke God) to forgive the worst Desert of myne Enymie. I humblye take my Leave. At *Drogheda*, the sixth of *August*, 1566.

Your most bounden Brother,

H. Sydney.



To Queen Elizabeth <sup>h</sup>.

**A**lbeit in my Letters of the last of *Februarie*, addressed unto your moste excellent Maiestie from the Cittie of *Waterforde*, I partely advertised your Highness of my begon Journey into *Mounster*; yet, since my Return from the same, I thought good to signifie to your Highness more amply of that Parte (at that Time briefely touched) and of my Proceedinge and Finishinge of the same Journey. It may therefore please your Highness to understande, that I departed from this your Maiesties Howse, at *Kylmayneham*, the 27th of *Januarie*, and traueiled into *Leix* (now called the *Queenes Countie*) where I caused (afore certeyn Commissioners, whome I had to attende upon me) a Session to be held. Where there was suche Obedience shewed and used, aswell of the Soldiers and *Englisb* there lately planted, as of the *Irisherie* there inhabitinge; as, considering the Infancy of anny good Order in that Countrie, was meerveyled at by as many as sawe it; and so was also the great Encrease of Tillage, that thorough Quiet was there seene. There were executed sundry Malefactors; and so quieting particuleer Contentions between Partie and Partie, I left that Countrie, in good and better Order then I founde it, and departed to *Killkennye*. There also I caused a Session to be held, but suche Reformation, Obedience, with Quiet and Encrease of Welth, appered there, and yet dothe contynew; as were harde, upon Report, to seeme credible to your Maiestie; for that the miserable Estate of the same before, was utterlie unknowen unto your Highness. For unto me that saw both, the Amendment thereof seemed to excede Reason. In this Place there were some Malefactors executed, and *Peers*, the youngest Brother of the Erle of *Ormounde* (for the violent Breaking of a Goale, and Enlarging of certayne Prisoners, committed for Felony) beinge indicted for the same, was at the Barre arraigned, who confessed the Indictment, and humbly submitted himself to your Maiesties Mercy; on whome I caused no Judgement to be geven, in Consideration of his yonge Yeares, and his reverent and penitent Behavvour. And so leaving that Countrie in such Quiet, Welth, and Joye, as they have not ben in better thies xxtie Yeares: I departed to the Baron of *Upper Ossories*, whose Countrie I found in indifferent good Order, savinge somewhat molested by certeyn Outelawes of the same Countrie Breede, mayneteyned in the Erle of *Ormounds* Countrie, as manifestly appered; of whome, by the good and diligent Service of *Edward Butler*, Brother to the Erle of *Ormounde*, there were two of the most Notable afterwards apprehended, who I ymediately caused to be executed. This bred suche a Terror amonges the rest of the Malefactors in that Countrie, as immediatly they made Sewte to the Baron, to be reconciled to him, and that he woulde becom a Sewter to me, that they mighte be received to your Maiesties Protection. Wherin following his Opinion, who moste was annoyed by them, I condescended thereunto; and since have not herd one Complaynte from thense, but here, that there contynueth verie good Quiet there. I founde also there, that the yonger Sonnes of the Baron of *Upper Osserie*, were verie evill Doers upon the Countie of *Kilkenny*, and the Landes of the Erle of *Ormounde*. Whereupon I apprehended two of them, namelie, *Florence* and *Geofrey*, whome I still detaine in Prison, meaning to proceade with them with suche Severitie, as shall seeme convenient. Since the Apprehension of whome, there hath growen no small Quiet in those Quarters. But surelie it will never be throughelie well, till the same be made *Sbier Grounde*, and your Highness Writte currante there, as in your other Countyes. From thence I departed to *Ely*, called *Ocarrolls* Countrie. Which Countrie I founde very well inhabited, and himself, for civill and bountifull Entertayninge me, for Obedience and Conformity, such a one, as I never founde the like of anny of the *Irisherie*. He is most desirous to take his Lands of your Maiestie, and to hold the same, in Chief, of your Highness, and in Leive of *Bonnonghr*, for fower-

<sup>h</sup> From the Original MS. Ireland, 1557, 1559, Lib. 5. page 1. in his Majesty's Office of Papers, and Records for Business of State.



score Galloglas, for six Weekes, to be paide but once in seaven Yeares (as he  
fathe) but oftener demanded, and had of late Yeares; he offered to yelde unto  
your Highenes, Yerelie, one hundred Markes. To one hundred Pounds I  
have allreadye brought him; and think I shall be able (if your Highenes Plea-  
sure be, that I shall proceede with him) to perswade him to the Payment of  
two hundred Markes. In my Opinion, this is a good Bargayne for your Ma-  
iestie; nevertheles, leaving the same to your Highenes good Consideracion, I  
onely desire your Resolucion herin, and that with Speede. He desireth alsoe  
that he might have some Title of Nobilitie, as to be called a Baron, wherein I  
can see no Hurte to com to your Highenes Service, but rather Good. His eldest  
Brother was so, and had his Estate, bothe of his Lande and Dignitie, geven to  
him, and to his Heires Males. whose Sonne died without Issue, and so the  
Title extinguished; and the Capteynerye of the Countrie, according to the *Yrishe*  
Custome, devoluted to this Man. I counseile this Manner of Dealinge with  
him the rather, for that his eldest Sonne is a yonge Man of vearie greate Hope,  
of muche Honestie, and manny good Partes, nerelie addicted to the *English*  
Order. I can say this of him the more certaynelie, for that he hath ben my  
Boy and Man thies tenne Yeares. From thence I departed, and traveiled over  
*Ikerwyn*, called *Omagher* his Countrie, which, in Effecte, I founde all waste, and  
uninhabited (as the Lorde of the Countrie saide) partely by the Outelawes of  
*Upper Ossorye*, before named, and partelie by the Excesses comitted by the Erle  
of *Ormoundes* yonger Brethern; but, since my Departing thence, I have not herde  
any one Complaynt, either out of *Ely*, or out of that Countrie; and came into  
the Countie of *Tipperarrye*; in which Countie, lodginge in five foundrie Placies,  
I spente fouretene or fiftene Dayes, endeavoringe my self, to the uttermoste of  
my Power, for the Reformation of the infinite Disorders which there I founde  
generallie, and in Manner wholie growinge amonges themselves, in especial, on  
the Contencion of the Erle of *Ormound* and the Baron of *Donboyne*, for a Cap-  
taynery of a thirde Parte of the same Countye; and the Injuries and Revengs  
committed, for the Enioyinge and Possessing of the same. Wherin, albeit the  
Baron of *Donboyne* may alleage som auneynt Prescription, and also shewe som  
Allowaunce of fundrie Governors therunto. Yet, in my Opinion, he hath not  
Title justifiable to allowe the same, and accordinglye I have geven Sentence in  
it. One other speciall Cause of no small Myschief in that Countrie, was the un-  
naturall Contencion between the two Brethern, the Baron of *Donboyn* and *Piers*,  
and the great Mallice betweene their two Wives. Who, mayneteyninge their  
Sonns and Followers, to comitte Iniuries and Revengies dayly the one upon the  
other, for the moste Parte spoiled the whole Countrie rounde aboute them. One  
other Cause of the Spoile of that Countrye, was the excessive Traynes of Horse-  
men and Footemen, led and kepte there by the yonger Brethern of the Erle of  
*Ormounde*, who rather consumed, then defended the Goodes of the poore Coun-  
trie. I also founde that their Neighbours had been somewhat noisom to them,  
namely *Mac Bryan Ogonaughe*, and the *White Knight*. Whome if I could have  
com by, by Order, I woulde have orderlie ponnyshed, and caused them to have made  
Sattisfaction; whome for that I coulde not in such Sorte have, by Meane of their  
Disobedience, and the Maynetenaunce of the Erle of *Desmond*, I so plaged them by  
Force, Fier, and Sworde, as since that Tyme I have not herde, but that they  
doe lesse anoye their Neighbors, and, at the leste, I am sure they be lesse able  
then they were. I founde also, that the Erle of *Desmonde*, in Person, had done  
some Hurte in that Countie, namelie, by Taking of a great Pray from the  
Mannor of *Killshelau*; yet far from that in Quantity, which as I here your Ma-  
iestie has ben enformed of. And also, that the same Erle procured a great  
Spoile to be taken from *Oliver Grace* his Landes in *Ormounde*; for which his  
Doinges, howe he hath sped, your Majestie hereafter, by thies my Lettres, may  
vnderstand. But doubtles, Madam, the greatest Cause of all other Mischief in  
that Countie, is the *Insufficiency to govern* of them that have the Rule under the  
Erle of *Ormounde*; in whom there appered, manifestlie, to wante both Justice,  
Judgement,



Judgement, and Stoutenes to execute. Of the two First, there was some of them manifestlie detected before me; and of the Third (Lack of Stoutenes I mean) to execute that which they ought. I also did see manifest Argumente, for that they being willed by me to bringe certayne of the *Okenides* (a great Sirname in that Countrie, who are, and ought to be naturall Followers and Sewters to the Erle of *Ormoundes* Courte) to answere to suche Matter, as was to be objected against them; and likewise certayn of the *Bourckes*, dwellinge within the same Countries: The Erles Officers affirmed resolutelie, they were not able to doe it. Whereupon I, using the Service of thirtie or fortie of my Horsemen, did fetche them all in, and made them pay well for their Contumacie, and detayned them untill suche Tyme as they had entered into Bonde, and delivered of their best Pledgs for Performaunce of the same, that they would be henceforward true Subjects to your Majestie, and humble and obedient Sewtors to that Courte. Which was suche an Acte for the Credite therof, as, by the Testimony of all the Erles Officers, had not ben done by his Grandfathers, his Fathers, or his owne Dayes. But it maye like your Majestie, if you will have that Countrie free from the Annoyaunce of their Neighbours, your Majestie must plante (as I have often wrytten) Justice to be residente in those Quarters. For while Sir *Warham Senteleger* there still remayned (whose Revocation, by all the Honest that I coulde speak withall, in the whole Province of *Mounster*, was not a little lamented) there was no soche Outrage committed, nor, I dare say, had ben neither in *Kylshelau*, nor upon *Oliver Grace*, if he had there remayned. Or if your Highenes will loke to have that Countrie kepte in good Order, either must your Majestie resume *those Liberties*, which the Queene your Sister granted to the Erle of *Ormounde*, or ells must the Erle appointe more upright, diligent, and sufficient Officers, then those I founde. He hath there a Royall Signory, as anny Subject that I knowe in *Christendome* hath; but so misgovernened, as it is too greates a Pittie to beholde it. Whereof I would write nothing to your Majestie, were it not, that the good and evill Estate of the rest of your Majesties Countrey, not under his Jurisdiction, but unto the same adjoyninge, is unseperatly lincked with it (as it being out of Order) the rest cannot be kepte in Order or Quiet. Thies Innormities in that Countie, I conceyve not onlie of myne owne Experience, throughe som Dilgience I used travelinge there; but by the Affirmacion and Testimonie of all, or the most Parte of the honest Men, dwellinge in the three incorporate Townes of the same Countie, namelie, *Clonmell*, *Cashell*, and *Fedart*, who agreeing with that, which I my self by Veiw conceyved, witnessed unto me the unmeasurable Tracte of Lande nowe waste and uninhabited, which, of late Yeares, was well tilled and pastured. The Depopulacion of so many of your Highenesses Subjects, partelie by Slaughter, partelie by Bannysshement, and a great Number thorough Famyn; as it was too lamentable to here or behold, with the Subversion of so many Villages, Ruyn of Churches, and Vacancy of anny Kinds of Ministeries in the same, as anny Christian woulde lament to here it or see it; and yet Suffrance of most detestable Idolatrie, used to an Idoll, called the *Hollie Crosse*, wherunto there is no small Confluence of People daielie resorting. The Prophanacion also of the Cathedral Churches, partelie growing for Want of Busshopps, is a Thinge not a litle to be bemoned. The honest Men also of thies three proper and well walled Townes signified unto me (agreing in that, which in Effecte I sawe) that they were as People beseaged, and readie in Effecte, without Redresse, either to famyshe within the Walles, or whollie to abandon the Placies, for all Trade and Commerce was berefte them; for neither durste the People of the Countrie bring anny Thinge in unto them, neither yet durst they yssue out of their Walles, to buye anny Thinge in the Countrie, but that, both of the one and the other, there were often tymes spoiled, and many Times killed.

Madam, this is a Matter of no small Moment and Consequence; for thies Townes (not onelie thies now in Speche) but all other, wheresoever they be in this Realm, are your Highenes Fortes and Garrisons, and yet they cost you nothing the kepeing of them, but rather render unto you Service and Rente.



They are in Effecte the onelie Monumentes of Obedience, and Nurceries of Civilitie in this Countrie, to the Overthrowe of which, all the tiranous Potentates, and licentious Subjects of this your Realm, applie their uttermost Endeavor, as the onelie Obstacles againste their outeragious Devifies. I soughte to have com by the actuall Malefactors, supported and mayneteyned by the forenamed Gentlemen; but I coulde in Effecte com by none, so obstinate and disobediente I founde the Heddes of them. Whereupon I assessed heavy Fynes uppon the Baron of *Donboyn*, and *Piers Butler*, his Brother, for the Contempte. And comitted them both to Warde, and their Wives, with a Bastarde Sonne of the Lord of *Donboynes*. All which I presentlie doe detayne in the Castell of *Dublyn*, and will doe, untill they shall procure the Bringinge of suche their lewde Followers, Destroyers of that Countrie; unlesse your Majestie commande me to the Contrarie; which if you doe at anny Mannes Sewte, *Actum est de hac Republica*. I wanted not Cause to have done the like with Sir *Edmond Butler*, and *Patrick Shurlock*, and fuerlie would have don it, if I coulde have founde, in the whole Countie, anny able Man of Countenance to have taken the Charge of the Governauce therof, albeit there was a greate Number of suche that were demanded of them. While I was in that Countie, namelie of *Fedarte*, sitting in publick Place, *Patrick Shurlock* openlie appeached the Baron of *Donboyn* of Highe Treason to your Majesties Person, the Baron beinge presente. Whiche *Shurlock* beinge questioned withall, touching the Particularitie of the Treason, for that I knewe the Baron of *Donboyn* never sawe your moste Royall Person, nor came nere the same: Being more sharpelie stirred with that Tearn (of Treason againste your Person, then if the Woordes had ben more generall) questioned with him of the same. Who made this Construction of his Speeche, *That, if Mayntenance of proclaymed Rebels, Murderers, and Burners of Corn, and Howses, were Treason to your Person, then he had to accuse him of Treason*. The Baron denied the same, and defyed his Accuser; humblie cravinge at my Handes Trial, either by the Lawes of the Realm, or by the Lawe of Armes. I offered the Accuser the Advocacye of your Highenes Atturney, and other your Majesties Councell lerned in the Lawes: Which at that Tyme he thought not good to employe, alleadginge that the Place was not fitte. Which I supposed he had done, for that that Towne was oute of the Erles Libertie, being well contented to deferre the same for your Majesties more Advantage, till my Comyng to *Clonmell*, a Place within his Libertie, and there estesones remembred *Shurlock* of it; but since that Tyme I have herd no more of that Matter. Ever sithens the Baron hath remayned in Warde, affirmynge, that, if that Appeall and Apprehencion had not ben, no Malefactors dependinge upon him, but shoulde have ben brought to their due Triall, who, heringe of his Apprehencion, ymediatelie fledde. Being at *Fedart* also, upon an Indictement, was arraigned *Edward Butler*, Brother to the Erle of *Ormounde*, who, albeit he was by Jurie quitte of the Indictement, yet was the same no small Comforte to the honest Afflicted, and no small Terror to the Wicked and Disordered. Seing then I coulde not have broughte unto me anny of the Malefactors by Proclamacion, I charged as manny, as had anny idle Person dependinge upon them, by a Day certayne to bringe them in, and either comitte them to Goale, or enter into Bond for their good Behavyor. I also granted unto fundrie, Power to execute the Martiall Lawe, and lefte Authoritie with Sir *Edmund Butler*, and *Patrick Shurlock*, to levie and entertayne Men, to prosequute the Outelawes, and suche as no Man woulde answer for. I have herde, that, since that Tyme, som have ben executed; and litle Speeche of the reste, but, in Effecte, vniversallie quiet, since my beinge there.

From that Countie I passed to the Cittie of *Waterforde*; where I was in suche honorable Manner receaved and enterteyned, as mighte better have ben thoughte worthy gracious Acceptacion, if it had ben done to your moste Princelie Majestie, then to be loked for of so meane a Subjecte as I am. To this Cittie I sent for the Lordes, Gentlemen, and Freeholders of that Countie, who, for the moste Parte of that Callinge, came unto me; for there be not manny in the



same Shier. And it well appeared, that they had not forgotten the good Obedience, which they had ben taught to observe by Sir *Warham Seintleger*, and the other Commissioners during the Tyme of their Abode there. And yet somewhat reverted from that good Estate they were leste in at their Revocation. And are readie, accordinge to the Parable of the Scripture, to playe the Parte of the *Washed Swyne*, in returninge to her foule Puddle. Vnlesse Contynuaunce of Justice emonges them detayne them from it. By thies Gentlemen and Freeholders, or, at least, by the graveste and substauncialest of them, I understode that Countie to be muche molested by certeyn disordered Persons, by Surname *Powers*: All which were wounte to depende upon the Lord *Power*, as their Hed and Capteyne. Which disordered Men, for that they mighte no longer be maynteyned by the comen Rankes of this comen Welthe, called *Coyne* and *Liverie*, comitted some Outragies and Disobediencies, as it mighte seeme of Purpose, to Thende their Lorde and Capteyne might be restored to their wonted Exactions, and they to their accustomed Idlenes and Ravyn. But that Devise prevailed not; for callinge the Lord *Power* unto me, and charginge him with heavy Tearmes to bring in thoise Malefactors, for som of which he before was bounde, and gevinge him Daye to doe the same; at whiche Day, for that he brought not in suche as were to my Contentacion, and suche as I well knewe he was able: Albeit he brought me two taken by him (whome, in the Way of good Speede, I comitted to the Gallowes) I bounde the same Lord *Power*, by a certeyne Day, to yelde himself Prisoner in the Castell of *Dublin*, which he observed, and where he yet remayneth. This Cittie of *Waterforde* muche florisheth; and, I suppose, was never in better Estate since it was buylded, the People therof beinge verie civill, and, for this Countrie, full of Industrie; the Countie, albeit muche amended within thies 12 Monethes, yet, in Effecte, much waste and desolate. The Apprehencion of the Lord *Power*, hathe greatlie animated the Honest, and abaished the Wicked. And I geving Auctoritie, to the Sheriff of that Countie, being an *Englishe* Man borne, and a righte honeste and welthie Citezen of that Cittie, to prosequute thoise forenamed Outelawes; doe understande from hym that he hath apprehended som of them, and the rest he hath forced to submitte themselves, craving Pardon for Thinges paste, and offering Seurtie for their good Behavyor hereafter. Wherbie it may appeare unto your Majestie, that *Coyne* and *Liverie* was no necessarie Defence for the Countrie, but a nedeles Myschief to the same; a Mayntenaunce of the Tyranye of the Greate, and the Idlenes of the Inferior.

From *Waterforde* I went to *Dungarvan*, and finde that Place, in my Opinion, worthy Repayre and Entertaynement, for sundrie Respectes. Then did I enter into the Possessions of Sir *Maurice Fitz Gerald*, betweene whome and the Erle of *Desmond*, and their Auncestors, as your Majestie hath herde, hath ben longe Contencion. But, doubtlesse, I find that Gentleman leste evill of the rest, that be of any Power, and suche a one, as if he were not urged to use Revenge in his owne Causes, for Wante of Justice residente nere hym, he would live in a verie good and well ordered Manner. For the Grieffes betweene the Erle and him, touchinge Spoiles and other Hurtes, for that it rested upon Proofes, by Consent of bothe Parties, there were Commissioners appointed to examine the same; and for the Erles Titell and Clayme, for Service, or his Lande, the Erle, as it seemed, not thinkinge me indifferente to here the Matter, and alleadginge Wante of his learned Counseill, he also beinge Pleyntiff, comenced no Action againste him. And soe they bothe being bounde for Observacion of the Peace, I leste both their Causes, and that Countie, and arrived at *Youghall*, the firste Towne of the Countie of *Corke*. A verie propper Towne, and an indifferent good Haven, and the Towne in no evill Case, and yet of late muche decayed, by reason of soundry Spoiles made upon them by Pirates upon the Sea; and no lesse annoyed by severall Lande Lordes of the Countrie, all under the Rule of the Erle of *Desmond*.

At this Towne, the Erle havinge ben with me at *Waterfourde* before, met me; where we entered into the Debatinge of the Causes between him and the Erle



of *Ormounde*, of the Particuler wherof I meane not to troble your Majestie with anny Discours; but shall deferre the same to the Reporte of anny, that shall liste to speake or write therof; trustinge, that, if I shalbe therin accused, as heretofore, unjustelie, in the Erle of *Ormoundes* Causes, I have ben, I shall finde at your Majesties Hands, gracious Suspence, untill I may be herde. Onelie it may please your Highnes to understande touchinge their Affaires, that when I did dissende, accordinge to the Orders taken in *Englande*, to examine who was in the Possession of *Kilshelau*, and other Mannours in Controversie, at the Tyme of the Skirmysh betweene the two Erles; and founde, after longe Debatinge, bothe in myne owne Judgement, and in the Opinion of all the reste, that the Possession was in the Erle of *Ormounde*, at the Tyme of the Fray making; I accordingelie pronounced, awarded, and ordered the same. Wherat the Erle of *Desmond* did not a little sturr, and fell into som disallowable Heates and Passions, which were not suffred to goe with him; but was well taughte to understaunde bothe his Deutie to your Majestie, and his Obedience to your Lawes; and Reverence, that he oughte to suche as fate by your Auctoritie. Albeit I could not blame him to be somewhat quicke at the Matter; for that that Judgment, touchinge the Possession, induced him to be within the Reache of *twentie Thousande Pounds* unto your Highenes. I alsoe founde oute, duringe the Tyme of my beinge there, and had it confessed; that he procured the Spoilinge of *Oliver Grace*; wherbye also, as I take it, he hath incurred the Forfeiture of the same Bonde. From this Tyme forward, nor never since, founde I anny Willingnes in the Erle of *Desmonde*, to com to anny Conformitie or good Order, but alwayes waywarde, and unwillinge to doe anny Thinge at my Appointmente, that mighte further the Weale of the Countrie, or your Majesties Service: Your Name no more revered, nor Letters of Commaundement obeyed, with in anny Place within his Rule, then it would be in the Kingdome of *Fraunce*. He semed still desirous to be gone; to prevente which, albeit unwittinge unto hym, I appointed a secret Guard to attende upon him. He hindered as manny as he coude from comynge to me, which prevailed in none (his own Followers excepte, wherof no one came of anny Accompte) savinge onelie in the Erle of *Glancarre* and Sir *Owen Osullivan*, otherwise called *Osullivan beare*: Unto whome, as I was crediblie enformed, he writte, that they shoulde not com at me. I thoughte good, notwithstanding all this, to temporise with him, expectinge that which after hapened; that I should finde some more apparante and weightie Cause then yet he had manifested. The Lordes and principall Gentlemen of all the Countie of *Cork* (thoise two forenamed onlie excepted) came unto me, namelie, the Vicounte *Barrye*, the Lord *Roche*, the Lord *Courcy*, Sir *Donaghe Mac Carty*, Capteyn of *Carbery*, otherwise called *Mac Carty Reaghe*, Sir *Dermot Mac Carty*, Capteyn of *Muskry*, *Barry Oge*, *Richard Cordon*, and *Barret*. All which are the greatest, and, in deede, verie greate Possessioners in that Countie; and are, or ought to be, free Subiectes, owinge immediate Service to your Majestie and your Crowne Imperiall. Nevertheles, so injured and exacted upon by him, as, in Effecte, they are or were becom his *Thralls* or *Slaves*. All which, with open Mouthe, and helde upp Handes to Heaven, cried out for Justice, and that it might please your Majestie to cause your Name to be knowen emonges them, with Reverence, and your Lawes obeyed; offeringe to submitte them selves, Lief, Landes, and Goodes, to the same. Besides all thies Lordes and Gentlemens Possessions; the Erle of *Desmonde* enjoyeth under his Rule, or rather Tiranny, the thirde Parte of this great Countie, which, I assure your Majestie, I knowe to be greater then all *Yorkshire*. In all whiche his Limittes, neither is your Name revered, or your Lawes obeyed. Neither dare anny Sheriff execute anny Parte of his Office therein. And yet injuriousslie helde by him, by the Reporte of the Inhabitauntes, having not anny Thinge to shewe for the same, but by Prescription, as he termeth it. In this Countie is one Cittie, and two Townes, namelie, the Cittie of *Cork*, and the Townes of *Youghall*, and *Kynsale*; all  
which



which be walled, and Placies of great Momente for your Majesties Service; as before of the Townes in the Countie of *Tipperarry* I writte; and all thies greatlie empayred, and in the highe Way of utter Ruyn, if your Majestie, by speedie Redresse, and Ministring of Justice, doe not prevent it. This Myschief groweth not onelie by the Abuse of the Lande Lordes, though greatlie by the same (who are easie to be reformed, the Erle of *Desmond* once well corrected) but partelie, yea, and verie muche, by the Trade of *Spanyardes* to that Coaste. Where they find suche Commoditie of Havens (as, in deede, I thinke in all *Europe*, in so short a Tracte of Grounde, there is not so manny good to be founde) and are nowe growen into suche an Acquayntaunce with the People, as not onlie they doe yerelie take from thence an incredible Quantity of Fishe, which mighte be turned to the Use and Benefitte of your Subjectes; but also eche Thing ells of anny Price, which your Countrie here breadeth; as, Hide, Tallow, Fell, Wooll, and Floxe, Fleshe, and Yarne. All which were wonte to be sold at the forenamed Townes; and thereby they were maynteyned and enriched; and nowe, for Want of the same, not a litle empayred, and the People thereof enforced, for the Mayntenance of that littell Trade which is lefte with them, to use the same for readie Monney. Wherebie all the Treasure your Highenes sendeth, is yssued out of this Realm; and so will it be, thoughe your Majestie sent as muche as *Englande* bredeth. This Myschief is no Waye to be helped, but by ministring of Justice, and planting som civill People upon thiose barbarous Placies. And, moste gracious Sovereaigne, this Matter is worthie deliberate Consideracion and speedy Redresse, or ells I confesse my self to have no Judgement; for, if I were Kinge *Phillippes* Man, and that he mighte attende it, and did intende it, I am perswaded that it were possible with three Thowfaund Men, and twentie Thowfaund Pounds of Monney, either to dispossesse your Majestie of all *Mounster*, and *Connaght*, or to enforce your Higheness to employe the Service of twentie Thowfaund Men, and the Charges of two hundred Thowfaund Poundes to recover it and defend it. It shall therefore, in my symple Opinion, behove your Majestie to take Care for the Conservacion of thiese your Townes; for the Losse of them would be the Losse of this your Countrie.

As touchinge the Estate of the whole Countie, for so muche as I sawe of it; havinge travailed from *Youghall* to *Cork*, from *Cork* to *Kinsale*, and from thence to the uttermost Boundes of it towards *Limerick*; like as I never was in a more pleasaunt Countrey in all my Life: So never sawe I a more waste and desolate Lande, no, not in the Confynes of other Countries, where actual Warre hath contynuallie ben kepte, by the greatest Princies of *Cbristendome*; and there herde I suche lamentable Cryes and dolefull Complayntes, made by that small Remayne of poor People which yet are lefte. Who hardelie escaping the Furie of the Sworde, and Fire of their outeragious Neighbours, or the Famyn with the same, which their extorcious Lordes hath driven them unto, either by taking their Goodes from them, or by spending the same by their extorte Taking of *Coyne* and *Liverie*; make Demonstracion of the miserable Estate of that Countrie. Besides this, suche horrible and lamentable Spectacles there are to beholde, as the Burninge of Villages, the Ruyn of Churches, the Wastinge of suche as have ben good Townes and Castells: Yea, the Veiw of the Bones and Sculles of the ded Subjectes, who, partelie by Murder, partelie by Famyn, have died in the Feelds; as, in Troth, hardelie any Christian with drie Eies could beholde. Not longe before my Arrivall there, it was credible reported, that a principall Servaunt of the Erle of *Desmond*, after that he had burnt sundrie Villages, and destroyed a greate Peice of a Countrie, there were certeyn poor Women sought to have ben recerved; but to late, yet so sone after the horrible Faete comitted, as their Children were felte and seene to sturre in the Bodies of their dead Mothers. And yet did the same Erle lodge and banckett, in the Howse of the same Murderer his Servaunte, after the Faete comitted. Suerlie there was never People that lived in more Miserie, then they do, nor, as it shulde seeme,



of worſe Myndes, for Matrimonie emongs them is no more regarded, in Effect, then Conjunction betwene unreasonable Beaſtes. Perjurie, Robberie, and Murder, counted alloweable. Finallie, I cannot finde that they make any Conſcience of Synne, and, doubtleſſe, I doubt whether they chriſten their Children or no; for neither finde I Place where it ſhulde be don, nor anny Perſone able to enſtruchte them in the Rules of a Chriſtian; or, if they were taughte, I ſee no Grace in them to follow it; and, when they dye, I cannot ſee they make anny Accompte of the Woorlde to com.

And for that I have thus overtediouſlie written to your Maieſtie, of this Countie: It ſhall pleaſe your Maieſtie to underſtaunde, that I founde the like of the whole Countie of *Lymerick*, and the Countie of *Tomonde* (thoroughe which I traueiled) as well for Deſolacion, Waſte, and Ruyns of the Countie; as alſo for the Lacke of Reverence to your Name, Obedience to your Lawes, and evill Diſpoſition of the People. Namelie, where the Erle pretendeth any Rule, being the Half of that Countie, the Whole being but a verie ſmall Shire: Savinge the Lord *Roches* Countie, in the Countie of *Cork*, and a ſmall Porcion of Land, about *Killmallock*, in the Countie of *Lymerick*, are well inhabited. Nowe to returne to the Erle of *Deſmound*, whome I ſtill ledde with me, he daielie being deſirous to be gonne, and from Tyme to Tyme blowing out Wourdes of evill Digeffion: That he would not put downe his idell Men, nor leave his Coyne and Liverie, but kepe his Galloglas; and where as he had, in Tymes paſt, one Man, he would have five (and yet would bring no one to me) not doubting, before it were *Mydſomer-day*, he would have five Thowſaunde Men a foote at once; and for his Sake, leadinge ſtill with me, all the fore-named Noblemen, and Gentlemen, and meeting alſo by the Waye the Lord *Fitz Morrice*, a Baron of the Countie of *Kerry*, whome at the firſte I doubted to be of the Erle of *Deſmonds* Faction, but nevertheleſs, founde him faithfull and aſſured to your Maieſtie; came with them, in my Trayne to *Killmallock*, a good Towne, and indifferentlie well walled. Where I was no ſoner arrived, but that I was by ſoundry advertiſed, that all the Countries adjoining, and rounde aboute farre and nere, which were at the Devotion of the Erle of *Deſmounde*, were in an Uprore, and readie to goe to Armes: And ſendinge oute Spiall, the rather to be advertiſed of the Truthe, founde undoubtedlie true, that ſo it was; and then ſoundinge all the Noblemen, and Gentlemen, beforenamed, and findinge them faithfull and aſſured to your Maieſtie: Albeit unarmed, and unaccompanied, for that I had not made anny of them privie to my Intencion; and tryeing alſo the Diſpoſition of Sir *John* of *Deſmonde*, the Erles Brother, whome I found a readie, and an humble Subjecte, to ſerve your Maieſtie, where it againſt his owne Brother, or whoeſoever ells. Albeit he ſemed muche perplexed, for Fear of the Overthrowe of the Houſe, and troubled in naturall Affection, towards his naturall Brother. Nevertheles, moſt readie to anny Service, that by me he ſhould be employed unto. He confeſſed unto me, that ſuche Nombers of Men were in Armes, but to what Ende he knewe not. I alſo examyned the Buſhopp of *Lymerick*, who was ſuppoſed to be an ernest Freende to the Erle, and one leſte in ſpeciall Truſte by his Father: Who confeſſed that ſuche Men were gathered, and muche he myſliked the ſame, but knewe nothing of the Cauſe. I cauſed alſo of his neareſt Servauntes to be examyned, who all confeſſed, that ſuch Men were aſſembled, but to what Ende, they were ignoraunte. And I alſo founde by ſuche Meanes, by dealinge with him, as he hymſelfe confeſſed the Aſſemblye of thoſe Men; whereupon, I callinge unto me, aſwell thoſe of your Maieſties Counſeill there, as the Commiſſioners, and the Lords and Gentlemen, beforenamed, and alſo the principall Men of that Towne of *Killmallock*, of which Towne the Erle claymed to have no ſmall Superioritie; and unjuſtly, as it ſemethe to me, receiveth a yerelie Tribute from them; ſent for the Erle to com unto me, and there, in Publique, charged him with that Sturre and Levy of Men, which he denied not: Then burdeninge him with grevous and weightie Woordes, for his raſhe and diſſoiall



Doinges therein; he humblinge hymselfe upon his Knees, confessed that he had so donne, as in Respect of levieng the Men, without Intendement of Evill (as he saide). Whereupon, I asked hym, why he had levied anny suche Number; he aunswered me, for no evill Intente, but onelie that I had demaunded of hym his base Brother, *Thomas Macybryne Ogonoghe*, and the *White Knight*, and others; and that he could not tell howe otherwise to have them, then by publishing an Assemblie of his People; generallie he should have them to com in Companie, as Leaders of the reste; whereby, saide he, I shoulde have Comoditie to have taken them. Why (saide I) you have ben ever a Sewter to departe from me, since my Comyng from *Youghall*, and this Daye you have ben three sundrie Tymes in my Lodginge, to move me to departe to my Ladie your Wief, as it were in Post to the same Towne (and in deede, his Wief was delivered of a Doughter, not longe before) and your Waye is, in Effecte, directlie South to *Youghall*, and myne almoste Northe to *Lymerick*. Thies Men, whome I have demaunded at your Handes, be the Leaders of your Companie, being fixe Hundred at the least, and all in the Waye betweene me and *Lymerick*. You knowe, I have not, in the Whole, two Hundred Men in my Companie; howe may it be thoughte that you beinge gonne awaye clene contrarie to that which I entended to holde, I beinge accompanied with so small a Number, that suche woulde either present themselves, or that I were able, if they would not, by Force to apprehende them? He, still restinge upon his Knees, offered, that if I listed, I should see them all, or I should see none, if I would. I usinge some roughe and rigorous Tearmes, saide unto him, that I woulde neither bidde him to have them there, nor forbidd him; but this I tolde him, that on to Morrow, according to my former Intendement, I woulde goe to *Lymerick* at the same Hower, and passe the same Way, that I had purposed, and if that he, or anny of his, durste offer any Kinde of Bravery to me, or anny of myne, albeit I was not, as he well knewe, two Hundred Men, I badde him doe what he or they durst, assuring, him by the Waye, that if any Outrage were offered, he shoulde be the firste that shoulde dye for it. Hereupon he semed humble and silente, and therewith *I committed him to Warde*, where he hath ever since remayned: I leading him with me, from thence to *Lymerick*, and from *Lymerick* to *Gallwaye*, and so to the Castell of *Dublyn*, where he yet remayneth. But Madam, this I am bounde in Conscience to saye, and in the soundest Fidelitie, that I can conceive to your Majestie, I protest, that in myne Opinion, he did not this upon anny trayterous Mynde to your Person, Crowne or Dignitie, nor yet of Will to hurte or apprehende me; but onelie, as I take it, to shewe that he were able, if he woulde, to deliver himselfe oute of my Handes; and if it had com to that Passe, whether he, so accompanied, had ben able, though he would, to have appeased their Furie, whome he was not able before to bring unto me, or no, I muche doubt. At Adventure, oute I went, at the Hower, and in the Waye before determyned, leadinge with me the Companie before specyfyed, together with Eighte or Nynescore of well appointed Footemen, whiche that Towne of *Killmallock* offred me; and so marched towarde *Lymerick*, and in the Midwaye, there mette me three Hundred well appointed Footemen, of the Cittie of *Lymerick*, sent me at the Busshopps Motion, upon fixe Howres Warninge. This partlie I write, to th'Ende your Majestie should have Reguarde to thies your Townes. They are your onlie Force, that your Majestie hath to trust to, oute of the *Englisch* Pale of this your Realme.

Hereupon, with the Advice of suche of your Counseill as were with me, I combyned all the forenamed Lords and Gentlemen in faithfull Love and Amytie, confirmed by their Promes, and solempne Othes, which in all Semblance, they shewed faithfullie to kepe. They all semyng deisirous that Sir *John* of *Desmounde* shoulde be Chief in Commission emonges them, I accordingelie addressed unto hym and them, together with one learned in the Lawes, *Andrew* *Skydye*, and *Henry* *Davells*, an olde Soldier in this Lande, and



an honest, discrete Gentlemen, Comissioned for the Governinge of thoise three Shieres of *Corke*, *Limerick*, and *Kerry*, and so returned them from me at *Limerick*; since which Tyme I have ben, and daielie am crediblie advertised, that thoise Counties doe remayn in verie good Quiet; eche honest, and discrete Man, muche rejoyfing at the Withdrawing of the Erle from thoise Partes.

And nowe, moste gracious Sovereign, if it seeme more honorable for your Maiestie, to have hym thus apprehended, as it were in the Myddes of his Kyngedom, and as a Captive openlie conveyed oute of the same, and so to be broughte thorough all the reste of *Tomonde* and *Connoughe*, to the Terror of all other of his Sorte, or to have ben taken in the *Englishe* Pale, when he came to the Service of your Highenes: As it semeth your Highenes was perswaded I should have don, and, as it is written hither, that I was comaunded to have don; thoughe I never receved from your Maiestie anny to that Effect. And if also it nowe appere unto your Highenes, more advantageous, that I temporised with him, untill such Tyme as he not onelie hath incurred the Forfeiture of twentie thousande Pounds, but hath also comitted suche an Error, as is at the leaste justelie ponnysheable, with Imprysonment at your Pleasure, and grevous Fine. Then to have taken hym, onelie to have answered the Complaynte of anny perticular Man. Yf, I say, that this my Manner of Proceedinge seeme more honorable and more beneficiall to your Maiestie, I humblie beseeche the same, no longer to kepe me in Office here, then your Maiestie dothe thinck, that I (that actuallie and contynuallie am occupied in the Managinge of the Affaires of this your Countrie, and personallie see and here howe Things dothe passe) can better decerne howe and when to execute that, that perteyneth to your Service, then anny there, whoesoever he be, beinge but enformed by Reportes, and thoise often tymes but sinisterlie made. Nowe it resteth for your Highenes to resolve what you will doe with this Erle, as firste, whether yowe will have hym into *Englande*, or that he remayne here. The Example wilbe muche more terrible, if he be sent for into *England*. And, for my Parte, I woulde be very well contented to be disburdened of the Charge of him, because I must be so occupied in your Maiesties Service, as I muche doubt the safe Keping of him. Then your Highnes hath to resolve howe further you will proceede with him; for albeit, as before I write, I cannot condempne him of anny trayterous Intente towardes your Maiestie, yet is his Act so ponnysheable and fyneable, as therbie the Matter, being well handeled, may growe in Effecte the Reformation of all *Mounster*. Yf your Maiestie will deale with him there, you muste have some of this Countrie thither, to enforce against him, and of thoise none meter, then *Lucas Dillon*, your Maiesties Atturney, and *Nicholas White*. Yf your Highenes will have him delte with all here, it shalbe verie necessarie that your Maiestie sende hither some one quick and stowte Man learned in the Lawes; who, both for Judgement and Sinceritie, may be reposed upon for the Advancement of your Maiesties Service, and the Benefit of the Countrie. Albeit, I assure your Highenes, that I founde both *Sir Thomas Cusack*, *Lucas Dillon*, your said Atturney, *Edwarde Fitz Symons*, and *Nicholas White* (all learned in the Lawes, all which, alsoe, I had with me in the Journey) as fervente in your Maiesties Cause and the Countrie, and as voide of Affection towardes him, as I coulde wishe anny Men to be. This Good, at the leaste, will growe by this Faete, that there may justelie be taken from him his supposed Liberties. Which Abuse of Liberties, aswell in him, as in others, is the verie Roote of all the Disorders in *Mounster*. In this weightie and great Matter, I moste humblie desire your Maiestie, that I may have imediate and undelayed Answers and Resolucion.

And nowe to the State of the Countrie agayne. I founde the Cittie of *Limerick* so empayred in Welth, since I last sawe it in the Queene your Sisters Dayes, as was straunge to me to beholde, muche by the Disorder of the Erle of *Desmound*, whose Countrie joyneth unto it upon the Sowthe Side, but more by the greate Spoiles comitted, and suffered to be comitted, by the Erle of

*Thomond*,



*Tomond*, their next Neighbor, upon the North Side, whoise Lacke of Discretion and Insufficiency to governe, is suche, as, if I could have founde anny one loiall and reasonable Man in his Countrie, I woulde not onelie have withdrawn him from Ruling there, but, for a Number of Spoiles justely approved against hym, would have comitted him to Prison.

The *Obrines*, of *Tomond*, came not at me, as it is supposed, by the Perfwacion of the Erle of *Desmound*. In what Case this Countrie was, I wrote before; all waste and desolate thorough which I passed, and lodged one Night with *Oshanghenes*, whome I found a verie obediente, loiall, and civil Man, and moste desirous to holde his Land immediatlie of your Majestie, and to be delivered of the Exactions of both the Erles of *Clanricarde*, and *Tomonde*. His Countrie is rich, plentifull, and well ordered, but verie small. I promised him to be a Sewter to your Highenes, that it would please yowe so to accept it. His Father was in *England*, and there by the Kinge, your Majesties most noble Father, made Knighte, and had Lettres Patentes of his Countrie, in whoise Behalf nowe I meane shortlie to send a Bill readie drawen, to Thend he may, by Acte of Parliamente, be resumed to your Majestie, and exempted from the reste.

From thence I wente to your Highenes Towne of *Galliwaye*, the State wherof I found rather to resemble a Towne of Warre, fronteringe upon an Enemye, then a civill Towne in a Countrie under one Sovereigne. They watche their Walles mightelie, and garde their Gates daielie with armed Men. They complayned muche of the Warres of *Mac William Ewter*, and *Oflartye*, against the Erle of *Clanrycarde*, but, most of all, of the Disorder of the Erle of *Clanrycardes* two Sonnes, which he hath by two Wives, and bothe alive, and thies two yonge Boyes in the Lief of thir Father, yet likelie long to live, doe strive who shalbe their Fathers Heire, and, in the same Strife, comitte no small Spoiles and Damage to the Countrie. Whereupon, I tooke bothe the Sonnes, and carried them awaye with me, and here I doe detayne them. To this Towne of *Galliwaye*, came to me *O Donell*, shewing himselfe moste willinge and readie, to accomplish all Thinges, that his Brother, in his Lief Tyme, had covenanted with me for the Service of your Majestie, and did desire that he might have his Countrie by Letters Patentes, which I graunted him, and accordingly have sent it unto him. There came also unto me *Oconnor Sligo*, of whome, and his Greatenes and Disposition, I wrote to your Majesty at large, in my Lettres sent by Mr. *Gilbert*. He is desirous to holde his Countrey immediatlie of your Majestie; but, in anny wise, he will into *Englande* to see your most Royall Person, and there to receive not onlie his Countrey, but, as he termeth it, Regeneration at your Majesties Hand: And I meane shortlie to send him to your Highenes. From thence I traueiled thorough a greate and an aunciente Towne in *Connoghe*, called *Anrye*, where I was offered a pytyfull and lamentable Presente, namelie, the Keyes of the Towne, not as to receive them of me agayne, as all other accustomedlye doe, but for me still to kepe, or otherwise dispose at my Pleasure, in asmuche as they were so impoverished, by the Extortion of the Lordes aboute them, as they were no longer able to kepe that Towne. The Towne is large and well walled, and it appereth by Matter of Record, there hath ben in it three hundred good Howseholders, and, since I knewe this Land, there was twentie, and nowe I finde but fower, and they poor, and, as I write, readie to leave the Place. The Crye and Lamentacion of the poor People was greate and pityefull, and nothings but thus, *Succor, Succor, Succor*. The Erle of *Clanricarde* coulde not denye, but that he helde a hevie Hande over them. For which I ordered him to make them som Recompence, and bounde him not to exacte upon them hereafter; whereunto he willingelie consented. As this Towne, for Lacke of Justice, is, in a Manner, totally destroyed, so will the rest of your Highenes Townes be, if with Speede you plant not Justice emonges them. From thence I traueiled thorough *Clanrycarde*, and founde the Countrie in good Quiet, universallie well tilled and manured,



manured, and was at two of the Erles Howses vearie honorablie entertayned. From whence, passing thorough the *Okellies* Countrie, I came to your Majesties Howse of *Atbelone*, and so toke my next Waie to this your Majesties Howse of *Kyllmayneham*, where I arrived the xvth of this *Aprill*. So as I was oute, in the Whole, eleven Weeks and two Days. Which Journey, as it was the longest, and the moste paynefull that ever I made, so I truste it will prove honorable to your Majestie, and advantageous to the Countrie.

Albeit, in this my overtidious Letter, I have touched unto your Highenes, fundrie Myschiefes, in theis two Prouinces of *Mounster* and *Connought*, yet have I not hitherto spoken of the greatest of all other; which is, that there is not one Man in them sufficientlie qualified for the Reformation thereof; but that in the best, suche Imperfection is to be founde, as he is not worthie to have the onlie, or the chief Charge, for the Reformation of his owne Jurisdiction; much lesse of the Whole. For the Erle of *Ormound* being absente, and not loked for to returne in anny shorte Tyme, as it is thoughte here, hathe no one *Agente*, as far as I can perceive, sufficient to governe suche a *Seigniorie*, as he hathe in *Mounster*. The Erle of *Desmound*, a Man bothe voide of Judgement to govern, and Will to be rewled. The Erle of *Clancarre*, I suppose, willinge enough to be ruled, but wanteth Force and Credite to rule. The Erle of *Tomond*, the moste unperfected of all the rest; hath neither Witte of himself to govern, nor Grace or Capacitie to learn of others. The Erle of *Clanricarde*, equall in all good Partes with the best of his Cote of this Countrie Breede, bothe of good Judgment to rule, and also of himself of greate Humblenes to obey your Majestie and your Lawes; is yet so over ruled by a putative Wife, whome he nowe kepeth, as ofte Tymes, when he best intended, she forceth hym to doe worste. Hereby Madam, if I have anny Judgement, your Majestie may easelie perceive there is no Waye for Reformation of thies two Provinces, but by planting Justice by President and Counseills, in eche of them; but, if that cowardlie Policy be still allowed of, to kepe them in contynuall Dissention, for feare, leste, thorough their Quiet, might follow I wot not what. Then myne Advice unto your Majestie, bothe is, and shalbe, to withdrawe me, and all Charge here. In myne Opinion, as little dishonorable were it, totallie to abandon it, as wonte Obedience to some to govern it. And so farr hath that Pollicie (or rather Lacke of Pollicie) in keping Dissention emonges them prevailed, as nowe; albeit, all that are alive, woulde becom honest, and live in Quiet. Yet are there not leste alive in thiose two Provinces, the xxth Person necessarie to inhabite the same. And so I conclude, for thiose, that, as they were never in Memorie of Man in wourse Case then nowe they be, so were they never in more Forwardenes to Reformation, yf it please your Majestie to goe thorough with it; beseeching your Majestie to call to your Remembraunce, that this was myne Opinion half a Yeare before I came hither. And, having been nowe a Yeare and half, I have contynuallie written of the same, and yet nothinge don for the Accomplishing thereof. For better Staye of which Countries of *Connaght* and *Tomonde*, and for Orderinge of their Griefes, which be manny; I have resolved to send thither, forthwith, Sir *Thomas Cusak*, whome I, for his Experience, Paynefullnes, and Willingnes, have Cause to like, and recomend above the reste. And, therefore, desire your Majestie, by some fewe comfortable Wordes of good Acceptacion of his Diligence, to encorage him, and, by his Example, others to applie themselves to your Majesties Service, who, perhappes, are now lesse diligent, in that they see when they deserve well, and I report well, and they not ignoraunt of my Comendacion; they yet receive from your Highenes no Significacion of your good Acceptinge of the same.

As towching all *Leinster* and *Methe*, I dare affirme, upon my Credite, unto your Majestie, aswell for the *Englisb* Pale, and the Justice therof: It was never, in the Memorie of the oldest Man that nowe liveth, in greater Quiet and Obedience; nor, for this Time of Yere, a Garrison beinge kepte here, all Manner of Thinges better cheape. And so well was the *Englisb* Pale garded in myne Absence, chieflie by the diligente and paynefull Service of the Erle of



*Kildare*, who, for the moſte Parte, did continuallie reſide upon the Borders, as I cannot here, that there was the Vallue of one Cowe, by Force or Stelthe, taken out of the ſame: A Caſe here, ſo rare, as is not ſpoken of withoute greate Admiracion; ſuch, and ſo many Incurſions and Invaſions were made into the Rebells Countrie. Duringe the ſame Tyme, as he (*O Neal*) is nowe driven to the Wooddes, and almoſte not herd of where he is. Daiely Spoiles and Prayes taken from him, to the Enrichinge of your Higheneſſes Subjectes, and Empoveriſhing of hym. His principall People alreadie either comen from hym, or in Comynge; namelie, all the *Ohanlons*, *Mac Mahon*, and all his Followers; *Maginnes* dayelie ſewing to be received; and of the beſt Gentlemen of his Surname, alreadie comen from hym. Which *Maginnes* I yet holde of, becauſe I have ben informed, that he hath foundrie Tymes ſpoken ſlaunderouſlie of your Royall Perſon. *Tirloghe Lenoghe* ſheweth himſelf a devote Subjecte to your Highenes, daielie Embruyng himſelf in the Bloud of the Rebells Followers. All *Clandyboy* is whollie at your Maſtieſties Devotion. The *Glynes*, the *Arde*, the *Duffryn*, and *Lacale*, are nowe poſſeſſed by the righte and aunciente Owners, and readie at your Maſtieſties Comaundmente. All *Tireconnell*, together with *Ochanes* Countrie, under the Governement of *Richarde Ochane*, in quiet Obedience to your Maſtieſtie, and daielie dothe Annoyaunce to the Rebells. In *Farmanaghe*, the Rebell hath no Footinge, the Capteyn therof, *Maguier*, being a devote Subjecte to your Maſtieſtie: So as the Rebell is, nowe as it were, cowped in *Tirone*, neither dare he ſhewe himſelf in the Playnes therof, being ſo oft diſtreſſed by your Soldiers, by their daielie Incurſions; his Cattail do, by greate Numbers, dailie ſtarve and dye in the Wooddes, in which, God willinge, ere it be long, he himſelf ſhall be well hunted. But, alas Madam, howe can your Highenes thinke that I can attende that, your martiall Service, when aſwell for the Providinge and Furniſhing of it, as alſo for Governinge in all other Civill Cauſies, there is none, in Effecte, to comaund or execute, but my ſelf; for aſwell in all martiall Matters, either by Sea or by Lande, or Provision for Victuells, or Orderinge, or Diſpoſinge of the ſame; muſte paſſe all myne own Hande. I am alſo charged with your Higheneſſes Treasuſe, to my no ſmall Burden and Perill. What Aſſiſtances in Counſeill I have, God knoweth, and your Highenes, to your Loſſe, in Thende you will feele. Your Chauncelor is nowe, in a Manner, bothe ſpecheles and ſenceles. The Maſter of the *Rolles*; a verie ſick and a weke Man, ſo as that Court is nowe, in Effecte, utterlie vacante. The ſame Maſter of the *Rolles*, being alſo Chauncelor of your *Exchequier*, and the Chief Baron therof, being bothe ſick and impotente, are forced to be abſente from that Courte. So as therby not onlie Sewtors be verie evill ſatiſfied, but God knoweth, howe your Revenues and Finances are there ordered. And I partelie ſee how you looſe, and yet cannot amende it, for Lack of Tyme, and other greater Matters. The Chief Juſtice of your Highenes *Benche*, an olde Man, and evill able with that Diligence to attende that Place, that were convenient. The Chief Juſtice of the *Comon Pleas*, a Man much ſpente in Yeares, and decayed both in Senſe and Bodie, ſo as I am no ſoner returned from anny Journey, and can unwrappe my ſelf anny one Hower, out of martiall Actions and Deviſies, but that Cauſies of all thies Courtes, by Swarmes, flye in unto me, to the greate Confoundinge of my Memorie, and Hindraunce of your Service; and that in ſuch Sort, as of Neceſſitie ſomewhatt I muſte doe, or ells intollerable Evill would enſewe. And, to my further and greateſt Diſcomforte, there can no Advertiſemente com from hence, be it from never ſo ſlighte an Informer, or never ſoe untrew; but that, before I be herde, the ſame is accepted, to my great Diſadvantage. All whiche tendethe not onelie to my greate Grief, Decaye of Helthe, Quiet, and Subſtaunce; but alſo to the Hinderaunce of your Maſtieſties Service, Prejudice of the Countrie, and waſtfull Conſumption of your Treasuſe. For Redreſſe wherof, ſince I have ſo oft written, and finde by the comforteles Silence in the ſame uſed, that your Highenes hath ſo little Compaſſion, either of your ſelf, or of me;



me; that I protest to God, I will write no more after this, of thies Matters; but referre them to Allmightie Goddes Direction, to whome for my self I praye, that if I have not more spedie, or more comfortable Relief, then hitherto I have had, that yt may please him, either by shorte Lief to deliver me, or by som grevous Sicknes to excuse me, from this miserable and thaunklesse Service. And for your moste excellent Majestie, with bowed Knees, and prostrate Bodie, I pray to his Devine Majestie, to sende you longe and perfecte Joyfulness in this Woorlde, and after, immortall Felicitie. At *Killmayneham*, the xxth of *Aprill* 1567.

*Your Majesties most humble*

*and obedient Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Queen Elizabeth, for Sir Geo. Stanley, sent to Sir Henry Sydney.*

**W**Heareas Sir *George Stanley*, Knight, late Marshall of our Army, in that our Realme of *Ireland*, hathe bene charged by Way of Informacion, given by *William Brymyngbam*, which hathe bene, by our Order, considered by our Pryvey Counsell, and by them, vppon Conference, thought meete: That of the Some of MMccxviii l. x s. iv d. *Irishe*, seminge to be due vnto the saide Sir *George Stanley*, by a Declaracion of Accompt sent from thence, and signed by *Gabriell Crofte*, late Auditor there, and *Mathewe Kinge*, also late Clarke of the *Checque*; there ought to be stayed and defalked the Some of MDccc.xcii l. xiii. s. iiii d. ob. *Irishe*, for certaine particuler Matters, obiected by the saide *Brymyngbam*, and denyed by the saide Sir *George Stanley*, as by a particuler Writinge, herewith sent vnto you; which hathe bene collected by our saide Counsell, vntill the Matters of the saide Allegations may be there further tryed and determyned, as already there hathe beene by our Counsell allowed to him, and paide, the Some of CC.xliv l. vi s. xi d. ob. as in the Paper included is conteyned. Forasmuche as the Tryall of these Matters are most metest to be harde and determyned in that our Realme of *Ireland*, and not well in any other Place, as shall appeare unto you, vppon the Consideracion of the Nature of the Obiections and Ainswers thereto: We will and require you, that, vpon the Repaire thither vnto you of the saide Sir *George Stanley*, with these our Lettres, or any other sufficyently auctorysed for him, to cause the Matters conteyned in the same Scedule, wherevpon the Controversy shall by the same seme to aryse, to be examyned by all convenyent and reasonable good Meanes, for the Understandinge of the Truthe, without any vnneccessary Delay. And therevpon to give Order, that vpon the Paye claymed, and to be payd to the saide Sir *George Stanley*, for him and his Bande, that which shall appeare due vnto him, of the saide Some of MDccc.xcii l. xiii s. iiii d. ob. *Irishe*, may be allowed, and the rest disallowed and saved to vs vppon his Pay. And that also, in the Order of his Paie, it may be well forsene, that the Sommes of Money, which shalbe due by him, or his Band, to the Country, there may be by him payde; and in the Ende, if the Condicions, conteyned in his Bonde there, shalbe by him performed, then his Bonde to be delyvered to him. In all which Proceadinge, we thinke it mete and reasonable, that all good Expedition be vsed, aswell for the Triall of his Allegations made against *Brymyngbams* Informacions, as for his redye Payment, consideringe he hathe of longe Tyme remayned here, followinge this his Suite, and hitherto hathe not had Expedition thereof, partly by Reason of other Affaires, wherewith our Counsell hath byne occupied, which had the Hereinge thereof, and partly for the Diffyculty of the Matter it self. And for the doinge hereof, if you shall not, as you cannot well, attende the particuler Discussion thereof: We woulde have you for advoydinge of Delay, appointe the same to some other of our Counsell, that may be thought in soche



Causés acquainted, and also indifferent towards Sir *George Stanley*, whom we wishe, in all reasonable Causes, to have favourable Order, because we knowe noe other Thing by him, but that he hath served, as your self hath by your Letters well testified, allwayes as a forwarder, painefull, and obedient Gentleman. And because he hath here had Graunte to receive, at our *Eschequer*, the Somme of CCxliiii *l. vi s. xi d. ob.* as allowed due to him, aboue all Cheques: You shall take Order, that for any Clause in his Bond there remayninge, the same be not preiudiciall vnto him. Yeoven, &c. the xiith of *August*, 1567.

<sup>a</sup> *Sir Warham Sent Leger to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*Myne humble Dutie don unto your Lordship,*

**I**T may please you to understand, that upon *Sunday* last, beinge the 13 of this Monthe, a Brother of Sir *Dermot Mc. Teigs*, called *Cormucke*, came to me to *Cork*, having ben with the Erle of *Clancarty*, *James Fitz Moris*, *Mc. Donoughe*, and the rest of the *Irishry* of the Southwest Partes, at their Parliament, that they helde; from whome he understode the whoel Effect of their Assembly, which as he creadably enformeth me, was for the fuer Fyrmyng of them selves together, to resist all your Lordships good Devices. And withall to send Messingers to the Kynge of *Spaigne*, for Aid to help them, in this their lewde Enterpryce. And for a Proof, that they minde suche Matters; I am by the said *Cormuck*, as also by others, credably enformed, that these vile Traitors have dispatched into *Spaigne*, to be Practitioners in their Villanye. The Busshoppe of *Ross* in *Carbury*, the popest Traitor in *Ireland*, and also the usurped Busshoppe of *Caisbell*, who those Traitors aforementioned used, as thoughte he weare a God. And great Gosspeppry passed betwene him and them, which is the greatest Confirmation of Frendshippe, that passeth betwene this *Irish* People.

These two Divelische Prelats, be, by *James Fitz Morris*, conveyed into *Kerry* in the Erle of *Desmonds* Liberties; where either of them be shipped, or ells shalbe, when they departe this Land; either they be gon, or the next Wynde that serveth they goe. This Mischief is to be prevented in Tyme. In my poore Opinion, it were very requisit, the Queens Majestie were forthwith advertised herof, and that her Highnes may presentlie, with all the Speede that may be, send hether those well mynded Gentlemen, that intend to adventure their Lyves and Lyvings in these Partes. Which don, her Majesty shall not only be assured to have these Traitors Devices prevented; but with all, enjoy to her selfe good Revenue, and have this Cuntrey thoroughly reformed; towards the which, as I doubt not but your Lordship will be a Furdearer of this good Offer, wherein her Highnes shall stand in good Suerty, and receive good Benefit, you will with Expedition procure their Comyng; and if her Majesty, towards this good Attempte, bare those Gentlemens Charges, the first Yeaere, towards their better Encouragement, it were, in my symple Judgment, a Some of Money as well bestowed, as was any Money in *Ireland*, this forty Yere. If there shoulde happen Wars betwene her Highnes and the *Spanishe* Kynge, it were greate Daunger to this Realme, to have these Southwest Partes unguarded; and chiefly consideringe, what Liking the People of these Partes of the Country have to the *Spanishe* Nation, by their deyly Trafacking together. The Comyng hether of those Gentlemen, with such Force, as they will bring with them, preventeth all their Mischiefs, and as I said before, reformed this Country; and therefore, my good Lord, ageyn let me be bolde to beseeche you to be earnest with the Queens Majesty, for the Setting furth of this good Attempte. Thus muche I thought it my Duty to advertyse unto your Lordship, as also my poor Oppynion for the preventing of the Mischiefs before written, and reformed this Country; wherein if I take upon me to meddle

<sup>a</sup> *Ireland*. 1557. 1559, Lib. 5. p. 419, in his Majestys Office of Papers and Recordes of State.  
further



further then becometh me, I humbly crave Pardon, as one that myndeth well. So I humbly take my Leve. From *Cork*, this 14 *February* 1568.

*Your Lordships evermore to comaund,*

Warhame Sentleger.

*Sir Henry Sydney, to Edward Clinton, Earl of Lincoln, Lord High Admiral of England.*

*My very good Lord,*

I Receyved your Lettre of the last of *Ffebruary*, the xiiiith of this Instant, whereby I vnderstand of the poore Gifte, it pleased your Lordship, to take in good Parte at my Handes, so as I must thanke your Lordship for that Curtesie; beinge farre vnequall in Goodnes, vnto that I wished him. And, as if I had one, coulde thinke him worthely bestowed on your Lordship, fyndinge my self alwaies moche beholdinge vnto the same, for your contynuall Favors towards me. And, for that I knowe not wheather your Lordship have of late receyved any Newes of the Doinges here, I thinke good to make a brief Reherfall of the same.

On the 19 Daye of *February* last, a Number of *Scotts*, of iiiiC, and odde, intendinge (as it was saide) to creat a newe Lorde of *Clandeboyne*, not farre from *Knockfargus*, ment, vnder that Pretence, to enter a Woodde, nere *Castell Reagh*, which is not moche distant from the saide *Knockfargus*, to take away the Pray from thence; whereof Capten *Peirs*, havinge Knowledge, issued out of *Knockfargus* in the Night, with vi score Footemen, and lx Horsemen, marchinge towards the saide Woodde, whether he commynge before Day, lay close with his Company, and anone the *Irishe* Streinght, according to their former Purpose, came and gathered the Pray together, out of the Woode, and drave them a longe Myle, before Capten *Peirs* issued out, hopeing they had byne safe, and past all Daunger. But ymmediately, *Peirs* withe his Footemen compassinge them on Way, the Horsemen sett vpon them, where by Overvaliantnes, and great Courage, not able to staye himself from th'Execution of his Service. One *Richarde Hunt*, a singuler Soldior of Name, with a Pellet, shotte into the Hedde, by *Owen Mac Gillaaspicke*, Cheifetaine of the *Scottes*, was stroken deade; and twoe other Horsemen, their Horses slayne vnder them, and they soe farre before their Company, as they had noe Rescue, weare likewise slayne, beinge all that of our Company did perishe. In which Tyme of Skirmishe, Capten *Piers* came on the other Syde of them, they beinge gotten over a Bogge, and forsaken their Pray, and so as the Horsmen could not come to them, and gave them a lusty Charge; where they shewed soche Valiauntnes, wheather the over Number of theirs, to our Handefull, or the Vauntage of their Ground, encouraged them the rather, or not, I knowe not; but the lyke Stoutnes, duringe so longe Tyme, was neuer seene emonge their Nacion, nor at that Tyme looked for by our Companie. In somoche as, by their hastie Cominge on our Men, the Harquebuffiers, dischargeinge in there Bosomes, woulde not shrinke, but pressed emongs them soe feirslie as they, once dischargeing, had noe Leisure to charge agayne, but weare dryven to their Swordes; and had not the Pikes and Holberdes bene, there had beene an evill a doe emongs our Soldiors, for Captaine *Piers* his Ensigne was torne in Titters, with very Fingers of the Enymies. The Medle contynued soe longe, and soe busie, as he was not there, that had not his Hands full that Day; and the Victory, on eyther Side, hanginge a great While doubtfull, it pleased God of his great Goodnes in th'Ende, to give the *Englishmen* the Vpphand, wheare weare dyvers hurte withe the *Scottishe* Arrowes, but none presently slayne, nor deade thereof since, but one. And of the *Irishe* there was founde deade, as in one Quarrey, iiC and xv Bodies, besides those that weare slaine by the Horsemen,



in the Flieinge awaie, and the Kearne that followed them twoe Dayes after, foe as it is judged the odde only escaped not. So as those Partes, Thanks be to God, be very well quieted by this Meanes; emongs whome, Mr. *Gillaspicke*, aforefaide, withe dyvers other of the chief Captaines, and Gentlemen of Name, weare lykewise slayne: And this, my good Lord, I thought to advertise you, as the on-ly Newes of this wicked Countrey. And so with my most humble Commendacions to your good Lordship, resting allwaies at your Commaundement, prayinge for your Lordships longe and prosperous Lyfe and Estate, I take my Leave. From *Dublyn*, this of *Marche*, 1568, &c.

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Duke of Feria, in Spain.*

*It may please your Excellency,*

I Wolde be gladde to shewe some greater Argument of my Loue and Dewtie towards you, then by often Writinge, especially when my Lettres cary with them Cause of Supplicacion, to the Trouble of your selffe. Neuerthelesse, suche is the present Occasion, by the Desire which this Berer, Mr. *Verney*, hathe to trauell into those Countries, which are vnder the Septer of the most Catholike Kinge, as I can not leaue him destitute of my Commendacion to your Excellency. And this geueth him no smale Aduantage, that he is here descended of an Howse of a greate Honor; and the Maner of his Liffe, hitherto, hathe promised a Continewance of the Vertu of his Auncesters. Yt may therfore like you the rather, by your good Worde to the Catholike Kinge, to further him in his Trauell into *Naples*. And, if he shall desire of your Excellencie to remaine any While in your Seruice there, my humble Desire is, that he may receaue your Furtherance to the Viceroy of the same. And so remayninge alwaie at your Deuocion, as the smalest Member of your Howse, that coueteth dailie to doe you all the Honor he can. I humble take my Leau. From the Courte at *Grenewiche*, redie to returne to my Gouernement in *Irelande*, the last of *Aprill*, 1568.

*Your Graces Vncle to comaunde, as*

*Your Seruant,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Robert, Earl of Leicester, sent by Dowglas.*

*My dereft Lorde,*

I Coule not come foe neire your fayer and auntyent Castell of *Killingwoorth*, as my Way led me to doe, and leave it vnseene; but thither I went, where the Entertainement that my Cofin *Thomas Blunt*, and other your Seruautes gave me, shewed their Civilitie, and that they knewe me to be your Lordships welbeloved Brother. There met me my Lord *Barkley*, Sir *Foulke Grivell*, and *John Stanhope*. Sir *Giles Poole*, and *Thomas Throkemorton*, of *Glocestershire*, came thether with me. I woulde not hunt, but fishe I did, and tooke an Hundrethe good Breames at a Draught, which I appointed to be kept for you, till your Lordships Comminge. I was neuer more in Love withe an olde House, nor never newe Worke coule better be bestowed, then that which you have done. I have appointed, *Saluo meliori Iudicio*, where your Chappel shall stande. In the voide Roome, by *Cæsars Tower*, or agreeably with the stately Buildinge of the House, to fill vp a Part of the Roome betweene *John of Gaunts* Buildinge, and the Porters Lodge; whiche Chappell, if you will get me Home this next Springe, I and *Coxe*, at our owne proper Costs and Charges, will be bounde to begynne and synish, within one Yeare, in fayer, decent, and durable Maner. In my Way towarde this Towne, I met this Bringer, my Man *Dowglas*, whom your Lordship



Lordship put to me, whome I have of late (as fundry Tymes by past) employed in *Scotlande*, to founde the Practises of them there for *Irelande*. He hathe brought me Intelligence of their Gatheringe, and Mynde to invade *Irelande*, and Suppocicion of the Earle of *Arguiles* doble Dealing, albeit he brought me Lettres to the Contrary. I vnderstande by him, of a newe Leage betweene Therle and *Doneill Gorme*, pretendinge to be Sovereigne of the Iles; there Forces are great, beinge ioyned. I have sent the Earle of *Argiles* Lettre to Mr. Secretary, and the Letter of *Peirs* and *Malbie*; by which you may vnderstande the good Quiet, of all the Quarters vnder their Rules, and the good Readynes the Shippinge is in, havinge good Fortune to mete with the *Scotts* in their Passage. I beseeche your Lordship, question with this Fellowe, and then signifye to the Queen my simple Opynion as followethe: *First*, That her Highnes write to the Earle of *Arguile*, in soche pryncelyke Forme, as may seme best to her grave Wisdome, that he kepe at Home those idell *Scotts*; for he maye do it if he will. This may be a Meane, whereby her Majestie may save a great Deale of Treasuer, which otherwise she must spende in Wageinge of Soldiours, for kepeinge her Countrey from their Vsurpacion. *Secondlie*, That I will not bestowe any of the Treasure, nowe appointed, for Building and Raffinge of Soldiours to that Vse, if they doe get in, but in profecutinge of them; I meane not witheany farder Charge then nowher Highnes is at; for they shall not wynter betweene the Sea, *Loughe foile*, *Strangforde*, and the *Englishe* Pale, if I be able to kepe the Feilde. *Tbirdly*, That her Highnes will dispatche Counsells into *Mounster* and *Connaught*, for, as fast as I shall mende *Vlster*, they will marre, if there be noe Au<sup>th</sup>oritie resident emonge them. *Fourthly*, That her Majestie write to the Justices there, that they be vigillaunt for the well Governeinge of the *Englishe* Pale, and dilligent to see me furnyshed of my Wantes. If this be done, I have good Hope of Reformation; without this, I looke for none. Albeit, as you see by this, I intende to make Choice of the worste Parte to my self. I pray you, my Lorde, let this Bringer reaceve comfortable Wordes of you; I have founde him faithfull; it was he that brought in the *Scotts* that killed *Shane Oneill*. I have noe more, but that I have beene three Daies troubled withe my Disease: God helpe me, and sende your Lordship a longe, happy, and mery Life. In Haste and Payne, from *Saloppe*, this viijth of *August*, 1568.

Your Lordships assured Brother

to commaunde,

H. Sydney.

Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Cecill, sent by Dowglas.

IT may please you, Sir, to be advertysed, that, in my Waie towarde this Towne, I mett withe this Bringer, a Man of myne, whome, not longe since, I sent into *Scotlande*, as ofte heretofore I have done, to vnderstand what was intended by them to *Irelande*. I have ever founde him faithfull, true of his Report (thoughe a *Scott*) and dilligent. He brought me a Lettre from the Erle of *Argile*, whiche I sende you here inclosed. I sende you alsoe Lettres from *Peirs* and *Malbie*, which beinge read, I praye you sende me agayne. I thought good to sende the Fellowe to you, to Th'ende he might open his Intelligence by Mouthe, with whom, if your Healthe serve you, I pray you interrogate; the Points of his Intelligence most worthie Consideracion, in my Opynion, are theis: The doble Dealinge of the Earle of *Argile*, his Confederacion with *Donill Gorme*, his auntyent Ennymie, nowe pretendinge to be Sovereigne of the Iles; the Assembly of the *Scottes*; and the Contribucion and Assistance of the Erle of *Casbells*, and other lowe Land Lords. I beseeche you, Sir, move the Queene, that withe Speede she addresse her Counsells into *Mounster*, and *Connaught*, without whiche, all will to Wracke there, while I shall goe about to mende



mende somewhat in *Vlster*. That comfortable Lettres be written to the Justices, to looke well to the Governement of the *Englishe* Pale, and that they be dilligent to furnishe me of my Wants. And to signyfie to her Majestie, that if the *Scotts* doe arryve, that I thinke it not convenyent to bestowe any of the Treasure, whiche I nowe carry over, ether in Buildinge or Rassing of Soldiors, but in prosecutinge them. That her Highnes write her princely, and earnest Lettres, to the Earle of *Arguile*, and others of that Nacion. That I have Letters to Sir *Richard Bulkeley*, Constable of *Beaumurryce*, *Hearley*, Constable of *Conwaye*, *Edward Harbert*, of *Mountgomery*, and *Hurleston*, of *Chester*, to receaue soch *Irishe* Prisoners, or Pledges, as I shall sende thether, or to any of them. A Lettre of Favor to Sir *Brean Mac Phelim Bacco*. I beseeche you, Sir, remember the Viscount *Hereford*, you wot what I meane. The *Scottes*, and I, will not, God willinge, winter betwene *Longefoile* and *Strangforde*, but some shall smart for it. I trust you see I make not Choice of the easiest Parte for my self. I pray you haste Capten *Gilbert* to me, withe as moche Speede as withe his Helthe he may. I have bene three Dayes sore trobled withe my Disease. I have no more, but most hartely I recomende vnto you my Wief, my self, and my Boie; and I beseeche you recommend me humbly to my Ladie, your Wief, my Ladye *Bacon*, and my Lorde *Keper*. God guide you all withe his Holy Spirite, and blesse you withe a long, happy, and helthfull Lief. From *Saloppe*, this viijth of *August*, 1568.

*Yours, assured and bounden.*

H. Sydney.

You may see by *Peirs* his Letter, what Readynes the Shippinge is in, to mete withe the *Scotts*.

*Queen Elisabeth to the Earl of Argyle; a Copy whereof was sent to Sir Henry Sydney.*

**A**Lthoughe we vnderstand, from our Deputy of our Realme of *Ireland*, Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight of our Order, that vpon soche Lettres and Message, as he lately reaceued from you, your good Meaninge to staye, as moche as in you shall lye, the disordered Refort and Hauntinge of certen evill disposed People, of the *Ilands*, and *Kentyre*, into the Northe Partes of our Realme of *Ireland*, there to invade and spoile our good Subiects; and that you are the more earnestly mynded thus to doe, in Respect of the Goodwill we beare to the Queen of *Scottes*, your Soveraigne; for which your Goodwill we cannot but thanke you, and commend your good Dexterity, in being adverse to soche barbarous rude People. Yet, forasmuche as otherwise we heare, that, at this present, the Heads of the saide People have assembled great Numbers, and made and levyed great Taxes of Victuall, and that partly in soche Countries as you have Charge of, and in other Places, where Th'erle of *Cassells*, and soche like, as are nowe ioyned withe you in Freindshippe, have to commaund: We have thought good thus plainly to write vnto you, that if these Reports shall prove true, and that any Numbers shall resort into our saide Realme, beinge in this Sort ayded and releived vnder your Rule, we doubt not but they shall fynde small Advantage of their Comminge, or Intentions to annoy our Realme. And for your Parte, we shall make lesse Accompt of soche Goodwill, as in Apparaunce you have pretended, bothe heretofore, and lately towards us. And on the other Part, if your Doings shall accorde with your Lettres to our Deputy, you shall not faile, but fynde vs alwayes redie to acquite your Goodwill at all Tymes. And in this Sort we have thought best to write as plainly as we meane, whiche in all Causes proveth best. At *Eston*, the xiiijth of *August*, 1568.

*The Earl of Argyle's Answer to Queen Elisabeth.*

*Please your Highnes,*

**I**Reaceved your Majesties Lettres at *Glassgo*, the xxijth Daye of *August*, perceuinge thereby, it is come to your Knowlege, my laste Writinge sent to the Deputie of *Ireland*; whereof pleaseth your Highnes to give me Thanks.



Conforme to my former Wrytinge written to him. My Mind was, and is to doe whatsoeuer might doe your Highnes Pleasure, soe farre as lyethe in my Power, in all Thinges that is vnder my Charge, or all others that I may resonably staye, from troublinge of your Highnes Country, or Liege. And that most speacially, in Hope your Highnes will set forwardes the Queenes Majestie, my Sovereigne, to her Aucthority Ryal, and Suppresseinge of her vnnaturall and disobedient Subiectes; conforme to your Highnes Promise made to her Grace, whiche, I doubt not, but your Majestie will doe, in Respect of your princely Honor, and that my Sovereigne is soe nere of Blood to your Highnes. And where your Majestie writethe, that there is great Nombers of People levied in my Bounds, and my Lord of *Cassels*, who is my Freinde, to invade your Majestie Lieges in the Realme of *Irelande*; I assure, on my Honor, that your Majestie shall not fynd the Reportes to bee true, nor yet shall doe nothinge that maye be offensive to your Majestie, you standinge good Freinde to my Sovereigne. But shall doe your Highnes all the Honour and Service that lyethe in my Power, next her Grace, whom to I owe my Obedyence and Service. Thus makeinge my humble Commendacions of Service, committe your Majestie to the Protection of th'eternall God, 24 of *August*, 1568.

Your, &c.

Argyle.

Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Cecill.

S I R,

I N my Lettre of myne owne Hand, I remember I noted vnto you (in speakinge of *Edward Butler*) a Servaunt of myne, of great Familiartytie withe him, and of Trust about my self. At whose earnest Peticion to travell the seconde Tyme to *Edward Butler*, and to make Proof what he coulde do by Perswasion to bringe him hither, I lycenced him to departe, and is now retourned from him this Morning; after the Ensealinge of my other Letters, he declarethe, that he founde him in the County of *Tipporary*, nere *Durlees*, withe 1000 Men in his Company, his Brother Sir *Edmond* within twoe Miles of him, accompanid withe so many, but in freindly Manner, without offeringe Violence one to the other. My Man vsed what Perswacion he thought mete for his Repaier vnto me, alleadginge my Care of him in Tymes paste, my Love to him for the present, his Education in my House, the Honor of his Race, my good Inclynation to remyt his Fault, vpon Submission, and his owne Miserye, which woulde followe, if he shoulde be proclaymed a Rebelle. He answered in some Things as thoughe he had a Disposition to come, savyng that his Brother Sir *Edmond* was (as he saide) redy to cut his Men in Peces, as sone as they shoulde departe: He alleadged the Hatred of his Brother, the Earle, towardes him; his owne Desertes to be soche, as he coulde looke for no Favour. Lately the Apprehension of Sir *John* of *Desmond*, who if for litle or nothinge was sent to the *Tower*: Howe shall I (quoth he) presume of Favour, that have these People aboute me, and so many redy to complaine, if they shoulde be deseuered. In Th'end, my Man procured a Conference betwene the twoe Brothers; they met, and had longe Speache togeather. Sir *Edmond* offered him very resonable, in many Points, and desired to speake withe him in secret. But to that *Edward* answered, Your secret Conference, Brother, hathe brought me to this Mischeif, and therefore what you liste to saye, speake openly. In Th'ende, they departed without any Conclusion; my Man still accompanid *Edward*, and, in Th'ende, departed from him, with this Determynacion, That he wolde neuer come at me without a Pardon, or a Protection; and with any of these I coulde bringe *Tirlaugh Lenagh* to *Dublin*, and could have done *Shane O'Neill*, I suppose, when he was in the Cheif of his Pride. By theis Things, Sir, ye may gather his Disposition, the Necess-



fitie of the Erles Comminge, who felethe the most Smart of any other. The Amasednes of the People in those Parts, and the Feare to complayne, thoughte withe theis twoe great Companies they be, in a Manner, eaten vp. Nevertheless I am credibly enformed, that the whole Country is made to beleue by soche as come out of *England*, that all, vnder the Rule of my Lord of *Ormond*, are exempted from my Authority; and that this is the principall Cause why they seeke for no Redresse here. Sir, you knowe best my Disposition to be rid, not only from that, but from the rest, wherein I will blesse every Instrument that shall further my Reuocation; and, fixinge my chief Hope vpon your self, I leave to trouble you, this viiith of *November*, 1568.

*Your bounden and assured to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*To the Same.*

S I R,

AS this Bearer was redy to imbarke, Capteyne *Gilbert* arryved here, withe Lettres from the Queenes Majestie, and other from your selfe. Those from her Highnes concerned the Earle of *Desmonde*, that Order might be taken for his Lyvinges, whereof Parte to ainswere his great Dett to her Majestie, and Parte to support his owne Charges there, and the Relief of the Countesse here; wherein I will, withall convenyent Speede, trauell, to sett some Order, accordinge to her Highnes Direction. But, if any Thinge procuer any Certainty of that Revenue, it will be the Residence of a President in *Mounster*, whereof I here nowe some Towardnes. At whose Arryvall I fynde it most expedyent that I repaire thether; whiche I cannot doe, vnles I be furnished with the Corne, whereof I wrote in my other Lettres by *Paule*. The Haft, as I saide, of this Bearer, and myne owne ill Hap to use Phisicke, at this Instant, is the Cause that I desier to be excused to her Highnes, that I write not more at Leingth in therles Causes. But chieflie I confesse it an Iniury to my self, that I write not to you of myne owne Hande, in Ainswere of your most lovinge and kynde Lettres; which give me more Comforte, then euer I looked to enioye in this Governement. But in this Error you must not only forgive me, for your owne Particuler, but alsoe excuse me to my Wief, to whome I have no Tyme to saie eny Thinge since *Gilberts* Arryvall. The Comminge of him, and the Departure of *Sackford*, beinge, as it weare, in one Moment, otherwise I woulde haue craued Pardon for my longe Silence to you bothe, and woulde have alleadged, that I might iustly soe doe, in those remot Parts of *Vlster*, wheare nether Tyme, Place, nor Occasion, served for the Dispatche of any Messinger. My other Lettres declare my Devociõ to *Thomas Stukeley*, your poore repentaunt Follower; I am fuer from his Harte, for otherwise he coulde not enioye my good Countenance; but since I nowe see, that her Majestie cannot allowe of his Service, I must be forie for his Vndoinge, and cease my Suite; nether will I otherwise, then with all humble Reverence, challenge that whiche I might clayme by my Patent, and that whiche the Deputies here have alwaies disposed; but make my Will her Majesties Will, in that Pointe: Nevertheless, as I thinke *Nicholas White* very able to execute the Office of Seneshall of *Wexford*, beinge a quiet Country, where no martiall Force is vsed, nor is greatly nedefull; so if, within his Graunte, the Captentrye of *Laughlin*, the *Cavenaghates*, and the Leadinge of Soldiers be conteyned, I cannot counsell that he is fitt for that Charge; otherwise I allowe of him, for his Iudgement, Honesty, and good Service. And he cannot want my assured Freindshipe, when he findethe any Taste of your Favour and good Opyinion. And the same I saie, for your Commendacions of Capten *Gilbert*, to whome I am as I have bene, vnles your Lettre have encreased my former Love to the Party. And soe wishing that Mr. *White*, in his Let-



tres, weare exemptid from those Captenries, and martiall Matters, I ende withe my most effectuall Commendacions. At *Dublin*, in Haste, this xiiijth of *November*, 1568.

Your bounden and assured to commaund,

H. Sydney.

To the Same.

S I R,

AFTER the Fynishinge of my other Lettres, and before the Shippinge past out of this Haven, here arryved from *Corke* Sir *Wharham* *Sentleger*; and, vppon Conference withe him of the Estate of those Parts, I fynde not only all his former Reports confirmed concerninge the vndutyfull Behaviour of the Earle of *Clancarre*, but lately *Spanishe* Shippes weare with him, and made secret Combynacion with him to retorne agayne before *Cristmas*; leavinge already in his Hande 1000 Targetts at the leaste, and a far greater Number of Sworde Blade Hargabuserie, and other Weapons: Besides, there is contynuall Message betweene the Northe and the Earle, and lyke Intercourse betweene him and those that be in Armes in *Kilkenny* and *Tipporary*. His Followers give fourthe his Intendment, to be Kinge of the Southe Parte of this Realme. And I fynde good Proof, by Lettres from her Majesties good Subiects of those Parts, that Sir *Warhame* hathe bene the greatest Staye, without whom and *Greinvile*, they suppose the most of the *Irisbrie* had revolted. And, forasmoche as I see his Disposition altogeather bent to be an Instrument to serve her Majestie there, and that vpon his owne Charges, I will retorne him within these twoe Dayes withe soche Direction, as I shall fynde metest for the present Occasion: You may nowe call to Remembraunce my former Opyinion touchinge this new Earle, made of an olde Rebelle, andlyke enoughe to prove the most dangerous Man, that, in our Memory, hathe bene in this Countrey, being best assisted withe the Service of the *Mac Swynes*, and other mercenarye Soldiours, and lyeinge most aptlie for forrin Assistaunce of any other; havinge a Number of good Havens at his Devotion, and those not without many Galleis, and other convenyent Shipping: And, since the Tyme that I directed my Lettres vnto him for the Delyverie of the Lord *Fitzmarrice*, he kepethe him in more Dureffe then at any Tyme before my Sendinge: For these Causes, Sir, I think it nedefull, that the *Spanishe* Ambassadoure of *Spaine* be talked with; that the President be hastned to come hither furnished with Money, and some Force, till these Occasions be taken awaye. That the Corne for whiche I write, may forthwithe be sent to *Corke*. That *Sackforde* be retorned withe Speede. And if the Brute be true, that *William Wynter* is by her Majestie already sent vnto the Seas, that he be dyrected to plie some Tyme to the Southe of this Realme about *Baltymore*, to visite these *Spanishe* Practisers, because I cannot well spare the Shippinge here already, from attending the *Scottes* vpon the Coaste of *Vlster*. This is all that presently I think mete to be spoken, savinge to beseeche you to imparte thus moche to her Majestie, in whose Service I will extende the vttermost of my Travell, bothe of Bodye and Mynde. And so preparinge on *Mondaye* next to beginne a Iourney, and in it to visite all *Leinster*, I ende withe my hartie Comendacions. At the Castell of *Dublin*, this xviith of *November*, 1568.

Your, &c.

H. Sydney.

To



To the Same.

ON the xvth of this present, I receyved yours of the 5 of the same, sent me by my Brother *Fitzwilliam*; and doe trust, though not in full Satisfaction of my Negligence passe, yet in Excuse of some Parte of the same, before the Receipt of theis, others of myne by *Thomas Sackforde* are come to your Handes.

I receyved twoe Writings, conteyninge Rates for Presidentes and Councells for this Realme; which I sende you herewith againe, accompanid with a thirde of myne own, not moche differinge from one of yours, whereby my Opyinion may by you, (if it soe like you) be manifested to her Highnes, and others, at your Discretion; affirminge, and that vpon Knowlege, that no Estate of a Councell can be placed to reduce ether of these Provinces to perfect Obedience, with the lesse Charge then in myne is sett downe; and howe the same shalbe borne (if it so please the Queene) by it apperethe alsoe; by which, if I have not miscast the Rates (as happely I have, for I my self was the best Auditor that was at the doinge of it) the Surplus of my Rate about the meaner Rate, sent by you, shalbe borne, and her Highnes noe more charged then presently she is, and accordinge to the meaner Rate: Doubtles no Man lyvinge is able to serue in ether of the Places: Then addinge the Charges of the fruteles Commissioners that from Tyme to Tyme must be sent thither, and of Necessitie; for els all woulde to Havocke, and the Revenue of her Lands nowe vtterly losse, which doubtles, in fewe Years, will growe to a great Matter, with the Fynes that for Charge of Bondes, and other Contempts, wilbe levied. I verily believe that, in a short Tyme, the Governement of those twoe Provinces will stande her Majestie in litell or nothinge.

Nowe if it be objected, that I might have rased so many Soldiours as nowe I offer, albeit not soe imployed as in *Mounster* and *Connaught*; to that I answer, I coulde not, for that of Necessitie I must have to answer soche sodaine Ventes as from Tyme to Tyme occurrethe, and to convey Commissioners thither; for that ofte Tymes, by the Way, there is more Perill then in the Place whither they goe. And this I thinke suffycient, or, at the leaste, it is as moche as I can presently devise to dissolue your dutifull and naturall Perplexitie betweene the Sparinge of the Queenes Treasure, and Advancement this Countreys common Weale. *Tirlanghe Lenanghe* is hunted on every Side, as by *Odonnell*, *Maguyre*, and them of *Clandeboyne*; he seeketh dayly to come to me, but not soe simply, as in God I hope to make him. *Edward* and *Peirs Butler* are with me, the first in curteouse Warde. My dere Sir *William*, get me Resolution for the Northe of this Lande, for, if her Highnes will not goe thorough with the Plantinge of it, this next Springe (accordinge as I wrote by *Sackforde*) I can faue her Majestie 5000 *l.* a Yeare, and have a large Rent promysed; but I will not be bounde for Payment of it, nor I counsell not to holde that Course.

I most hartely thanke you for your curteous Visitation of my Wief; I pray you sometyme harken of our Boye, and be workeinge howe to get Home the Father. I have no more, but with the my most harty Commendacions to your self, my Ladye, and my sweete Juell your Daughter, I wishe you all aswell as I woulde my self. From *Maryboroughe*, this laste of November, 1568.

Yours bounden and assured,

H. Sydney.

P O S T C R I P T.

S I R,

Since the Writinge of my other Lettre herewith sent, I called to Remembrance howe nedefull it is that the Presidents be here at a Tyme certayne;  
I  
soe



foe as neither by there over soone Comminge, nedeles Charge, shoulde be spent, nor by their ouerlonge Taryinge, Tyme shoulde be losse. By the Ende of *Februarye* the Parliament will ende, and they must foe be here as they may be redy to goe forward with me, by the Begynninge of *Marche*, for by the vth of *Aprill* I must be in the Northe, or ells it will not be well. I pray you be curious in this, and for him of *Mounster*, let him come with Coyne and Money, or ells he weare as good to tary at Home: Even nowe am I aduertised from Capten *Peirs*, that certen of Capten *Malbies* Northen Horsmen, named Ratleges (*Malbie* being in the *Englishe* Pale) have murdered *Ranuell Og Mac Alister Caraghe*, in Revenge of a particular Fude betweene them and him, for the Slaughtre of twoe of their Bretheren, in deede evill killed by him and his Men; his Brother *Alexander* came in, in the Daie of his Buriall, whoe, findinge that it grew upon a particuler Quarrell, contented himself; and foe he, with all the rest, (thoughe in some Suspicion) remayne in Quiett and Obedyence. There weare xii of that Surname of the Conspiracie, whereof three are taken, and one alredy hanged in Chaines by *Peirs*; the Doinge was evill, but the Deede good. This Daye I receved this Letter, sent me by the Attorney of this Realme, and addressed to him by the Widowe Lady of *Dunboyne*, Mother to the Queenes Warde, nowe in *Englande*; I beleue euery Thing therein conteyned as if I sawe it, foe credyibly am I aduertised of it. It is to lamentable to vnderstande the pityfull and nedeles Calamytie that the Queenes Majesties good and obedient Subjects suffer, only by the Extorcion of the Earle of *Ormonds* Followers, and his Bretheren, in those Quarters, in Mayntenaance of *Coyne* and *Lyvery*, and his abused Liberty, whiche is to me a *Noli me tangere, quia*, &c. For the Honor of God, Charitie, and Knight-hood Sake, be good to the Widowe and Infant, and move the Queene eyther to charge my Lord of *Ormond*, or vs to see it amended. I pray you hasten some Money to me, written as before, and Year, as before.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Cecill.*

S I R,

VPPON the first Metinge of the Earle of *Ormonde* and me at *Lymericke*, I receued a Letter from the Queenes Majestie, very largelie in his Favour, the Coppie whereof I sende you here inclosed. And because it standethe upon many Parts, whereof some be very mete and allowable, some to be respited and well considered of, and other extreme dangerous (in myne Opy-nion) bothe for the State, and for my self, without Assistaunce to deale in: I am bolde not only to crave your Advise, but alsoe that I may have a Counter-mande either not to deale in it, or to procede by the Opyinion of the whole Counsell, and the Letter foe to be endorfed to us all.

The first conteyninge his Right to the Prize Wynes of *Youghall*, and *Kinsale*, pronounced by the Judges in *England*, I knowe duly to apertayne vnto him: And therefore, accordinge to the Tenor of her Majesties Commandement, the Receyvors of the Wynes by Sequestracion, shalbe fourthwith appointed to ainswere the Profitts to soche as the Earle shall assigne; and this I thinke very iuste and requisite.

The second for Restitution to the Earle of *Ormonde*, and his Tenaunts, by *Desmonde*, and his Followers, semethe very straunge. The Booke thereof, as I heare, amountethe to aboue fiftie Thousande Poundes; and the Demands of *Desmonde* against the Earle are accompted to be littel lesse, whereof no Mention is made. If this shoulde be restored, all the Cattell and Housholde Stuffe in *Mounster* (the Corporations excepted) are not worthe it; if the Landes be delyvered in Pledge, all *Desmond*s whole Inheritance, beinge reasonable surveyed, will not ainswere this 50000 *l.* these fortie Yeres to come. If then it be necessary, and not perilous to the State, that the Earle of *Ormond*, be not only Earle of *Ormonde* and *Offerie*, and Countye Palautyne of *Tip-*



porarye, but alsoe Earle of *Desmonde*, and Lorde of the Lybertye of *Kiery*, I woulde gladly be resolued. And then what Hope is lefte for *Desmonde*, and the Countesse to lyve; what Order for the Recoverie of 20000 *l.* forfeited to her Majestie? And when *Dias*, the *Portugeffe*, shalbe restored to soche Somes as are awarded to him, I knowe not. But hereof I doubt not, that where, by my late Arryvall in *Mounster*, I withdrewe half the Force of *James Fitzmorrice*, by encourageinge Sir *Thomas* of *Desmonde*, the Earles Brother, and many other of his Kinsmen, to serue her Majestie; that assone as they shall fynde the Earle of *Ormonde*, there auntyent Ennemye, to be possessed of the others Inheritance, they will not only dangerously revolte, but all the Countreye withe them, that have susteyned Hurte by the *Butlers*, and their Followers; whereof, I thinke, duringe the Contencions betweene the Earles, all *Monster* tasted. And, wheather it be now seasonable to make Warrs with soe great a People, is a seconde Question.

The thirde that he be free, and exempted from all Cesses, and Impositions, upon his owne Landes. The Subsidies excepted, semethe no great Matter, and is indeede the lesse, because the Burdens, layed by Cesse upon the Pale, is not often extended to the Counties of *Kilkenny* and *Tipporary*. But the Earle hathe dyvers Lyvings within the Pale it self; and this Clause causethe others of the Nobilitie, to looke for like Privilege. And Yesterdaye they made Petition vnto me for it, iudginge and affirminge, that there Services had well deserued thus moche Favour; and therefore hoped I woulde have Consideration of them, whome the Respect in that Article touched as moche, as the Earle of *Ormonde*, or any other. I woulde be therefore resolued, wheather the Example be good, to have the Nobilitie exempted, for their great Portions, and the Cesses, taken here by the Prerogative Royall, to be laide vpon the Sholders of a fewe Men, who beare already as great a Pack as they can susteyne.

The fourthe to provide Victualls at her Majesties Prices, in Apperaunce no great Matter, and extenuated and made lesse by this, that it is granted but for a Tyme, and that to be lymitted by me. Sir, I will ainswere this by Example. At my late beinge in *Connaught*, I established there the President Sir *Edward Fitton*, who, before my Iorney, exhibited certain Petitions to be considered by the Counsell; emongs which one was to like Effect, to provide Victualls as the Governor dothe. For my Parte, knowinge the principall Place that he helde within that Province, I thought it reasonable, that, as farre as his Commission extended, he shoulde have Liberty to provide Victuallles at like Rates; but, comminge in Question before the whole Councell, they concluded thus: That they had but one Queene, and her Majestie had but one Deputie, and he shoulde have the Prerogative, and none other. And soe the Lord President refused of his Petition. Therefore it woulde be considered, wheather that is fitt to be graunted to the Earle, which was denyed to a principall Officer, and for her Majesties Housholde, in *Connaught*, or not: And wheare it is alleadged, that other have the like, that cannot be prouid; and therefore I iudge that this hathe proceeded of wronge Enformacion.

In the vth, it is thought mete to be provided by Parliament, that Estates shoulde ceasse, &c. In this I will not hinder any Bill that he shall put vpp, but many Gentlemen that have Landes of his in the *Englishe* Pale, in Fee farme, and otherwise, thinke themselues narrowly touched in this, and, therefore, I iudge, the Bill will hardly passe; but, if it passe not, I knowe not howe to compell them; but sure, as farre as Justice will extende, I will favorably proceede, and will treate withe the rest, if they be brought vnto me; wherein he shall have any ordynary Proceffe or Commaundement for their Aparauce; but if they doe not consent in all Points to his Lordships Likeinge, haveinge Lawe on their Side, I cannot vse compulsory Meanes to wrest Justice, nor, I hope, it is not required in my Place.

The vijth and vijth, conteyne his Petition for *Langblin*, and his Recompence for the same; wherein his Titell shalbe examyned, and the Examinacion, withe my



my Opyinion of that whiche he desirethe in Recompence, certyfyed to her Majesty ; but if his Lordship meane to challenge the Queenes Majesties House of *Langhlin* ; which I gather by this, that it is alledged, that it was builded in his Mynorytie : I mervell howe he can intitle himself to a House of Religion by Inheritance ; if he meane the olde Castell in *Langhlen* Towne, I beleue (and so I am credibly enformed) that there was no newe Increase of Buildinge there these 100 Yeares. And, therefore, it shalbe the more exactly examyned and advertysed. And thus boulde, not only to crave your Opyinion, but her Highnes full Resolucion in these Thinges, or ells that it may be referred to others, aswell as my self, I bidde you most hartely Farewell. At *Dublin*, the xvijth of *October*, 1569.

Your, &c.

H. Sydney.

To Mr. Secretary Cecill.

**I**F there remayned any reioysinge Humours in me, the former Parte of your Lettre of the 25 of the laste, which, togeather with an other of the 28 of the same, I receued the 12 of this present, weare suffycient not a litell to comforte me. But I assure you, I have felt Mysery without Releif so longe, as I remaine soe senseles, as I thinke nothinge can revieve me ; noe scantly Redemption from this my Servitude, aboue all worldly Things most heviest to me. I dare affyrme, there is no Servaunt in *Christendome*, that indurethe greater Toile of Mynde and Bodie then I doe, nor that with so litell Assistaunce weldith so weightie Matters, and metethe withe so many and variable Accidents ; and, albeit the Hapines of the Event exceedethe farre ordynary Expectacion, yet as, in the Proceadinge, I found litell Comforte or Consideracion : So, in the Ende, I finde lesse Thanke, or good Acceptacion ; herewith I have soche a Familier of Penury, as I thinke neuer none endured as a Prince Deputie ; What shoulde I in particuler dilate it, when I am forced to borrowe, yea almost to begge for my Dynner ? Howe then dothe my Servaunts, howe then my Soldiours, but most of all, howe dothe the poore Countrey, which hathe borne all, without receyvinge any Thinge, theis tenne Yeres past ? Suerly starvinge, ripe, abandon the Countrey, and leave it wast ; with this I am, I thanke my good Happe, hated of all here ; of the Nobility, for deposinge their Tyranny ; of the Merchaunt, for that, by my Perswasion, he hathe so farre trusted the Soldiours, as not receyvinge his Money is become Bankrupt (and indede so are some) of the Gentleman, for that he cannot get his Rent of his Tenaunts, thoroughe their Kepeinge of the Soldiours ; the Husbandmen cry out of me, and will doe no Worke, for that they are neuer paide for so long Beareinge the Soldiours : The Soldiours have twise refused to goe to the Feilde, for that the Horsman is not able to shoe his Horse, nor the Footeman to bie a Paier of Shoes to his Feete ; and when I punishe one of them for any Offence, done to the Husbandman, the rest are redye to mutyne ; and in deede, for the most Parte, Hunger enforceth them to doe that which they doe, and steale awaye my Soldiours doe every Daye. What Assistaunce I have to ease me in all this, God knowethe ; what I want I feele ; in espeaciall my Lord Chauncelor, nowe lame of the Gowte, and Mr. *Agard* almost starke deafe : In Fyne, I have not a Man of the Counsell, of any Action in Effecte, but *Cusacke* and *Bagnall* ; and God knowethe, withe what Digestiues I recyve out of them ; iudge. To ease these, none knowethe so well as you ; but, howe my Lettres are allowed there, God knoweth ; it semethe it is not mete for me to vnderstand, for I had neuer Answer of any I wrote since *August*, by *Owen Moore*. And, to knitt the Knotte of this Sacke of Sorrowes, I feele daily Increase of Decaye in Helthe, and yet not halfe fast ynoughe ; for, if I weare starke blinde, or starke lame, withe Quietnes of Mynde, I shoulde holde my self excused, in not doinge that, which nowe, without Thanke, I doe. But, Oh Lorde, why ranefacke I thus theis tender Woundes, speacially in your Presence, since



since by good Proof I finde, that you be consentible and conpatible with me ; well, I will noe more of this nowe, for I feare I have done to moche ; yet somewhat, I confesse, I am eased by openinge this my Greif. Nowe for our Particulers, and for our Children ; I am forie that you finde Coldenes any where in Proceadinge, where soche good Likeinge apered in the Beginninge ; but, for my Parte, I never was more redye to perfecte that Matter, then presently I am ; assuringe you, for my Parte, if I might have the greatest Princes Daughter in *Christendome* for him, the Matche spoken of betwene vs on my Parte shold not be broken. Articles, I confesse, I receued, signed, as I remember, by my Lord of *Leicester* and you, and well allowed by me ; but wheare they be God knowethe, for *Waterhouse* is weaned from me, and *John Thomas* is sicke ; the Paper I cannot fynde, but this for Trothe, Sir, I was neuer more ioyous of the Matche then nowe I am ; but howe, and whiche Waye, never conferre withe me while I am here, without speciall Direction, for I nether can care, nor consider, while I here dwell, for Wief, Childe, or my self \*. Remember the Queenes Profitte, aswell by Increasinge her Revenues, as Savinge a thousand Pounds a Monethe in Soldiours Wages. I pray you commend me most hartely to my Lady, and to our Daughter *Anne*. God bleffe you all. From the Castell of *Dublyn*, this 24 of *February*, 1569.

*Yours assured to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Orders taken by the Queenes moost excellent Majestie, with the Advise of hir Counsell, in the Causes of the Erles of Ormond, and Desmond ; and by hir Majestie, in Writyng, as followeth ; declared and notefyed to both the Erles.*

**F**URST it is ordered by her Majestie, that the sayd Erles shall proceed in the Chauncery in *Irelande*, by Bill and Answer, to an Issue concernyng all Matters in Question betweene them ; aswell for any Lands, Tenements, Offices, or other Hereditaments ; as also for all Manner of Slaughters, Ryots, Frayes, vnlauffull Assemblies, Breaches of the Queenes Majesties Peace, Spoylers and Deteynours of Goods, Cattells, or Men ; and for all Maner of Offences and Trespases, don by one against the other, or committed against the Queenes Majesties Lawes of the Land there ; and thus, without any dilatory Pleees, or Delayes, other then such as the Lord Deputye and Chauncellour there shall allowe of.

2. *Item*, It is furder ordered, that, after Issue ioyned, as aforseyde, and after Advertisement therof, from the Lord Depute and Counsaill there, vnto the Queenes Majestie ; such and so many Commissions shalbe awarded, vnder the Great Seale of *Englande*, to such Persons, and in such Forme, as, after Advise from the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill, it shall pleas her Majestie to graunt, for the Tryall of the sayd Issues ; which Commissions, with their Certeficats, shalbe retourned, first to the Lord Depute and Counsaill in *Irelande*, and by them shalbe opened, and well consydered ; and thereupon the same shal be retourned to her Majestie, with the Opinion and Advise of the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill, vppon the Certificat of the sayd Commissions, or Commissioners, so as her Majestie maye tak such Order, as the Iustice of the Causes shall require, vpon the due Examination and full Vnderstanding of the same, by Thadvise of her Counsailes, both in *Englande* and *Irelande*.

3. *Item*, It is ordered further, that the Profits and Revenues of the Price Wynes of the Ports of *Yoghball* and *Kensale*, shalbe, from Tyme to Tyme, received and taken, by such indifferent Persons, as the Lord Depute and the Counsaill there shall appoint, vntil such Tyme as the Queenes Majestie shall,

\* This related to his Son, Sir *Philip Sydney*.

\* Ex Autog. apud *Penhurst*.



by Order vnder the Great Seal, determyne, to whom, of Right, the same Profits do belong. And that sufficient Bond be taken, by the Lord Depute and Counsaill, of the Persons so appointed to aunswer the same truely, accordinge as by the Queenes Highnes Order it shalbe declared, the Right of the same to apperteyn.

4. *Item*, It is also ordered, that all Maner of Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, wherof the Erle of *Ormonde* was in quiet Possession, before the Fray comitted, and made between him and Therle of *Desmond*, in the Demesnes in the County of *Waterford*, the First of *February* last past, shall remayn in Possession of the sayd Erle of *Ormond*, without Trouble or Vexation of the sayd Erle of *Desmond*, vntil such Tyme as Order be taken, by the Quenes Majestie as aforesayd; or vntil the sayd Erle of *Desmond* hath recovered the same, by the ordinary Course of the Lawes of the Realm of *Irlande*.

5. *Item*, It is also ordered, that all Maner of Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, wherof the sayd Erle of *Desmond* was in quiet Possession, before the sayd Fraye comitted, and made betwene him and the sayd Erle of *Ormond*, in the Demesnes, in the County of *Waterford*, the Furst of *February*, shall remayn in the Possession of the sayd Erle of *Desmond*, without Trouble or Vexation of the sayd Erle of *Ormond*; vntil such Tyme as Order be taken by the Quenes Majestie, as is aforesayd, or vntil the sayd Erle of *Ormond* hath recovered the same by the ordinary Course of the Lawes of the Realm of *Irlande*.

6. *Item*, It is also ordered, that such of the Lands and Hereditaments of either of the sayd Erles, as shall appere to the Lord Depute and Counsaill, vpon Examination by them to be made, to haue ben in doubtfull, and not in quiet Possession, at the Tyme of the sayd Fray, shall remayn and be in the Possession of such indifferent Persons, as the Lord Depute and Counsaill shall name, without Let or Disturbance of either of the sayd Erles, vntil such Tyme as the Quenes Highnes shall take Order as aforesayd, or vntil such Tyme as one of the sayd Erles shall recovor the same against the other by thordinary Course of the Laws there. And that Bonds be taken of the Persons, so to be named, for the Aunswering of the Profits which they shall receve of the sayd Lands, to such, as by the sayd Recoverey or Order, they shall apperteyn.

7. *Item*, It is further ordered, that the sayd Erle of *Ormond*, and his Servants, and Folowers shall kepe the Quenes Majesties Peas against the sayd Erle of *Desmond*, his Servaunts and Folowers; and that likewise the sayd Erle of *Desmond*, his Servaunts and Folowers, shall kepe the Quenes Majesties Peace against the sayd Erle of *Ormond*, his Servaunts, and Folowers, vntil it shalbe otherwise ordered by her Majestie.

8. *Item*, Forasmochas vpon Examination of the great Disorder committed in the forsayd Fraye, betwixt the sayd two Erles, in open Feld, with Men armed, both on Horseback and on Fote, by Reason of the Contraryete, appering aswell in the Aunswere of the sayd Erles, being therewith chardged, as in the Testimony of sum Persons examined theruppon in *Irlande*, and sent hither in Writting, it hath not fully appered whether both the sayd Erles haue ben guilty of the sayd Disorder and Conflict as they haue been chardged, or wherwith they hath ben moost guilty therof; but that a further Tryall of the Trough therof is to be made by Commission in *Irlande*: Her Majestie, notwithstanding, perceiving plainly, that her Peas was evidently broken by the sayd Conflict and Fraye, and sundry of her People therein slayne, and that both the sayd Erles did fight in open Felde, although that the one chardgeth the other with the Begynnyng; hath thought meet for Punishment therof, and doth order, That either of the sayd Erles shall yeld to her Majestie in the Name of Fine, as a Knowledg of the Breach of Peas, the Somme of thousand Pounds, to be taken of the Profits of their Goodds and Lands, within the same Realm of *Irlande*, to her Majesties Vse. And yet, nevertheles, if, vpon Examination and Certificat to be made of the same, her Majestie shall iudge that one of them did therein offende, and that the other was not guilty



of the Offense, or was not so much in Faulte as the other; that the Party judged guilty shall pay the Fyne afore assessed; and the other shall, either be acquitted, or, according to the Quantitie of the Offence, moderated in the Payment of the sayd Fyne.

9. *Item*, Where both the sayd Erles be indebted to the Queenes Majestie in diuers great Summes of Moneye, aswell vpon Prests and Loanes made vnto them by her Majestie, as for Rents and other Duetyes due to her Majestie: It is ordered by her Majestie, that the sayd Erles, after their Arryval in *Irlande*, shalbe called to Accompt, and shall mak Payment of all such as shall appear to be due Debt in such Sort and Manner, as her Lord Depute and Counsaill shall order and decree, moost for Thadvantage of her Majestie, according to the Necessite of her Service.

10. *Item*, It is ordered, that the sayd Erle of *Ormonde* shall, within twenty Dayes next after his Repayr in to *Irlande*, delivre to the Lord Depute and Counsaill a Bill in Writting, conteyning the Names of all such Persons as he shalbe able to chardg with any Treason, Murdre, Felonnye, or other notable Offence against the Peace, and whom Therle of *Desmond*, or any by his Commaundement, or Consent, doth maynteyn in his Countrey: Whereupon the sayd Depute and Counsaill shall giue Knowledge to the sayd Erle of *Desmond*, and him shall chardge to cause all the same Persons, or so many of them, as the Lord Depute and Counsaill shall think meet, to be apprehended and produced to aunswer to such Offence, as, by Order of Lawe, they ought to be; which Chardge and Commaundemente, the sayd Erle of *Desmond* shall, to his vttermoost, obserue and kepe in such Manner, as the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill shall prescribe.

11. *Item*, It is also ordered, that the sayd Erle of *Desmond* shall, within twenty Days next after his Repayr in to *Irlande*, delivre to the Lord Depute and Counsaill a Bill in Writting, conteyning the Names of all such Persons as he shalbe able to chardge with any Treason, Murdre, Felonnye, or other notable Offence against the Peas, and whom the Erle of *Ormonde*, or any by his Commaundement, or Consent, doth maynteyn in his Countrey: Whereupon the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill shall giue Knowledge to the sayd Erle of *Ormonde*, and him shall chardge, to cause all the same Persons, or so many of them as the Lord Depute and Counsaill shall think meet, to be apprehended and produced to aunswer to such Offence, as by Order of Lawe they ought to be; which Chardge and Commaundemente, the sayd Erle of *Ormonde* shall, to his vttermoost, obserue and kepe in such Manner, as the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill shall prescribe.

12. *Item*, It is also ordered, that the Lord Depute and Counsaill shall here and determyn as many of the Controuersies before remembred, concerning Goods and Cattells, or the Deteynors of them, or of any Person or Persons imprisoned, in such Sort and Manner as shalbe thought to them meetest, for the Service of her Majestie: And for such of the same Controversyes as shalbe thought not meet or necessary to be determyned by the sayd Depute and Counsaill, that the same shalbe remitted to the Order of her Majestie, vpon Return of the Commissioners aboue mentioned. And, whatsoeuer Orders the Depute and the Counsaill shall take in the Matters mentioned in this Article, the same shalbe as good and effectual, and taken and accepted, as though the same was expresly prescribed and ordered by her Majestie; any Thing before remembred, to the Contrary, notwithstanding.

13. *Item*, It is furder ordered, that the sayd Erle of *Ormonde* shall, within twenty Days next after his Repayr in to *Irlande*, put in such sufficient Pledges to the Lord Depute, for the Parformance of any of the Things, which, by Recognifance, bearing Date the xxijth Day of *Nouembre* last past, he is, or shalbe bound to performe, as the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill shall think meete; and the same shall deteyn or alter, or fully delyuer, and put to Liberte, as shall seme to the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill necessary for the Service of her Majestie, and Contynuance of her Peas in that Realm.

14. *Item*,



14. *Item*, It is likewise ordered, That the sayd Erle of *Desmonde* shall, within twenty Dayes next after his Repayr in to *Irlande*, put in such sufficient Pledges to the said Lord Depute, for the Performance of any of the Things, which, by Recognifance, bearing Date as in the aforesayd, the xxijth Day of *Nouembre* last past, he is, or shalbe, bound to perform, as the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill shall think meet; and the same shall deteyn or alter, or fully delyuer, and putt to Liberte, as shall seme to the sayd Lord Depute and Counsaill necessary for the Service of her Majestie, and Contynuance of her Peas in that Realm. In Witnes wherof, We have caused our Great Seale of *Englande* to be putt to these Presents, being signed with our owne Hands. Geven at our Pallace at *Westminster*, the xxijth Day of *December*, 1565, the vijth Yere of our Reigne.

*The Submission of Therle of Ormonde.*

WHERE I have byn charged, before your most honorable Lordships, of late, with Thassembling of a Force of Men in warlike Maner; and that I have carried the same Men with me, from myne owne Countrey in to the Countie of *Waterforde*, and there did kill a grete Number of Therle of *Desmonds* Men; whereupon I dyd than declare the Causes of my Assembling of those Men, and my other Doings, that I was than charged withall, to be suche as my Auncestours, and other noble Men of the Realme of *Irlande* heretofore, for their owne Defense, and for the Defense of the Subjects adioyning to them, have, Tyme out of Mynde, vsed to do; and that, without Doing thereof vpon suche Occasions, as the said Erle of *Desmond* then dyd minister, the noble Houses of that Realme could not have had Contynuance hitherto; neither can they have Contynuance hereafter, so long as any Subiect there shalbe permitted to levie, vnlaufullly, any Force offensive; and that the Force I levied was, forst, for the Defense of myne owne Countrey; and, being assembled, went, at Sir *Moryces* Request, in to his Contrey, to bring away his Cattell, vnder my Garde, in to myne owne Countrey; and travelling quietly within a Myle of Sir *Moryces* House, in the high Way, Therle of *Desmond*, accompaned with a grete Number of proclaimed Traitors, and *Ierishe* Rebels (whom I had Commaundement and Auctoritie, from the Governour, to prosecute with Force and Severitie) set vpon me, as appereth by Depositions; so as I was driven, for Savegard of my self, and my Company, to comit some Slaughter vpon his Men, and the said Traitors and Rebels; which I thought, by the Lawes and Customes of the Realme of *Irlande*, I might have don, for the Defense of my self and others, the Quenes Majesties Subiects, and the Resisting of any Person, that wouold attempt any suche vnlewfull Force, as Therle of *Desmonde* than did attempt; vpon whiche my Declaracion, your Lordships favorably did advise me to consider well, whether I myght iustefie my Doings by the Lawes, as I thought I myght, and so wouold stand in Law against her Majestie, in the Iustefieng of my Doings, or submit my self to her Highnes Order. Wherunto I than assured, and so now do, that I will never stand in Law against my most dere and dread Sovereine Lady, in that, or any other Mater, but do heer most humbly submit my self to be ordered by her Majestie, according to her most gracious Pleasure and Commaundement; humbly beseching your good Lordships, therwith, to perceyve that my Desire of your Lordships, to consider of the Lawes and Customes of *Irlande* than, was not foe, that I dyd, or do seeke to iustefie my self therby, but for that, my Offence might, vpon your favorable Consideracion of them, appere to you to be no worse than it was: I meane, not ment of Malyce, by an offensive Invasion, but rather of a good Zeale, in Defense of her Majesties good and *Englishe* Subiects, vnlawfully invaded.

*Thomas Ormond and Offery.*

*The*



*The Submission of the Erle of Desmonde to the Quenes most excellent Majesty.*

**W**H E R E, by the honorable Estates of the Quenes Majesties most honorable Pryvie Counsell there, are objected and layde to the Charge of me *Garret*, Erle of *Desmonde*, diverse and sundry Treasons, Murders, Burnings, and other criminall Offences, against the Quenes most excellent Majestie, her Lawes, Crowne, and Dignytie: I, the saide Erle of *Desmonde*, do most humbly, lowly, and obediently, submytt my self, my Life, Landes, and Goodes, to my saide sovereign Ladye, *Elizabeth*, by the Grace of God, Quene of *England*, *Fraunce*, and *Irelande*, Defendour of the Faythe, &c. to be ordered and directid by her Majesties Determynacion and Iudgement, in all and singuler the sayde Offences so layde to my Charge, since I receyved the Benefyte of her Majesties most gracious Pardon. Wherein I do most humbly beseeche her Clemency, to stande my good and gracious Ladye; and, with lyke Humylytie, I beseeche her Excellency to graunt vnto me, as to the rest of her good and faythfull Subiects, the ordinary Course of her Graces common Lawes, for the Tryall of suche Tytle or Estate of Inheritaunce, as ys, or may be in Demaunde, betwene anye other of her Majesties Subiects and me, who am, and wilbe for ever, lyke as hereby I do acknowledge my self, her Majesties humble, faythfull, loving, duetyfull, and obedyent Subiect. In Wytnesse whereof, to be bothe faythfully ment, effectually spoken, and to be confirmed and approved with my Deedes and Fydelytye hereafter, I haue herevnto subscribed my Name, and sett my Seale, the xijth Daye of *September*, 1565, and in the vijth Yere of her Majesties most prosperous Reign.

*Gerrat Desmond.*

*A Formular<sup>a</sup> of Instructions and Orders, for the Establisshyng of a Counsell in Munster, with a Lord President to govern the same.*

**T**H E Lorde Deputy and Counsell of the Realm, hauinge suche Care as becommith them, for the vniuersall good Gouvernemente of this her Majesties Realm; and finding that the remote Parts thereof haue of longe Time, by Lack of Justice, and Administracion of Lawes, continued in greate Disorders: And that, vppon good Consultacion herein of longe Time had, no Menes can be fownde more meete, to reduce the same to Order, for the Honor and Seruice of Allmightie God, for Obedience to the Quenes Majestie, for the Recouerie and Conseruacion of comon Peace and Tranquilitie, and finally, for to breede and establishe all good Ciuilitie, then to haue Justice indifferently applied and administrid to all States and Sortes of People, haue, for that Purpose, certified the same to the Quenes moste excellent Majestie; who hauinge no lesse princelye and naturall Regarde to her saide vniuersall Realm, and to the People thereof, then even to her Realm of *Englande*: And beinge desierous, that the Knowledge of Allmightie God, and the good Fruits of Justice, shoulde be equally distributid throughe all Partes of her saide Realm, hathe (withowte Regarde had to anye Charge of Expence of yerelie Somes of Money) geuen Commaundement to her said Lorde Deputie and Counsell of her Realm, accordinge to their *Advises*, to erecte and establishe, by her Commission, speciall Counselles in sondry remote Partes of her said Realm, with honourable Stipends and Entertainmentes: Wherevppon, by her Majesties Authortie and gracious Consente, the Lorde Deputie and Counsell haue, in her Name, deuised, orderd, and establisht, in the Portion of the Realm, which is commonlie callid *Munster*, a Counsell of a convenient Nombre of Parsons of the thre Estates, in the same Partes. And, because the same Counsellours shall haue an ordinarie Continuance, for Resorte of

<sup>a</sup> Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



her Subjects, Suites, and Complaints. *Her Majestie hath, by Advice of her said Deputie and Counsell*, determinid to haue one speciall Parson, beinge knowne meete, not onlie for Wisedom and Loue of Justice, but also by Birth indifferente, and free from all Partyalitie towardes the People of the same *Countrey*, to be the Chief and Heade of the same Counsell, and to be namid the Lorde Presidente of her Majesties Counsell established in *Monster*. In whiche Place and Roome, her Majestie, *by like Advice of her said Deputie and Counsell of her said Realm, hath*, vppon Knowledge had of the Wisedome, Habilitie, and Dexterie, in her righte trustie and welbelouid Seruant, *Sir John Perrot, Knighte, borne in her Majesties Realm of England, in the Countye of Penbroke*, appointid, nominatid, and placid the said *Sir John Perrot* to be the Lorde Presidente of the said Counsell: To whom her Majestie hath, by Commission, vnder her greate Seale of *Irelande*, geuen Authentie, with suche others, as he, by the said Commission, appointid to be of her said Counsell, to rule and govern the said Countrey and People. And for the further Instruction of the said Lorde President and Counsell, in Thexecution of the said Commission, the said Lorde Deputie and Counsell, by Authentie which *they* haue from her Majestie, will and commaund the said Lorde Presidente and Counsell, so established by her Majesties Commission, to directe their Doinges, in all Maner of Thinges, to the beste of their Power, accordinge to theis Instructions followinge:

1. Firste the said Lorde Presidente shall, att all Times, when he shall thinck meete, for the Service of the *Queenes Majestie*, call together all suche as be, or that hereafter shalbe appointid to be of that Counsell; and shall with the Advice of suche of the Counsell, as shalbe by their Instructions appointid to assiste him with Counsell, by Lettres, and Precepts, commaund all, and every Parson of the said Counsell, at all convenient Times, to do suche Things as shalbe meete, for the Service of the *Queenes Majestie*, in Administracion of Justice, and Maintenaunce of the same, amongeste all her Subjects, residinge, or cominge into the Partes of the Jurisdiction of the said Commission; and in his Commaundements and Directions to the said Counsell, he shall haue suche Regarde to their Estates, Vocations, and other Condicions, as the Credites, and feuerall Estimacions of the same Counsaillors, maie be in their due Actions, and well Doings, preseruid and mainteinid for the Furtherance of her Majesties Service.

2. And on the other Parte, her Majestie willethe, chargethe, and commaundith, that all, and everie of her Majesties said Counsaillors, shall exhibite and vse, to the said *Queenes Presidente*, all suche Honor, Reuerence, and Obedience, as to their Duties apperteinith, and as to the Parson hauinge the principall Place in the Counsell is due; and shall receave and execute, in suche Sorte, all the Precepts and Commaundements to them to be addressed in anie Proceffe, to be done, or seruid in her Majesties Name, and shall geue, at all Times, suche Advice and Counsell, as apperteinith to the Duties of trustie Servaunts and Counsaillors to her Majestie, and accordinge to their corporall Othe.

3. And to the Intente the said Lorde Presidente, thus established for the aboue recitid Purposes, maie be furnisid with suche Nombre of Assistants and Counsaillors, as be of suche Experience, Discretion, and Power, as maie be thoughte meete to haue the Name of her Majesties Counsaillors there: The said Lord Deputie and Counsell, vppon good Advise and Deliberacion haue elected theis Parsons (whose Names ensue hereafter) to be her Highe-nes Counsaillors, joynid in the said Counsell, with the said Lorde Presidente, in the Province, Counties, and Countreis, *above rehersid*, viz. *The moste Reuerend Father in God, E. Archbushhoppe of Casshell: The Right Honorable Thomas, Erle of Ormond and Offerie; the Right Honorable Connor, Earle of Thomond; Donalde, Earle of Clancarre; the Right Reverend Fathers in God, the Bushoppes of Waterforde, Corke, and Limericke, &c.*



4. Her Majestie also, by the Advice of the said Lorde Deputie and Counsell, dothe ordein and appointe Thomas Burgate, to exercise the Office of Clerke of the Signet and Counsell.

5. And because it shalbe conueniente, that some Nombre shalbe continuallie abidinge with the said Lorde Presidente, or suche as shall supply his Place, with whome he maie consulte, in heringe suche Matters as maie be exhibitid vnto him, for the better Expedition of the same: The said Lorde Deputie and Counsaile, by theis Presents, dothe ordein, that *James Dowdall*, and *Nicolas Walshe*, beinge of speciall Truste, appointid to be of the said Counsell, shall geue their continuall Attendance at the said Counsell, and shall not departe at anie Time with out the speciall License of the said Lorde Presidente. Likewise, *Tho. Burgat*, who shalbe Clerke of the Counsell and Signet, shall make the like Attendance vppon the said Lorde Presidente and Counsell.

6. And the said Lorde Deputie and Counsell haue thoughte fitte, by the Assent of the Queenes Majestie, that the said Lorde Presidente shall haue, in Consideracion of his continuall Attendance, and greate Paines to be taken in that Office, the Waiges and Intertainment of one hundrid thirtie thre Poundes, five Shillings, eighte Pence, *Sterlinge*, by the Yere for him self; and for that the Countreis aforesaid beinge in suche Disorder, and the People in the saim, in suche Disobedience, as presentlie they are; whereby it shalbe needefull for him to have continuallie aboute him some competent Nombre of Souldiers, whereby his Decrees and Orders iustly taken, and made, the more effectually maie be executed: It is considerid and orderid by the Lorde Deputy and Counsell, that the saide Lorde President shall haue the Choice, Leadinge, and Entertheyment of xxxtie Parsons, beinge Horsemen, at nine Pence *Irish* by the Daie; xxtie Footemen at eight Pence *Irish*, by the Daie; and two Shillings by the Daie, for a pettye Captein; and for a Trompetor and Guydon, it maie be allowed as the Lord Deputie of the Realm shall think meete; the Entertheyment and daily Waiges of all whiche Officers, and martiall Men, shalbe taken and deductid out of the Paie appointid for the Queenes Majesties ordinarie Garrison, resident in this Realm of *Ireland*.

Prouided allwaies, that the said Lorde President shall, at the furst Entry, geue in the Names of all, and everie the foresaid Souldiors, to the Clerk of the *Check*, to be entrid in his Booke, and from Tyme to Tyme, shall certefie the Deathes and Alteracions of the same to the Lorde Deputy, and Clerk of the *Check*, in convenient Time, as the same maie reasonably be done, hauinge Regarde to the Distance of the Place, and as other Captaines of the Army are bounde to doo.

7. Item, The said Justice shall haue for his Stipende, yerely, one hundrid Poundes, *Sterlinge*; and the Assistante or secundarie Justice, one hundrid Marks, *Sterlinge*; and the said Clerk of the Counsell, twentie Poundes, *Sterlinge*.

All whiche Stipendes and Wages shalbe paied quarterly by the Handes of the Threfurer at Warres, or Vicethrefurer here of this Realm of *Irelande*; and if the said Justice, or Assistante, and secundarie Justice, shall departe owte of the Limites of the Commission aforesaid, without the speciall License of the saide Lorde President, or hauinge Leave, shall tary longer owte, then the Time grauntid them, without reasonable Cause of Excuse, the said Lorde President shall deduct and defalk, owte of their said seuerall Entertheyments, so muche as the Wages of so manie Daies doth amounte vnto, to th'Use of her Majestie, towards her other Charges to be extraordinarily susteinid, in Thexecution of this Commission, at the Discretion of the said Lorde President.

8. Item, For the further Reputacion and Honor of the same Office, the said Lorde President shall appointe some one discrete and comly Parsonage, which shall continuallie attende vppon him as Sergeant at Armes; and shall beare before him the Mase of the Queenes Majesties Armes, in suche Manner as the Sergeant at Armes dothe beare the Mase before the President in *Wales*. Whiche Sergeant maie, at all Times, be sente by the said Lorde President and Counsell, for



for the Apprehending and Bringinge yn of any disobedient or contemptuous Parson; receavinge of every suche Parson, beinge of the Degree of a Gentleman, so comonly knowen, and havynge yerely Lyvelyhode by anie Meanes of tenn Poundes, for his Arreste, ten Shillinges; and for the Arreste of everie other Parson, five Shillinges eighte Pence; and six Shillinges eighte Pence for everie Daies Travell, and not aboue; he shall also haue his Diets in the Howsholde of the said Lord President, and towards his Maintenaunce, *if Neede so shall require*, the ordinarie Wages of one of the xxxtie Horsemen; and forasmuche as there muste be of Necessitie one Officer, to whom all Offendors and Malefactors are to be committid, duringe the Time of their Imprisonement; it is thoughte meete, that the said Lorde President shall appointe one Porter to haue Charge of the Gaole, who shall haue his Diets in the Howsholde of the said Lorde President, and be accomptid as one of the xxtie Footemen, and receave the Wages due for the same, and also suche other Profits, vppon everie Prisoner as ensuith, *viz.* For the Entrie of everie Prisoner, so to him committid, hauinge Lyvelyhode of ten Poundes by the Yere, *iii s. iiii d.* and *xii d.* by the Daie for his Diets, duringe his Abode in Prison; and for everie other Parson of inferior Condicion, *ii s.* for his Entrey, and six Pence by the Daie for his Diet.

9. *Item*, The saide Lorde President shall not remaine owte of the Counties and Countreis abouesaid, at anie one Time, without the speciall License of the Queenes Deputie and Counsell, or other Governor of the Realm, for the Time beinge, aboue the Space of six Daies, sauinge that, because the Habitation of the said Sir *John Perrott*, now President, is in the Countie of *Penbroke*, beinge the nexte Parte of *Wales*, opposite againste the Parties of *Monster*, and thereby the Passage by Sea but shorte, it shall be leefull for him, vntill our Deputie of our Realm shall finde it meete once in the Yere to repaier over into his Native Countrey, and for that Purpose, to be absente from his Chardge, one Monthe, and no more, excepte our License obtainid for the same.

10. *Item*, The saide Lorde President and Counsell shall (if Oportunitie maye serue) monthely advertise vs, the Lorde Deputie and Counsell here, of the State of the Countrey within their Commission, or oftener, if theie shall se Cause.

11. And wheare the said Lorde President and Counsell shall haue, by their Commission, sufficient Authortie to here and determin, by their Discretions, all Manner of Complaints, within any Parte of the Province of *Monster*, as well yildable as Franchise; yet they shall haue good Regarde, that excepte great Necessitie, or other Matter of Conscience, conceavid vppon the Complainte, shall moue them; they shall not hinder nor impeache the good Course and Vsage of the common Lawes of the Realm; but shall, to their Power, further Thexecution thereof; nor shall, without evident and necessarie Cause, interrupte suche Liberties and Franchises, as haue lesfull Commencement and Continuance by the Warrants of the Lawe, otherwise then wheare any speciall Complainte shalbe made vnto them of anie manifeste Wronge or Delaie of Iustice, done or vsid by the Owners, Officers, or Ministers of the said Franchises or Liberties; in which Cases the said Lord President and Counsell shall examin the said Defaults so alledgid by Waie of Complainte, to be committed in the said Franchises, and shall sende for the Officers against whom Complaint shall be made. And, findinge the same to be trew, they shall not only here and determyn the particuler and principall Causes of the Parties Complaints, but shall also resourm and punishe, accordinge to their Discretion, the Defaults of the said Owners or Ministers of the said Liberties. And if the Matter shall so serue, they shall cause due Informacion to be made to *the Lorde Deputie of this Realm*, of the Abuses of the saide Franchises and Liberties, so as the same maie be, by our Order, accordinge to the Lawes tried, and vppon iuste Causes the Liberties resumid into the Queenes Majesties Hands.

And wheare, amongeste other Liberties reclaimid and clengid in certen Places in *Monster*, the Earle of *Ormonde* hathe chalengid, by Graunte of Charter, to haue Regalities, and other Liberties, in the Countie of *Tipperary*: And likewise



wife the Earle of *Desmond* hath chalengid to haue Regalities in the Countie of *Kirry*: Forasmuche as heretofore, vppon some Questions moued herein in *Englande* before her Majestie, and her Pryvy Counsell, wherevnto the Chief Iustices of her Majesties *Benche* and *Comon Pleas* were all called, there was shewed, and not disallowed, a speciall Graunt made by the Queene *Marie*, in the fourthe Yere of her Reigne, by her Majesties Lettres Patents vnder the Greate Seale of *England*, to the said Erle of *Ormond*, to haue to him and the Heirs Males of the Bodie of the late Erle his Grandfather, of the Regalities, Knyghtes Fees, and other Liberties, in the said Countie of *Tipperary*, excepting fower Plees, that is to say, of Burninge, Ravefshynge, and Threasure founde, and the Profitt termed in the said Charter *De Croccis*, in the said Countie, all which are specially reservid to the Crown owte of the said Graunte made to the said Erle; and, at the same Time, no Graunt or Charter was shewed, nor anie other lefull Title, for the Liberties claimid by the Earle of *Desmond* in the Countie of *Kirry*: The said Lord President and Counsell shall not otherwise intermeddle to impeache the said Jurisdiction and Libertie of the Countie of *Tipperary*, then in suche necessarie Causes of Complaints made to them, as in the Clause nexte afore in this Article, towching the Vfsinge of generall Franchises and Liberties, is speciallie mentionid, or in the foresaid fower Cases, which be also speciallie exceptid in the said Graunt made to the said Earle of *Ormond*; excepte the said Regalities and Liberties shalbe hereafter fownde by evell Vfsage, Abuse, Non-vfsage, or other lefull Cause, duellie forfeitid, and so shall be for that Cause resumid: And for the other pretended Liberties of the said Countie of *Kirry*, considering no Title is shewed by some Warranty, the said Lord President and Counsell shall heare, order, and determin all Manner of Causes within the said Countie, in like Manner as they shall or maie, in anie other Places within the Jurisdiction of this Commission, hauing no Manner of lefull Franchises to the contrary, vntill further sufficient Matter shalbe shewed and allowed by Order of Law, for the Warrantie of the said pretendid Liberties against her Majestie.

12. *Item*, Wheare the said Lord President and Counsell, *toogeether with suche other Commissioners as the Lorde Deputie and Counsell shall appoint*, shall haue Commission, Power, and Aucthoritie, by Letters Patents under the Greate Seale of this Realm of *Ireland*, of Oyer, Determinor, and Gaole Deliuerie, in as large and ample Manner as anie suche Commission or Aucthoritie is grauntid to anie Commissioners for that Purpose within the Realmes of *England* or *Ireland*: The said Lord Deputie and Counsell do earnestlie requier and charge the said Lord President and Counsell, that he and they do often and diligently, severely and justly, sitte, here, and determin, by Vertue of the same, suche Causes as shalbe broughte before them in such feuerall Places, as beste may agree with the Necessitie of the Cause, and the Commoditie of the People.

13. *Item*, Wheare also the said Lord President *and Counsell, or two of them at the leaste, whereof the Lord President to be one*, hath full Power and Aucthoritie, by Letters Patents vnder the Greate Seale of this Realm, to execute the Martiall Lawe, when Necessitie shall require, in as large and ample Manner as to anie other it hath been accustomed to be grauntid within this Realm of *Ireland*: The said Lorde President *and Counsell* shall haue good Regarde thereto, that no Vse be of the Martiall Lawe, but wheare mere Necessitie shall require; for the Exercise thereof is only to be allowed wheare other ordinarie Administracion of Justice by Law cannot assume Place; foreseinge allwaies, that no Party hauinge *five Pounds* of free Holde, or Goods to the Valew of *fortie Pounds*, shall be tried by the Order of the Martiall Lawe, but by Order of the *Comon Law*; and yet, if Necessitie, for Service and Terror to others, shall at anie Time require to execute the Martiall Law vppon any one Parson or more, beinge of greater Valew in Landes or Goodes, then aboue is expresse, the President, in suche speciall Cases, may vse his Discretion, and thereof, and of the Causes that moued him, shall make us the Lord Deputie of the Realm pryvy.



14. *Item*, It is and shalbe lawfull for the Lorde President and Counsell, or to anie two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, to prosecute and oppresse anie Rebell or Rebelles with Sworde and with Fier; and, for the doinge of the same, to levye in warlike Manner and Array, and with the same to marche suche and so many of the Queenes Highnesses Subiects, as to his Discretion shall seme convenient; and if that any Castell, Pile, or Howse, be with Force kepte againste them; it shall be lawfull for the said Lord President and Counsell, or two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, to bringe before any suche Castell, Pile, or Howse, so to be kepte againste them, any of the Queenes Majesties Ordnance and greate Artillery, remayninge within the Limites of their Commission; and with the same, or by anie other Meanes or Engine, any suche Castell, Pyle, or Howse, to batter, myne, and overthrow, as to their Discretions shall seme beste; strayghtly charging and commaunding all Archbusshoppes, Earles, Busshoppes, Vicounts, Barons, Banorets, Knightes, Maiors, Sherieffs, Justices and Ministers of the Peace, and all other Gentlemen, and Comers, beinge her Majesties Subiects, to helpe, ayde, and assiste the said Lorde President and Counsell in suche Sorte, and at suche Time, as by the Lorde President and Counsell, or two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, they shalbe commaunded, vppon suche Paines, as, for the Nature and Qualitie of the Defaults, shalbe thoughte meete to the Lord President and Counsell to limite and asseffe.

15. And it is ordred by the said Lord Deputie and Counsell, that if any Parson complain to the said Lord President and Counsell, and that they shall think their Complaints worthy the Hearing, that the Parsons, so complainid vppon, shall be sent for, by a Lettre missiue vnder the Queenes Signet, to appere before the Lord President and Counsell, at a Daie and Place by them to be appointid, there to answere to suche Thinges as shalbe laied to their Charge, and further to be ordred, as shall stand with Righte, Justice, Equitie, and Conscience. And, for Lack of Apparance vppon suche Lettres, they shall sende for the Lettres of Allegiance, Proclamacions, or any other Processe to be made, directid, or awardid by their Discreffions, to the Sherieff, Constable, or other Minister, whereby the Partie complainid vppon maie be callid to come to his Answere, as apperteinthe. And if, by the Obstinacy of the Partie complainid vppon, the Case so require, to sequester his or their Landes or Goodes, or either of them, by their Discreffions: And furthermore, if in Case any Parson, hauing Habitation or Dwelling on any Landes or Tenements, by Lease or otherwise, within the Limits of the Commission aforesaid, shall, by Covin, Fraude, or Deceipte, or otherwise, absent him self or goo owte of the Limites of the said Commission: That then Lettres Missiues, signed with the Queenes Signet, shalbe deliuered at his Howse, Landes, or Tenements, and the Coppies of the same shall be lefte there; so that by moste Likelyhode the same may come to his Knowledge, beinge so sent for; and if within a certein Time after, to be limittid by their Discretions, the Parson or Parsons so sent for will make Defalte of Apparance: The said Lord President and Counsell, or anie two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, shall aswell proceede to other Processe, as to the Hering and Determininge of the Matter or Case in Variance, accordinge to the Lawes, Statuts, and Ordenaunces made therein, or otherwise, at their Discretions.

16. And in Case any Lettres Missiue be addressid from the Lord President and Counsell, or to any Parson or Parsons, of what Estate or Degree foeuer they be, to appere before them at a Daie appointid, the same Lettres beinge deliuered to him, or otherwise lefte at his or their Howse, as is above specified; the said Lord President and Counsell, or any two of them, whereof the said Lord President to be one, shall cause him or them, so contemninge or disobeyinge, to be punishid by Imprisonment and reasonable Fine, or shall otherwise proceede, accordinge to their Discretions; in which said Causes if anie of the Parties commit anie Resistauce or Disobedience, either of their Apparance, or contrary to the Commaundements, Direction, Decree, and Determinacion,



termination, made or to be made and decreed by the said Lord President and Counsell, that they the said Lord President and Counsell, or any two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, shall or may comaunde the Sherief, Maior, Sergeant at Armes, Cunstable, Bailief, or other Officer or Minister, to whome it shall appertein, to attache everie Parson so offendinge, contemninge, and disobeying, and to send him or them to the Lord Deputy in Warde, together with Certificate of his Contempte and Disobedience; or ells by their Discrecions to cause the Parties so attachid to be committid to Warde, there to remain in safe Custodie untill the Time the Pleasure of the said Lord Deputie and Counsell be knownen in the Premisses; or that the same Parson, or Parsons, assent, fulfill, and agree to the Determinacion of the said Lord President and Counsell, or any two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one.

17. And thesaide Lorde President and Counsell, *according to their Commission*, shall have Power and Au<sup>th</sup>oritie, by theise Presents, diligently to here, determyn, and trye all, and all Manner of Extortions, Maintenance, Imbraceries, and Oppressions, Conspiracies, Rescues, Escapes, Corruptions, Falshodes, and all other evell Doinges, Defaults and Misdemeanors of all Sheriefes, Justices of Peace, Maiors, Souueraynes, Portryves, Bailiefs, Stewards, Lieutenants, Exchetors, Coroners, Gaolers, Clerks, and other Officers and Ministers of Justice, and their Deputies, aswell in all the Counties and Countreis within the Province of *Mounster, aforesaid*, and within the supposed Liberties of *Tipperary* and *Kirry*, as in all Cities and other Townes Corporate within the Limites of their saide Commission, of what Degree soeuer they be, and punishe the same accordinge to the Qualitie and Quantitie of their Offence, by their Discretions, leavinge neuertheles, to the Lords and Owners of all leeffull Liberties, suche Profits as they may leeffully claime.

18. And it shalbe lawfull for the said Lord President and Counsell, or any three of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, to conceive, make, and cause to be proclaimid in her Highnes Name, and as they shall thinck good, any Thinge or Matter tendinge to the better Order of her Majesties Subiects, within the Precincte of their Commission, and the Repressinge of Malefactors and Misdoers, after suche Tenour and Forme as they shall thinck convenient; and to punnith the Offenders there by there Discretions, *so the same be not repugnant to the common Lawes and Statuts of the Realm.*

19. And allso the said Lord Deputy and Counsell haue thoughte meete that the said Lord President and Counsell, or any three of them, whereof the said Lord President to be one, shall and maye compound, vppon reasonable Causes by their Discretions, with any Parson, for all Forfeitures growing, or comminge, or that shall grow or come, aswell by all and singuler penall Statuts, as allso of Obligations and Recognizances taken, made, or acknowledged, before the said Lord President or Counsell, or any of them, within the Limits of their Au<sup>th</sup>orities and Commission, for Apparance, or for the Peace, or good Aberinge, or by Reason of any penall Statute whatsoever they be, made or to be made: And, allso, shall haue Au<sup>th</sup>oritie to cesse reasonable Fynes for anye Offence, whereof any Parson shall happen to be convictid before the said Lord President and Counsell; and suche Somes of Money as shall growe or come, by Reason of anie suche Compositions or Fines, they shall cause it to be entrid into a Book, subscribed with the Hand of the Lord President and Counsell, or two of them at the leaste, whereof the Lord President to be one, to Thintent the Queenes Majestie maie be answerid of the same accordingly. And, allso, upon suche Compositions made of Fyne or Fines, set as aforesaid, shall haue Au<sup>th</sup>oritie to cancell and make voyde all suche Obligacions and Bands.

20. And allso the said Lord President shall cause, as muche as in him lieth, all Writts or Proccesses, or *Letters missive*, sent, or to be sent, to any Parson or Parsons inhabitinge or beinge within the Precinct of his Commission, *from the Lord Deputie*, owte of the *Kings Benche*, *Chauncery*, or *Exchequer*, or any other Coorte of Recorde, diligently to be observid and effectually to be obeyid, accordinge to the Tennor of the same; and, if he shall find Negligence, Slacknes,



or willfull Omission in any Officer, or other Minister, to whom the Deliv-  
erie or Serving of suche Proccesses dothe appertein, he shall punnishe the  
same severely, according to the Greatenes and Qualitie of the Offence.

21. And it shalbe lawfull for the said Lord President and Counsell, or any  
three of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, after Examination in  
the Causes necessarie, vppon vehement Suspicion and Presumption of anye  
greate Offence in anie Partie committid, againste the Queenes Majestie, to put  
the same Partie so suspectid to Tortures, as they shall think convenient, and as  
the Cause shall require. And also to respite Judgment of Deathe vppon anie  
Parson convicted or attaintid before him and the Counsell, for any Treason,  
Murder, or anie other Fellony. Or, after Judgement geven, to staie Execution,  
vntill suche Time as he shall certefy vs, the Lord Deputy and Counsell, of his  
Doings and Consideracion of the same, and receave Answere thereof from  
vs. Provided allwaies, that the same Certificat be made to vs, the Lord De-  
putie and Counsell, within the Space of xx Daies after any suche Thing is done.

22. Also, if anie Inqueste within the Precincte of their Commission, within  
Liberties or withowte, being sworn and chargid vppon Triall of anie Fellow,  
Murderer, or anie like Offendor whatsoever he be, hauinge good and preg-  
nant Evidence for sufficient Proof of the Matter, whereof the said Offendor  
shalbe accusid, indytid, arraynid, do vtterly acquite such Offendor, contrary  
to the said Evidence, That then the said Lord President and Counsell, or anie  
two of them, whereof the said President to be one, shall examin suche Periu-  
ries, aswell by Deposition of Witneses, as by all other Kinde of Proffs by their  
Discretions. And, if the said Enquestes be convicte thereof before the said Lord  
President and Counsell, or three of them at the leaste, whereof the Lord Presi-  
dent to be one, the said Lord President and Counsell may, and shall, proceede  
to the Punishment of suche Offence by Fine, Imprisonment, Wearinge of Pa-  
per, or Standinge on the Pillory, as by their Discretion shall seeme meete.

23. Also, the said Lord Deputie and Counsell earnestly requireth, and  
straightly chargeth the said Lord President and Counsell, that they, at all  
Times, and in all Places, wheare any greate Assemblie shalbe made before  
them, to perswade the People by all good Meanes and Waies to them seem-  
inge good, and especiallie by their own Examples, in obseruinge all Orders for  
Dyvine Seruice, and other Things appertayninge to Christian Religion; and to  
embrace, follow, and devoutly to obserue the Order and Seruice of the  
Churche, establisht in the Realm by Parliamente, or otherwise by leeffull Auc-  
thority. And earnestly to call vppon and admonishe all Busshoppes andordi-  
naries within the Precincte of their Commission, diligently, fervently, and of-  
ten to do the same. And if the Lord President and Counsell shall find them  
negligent, vnhabie, or vnwilling to do the same, That then they shall aduer-  
tise the Lord Deputie and Counsell thereof, and they shall call earnestly vppon  
the Busshoppes, severely to proceede, accordinge to the Censures of the Churche,  
againste all notorious Advoterers, and suche, as, without lawfull Devorce, do  
leave their Wiues, or that, whileste their leeffull Wief lyveth, do marry with  
any other. And the Sentence, pronuncid by the Busshopp or Ordinary vppon  
suche Offendor, the said Lord President and Counsell shall endeavor them selves to  
the vttermoste, that they conveniently maye, to cause the same Sentence to be  
put in Execution according to the Lawes. And, if they shall finde the Ordina-  
ry slack or remisse in his Duetye, and not doinge according to his Office, they  
shall punnishe, or cause to be punnishid, the same Busshopp or Ordinarie, ac-  
cordinge to their Discretions.

24. Also, the Lord President and Counsell shall examin the Decaye of all  
Parishe Churches, and throughe whose Defalte the same be decayed, and to  
proceede to the Procuringe or Inforcing of suche as oughte to repayer any  
Churche or Churches, with all convenient Speede, according to their Discreti-  
ons. And in Cafes wheare her Majestie shalbe (after due and aduisid Inquisi-  
on) fownde, by Reason of her Possessions, bownd to repayer the same  
Churches: In those Cafes, Aduertisement shalbe geven to vs the Deputie of  
the



*the Realm* : Or, if they shall knowe of any that shall spoyle, robbe, or deface any Church, they shall, with all Severitie, proceede to the Punishment of the Offenders, accordinge to the Lawes, Statuts, and Ordenances of this Realm, or accordinge to their Discretions.

They shall allsoe assiste and defend all Archbushoppes, Busshoppes, and all other Ecclesiasticall Ministers in the Ministry of their Function, and in the quiet Possessing of their Lands, Rents, Tenements, and Hereditaments ; and shall punnishe the Withholders, Intruders, or Vsurers of the same, according to their Discretions, and the Qualitie of the Offence. They shall allso geue earnest Charge for the Obseruacion of all Lawes, Statuts, and Ordenances made, or to be made, for the Benefite of the Common Wealthe, and Punishment of Malefactors ; and in, especially, the Statute of Hue and Crye, for Nyghte Watches, and for Weights and Measures, to be diligently considered, and seuerely put in Execution.

25. Allso, the said Lord President shall haue and retain one Chaplein or Minister, that shall and can preache and reede the Homilies ; who shall be allowed his Diets in the Howshold of the said Lord President ; and shall receave the Enterteynment of *one of the Horsemen assignid to the President* ; to whom the Lord President shall cause due Reuerence to be given, in Respect of the Office that he shall haue for the Seruice of God.

26. Allso, the said Lord Deputie and Counsell will, that the said Lord President and Counsell, or two of them at the leaste, whereof the Lord President to be one, shall endeavor them selves to execute, aswell all and all Manner of Statuts of this Realm, Proclamacions, and other Ordenances, as to punnishe the Transgressors of the same, according to the Statuts, Ordenances, and Proclamacions, and to do and execute all other Lawes and Statuts of this Realm ; and to levy, or cause to be levyed, all and all Manner of Forfeitures conteynid in the same, according to the Order limitid by the same Lawes ; and, if Cause so require, shall compound for reasonable Causes, for all and singuler suche Forfeitures and Paines, by their Discretions, hauinge therein Regarde not to diminishe the Fines specially limitid by the Lawes, without greate Necessitie of the Pouerty of the Parties be ioynid with the Repentance and Disposicion of Amendment in the Partie : For, otherwise, it is perilous to geue Example in weakeninge the iuste Terror of good Lawes.

27. Allso, the Lord President and Counsell, or two of them, whereof the said Lord President to be one, shall and maie asseffe and taxe Costs and Damages, aswell to the Plaintiff as to the Defendant, and shall awarde Executions for their Doinges, Decrees, and Orders ; and shall punnishe the Breakers of the same, being Parties therevnto, by their Discretions.

28. And the said Lord President and Counsell shall, immediatly vppon their Repare to some convenient Place, where they meane to resyde within the Lymites of their Commission, appoint three or fowre honeste and sufficient Men to be Clerks or Attorneys to that Counsell, for the makinge of Billes, Ainsweares, and Proceses, for all Manner of Suters ; and, therein, not to multiply such Officers, leaste allso they be Occasion to multiply vnnecessary Suites ; and some trustie wise Parsons, to examin Witnesses between Partie and Partie, which, of Necessitie, would be chosen with good Aduise : Foreseinge expresslye and charitably, that no excessiue Fees be by anie of them taken of the Subiects ; but that their Fees be assefid by the Lord President and Counsell, and the same faier written vppon a Table, and fixed vp in some publike Place wheare the same may be seene and vnderstood of all Suters : And that, in the Beginninge, the same Fees may appere, and be meane and reasonable : So as, in no wise, the Prosecution of Relief, by Way of Justice, be not so chargeable, as the poore oppressid Sorte of Subiects be thereby discouragid to make their Complaints.

29. And, because it shall be convenient that a Regestre be dulye kept for all the Doings, Orders, Decrees, and Proceedinges, which from Time to Time shall passe by the said Lord President and Counsell : The Lord Deputy and Counsell

Pleasher



Pleasher is, That the Clerk of the said Counsell, for the Time being, hauing reasonable Allowance for the same of the Parties hauing thereby any Interest, shall diligently execute and perform this Charge, without any further Expenses, then shalbe especially directed vnto him by the said Lord President, to be sustained by her Majesties Subiects, for Entris of Articles and Orders.

30. And, also, the said Lord Deputie and Counsell haue thought it convenient, that there shall be one honeste and sufficient appointed, to be Clerk and Receavor of the Fines, at the Nomination of the said Lord President; who shall diligently and orderly keepe a Booke of all such Fines as shall be taxed vpon any Parson. The Fine to be enterid by the Hand of the said Lord President, and shall haue full Power to send out Proceffes for any Person vpon whome any suche Fine shall be so cessid; and to receive all suche Fines; and, in everie *Michaellmas* Terme, thereof to make a true and perfecte Account before the Barons, and other Officers of the Queenes Majesties *Exchequer*, for the Time beinge; to Thende, *the Lord Deputie and Councell, in the said Realm of Ireland*, may be asserteinid what Fines haue been acquirid to the Queenes Majestie, and howe the same haue ben employed. Prouided allwaies, and it shall be lawfull for the said Lord President and Counsell, to imploie, of the said Fines, reasonable Sommes for Reward of Messengers, and Repairinge the Queenes Castells and Howses, and in Buyldinge or Reedifyinge of Gaoles in eache Countie, within the Precinct of their Commission, where, by Lawes of the Realm, no other Parsons are thereto bound and chargeable; and, also, for furnishing of necessarie Vtenfills *only* for the Howsehold, as to the said Lord President and Counsell, or any two of them, whereof the Lord President to be one, shall seeme needfull and convenient. In all which, the said Lord President shall haue Regard to moderate those Allowances, as, of the Fines assesseid and levyed, the Queenes Majestie may be answerid some yerely reasonable Sommes towards her great Charges, in Maintenaunce of this Counsell, the same beinge to the Crown of *England* a new Charge. And any Warrant signid by the said Lord President, and any *one* of the Counsell, for any suche Some or Somes, shall be a sufficient Discharge to the said Clerk or Receavor of the said Fines, for the Issuinge of the said Somes. And the said Clerk or Receavor shall haue full Power for the Sendinge owte of Proceffe againste any Parson, vpon whome any suche Fine shall be cessid, and to haue his Proceffe *gratis* from the Clerk of the Signet; and he to haue his Diets in the Howse of the said Lord President, and to be accomptid one of the Nombre of his Horsmen, and to receave the Wages and Enterteinment due for the same.

31. Also, the said Lorde Deputie and Counsell haue thoughte good, that there be a Signet, graven with the Queenes Majesties Armes, vnder a Crown Imperiall, which allwaies shall remain in the Custodie of the Clerke of the Counsell, who shall signe, with the same, all Proceffes, whiche shall be sent from the said Lorde President and Counsell. In the vpper Margent of every of whiche Proceffe shall be written, *By the Lorde President and Counsaill of Monster*. And the Clerke of the Signet shall not take, for the Wrightinge and Sealing of everie such Proceffe, aboue the Some of  and for suche as shall be allowed by the Lorde President, or any of the Counsell, *in forma Pauperis*, Priveledge or Respect of Service, nothing.

32. Also the said Lorde Deputie and Counsell haue thought meete, there shalbe a continuall Howshold kepte, within the Precincte and Limits of the Commission aforesaid, in suche Place, as to the Lorde President shall seeme moste convenient; all Seruants necessarie for whiche Howshold, shall be at the Nomination of the said Lorde President; in which Howse eche Counsaillor bounde to continuall Attendance, and attendinge, shall be allowed to haue two Seruants, and the Clerk of that Counsell one, and every other Counsaillor, beinge either sent for, or coming for any needefull Busines, for the Queene or Countrey, shall be allowed, duringe his Abode there, one Seruant; and, for the more honorable Maintenaunce of the said Howsehold, there shall be allowed vnto the said Lorde President and Counsell after the Rate of tenn Pounds, *Sterling*,



by the Weeke, only to be imployed vppon the Table Charges of the said Howshold, half yerely to be receayd at the Hands of the Vicethreasorer, and generall Receavor of the Queenes Majesties Revenues of this Realm; for Payment of which, there shall remayn in the Hands of the said Vicethreasorer (who also is Threasorer for the Warres) a Warrant dormant, whereby the said Vicethreasorer shall be auethorised to paie, to the said Lorde Presidente, one half Yeres Allowance allwaies before Hande, towards the makinge of his necessarie Prouision, out of the Revenu; or if he shall not haue sufficient Threasurer, than owte of any other Threasurer. And the said Lorde President shall nominate and appointe one discrete and sufficient Man, to be Steward, or Clerke of the same Howsholde, who shall weekly write, and some the Charges thereof, and the same also shall weekly present to the said Lorde Presidente and Counsell, to be considerid. And at the Yeares Ende, the same totally sommid and signid, beinge allowid by the said Lorde President, and two of the Counsell, shall delyver to the Officers of the Queenes Majesties *Exchequer*, to remayn there of Recorde.

33. And, because her Majestie meanithe principallye to benefite her Subiects, not only with the Fruits of Justice, but with the Deliuerie of them from all vnnecessary Burdens: The Lorde President and Counsell shall foresee, that no Manner of extraordinarie or excessive Charge be put and layde vppon any Parson, againste their own Willes or Agreements, by finding or susteininge of any Horseman, or Footeman, or Horse-boye, or Horse, belonging to the said Lorde President, or any of the said Counsell, or of anie belonging to them. And in like Manner, shall see, that the Subiects be not oppressid with the like by any other, contrarie to the Lawes of the Realm, for suche Causes provided: *Neuertheles, consideringe the Season of the Yere is passid, wherein the President should haue made Prouision for him self, and the Counsell attending with him, aswell for the Prouision of their Howse, as for their Horsemen, untill the Fruits of the Earthe may be gatherid, this nexte Sommer; it seemeth meete, that there may be some reasonable Rate and Taxe set vppon the Countrey, by the Aduise of the Deputie and Counsell of that Realm, for the Relief of the said President and Counsell vppon reasonable Prices, aswell for the Maintenance of their Howseholde, as for their Horsemen and Seruants.*

34. *Item,* Consideringe the Queenes Majestie hathe Title and Right to no small Quantitie of Possession within *Monster*, aswell of the auncient Reuenue of the Crown, and of other Seignories deuoluid to the Crown, as also of the dissolved Monasteries, and other Howses of Religion, the which are not duely answerid to her Majestie as Reason woulde: The said Lorde President and Counsell shall, from Time to Time, imploye their Labors by all good Discretions to procure, that her Majesties Officers, or Farmors, appointid for that Purpose, may peaceably and fullie, from Time to Tyme, possesse and receave the Profitts of the same:

And the said Lorde Deputie and Counsells further Pleasher is, that the said Lorde President shall minister vnto every Counsailor in that Commission, being not allreadie sworne of her Highnes Counsell in *Irelande*, aswell the Othe provided in the Statute, for Swearinge of Officers, as also this hereafter mencionid.

You shall sweare, to the uttermoste of your Power, Will, and Conninge, you shall be true and faithfull to the Quenes Majestie, our Soueraigne Ladie, and to her Heires and Successors.

You shall not know nor heere anie Thing, that may, in any wise, be preiudicial to her Highnes, or the Comon Wealthe, Peace and Quiet of this her Highnes Realm; but you shall, with all Diligence, reueale and disclose the same to her Highnes, or to suche other Parson or Parsons of her Majesties Priue Counsell in *Ireland*, as you shall think may, and will sooneste conuaie and bring it to her Highnes Knowledge.

You shall serue her Maiestie truly and fathfully in the Roome and Place of one of her Majesties Counsell.

You



You shall in all Things, that be mouid, treatid, and debatid, in any Counsell, faithfully and truly declare your Minde and Opinion according to your Harte and Conscience, in no wise forbearing so to do, for any Manner of Respects of Fauor, Meede, Dreade, Displeasure, or Corruption.

You shall faithfully and vprightly, to the beste of your Power, cause Justice to be duellie and indifferently ministrid to the Queenes Majesties Subjectes, that shall haue Cause to sue for the same, according to Equitie and Order of Lawes.

Finally, you shalbe vigilant, diligent, and circumspecte in all your Doinges and Proceedinges, towching the Quenes Majestie, and her Affaires.

All which Pointes and Articles before expressid, with all other Articles signid with the Handes of the Lorde Deputie and Counsell of this Realme, and deliuerid to me, the Lorde President of her Highnes Counsell, establisht in theis Partes, you shall fathfully obserue, keepe, and fullfill, to the vttermoste of your Power, Witt, Will, and Conning; so helpe you God, and the Contents of this Booke.

xiiij Decembris  
1570.  
A°. 13 Elizabeth. Reg. Examynid by me, W. Cecill.

*An Order to the Sheriff and Justices of the Peace of the County of Monmouth.*

Apud Ludlow 9 Martij, An. Reg. Elizabeth, &c. 15, 1572.

**T**H E Quenes Majestie having appointed her right trustie and welbeloved Sir *Henry Sydney*, of the noble Order of the Garter, Knyght, to the Office of Lord President of her Highnes Counsaill in the Marches of *Wales*: In the which Office, though the said Sir *Henry* hath contynued for many Yeers past; and nevertheles, of some Yeers of that his Contynuance of Lord President as aforesaid, hath ben occupied, by her Graces Appointment, in other Service of her Majesties, within the Realm of *Ireland*, as Lord Deputy there. And, reteyring of late to the Place of Service of the said Office of Lord President, hath found the Countrey in reasonable good State, saving only the Countie of *Monmouth*. The which, at Tymes, whereof, partely for Want of the Feare of God, and partely for Lack of good Order, or dutifull Reverence and Obedience to the Lawes, have growen to such Libertie and Insolencie, as they have not left any Insolencie or Offence unatempted: So many Murders, Man-slaughters, Robberyes, Theftes; such Fighting and Quarelling, and manifold Offences; that no Country, within the Commission aforesaid, is so much misliked. The Contynuance and Increase whereof, semeth to growe by the Default of the Shieriff and Justices of Pees, in Respect of Favours, shewn one towards the others Officers, Servants, and Reteiners; wherebie, in maintenyng of Matters, one Gentleman or other shalbecome a Partie, what Offence soever the same shalbe. Whereof the said Lord President, being hartely sory, not only to see, but also to know, of so manifold Disorders, in a Countrey so apt for Civilitie and Quietnes; intendeth very shortely, with the Assistance of her Majesties Counsaill aforesaid, in Person to travail amongst them, to lern and try out the principall Causes, that worketh the Effect of these Disorders: And so having Notice, by Degrees, of the Favourers and Furtherers of the same, intendeth to sett down such Order of Chastisement, in publique Sort, as shalbe thought mete Reward for their Desertes. Nevertheless, the said Lord President and Counsaill, chiefly desyring Reformation of that which is amisse. Wherebie, such as are in Aucthoritie within that Countie, for Defectes of due Persueverance of Service, though may not, of mere Necessitie, be called to Accompt in that Behaulf; have thought good, in the mean Tyme, of the purposed Repayr aforesaid, to put them in Remembraunce of the Premises, to Thend they



may rather have Regarde to their Credit and Charge, and the common Quiet of their Country. It is therefore ordered, by the said Lord President and Counsaill, that a Letter, reherfing the Premises, be directed to the Sheriff, and Justices of the Pees, of the said Countie of *Monmouth*, commanding them to have Consideracion of these Things, in such diligent Sort, as may be answerable to the Trust in them reposed; bending their sole Study and Industry to the Performaunce of the Pees, the common Quiet of the Countrey, and Doing of Justice. And, for that Purpose, to assemble themselves together, and consulting, by what Meanes, good Order and Quietnes may be best contynued; and to devide themselves into viii, x, or xii Parties, more or lesse, as to their Discreacions; having Regarde to the Quarter of the Shier, and Number of themselves, as shall seeme most convenient; besides their generall Care, that every particular Member may give diligent Hede, within the Lymytts appointed to them, for Preservation of Quietnes and good Order: Shewing good Examples of Reformation in themselves, wherein it were not amisse, that the Order, heretofore prescribed to them, for appointing Overseers of good Rule, in every Parish, were estsoon put in Execucion. With no lesse Perseveraunce to Thexecution of the Lawes against Vagabonds, idle Persons, Loyterers, and such as can not yeld Accompt of their Way of Living, within the Compasse of the Lawe, lately provided in that Behaulf. The Statutes against Alehouse-keepers, whether they be more in Number then needeth, or the Places of their Habitations, convenient or inconvenient, is specially to be remembred; with the Statutes of Reteyners, Hue and Cry, and for Keeping of good and substantial Watches in Places convenient, at the Tymes appointed by the Lawes. And for the advoyding of the sundry and manifold Theftes there lately committed; the Order heretofore sett down, that the Bucher, or such as killed any Cattell, to cause the Hide and Hides therof to be openly shewed in the Market, or before the Overseers of the Parish, before the Sale therof, sheweth also to good Purpose to be remembred. Commanding them further, that as soon as any Offenders, for Murder, Felony, or Offences, shalbe taken, the said Justices of the Pees shall cause the Matter to be forthwith examined, and Certificat thereof made immediatelie, to the said President and Counsaill: To the Intent, that they thereupon may proceed to the Punishment of the Offenders, as the Case requirereth. And, finally, that the said Sheriff, and Justices of the Pees, shall mete and consult together, at the least, ones every Moneth, and more often, as Occasions may require; conferring amongst them selves, upon the Statute of the perticuler Partes of the Shier; and taking such Order for all Misdoers, as to their Wysdomes may seeme requisit. Signifying, the xxth of *April* next, of their holding Sessions; as also from Tyme to Tyme, to the said Lord President and Counsaill, the State of their Country, and their Proceedings in this Busines; as they tender the Service of her Majestie, and will for the Contrary answer at their Perill.

*Concerning the County of Worcester.*

**A**FTER our hartie Comendacions: Whereas a certen Controversie is of late risen, touchinge the Jurysdiction of the Lord President, and hir Majesties Counsell, in the Marches of *Wales*, by sekinge to subdue the Cittie and Countie of *Worcester* out of the same, to the Derogation of hir Majesties Prerogative, and her Heighnes Authoritie, established in those Parts; which Thing hath ben practised by one *Wilde*, who hath ben encouraged therto by Thadvise of certen Lawiers, who haue, to that Effect, subscribed a Booke, which we sende you herein enclosed: We have thought good to requier you to consider aswell thereof, as of the Statute made for Theestablishment of the saide Counsell, together with suche Comissions and Instruccions, as are graunted to the Presidents in that Behalf. And further, to enforme your selves, bothe by



foche as shall repaire vnto you from the Lord President, as also the said *Wilde* him self, what eche Partie hathe to saie therein : And, therevpon, to returne vnto us your Answer what the Lawe is therein ; and in what Sorte it shalbe requisite to proceade for Redresse of the said Disorder, as may be for hir Majesties Honour, and the Benefitt of the Realme. And so fare ye hartely well. From *Hampton Courte*, the xxiiijth of *February*, 1573.

Your loving Freinds,

W. Burghley,  
A. Warwick,  
F. Walsingham,

E. Lincoln,  
F. Bedford, Thomas Smith.  
Thomas Suffex,

To Mr. Attorney and Soliciter Generall, and to either of them.

Vera Copia,

Robert Bele.

*Grenewiche*, viij Martij, 1573.

UPON a Supplication and Submission, exhibited by *Roberte Wilde*, of the Cittie of *Worcester*, Gent. late comytted to the Custodie of the Knyght Marishall, yt was ordered, that he sholde be released, vpon his Band to be taken to hir Majesties Vse, in ij C l. that he sholde make his Repaire before their Lordships, at soche Tymes hereafter, as he sholde be reasonable warned. And also appere before them the first Daie of the next Terme. And touchinge the Matter in Controuersie, betwene the Lord President and the Counsell, in the Marches of *Wales*, and him, touchinge the Exemption of this Cittie and County of *Worcester* from the Jurisdiccion of the said Councell ; the saide *Wilde* shall not attempte or do any Thing therein, in the meane Season, to the Derogacion and Preiudice of the same, but submitt him self and stand to soche Order, as shalbe by their Lordships, with the Advise of her Majesties learned Counsel, taken therein.

*Grenewiche*, xiiijth Martij, 1573.] The Lord President of hir Majesties Counsell, in the Marches of *Wales*, was sent for in, and required, by their Lordships, to give Order, that *Roberte Wilde*, of the Cittie of *Worcester*, Gent. should be released, as aforesaid.

Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.

It may please your Lordship,

I Have forborne long to discharge my Duety to your Lordship, at lest by writing to acknowledge the Benifits I have received, and to make Account of the Successe of our Northerne Journey : But, because your Lordships Deserts towards me are allwaies before me, it persuadith me, that your Lordship, knowing that I hate Ingratitude, will allwaies judge of the Interest you have in me ; and so hold me excusid, howsoever I seme ether negligent or forgetfull.

In the other Matter, that concernith our Proceedings in *Irland* ; there are comme thence so maynie Apostates ; and so maynie of those *Welch*, and such as maie commodiousely bringe the Certainty to your Lordships Eares ; as it is not worth the Repiticion on my Part : Nevertheles the Effect is this, That Lack of good Forsight, in Provision of Bedding, and other Necessaries for the commen Soldier, have bredd Diseases in maynie ; and, in other, such a Lothing of the Place, as they chuse rather here to be hangid for Vagabounds, thenn to endure the Hardnes of this Winter Warre.

At my Comming over, I presentid here to the Lords above xx Articles, on the Behalf of the Erle, somme of them tending to the Increase of the Quenes

V O L. I.

S s s

Charge,



Charge, for necessary Fortification, and Remediing of the Decaies of the Armie ; and the rest, such as, in common Opinon of all the Bord, were meet to be grauntid : Yet, having now travaillid six Weekes for my Dispatch, I fynd no Resolucion to eny of those Petitions.

Which Slacknes is excusid, by the Loosenes of *Desmond*, and with their Care to meet with his Rebellion, wherein they travell so farre Southward, as they have lost the Sight of the North Pole.

Thes *Irishe* Causes, now in Question, have brought all Governours, meet for the Deputacion, to be considerid of ; emongs which your Lordship is namid. The Plotts appointid, for Reformation of *Ireland*, are divers ; somme thinking it meet, that the Deputy there do remaine. And that a Liuetenant, or a Generall, over the Armies, be sent with such AuthORITY, as Therle of *Penbroke* had in *Picardie*, in Queene *Maries* Daies : Who, after he had appeased all Sturrs, might retorne, and leve the Deputy to governe. Other have a Devise, to have the Provinces of *Munster*, *Ulster*, and *Connoughe*, under particuler Regimen, distinct from the Controulment of the Deputy ; which, as they say, shuld breade a certaine vertuous Envie in thes Monarches, who shuld do her Majesty best Service. Other Devises also ther be, which be more perilus ; as to have the Sword put into the Hands of the *Irishe* Lords. I mene Lords of *Ireland*, as Therlis of *Ormond* and *Kildare* ; and the Deputy only to manage Causes of Justyce and Lawe : But all thes prevaill not ; and, thoughe much hath beine said against the Plott laid by your Lordship, yet it is likely, that that Course, namely of PRESIDENCY, shall proceede.

Since my Comming, I have urgid a Sewt to maynie of the Lords, and most especially in Writing to my Lord of *Lecester*, to this End, that, if the Deputy now there must contynew, then that he be assisted with a private Army ; and that he be directly commaunded to enter *Ulster* with Force ; and that his Actions may be such hereafter, as may concurre with the Erle of *Essex*, in such Sort, as both their Doings do seeme to tend to one Ende.

*Secondly*, That emongs such, as are now namid to the Government, the Erle of *Essex* be thought uppon, whose Expenses being above that, that eny Subject is hable to beare, might be easid with the Entertainment of the Deputacion ; whereby the Quene shuld seme to countenance the Warr, and shewe a Meaning, to go thorough with that which is begon ; wherunto I added such Reasons, as his Friends here have collectid.

*Lastly*, concludid, That if her Majesty ment to pursue the Cours in *Ulster*, and that Therle shall remayne ther ; that then they wold consider of some Mann of Experience and Knowledge, wherof ther weer but two ; the one, of that Greatness about her Majestie [the Earl of *Leicester*] as he nether cold be sparid from the Affaires of the Realme, nor wold be entreatid to accept so great Travell ; wherby, of Necessity, we were drivenn to the other, whom the Cuntrey did above all Menn desier. Whose Successe against *Shane Oneall* hath bine a Terroure to the Northern Rebels, whose Experience of the hole Goverment was able to make a short Warre, and with as easy Conditions for the Prince, as eny other ; who being also well affectid to Therle of *Essex*, and to the Cause which he had in Hande, was likelie to settell his and the Gentlemens Feet fym. And, because I shuld not seeme to wade in Cloudes, I namid my Lord President of *Wales*.

I know, my Lord, that I shall be so farre of from deserving Thanks of your Lordship, as I looke for some Rebuke for my Eassenes ; but seur I am, it canne do you no Hurt ; for the Queene shall vewe it, and therby, at lest, must think vppon your former Service. Neuertheles, by this, or eny other Meane, your Lordship shall be sought by her Majestie, directly or indirectly. I humbly beseech you not to stand vppon Condictions, for your owne privat or particuler Comodity, so as you be furnished meet for the Service. For as you shall deserve well of all *England*, and all *Ireland*, so most especially of the Erle of *Essex*. And, if the Quenes Majestie be not good vnto you, be good  
vnto



vnto your self; for that your Lordship knoweth you may do, if you list. And so meaning neuer to offend you herafter by Silence, I comytt your Lordship to the Tuicion of God. At the Court, this 17 of December, 1573.

Your Lordships bounden,

during Lief,

Superfcribed,

Ed. Waterhous.

To the right honorable my singuler good Lord,  
Sir Henry Sydney, Knyght of the Order, and Lord  
President of Wales.

To Sir William Fitz William, Lord Deputy of Ireland, and to the Earle  
of Essex.

By the Queene.

**R**IGHT trustie and welbelovid, and right trustie and right welbeloued  
Cosen, we grete you well. We have at good Leingth considered of the  
Matter propounded by you our Cofin of *Essex*, for the Enterprice to reduce  
the Province of *Vlster* to our Obedience, by yeldinge to the Maintenaunce of a  
Garrison there, with the yerely Charge of xxvi thousand Pounds for twoe  
Yeres, and by grauntinge to expende thirteene thousand Pounds in fortifyinge  
of certaine Places there within the same twoe Yeres. In which Matter we  
thinke it mete to imparte iointly to you twoe our Opinion and Determination:  
First, thoughe you the Erle, first have by your feuerall Lettres, and nowe alsoe  
by the Declaration of *Nicholas Malbie*, labored to make this Enterprice ap-  
pere feizible and honorable, and, in the Ende, also profitable; and you, the  
Deputie, with some others of our Counsell there, have, by your Lettres, reco-  
mended the same Enterprice; yet we cannot but thinke the Matter doubtfull,  
wheather the Effect that is pretended may certainly followe, consideringe we  
here not of every Thinge of Moment in every Part of *Vlster*, answerable to  
the Charge that hath beene borne by vs, and some Parte by you the Earle,  
almost these two Yeres: Nether doe we see it made manyfeste but coniectu-  
rall, when the twoe Yeres shalbe at an Ende, that there shalbe good and assured  
Means, first, to beare soche a Garrison as shalbe necessary to continewe there  
afterwards, which, we thinke, must nedes be more then v C, which we  
thinke to smale a Number by your Plotte lymitted; and next alsoe to make  
some Recompence of our great Charges, which in Certeinty, must be spent  
theies two Yeres, over and aboue many vncertene accidente Charges not nowe  
thought of. Besides this, we alsoe finde it not expressed by any Aduertis-  
ment from thence, that admittinge to have the Numbers of twoe Thousande  
to be maintayned by vs for the Charge of the whole Realme, as you the  
Earle did first, in your Lettres of *October*, suppose to be suffycient; and that  
owt of theis there might be M CCC employed as a contynuall Garrison for  
this Enterprice of *Vlster* for twoe Yeres. Howe we may thinke or iudge  
the rest of *Irelande* shoulde be governed and kept, if, out of that Number of  
twoe Thousande, the Number of a Thousand three hundrethe shoulde be  
taken, and alwaies for the Space of theis two Yeres contynued in *Vlster*, and  
not be serviceable towards the Pacyfyinge of eny sodaine Tumults in the  
other Parts of that Realme. And by reason of those Difficulties and Vncer-  
taineties, with soch like, we have forborne the longer to resolue what to  
doe, or not to doe herein; for indede, as we cannot but greatly allowe the  
noble Mynde of you the Earle, to offer your Service in so painefull and hasar-  
dous a Place, and must nedes thinke it a great Honnor and Shuertie vnto vs  
and our Crowne, yea, in Tyme to come alsoe profitable, if the Successe  
might



might followe, which in your Offers is promised : So would we be lothe to enter and continewe soch an excessive Charge, as this is intended, and to adventure both your Person, and many of our Subiects, in this Service, without more manifest and certaine Apparaunce of the Successe; and alsoe without Determinacion aforehand that our Army shoulde not excede the saide Number of twoe Thousand, aswell for the rest of that Realme as for *Vlster*. And therefore not meaninge to reiect this your Offer, but very willinge to yelde therevnto, we have thought good to let you bothe vnderstand, that for this Enterprize to be well achieuid with the Number by you the Earle required. We thinke the best Means to have our whole Charge not to excede the saide Number of twoe Thousand; besides certaine Kearne and Pioners, in your first Plotte mencioned, shalbe, that you bothe doe enter into theis particuler Consideracions followinge.

First; Forasmuche as in all the rest of *Irelande*, besides *Vlster*, there is, at this Tyme, no notable Troble nor Apparaunce, as you the Deputie do wright; and that we can be content, only for the Respecte of *Vlster*, to contynewe the Charge of twoe Thousande, which otherwaies we meane not, nor see Cause why; it is to be iudged, in all good Probabilitie, that xiii C, or some fewe more or lesse of the said Number of twoe Thousand, ought and may be employed in *Vlster*; and the rest of the Realme staied in Quietnes, wherein it is, only withe the rest of the Numbers, beinge about vii C; havinge thereto, at the Commandement of you the Deputie, the Forces of all other good Subiects. And yet neuertheles also, if soch Necessitie shoulde require for a shorte Season, we see not, but you, our Cosen of *Essex*, might soe staye the Parts of *Vlster*, as owt of your Forces you might yelde to the Lord Deputy some suffycient Aide, for some smale Tyme to serve the Stayinge of any Sturre that may be imagined, in any other Part owt of *Vlster*.

Secondly; It is to be considered, that to this may be aded, to make the same more probable, that you the Deputy, in respect to further this Enterprize of *Vlster*, without any frequent Callinge for Aide of Numbers from the Service of *Vlster*, may doe well for your self, and soe alsoe cause all other our Ministers, to forbear from all Meanes of open Force to irritate eny of the Captains of the *Irishe* in other Parts, or other the Lords owt of the *Englishe* Pale, to move any notable Disorder againste our State; but to permitte them, without Innovacions, to contynewe as they nowe doe, and have donne in former Tymes of vniuersall Quietnes.

And theis Things thus well considered by you both, and concurringe with one Intencion for our Service, as we have Cause to hope that you will, with a mutuall Aidinge one of the other: There is here, by vs and our Counsell (whose Advise we have herein vsed) a manifest Likelihod conceived, that, of the Numbers of twoe Thousand, to be maintayned by vs, there may be xiii C well spared for *Vlster*, and the Remyne to serue for the Realme.

And besides that also, because we have more Cause to doubt of the Successe, as it is promised with those Numbers in *Vlster*, then to haue the rest of the Realme staied withe the Remyne:

It is here thought very necessarie, that you, the Deputy, shoulde, at sundry Tymes requisit for that Purpose, give Order of some Hostinges for Carriage and Victuallinge of the Places wheare the Fortificacions shalbe, vntill the same may be brought into Defence.

Lastlye; It is here also thought, that, theis twoe Thousande beinge at the Commaundement of you twoe, it may be your mutuall Assent assentid, that sometime for the Releif of the Bandes, that shalbe appointed for *Vlster*, some of the other Bandes may be sent thether; and some of those in *Vlster*, for there Releif, placed in there Roomes. And soe, by soche Relief and Changinge, they of *Vlster* may the better indure the Service.

And thus, havinge shewed to you bothe, as you see, first some Doubtes that have lingered vs from Resolucion, and next soche Opyinion, as we have conceived howe; with the Charge of the rest of the twoe Thousande that shall



not be imployed in *Ulster*, you, our Deputy, may so staie the rest of our Realme in Quietnes, as our Cosen of *Essex* may haue the Use of the Number by him required: We require you both well to consider hereof, and to ioyne your good Wills towards this Enterprise, withe a Determynacion, that ether of you shall, in Cases necessary, aide the other, with a principall Respecte to the whole Realme.

And if you shall resolue soe to doe, then we doe assent to the Maintenance of the said Charge of twoe Thousand, and doe will and authorise you bothe, to procede herein, requiringe you our Deputy, havinge the Authoritie of the whole Realme, so to contynewe in the Care thereof, and to ayde and assiste our Cosen of *Essex* in this Enterprise, as Cause shall require from Tyme to Tyme. And because you our Cosen of *Essex* did, at the Beginninge, require, besides the Number of xiii C, foure hundrethe Kearne, and one hundrethe Pyoners; we can be content withe the Chardge of the saide Kearne and Pioners, so that the Charges of the Kearne exceede not the Wages of iii *d. per Diem* a Person, as is allowed in other Partes of the Realme: And where his Motion was to have the Wages of our Garrison in *Ulster* to be *Starlinge* Pay, we cannot assent thereto, neather for Examples Sake, nor yet for the Charge thereof; nether do we thinke it so nedefull, seing there shalbe a Staple of Victuall provided for the same, as is in the rest of our Realme. And yet if you shall thinke it mete to rewarde some that may have Nede, as it may be thought the Horsmen, we think that you may resonably requier, within a smale Tyme after your Entry: For the two first Yeres, that some Cesse or Relief be given and contributed to the Amendment of there Wages by the *Irishrie*, whom you shall defend from the Tyranny of *O'Neill* and the *Scotts*; and we see not, but, to ease vs alsoe of some further Charge in other Thinges, you may reasonable require and obtaine of the said *Irish* some reasonable Releif. Of whiche Thinges howe to require the same for our Service, and without Offence, Tyme shall teache you best howe to obtaine the same.

Nowe haue we also to charge you bothe, with that we thinke neather of you have had Care of, vnnecessary Charges; for you, the Deputie, seme to contynewe in Charge under your Pay, the Number of xviii C. l<sup>i</sup>. and you, the Earle, have in Charge vnder you xii C xci, both whiche Numbers make iii M clxi. of which Numbers, if it be trewe that they contynue soe in Charge, we haue great Marvell by what Warrant so many were first taken in, or are contynued in Paie. Nether can we imagin for what Service so many shoulde be taken or thus contynued. For you the Deputy knowe, that, when you had Iorney to make against the *Desmonds*, xix C weare thought sufficient. And you the Earle, as before in this Lettre is mencioned, did not require for the Matter of *Ulster*, but xiii C, besides Kearne, and C Laborers, nor, for the whole Realme, thought any more nedeful then ii M. And now, havinge no Trouble in all *Irelande*, as you the Deputie do wryght, do contynue us in Charge iii M Men. A Matter that fuer we cannot endure to be burdoind withall. And therefore we charge and commaunde you bothe, with all possible Speade, thoughe you make Meanes to borrowe Money for the Purpose, to discharge owt of your Pay, so many and of soche Sorte as may be best spared, so as no moe remaine then this our Lettre we doe assent shall remain, if the Enterprise of *Ulster* shall goe forward. And, if you twoe shall accorde to procede with our Enterprise of *Ulster*, in Sorte as before we have mentioned, then we charge you bothe soe to assent. And, namely, we charge you our Deputy, havinge the Charge of our whole Realme, that noe moe be contynued in our Paye then xv or xvj C Soldiors for the whole Realme. For the Ordering whereof, we require you soe to conferre withe the rest of our Counsell, that asmoche therein may be donne as reasonably may be devised. And yet, thoughe the Enterprise of *Ulster* take noe Place, as our Cosen of *Essex* ment it, we thinke it good that some convenient Force be leste at *Knockfargus*, and ells wheare in *Clandeboyne*, and some also nere the *Newrie*, for Staie of those Partes, in as



good Quiet as resonably may be requisite, as in like Cases heretofore hathe bene vsed.

And wheare we prescribe you to discharge out of our Paye so many, as noe more remaine, then we have determined, whether the Enterprise of *Vlster* take Effect or noe: Our Meaninge is not that, with our Charge or Treasure, eny be paide, but soche as haue bene entered in to Wages, by either of you bothe, by Vertue of our Warraunt. For if so many be in Wages, as by the Auditors Book is mencioned, dyvers are there in Wages and Allowaunce, without our Warrant or Knowledge. And where we seeme here to wright some Wordes as in Care the Enterprise of *Vlster* might not peradventure take Effect; yet, fuerly, we doe not thinke but you bothe will so consider of the Matter, as except you can see more there, then we, or our Counsell, can see here, the Enterprize, which hetherto hathe bene soe costly to vs, shall not by any of your Defaults, nowe quaile and come to nothings. Geven vnder our Signet, at our Mannor of *Richmond*, the 15 of *Marche* 1574, in the 17 Yere of our Raigne.

*To our trustie and welbeloued Sir William Fitz-William, Knight, our Deputy, in our Realme of Ireland; and to our right trusty and right welbeloued Cosin, the Earle of Essex.*

*The Right Honorable Thomas Sackvil Lord Buckhurst, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My Lord,*

I Trust your Lordship will pardon me, in that I have not (as, indede, possibly I cold not) attend to make ane Meting, for Thend of this Varians betwixt your Lordship and me; and now being this Day also so wrapt in Busynes, as I can not by any Menes be a Seurtier, I thought to wryte thes few to your Lordship, and therin to asstertain you; that, becaus our Meting with the Master of the *Rols*, and Mr. *Hensias* Meting, wilbe so uncertein: That, therefore, what Time so ever you shall like to appoint, I will come to the *Rols*, and there your Lordship and I, as good Neybors and Friends, will, if we can, compound the Caus of our felves. If we can not, we will both pray the Master of the *Rols*, as indifferent, as I know he is, to perswade him to the Right, that stands in the Wrong. And thus, I dout not, but ther shalbe a good End to both our Contentacions: Your Lordship not seking that which is not yours; nor I, in any Sort, mening to detein from you your ouen. This 23 *May*, 1574.

*All yeurs to comand,*

T. Buckehurst.

Superscribed,

To the Right Honorable and my very good Frend, Sir *Harry Sidney*, Knight, Lord President of *Wales*.

*The Lady Mary Sydney, to Edmond Molineux, Esq; Secretary to Sir Henry Sydney.*

**M**OLENOX, in dyuers Letters from my Lord, his Lordshipe wryghts I should receue Wourd from you, how his Befynes goeth forward at the Courght, but yet I heare nothings from you. I sent Letters, acordinge to my Lords Request, to my Lords my Brothers, and to Mr. *Dyer*, by *Barnes* my Servant, bearinge Daet, the xxiiij of the last Mounth; which I wild him very earnestly, myght, in Master *Dyers* Absens, be deliuered vnto you; and so I also dyrected them, that you myght keap them tyll Mr. *Dyers* Cominge thether, who I am fuer will not longe be from thens, yf, er longe before this Tyme, he



he be not thear al redy. I would be glad to hear, that some good Resolution wer towards for my Lord, eather for an honorable Voyadge or a contentfull Aboud at Home; I pray wryght by this Bearer, what you kno of hit; and in all your Proceadings in my Lords Cawfis, take the wyfe, noble Mr. *Dyers* frendely Counsell, who I kno douth most dearly tender my Lords Honor, and well Dowling, as mouche as a faythfull Frend may do. For my none Part, I canot aduyse you to no better Coors, then my Lord hath written to his Friends; but yf that go not so fast forward as hit should, or you do wishe; as ill as I am in Health, or able to travaill, I would infors my sealf, in good Tyme, to be at the Courght, to stand my dear Lord in what Steed, my Duty and beinge thear with her Maiesty, and my Friends, myght do; thearfor, I pray you, wryght at lardge by this Bearer, *Gilbart*, who of Porpose I send to Mr. *Dyer*, and you, to the same Ende, to hear from you bouthe; and so, for this Tyme, I leue you. From *Chiswyke*, this Fyrst of September, 1574.

Your assured Mistris, to do you

enny Good I cann,

M. Sydney.

I pray inquyre for Mistris *Edmonds*, of the Pryuy Chamber, and offer to send her Letters at enny Tyme to me, and make my most hartye Comendations vnto her; and also to Mystris *Skudamore*, of the Priuy Chamber; and lern of them the good and prosperus Health of her Majesty, and wryght to me thearof, and tell them, I would wryght to them, but I haue nothinge to tell them, but of my vnrecouerd, vnhealthfull Carcas. Pray also go often in my Name, to inquyer how my deare Brothers do, and the most vertuse Lady of *Warwyke*; good Mr. *Dyer*, in whom I fynd a fetled good Opinion of you, hath had some Taulk with me, of you, conserninge your onest Hart, and good Will towards me; which yf I fynd accordingly, you shall also fynd me no les thankfull, and redy to steed you, with my best Abylytye.

Matthew, *Archbishop of Canterbury*, to Sir Henry Sydney.

WHeareas I purposed to your Lordship one of my poore Bookes of *Thomas Walsinghams* Storie, &c. latelie sett owte; the rather, for that I knowe your Lordship to loue Antiquities; soe I sende you, by this Bearer, one; and if you will lett mee haue the Sight of sum Bookes, that you haue, peradventure, I maie enlarge them, or, by sum Comparison, amende those that I haue in Hande, by Diuersitie of Copies; and soe maie the Worlde enioye sum Comoditie by vs, in such rare Bookes. And if that your Lordship will effectuouslie sende to mee the Bookes, which you haue at Home in your Howse: I maie further vnto you sum other Booke, that I haue of late caused to be printed, meate for your Knowledge. And thus I bid you hartely well to fare as my self. From my Howse at *Lambith*, this First of December, 1574.

Your Lordships lovinge Frende.

Matthue Cantuar.

\* *The Earle of Essex Lettre, in Ainswere to her Majesties, iointly adressed to the Lord Deputy and him.*

It may please your most excellent Majestie,

I Have sene a Lettre signed by your Majestie, dated the xvth of *Marche*, and endorsed to my Lord Deputy and me, in Ainswere of the Matter propounded by me, for the Reducinge of the Province of *Vlster* to your Majesties Obedience:

\* Ex Autog. apud Penshurst.



Obedience : In whiche Lettre, your Majestie semethe so well to fauour that Enterprice, as you have bountiffully granted all soche Petitions as I thought mete to demaunde for your Service ; namely, for the Numbers of Men to be mainetayned in *Vlster*, and for the Charges of the Buildings, and every other Thing, saviinge the *Sterlinge* Pay ; wherein, neuerthelefs, your Majestie had a principall Consideracion, to have had the Horsemen holpen with Cesse of the *Irishe*, and the Foatebands reliued sometyme in the Pale, whiles others, that should serue vnder my Lord Deputy, might supply there Places. Theis Graces and Fauors proceedinge of my Suite (thoughe most necessary for your Honor, Profitt, and Suerty of this State) doe give me Cause to yeld to your Majestie my humble Thankes, and to increase my Zeale and Duty to serue your Majestie for euer. But, althoughe this Lettre of your Majestie was in theis Points comfortable to me, yet was it no Warraunt to me for my Proceedinge in the Enterprise, without the Assent of my Lord Deputy, and that his Lordship shoulde tie himself to a Number certaine, to be maintayned in other Parts of the Realme. The Choise therefore of Proceedinge, or not Proceedinge, beinge in your Deputy, and not in me, his Lordship hathe resolved, for soche Reasons as I thinke he will open to your Majestie, that this Enterprice shall cease, and your Army to be rassed to the Number appointed in your Majesties saide Lettre. And, althoughe this Conclusion is grevous vnto me, after your Majesties Consent obtained, and soche Assurednes that my Plott might in euery Pointe be well accomplished ; yet, vppon Knowledge of my Lord Deputies Pleasure in this Behalf, I have, as Reason is, delyvered to his Lordship all the Soldiours vnder me in *Vlster*, to be rassed, but not before I had vsed some Perswasion to him, to make some of the Counsaillors here privie in so weightie a Case : Or, that I might procede withe some Hostinge, to establishe the Countrey, and bringe *Tirlangbe* to Order : Or, that it woulde please him to take Th'execution of the Plotte vppon him, and I to serue privately vnder him : Or, as he would himself : And, havinge nowe noe longer Soldiours over whome to governe, I haue also resigned the Government of *Vlster*, havinge, I trust, the Testimony of his Lordship, and all your good Subiects here, that, duringe my Remayninge in that Office, I have, withe your Force, and my owne Industry, kept your Pale Northward from Invasiō, your *Englishe* Subiects from Slaughtor or Losse, and the *Irishe*, soche as weare well inclyned, from Tyranny of the Rebell ; yea, and euen the Rebell himself, in Feare of his vtter Overthrowe, as might appeare by his contynuall Suite for Peace. Theis Things, in soe daungerous a Tyme, as when Armes weare in Manner vniuersally taken in *Mounster* and *Connaught*, and some Parts of *Leinster*, was thought here to be good Seruice ; and soe, I doe assure my self, your Majestie dothe accept it. In the first Parte of your Majesties Lettre, you semed to doubt that vC Men, after twoe Yeres, and the Townes builded, should not be hable to defende those Townes, and kepe the Country obedient ; but, as I knowe, iiC Footemen are enoughe for the Wardes : Soe 300 Horse distributed, as my Plott appointed, woulde alwaies have serued to have kept them in all Duty and Subiection. In the same Parte of your Lettre, your Majestie takethe Holde of my Wordes written to the Lords in *October*, to deminishe your Numbers to ijM of all Sorts. Yt may please you therefore to consider of my Wordes, which weare these : And I see noe Reason, but if her Majestie kepe 2000 Soldiours (without which, Obedience or Profitt will not be had of *Irishe* or *Englishe* in *Yreland*) why 1300 of them shoulde not, for the most Parte, reside in *Vlster*. This was, and is still my Opyinion ; and, I hope, cannot be construed but theis Soldiours weare ment *Englishe* Bandes, and not to be extended towards Officers or Kearne, which are nether at Commandement, nor can be employed but in their Charges. Besides, I neuer tooke vpon me to sett downe my Opyinion for the Government of the whole Realme, whearewithe I nether had to doe, nor, with your Fauour, will have to doe, but only of my Charge ; and, therefore, I trust my Wordes have not procured this great Dyminishment of your Majesties Armye.



Armye. But nowe I will saye directly, that which before I spake coniecturally, that ijM *Englishe* Soldiours vnder Bands, well mayntained, wilbe enoughe to governe all the whole Realme of *Ireland*, and to make all that be Rebels, or that be of the *Irishe* Faccions to quake, and either to be good Subiects, or to seeme good Subiects. In the latter Parte of your Majesties laide Lettre, you fynde Faulte withe the Nombers kept vnder me, commandinge none more to be paide with your Treasure, then are warraunted from your Majestie; wherevnto I thinke good to ainswere, that I have entertayned, for the Defence of all *Vlster*, no more then I had for *Clandeboy*, except thirty Horsemen *Irishe*, vnder the Baron of *Dungannon*, whom it behoued your Majestie to aide and countenance, and soche Bandes of Kerne as weare necessary for your Service. For, in *Clandeboy*, I had CC Horse, and vjC Footmen. I had Cth allowed for the Sea, whereof I have vsed but 50. I had Cth Pyoners, whereof I vsed but 50; and nowe, latelie, but thirty; and, for all theis, I trust I had your Majesties Warraunt. Indeede, vpon the Deathe of Sir *Thomas Smythes* Sonne, I gave Mr. *Moore*, your Majesties Pencioner, some Countenance in the *Ardes*, by a few Men in Wages, and after maintayned a Warde in his House, when he was slaine; and in this, and whatsoeuer ells, in soche like Cafes, I have done, I trust to shewe good Reason, to moue me to doe it for your Majesties Service. And nowe, I must confesse, and neuer before, that your Charge is vtterly losse since Th'enterprise is dissolued; and I dare avowe, that, if Th'enterprise had gonne forward, the Money, whiche you have spent, had beene the best imployed, that euer your Majestie spent in *Ireland*, and is nowe the worst. Which, I feare, will shortly appeare; for the *Irishe*, heare, have nowe Reason neuer to looke for Reformation, and neuer to trust to your Majesties Proteccion, but to combyne themselues. For their commen Obiection is (espeacially they of *Tyrconnell*) that they are alwaies lefte without Defence, and to their Shiftes. For so *Odonell* termed it to me, who is nowe in open Warre, by my Meanes, against *Tirlangbe*, and must, in dede, be left to Extremitie. I sende your Majestie his Lettres, and soche as I receued out of *Scotland*, declaringe the Comminge of the *Scotts*. Their restethe nowe, that I make my Protestacion, that I am noe Waye consentinge, or doe allowe of this Goinge Backe of your Northern Service. And fuer, since there hathe not bene at any Tyme any Default in me, but haue ben called from Th'enterprise of *Clandeboy*, to the Defence of the whole Province of *Vlster*, wherein I have serued your Majestie without Entertainment, paynefully and truly to your Honour, Suerty of this State, and Defence of your Subiects: I mistrust not, but your Majestie will, bothe of your Justice and Bounty, graciously consider of my intollerable Charges past; and, aboue all Things, retayne me in your Majesties good Opyinion, as your humble Servaunt, devoted and most affectionnat to serue your Majestie. And, beinge nowe altogeather pryvate, I doe desier your Majesties good Lycense soe to lyve in a Corner of *Vlster*, which I hyer for my Money; wheare, thoughe I passe my Tyme somewhat obscurely (a Lief, my Case considered, fittest for me) yet shall it not be without some Staye in theis Parts, and Comforte to soche as hoped to be ridde from the Tyranny of Rebels. And so, prayinge for your Majesties happy Raigne, with a longe helthfull Lief, I humbly ende at *Dublin*, this Last of *Marche*, 1575.

\* *The Earle of Essex to the Lords of the Councell.*

My good Lordes,

I Have of late seene a Lettre signed by the Queenes Majestie, and iointly endorsed to my Lord Deputy and me, concerning myne Enterprise in the Province of *Vlster*; which, althoughe it carry a Shewe of a present Proceadinge therin, and of a Consent to all my Petitions, yet hathe it brought forthe none other Effectes, but the present Discharge of all that serue vnder me, and a finall Disolvinge of my Enterprise: Whereunto, what Ainswere I have made to her



Majestie, may appeare vnto you, by the Copy of my Lettres herein enclosed. And, althoughe it become me to stande contented with any Thing that her Majestie shall signifie to be her Will, yet, when I compare this Conclusion to the Course that hath beene taken with me since my Comminge heather, I cannot but thinke the Dealinge verie straunge. First, I can, with the good Likeinge of all your Lordships, and withe the Allowance of the Councell here, soe as, by the Consents of bothe Realmes, I tooke my Iorney, the Matter beinge first thoroughlie debated, and soe digested, as though no Scruple shoulde at any Time arryse. I had not bene here three Monethes, but that it was given forth, that the Contynuance of Th'enterprize was in Question, and in that Staie hath it remayned euer since, till now, that, in all Apparaunce, the Proceedinge therein is agreed vpon, and all my Petitions graunted; and yet the same Lettre, that so dothe assure me of all this gracious Fauour, is a Warraunt to my Lord Deputy (as he takethe it) to overthrowe the Hole. My Lords, I humbly desier you to consider well of this Matter: Yt is somewhat to me (though litell to others) that my House shoulde be overthrowen, with sufferinge me to runne my self out of Brethe with Expences. It is more, that, in the Worde of the Queene, I have, as it weare, vndone, abused, and bewitched, with faire Promises, *Odonell*, *Mac Mahon*, and all others that pretende to be good Subiectes in *Ulster*. It is most, that the Queenes Majestie shall adventure this Estate, or ells subdue Rebellion withe intollerable Charge. For will not all Partes of this Realme take Holde of this Dissolucion? Or can any in *Ulster*, or in any Parte of the Realme, hope of Defence hereafter? But, to retorne to my owne Estate, let my Lief here, my good Lords, be examyned by the straightest Commissioners that may be sent, I truste, in examyninge my Faultes, they will alleage this for the Cheif, that I have vnseasonably tolde a plaine, probable, honorable, and effectuall Way howe to doe the Countrey Good. For, of the rest, they can say nothing of me, but wytnes my Misery by Plage, Famyn, Sicknes, contynuall Toile, and contynuall Wantes of Men, Money, Carriages, Victualls, and all Things mete for great Attempts: And, if any of theis have growen by my Defalt, then condemne me in the Whole. I pray you, my Lords, pardon my Earnestnes; I thinke I have Reason, that am thus amased withe an oversodden Warninge, that must take a Discharge, before I am made acquainted withe the Matter. I thinke it had been a better Course, that I might have had Tyme to haue made some profitable Peace withe *Tyrlanghe*, which hath bene fought at my Handes, and not, at one Instant, to loose my Travaile, my Money, my Creditt, and, with the same, hazard the Honor of her Majestie, and of the Realme of *England*. I trust, my Lords, my plaine Dealinge shall not doe me Hurte with you; for my owne Parte, a solitary Lief is best for a disgraced Parson; but, because there is none of you but hath professed Fauour towardes me, and some of your Lordships are mixt withe me in Blood and Alliaunce, I crave of you all, that, as I have entred into this Action with your good Likeings and Advices, so now, the Failinge beinge noe Way to be laide vpon me, you will all be Meanes for me to her Majestie to deale well withe me for my Charge, as in Honor, Conscience, and Justice you shall thinke good. And so comyttinge my self, and my Posterity, to her Majesties Fauour, and your Perfwacion in this Point, I comitt your Lordships to God, and humbly take my Leave. At *Dublin*, this xxixth of *Marche*, 1575.

*Sir Francis Walsingham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verry good Lord,*

THE Erle of *Leycester* and I have taken vpon us, without your Knowledge or Privytye, knowing the Suffityencye of this Bearer [*Capt. Malbie*] every Waye to perswade her Majestie to make Choyce of him, to governe under you in *Connawghe*, with such Tytle and Allowance, as to your Lordship shall



shall be thought convenient. And fuerly, yf his Fortune answered to his Val-  
lewe, I knowe him not in this Lande more fytt to beare the Tytle of Presy-  
dent then he. Yf he lyved in any other Cuntrye then this, where martyall  
Men presently beare no Pryce, he shoulde not have ben so longe kept under  
Foote. I doe but loose Tyme to commende him unto your Lordship, being  
so well known unto you as he is. And, to geve Testimonye of the Affecti-  
on he beareth towards you, and how myche he honorette you, were also but  
a fruteles Labor. My chefe Request is unto your Lordship (howsoever you  
deale with him towching Tytle) to deale frendely and favourably with him,  
towching his Interteynement, bothe, for that I knowe he will deserve well; as,  
also, for that his poore Estate shall so require. I hope you shall repent no Frend-  
ship you shall shewe him, for sooch a worthy Instrument can not be to derely  
interteined. And so, assuringe my selfe of your honorable Dealyng towards  
him, as one whom I love derely; and, therefor, will repute any Frendship,  
shewed unto him, bestowed on my selfe; I commyt you to Gods good Keep-  
yng. At *London*, the 15th of *Maye*, 1575.

*Your Lordships assured Frende,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.*

*May it please your most excellent Majestie,*

I Have received your Highnes Lettres, dated at *Woodstocke*, the Seconde of  
this present *September*, by the which, your Pleasure is, to knowe my Opini-  
on towchinge twoe of the Earle of *Essex* Demaunds; wherein, as I am most  
humblie to thanke your Majestie, that you will not resolve of any Thing that  
may tende to the Alteracion of that you formerlye concluded with me, for my  
Chardge of Governement vnder you in this Realme, without my selfe, so long as  
it shall please your Majestie to imploy me heere: So, of the Earle, I must say,  
that he is so noble and woorthye a Personage, and so forward in all his Actions,  
and complete a Gentleman, wherein he may either advaunce your Honnor or  
Service, as you may take Comforte, to have in Store so rare a Subiecte,  
who hath nothinge in greater Regarde, then to shewe hymselfe souch a one in  
dede, as the commen Fame reportethe hym; which hath bene no more in  
Troth, then his due Deserts, and painefull Travells, in the hardest Partes of  
this miserable Countrie, have deserved. For his Sute to have three hundered  
Men in Pay duringe his Liffe, your Majestie may do verie well, in myne Opi-  
nion, to graunte hym his Demaunde; for, by that Meanes, he shall be encourag-  
ed, the rather, to thinke, that his Service past is neither least vnremembred,  
nor he altogether vnrewarded: And the Border of the *Englishe* Pale (by the  
Layenge, and Imployment of theise Men in *Ferney*, and those Confynes) moche  
strengthened and defended: But yet I wold wishe, that the same were graunted  
from your Majestie, with this Condicion, that one Hundered of them should be  
at the Deputies Direction, for the Service of *Ulster*, where they should remayne,  
and not be removed, but when vrgent Necessitie of Service should so re-  
quyre to be imployd for the Defence of the Borders of *Connaught*, or the *Eng-  
lyshe* Pale, and not els where: Twoe Hundered of them, whereof one Hunder-  
ed of Horsemen, and one hundered Footemen, to remayne in *Ferney*, or *Mac  
Guise* Ilande, where the Earle shall thinke most requisite and necessarie for his  
best Commoditie, to imploy them in those Partes, and those yet to be viewed  
and mustered by the Direction of the Governor. And theise three hundered  
Men, thus distributed, may convenientlye be graunted without Encrease of your  
further Chardge, whereof, as a Councillor to your Majestie, it behoveth me to  
have dewe Regarde. Towchinge his other Demaunde for *Mac Guyse* Ilande,  
your Majestie may esteeme, that you have made a good Purchase for your selfe,  
to



to have soche a Tenaunt, who, besides Obedience (which is rather to be desired, then generallye looked for in those Partes) may, in Tyme, by Buyldinge, Plantinge, and Setlinge there, drawe soche a Consent, and Lykinge of others, to fanfye his Neighborhoode, as Benifitt may growe to your Coffers, Honnor to your Realme, and Safetie to maney of your good Subiects. And thus, Maddame, havinge in the one, and the other, declared myne Opinion, accordinge to your Majesties Commaundment, I humblye submitt my selfe to your gracious Resolution; which, I hoope, shalbe to the Satisfieng of the Earle, to whom, I finde alreadye, you are most gratiouflye disposed: And I, for my Parte, wishe as moche Honnor, as may happ, to so woorthie a Subiect, and pray God bleffe your Majestie with a mott happie and prosperous Reigne. From *Drogheda*, the xxviiijth of *September*, 1575.

*Your Majesties most bounden humble*

*Subiect and Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney, to William Cecil Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer of England.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**S**ITH my Arryvall here, I received Lettres from her Majestie verie favorablye written, in somme Allowance of the Earle of *Essex* Demaundes; whereunto I have assented, as farre in all Pointes, as convenientlye and reasonablye I might, to the Satisfieng of the Earle. And, for that the Payment of those Men, that are to be appointed vnder his Chardge (if her Majestie shall confirme his Graunte) are to be issued out of that Assignacion allotted vnto me for this Governement: I am the more streightened, and therefore must husband the rest, in soche Sorte (if I can) as, at the Yeares Ende, I fall not shorte of my Accompte, as heretofore I have donne. And, therefore, I pray your Lordship, be mindfull that Promisse may be kept, with me, and assigne me somme Place, where certeinlye I shall receive my Porcion at my Day for my Quarterage: For, otherwise, I shall not be able, either to kepe Promisse withe hym, nor serve myne owne Tourne, which I would be lothe should so fall owte, since I have vndertaken the Chardge: And, therefore, my good Lord, effectuallye remember me, as I hope you will. For the State of this Countrey, I finde it so generallye infected, as I can skarce fynde a safe Place to put my Head in; and this Towne it selfe is not free from Infection, for, within theise twoe Dayes, dyvers are dead of the Plague. I am nowe vpon my Iorney towards *Caricfergus*. God sende me good Speede, for the Northe is farre out of Order, as your Lordship shall perceive by my Lettres sent to the Lords of the Council. And thus, havinge no more to write, but my humble Thankes, for your Lordships accustomed Favor and Pleasure bestowed vpon me, I take my Leave. From *Drogheda*, the xxviiijth of *September*, 1575.

*Your Lordships lovinge Freinde to*

*commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney, to the Lords of her Majestys Council.*

*My Duetie humblye remembred, to your good Lordships,*

**M**AY it please you to be advertized, that I arryved, and landed at the *Skerries*, the viith of this Present, in the Morninge, being brought with a calme Wether, and faire Passage, till the Pointe of strikinge Sayle, where it grewe



grewe somewhat stormye; yet, I thanke God, without Daunger in Landinge, though some of my Trayne, that were imbarcked with me at the same Tyme, in other Vessells (by Reason of the Storme which devided vs) were landed at an other Creke, ij Dayes after me. And, at my Comminge, I founde the Infection of the Plauge, so generallye dispersed, and speciallye thorough the *Englishe* Pale, as hardlye I could finde a Place clere to settle in, without Daunger of Infection; the Soldiours, soche as were apointed to be cassed, remayned still vndischarged at my Comminge: And, as I learne by Conference withe the Threasorer, the Treasure, appointed for their Discharge, will fall owte rather shorter, then any remayne left, to be imployed for the Defrayment of other Debts; so that for their full Discharge and Imbarckement (beinge thorough their Insolencye verye greivous, and bourdenous to the Countrie, and cried owte vpon, with a generall Complaynte) I assigned theim of myne owne, by Way of Warraunt, an Hundered Crownes, *Sterlinge*. The *Irishbrey* in *Vlster* growe verye insolent, and of soche Force and Head, as Capteine *Selbie*, and *Bawmfoorde*, Clarcke of the *Checke*, coming from *Knockfergus*, with fyvetie Horflemen in Companie, were sett vpon and chased by the *Irishbrey* ij or iij Tymes by the Way, and hardlye escaped without Daunger of Takinge: The xvijth of this Present, for my *Biene venum*, to welcome me into the Countrie, *Sorley Boy*, with his Companie came to *Knockfergus*, there to make the Pray of the Towne, and gave so proude an Assault, as they slewe Capten *Baker*, and his Lieutenaunt, and fortie of his Bande, besides Townesmen and others; dyvers hurte and maymed, the Peticularities whereof your Lordships shall perceiue by the inclosed. And al be it, by the Courage and Valor of the rest of the Captens, and Souldiours of that Garrison, the Pray was reskued; yet the Towne so distressed, they remayne so doubtfull, and in contynuall Feare, that I, for their Relieffe, have entended and appointed a Iorney thetherwardes, with as moche Spede and Expedicion as may be. And by theise Attempts your Lordships may see, howe prowde the *Scott* is growen, so that either to dawnt them, or banishe them totallye, for annoyenge those Partes, that Force is to little, that I am hable to maynteine, with the Assignacion appointed me, but onelye by Way of Pacificacion and Practisse; havinge so maney nedefull Places els where in the Realme, to disperse the Soldiours for her Majesties Service: Yet am I lothe, in any Sorte, to consent to the Encrease of her Highnes furder Charge, for any Accident, that hath happened, or I trust shall happen, duringe my Governement vnder her Majestie here: Nevertheles, as a Forewarninge, I write thus to your Lordships: That if any Thing should fall owte hereafter, by the *Scotts*, contrarie to your Expectacions (as I will do my best Indevor, there shall not, accordinge as I have vndertaken, and promised her Majestie) I may be the rather holden blameles, and excused, havinge written to your Lordships the Certeintie of Things, as they stande nowe; and the Lyke-lyhoode of the Sequell to followe hereafter, except the same by good Foresight may be prevented in Tyme. For the State of the rest of the Countrey in what Sorte it is, the Tyme beinge so shorte, since myne Arryvall, and the Infection so great, as I have not stirred farre Abroade, I can say little, for that in Trothe I could not fynde any apt Place safelye to gooe vnto. And therefore, for the present (beseachinge your Lordships to take Knowledge of that I have written to her Majestie, towchinge the Earl of *Essexs* Demaunds) I humblye take my Leave. From *Drogheda*, the xxvijth of September, 1575.

Your Lordships lovinge Friende to

commaunde.

V O L. I.

X x x

Sir



*Sir Henry-Sydney to the Lords of the Council.**My verye good Lords,*

**A**lbeit, in my last Lettres, I made mention vnto your Honnors, of the Want of Treasure remayninge in the Treasurers Handes, for the Payment of soche Souldiors, as were called by your Appointements; whereby, out of that Porcion assigned vnto me, I was fayne, by Way of Warraunt, to allowe them, for Transportacion, a hundered Crownes *Sterlinge*: And, this Day, passed an other Warraunt, for lyke Purpose, from me, to vnburthen the Countrie, that makes Exclamacion against them. I thought rather, my Lords, and so was your Lordships Expectacions, that, the Men, your Lordships willed to be dischargd, beinge called and paid, the Remayne should be imployed for the Defrayment of other Chardges. But, findinge none to remayne at all, but issuinge owte of myne owne for those Purposes, my Brother, *Fytz Williams*, could not receive Money, in any Sorte, for his Transportacion, and other Chardgies; but enforced to make other Meanes, by Way of Borrowinge, to dispatch hym selfe hence; whereof I thought good to advertise your Lordships, that, for his Payments, he might fynde the more Favor, as I beseeche your Lordships he may. And even so I humblye take my Leave of your good Lordships (beinge this Day reddye to sett forward on my Iorney towards *Knockfergus*.) From *Termondfacan*, the vth of *October*, 1575.

*Your Lordships lovinge Freinde**humblye to commaunde,**H. Sydney.*

*Sir Francis Walsyngham, Secretary of State, to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland.*

*My very good Lord,*

**I** Was gladd to understande, by the Earl of *Essex* Letters, that your Lordship and he is growen to so good a Conclufyon, towching his Demawndes; wherby his Lordship seamethe to be greatly satysfied with your frendely Dealyng towards him. Suche here as doe wyshe generally well unto that State, and partycularly to your selves, doe desyre nothing more, then the Contynewauce of good Lyking and fownde Frendeship betwene you. And therfor, good my Lord, lett your Eares be closed ageynst Tale Bearers, who make their Proffyt of Dyssentyon. That Natyon, as I learne, is cunningg in that Professyon; and, therfor, yt behovethe your Lordships, bothe to be very cyrcumspect in that Behalfe. I praye God, that pestylent Humor receyve no Nourishment from hence. When I sawle into Consyderatyon of the Sowndenes of bothe your Judgements, then doe I shake of all Feare; but, when I caule to Mynde the cursed Destynye of that Ilande, I can not put of all Dredd. I hope your owne Wysdomes, the Cautyng on eny of your Frendes here, and the good Ministers about you there, wyll prevent the Mallyce of suche, as shall seeke any Waye to slander you.

The Sendyng over of your Assystaunts, I am not unmyndefull therof. Him whom you chesye desyre, I meane Sir *W. Dreurye*, wyll not fayle at the Tyme by you appoynted, yf God let yt not, or her Majesty. Mr. *Rockebye*, without some Imprest at your Lordships Handes, to fornish him of soche Necessaries, as the Place he is appoynted for requyre (having not the Meanes otherwys to furnishe him selfe) shall be forced to refuse the same, thorowghe Disabylity: When I consyder the Woorthynes of the Man, howe hardely suche are, whereof his Integritye is to be fownde; and howe great Neade that Place hathe of suche as are: I cannot but wyshe your Lordship, to strayne your selfe as muche as you maye, to supplye his Wants. And, so leavyng further to trouble your Lordship,



Lordship, I most humbly take my Leave. At my Howse at Odiam, the xxd of Octobre, 1575.

Your Lordships assured Friend,

Francis Walsyngham.

Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council.

**M**Y humble Duetie remembred vnto your honorable good Lordships; After I had leaft Order for the Pale, appointinge the Lords and Gentlemen, of the best Accompt, Discreacion, and Iudgement, in Commission, to see to the Defence and Quiet of the Countrie, I sett forwardes in my Iorney towarde Knockfergus, the vth of October last; and takinge with me iiij C Foote-men, and 200 Horffe, of the Forces of her Majesties Armye; I was accompanied withe the Barons of Lowth and Dungannon, Sir Nicolas Bagnoll, the Marshall, Sir Edward Fitton, the Threasorer, Sir Lucas Dillon, the Cheife Baron, John Chalonier, her Majesties Secretorye, and Jaques Wingefield, Master of the Ordnance; and, in this Sorte, passinge from Drogheda to Dundalke, and thence to the Newrie, I found soche good Pollecy and Order in the Countries where the Marshall dwellethe; his Landes so well manured, his Tenaunts so cherished and mainteined, the Towne so well planted with Inhabitaunts, and encreased in Bewtye and Buylidinge, as he is moch to be commended; aswell that he vseth his Tenaunts to lyve so welthilye vnder hym, as his owne Bountie and large Hospitallitie, and Howsekepinge, so able and willinge to geve Enterteinment to so maney, and cheifely to all those that have Occasion to travell to or froe Northwardes, his Howse lyenge in the open high Way to their Passage.

The Fews, the Countrie of Phelim Roos Sonnes, and Orerye, the Chanlons Countrie, I found in extreme Disorder; not onelye for vniversall Wast of them selves, but for the intollerable Annoyaunces and Spoyles of their Neighbours in both Borders, as well Englishe as Irishe. The Landes of bothe which Countries were geven, by her Majestie, by Indenture, to Chatterton, who nowe remayneth there in Englande, I suppose halfe dismayed, of the vntowarde Successesse of this Enterpryse, and the little Possibilitie he findethe, either in hym selfe or his Parteners, to do any Good, but wast them selves, and sett vpp ther Restes of Vndoinge, before they bringe any Thinge to goode Effecte. The Number of the Natyves of the Foyle are so many, the Reckninge so small alreadye, of Englishe Enhabitaunts, and the Liklyhoode of Encrease lesse; since these fower Yeares Space they have enioyed their Graunte, they have not donne any Thinge woorthe the Remembraunce; no Fortificacion to Effecte made, not one Man yet wonne, to retorne to them, either in Knowledge, Service, or Tenauncye: They are to paye Rent to her Majestie, by Covenaut, at Michelmas next, after the Rate of xx s. the Ploughland, and sett downe, plant, and enhabite, before the Ende of the Yeare of oure Lorde 1579, otherwise their States by Covenantes are determined: In both the latter, I found that great Vnlyklyhoode, and almost Impossibilitie, to be brought to passe by them and their Parteners, that I dealt withe Chattertons Brother, whome I founde here; and moch pittienge both hym and his Case, and the wilfull Consuminge of their Goodes (to so manifest a Losse, and Imparinge of them selves, and theire Patrimonyes) that I offered to be a Meane for Composicion; which he refused, and told me, that he coulde not deale in the Matter alone, without his Brother. And one the other Side, the Chanlons beinge sent for, to come vnto me, vpon Protection, they refused to come, for that they feared, and so they answered the Messenger, that I would compell them to Composicion with Chatterton, which they saied they would neuer yeeld vnto. So that I neither finde Meanes to agree them, nor see in Chatterton, and his Parteners, any Lyklyhoode, or Possibilitie, to do Good for them selves. Therefore if her Majestie would, in some Sort, reasonablye compound with them, for their Graunte, the Countrie would growe moche quieter, and their Neighbors welthier, and the old



old Inhabitaunts (as I thinke) will yeeld her Majestie yearelye, to become Tenaunts to her of hir Countrie, twoe hundred Poundes by the Yeare, and an ordinary Ryfinge out of Horssmen and Footemen.

Next I came to *Evaugh*, or *Mac Denneffe* Countrie, which is not yet recovered, but feeleth still the heavye Burden of former Spoyles, and impeached with present ill Neighborhoode, and speciallye of those twoe Countries before remembred; and the worffe planted, manured, and inhabited, for that he is not sure of it by any certeine Estate; and therefore desiereth, by Peticion (which here inclosed I send your Lordships) that he may have it confirmed vnto hym from her Majestie. He hathe, since the first Tyme I brought hym out of Subiection to *O'Neill*, remayned a constant and assured good Subiecte, growen civill and verie tractable, accompanied me this Iorney hym selfe, and his Force, with that Forwardnes to serve her Majestie, as there wanted no Token of good Will, wherein he might expresse any Note of assured Fidellitie and Obedience.

From thence I came to *Kinnaliartie*, or *Mac Cartains* Countrie, which I found all desolate and wast, full of Thieves, Outlawes, and vnreclaymed People; none of the old Owners dare occupie the Lande, becawse it hath pleased her Majestie to bestowe the Countrie vpon Capten *Nicolas Malbye*, tied, neverthelesse, to such Observacion of Covenaut and Con디션, as *Chatterton* had his. Al be it I could wishe *Malbie* a farre better good Torne, both in Creditt and Commoditie, then that Countrie is, or can be to hym (for so I thinke hym worthie) yet for that I see there is no Possibilitie in hym to do any Good, but to spoyle and wearye hym selfe, and bourden his Freindes, and make the Countrie wast, and altogether abandoned of Inhabitaunts: I would wishe that some reasonable Recompence were offered hym for his good Contentment, and that the Quene should resume the Landes into her owne Handes, and then Proffitt of Rent and Service would be made of it, where nowe no Benifitt arryseth at all to *Malbye*, nor none ells; but contrariwise, beinge held as it is, breadethe moche Trouble and Inconvenience to the good Neighbourhoode, and commen Quiet and Securitie of the Countrie.

Leavinge that Countrie, I passed thoroughe *Lecale*, which is my Lord of *Kildares* Landes, and there found dyvers verie honest Freholders; but moche of the Countrie wast, but nowe on the mendinge Hand, and far the better since the Earle of *Essex* had it, and that by his Plantinge of Tenauntes, and Placinge of Soldiours; so that it doth verie well defende it selfe.

The *Dufferen*, or *Whites* Countrie, I found all wast and desolate, vsed as they of *Clandeboy* list. The Owner of it is a proper young Man, and well disposed, but I feare vnhabable to do any Good on it, either for the Publike or his owne Particular. In the Streights of this Countrie, *Neill Mac Brian Ertough*, made Capten of *Clandeboy* by the Earle of *Essex*, shewed his Force, and refused, though, vpon Protection, to come to me, yet that Day he offered me no Skirmishe.

From thence passinge into the *Ardes*, I found that Countrie moche impoverished, but in good Hope of Recoverie, for that there are maney Freholders of *Englishe* Race, of auntient Habitation there; and moche the better I hope it wilbe, thorough Sir *Thomas Smythes* Pollecy and Purffe. And nowe moche quieter, for that I have taken into Proteccion one *Edmound Savage*, alias *Ferdrough Mac Seneshall*, who before, by Reason of some hard Dealeinge vsed towarde hym (which he alleadged vnto me in Particularitie, the better to collor his Faulte) ioyned to his owne naturall Disposition to Vnquietnes and Stirre; he both attempted hym selfe, and procured others, greatlye to annoy the honest and quiet Inhabitaunts, and to burne and destroy that that they had, and to make their Landes wast and vnprofitable. In the Confynes of this Countrie (as I take it) I was offered Skirmishe by *Mac Neill Brian Ertough*, at my Passage over the Water at *Belfast*; which I cawsed to be answered, and passed over without Losse of Man or Horse; yet, by Reason of the Tydes extraordinarie Retorne, oure Horries swamme, and the Footemen, in the Passage, waded verie depe.

The



The Countrey of *Clandeboy* I found vtterlye disinhabited. The Capten refused to have Conference with me, and answered, that *Con Mac Neill Oge* was Captene, and not he (who, beinge apointed to be delyvered to the Marshall by Negligence of his Kepers, made an Escape in his Comminge from *Dublin*, where before he remayned Prisonner.) The Towne of *Knockfergus* I found moche decayed and impoverished; no Ploughes goinge at all, where before were maney, and great Stoare of Kyne and Cattle, belonginge to the Towne, nowe fewe or none leaft; Churches and Howsies, saviage Castells, burned; the Inhabitaunts fled, not above fixe Howseholders, of any Countenaunce, leaft remayninge; so that their miserable State, and servile Feare, was to be pittied; yet they so comforted to heare of her Majesties gracious Disposicion, to wall their Towne (whereby they assured them selves of Saffetye and quiett Dwellinge heareafter) as that Hope hath, and doth procure, and drawe, dyvers to resorte and buyld there; which, when it shalbe donne, the Townesmen will multiplie in Number, and therebye will followe an Encrease of an yereleye growinge Revenue to her Majestie.

The *Glynnes* and *Rowte* I found possessed by the *Scottes*, and nowe governed by *Sorley Boy*. The Countrie full of Corne and Cattle, and the *Scott* verye hawtie and prowde, by Reason of the late Victories he hath had against oure Men, fyndinge the Basenes of their Couragies: Notwithstandinge, he made Meanes to have Treatie with me; yet great Diffidence I sawe in hym (as is vniversallye in all the rest) to trust they are so pulled backe by their Followers: I dealt with hym by Commissioners, who concluded with hym for Abstinence from Armes for a Tyme, till his Petitions were considered, and resolved vpon, by her Majestie: The Copie whereof I here with send vnto your Lordships.

The Forte of the *Ragblines* I cawfed to be abandoned, for that I sawe little Purpose, for the present, to kepe it; and so small Commoditie to so great a Chardge to her Majestie, being a Place so difficult to be victualled, they within the Piece havinge no freshe Water to relieve them; which, with great Daunger to them selves, they are forced to fetch Abroade. The Souldiours I caused to be brought thence being 40 in Number, they confessed, that, in this small Tyme of their Contynuanee there, they were driven to kill their Horsies, and eat them, and to feede on them and young Coltes Fleshe one Moneth before they came away; soche Extremitie they endured for Victualls. It is a Piece verye easie to be wonne agayne at any Tyme, but very chardgeous and hard to be held.

In my Retorne thorough *Kilwarlen*, *Cormocke Oneill*, Capten of the Countrey (made by the Earle of *Essex*) came vnto me, and submitted hym selfe, and was my Guyde; he desiereth to heve the Countrie of her Majestie, and offereth Rent and Service for it: But the Man is of smale Wealth and Habilitie, and the Countrie very pore and desolate.

Leaving that Countrie I came to *Kilultagh*, which I found ritch and plentifull (after the Manner of theise Countries;) the Captain prowde and insolent; he would not come at me, nor I had not apt Season to visitt hym as I would; but he shalbe taught his Good, before it be longe; I will not remayne in his Debt.

After my Retorne to the *Newrie*, I went to visitt the Fort upon the *Blackwater*; all the Tract of the Ground, betwixt the Forte and the *Newrye*, is vnder the Rule of the Baron of *Dungannon*, and, in Effecte, all wast. *Armache* Church all downe; the Towne miserable; the Fort imperfecte, not worth the Chardge of the Keping, if their be peaceable Proceading; the Bridge and Gate to garde it not halfe reared; but I have taken Order it shalbe finished, and verye necessarye it is to be kept, if forceable Proceadinge be entended.

At my Retorne from the Fort to *Armache*, *T. Oneills* Wife came vnto me; she is one verye well spoken, of great Modesty, good Nurture, Parentage, and Disposicion; she was Aunte to the Earle of *Arguyle* that last was, and lyke-wise to hym that nowe is; and a great Desier she hath to have her Husband



band lyve lyke a good Subiecte, and to have hym nobilitated. The next Day followinge *T. Oneill* came hym selfe simplye, without Pledge, Promis, or Hostage, and taried with me twoe Dayes, vsinge hym selfe with soche Subiection and Reverence, and reposinge soch Confidence and Truith in me, as, in all his Speeches, he referred hym selfe to be adiudged, directed, and satisfied by me. The first Petitions he presented, were reiected, becawse he demaunded as ample an Estate and Rule, as others of his Surname heretofore have had. His humble Submission, in his latter Petitions, accepted, and herewith sent to your Lordships, he saied he would send his Man to sollicite her Majestie and your Lordships Resolucions for them: When he cometh, I beseeche your Lordships he may be gratiousslye vsed; and, if your Lordships thinke it convenient to rewarde hym, I pray you, that I may knowe what you have bestowed vpon hym.

*Mac Mason* came to me lykewise to *Armache*; he offereth duetifull Obedience and Fidellitie, and sheweth no small Ioy and Comfort, to be delyvered from *Oneills* Servitude; he hateth to be in Bondage to hym, he hath to moche felt his Tirrannie; and therefore, if he may obtaine to be delyvered, he will yeeld Rent and Service largelye to her Majestie, to hold his Landes of her.

For *Ferney*, I have donne nothinge, for that I exspecte my Lord of *Essex* Resolution, and he the Quenes, as I take it.

Where *Sorley Boy* nowe enioyethe the Occupacion of the *Glinnes*, which rather of Right seameth should descende to *James Mac Donells* Sonne, his elder Brother, and not to be transferred to hym as hys owne Right: The Ladye *Oneill* desiereth to have it by Graunt from her Majestie for her second Sonne, who will sweare, to be her Majesties liedge Man, and a dutifulle Subiect to her; dwell vpon it hym selfe, and yeeld Rent and Service as moche as her Majestie shall reasonablie demaund, and defend the same against *Sorley* and his.

Thus, my Lords, havinge sett downe vnto you in what State I found *Ulster* in this my late Iorney, I am not variable and discentinge from that I was wont to say; which is, that if forceable Subiection, which I lyke better then any other Proceadinge, be best allowed, I will rather hold that Course, so that I may be assured to be supplied with readye Money, and I knowe I can do it as good cheape as none better. And surelye the Plott my Lord of *Essex* sett downe for Reformation of that Province to reduce the Subiecte to Obedience, and her Maiestie to have Proffitt of her owne, was the trewe Plott and best Way in dede; well meant by his Lordship, and a Matter fecible, and in a short Tyme to be donne. But it is no Subiectes Enterprise, a Princes Purffe and Power must do it, as I have heretofore at large discoursed; and, if her Majestie lyke not of that, but will have a peaceable Reformation: My Opinion is, that she graunt *T. Oneills* Petitions, savinge that I would wishe, that *Mac Guier* and *Mac Mason* were exempted from hym. How be it, though in gracious Tearmes, I would they should be denied hym absolutelye, and hym selfe to be nobilitated by the Title of Earle of *Clanoneill*, duringe his Lyffe; whiche, consideringe his Age, wounded and imperfect Boddye, his ill Diet, and contynual Surfett, he cannot be of longe Lyffe; and her Majestie hath good Presidents of the like Proceadings: First, in her gracious Fathers Tyme, of famous Memorie, the Creacion of the Earle of *Clanrickarde*, of the Surname of *Mac William*; and, in her Majesties owne Tyme, she created *Mat Carte More* Earle of *Clancarre*. The Takinge from *T. Oneill* all theise Capteines of Countries, that heretofore have depended vpon hym and the Predicessors of his Surname, as of their cheife Lorde, and contentinge hym with this Title of Earle, and his Issue made, ever after, to be Barons of some one Place; it wilbe the Discipation of his Force and Strength, Encrease of Revenue and Service to her Majestie, that theise Lordes and Capteines of Countries hold absolutelye of her, and none els. And, by this Meanes, it will, in one halfe an Age, come to passe, that his Succession and Posteritie shall not be of Power to do any Harme, that may not easilye be resisted; which will breade a great Quiet in the



the Northe, which Countrie heretofore hath, from Tyme to Tyme, bene so troublesome.

Touchinge *Sorley Boyes* Petitions for the *Rowte*, I would wishe it should be flatlye denied hym, for that he hath no Right to it at all; his Vfurpacion and Enioyenge of it grew, by Reason he, to whome the Captenrie of the Countrie belonged, was a dissolute and lose Fellowe, feeble both of Witt and Force, not hable to defende the Countrie: And the Freholders, desierous to be protected and shielded, by one mightier in Power and Pollecy, contented them selves to imbrace the *Scott*. Howe be it, there are nowe, of the Issue of the right Proprietaries, Men hable, with a little Healpe, to kepe the *Scotts* out of it, or at least for beinge moch better by it. And, in this Pointe, her Majestie (if it so please your Lordships) is to be remembred to write to the Regent of *Scotland* effectuallye, that he geve Order to kepe the *Scottes* at Home, who, from that Region, and, namelye, the out Isles, swarmme daylye hether, to the great Annoyance of the North Parte of this Realme. To the *Glinnes* he hath an apparaunt Title. I knowe no Man, of this Countrie Birthe, to clayme it, or care for it, but the Surname of the *Scottes*; therefore I wishe they had it, yeeldinge a convenient Rent and Service.

*Mac Gennesse* hath alreadie humblye fought to have his Countrey immediatlye of her Majestie, and to pay Rent, Royaltie, and Service for the same; I have promised and vndertaken to get it for hym. The Rent reserved vpon those Landes shalbe at the least one hundered Poundes by the Yeare, besides Service of Horsemen and Footemen. My earnest Desier therefore to your Lordships is, that, in respect of his Loyaltie, Cyvillitie, and stayed Constancye, it would please her Majestie to geve me Power to create hym Baron of *Evaugh*. The Example would be good, and a good Inducement to others of his Sorte, by the lyke Service, to hope of the lyke Rewarde that he hath, to the Honnor and Creditt of their Posteritie; and therefore this Request, for his Nobilitacion, may not, in my Opinion, well be denied hym.

That it would please your Lordships lykewise to have in Remembraunce, that the Grauntes, made to *Chatterton* and *Malbye*, may presentlye be revoked; which Grauntes, thorough their Inhabilities, to performe Covenantes with her Majestie, will of them selves become voyd, within fewe Yeares; and yet, in the meane Tyme, beinge not revoked, are soch Stayes and Impediments to the Quiet of the Countrie, and her Majesties Service in those Partes, as without that, nothinge can perfectlye be donne; which, if it shall please her Majestie to assent vnto, and give Order, the same be spedilye done, it shalbe moche awayable to her Highnes, both in Honnor and Proffitt to graunte me full Power, aswell for the Lettinge and Grauntinge of those twoe Countries to the olde Inhabitants, as all the rest of the Landes in *Ulster* to be lett, reservinge Rent and Service to her Majestie; and this donne, I dare vndertake the Revenue, growinge to her Majestie in her Province of *Ulster*, by Reservation of Rent, and Service, shalbe able to mainteine necessarie Garrisons, to kepe and defend *Ulster* from all Annoyances, the Resistauce of Forreines and Buyldinges only excepted.

Amongest other Matters for *Ulster*, I am humblye to pray your Lordships, to be Remembrauncers to her Majestie, for the Benevolence of her Almes, towarde the Buylding of the Church of *Armache*, whereby better Enterteinment for the Deputy and his Train will growe, when he hath Occasion to repaier thether; the last Money for that Purpose, beinge twoe hundered Poundes, was restored againe by the Prymate to Sir *William Dansell*, as the Prymate affirmed; which if it please her Majestie, it may be redelyvered, or a larger Somme graunted, I will see it profitablye bestowed; it wilbe Occasion I hope of more Buyldinge, Resorte, and Confluence of People and Inhabitaunts thether, whiche were verye necessarye should be, the Place beinge, for dyvers Respectes, so commodious for Service as it is.

I humblye beseeche your Lordships lykewise to geve Order, that my Money for the next Quarter, payable the First of *Januarye* next, by Assignacion  
and



and Composicion from her Majestie, may be forthwith delyvered to this Bearer, my Servaunt, *John Gifforde*, this first Quarter havinge bene alreadye so hard with me, by Reason of my Preparacion, and Furnishinge for this Place, and Transportacion; painge and makinge Provision of Victualls, for the Findinge of the Garrison for the moste Parte of the Yeare to come; delyveringe large Imprests for Buyldeinge, Money laied out by me, for savinge the Queenes Chardgies, in Painge of the Soldiours dischargd, which I neded not: The twoe thousand Poundes out of my Quarterage, which was imprested vnto me aforehand, I bestowed fullye in *England*, before my Comminge over; all whiche Chardgies, laied together, makes me in greater Want, and the rather to presse your Lordships, I may be presentlye holpen, which I hope you will geve Order I be.

I humblye thanke your Lordships, for your honorable Remembraunces of me, to be supplied with the Healpe of Sir *William Drewries* Service, for her Majestie here; he is so gratefull and welcome a Man vnto me, as any of his Ranke and Place in *England* could be. I knowe his Valor and Worthines, and what Estimation is held of hym of the best, which he hath well deserved; none you could have sent, whose Companye I have more desired, nor whose Presence in Comminge shalbe better welcome, then he shall; and therefore, eftsones, I humblye thanke your Lordships for hym.

Vpon the Consideracion of the Soldiours Enterteinment here, I finde howe difficult and hard a Matter it is, for the Footeman to lyve vpon his Pay, beinge but *vi d.* a Day, painge for his Piece, Pouder, and Armor, Victualls, and all other necessarie Things he nedeth to be furnished of, beinge as deare here, for the most Parte, as in the midst of *Cheape-side*: And if it be so hard for the Footeman to mainteine hym selfe with the Wagies of his Pay; I can see no Possibilitie howe the Horffeman can do it, who hath the onelye Enterteinment of *vi d. ob. gr.* the Day, to fynde hym selfe, his Horffe, Hackney, and Boy; and therfore, to make them lyve more contentedlye, then nowe they do, I feare I must be enforced to encrease their Wagies, and to contynue so maney the fewer in Number; whiche I would gladlye do, by your Lordships good Allowauncies and Consentes, least after my Tyme, it may be saied, I have brought in this Innovacion and Devise of myne owne, to the Encrease of her Majesties Chardge, which loth I would, should be laied vpon me, to beare so heavye a Burden alone. But, therefore, desier your Lordships, vpon the well Wainge, and your wonted discreete and grave Consideracions had of the Matter, to ioine and concurre with me in Opinion, if your Lordships shall finde it so expediente.

*Harrye Oneill*, *Shanes* Sonne, was comitted to the Castell of *Dublin*, as a Pledge for his Fathers Debt; he hath remayned there a great Whyle, to a Charge to her Majestie, and nothings to be had out of hym, though, dyvers and sondrie Tymes, Meanes hath bene made for it: I would therefore be glad to knowe your Lordships Resolucions for his Deteininge or Enlardginge, or what ells your Lordships would wishe I should do in it.

And thus humblye beseechinge your good Lordships, to imparte vnto her Majestie either the whole Effecte thereof (if you thinke it so necessarye) or soche Partes thereof, as to your grave Iudgements and Advises it shall seme convenient, humblye cravinge her Majesties Resolucion in those spetiall Pointes I write of; I take my Leave of your good Lordships. From *Mellefount*, niere *Drogheda*, the xvth of November, 1575.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde humblye to commaunde.*

*Sir*



## Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell.

My verie good Lords,

**M**Y Duetie most humblye remembred to your honorable Lordships, since my last Lettres, wherein I made Reporte of the Estate of *Vlster*, and in the same omitted (as I thinke) to write of *Odonnell*, Lorde of *Tirconnell*, and *Mac Guyer*, Lord of *Farmanagh*, who write humblye vnto me, lyve welthfullye, and denye not to paye Rente and Service to her Majestie (so as they may be discharged from the Exaction of others.) I have passed, and gonne through the whole *Englyshe* Pale, conteininge the greatest and best Parte of the Provinces of *Myetbe* and *Leynster*, and of the same have had Conference, withe the principall Parsonadgies and Gentlemen, aswell *Englyshe* as *Irishe*, of the State of those two Countries. In lyke Sorte as I meane (before I cesse to travell in Iorney as I do) to visitt the most and chiefeft Partes of everye Province within this Realme. And yet, before I enter to perticuler Discourse of any other Parte, I must retorne backe to the Province of *Vlster*, and speake of the Cownty of *Lowthe*, beinge a Percell of the *Englyshe* Pale, which I finde greatlye impoverished, through the contynuall Concourse of Soldiours, passinge twoe and fro the North, and besides the ill Neighborhood of the Men of *Ferney*, the *Fuze*, and *Orrerie*, mentioned in my former Reporte of *Vlster*. The good Townes of *Carlingfoorde*, *Dundalke*, and *Ardie*, are extremelye impoverished, and onelye the Towne of *Drogheda* in better State; which was more amended, and encreased in Wealthe, thorough the great Exspensies of the Earle of *Essex*, who lay and contynued there moche, and, duringe his Abode, verie bountifullye, and honorablye, spent in the same: Howe be it, the rest of the Countrie, in great Confidence of speedie Recoverie, for the Gentlemen are willinge to obey, and forward to serve; and the rather, for the good Inclynation I fynde of my Lord of *Lowthe*, who is one both well geven, and forward (as it seameth) to execute any Thinge comitted vnto hym. The good Neighborhood of the Marshall, who governeth those vnder his Rule, without doinge of Harme, but rather, by their Labors and Travells, Procurers of Amytie, freindlye Societie, and Quiet to their Neighbors: So that onely *Ferney* is the Gapp open to the Hurte of the rest, which I beseeche your Lordships, to hasten my Lord of *Essex* to take Order in, as the Occasion of his Stay in Resolution to place some one Man, to take the Chardge of the Countrie, breede not further Trouble, then in short Tyme is to be recovered.

And thus to begynne with *Myetbe*, I fynde the same curselye scorched on the out Syde, aswell by the Incursions of the *Ochonnors* and *Omoloyes*, whyle they were in open Rebellion, as oppressed by theim, since they were protected; not yet recovered nor reformed, but in verie good Way to be (the Noblemen and Gentlemen of the same performing, in their Doings, that whiche francklye they have offered;) and a great deale the better it is, for the good Neighborhood and iust Dealinge of *Oreilye*, whose Countrie, for that it is in the Province of *Connaught*, for the Present I write the lesse of hym and of it; yet, for that he consyneth with this Countrey, and it very well vsed by hym, I thought good thus moche to touch of hym and it, as of the iustest *Irishman*, and the best ruled *Irishe* Countrie, by an *Irishman*, that is in all *Ireland*.

The most of the Barronies, of the Borders of *Westmeithe*, are fore spoyled, and made wast, by the aforementioned Rebels, as *Fertulaughe*, or *Terrills* Countrie: The Barronie of *Ferbill*, called *Darcies* Countrie, sometye, and now, held of the Earle of *Kildare*; *Dillons* Countrie, *Daltons*, and *Delamore*. Theise, and dyvers others, as the *Brawney*, *Yrin*, or *Obriens* Countrie, were made Barronies of *Westmeithe*, when the same was first made a Shire; and, in the Tyme of my last Governement here, I added *Kinnelliaugh*, or *Magogbegans* Countrie, the *Caulderie*, or *Mac Sawles* Countrie, *Clancolman*, or *Omolaghlins* Countrie, to be lykewise Members and Percells of the saide Countie: In theise *Irishe* Countries,



the Writt yet hath had no perfect Currencie ; but, God willinge, it shall have : Whereunto the Lords of the same have willinglye agreed, and most humblye desired to take their Landes of the Quene, yeldinge for the same both Rent and Service. *Fircall*, or *Omoloies* Countrie, *Mounteregane*, or the *Foxes* Countrie, together with the rest before remembred, are all wasted, and extremelye impoverished, by the Rebels aforenamed (*Magogbegan* or *Maccoghblans* Countrie onelye excepted) but I hoope well of the speedie Reformation of this Countrie, a great deale the rather, thorough the good Hope I conceive of the Service of my Lord of *Delvin*, whome I fynde actyve, and of good Discreation. There ioyneth vnto this the *Annalye*, a Countrie by me heretofore made the Countie of *Longfoorde*, beinge a Percell of the Province of *Connaught*, the Lordes of the same beinge of twoe Lynagies, though of one Surname ; they were with me, and proved, by good Testimonie, that they were good Neighbours, both to *Westmeithe*, and the rest of the Pale ; and lyved nowe in farre better Order, and greater Wealthe, amoung theim selves, then they did, before they were made Shyre Grounde ; they confesse to be in Arrerage for their Rent, for all, or most of the Yeares since I departed, which they willinglye agreed to pay speedilye, and in convenient Tyme. And thus moche for the State of the Province and Countries of *Myeth*.

In the Province of *Leynster*, first I fynde the Borders of the Countie of *Dublin* greatlye annoyed, almost by Night Stealthes, and some Daylight Bodraggs, cheifelye fathered vpon one *Feugh Mac Hugh Mac Shane*, of the Surname of the *Birnes*, but vnder his Father, Owner and Fermor of sondrie Landes aparte from theim : The Father was with me without Protection, but the Sonne lyveth a loofe ; yet without Hurte, for any Thinge I heare since myne Arryvall ; but, my Circuite once finished, I intend to attend hym somewhat nerer, then hether-to I have donne. The Countye of *Kildare* is extremelye impoverished, and in especiall the Earle of *Kildares* Lordshippes and Landes ; which, in a great Parte, are wasted, partlye by the last named loose People, partlye and cheifelye by the *Omores*, aswell in their Rebellion, as since they were vnder Protection ; and in one Barronnie of the said Countye, called *Carberie*, it was constantlye affirmed vnto me, by old *Henrye Cowley*, with Teares in his Eyes, that that Barronnie was three thousand Poundes in worffe Case, then it was the last Tyme before I was there with hym. The Countye of *Caterlaugh* is more then halfe wast, aswell by the aforenamed Outlawes of all Sortes, as partlye by the Inhabitaunts of *Kilkenny*, the *Cavannaughes*, and some other of their owne Soyle, lyvyng vnder Sir *Edmund Butler* ; and some Doubt I have of the good Order of that Quarter, for that Sir *Peter Carewe* is latelye departed this Woorld, and the Land left to a younge Gentleman his Kinsman : For the Countye of *Weixfoorde*, it is constantlye affirmed, both publykelye and pryvatelye, by *Thomas Masterfon*, and maney other principall Gentlemen, that, if it were devided into twoe Partes, the one of theim is vtterlye wasted ; most by theim of the Countye of *Kilkennie*, partlye by some of theim selves, and moch by the *Cavannaughes*, lyvinge in the woorse Order, for that their Captens, *Englishmen*, agree no better, which is moche to be pittied ; but hardlye it wilbe redressed, it is so innate, after they be once placed heere. For the *Irishe* Countries, on the East Syde of *Leynster*, being vnder the Rule of Mr. *Agard*, as the *Otooles*, and *Obirnes* Countrie, I finde they are in verye good Order, except *Hugh Mac Shanes* Sonne, whom before I remembred. And here, my Lords, least I should forget it, I cannot but lament the Lacke of Mr. *Agarde* so longe from hence ; fuerlye the Losse of a thousand Pound should not so moche have grieved me, as the Wanting of hym hath troubled me. The *Kinshe-laugh* is devided into three Linagies, but originallie all *Cavannaughes*, nowe vnder the Order of *Thomas Masterfon*, who (in myne Opinion) is a good Servaunt, both for the Quene and Countrie ; for he hath brought the People to good Order, and made them obedient and willinge to pay that Rent, which I heretofore brought them to ; and, though moch in Arrere, yet pay it they will and shall. The *Omurroes*, an other Race of the *Cavannaughes*,



*Cavannaughes*, are, vnder the Rule of one *Richard Synott*, in indifferent good Order, obedient, and shall pay their Rent and Service, aswell that in Arryre, as that shall growe due hereafter. That Race of the *Cavannaughes*, that dwell about *Fernes*, by the good Pollecy and Rule of *Thomas Masterson*, Constable of the same, are willinge and redde to yeeld all Rents and Services, due to her Majestie; and thus moche for the *Irishbrey* in *East Leynster*.

On the West Syde lyethe the Countries of *Offalye*, or *Occhonnors* Countrie, *Leax*, or *Omores* Countrie, *Upper Offerie*, or *Mac Gill Patricks* Countrie, *Irregan*, or *Odonnes* Countrie; the twoe first were shired by the Names of *Kinges* and *Queenes* Counties. And, in the Tyme of my Lord of *Suffexs* Governement, graunted in Fee Ferme, with good Reservacions, to sondrie Tenaunts, whereof the greatest Parte then were mere *Englyshe*; and now bothe Countries are moche spoyled and wasted, by the Race and Offspringe of the old natyve Inhabiters, whiche growe great, and increase in Number; and the *English* Tenaunts decay, both in Force and Wealthe, not of Abilitie to answere their Rents and Services, but let their Landes to *Irish* Tenautes: They are daylie so spoyled and burned, the Chardgies they have bene at, and their daylie Exspenses they be at, to defende them selves, so weakenethe theim, as their State is to be pittied; twoe hundred Men, at the least, in the Princes Pay, lye there, to defende theim. The Revenue of both the Countries countervayle not the xxth Parte of the Chardge: So that the Purchase of that Plott is, and hath bene vearie deare, yet nowe not to be geven over in any wise; for, God willinge, it shalbe recovered and maintained; but this may be an Example, howe the lyke hereafter is attempted, consideringe the Chardge is so greate, and the Honnor and Proffitt so small, to wyne Landes from the *Irishbrey* so dearye, as theise twoe Countries have ben to the Crowne. *Rorie Oge* hath that Possession, and Settling Place, in the *Queenes* Countye, whether the Tenaunts will or noe, as he occupieth what he listeth, and wasteth what he will. *Gesbell*, in the *Kings* Countye, is verye necessarie to be had of the Earle of *Kildare*; it is a Matter of Consequence for her Majesties Service in that Countye, and therefore it were verie necessarie, he were dealt effectuallye with to departe withall. Duringe the Tyme of my beinge at the Forte at *Maribrough*, the Earle of *Clanrickard* came vnto me, not unsent for, but verye humblye and loyallye offered his Service; what and howe I fynd of hym, I will more at lardge writte to your Lordships, when I shall come to *Connaught*, where he is. *Upper Offerie* is so well governed and defended, by the Valor and Wisedome of the Baron that nowe is (for the old Man, whome before the Cawse of the greatest Disorder of that Countrie grewe, God hath taken, I hope, to his mercyfull Favor) as, savinge for Suertie of good Order here after in Succession, it made no Matter, if the Countrie were never shired, nor her Majesties Writt otherwise curraunt then it is; so humblye he kepeth all his People subiect to Obedience and good Order; and yet vnited to some Shire it shalbe, and the Baron hym selfe verye well agreeinge to yeeld both Fyne, Rent, and Service, as other Countries, latelie brought to such Frame, doe and shall do. *Irregan*, or *Odonnes* Countrie, in good Case; the Lord of it a valiant and honest Man, after this Countrie Manner: And here I thought fitt to remember likewise *Elye*, or *Occarrolls* Countrie, though the same be of the Province of *Mounster*, yet adioyninge in Lande and Neighborhoode to the Countries before named.

The last of this Province, in this my Accompt, is the Countye of *Kilkennye*, which I finde in verye bad Case, yet by maney due Circumstaunces proved, to be the Sincke and Receptacle of innumerable Cattell and Goodes stolen, out of maney other Countries; but vndonne by their owne idle Men, and partlye by Harboringe of protected Rebels; which yet was done by Order, and for the Avoydinge of a greater, or, at the least, a more present Mischeife: Here *Rorie Oge* came vnto me vpon the Earle of *Ormonds* Woorde, and, in the Cathedrall Church of *Kilkennye*, submitted hym selfe, repenting (as he said) his former Fawlt, and promysinge, hereafter, to lyve in better Sorte (for woorsse, then



he hath ben, he cannot be) for, by hym and his, the greatest Spoyles and Disorders have been comitted vpon the *Quenes* Countye and the Pale. I accepted hym vpon Entreatye, and Triall of Amendement till my Retorne, and both lessoned hym and threatned hym for his former Fawlt; so that I stand in somme Hope, he will lyve more orderlye and quietlye, then he hath donne, renouncing that aspiringe Imagination of Tytle to the Countrie; which, if he do not, and content hym selfe with soch a Portion of Freehold, as I shall allot, and thinke mete for hym, he shall be the first, that will repent the Matche, for he shall forgooe Lyffe, Land, and all, otherwise I will fayle moche of my Purpose; for so I have geven hym Warninge, and will kepe Touche with hym, if I can. At this Towne like wise, the Earle of *Ormound* feasted and entreated me very honorablye, and accompanied me to this Cittye, very courteouslye, where I was receiued with all Shewes and Tokens of Gladnes and Pompe, aswell vpon the Water, as the Lande; presented withe the best Commodities they had, with Ceremonie of their Thankefulnes and good Wills, as true Pledges of their Obedience to her Majestie, and her Governor. I could not passe over in vnthankfull Scylence, but thought it expedient to recorde the same to your Lordships; that, hereafter, in their reasonable Sutes, their Cittie may the rather fynde both Thankes and Favor at your Handes. In passinge through the Counties and Countries, I have heretofore spoken of, to your Lordships, I left eche of them, before my Departure from them, vnder Governement and Garde for the most Parte, accordinge to their owne Devises, which they thought wold be most for their Safeties and Commodities, till my Retorne; somme I left to them selves, and the Garde of their owne Borders, as they desired; yet, with Authoritie sufficient, to levye Force amongst them selves, if Nede so requyred: Some other Places I left well garded withe the Garrison, and other sufficient Strength of their owne, for suche was their Desier; and so, by Conference with them of their States, it semed best and lykelyest to me. I placed the Baron of *Vpper Osserie* Lieutenante of the *Kinges* and *Quenes* Counties, and divers *Irish* Countries adioyninge: The lyke Authoritie I left with the Earle of *Ormounde*, of the twoe Counties of *Kylkennye* and *Typperarie*: So that I fynde in all the Places, I have yet passed, the People remayne in good Confydence, beinge so provided for, and garded as they be, to remayne in good Quiett till my Retorne.

My Lords, at my Comminge over, because I founde the Garrison was vtterlye vnprouided of Victuall, for the Yere followinge, I cawsed an Assemblye of the Countrie, and Agreement for a Cesse; which, after maney Debaytings amongst vs, and Opinions of eche Man harde, I found generallye by them all, or, at the least, by the greater, and wiser Sorte of them: That, to be exempted hencefoorth, and not to be chardged with any soche Impositions, for the Victuallinge of the Garrison, they wold more willinglye yeelde a certeine yerely Rent, out of every Ploughland, to be a Perpetuitie to her Majestie, and her Posteritie: So they might on the other Syde be assured, vppon what Accydent so ever happen, to be dischardged of the Cesse, and Victuallinge of the Soldiors (they have of late growen so burdenous to them.) My Demaund was, but for the Victuallinge of a Thowsand of all Sortes, aswell Horsmen as Foote-men: And, to be dischardged of them, their wilbe made an Encrease of Rent to her Majestie, towards the Victuallinge of that Thowsande, the Somme of twoe thowsand Pounds by the Yere, after the *Englishe* Accompte, if the same may be brought to passe; as there is Likelyhoode, if the Matter be well proceeded in, it will be. But, because it may seme an Innovation, and that loath I were, to enter into a Matter of soch Consequence alone, but assisted from you, I humbly desier your Lordships Resolutions herein; which, when the same shall, at your good Pleasures, be signified vnto me, I will then shewe your Lordships myne Opinion, and further Advice, whiche Way the same may be best wrought for an Assurance to her Majestie of her yerely Encrease of Rent, and best Contentement, and Satisfaction to the Countrie, both which I wishe were observed and donne. And the Way is, for the Present, that if you lyke  
of



of the Overture, that her Majestie write to the Countie, and promise them Fredome of their Landes, if that Increase of Rent be graunted towards the Victuallinge of the Garrison.

Nowe, beinge redde to departe hence, I sett forwardes towards *Corcke*, where, God willinge, I meane to be before *Christmas*: Sir *Lucas Dillon*, Mr. *John Challoner*, *Jaques Wingefeild*, the Master of the Ordenaunce, and *Launcelott Alfforde*, the Surveior, accompanieng me thether. Sir *Lucas Dillon* hath well assisted me, as well in the late Northeren Iorney, as in this; his Travell and Paynes have bene greates; and surelye, for his greates Care, to quiet and bring the Countie to better Frame, he deserveth great Prayse and Thanks, which I beseeche your Lordships, in your next Lettres, he may have from you. And thus, to drawe to an Ende, fearinge I have rather overmoche wried your Lordships with my Tedioufnes, I have twoe speciall Requestes to make; the one is, to hasten away my Money, sent for by my Servaunt, *John Gefforde*; the other is, to dispatche Mr. *Agarde* thence; the first beinge the Stringe to my Bowe, the other the best Marke Man I have. And, even so with my hartie Prayer, and well Wishinge to God, to prosper and preserve you all, to your honorable Contentementes, I humblye take my Leave. From *Waterfforde*, the xvijth of December, 1575.

*Your honorable Lordships assured loving*

*Freinde to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Francis Walsingham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

**H**ER Majestys Pleasure is, that I shoold sende unto you the inclosed Note, conteyning certeyn pryncypall Poyntes of your Instructyons, to the Ende you may render an Accompt what hath ben don in the same: Unto some of the seyd Poyntes, I knowe ther can be gyven no pressent Awntswer, for that your Lordship hath had neythor Tyme nor Laysure to consyder in sooche Sorte of them, as that you can give any full Awntswer therunto.

I am fuer yt hath ben bruited in *Irelande*, that her Majestye meaneth not to contynewe her Allowaunce of the xx Thousande Pownde agreed on; as also, that she doothe not lyke of the Erectyng of Presydents: Which Brute may greatly hynder her Majestys Servyce, and can not but greatly discourage your Lordship to see us waver; and to dowbt of the Successe of your Proceadyngs before any Tryall made of the same.

But this is no newe Fault, thowghe yt be a most dangerowse Fawlte. Trewe yt is, as yt is bruted abroad, that her Majesty hath no Affectyon to contynewe the Charges agreed on; and yet for that my Lords are of Opy-nion, that her Majesty uppon a Soddeyne, withowt any Tryall made, shoold not breake of the Matter: She seemethe to yelde to a Yeares Tryall: And yet dothe she lycke, that Sir *Wyllyam Drurye* shoold have his Alloweaunce, from the Tyme he hath ben in a Readynes to come over; having ben furcharged withe bothe Horse and Men provyded for this Servyce: Wheruppon I feare he wyll refuse to goe; espetyally, feing no more assured Determynatyon of his Impleyement ther, with that Contynewaunce, that might be for the Advancement of her Servyce, and his owne Credyt. Besydes, he consyderethe howe chargeable yt wold be for him to goe thither, and then, within a fewe Monethes after, to be revoked; so that I cannot assure you of his Determynatyon herein. Neyther can your Lordship yelde any effectuell Tryall of your Determynatyon for the Redresse of that Contrye; where as you shall lacke fyt Men to execute that which by you ys set downe.

I knowe not whether I may ascribe these Impedyments unto the Irresolutyon of this Tyme, or to the cursed Destenye of that Contrye; being not ordeyned



deyned to receyve any Good of any Determyntayon agreed on for the Reformatyion therof.

I had almost forgotten to tell your Lordship, Mr. *Agar* and I were forced (uppon the Caulyng in Questyion, whether the Charges agreed on weare to be contynewed) to sett downe the inclosed Plott I sende you; whereby yt myght appeare unto her Majesty, how profytably her Treasure shoold be imployed, which, by my Lords [of the Councell] wear verry well allowed of; and not otherwise myslyked by her Majesty, but in respect of the Charges.

Towching Mr. *Agars* Commyng over, whos Assystaunce you seme greatlye to desyre, I refer the Declaratyon of his Staye to his owne Letter.

I have dealt with her Majesty, to have had Mr. *Gerrard* sent over as Chancellor in that Realme; but I fynde her not dysposed therunto: For that she thinkethe he may not be well spared, in the Place where he nowe serveth. And so having scrybled unto you, that which I thinke fyt to be imparted unto your Lordship, I commyt you to Gods good Keeping. At *Hampton Coorte*, the xxviiiith of *Januarye*, 1575.

Your Lordships assured Freind,

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Propositions for the Chardges of Irland.*

|                                                         |   |                                                                                                                                      |                                     |   |                       |                       |
|---------------------------------------------------------|---|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|---|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| The Chardges of <i>Irland</i><br><i>per Annum, viz.</i> | { | To be receaved out of                                                                                                                | l.                                  | { | l.                    |                       |
|                                                         |   | <i>England</i> - - -                                                                                                                 | 20000 <i>Sterl.</i>                 |   | 26000 <i>Sterl.</i>   |                       |
|                                                         | { | The Revenue of <i>Ir-</i>                                                                                                            | l.                                  | { | whereof               |                       |
|                                                         | { | <i>land</i> - - -                                                                                                                    | 6000 <i>Sterl.</i>                  |   |                       |                       |
| For ordinarie Chardges<br><i>per Annum, viz.</i>        | { | To the Lord Deputie<br>and other principall<br>Officers - - -                                                                        | l.<br>3666 <i>Sterl.</i>            | { |                       |                       |
|                                                         |   | To the Lord Chaun-<br>cellor and other in-<br>ferior Officers - -                                                                    | l.<br>1000 <i>Sterl.</i>            |   |                       |                       |
|                                                         |   | To the Kernewith their<br>Generall by Patent                                                                                         | l.<br>1110 <i>l. Sterl.</i>         |   |                       | l. s. d.<br>8029 17 4 |
|                                                         |   | To the Ministers of<br>the Ordinance and<br>Warders in the Ca-<br>stle of <i>Dublin</i> ,<br>wherof the most by<br>Lettres Patents - | l. s.<br>291 4 <i>Sterl.</i>        |   |                       | <i>Sterl.</i>         |
|                                                         |   | To the Warders and<br>Castells - - -                                                                                                 | l. s. d.<br>1962 13 4 <i>Sterl.</i> |   |                       |                       |
| The Garison to aunswear<br>all Services, <i>viz.</i>    | { | First Horsmen 800,<br>with their Captaines,<br>Petie Captains, and<br>other Officers, <i>per</i><br><i>Annum</i> - - -               | l. s.<br>6022 10 <i>Sterl.</i>      | { | l. s. d.<br>13368 2 6 |                       |
|                                                         |   | Footmen 700, with<br>their Captaines and<br>petie Captaines and<br>Officers, <i>per Annum</i>                                        | l. s. d.<br>7345 12 6 <i>Sterl.</i> |   | <i>Sterl.</i>         |                       |
|                                                         |   |                                                                                                                                      |                                     |   |                       |                       |
|                                                         |   |                                                                                                                                      | l. s. d.                            |   |                       |                       |
|                                                         |   |                                                                                                                                      | Totalis 21397 19 10 <i>Sterl.</i>   |   |                       |                       |

The



Other ordinarie and extraordinary Chardges to be borne of the Some aforefaid, viz.

The Towne of *Knockfergus* to be walled, and the Peeres buylded.  
The decaied Bridge of *Dundalke* to be newe made.  
*Roscomon* to be reedified.  
A House to be builded in *Athenrie* for the President of *Connaughe*.  
A Bridge of Stone at *Lurtmiche* to be made.  
A Bridge beside given to be made.  
The Fort in the *Queenes Countie* to be repaired and made fit for the Lord Deputie to lie at.  
The Bridge of *Langblin* to be repaired.  
All the *Queenes Majesties Houses* to be maintayned and repaired.  
The Allowance and Fees of the Presidents and their Associates in *Munster* and *Connaghe* to be borne; the Victellers Wages and Losses of Victells rered, with all other Kinde of extraordinarie Charges; his Attendant of the Counsell traveling with the Lord Deputie in Iorneis, and divers other like.

How the Forces and Garrisons of 1260 is to be imploied, viz.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |   |     |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|-----|
| In the Northe and at the <i>Ferney</i> under the Conduct of the Earle of <i>Essex</i> ,                                                                                                                           | } | 100 |
| Horsmen - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                     |   |     |
| Footmen ther - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                |   | 250 |
| In <i>Monster</i> Horsmen -                                                                                                                                                                                       |   | 100 |
| Footmen ther - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                |   | 200 |
| In <i>Connaghe</i> Horsmen                                                                                                                                                                                        |   | 100 |
| Footmen ther - - -                                                                                                                                                                                                |   | 200 |
| For the Garde of the <i>Englishe Pale</i> , the Reforming of <i>Est Linster</i> , and the Expulsi <sup>n</sup> g of the disordered <i>Omoores</i> and <i>Otomores</i> , and to attend everie <i>Sudaine</i> - - - | } | 250 |
|                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |   |     |

The Commoditie lickle to insue by the Planting of Presidents in Mounster and Connaghe, &c.

*Imprimis*, The Townes dutifullie affected to her Majestie shall be preserved from the Oppressing of their cruell Neighbours.

The well disposed in the Province, whom her Majestie in Honnor is bound to defend agentst the Tirannie of their Oppressors, shall be protected.

The evill Disposed in the *Englishe Pale*, as *Omoores*, *Ochomores*, *Cavenaghes*, and such like, having Refuge to the said Province, shall be brided.

Her Majesties Write shall have Currencie within the said Province, and she acknowledged onlie Souveraigne; and such reduced to yelde due Obedience, that partlie stande in vndutifull Termes with her Majestie, to her great Dishonor.

Her Majesties Revenus, now possessed by Vsurpers or Concealers, shall be recovered and aunswered.

The said Realme, by Planting this civill Kinde of Governement, will be within fewe Yeres so peopled, as they shall be hable to make Heade agentst such forraine Princes as have anie Intelligences within that Realme.

And



And, if annie shall oppose him self agenst the Placing of the said Presidents, they shall be suppressed, without annie Supplie to be had out of this Realme, either of Men or Monie.

The Townes by this Couerse being defended from their Oppressiers, the well disposed Subiects protected, her Majesties Revenues in thes Provinces ain-sweared, the evill Disposed in the *Englishe* Pale bridleed, and her Writt having Currencie, her Majestie, within the Space of twoe or three Yeres, shall not be yearlie charged with above 20000 *l.* for *Irland*, vnlesse it be to withstand forrain Invasions.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.*

*My Dereft Lord,*

I Receved not your Letter of the 25 of *November*, untill the 24 of thys *January*, by *James Prescot*, who was seven Tymes at the Sea, and put bak agayn, before he could recover thys Cost.

I trust I have satysfied your Lordship with my Wrytyng, and others by my Procurement, sent by *Pakenham*, touchyng the fals and malycyus Brute of the Earl of *Essex* Poysonyng. If not, what you wyll have moore doon, shall be doon. I am fory I here not how you lyke of that I have doon, and the more, for that I am advertysed of *Pagnaneys* Arryvall theare. I would not have doutd to have made *Knell* to have retracted his inconfyderat and foolish Speech and Wrytyng; but God hath prevented me, by Taking hym away, dying of the same Dysease that the Earl dyd; whych, most certaynly, was free from any Poyson, and a meere Flux; a Dysease apropryated to thys Cuntry, and whearof thear dyed many in the later Part of the last Year, and sum out of myne one Household; and yet fre from any Suspicyon of Poyson.

And for my Lord of *Ormundys* Causes, I umbly besych your Lordship be my Paune, that I wyll do hym Justyce as indyferently and speedly as I wyll to any Man, confyderyng the Cause and necessary Cyrcomstances incydent to the same; but for Love, and lovyng Offyces, I will do as I fynd Cause. I craue no thyng at hys Hand, but that which he owyth to the Queene, and that whych her great Lyberalyte, besyde naturall Duty, byndyth him to. And, if he will have of me that I ow hym not, as he hathe had, he can not wyn yt by crossyng me, as I heere he dooth in the Court; and as I have Cause to deme he dooth in thys Cuntre. In fyne, my Lord, I am redy to accord with hym: But, my most dere Lord and Brother, be you upon your Kepyng for him, for, if *Essex* had lyved, you should have found hym as vyolent an Enemy, as his Hart, Power, and Cunyng, would have sarved hym to have byn; and for that their Mallyce, I take God to record, I could brooke nother of them bothe.

Your Lordshyppys later wrytten Letter I receved, the same Day I dyd the first, together with one from my Lord of *Penbrooke* to your Lordshyp; by both whych I fynd, to my excedyng great Confort, the Lykleod of a Maryage betwyne his Lordshyp and my Doghter, whych great Honor to me, my mean Lynuage and Kyn, I attrIBUTE to my Match in your noble House; for whych I acknoleg my self bound to honor and sarve the same, to the uttermost of my Pouer; yea, so joyfully have I at Hart, that my dere Chyldys so happy an Advancement as thys ys, as, in Troth, I would ly a Year in close Pryson, rather than yt should breake. But, alas! my dereft Lord, myne Abylyte answereth not my harty Desyer. I am poore; myne Estate, as well in Lyvelod and Moveable, is not unknown to your Lordshyp, whych wantyth mutch to make me able to equall that, whych I knowe my Lord of *Penbrook* may have. Twoo Thousand *l.* I confes I have bequethed her, whych your Lordshyp knowyth I myght better spare her whan I wear dead, than one Thousand lyvyng; and, in Troth, my Lord, I have yt not, but borro yt I must, and so I wyll: And, if your Lordshypp wyll get me Leave, that I may feede my Eyes wyth that joyfull Syght of thear Couplyng, I wyll gyve her a  
I Cup



Cup worth fyve Hundryth *l.* Good, my Lord, bear wyth my Poverty, for, if I had it, lyttell would I regard any Sum of Money, but wyllingly would gyve it, protestyng before the Almyghty God, that if he, and all the Powers on Earth, would geve me my Choyse for a Husband for her, I would choose the Earl of *Penbrooke*. I wryte to my Lord of *Penbrook*, whych hearwyth I send your Lordshyp; and thus I end, in answering your most welcom and honorable Letter, wyth my harty Prayer to Almyghty God to perfect your Lordshypps good Wurk, and requyte you for the same; for I am not able. For my self, I am in great Dyspayre to obteyne the Fee Farme of my small Leases; whych grywyth me more for the Dyscredyt, duryng myne one Tyme, than the Lak of the Gayn to my Successyon, be yt as God wyll.

I fynd by dyvers Meanys, that thear ys great Expectacyon of my wyshyng her Majestyes Treasure apoynted for the Sarvyce of this Cuntre; and, in Troth, no Man lyvyng would fayner noyrysh yt than I; and, in Proof thearof, I wyll abate one Thousand *l.* of the Quartereg du the Last of *March*, so as I may have the other fouer Thousand du, than delyvered to the Treasurers Assignes, together wyth that du the Last of *December* last; and, if I can, I wyll abate every Quarter one Thousand *l.* The actuall Rebellyon of the *Clanrykcardynes*, the *O Conners* and *O Mores*, the Sumys of Money delyvered in Dyscharg of those Soldyarys, which weare of my Lord of *Essex* Regyment, and the great Sumys imprested in the Begynnyng of my Charge, well considered; it may and will appear a good Offer; and, I pray your Lordshyp, let yt have your favorable Recommendatyon.

Now, my dereft Lord, I have a Sute unto you for a necessary and honest Sarvant of myne, *Hercules Raynsford*, who hys Father, and whole Lynnage, are devote Folloers to your Lordshyp, and Famely. My Sute ys, that whear as, by Compofytyon wyth *James Wyngfeld*, he is Coneftable of the Castell of *Dublyn*, and thearin both paynfully and carefully sarveth, that it would please your Lordshyp, to obteyne yt for hym duryng hys Lyfe. Truly, my Lord, lyke as you shoud bynd the poore gentyll Man, and all his honest Freyndys, alwayes to sarve you, for your Bounty doon to hym; so shall I take yt as a great Mercye doon to my self: For truly I have found hym a faythfull and profytable Sarvant, and besyde, he hath marryed a good and an old Sarvant of my Wyfes. Good my Lord, send *Phyllip* to me; thear was never Father had more Neede of hys Soon, than I have of hym. Ons agayn, good my Lord, let me have hym.

For the Estate of thys Cuntre, it may please you to geve Credyt to *Prescot*.

I am now, evyn now, deadly wery of Wrytyng, and therfore I end, prayeng to the Almyghty to bles you, wyth all your noble Hartys Desyres. From *Dundalk* thys 4 of *February*, 1576.

Your most assured Brother at

Superfcribed,

Commandment,

To the Right Honorable, and my very good Lord and Brother, the Earle of *Leycester*, Knight of the Noble Order of the Garter.

H. Sydney.

Att the Courte.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

My verie good Lords,

MY Duetie most humblye remembred to your Lordships, lyke as from *Waterforde*, of the xvth of *December* last, I writt vnto your Lordships of my passinge thorough *Meith*, and *Leinster*, and in what Case I left the *English* Pale



Pale and the *Irishe* Lordshipps of the same, garded and defended till my Retorne, from whence I am fundrie Tymes advertized, of the good Continuanunce of the Quiet of the Countrie; which hath bene a great deale the better stayed, thorough the Dilligence, Pollecy, and carefull Service of my Lord of *Vpper Offerie*, whome I left my Liuetenaunt of the *Kings* and *Quenes* Counties: So it may lyke the same (my Expedition nowe ended in theise Partes, and I redde to passe into an other Province) to vnderstand of my Proceedinge in this Province of *Mounster*.

The Day I departed from *Waterfforde*, I lodged that Night at *Corragmore*, the Howse that the Lord *Power* is Baron of; where I was so vsed, and with fouch Plentie and good Order entertained (as addinge to it the Quiet of all the Countrie adioyninge, by the People called *Power* Countrie, for that that Surname hath bene since the Beginninge of *Englishe* Mens Plantinge Inhabitants there) it may be well compared with the best ordered Countrie in the *Englishe* Pale; whereby a manifest and most certeine Proffesse may be conceived, what Benifitt riseth both to the Prince, meane Lorde, and inferior Subiecte, by Suppressinge of *Coyne* and *Lyverie*; for nowe they are both willing and able to beare, and pay any reasonable Subsidie towards the Findinge and Enterテインement of Soldiours, and Cyvill Ministers of the Lawes, that I will impose vpon them. And the Lord of the Countrie, though he be in Scope of Ground a farre lesse Territorie then his Neighbor is, yet he lyveth in Shewe farre more honorably and plentifullye then he or any other, what soever he be, of his Callinge, that lyueth in that Province. And al be it the Soyle, for the most Parte, of it selfe, is very barren; yet is there not any Gentleman or Freeholder in that Countrie, but may make more of an Acre of Lande there, then they have of three in the Countye of *Kilkenny*, the next Countye confininge on the one Syde (where the Soyle is verie good) or in the *Decies*, the Lordship next adioyninge one the other Syde; and this was openlye spoken before me, and affirmed by credible Personnes, havinge Lande in bothe; and this was yeelded for the Reason, for that they suffer no idle Men in the one, and are oppressed with them in the other. The next Countrie adioyninge to this is the *Decies*, whereof Sir *James Fytz Gerrald* is cheife Lord; his Brother was Vicount of the same, who beinge the first created, and dyenge without lawfull Issue Male, his Lands (though not his Title) descended to this Gentleman, who is one of bad Governement; and so it well appeareth; for, beinge left by his Brother, and other Freinds, verie ritche, is since moche spent, and almost no better then a Bankrupte, his Landes beinge verie great; I am sure in Quantitie fower Tymes as moche as my Lord *Powers* is, and yet made so wast, as it is not hable to finde competent Foode for a meane Famelye, in good Order: Yet are there harbored and lyve more idle Vaccabonndes, then good Cattle breed. The rest of that Countye is either in meane Gentlemens Handes (who have had longe Continuanunce of Auntiente and Dwellinge there) or ells in Cittizins Hands of *Waterffoord*, by Purchase or Mortgage, had by them of the meane Gentlemen; but all desierous of Cyvill Reformation, willinge to obey and beare for their Portions.

From thence I came to *Dungarvan* Castle, where I lodged three Nights; thither the Earle of *Desmound* came vnto me, and verie humblye offered me any Service that he was able to do her Majestie. That Towne of late is moche decayed by the Rebellion of *James Fytzmorris*, and his graceles Followers; but in great Hope of Amendement by the dilligent Travell of *Henry Dauells*, Constable of the Castle there, who vieth all earnest Endevor, for the Punishinge of Malefactors, and to see good Order kept in those Quarters; and truelye, my Lord, he is a rare Man, for his Painefulness, upright freindlye Dealinge, and Bountie of Minde everye Way. Wherefore I beseeche your Lordships, that he may in some Sorte vnderstand from some of you, that I have written well of hym; which will not onely be a Memorie of Rewarde for hym, for that which is past, but also hencefoorth an Encouragement to hym to proceede in his commendable well Doinge.



I passed from *Dungarvan* to Sir *John* of *Desmounds*, leaving *Youghall*, for that they were not (as they protested) hable to receyve me, and my Train, by Reason of their Spoyles, donne vpon them, and their People, in the Tyme of the Rebellion of *James Fytzmorris*, and so, passinge out of the Countye of *Waterfoord*, entred the Countye of *Corck*; and from Sir *John* came to the Lord *Barries*, and the xxijth of *December* last, arryved at the Cittye of *Corck*, where I was received with all Ioyfulness, Tokens, and Shewes, the best they could expresse of their duetifull Thanks Gevinge to her Majestie; they received willingly my *Englishe* Footemen and Galloglas, lodged and entertained them, during my Abode there (which was fixe Weekes) without Grudginge or Complainte, either of Townesmen, or of Souldiours. The Townesmen receivinge, in reddie Money, the one Halfe of the Soldiours Wagies, for his Boarde, Fier, and Lodginge; wherewith he held hym selfe verie well satisfied, and the Souldiours, in lyke Manner, well contented to geve it. The good Estate, and Florishinge of that Cittie, well approveth the good Effects of resident Authoritie amongst them, for it is so amended, as in so fewe Yeares, I have seldome seen any Towne; and out of Doubt, if Ministracion of Justice be contynued, it will daylie multiplie in People, and amplifie in Buyldinge. I was, for the Tyme of my Contynuaunce there, verie honorablye attended on, and accompanied by the Earles of *Desmound*, *Thomound*, and *Clancarre*, the Bishoppes of *Cashell* and *Corck*, and the Elekte of *Rosse Carberye*, the Vicounts of *Barrye* and *Roche*, the Barons of *Cursey*, *Lixnawe*, *Dunboyne*, *Power*, *Barrie Oge*, and *Lowth*, who onely to doe me Honor, came oute of the *Englishe* Pale to that Cittie, and did great Good amongst great ones; for beinge of this Countrey Birthe, and of their Language, and well understandinge their Condictions and Manners, did by Example of hym selfe, beinge but a meane Man of Landes in Respect of their large Patrimonies and Lyvinge, both at Home and Abroade, lyve more orderlye and more commendablye, then they did, or were hable to do; which did moche perswade them to leave their Barbarietie, and to be ashamed of their wilfull Miserie. There were, besides they above remembred, dyvers of the *Irishrie*, not yet nobilitated, the Lord of *Carberie*, called Sir *Donell Mac Cartye*, and the Lord of *Muskery*, called Sir *Cormock Mac Teige Mac Cartye*; neither of theise but, in Respecte of their Territories, were able to be a Vicounte; and truelye, I wishe them bothe to be made Baronnes; for they be both good Subiects, and in especiall the latter; who for his Obedience to hir Majestie, and her Lawes, and Disposition to Civilitie, is the rarest Man, that ever was borne in the *Irishrie*; but of hym I intende to write speciallye, erre it be longe, for truelye he is a speciall Man. There came to me also Sir *Owen Osulyvant*, and the Sonne and Heire of *Osulyvan More*, the Father not beinge able to come, by Reason of his great Yeares and Impotencye; Sir *William Occarroll*, of *Ely Occarroll*, and *Mac Donogho*; never a one of theise, but for his Landes, might passe in the Ranke of a Baron, either in *Irelande* or *England*. There were in lyke Manner with me, of the *Irishrie*, *Okyne* and *Mac Fynnen*, the Sonnes or Heyres, as they would have them, of *Mac Auuley* and *Occballaban*; the olde Men not beinge able to come, by Reason of extreme Age, and Infirmitie; *Omahon*, and *Odriscoll*, ech of these have Land enough, withe good Order to lyve lyke a Knight either here, or there. There were with me, that discended of *Englishe* Race, Sir *Morris Fytzgarrold*, Brother to the Vicounte *Decies*; Sir *Thibald Butler*, whose Vncle and Cozen Germaine were Baronnes of the *Cayre*, whose Lands he lawfullye, and iustlye, enjoyethe and better deserveth that Title of Honnor, then any of them ever did; for whome I intende more speciallye to write, for truelye, for his Deserte, he is worthie any Commendacion. Sir *Thomas*, Sir *John*, and Sir *James* of *Desmound*, Bretheren to the Earle, were continuallye with me, and a Number of other Gentlemen, whose Names I omitt to repete here, lest they should be tedious to be redd by your Lordships: There came to me also maney of the ruyned Relicks of the auntient *Englishe* Inhabitaunts of this Province, as the *Arundells*, *Rockefordes*, *Barretts*, *Flemings*, *Lombardes*, *Tirries*, and maney other; whose

Auncestors



Aunceftors (as it may appeare) by Monuments, aswell in Writinge, as of Buyldinge, were able, and did lyve lyke Gentlemen, and Knights; some of them, and nowe all in Miserye, either bannished from their owne, or oppreffed vpon their owne. *Laftlye*, there came to me fyve Bretheren, and the Sonnes of twoe other Bretheren of one Lynage, all Captaines of Galloglas, called *Mac Swynes*, who although I place them laft of the reft, yet are they of as moche Confequence as any of the reft; for of foche Creditt, and Force, were they growen vnto (though they were no Lordes of Landes them felves) as they would make of the greateft Lordes of the Province, both in Feare of them, and gladd of their Freindshipp; and the better to furnifhe the Bewtye and Fillinge of the Cittye, all theife principall Lordes had with them their Wyves, duringe all the *Chriftmas*, who trewlye kept verye honorable, at leaft verye plenti-full Howfies; and to be briefe, maney Wydowe Ladies were there alfo, who erft had bene Wyves to Earles and others of good Note and Accompte.

And nowe my Lords havinge towched in this firft Parte of my Lettre of my Receivinge at *Corcke*, and the great Affemblye there, to attende, and accompanie me; it may please your Lordships in fome fewe, to vnderftand the reaft, what this Companie for their Peticuler did, and I, withe the Affiftaunce of foche, as I named in my former Lettres, together withe Mr. *Dowdall* and Mr. *Walshe* (whome I found Commissioners in this Province) what we did. And for them, they feamed in all Apparaunce generallye to lothe their vile and barbarous Manner of Life; they offered all Feaultye, Homage, and Service to her Majeftie, and Crowne for ever, and I dare well vndertake, there is never a one of the above named but (if her Highnes will) fhall performe it at *Westminster*; foche as do not alreadye yeld Rente and Service, moft humblye defier, after Surrender made, to hold their Landes of her Highnes, her Heyres, and Succelfors, and to yeelde both Rente and Service: They did agree to delyver in the Names of their idle Men, and then to answer for them, and if any were founde vnbooked, to be vfed as a Felon or Vaccabounde, according to his Defert; they affented that this fhould be proclaymed, and were present at it them felves, and, for a Performaunce of the fame, they offered to me the Choyce of any, belonginge vnto them, to remayne as Hoftage for them. Nexte the Some of my Doings, with the Affiftaunce withe me, was this in Effecte: I cawfed daylie Seffions to be helde, in that Cittye, from the Morrowe after *Twelve Day*, till the Laft of *Januarii*, in which appeared verye honest and good Juries, founde and good Triall made by them, a Number of Civill Cawfies determined and ended, and above xxiiij notable Malefactores condempned, and executed: *Condon* or *Canton* of *Armon* attainted, and adiudged to die (yet ftaied from Execucion) but his Landes (which are greate) are by the Meanes of his Attayndor efcheted to hir Majeftie. A younger Sonne of the Vicounte *Roches* was indited, arraigned, and condempned to dye, but ftaied from Execucion, for (as the Worlde goeth here) his Faulte was verye fmall: So moche hath bene donne, I dare affirme to your Lordships, at this Tyme, in this Province, for Recoverye of the Quenes decayed Rents, and imbefeled Landes, as hath not bene donne in the Memorie of Man; but hereof I will not write perticulerlye at this Tyme, till that which hath bene donne, in my whole Iorney, be collected and put together, which will not be till *Aprill* next. In the meane Tyme, I affure your Lordships, her Highnes hath foche a Servaunt of *Launcelott Alford*, her Surveior here, as both for his Dexteritie, Dilligence, and Stowtnes, in her Service, I never mett with his Matche in this Lande: I doubt not, but you fhall finde the Iffue of his Travell greatlye to her Highnes Advantage; in the meane Tyme, if your Lordships do incourage hym, with your honorable Lettres, it wilbe to hym in Lieu of great Rewarde.

I was present at the Readinge and Publiſhing of the Proclamacion before ſpoken of, and it ſeamed, that, with great Ioye and Gladnes (as moch as might be well expreſſed by Countenance) the ſame was received of the moſt, yea of the Nobilitie them ſelves (whome it moſt touched) with earneſt and aſſured Promiſſe,



Promisse, that it should be followed.) For the better Performaunce whereof, they have offered, and I have taken sufficient Pledgies of everye one of them, of any Regarde, and namelye of the *Mac Swynes* (Abroade not a little perillous to this Province.)

I have also entred into Consideracion, howe I might best, in some reasonable Sorte, satisfie the Lordes with some conveniente and certeine Revenue, in Stede of their extorcious and tyrannicall Exactions, and finde them, in this Pointe, some what tractable and pliaunt, to be reduced to accepte Certainetie : Howe be it, the Matter in handlinge is somewhat toughe (for Extorcion, though it be, or extorciouslye vsed that they do) yet is the same somewhat in Particularities, and, by different Devises, to be redressed ; which I trust your Lordships shall here of, to be digested before it be longe, and soch Order taken, as shall be to the Gayne of the Proprietarie, Honnor, Proffitt, and Suertye, to the Quenes Countrie, and Successors of them that nowe lyve.

For the last Pointe of my Doings in *Corcke*, I hope I have layd soch a Plott, as the Province shall beare 50 Horssmen, and 100 Footemen, of her Majesties *Englishe* Souldiours, contynuallie, if forreine Invasion impeache not the Devise ; and finde them both Victuall and Wagies, and daylye pay them their Enterteinements. This Plott is to beginne at *Maij Day* next ; and none will impugne this, but it shall take Place, if it be not a great one or twoe ; neyther shall they be able to resist it, if they finde not Countenaunce and Maintenaunce there. I hope, my Lords, that this will prove a good, beneficiall, and acceptable Service for the Quene.

And thus havinge left the Cittye of *Corck*, the First of this Moneth, I lodged twoe Nights by the Waye hitherwardes, at my Lord *Roche*s, where I and all my Trayne were verie largelye and bountifullie enterteyned : And, passinge from thence, I entred into the Countye of *Lymericke*, and so lodged one Night in the Towne of *Kilmallock*, which was lamentablye spoyled and bourned, by that vyle Trator and Rebelle, *James Fytzmorris* ; but so spedilye agayne reedified, as suerelye it is not almost to be credited, but by the constant Reporte of them that knewe it, and sawe it then, and nowe have perused and sene it againe ; for, where there was not one Roffe nor Flower leste vnourned, fewe or no Howses, within the Wall, are nowe vncovered ; wherebye the Benifitte and good Fruite of *Englishe* Lawes, and Forces, most senciblye is felt ; without which, the People confesse them selves, they would for ever have abandoned that Place, and sought some other Habitation ; and the lyke Desolacion become of that Towne, as may be sene by Ruynes of maney other within this Lande, whome *Irish* Rebells have suppressed, and, *Englishe* Forces and Government saylinge, were never since restored.

From thence I came to this Cittie, the iijth of this Present, accompanied withe the Earle of *Desmound*, the Bisshoppes of *Cashell* and *Corck*, my Lord of *Lowth*, and some others of the Nobilitie, dyvers Knights and principall Gentlemen of the Countrie ; where I was received with farre greater Pompe, then either I my selfe have heretofore had, or sawe yeilded to any other in this Lande ; for which, lest I should seme lesse thankefull to this Cittie, or to *Corck*, then I was to *Waterford*, I humblye beseeche your Lordships to bestowe your favorable Lettres on them both ; for truelye, my Lords, they are Peices of great Regarde, and greatlye shall their Willingness (to serve the Governor here) advance the Service of oure Sovereigne.

Since my Entrie into this Countye, all the principall Gentlemen of the same, and lykewise those that dwell in the Lordshipps adioyninge, and yet doubtfull whether they be of this Countye or noe, by Reason some Chalendge, of late, hath bene made in the Matter, which, as yet, is not fullye determined, repayed vnto me ; as namelye the *Bourckes*, *Lacyes*, *Sappells*, *Purcells*, the *Red Roche*, and dyverse other originall *Englishe* ; diverse also of the Lords of the *Irishbrey*, as *Omoleyan*, *Mac Brien Ogonough*, *Mac Brien Arra*, *Obrien* of *Arloc*, whiche do inhabete the Southside of *Shenon*, and maney other of Note, originall *Irish*, all lamentinge the Spoyle and Wast of the Countrie. And, in Trothe, wasted



they be, and therefore crave, that they may have the Forces of their meane Lordes suppressed, and that they may be equallye cessed to beare an *Englishe* Force, and to have *Englishe* Lawes planted amongst them, and *Englishe* Sheriffs to execute those Lawes, and to surrender their Landes to her Majestie (as maney as may, and have not donne alredie) and herein, God willinge, some Payne shalbe taken, and I hope soch Rent and Service either created or renewed to her Majestie, as hath not theise maney Yeares; which, I hope, shalbe to her Highnes Likinge, and your Lordships, and I trust the same shall not be longe in doinge, my Iourney once finished.

Hether to this Towne the Earle of *Ormounde* came vnto me, and freindlye accompanied me fyve or sixe Dayes; and likewise my Lord of *Vpperossery*, who made Reporte of the vniuersall Quiett and good State of the Pale, wherein his Service, and great Travell taken therein, is worthye Note, for fuerlye he deseruethe right well in his Chardge. Lykewise, bothe the Earles of *Clanrickards* Sonnes, *Ullick* and *John Burck* (who, not maney Yeares past) were most execrable evell Doers (but since pardoned) and I licenzed them both to departe, but with Condicion, that they should mete me againe at *Galway*. To this Place came to me, and also contynuethe with me the Earle of *Thomound*, and all the principall Gentlemen of his Surname, beinge niere Kinsmen, yet extreme Ennimies. Twoe Lordes of *Thomound*, called *Mac Nemarroes*, came lykewise vnto me, lamentinge the Ruyne and Wast of their Countrie; and ruyned they are in dede, cravinge to have the Execucion of *Englishe* Lawes, and to have *Englishe* Sheriffs planted amongst them: But for the *Briens*, and their Countrie, al be it the same be a Parcell of this Province, yet, for that I meane to lay it to the Governement of *Connaught*, as I did at the first; and for that I love rather to write to your Lordshippes, after I have seen that I have hard of that Countrie, then of any Reporte, I will therefore deferre to write more largely of that, in my Discourse of *Connaught*, which, God willinge, I will dispatche vnto your Lordships, by the Beginninge of *April* next. For the State of this Cittye, althoughe the same have bene moche hindered by the late Rebellion, yet it remaynethe in indifferent good Case; and Justice beinge once vniversallye ministred within the Realme, and quiet Trade from forraine Partes, it will spedilye growe ritche; and thus motche for the State of this Cittie and Countrie.

Twoe other Countries there are in this Province, namelye, *Kerrye* and *Type-rarye*, of which twoe I cannot write moche, for that I thinke the Quene hath little to do there, hir Writt not beinge allowed currentlye in them; but thus moche I coniecture, and, in myne Opinion, affirme, and so do others of great Experience too, that, so longe as any Subiecte hath any Jurisdiction *Pallantyne*, in either of them bothe, there will hardly be any founde and perfect Reformacion in *Mounster*, for vndoubtedlye they are no small Impediments to it. The principall Gentlemen of eche Countye hath bene withe me, and some Parte of their Greiffe I have vnderstand by their owne Relations; and thus I ende for the Province of *Mounster*, wherein I finde great Towardnes of Reformacion, as may appeare by this my Discourse, and great Lykelyhoode that the same shall beare the Chardge incydent to the same; for if the Countrie pay the Men of Warre, as I doubt not, but they shall, by Degrees, be wonne, and brought to do it; then I am assured, that the certeine Revenue of *Mounster*, and the casuall Commodities, will answere the Chardge of the President, and all Ministers apointed for Cyvill Governement, necessarie to assist hym. But, this Province beinge now in this Towardenes to be reformed, I thinke it should be thought, that I, for Gaine Sake or Glorie, or happelye for bothe, should be vnwillinge that any should deale in Governement here but my selfe. But truelye, my Lords, I protest vnto you it is not so; for, as I was the first that either devised or planted any resident Governement here, so am I still of Opinion, that, without that, this Countrie will never remayne quiet, neither good and peaceable for the People, nor profitable to the Prince; for soche Effectes finde I, since my  
last



last Repayre into theise Partes, of their Services that remayned here, as I dare affirme, that, if Mr. *Perrott* had contynued till my Arryvall, and maintained the Course still, he helde, while he was heare, I should have found *Mounster* aswell as I left *Wales*. And Mr. *Agarde*, consideringe the Impediments he founde (which Mr. *Perrot* left not) did as moche as might be; and so have twoe Gentlemen of this Countrie Birthe, *James Dowdall* and *Nicholas Walshe*, both Professors of the Lawe, and remayninge here, since the Revocation of Mr. *Agarde*, have donne as moche, as was to be looked for, of Men of their Qualitie, wantinge Men of Warre, and Force, to execute their Orders, Arrests, and Decrees, and have deserved Thanks for their Travells, which hartelye I beseeche your Lordships they may receive by your comfortable Lettres. And, my Lords, in my simple Opinion, *Mounster* never needed, at any Tyme, more, then at this present, to have a discrete and active Governor, to be contynually resident in it; for theise People are, for the most Parte, all Papists, and that in the malitioust Degree, *Et nouarum rerum cupidi*, delighteth in Ravyn and lycentious Liffe, though the same be voyde of Proffitt, Suertie, or Pleasure, to any but them selves. *James Fitzmorris* lyethe in *St. Maloes*, and kepeth a great Porte, hym selfe and Familye well appavelled, and full of Money; he hath oft Intelligence from *Rome*, and oute of *Spaine*; not moche Relieffe from the *Frenche* Kinge, as I can perceive, yet oft visited by Men of good Countenance. Thus moche I knowe of certeine Reporte, by specyall of myne owne from thence. The Man suttle, malicious, and hardye, a Papist in Extremite, and well esteemed, and of good Credit emongst the People. If he come, and be not wholye dealt with all at the first (as with oute an *English* Commaunder I knowe he shall not) all the loose People of this Province will flocke vnto hym: Yea the Lordes, though they would do their best, shall not be able to kepe them from hym. So as if he come, and in Shewe and Apparaunce lyke a Man of Warre (as I knowe he will) and that I be in the Northe, as, God willinge, I will be, at *Carickfergus*, before *Midsummer* Day, he may take and do what he will with *Kinsale*, *Corck*, *Youghall*, *Kilmallock*, and happelye this Cittye too, before I shalbe able to come to the Reskewe thereof. Hasten therefore, my good Lords, hym that shall take the Chardge here, in the Quene and Countries Behalfe; I crave it, and the onelye Man, that I hope you will sende, is Sir *William Drewrye*; and, if my ioyfull Likinge of hym may any Thinge quicken hym hetherwardes, then I protest vnto your Lordships, that he lyveth not, that I knowe wold accept that Place, that I would be so glad should have it, as Sir *William Drewrye*; for I knowe he wilbe for the Safetie of the Countrie, Honnor and Proffitt of the Quene, and Comforte of my selfe, and to my selfe, as I may say with *David*, *Inueni hominem secundum Cor meum*; this I trust shall suffice for a Resolution irrevocable by me, both touchinge the Man and the Matter, for the Plantinge of residente Governement in *Mounster*.

The like, I knowe in Effecte, is as necessarie for *Connaught*, for after I have bene amongest them, and somewhat tasted their Humors, I doubt not, but that I shall have Occasion to write as earnestlye of it, as I nowe do for this, and so consequentelye to have a Chauncelor, for the whole Realme; the Lacke, and Losse, for Want of a good one (fitt for that Place) is soche, and the same sowell knowne to your Lordships, as I can impute it to nothings more, but to the fatall Cursse of this Countrie; that a Greife so great, a Remedye so easye to be had, should so longe be deferred, speciallye, since it is so moche to the Quenes Chardge, who paieth three hundered Poundes a Yere, to the Keper of the great Seale (ever since the Deathe of Mr. *Weston*, late Lorde Chauncelor) who never sittethe in Courte, to order and decree Cawties, nor dothe any Thing ells, incydent to the Office of a Chauncelor, but onelye kepeth the Seal. I once heard, that Mr. *Rookebye* was redde to imbarke hetherward, to have supplied that Office, whereof I was hartelye glad; and since I harde, that Mr. *William Gerrard* was apointed to it; yf it be so, I beseech your Lordships, hasten hym away, for, if he be not here, before the Beginninge of the next Tearme,



Tearme, it will be yll for the Quene, and worffe for the Countrie; I have had longe Experience of hym, having had his Assistaunce in *Wales*, nowe xvj Yeares, and knowe hym to be verye honest and dilligent, and of great Dexteritie, and Readines, in a Courte of that Nature; and if my Judgment be any Thing, he is a Man of good Sufficiencie for the Office, and therefore, once againe, I humblye beseeche your Lordships, to hasten hym hether.

One Thinge I had almost forgotten, which was discovered to me at *Corcke*, certeine Peices of counterfeited Coyne of *Spanishe* Stampes were brought to me, vttered from Hand to Hand: I sifted the Matter, till I found it oute, and was geven to vnderstand, that it was made in a Castle of the Earle of *Ormond*, in his Libertie in the Countye of *Typperarye*; thither I sent, the Parties were found, taken, and brought to me, with Stampes, and some of their Money Potts for Meltinge, Stuffe for Myntinge, and other Instruments. The Parties, that were taken, were but twoe, the Master and the Servaunte, bothe *Englishe men*, borne in the Northe; the Master a Gentleman (as he sayeth) and is called *Harrison*, and moche delighted (as he confesseth) a long Tyme in Alcumistical Practizes, his Man an excellent Artizan in sondrie Occupacions; the Faete they confesse, and the rather, for that they are perswaded, it is not Felonye and Treason by the Lawe of this Lande; and so they affirmed, they were induced to thinke, by some of the best Lawiers in *Englande*; and the lyke is affirmed to me, by some of that Profession here, though in dede I be geven to vnderstande that the Faete is Treason, by others of better Trust aboute me, as namelye Sir *Lucas Dillon*. And this Perswasion makes them the bolder, bothe to vtter more, and presume further vpon the Creditt of their Freindes to helpe them; which their Presumption, I suppose, will cawse greater Matter to fall oute, and be discovered of their Confederats (if any be) and that maketh me, having them fast in Holde, not to hasten to vse Extremitie, or Punishment towards them, but to attende, what Tyme will bringe out; yf the Matter be tryed here, by the ordinarie Course of Lawe, it must be tryed before my Lord of *Ormond*s Officers, for that the Offence was committed within his Libertie, or ells he will thinke hym selfe moche wronged, and his Graunte infringed. Since their Apprehension there arryved a Barke att *Waterforde*, which brought theym certeine Stuffe, Potts, and Instruments, which I have cawsed to be staied, and the Partie that brought it; certeine Peices lykewise of *Englishe* Counterfeites were found in those Quarters, with People so simple, as are not to be suspected to be fawltie for the Makinge of them; and as I was thus farre forward, myndinge to have made my Dispathe, and to have sent theise Advertizements to your Lordships; my Servaunt, *John Gifforde*, arryved here, who brought me Lettres from your Honors, dated at *Hampton Courte*, the xxiiiith of the Last, in Answere of myne, of the iiiith of *November*, and the xvith of *December*; for the which I humblye thanke your Lordships. And first, for the Question you move, touchinge my Sute for *Mac Gennesse*, wherein you desier more fullye to vnderstand my Meaninge, whether it be meant, that he shall have the Captenrie by Inheritaunce, and the Lande he holdeth presentlye, as his owne Freeholde, leavinge the rest to other Freholders, or ells to have the Capteinrye of the Whole. Wherein, although I am, and ever have bene of Opinion, and holde the same for an infallible Principle, that the Discipacion of the great Lordes and their Countries, by good Distribucion into maney Handes, is a sounde Way of Proceadinge to the perfecte Reformation of this vnhappie and cursed Estate; so the Attemptinge of it is as perillous, and breadethe soch a Number of Inconveniencies as will hardlye be cured, excepte that Course be contynued, and followed with Effecte; and herein I am to note, and remember to your Lordships, my Lord of *Essex* Plott, for Reformation of the Northe, which in dede, of all other, is the best, and surest Foundation to buylde on, and true-lye his Lordship, highlye to be commended in it, both for the Worthines of the Enterpryse, as for his great Valor, and Nobilitie of Mynde, ioyned to that great Travell, Payne, and Penurie he indured in so barraine and harde a Soyle:  
But



But if that Enterprife by her Majestie be not pursued, but let fall, which, for a Tyme, is to be maintained by Treasure and Force, and, for a Tyme, the People kept in Obedience, by Violence and Compulcion: What better Meane is there to make the Lordes of the Countries to applye to Obedience, then to assure them, of their owne they pretende, and to perswade them, that her Majestie meaneth to maynteine them, and not to disturbe them in their Possessions; and then, if Obedience and Rente may be had (since Temporisation, and not Force, must be vsed) me seemethe in my simple Opinion, vnder your Lordships Reformation, better to take somme Rente, and Service, then to forgoe it, since a better Composition, and more Assurednes, cannot be had of them, except there be at Hande present Force to subdue them. And for those Landes *Mac Gennesse* nowe enioyethe, and by his Occupation, pretendethe Title vnto, the Landes are her Majesties, and geuen her by Acte of Parliament, so that, the Lands beinge in hir Gift, she may make hym what Estate pleaseth her, and reserve to hir selfe, what pleaseth hir; besides, if she wold dispossesse hym, and place an other, I knowe not of that Countrie Birthe, that will dwell there any one, that is able to do her Highnes better Service, or of greater Loyaltie, then he is. And for that it is obiected, that the Rente is small in Respecte of the Greatnes, and Quantitie of the Soyle, since *Chanlons* Countrie, beinge a lesse Scope of Grounde and Territorie, is valued at a greater Rente; I answer in that, that the Qualitie of the Personnes are not lyke, the one beinge in all his Practizes, and Actions, an open and professed Ennemye, and the other hath contynued a duetyfull Subiecte, since the Overthrowe of *Shane O'Neill*, so that, in that Respecte, more Consideracion, in Reason, is to be had to the one, then Regarde to the other; the one for his Deserte is worthie to be cherished, the other for his Disobedience sharpelye to be corrected; and this Diversitie I put betwene the Qualitie of the one, and the lewde Behaviour of the other, wherein I submitt my selfe to your Lordships grave and honorable Iudgements.

I humblye thanke your Lordships, that it will please you to have in Remembrance to deale with *Chatterton* and *Malbye*; and, becawse at *Maij* Day commonlye, the *Irishe* Capteines and Lordes vse to bargain and compounde with their Tennaunts, which Tyme nowe approchethe, I am the bolder eft sones, to renue the Matter to your Honnors, so, that your Resolucions therein knowen, I may take Order accordinglye.

For *Terelaugh Lynaughes* Requests, I yeelde your Lordships myne humble Thankes, that you have so gratioulye considered both of hym and them. And, accordinge to your Lordships Directions in that Pointe, I will conclude the best Bargaine for her Majestie that I can; but, becawse his Agent is not yet returned, and that I cannot have his Warrant drawn, nor any Thinge convenientlye donne in it, before I come to *Dublin*, I will not trouble your Lordships any further for hym, nor in this, till I comme thether, but to lett your Lordships vnderstand that the Articles your Lordships sent me, postilled with your Opinions, I thinke they were mistaken; for I received the Copie of the Treatie betwixt the Earle of *Essex* and hym, and not your Lordships Resolucions in those Articles I presented vnto you for his Cawties. And thus, recommendinge vnto your good Lordships this Bearer, my Servaunt, *John Gifford*, whome I have expresselye sent to attende vpon your Lordships Pleasures, for Order for the Receipte of my Quarterage, due the Last of *Marche* next, to be brought over by hym, who hath myne Acquittance to delyver for the same, where he shalbe directed to receive it; I humblye take my Leave, fearinge I have wried your Lordships with my long and tedious Reporte of my pleasurelesse Travell and Toyle in this Province. From *Lymericke*, the 27 of *Februarij*, 1575.

Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge  
Freinde, humblye to commaund,

H. Sydney.



Sir Henry Sydney, to William Cecil Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer of England.

My verie good Lord,

FOR that I heare of some Bruites of an old Mislyke and Mutteringe in the *Englishe* Pale, after their wonted Manner of Repininge, for the Payment of the Cesse which is nowe imposed vpon them (as the Customes ever hath bene) towards the Victuallinge of her Majesties Garrison: And that it is not vnlike, but that this secrete Flame will torne, in the Ende, to some open Fier, if it be not preuented, and so burst out into greivous Complaite to somme one or other for Redresse, and most lyke, as I thinke, to be brought by Writinge, or Reporte, to your Lordships Eares: I thought good, therefore, by Prevencion aforehande, to acquainte your Lordship with this Note here enclosed, to the Ende your Lordship may feelinglye perceiue, both what the Countrie answereth in Cesse to the Soldiour in all Kindes, and what I shall be forced further to provide for there, out of myne owne Purffe, to supplie this Chardge of Victuallinge; which this Bearer, if it will please your Lordship to heare hym, I hope will so fullye satisfie your Lordship by Perticulers, and Degrees of the Whole, as you can desier in any Pointe. And the Matter of Cesse, my Lord, is of that Consequence, as it must be stoucke in, and not yeelded vnto by any Meanes to the Countrie, nor they put in any Comforte to shake of this Yoke and Burden. It is her Majesties Interest, and may be, in shorte Tyme, and good Proceadinge in the Matter, reduced to a certeine yerely Rent, and will be hereafter somme Healpe towards the Alleviattinge of her Majesties bourdenous Chardge of Victuallinge; which the Soldiour may not beare vpon the Allowance of his Wagies, nor her Majestie at a greater Chardge to enterteine the Soldiour, then she is alreadye; but the Countrie (as they have alwayes hitherto accustomed and vsed) must beare the Chardge of some Cesse, or ells certeine Rent (I hope) wilbe levied of them in Lieu of it. But your Lordship may perceiue, by this, my harde Case at my first Entringe, howe farre this Burthen of Victuallinge is lyke to tourne to my Disadvantage, except I be moch holpen therein, by skilfull, good, and carefull Ministers, to take vp and provyde all Things in the best Places of Plentie, where the same may be spared, to my most Profitt and Commoditie; and yet I looke (be the Matter never so skilfullye, well, and carefullye delt in by myne Officer) to be a greate Loofer, I finde the Chardge lyeth alreadye so heavie vpon me. And thus, not beinge satisfied with my selfe, before I had discovered vnto you my Bourden, and Greiffe, wherein, when Occasion shall serve, I pray your honorable and freindlye Healpe and Assistaunce, I take my Leave. From *Galway, Marche* 1575.

*A Copie of the Note specified to be inclosed.*

|                                                                                                              |   |               |                      |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|---------------|----------------------|
| A Proportion of Victualls for<br>Furnishing of one hundred<br>and xij Allowances for one<br>whole Yere, viz. | { | Wheate ———    | vijC xxvij Pecks.    |
|                                                                                                              |   | Dredge Malt — | M iiijC lxxvj Pecks. |
|                                                                                                              |   | Beiffes ———   | iiijC xlvij.         |

|                                                                                                                        |   |               |                 |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|---------------|-----------------|
| A Proportion of Victualls for<br>Furnishing of 1120 Allowances<br>nowe to be provided for the<br>Tyme aforefaied, viz. | { | Wheate ———    | vijM lx Pecks.  |
|                                                                                                                        |   | Dredge Malt — | xvjM cxx Pecks. |
|                                                                                                                        |   | Beiffes ———   | vM lxxvj.       |

Whereoff

|                                           |   |               |               |
|-------------------------------------------|---|---------------|---------------|
| Ceased in viij severall Counties,<br>viz. | { | Wheate ———    | MMM Peckes.   |
|                                           |   | Dredge Malt — | iiijM Peckes. |
|                                           |   | Beiffes ———   | MM.           |

Off



Off

The which Ceasse will not be answered, viz.

In { Wheate and } MM Peckes.  
 { Malte ——— }  
 { Beiffes ——— } iiijC.

And so

The Ceasse aforefaied a- }  
 mounteth vnto in the } In { Grayne ——— vM Peckes.  
 Whole, viz. } { Beiffes ——— iM vjC.

And, therefore,

The Lord Deputie is to }  
 provide for the better } In { Grayne ——— xixM Peckes.  
 Parte of the aforefaied } { Beiffes ——— iiijM iiijC lxxvj.  
 Nombre, viz. }

Furthermore, if the Inhabitaunts be earnest Sutors to compoude, and delyver Money in Lieu of the Grayne, and Beiffes before specified, that then there is no more demaunded of them, then soch Rates and Prises as the Markett yeeldeth; the which is, viz. v s. *Sterling* the Pecke of Grayne of eche Kynde, and xx s. *Sterling* for everye Beiffe.

The Rates as the Soldiours be  
 victualled withe in Money,  
 and the Losse whiche groweth  
 thereof, viz.

[ And if the Soldiour be com-  
 pounded with for Money  
 to be delyvered vnto theim  
 monethly for their Victuals,  
 then they receive ix s. iiij d.  
*Sterling*, le Piece, per *Mensem*,  
 and do answere to her Ma-  
 jestie but vij s. *Sterling*. So  
 that it may playnely appeare,  
 her Majestie doth lose, for  
 everie Allowance so delyver-  
 ed, ij s. iiij d. *Sterling* per  
*Mensem*; and per *Annum*,  
 for every Allowance, xxx s.  
 iiij d. *Sterling*, which a-  
 mounteth vnto in the Whole,  
 for iM Cxx Allowannces, ]

iM iiC xcvij l. xiiij s.  
 iiij d. *Sterling*.

Sir Henry Sydney, and the Lords of the Councell in Ireland, to the Lords of the Councell in England.

Oure verie good Lords,

OURE Dueties humblye remembred to your honorable Lordships: This Bearer, Sir Nicholas Bagnoll, Marshall of her Majesties Armye of this Realme, hath, since the Recontynuance in his Office and Service here, so well deserved, as we have good Cawse to lyke well of hym, and have alwayes founde great Dexteritie, Care, and good Indevour in hym, to anfwere his Chardge so fullye, as we could not have wished a better and more sufficient Man to execute any Thing, that was either commaunded hym to do, or that was incydent to his Place: He hath, besides, bene a great Stay to those Partes where he dwellethe, a bountifull Howsekeeper, and a reddye and willing Host, to receive any of Accompte, that passed by him, lienge in the open, and reddye Passage, to all those that have Occasion to repaier to the Northe, either twoe or frooe: He hath bestowed largelye in Buyldinge, enlarged the Towne where he dwellethe, both with Bewtie of Buyldinge and Wealthe, and a great Stay and good Example to his Neighbours, in those rude and vncyvill Partes, to induce them to Conformitie and Order: So that we fynde hym soch a necessa- rie Cowncellor and Servaunt to her Majestie, as his Prefence hence cannot longe



longe be spared, without Preiudice to her Highnes Service: And, therefore, we are humble Sutors to your Lordships (recommendinge soch his perticuler Sutes, as he hath to prefer to your Honnors) aswell to stand his good Lords in them, as to dispatch hym thence, with that good Speede, as convenientlye you may, for that he is so necessarie a Man for this Service, as he may not longe be absent from his Chardge. And, even so, we humblye take oure Leaves. From her Majesties Castle of *Athlone*, of *Marche*, 1576.

*Your good Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freindes to commaund,*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Thomas, Earl of Ormond, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lorde,*

**Y**OUR Lettre of the First of this Moneth I receaved Yesterday, with Acopie of your Lettre to my Lorde of *Vpperossorrie*, therinclosed: Rendering your Lordship my humble Thanckes, for that it pleased youe to command him to restore my Tenaunts Goodes of *Teampollmore*, and to haue his Brother *Florence* fourthcomming, to appere before your Lordship in *Dublin*, to make Aunswer to that Outradge commytted by him. And, wheare your Lordship hath willed me to send my Mann and Tenant, *Redmond Morres*, to my Lord of *Vpperossorye*, to be remayning with him as Prisoner, for such Demandes as he hath against him (yf he haue any) or els to bind him to appere before youe: I wold (not offending your Lordshipp) thinck fowle Skorne to send him, or any other of my Tenants and Servaunts dweling within my Libertie, or Rule, vnto my Lord of *Vpperossorie*, to be vsed at his Discreffion; but, yf he haue any Demand against the said *Redmond*, he shalbe fourthcoming at your Commaundement, to aunswer before your Lordship: So as youe nede not appoint my Lord of *Vpperossory* to bind him to appeare before you, vnles myne owne Credite be less with you then I haue deserved. Thus, humblie praing your Lordship not to referr the Hearing or Determynacion of my Causes from your self, to those that offer me these Iniuries in Spoyling my Tenants, I commytt you to the Tuicion of God. From *Waterford*, the viijth of *Apriell*, 1576.

*Your Lordships Brother to command,*

Thomas Ormonde.

My Lord, your self have requyred me to vse Playnes in showing my Greffe to you, in anye Thing whear in I might think you delt vnkindlye with me, as in this I partly do, having my Servant referred to my Lord of *Vpperossorye*. Som other Caws ther is (if hit be true also) which I omitt to wryte till my self se you; in the mean Tyme, suspend Creadit, and think the best, so shall you be least defeaved.

*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lord,*

**I** Receued a Lettre this present Day, being the 14. of *Aprill*, from youe, wherein hit pleaseth youe to accept my Dealing in Thexamyning of *Moris Crome*; trulye, the Enformer might haue vsed a better Office, then so rashlye to enforme an Vntroth to you; but for Cutting of those, that anoye the County of *Waterford*, bothe borne in the same, aswell as elsewhere, I haue made a better Ryddance of evell Members, then he is to hir Majestie: I wyshe him to do well, and to carry a Consideracion of his Honesty, for any Thing shall passe to youe from



from him. His Sarvis to my self, afore I put him to her Majestie, maketh me also wyshe him to deale vprightly. I am nowe to lett your Lordship know of the ill Dealing of my Lord of *Upper Ossoryes* Brother, called *Kallagh*, who toke a Plowgh of *Garrans*, from a Towne of *Richard Shethes* called *Aghoure*, and left a Husbandman for dead, the 12 of this Month. Another Brother of his, called *Tirrelagh*, came to a Towne of myne, with a Nombre of Kerne, and there forfably toke Meate within thies thre Nights, being the Day afore (as I am enformed) lyeng in Amboshe, to wourke some Villeinye in the Countre. My Lord, he still kepith from me the Possession of my Castell of *Dorowe*. *Donell Mac Shanes* Castell he still kepeth also, notwithstanding your Lordships Lettres for Deliuery thereof to *Donell*; dyvers brave Speches passit from him, as I heare, which I omitt to write; and trully, my Lord, weare hit not for som Respects, I cowl not well beare to receave so many Iniuries as I do. Whereof I humbly pray your Lordship I may have present Remedy, and so to Gods Guyding I committ you. At *Kilkenny*, this 14th of *Aprill*, 1576.

*Your Lordships Bröther to command,*

*Thomas Ormonde and Ossory.*

This is donn fins the late Spoyll committed vpon my Mann *Redmond Mores*.

*Thomas Earl of Ormond, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lord,*

I Vnderstand by your Lettres sent to the Sherif of the Countie of *Kilkenny*, that Complaint hath bene of late made to youe, by the Barron of *Vpper Ossorye*, of divers Robories, and Spoiles, taken by summ of this Countrey, from those of *Ossorye* (as he said) wherevppon, Yesterdai, there was a Meting betwene the Barron, and the Sherif, vppon the Borders of bothe Countries. Where (being desirous to vnderstand, if there were any Cause of Complaint of the Barrons Side) I rod my self, and founde the chiefe Cause of his Complaint, to be onely, for that the Sherifes Men, by my Commandment, toke certaine Victuals of Men of *Ossory*, carreinge the same away without my Licence, having before (after that your Lordship comitted the Chardg of this Countrey to me) Corne growing to be scarce, and the People out of all Hope to be releued out of *Englande*, comandid that none shold carry any out of the Countrey, vppon Paine of Punishment, and Forfetinge the same. And meaning to procede further in hering of the Complaints of bothe Sides, my Lord of *Upper Ossory*, being chardgid by *Richard Shethe*, for Staing of summ Victuals bought in *Ossory*, by a Man of his, and requiring Restitucion of a Plow taken from him by the Barrons Brother, he in a great Radg ons or twist gave Mr. *Shethe* the Lye; and thother answering him, that, saving his Honnor, he was as trewe as he, the Barron, after sum hott trethning Words in his Anger, departid presently; which Kynde of Dealing I thought good to aduise your Lordship, wishing that the Barron may be warnid by your Lordship to vse herafter to give better Langadg to suche as be Gentlemen of honest Behavior, seking but Iustice. Thus I humbly take my Leave. From *Kilkenny*, the xviith of *Aprill* 1576.

*Your Lordships assured Brother to*

*command,*

*Thomas Ormonde and Ossory.*

I do send vnto you such *Frensh* Newes as wear sent me owt of *England*: My Lord *Howard* and Mr. Secretary *Walsingham* are sent to the King with *Thor-der*. I know your Lordship hath more Newes then I, yeat, for Promes Sake, I send you these; your Lordship hathe wrytten to me to send to you som Menn to



appear (as I ges) vpon my Lord of *Vpperassorys* Enformation. What they are, or whose Men I know not, nether is hit wrytten in your Lordships Letter; two are myne awne Servants, who I woll se shalbe forth comming to awnswer at your Pleasur.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell.*

*My verie good Lords,*

I First most humblye crave Pardon of your most honorable Lordships, that I have not, with more Dilligence, addrested this my fowerth and last Provinciall Discourse, namelye of *Connaught*; by the which, and the other three before sent vnto you, you may perceive, howe I have occupied my selfe and spent theise vi Monethes, since I arryved here, in which I have viewed, and almost circuled this whole Realme, on everye Syde: But the Cawse of my Deferringe proceded, partlye that I expected, from Tyme to Tyme, the Arryvall of Mr. *Agarde*, whose Misse hath bene no small Mayme to me; in this my Travell, and also for that I looked to have received somewhatt from or by *Gefforde*, wherebye I might have bene occasioned more fullye to write to your Lordships. But where I looked for Satisfaction, I found Sorrowe, for by Lettres of the last Passadge, arryvinge here the xxiiijth of this Present, I vnderstoode of his Death, not a little to my Greiffe; for he was to me a kynde Kinsman, and a faythfull sufficient Servant, for whose Death I feele equall Passion, and as great Torment of Mynde, as for the Death of a naturall Chylde; but soch are the Accydents of this Woorld, and Crosses to put vs in Mynde, what we are. But to retorne to my Matter, I remember, that in my last Discourss of *Mounster*, I omitted to write of my beinge at *Kinsale*, where I contynued three Dayes, and went to the old Head, vj Myles distaunt, beyonde the Towne, which is one of the forticablest Places that ever I came in; and for the Towne, al be it I founde it moche decaied, in Respect of that I knewe it, by Reason of the longe and great Vnquietnes of the Countrey; yet, thoroughe the Contynuanee of Justice, and *Englishe* Governement niere them, it holdeth his owne well enoughe, and is on the mendinge Hande, the People honest and obedient; a Castle they had vpon their Peere, which was all ruyned, and the Peere it selfe greatlye decaied; and theise were the onelye Defence and Garde for their Shippinge, aswell agaynst the Force of the Piratt, as the Furie of the Sea: They prayed somme Ayde of the Quene, towards the Reedifieng of the same; and somme I graunted them, but in soch Order, with their owne Consents, as they shall fynde, vpon their owne Costs, all Manner of Stuffe, Victualls, and Labor, till that Somme of Money, which I gave them, be onelye expended in the Defrayenge of the Wages of Artificers about that Woorke, so as, with a small Chardge to the Quene, I hope a great Woorke shalbe donne, for the Common Wealth; and I vnderstande it is verye well forward alreadie, and I trust shalbe finished this Sommer.

After my last Dispathe made at *Lymericke*, and sent to your Lordships by *Gifford*, I departed thence the 27 of *Februarij*, and so entered into *Thomounde*, attended on by the Earle of *Thomounde*, Sir *Donell Obrien*, *Teige Mac Murrogh*, *Teige Mac Conobor*, *Tirelagh*, the Earles Brother, and *Donogho Mac Murrogh*; all theise are Gentlemen of one Surname, called *Obriens*, and yet no one of them Freinde to an other, and sometymes they have ben named Kings of *Lymericke*. Theise are the greatest Doers, and onelye Vndoers, of their owne Countrey and Neighbours, yet so niere Kinsmen, as they discended of one Graundfather. I had also with me the twoe *Mac Nemarroghes*, by vs called the *East* and *West Mac Nemarroghes*, cheife Gentlemen of that Countrey, which, if it were in Quiet, they might lyve lyke principall Knights in *Englande*. There was also with me in Companie the twoe Land Lordes of the *Mac Mahons* of *Thomound* and *Olagblande*: Theise three are Captens and Lordes of large Territories; together with theise were maney other Gentlemen Freholders, and others of meaner Sorte of that Countrie; but, amongest them all, I could not finde one discended of



of *Englishe* Race, yet was that Countrey once the Lord *Clares* of *Englande*, and most Parte of it possessed by *Englisbemen*; all theise, and maney more, complayninge vpon the *Obryens*, and eche of them vpon other, for the Ruyne of their Countrey; and truelye in soch Desolation and Wast it is, as, if they were not a People of more spare Dyett then other are, both of Fleashe, Breade, and Drinke made of Corne, it were not possible that a Soyle, so wasted, could susteine them, and yet maney they are not in Number.

I lodged the first Night, after I left *Lymericke*, in a dissolved Frierie of the Quenes, called *Coyne*, where, by the Earle and Countrey, I was well provided for: The Night followinge, I rather encamped, then lodged, in the ruyned See of the Bishopp of *Kilmakogh*, where I and my Companie had bad Fare, and woorsse Harbor: Here the Earle of *Clanrickarde* mett me, in verye comelye and cyvill Manner, but immediatly departed from me. The next Day agayne he met me, and so passinge into *Oshaghnes* Countrey, where *Thomounde*, beinge of *Mounster*, confineth with *Connaught*, I came, the same Day, to *Galway*, where I was to their Powers verie honorablye received and entertained. And beinge there, as sone as I could gett all them of *Thomounde* vnto me, havinge lycenzed maney of them before, to repaier to their Howsies, for their better Furnishinge to attende me: I entred into Consideracion of their Troubles, Greives, and Losses, complayned on to me by them; wherein I founde Plentie of Murder, Rape, Burninge, and Sacraledge, and, besides, soch Spoyle of Goodes and Cattell, as in Number might be compted infinite, and in Quantitie vnmeasurable; and in deede, the whole Countrey not able to answere a Quarter of that which was affirmed to be lost amongst them; and yet, by the great Travell of Sir *Lucas Dillon*, who examined everye perticaler Matter, as it was booked, reduced the same to a reasonable and certeine Quantitie, which the Parties them selves were dryven to confesse to be true, and so, by their owne Consents, Commissioners apointed, to take the Proffes, and to see the Goodes restored to the Loofers. And finding in this Examinacion, that the mutuall Hurtes and Revenges, donne betwixt the Earle and *Teige Mac Murrogh*, was one great Cawse of the Ruyne of the Countrey: I committed them bothe, and, after twyse or thryse publike Dealinge in their Cawses, I bounde them, by Bondes, in great Sommes, to abandon their Countrey, during my Pleasure, as well in Sorte to restraine them, as to binde them to performe soche Orders, as I tooke with them; whiche they have humblye submitted them selves vnto, and, since that, obedientlye observed the same; and, at that Tyme, I tooke the Earles Brother, and still deteine hym in Iron, and *Teige Mac Conoghor* I deteined likewise, vntill he had delyvered a sufficient Hostage for his good Behaviour. I made Sir *Donell Obrien* Sheriffe of the Shire, and apointed some other of the Countrey Birthe to be Sergeaunts, Cessors, and other meane Officers in that Countye; Men that were no evell Doers, and soche, in Effecte, as were vnapeached of any, or complayned of by any: The Countrey yeelded by generall Consent, to be at the Chardge of a Provost Marshall of myne Apointment, and geve him Enterteinment both of Wagies and Foode, for hym selfe, xij Horffemen, and xxiiij Footemen; for that the Countrey swarmed of idle Men, and, by this Meanes, they thought best to suppress them. Duriinge my Abode at *Galway*, dyvers notorious Malefactors were brought in and executed, and more have bene since. Commissioners they were desierous to have to comme amongst them, and, accordinge to their Desier, I sent them. Lastlye, for that I founde, and proved before them, the verie Roote and Origine of their Ruyne, was the vncerteine Graunte, and vnstable Possession of their Landes, wherevpon grewe their Warres: I brought them to agree to surrender all their Landes into the Quenes Handes, for forfeyted I proved it alreadye: So that they assented, that, when soever I wold sende for them, they wold comme and surrender their Landes, and take it of her Highnes agayne, and yeelde bothe Rent and Service; and hereof I have good Confidence to make a good Reckninge for the Quene. And thus moche for *Thomounde*, a Lymme of *Mounster*, but in my last Governement here adnexed to the Presidenty of *Connaught*, by the Name of the Countye of *Clare*.

I devided



I devided *Connaught* (besides the *East Breanie* or *Oreilies*, and the *Annalye* or *Offerralls* Countrie) into fower Counties; namelye *Sligo*, which was a Parte of nether *Connaught*, and *Maio*, which was an other Parte of the same: *Galway*, which was called *Upper Connaught*, and *Rossecommen*, which was called the *Playnes* of *Connaught*.

Out of the Countye of *Sligo* I had nothing but Lettres, but those humblye written from *Ochonnor*, affirminge, that he durst not come, for Feare of the Warres, hapned betwene *Odonnell*, and *Con* his Nephewe; but lewd and malitious Tales rather made hym afrayd, as I take it. He hath vnder his Tyrannie *O Doud*, twoe *Mac Donoghes*, twoe *Obares*, and *Agare*, and yet he hym selfe trybutarie to *Odonnell*. They be all Men of great Landes, and they shall not chuse, but yeelde, bothe Rent and Service, to the Crowne; all, but *Ochonnor* hym selfe, have offered it, and he, to be dischargd of *Odonnell*, will most willinglye do it; I loke daylie for *Orwarcke*, whose Countrie, called *West Breanye*, is also a Porcion of this Countie, with whome I doubt not but to conclude for a good Rente and Service for the Quene: This Countye, or these Countries, are well enhabited, and ritche, and more haunted with Straungers, then I wishe it were, vnles the Quene were better answered of her Custome; and thus moche for the Countye of *Sligo*.

Out of the Countye of *Maio*, came to me to *Galway* first seaven principall Men of the *Clandonells*, for everye of their seaven Linagies one, of that Surname, and enhabitinge that Countye, all, by Profession, mercenarie Soldiers, by the Name of *Galloglas*; they are verie stronge, and moche of the Wealth of the Countrie is vnder them; they are able to goe where they will, and, withe the Countenance of any meane Lorde of Force, to make Warre with the greatest. Theise humblye submitted them selves, and their severall Linagies, to her Majestie, protestinge, by Othe, and byndinge them selves by Endenture and Hostage, never to serve any, but with Allowaunce of the Governor. Troth it is, I was enformed by dyvers Advertisements, that *Mac William Ewghter* wold not come to me; and therefore I drewe this Plott, that I wan his cheife Force from hym, in getting theise *Clandonells*: But it fell out otherwise in the Ende, for *Mac William* verie willinglye came hym selfe; and moche the rather, by the good Perswasions and Meanes of the Deane of *Christ Church*, one of this Counsell, whome I sent into *Connaught*, when I went in *Mounster*, onelye to founde the Disposicion of the Potentates, and great ones of that Province; and therein he did good Service, and surelye so is he well able, both for his owne Skill, and the Creditt that others repose in hym; if it please your Lordships to bestowe a thankefull Lettre vpon hym, it will be verie comfortable to the olde Man, which I humblye beseeche your Lordships to doe. I founde *Mac William* verie fencible, though wantinge the *Englishe* Tongue, yet vnderstandinge the *Lattin*; a Lover of Quiet and Civyltie, desierous to holde his Landes of the Quene, and suppress *Irish* Extorcion, and to expulse the *Scotts*, who swarme in those Quarters, and in deede have almost suppressed them; in some Proffe whereof, he taried with me most of the Tyme I remayned at *Galway*, and thence went with me to *Athlone*, and departed not till I went from thence, where verie reverentlye, by Othe, he shewed his Feaultye, and did his Homage, as humblye bynding hym selfe, aswell by Othe as Indenture, ever hereafter to holde his Landes of her Majestie, and her Crowne, and to pay yerelye twoe hundered and fyvetie Markes *Sterlinge*, and to fynde twoe hundered Soldiours, Horssmen and Foote-men, for twoe Monethes by the Yere, and to geve them Foode in that Proportion, as I trust, in Tyme, shall suffice bothe for their Meate and Wagies. In one of his Petitions exhibited vnto me, he humblye besought (doubtinge that I wold have taken away the *Bonnaught* from the *Clandonells*, which they have of him and his Countrie) that they might (with drawinge it from hym) holde it of the Quene. This Devise was vnderhande practized by me, and they, verie glade of this Overture made by hym, humblye desiered to hold it of her Majestie; and so, by Indenture passed betwixt the *Galloglas* and the Quene, they presentlye doe. This, my Lords, is an Entraunce of no small Consequence,  
bothe



bothe for the Reducinge of the Countrey to her Majesties Obedience, and no small Increase may be made besides to her Commoditie, and the Augmentacion of her Revenue. He received his Countrey at my Handes, by Way of Seneschallshipp, which he thankefullie accepted. The Order of Knighthoode I bestowed vpon hym, whereof he semed verie ioyous; and some other little Triffles I gave hym, as Tokens betwene hym and me, wherewith verie well satisfied he departed: This is all I thought necessarie to write of *Mac William*, savinge that he was desierous I shoulde sende thether an *Englishe* Sheriffe, as I have lykewise donne in all the other Counties within that Province, which, of late, hath bene omitted: *Mac William* protested he wold obey hym I sent, and geve hym Findinge for a sufficient Strength of Men on Horssbacke and Foote; which I accomplished accordinge to his Desier, and sent one with hym. Surelie, my Lords, he is well wonne, for he is a great Man; his Lande lyeth a longe the West North West Coast of this Realme, wherein he hathe maney goodly Havens, and is a Lorde in Territorie of three Tymes so moche Lande, as the Earle of *Clanrickarde* is. He brought with him all his Bretheren, *Mac Phillippin*, who in Surname is a *Bourke*, as he is; and, besides them, a great Number of Owners of Landes and Castells, lienge in the same Countrey: *Omaylle* came likewise with hym, who is an originall *Irishe* Man, stronge in Galleys and Seamen; he earnestlye sued to hold of the Quene, and to pay her Rent and Service. At that Instant were also with me *Mac Phaten*, of *Englishe* Surname, *Barrett*; *Mac Iwylye*, of *Englishe* Surname, *Staunton*; *Mac Jordan* of the lyke *Dexter*, *Mac Custelo* of the lyke *Nangle*, *Mac Morris*, of *Englishe* Surname, *Prendergast*; and theise v shewe Matter of some Recorde and Creditt, that they have not onelye bene *Englishe*, which everie Man confesseth, but also Lordes and Barons in Parliament, as they them selves affirme; and fuerlye they have Landes sufficient for Barons, if they might weeld their owne quietlye; but so bare, barbarous Barons are they now, as they v have not three Hackneys to carrye them and their Trayne Home. There were with me maney more of lower Degree, and no deeper of Wealth, as the Cheife of *Clanandros*, and *Mac Thomyn*; both they, and maney more *Barretts*, *Cusackes*, *Lynches*, and of fundrie *Englishe* Surnames, nowe degenerate, and all lamentinge their Devastacion, and with one Consent crienge for Justice and *Englishe* Governement, in so miserable (and yet magnanimous) Manner, as it wold make an *Englishe* Harte to feele Compassion with them; and thus for the Countye of *Maio*.

Touchinge the Countye of *Galway*; first, I finde the Towne of *Galway* moche decaied, both in Number of expert sage Men of Yeares, and younge Men of Warre, in respect of that I have seene; which great Decay hath growen thorough the horrible Spoyles donne upon them, by the Sonnes of the Earle of *Clanrickarde*, in so moche as it was evidentlye proved before me, that fiftie Howseholders of that Towne doe nowe enhabite vnder *Mac William Croghter*. And it seameth, they have not onelye lost their Wealth, but with it their Wittes and Hartes; surelie it may well seme they were in Pointe to have geven vp all, and almost to have forgotten that they received any Corporacion of the Crowne; but I trust they are nowe revived, and I hope on the mendinge Hande. Duringe myne Aboade there, the Earle of *Clanrickarde* continuallye attended on me, and so did the Earle of *Thomonde*, the Archbishopp of *Tweom*, the Bishopps of *Clanfert* and *Kilmagkogh*, and the Baron of *Athenrie*, by Surname *Breminghme*, as poore a Baron as lyveth, and yet agreed on to be the auntientest Baron in this Lande; *Ostbertye*, *Okelley*, and maney of their Surnames, which are verie great; *Omadden*, and all of any Accompt of that Surname, *Onaughton*, and maney other pettie Lordes and Capteines of Countries, all were with me, confessinge that they ought Service, cravinge that they might hold their Landes immediatlye of her Highnes: Theise are the principall of this Countye, savinge soche as be of my Lord of *Clanrickards* Sute or Surname, as *Obeyne*, originall *Irishe*, and in old Tyme verie great, nowe meane: *Mac Cough*, *Mac Hubbert*, *Mac Davye*, *Mac Edmound*, *Mac Redmounde*; all theise *Burks*, and many more, but all holdinge of the Earl of



*Clanrickarde* (by due Service, sayeth he) but thorough Oppression, say they, but all longinge for Reformation crye for *Englishe* Governement and wold fayne hold of the Quene, and her Crowne: Maney other there were, who, for Shamefastnes, durst not shewe their Faces, for that they had bene Partetakers with the Earles Sonnes in their most horrible Rebellion. Theise twoe hopeles Sonnes came into the Churche of *Galway* on a *Sunday*, at publike Service, their lamentablye craved their Pardon, and most humblye submitted themselves, confesseinge their Fawlt; and, one of them simplye renouncinge his Protection, the other came in of him selfe, without Protection. I sayed as I thought good to them, reprehended them, committed them to my Marshall, lead them away, and have them here Prisonners in this Cattle of *Dublin*; whereat the People comforted greatlye, and were rowfed in Hartes and Mindes to see this Example of Justice.

After I had remayned in *Galway* three whole Weeks, I departed from thence the xxiith of *Marche*, and passed thorough *Athenrie*, the most wofull Spectacle that ever I looked on in any of the Quenes Dominions, totally burned, Colledge, Parrishe Churche, and all that was there, by the Earles Sonnes; yet the Mother of one of them was buried in the Churche: I toke Order for the Reedifinge of the Towne, and the Woorke is begonne; and I have taxed for the Satisfiinge of the old Inhabitaunts indifferently vpon that Countrie, weyenge the Abilities of eche Person, and the Qualitie of their Fawlte, as I thought most reasonable; which shalbe confirmed and ratefied by Order of Commissioners authorized vnder the Greate Seale, accordinge to the Meaninge of her Majesties Lettre graunted to theim of *Athenrie*, and the Somme of this Taxation amounteth to twoe Thowfsand Pounds; and I doubt not to levye it, and the rather, for that the Earle is entred into Band of v M l. to see aswell this performed, as the first Order taken at *Lymericke* agaynst his Sonnes, in my Predicessors Tyme. I have cut the Towne almost into two equal Partes, it beinge before full as bigge, with a faier high Wall, as the Towne of *Callyce*. I tooke from the Earle, the better to answere the Expectation of the People, twoe principall Castells and Keys of Strength; the one called the Castle of *Bellaneslowe*, which standeth betwixt *Galway* and *Athenrie*; the other called *Clare*, and seated betwixt *Galway* and *Mac William Ewghters* Countrie; and, by this Kind of Proceadinge, havinge greatlye satisfield the old Inhabitaunts of *Athenrie*; I went thence with the Earle of *Clanrickarde*, and was verye honorablye entertained with hym. The next Night I lodged in the *Kel-lies* Countrie, and the Night followinge in the Castle of *Rosfecommen*: The Countrie is indifferentlye manured, by reason of the Earle of *Clanrickards* Force, whose Freindes and Followers farewell, the rest goe to Wracke. The Bisshop of *Meith* came to me to *Galway*, who assisted me verie well in my Service there; but of hym I shall have Occasion to write more amplye to your Lordships, when I shall touche the *Englishe* Pale; and thus for the Countye of *Galway*.

I stayed at *Rosfecommen* but a Night, both for that I had apointed Provision at *Atblone*, which is in the same Countye; as also, for that I found nothinge there layed in to furnishe me withall, and therefore willed the Assemblye to be at *Atblone*; yet, duringe my Abode at *Rosfecommen*, *Ochonnor Donne* came vnto me, whose Auncestor, they say, was sometymes called Kinge of *Connaught*. The Castle of *Rosfecommen* I tooke from hym in my former Governement, whose Auncestors possessed the same the Contynuanee of Cxl Yeares, and never came into *Englishe* Men Handes: Vnder his Rule there are *Obyrne* and *Offlun*. *Ochonnor Roe* came not at me, for Feare I wold make hym make Recompence for Hurtes donne in the Rebellion Tyme; under hym is *Oflanigan*, but I can have them when I will, and make them bothe Arme in Arme beare and drawe, with their Fellowes. *Mac Dermod* was with me, and one vnder hym called *Mac Manus*; theise People, and some more pettie Lordes, enhabite the Playnes of *Connaught*, and are all destroyed by the *Scotts* cheifelye. The Countrie is large, and of excellent Soyle; the best, and all the rest Beggars, desierous



desierous to be delyvered from the Tyrannie of their stronger Neighboures they all craue to be subiected to the *English* Governement. A Number of particular Cawfies were ended duringe my beinge at *Athlone*, where I remayned ix Dayes, in which Tyme was executed a notable Rebelle of the *Burks*, whome I cawfed to be apprehended in the Countye of *Galway*; and, by Order of Lawe, (for Burninge comitted by hym in *Westmeithe*) he was indyted, atteinted, and executed as a Traytor, (whose Landes I have cawfed to be seised to her Majesties Vse); and thus moche for the Countye of *Rossecommen*.

I look daylie for *Ochonnor Sligo*, *Orwarcke*, and *Odonnell* and *Con Odonnell*, his Nephewe, and doubt not but so to agree with them, as the *Scottes* shalbe sone banished out of that Prouince of *Connaught*. I do not remember any more Partes of the same vnspoken of, savinge the *Annalye* or *Offerralls* Countrey, and *East Brenie* or *Oreilies* Countrey: For the first, they all came to me in verye duetifull and orderlye Sorte, and attended vpon me, duringe myne Aboade in the Countyes of *Rossecommen* and *Westmeithe*; yeelded to any Reason, and, in their owne Countrey, willinglie imbraced the Currennye of the *Quenes* Writt. At my beinge at *Athlone*, I sent Commissioners thether to hold Cessions; where good Service was donne by the Countrey, and due Justice ministred by the Commissioners. This Countrey was made Shire Grounde by me, by the Name of the Countye of *Longforde*, and the cheiffe Lordes are bound to pay CC Markes by the Yeare of Encrease of Revenue; whereof al be it they were in Arrere for iiii or v Yeares, yet, immediatlye vpon my Demaunde, they paid Parte, and tooke short Dayes for Payment of the rest; and, by the Grace of God, by the Example of theise, the rest shall followe. From the *East Brenye* or *Oreileys* Countrey, I received all duetifull Offices that reasonablye were to be looked for; and the Capten of the Countrey is a verye honest Man, but olde, very impotent, and bedred; he cannot lyve but a Whyle, by all Likelyhoode; his Death will brede great Trouble, if, in due Tyme, the same be not looked to: The Competitors for his Place will hazard the Destruction of their Countrey them selves, and their Neighbors: What I shall do in it, I cannot tell yet, but I meane to diffypate it into more Captenries then one, if I can; every Way, I doubt not, but it shall yeeld both Rent and Service to the Crowne, in larger Proportion then ever it did.

By this Tyme I feare I have wried all your Lordships with this my tedious Discourffe of the Particularities of *Connaught*, yet most humbly I pray the same, geve Readinge or Hearinge to the rest. In generall, as the Countrey is thus in greate Miserie thoroughe the fainte Proceadinge of Justice, whyle it was emongst them, and the totall Withholdinge it so long from them sence; for the which, of verie Compassion of their Woe, and at the earnest Sute and Crye almost of them all, I left amonge them *Thomas le Straunge*, and *Thomas Dillon*, learned in the Lawes, to be their Commissioners to determyne Controversyes amongst them; and left lykewise *Robarte Damparte*, Provost Marshall, to apprehende and execute the Thieves and Destroyers of the Countrey: They of *Connaught* are willinge (or at least shall not chuse to beare) as maney Men of Warre, as shalbe necessary for Suppression of any Rebelle or Outlawe in that Prouince. The *Quenes* Revenue reviued, and that withe casuall Revenues, will groe niere to beare the Chardge of the Cyvill Magistracye: In fyne, I am moche deceived, if *Connaught* may not be made to beare his owne Chardges within one Yere and a halffe, so as a President and Counsell be sent thether to recyde amongest them.

And for as moche as I am advertized, that my Lord of *Essex* is minded to come agayne to this Realme, and to bestowe some more of his Tyme here, I knowe no Man halffe so fitt as he, if he might be entreated and wonne, to take it upon hym; and great Pittie it were (in myne Opinion) that so noble and gallaunt a Sprite, and so hable a Boddye as he hath, should lyve vpon so small a Portion, as he hath here, or a private Lyffe, from publike Function; I knowe he is held of the People of this Countrey, both in honorable and dreadfull Tearmes; the good Partes, and rare Vertues, that are in that Noble Man,



Man, I knowe I nede not to expresse to your Lordships, for that the same are better to be iudged of by you then me; therefore I will leave to speake of hym any further, but write for the Countrie and my selfe, assuringe your Lordships, my Opinion is, if he come, and be placed in publyke Authoritie, as President with the Counsell in *Connaught*, it will imprinte in their Myndes soch a Resolution of the Quene to reforme them to their Benefitt, and her Obedience, as I beleve they will fall prostrate vnder his Feet: For my selfe, I shall be most ioyous of hym, and thinke that I am moche honored by the Companie of so noble a Personadge, and will so imparte with hym, as, without her Majesties further Chardge, then presentlye she is contented to be at, he shalbe made able to lyve honorablye there; and so his Lordship and Sir *William Druerie* ioyninge together, as I doubt nothinge but they will, and, as twoe good Wheelles, holding up the Sowth and West Endes of this Realmes Axeltree: I will so deale, I hope, with the East, and Northe, as the Wayne of *Ireland* shall bring Harvest merelye Home, within very fewe Yeres, thoughte not to *Englands* Gayne, yet without *Englands* Chardge. If I cannot, nor by good Entreatye possiblye may not, have the Earle of *Essex*, lett me have an other, confesseinge vnto your Lordships, that, if I may not have hym, I am resolved to be a Sutor for an other. But, if I shall have none at all, then looke that the Bodye of the Reformation of this Realme shalbe conveyd as a Carte, that goeth upon one Wheele. And thus moche for *Connaught*, and myne Opynion for the Governement of it; wherein, I trust, I shewe small Respect, either to my singuler Ambition or Proffitt.

I departed from *Atblone* the Second of *Aprill*, and lodged by the Way at *Mac Le Straunges*, *Mollingar*, my Lord of *Delvins*, my Lord Bishopp of *Meithe*, *Lawrence Dallabides*, and so the xiiiith of the same I arryved in this Cittye of *Dublin*, beinge the first Entrie I made into it, since I landed last in *Irelande*, which was the xiith of *September* past. By the Way, as I went, Cessions were held in the Counties of *Westmeithe*, *Lowthe*, *Longfforde*, *Meithe*, and *Kildare*, very good Service donne, and great Obedience shewed; yea, and in myne Absence I could not almost have wisshed for better Service to be donne, then I found donne of all Handes, that I put in Trust, aswell of this as of that Countrey Birthe, and in especiall of my Lord Bishopp of *Meithe*, whome I hartelye pray your Lordships to thanke in lovinge Manner; and let the Direction be to his Lordship, and to soche as I ioyned with him in Commission in myne Absence, for Gardinge of the Borders of the Pale. I write not to your Honnors the Names of eche particuler Verletts that hath died since I arryved, aswell by the ordenarie Courffe of the Lawe, the Marshall Lawe, as flat Fightinge with them, when they would take Foode, without the Goodwill of the Gever; for I thinke it no Stufe woorthie the Lodginge of my Lettres with to your Lordships: But I do assure you, the Number of them is great, and somme of the best, and the rest tremble, for most Parte; they fight for their Dinner; and maney of them loose their Hedds before they be served with their Supper. Downe they goe in everye Corner, and downe they shall goe, God willinge, if her Majestie will countenaunce me, and your Lordships will comforte me and soche as I shall set a Woorke. And thus your Lordships hathe by this, and my other three Reportes of my Travell in this Lande, ever since the xiith of *September* last, vntill the xiiiith of this Present, and so to doe I meane: During this Yeare, you shall here from Tyme to Tyme, wherein, as I hope, you fynde I have not bene idle hetherto; so I trust hereafter, in the rest, I will not be ill occupied.

Nowe, my Lords, I feare I have over tyered your Lordships with my Woords simply conceived, and badlye delyvered; yet humblye I beseeche the same, that you will reade and marke this my fewe Heddes followinge, for the generall Reformation and chardgeles Kepinge of *Irelande* hereafter, which, in Troth, I find feasible, and with great Confidence hope, to see within fewe Yeares brought to passe.

The



The Hedds are these.

The first is, the Church now so spoiled, as well by the Ruine of the Temples, as the Discipacion and Imbeafeling of the Patrimonye, and most of all, for Want of sufficient Ministers; as so deformed and over throwen a Church there is not, I am sure, in any Region where Christ is professed; and preposterous it seemeth to me, to begin Reformation of the Politique Parte, and to neglecte the Religious. The Meane to amend this is easie, in my Opinion, whereof I have, at some Length, written to the Quenes Majestie, and wishe that it might please your Lordships to acquainte you with that Lettre, and, if you lyke my Device, to further the same.

The second is, an Army must continuallye be mayntained heere; and let this be a Maxime with your Lordships indisputable, That a Garrison of 300 Horsemen, and 700 Footemen, may continuallye be kept here, without any great Chardge to *Englande*, or ells my Ayme fayleth me more, then ever it did in any Thing hetherto, towching the Governement of *Ireland*. This Chardge now must be reared by the newe Rents of the *Irisbrie*, and by an Alteracion of the old Burthen of the *Englishe* Pale; for though the *Irisbrie* be now mollified and malleable, so that you may have of them, what reasonablye you will axe; but yet, never without an Armye. The *Englishe* Pale shall not be so much bourdened, as now it is, in Quantitie of the Chardge, though haplye some particuler Men made to beare more indifferentlye with their Neighbours then now they dooe; and this will be the worst Stone in all the Wall, to be well couched; and yet, by the Grace of God, it shalbe well enough; and with this Number of 1000 complete in Garrison, I will vndertake to kepe *Ireland* in Quiett, and to appease all Accydents and Cyvill Stirre, that may ryse in any Parte, with in the Countrie, by Practise, Rebellion, or otherwise (Strangers and forreine Invasions onelye excepted.) But now, me thinke, you will aske me, *Quo modo*, this is to be donne, for in that is all the Hardnes. I could expresse what I thinke in it, though tediouslye: For, of it, I have had Conference with the Wisest here; but, because I finde soche an Unison in their Opinions, with my Devise, and so little Abilitie of Contradiction, it maketh me the more mistrust the same; for hetherto there is nothinge conceived, but of myne owne Invention, no Perrill foreseene, but by myne owne Prevention, nor nothinge in Wisshinge resolved on, but myne owne Iudgmente; and, findinge soch Imperfection in my selfe, as I do, it maketh me doubt that my Foundation might be vnfounde, to beare so great a Woorcke, and so both Cost and Labor might be lost: Wherefore, if it so lyke your Lordships, I hartelye wishe, that it might please her Majestie to sende hether fower wise Personages, whereof one well acquainted with the Course of that grave and most honorable Counsell, as it might be Mr. *Tremayne*; twoe stoute and well learned Lawyers, as ij of these three, viz. the Master of the *Rolls*, the Attorney Generall, and Mr. *Bell*: Some one discrete Countrie Gentleman, as Sir *Edward Mountague*; that were able to argue what might be reaped out of a good Soyle quietlye possessed: With the Assistaunce of these my Harte serveth me, within the Space of fixe Monethes, to create the Quene a Revenue, sufficient to fynde the Nombre of Soldiers above written. These Assistaunts I wold have here, by the Middst of *September* next; and, although I intende, in the meane Tyme, to whele and torne about, as farre as *Killmallocke* Sowthwestwarde, and *Knockfergus* Northwarde; yet, by that Tyme, I meane to be here agayne. And, by this my Dealinge, I trust your Lordships doth fynde, that I am neither greedye of secrete gotten Gayne, nor vnwillinge to participate, with others, publyke deserved Prayse; but, I perceive, I am so long on my second Hed, that I had almost forgotten the thirde, viz.

That it wold please her Majestie to send hether three Lawyers, whereof twoe to be Cheife Justices of the Principall and Common Benches, and one to be an Attorney Generall of this Realme; this is so necessarie, that, if I should write a whole Quier of Paper onelye of this Pointe, I were not able to expresse



the Necessitie of it : But, in fewe Termes, this I assure your Lordships, there is none here so mete for those Places, as is to be wished, onelye Sir *Lucas Dillon* excepted, who is Cheife Baron. And thus, craving Pardon that I have so long held you in the Readinge of so large and tedious a Lettre, I humblye take my Leave, beseeching God, longe in moch Honnor, quiet Dayes, and Happines, to preserve you all. From the Castle of *Dublin*, the xxviiijth of *Aprill*, 1576.

*Your honorable Lordships assured loving*

*Freinde to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Sir Francis Walsingham, Secretary of State.*

*S I R,*

**A**ccordinge to the Note you sent me enclosed in your Lettres of the xxiiijth of *Januarij* last, towchinge the Answeringe of certeine Pointes collected out of her Majesties Instructions, you shall vnderstande, that, vpon Receipt of the same, forthwith, as sone as I could convenientlye have the Officers vnto me, and namelye, the Auditor, who knoweth most, and to whose Office it apperteineth to vnderstande the State of her Majesties Debts here : I willed hym, accordinglye, to make vp a perfect Booke of all those Recknings, both what was dewe by her Majestie, to whome, and for what Cawse. His Answer was, That al be it, amongst his other Travells and Encombrances, that was his principall and cheife Care, to make a perfect Booke thereof, to be sent and presented to the Lords ; yet, that he could not do it possiblye, before he had finished the Treasurers Accompte ; which Accompte, he affirmeth, he can not perfectlye goe thorough withall, before soche Tyme, as certeine of the Capteins Bills, which were paid in the *Eschequer* there, be returned hither : Of all which Bills, the Threasurers Deputie hath a Note in what Sorte to receive the same there. For Delyverie whereof, my Lord Treasurer is to be moved to geve Order to the Tellors, to redelyver those Billes backe to the saied Threasurers Deputie, takinge a Bill of his Hande, confessinge the Receipt of the saied Bills : For otherwise, if he have them not to shewe, somme of the Capteins (without Sight of those Bills) will denye Receipt of their Payment.

And, towchinge the Revenues, what Diminucion or Encrease hath bene made of late Yeres ; the Auditor saith, that that Woorke is in Hande, but not yet finished : Neither (as he sayeth) can he perfectlye ende it, before soch Tyme as the Threasurers Accompte be perfected.

Concerning her Majesties Landes in *Leix* and *Offalye*, I am not yet resolved what Manner of Warraunt it were best to devise to encrease her Majesties Rent, and gett her Tenaunts. For, first, to have meere *Irish* were verie perrillous ; and of others of this Countrie Birthe fewe there be, that I knowe, of Wealthe, that will be Fermors there. And soch of that Countrie Birthe, as are neadie, and have no Wealthe, I thinke them not the fittest Tenaunts heere. And, to procure any thence of Wealthe and Substaunce, to take Landes, and to plant, and inhabite those twoe Countries, I suppose it will be a verie harde Reckninge, to bring to passe ; in so moche that the Case standeth thus, in Effecte, hitherto, for those twoe Countries, as her Majestie may be at Choise, whether she will geve them Wagies and Enterteinment to fynde her Lande, or ells her Lande to fynde them Wagies and Enterteinment ; for I will vndertake for every Pennye she receiveth in Rent for Land there, shee geveth Wagies xij *d.* to kepe that Lande : Yet I will never consent, that the Countrie should be habandoned in any Sorte, for helde it shalbe ; but onelye, herebye to note vnto you by the Way, what a deare Purchase this is, and hath bene



bene to the Crowne; and, by the Exfample of this, you may iudge of the reft, that are of this Nature.

Towchinge the Lettinge of the *Knight of the Valley*, and the *White Knights Landes*, what hath bene confidered of, and donne therein, and in the lyke Cafe, I referre you to the Reporte of *Launcelot Alfordes Booke*, which herewith I fende you, whose Travell and Dilligence in this my laft Iorney, and the good Effecte that (I doubt not) will followe of his Travell, I cannot leave neither vnremembred nor vnrecommended vnto you; and pray you, that he may bothe vnderftande from you, and other of the Lords, that his Travell is well accepted, which wilbe both an Encouragement and Comforte vnto him, for trewlye he hath well deserved no fmall Commendacion.

Concerninge the Remayne of the Victualls, I founde none, but that I bought of the Victualler; for it was his owne Store, and not the Quenes, for he tooke the Victuallinge at her Majefties Handes by Compoficion.

For the Advertifement of the Nombers of her Majefties Garrifon in ordenarie Wagies, and in what Places they ferve, the Clarke of the Checke hath of late (as he enformeth me) fent you a perfect Booke thereof. And nowe, lykewife, I have cawfed hym to engrofse an other, which Courffe, he fhall holde halfe yearelye, that her Majeftie may vnderftand the State of her Armie: The Booke you fhall herewith receive.

Howe this halffe Yeres Affignacion from thence, and the Revenues heere have bene expended, the Auditor hath made a Collection of it, and, in a particular Booke, made Declaracion thereof; whiche Booke, together with theife, fhallbe delyvered vnto your Hands. And thus, havinge breifelye yet fufficientlye (I hope) and as fullye as I could for the Prefent, answered the Articles you requyred to be advertized, of apperteininge to the principall Pointes, of her Majefties Inftuctions delyvered vnto me, which I pray you imparte withe the Lords, with my moft hartye Thankes for your honorable, courteous, and freindlye Partes towards me, and my Cawfes, I bid you Farewell. From *Dublin*, the xxvijth of *Aprill*, 1576.

*Your affured lovinge Freinde.*

H. Sydney.

P O S T S C R I P T.

S I R,

My Nephewe, *Henrye Harrington*, obtained, at her Majefties Handes, a Lease in Reversion, of xxx l. by the Yere, for the Terme of xxj<sup>tie</sup> Yeres; by Warraunt whereof, certeine Percells he paffed, in the Tyme of the Government of my Brother, Sir *William Fitz-William*; and fome Percells he hath yet to paffe, wherein he hath defiered my Furtheraunce, which I wold gladlye graunt hym: But becaufe the Lettre, fent from her Majeftie to my Brother, is not warrantable to me, beinge fpeciallye addreffed to hym, and to none other Governor, as commonlye Lettres of that Nature, are: My Nephewe, therefore, prayeth you, and fo do I likewise, for hym, entreate you, that the Lettre may be eft fones renewed, and made warrantable, and fo retorned backe, that he may have the full Benifitt of her Majefties Graunte perfected by me. The Copie of the Lettre he obtained I heere with fende you. *Dublin*, xxviij *Aprill*, 1576.

*Your, &c.*

H. Sydney.

S I R,



*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elisabeth.**May it please your most excellent Majestie,*

**I** Have in fower severall Discourssies, addrested vnto the Lordes of your Highnes most honorable Councell, certified them howe I founde this your Highnes Realme, at myne Arryval into the same; and what I have seene, and vnderstand by my Travell theise fixe last Monethes, in whiche I have passid thorough eche Province, and have bene almost in eche Countye thereof: The whiche I would not sende to your most excellent Majestie, immediatlye to be reade by the same; least they should have seemed to tedious, partelye thorough the Quantitie of the Matter, but cheifely thorough the bad Delyvery thereof, by my Pen; not doubtinge but your Majestie is by this Tyme advertized of the materiall Pointes contained in them.

And nowe, most deare Mistres, and most honored Sovereigne, I solye adresse to you, as to the onelye Sovereigne Salve Gever, to this your fore and sicke Realme; the lamentable Estate of the most noble and principall Lym thereof, the Church I meane, as fowle, deformed, and as cruellye crushed, as any other Parte thereof; by your onelye gracious and relygious Order to be cured, or at least amended: I would not have beleved, had I not, for a great Parte, viewed the same, throughout the whole Realme, and was advertized of the perticuler Estate of ech Church, in the Bisshoppricke of *Meithe* (beinge the best inhabited Countrie of all this Realme) by the honest, zealous, and learned Bisshopp of the same, Mr. *Hugh Bradye*, a godlye Minister for the Gospell, and a good Sarvaunt to your Highnes, who went from Church to Church hym selfe, and found, that there are within his Dioces 224 Parrishe Churches, of which Number 105 are impropriated to sondrie Possessions, nowe of your Highnes, and all leased out for Yeares, or in Fee Farme, to severall Farmors, and great Gayne reaped out of them above the Rent, which your Majestie receiveth; no Parson, or Vicar, resident vpon any of them, and a verye simple, or soarye Curat, for the most Parte, apointed to serve them; amonge which Number of Curatts, onelye Eightene were founde able to speake *Englishe*; the rest *Irishe* Preists, or rather *Irishe* Roges, havinge verye little *Lattin*, lesse Learninge, or Cyvilitie: All theise lyve vpon the bare Alterages (as they tearme them) which God knoweth are verye small, and were wont to lyve vpon the Gayne of Masses, Dirges, Shryvings and soch lyke Tromperye, goodlye abolished by your Majestie: No one Howse standinge for any of them to dwell in. In maney Places, the very Walles of the Churches doune; verye fewe Chauncells covered, Wyndowes and Dorens ruyned, or spoyled: There are 52 other Parrishe Churches in the same Dioces, who have Viccars indued vpon them, better served and mayntained then the other, yet but badlye. There are 52 Parrishe Churches more, Residue of the first Number of 224, which pertain to dyvers perticuler Lordes, and these though in better Estate, then the rest commonlye are, yet farre from well. If this be the Estate of the Church, in the best peopled Dyoces, and best governed Countrie, of this your Realme (as in Troth it is): Easye it is for your Majestie to coniecture, in what Case the rest is, where little or no Reformation, either of Religion or Manners, hath yet bene planted, and contynued amonge theime; yea, so prophane and heathenish are some Partes of this your Countrie become, as it hath bene preached publikelye before me, that the Sacrament of Baptisme is not vsed amonge them, and trewlye I beleve it: If I should write vnto your Majestie, what Spoyle hath bene, and is of the Archbisshoppricks, whereof there are fower, and of Bisshoppricks, whereof there are above 30, partelye by the Prelatts them selves, partelye by the Potentates, their noysome Neighbors, I should make too longe a Lybell of this my Lettre; but your Majestie may beleve it, that vppon the Face of the Earthe, where Christ is professed, there is not a Church in so myserable a Case: The Miserye of whiche consisteth in thiese 3 Particulars,

the



the Ruine of the verie Temples them selves; the Want of good Ministers to serve in them, when they shalbe reedified; competent Lyvinge for the Ministers beinge well chosē. For the first, let it lyke your most gracious Majestie to write earnestlye to me, and to whome els, it may best please you, to examyne in whome the Fault is, that the Churches are so ruynous; if it be founde in the Countrie or Fermors, to compell them spedilye to goe about the Amendement of them; if the Fawlt, for the Churches of your Highnes Inheritance, be not in the Fermors, nor they bound to repaier them (and the most ruyned of them are soche as are of your Possession) it may lyke you, to graunt Warraunt that some Porcion may yerelye, of the Revenue of everie Parsonadge, be bestowed on the Church of the same.

For the *second* and *third*; which is that good Ministers mought be founde to occupie the Places, and they made able to lyve in them; in Choyce of which Ministers, for the remote Places, where the *English* Tounge is not vnderstood, it is most necessarie, that soche be chosen, as can speake *Irishe*, for whiche Search would be made first, and spedilye, in your owne Vniversities; and any found there well affected in Religion, and well conditioned beside, they would be sent hether animated by your Majestie; yea though it were somewhat to your Highnes Chardge; and on Perrill of my Liffe, you shall fynde it retorned with Gayne, before three Yeres be expired: If there be no soche there, or not inough (for I wish tene or twelve at the least) to be sent, who might be placed in Offices of Dignitie in the Church, in remote Places of this Realme then do I wishe, (but this most humblye vnder your Highnes Correction,) that you would write to the Regent of *Scotlande*, where, as I learne, there are maney of the Reformed Church, that are of this Language, that he would prefer to your Highnes so maney, as shall seme good to you to demaunde, of honest, zelous, and learned Men, and that could speake this Language; and though for a Whyle your Majestie were at some Chardge, it were well bestowed, for, in shorte Tyme, their owne Preferments would be able to suffice them; and in the meane Tyme, Thowsands would be gayned to Christ, that nowe are lost, or left at the woorst: And for the Ministerie of the Churches of the *English* Pale of your owne Inheritance, be contented, most vertuous Quene, that some convenient Porcion for a Minister may be allowed to hym, out of the Fermors Rents; it will not be moch Losse to you, in your Revenue, but Gayne otherwise inestimable, and yet the Decay of your Rent but for a While; for, the Yeares once expired of the Leases alreadye graunted, there is no Doubt, but that to be graunted to the Church wilbe recovered with Encrease.

I wishe, and most humblye beseeche your Majestie, that there may be three or fower, grave, learned, and venerable Parsonagies of the Clergye there, be sent hether, who in short Space, being here, would censiblye perceive the Inormities of this overthrowne Church, and easelye prescribe Orders, for the Repaier and Vpholdinge of the same, whiche I hope, God would confirme; and I fynde no Difficultie, but that your Officer here might execute the same; cawse the Bishoppes of that your Realme, to vndertake this Apostelshipp, and that vpon their owne Chardgies: They be ritche enoughe, and if either they be thankfull to your Majestie, for your immence Bountye donne to them, or zelous to increase the Christian Flocke, they will not refuse this honorable and religious Travell; and I will vndertake their Guydinge and Gardinge honorablye, and safelye from Place to Place: The great Desier that I have, to have soche from thence, is, for that I hope to fynde them, not onelye grave in Iudgement, but voyd of Affection.

I most humblye beseeche your Majestie to accept theise my rude Lettres, as Fygures of a zealous Mynde for Reformation of this your Church and Countrie; wherein me thinketh I woorke waywardlye, when the latter is preferred before the former. Whan I had thus come to an Ende of this my evill scribld Lettre, and beheld the illegiable Lynes, and ragged Lettres of myne owne staggering Hand, I was ashamed to suffer the same to be sent to your Majestie, but made my Man to write it out agayne; for whiche I most humblye



crave Pardon, as for the rest of this my tedious Petition. And thus, from the Bottome of my Harte, wishing to your Majestie the longe Contynuaunce of your most prosperous and godlye Reigne over vs, your most happie Subiectes; as a most faythfull and obedient Servaunt, I recommend myself, and Service, to your most excellent Majestie. From your Highnes Castell of *Dublin*, this xxviiiith of *Aprill*, 1576.

*Your Majesties faythfull, humble, and*

*obediaunt Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*The Dutcheſs of Feria, in Spain, to her Vncle, Sir Henry Sydney.*

**T**H E Bearer hereof, the Bishoppe of *Emly*, passinge by this Court, hath diuers Tymes visited me, and, nowe desirous to repaire Home to his Countrey, hath required my Commendation to you for him; that ye will, the rather for my Sake, in his needefull Occasions there, fauor and defende him; which I do the more willinglie, because I take him to be very quiett, and alwaies speke the great Honor of you, of your Bountie, Pietie, and Clemencie. Wherefore I shalbe right gladde, that you do finde him the same, and that he vnderstande his Doinge hereof, to be as gratefull to you, as it hath ben to me; beseking you that ye will take him for so recommended; and to vouchesafe him your lawfull and fauorable Protection. Our Lorde alwaies preferue you. From *Madrid*, the xiiij of *June*, 1576.

*Your louynge Nes,*

*during Lyfe,*

The Duches of *Feria*.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell in England.*

*Right honorable, and my verie good Lords,*

**S**I N C E my last Discourſſe of *Connaught*, written the xxviiiith of *Aprill* last, and sent by my Servaunt, *Henrye Catelyn*, I have, greatlye to my Discontentment, remayned in this Cittie, chiefelye expectinge the Arryvall of the newe elected Chauncelor of this Realme, and the President for *Mounster*; of the first I have harde somewhat, that he will be at the Watersyde shortlye; of the other nothinge, before this Day that he is presentlye arryved. I hoped also to have received, by this Tyme, either Resolution from her Majestie, or comfortable Advise from your Lordships, concerninge the Repaier of the spoyle-d Church of this Lande, and the Governement of *Connaught*, beseeching your Lordships, that, for the latter, you will have some Regarde to myne Advise, so longe at it shall please her Majestie to imploy me in the Governement of this Countrie: I looked lykewise for Mr. *Waterhouse*, who, by Reason of some extreme Sicknes, hath staied over longe at *Chester*, and nowe, this Day likewise, arryved, with a Reckninge of my Quarterage dewe the First of *Aprill* last. I cannot but complayne, and lament to your Lordships, the great Losse of Tyme here growen, both thorough this longe Staye of the Threasure, and other Delays there. For if the Chauncellor and President, before named, had bene here by the Middst of *Aprill* last, as I desired, and was promised they should have bene, I could have placed the Chauncellor in his Courte, and the *Englishe* Pale; travelled thorough *East Leinster*, the Counties of *Kilkennie* and *Typperarie* (in some Partes of which there hath bene, and is great Disorder) have settled the President in the Presence of all the Nobles of his Province, and a Multitude of others in the principall Cittie of his Iurisdiction, and my selfe, by this Tyme, have bene at, or verie nere *Caricksfergus*: The Delay of whiche hath alreadye



alreadye bred this ; that in *Mounster* some of the Potentates are fallen to their olde extorcious Abuses, contrarie to their Othe and Covenant. In *Ulster*, *Con Mac Neill Oge* is combined with the *Scotts*, his auntient Ennimies. Thus your Lordships may see, how sone the Sowtherne lyke the Dogge, the Northern lyke the Hogge, mentioned in the most Holye Booke, are readye to revolte to their innate and corrupt Vyletie ; yet have I held as good Handes over them as I coulde, being restrayned in Boddye from the one, and not furnished with a sufficient Hedd for the other ; so, as vntill now, I remayned vnresolved, by whether Pointe of the Compas I had to wende first. My Lordes, I feare to offend you with maney Woords, but thees as I doe, Zeale enforceth me to write : I am comme hether to woorke, or, at least, to see Woorke donne, and not to be idle ; but I could not have from thence soche Artificers and Stuffe, before now, for the necessarie Furnishinge of the Woorke, as this Lande breedeth not : But now that some Treasure, and the President are comme, I will lose no more Tyme, but on with Spede in my Iorney, for the Setlinge of the President in his Province ; and I trust you will holde me, and my poore Laborers vnder me, for the meane Tyme, excused ; though wee, to oure little Gayne, the Quenes lesse Proffitt, and the Countries lest Good of all, spende oure Wagies. I fynde, in my Concept, moche more to write of this Tenor, but, fearinge that I have contynued the same to longe, will ceasse therein ; most humblye beseechinge your Lordships, withe all Spede to expedite that, which I have alreadye written for ; speciallye Magistrates, and Money to be sent by this Bringer, *James Prescottt* ; it is due to me the last of this Monethe : And I pray your Lordships, give streight Commaundement, that it come intirelye to me ; if this be not donne, that Money be forthwith sent, I shall not be able to hold my Course to the North, but, at my Retorne backe, remayne still at *Dublin*, a Place of more Delectacion, then any other in this Realme, and where I finde Health and Happines ennough for *Irelande* to yeelde me ; and yet I loth it, for that I knowe I do not the Quene that Service, that, by beinge in other Partes of the Realme, I might doe.

And yet, my Lords, least you should thinke that I have bene altogether idle, since myne Arryvall in this Cittie, it may please you to vnderstande, in Parte, what I have donne : There came vnto me thether, shortly after *Easter*, *Owrycke*, *O Donnell*, *Con Odonnell*, his Nephewe and Enemye, *Ochonnor Sligagh*, of the principall of the *Okellies* ; and all theise for Matter of great Consequence, to be ordered betwene the State and theim, and lykewise betwixt one an other of theim selves. And first for *Owrycke*, I found hym the proudest Man that ever I dealt with in *Irelande*, and vsinge hym thereafter, told hym, that, as he was the Quenes Subiecte, and ought to holde his Lande of her, so he should behave hym selfe in Obedience as a Subiecte, and for his Lande yeeld both Rent and Service, or els I wold place an other in the same : He saied he wold be a good Subiecte, as alwayes his Auncestors had bene, and spake verie moch Good of theim and hym selfe, and wold pay soch Rent and Service for his Countrie, as was agreed vpon betwene the Governor and his Father, and alleadged, that he had a Patent at his Howse for his Lande ; I answered hym (as in dede it was true) that I was ignoraunt thereof, but, vpon Searche, I founde the same entred in the eldest Councell Booke that ever was made here, in the xxxijth Yere of Kinge *Henrie the Eight* ; Sir *Anthonye Sentleger* beinge then Deputie ; by which he bounde hym selfe to pay to the Kinge xx l. *Irish* Yerelye, with the Service of some Horssmen and Footemen, as by the same apearethe ; of which nether his Father, nor he, ever paied any Thing, and that he confessed, offeringe to compound for the Arreragies, and to contynue that Rent and Service ; whiche I made Light of, and lighter of the former Composition, and wold not agree vnder three hundered Markes *Sterlinge* Yerelye. Besides Service, and Findinge of Men of Warre, he offered sixeskore Poundes *Sterlinge* ; all which I refused, lest, he beinge so great a Man, as he is reputed to be, an overlight Composition with hym might be a President of great Hindraunce to the Quene, in compoundinge with others, aswell in *Connaught* as *Ulster*. Finallye, he humblye desired



desiered that there might be sent into his Countrey, discrete and indifferent Commissioners, to viewe his Countrey, and to certifie trewlye the Wast and Barrannes thereof, and therevpon to take Order, and not before: Herevpon we agreed, and that to be donne in *August* next, savinge that he requyred to have certeine pettie Lordes, dwellinge vnder or niere hym (of Duetie his Tributaries sayeth he, vniustlye oppressed by hym say they) to yeeld hym his accustomed Exactions, namelye, the twoe *Mac Granells*, *Omolindye*, *Mac Glaugh*, *Kenelohan*, *Collofluyn*, *Mac Cabelrewe*, *Obirne*, *Mac Ternan*, and *Mac Amarrowe*. But I would not graunte them hym, and yet he departed satisfied, and since hath both wrytten and sent to me, verye humblye, that I shall finde hym more obedient in his owne Countrey, then I did in this Cittie; and thus moche for *Owricke*.

I founde *Odonnell* verie humble and tractable, desierous to be accompted in the Number of her Highnes good Subiects; I put hym in Remembraunce of the Composition taken betwene his Brother and me, when I, thorough the Quenes Force, restored his Brother to his Countrey, beinge banished by *Shane O'Neill*; at what Tyme, he agreed for ever to bynde his Countrey to yelde to the Crowne of *Englande* ij C Markes *Sterlinge*, or ij C Bieues, besides Findinge of Men of Warre, both Horssmen and Footemen. He would fayne have forgotten it, saiege it was never asked of hym since; but I helped his Memorie, and proved that he him selfe consented to it; and as a Wittnes, and seconde Person of the Countrey, affirmed the Instrument; at last he yeelded, desieringe reasonable Dayes, for Payment of the Arreragies, and indented, by Writinge and Othe, to yeelde accordinge to the former Agreement. And whereas he, and his Auncestors, have had a Rent of ij C Markes Yerelye out of *Ochonnor Sligaghs* Countrey, fabulouslye chalenged to have bene paied, ever since *St. Patricks* Dayes, but probablye averred on both Sides, it hath bene taken for theise fower or fyve Discents by the *Odonnells* (but never without Vyolence alledged *Ochonnor*) and so I thinke *Odonnell* agreed, in the Ende, to stay Exactinge of it, vntill I had sent Commissioners to examyne his Clayme, and the others Deniall; and, vpon their Certificatt, I to take Order, and this to be donne in *August* next; which Order, I hope, will fall out to be soche, as the Quenes Majestie shalbe entituled to the Rent and Service from them bothe. *Ochonnor* compounded in *Englande* to geve an hundered Markes Yerelye, to be dischardged of *Odonnell*, and so hath his Countrey graunted hym, vnder the Great Seale of *England*; but, if I can clenlye dischardge hym from *Odonnell*, he shall pay better. He desiered me to constitute a Sheriffe in his Countrey, wisshinge rather a Forriner, then any of the Soyles Brede, which I graunted, and sent one with Commission. I have great Confidence, that this *Ochonnor*, who is the same that I brought into *England*, will prove a goode Subiecte. Betwene *O Donnell* and *Con*, thus I agreed; that *Con* should have a Castle, called the *Leiffer*, withe the Territorie to the same belonginge, whiche he, by his Force and Sleight, surprised from *Odonnell*, since his Escape, and soche other Landes, as the principall Gentlemen of that Countrey will allott hym, and to be declared Heire apparant to the Countrey, and presentlye to enioye all Commodities incydent to the seconde Person of the same: And thus as they came hether mortall Enimies, in all Apparaunce, and good Semblaunce, they departed hence goode Freindes; and yet their Freindshippe not soche, and so entire, but that as I could, so yet I can, receive woorth a thousand Poundes of eiether of them soever I will permitt to suppress the other; but that I deemed neither allowable in Conscience, nor profitable for Quene nor Countrey. Thus moch for the *Odonnells* and *Ochonnor*.

The *Okellies*, and I are agreed, and Articles of the same drawne betwene vs, to be perfected at *Michelmas* Terme next; from which Terme, for ever, they shall pay for their Countrey, in Rent and Service, better then fyve hundered Markes Yerelye. Duringe my Contynuaunce here, there have come vnto me the Lord *Fytzmorris* of *Kerrye*, *Mac Cartye Reough* of *Carberie*, *Mac Nemarrough* of *Thomound*, and a Number of others from the most remote Partes of this Realme; and



and all to seeke Justice. It is to be reioyced at that they so doe, but to moche to be lamented, that they have it not nerer to theim. The *Englishe* Pale, I dare affirme, was never, in Memorie of Man, in better Estate, savinge for Dearth of Victuall, which indede, at this Present, is verye extreme. The Rebels and Outlawes never in greater Feare, of which Kinde of People, what by Commission, ordenarie and extraordenarie, and by Slaughter, in Defence of the poore Husbandmen, since my Arryvall, there hath died above fowre hundred Men.

I most humblye beseeche your Lordships, geve once a Readinge and Hearing to my Lettres ; it may be, that maney Woordes in theim may seme superfluous to your Honnors ; but it cannot be, but that some in theim are more materiall, then, as it seameth to me, your Lordships esteeme them. In *November* last I writt to your Lordships of *Ulster*, and, in the same, wished the Revocation of the Graunts made to *Chatterton* and *Malbye*. I was promised it should be donne, but nothinge is donne, and it is the Midst of *June* ; I am to goe thether this Sommer. The *Chattertons* are there, and there they wraastle and woorke, and goe to the Woorffe ; trewlye they are to be pittied, for they be tall and honest Gentlemen, and have lost, in that Enterprise, all that ever they have, and all that any Boddye els would trust them withe, and their Bloude and Lymys too. I knowe their Contynuaunce there wilbe an Obstacle to any Proceadinge for the Quenes Proffitt. In that my Discourffe of *Ulster*, I made speciall Request to your Lordships for *T. Oneill* to be created Earle of *Clanoneill*, and his Sonne to be Baron of . . . And lykewise I recommended to your honorable Lordships Sir *Hugh Mac Gennesse*, to be created Baron of *Evaugh* ; which Requests, (as I tooke it) your Lordships allowed of (as I gather) by your Lettres of the xxiiijth of *Januarii* last ; wherevpon I put them in Comforte of your Lordships honorable Intencions towards them for their Advancements. And for as moche as they are daylie in Expectancie to receive theise Titles and Tokens of Honnor from her Majestie (as I have entertained them by Promisse, that they shall do) I beseeche your Lordships to be Mediators to her Majestie, that Warraunt may be sent by me, either by Lettres Patents, or privat Lettre, signed by her Majestie, of Authoritie and Power to create them. And withall, that it wold please her Majestie, of her further Grace and princelye Bountye, to bestowe the Robes, Investiture, and Ornaments of Honnor vpon them ; which, I may assure your Lordships, they will accept more humblye and thankefullie, then if her Highnes shoulde endowe them with large Possessions and Terretories : The Matter is not great, yet of so great Consequence to them, as they thinke they have received nothinge without that.

In an other I writt to have Assistaunce in Counsell of some from thence, and that but for a Whyle, and to have Personagies sent, apt to supplie the Places of bothe the Justices, and the Attorney Generall ; which if I have, I doubt not, but to bringe the fyve Shires of the *Englishe* Pale, to geve to the Crowne of *Englande*, for ever, 2000 *l. Sterlinge* a Yere, to be disbourdened of the Souldi-ors ; I hold me within my Boundes, and althoughe absolutelye I assure it not, yet, vpon probable Arguments, and with great Confidence, I coniecture it, and I am assured, the Wisest in this Lande are of myne Opinion. That donne, there is no Doubt, but that the other Counties, and remote Provinces, will beare a sufficient Garrison, to suppress the Insolencye of the Natives of the Soyle, and the Revenue will beare all Cyvill Chardges ; and thus may *Irelande*, that longe hath bene bourdenous to *Engeland*, become beneficiall. In the same, or in an other, I writte for a President for *Connaught*, which Place, if my Lord of *Essex* will not take, then do I beseeche you, that my first Choyce may holde, which is for Sir *Edwarde Mountagewe* : And suerelye, my Lords, whosoever hath not, of hym selffe, the Countenaunce and Creditt of a good Knight in *Englande*, is not fitt for that Place here ; and, since I am in Speache of *Connaught*, I will move your Lordships of a Matter I verye latelye knewe ; which is, that the Quene hath latelye geven the Keping of the Howse of *Atblone*, with the Appurtenaunces,



to Sir *Edwarde Fitton*, duringe her Majesties Pleasure : Trewelye I take no Exception to the Gentleman, for wee are good Freindes, but yet I thought soch a Thing as that should not have passed, without my Privetie ; but, vpon your Resolution for *Connaught*, reuoked it must be, for, if a President be sent, he, of Necessitie, must have it ; if not, but that I must rule *Connaught*, as nowe I doe by a iorneyinge Justice and a Marshall, then I must, for the most Parte, be there my selfe ; so, everye Way, that Patent must be called in, which, I beseeche your Lordships, may be foorthwith. I feare I have wried your Lordships ; for, if you be halfe as werye with Readinge of this, as I was with Writinge the Coppie, you will thinke your selves tyred enough for one Day. Thus, prayenge the Almightye to blesse you all with longe Happines in this Woorld, and eternallye after, I take my Leave, this xvjth of *June*, 1576. From the Castle of *Dublin*.

Your honorable Lordships assured

lovinge Freinde to commaunde,

H. Sydney:

Thomas, *Earl of Ormond*, to Sir Henry Sidney.

My veray good Lord,

I Am ashamed to bear the Iniuries often offered to me by the Baron of *Vpperofforye*. This last Day, his Servants spoyled my Tenants Dwelling in *Gawle*, of 300 Kyne and Garrans, at least. He never made me pryvye to his Demaund (if anye) he pretended : And, if anye of those he spoyled be by him charged for anye Thing, I will vndertake they shalbe forthcomming to answer him. My Lord, I pray you lett not this, my kinde Cosynn, vse to spoyle me at his Wyll ; you know well inough, I cowld (if I thoght you wold not mislyke of hit) make him repent his Quarreling with me. Truely, if my Lord of *Vpperofforye* did not presume to moche vpon your Fauor, he wold not deale in this Sort with me. I pray you, my Lord, if you do favor me anye Thing, let the World se that you mislyk of him for these Parts, and wryte your Commaundment to him for Restitucion of my Tenants Goods presentlye. So committing your Lordship to God, I leave. At *Kilkenye*, the 21 of *Iunij*, 1576.

Your Lordships Brother to commaund,

Thomas Ormonde Offory.

Thomas, *Earl of Ormond*, to Sir Henry Sydney.

My veray good Lord,

I Receavid two Lettres from your Lordship ; thone by Mr. *Davels*, wherein you requirid me to mete you at *Waterford* the xth of the next Moneth, where I will, God willing, waite on you : Thother, towching a Pray, supposid by my Lord of *Vpperofforye*, to have ben taken by *Foulk Grace* from the *Kings Country*, and certaine Gerrans taken by *James Oig*, from my Lord. In your Lordships Letter, dated the 24 of *June*, sent by Mr. *Sherlock*, you aplye the Words of my Letter sent by Mr. *Sherlock*, in wors Sort then I ether wrote, or ment them, as may apear by hit self : For I nether wrote you did animate my Lord of *Vpperofforye*, nor that you delt one Way in Aparance, and another Way in Secret and Vnderhand betuene vs, as your Lordships Letter porporteth. But my Words wear these, as I remember, That, if he did not presume to moche vpon your Fauor, he wold not haue delt with me as he did. In Wryting this moche vpon Greffe of so great an Iniurye don me (I hope) I have nether forgotten my Duety to your Place, nor in Frendship and good Wyll to your



your self, overshott me so far, as your Lordship seemed to take hit, but performed with Playnes, that which your self wylled me to vse to you vpon any Occasions offered vnto me; as, vpon this Iniury my Lord of *Vpperossory* hathe don, I wrote. If this my Playnes mislyke your Lordship, pardon hit, I pray you, for I vse hit to those I best loue, and in good Wyll to your self, not inferyor to your Brother *Barnabe*, thogh he cann vse sweter Words. My Lord, if, vpon the Going to *Dubling* of my Cosyn *Florence*, you wrote for anye Man of myne, that I did not fend, I am deseaved; and, if I awnswered not your Letters, I woll acknowledg my self worthy Blame. He of whome he toke the Pray shalbe, as I wrote, forth comminge, if pleas you, now at *Waterford*; so shall any other, being my Servants. I had a Man slayn Yeaster Night in the Abay of *Lex*, a tall Gentleman; by whome, as yeat, I cannot fartenly enform your Lordship, but bad Neighborhod I finde; whiche, by your Meanes, I hope, shalbe amended. Sir *Iohn* of *Desmond* hathe taken, of late, a Castle, called the *Grenane*, in *Conaght*, Parcell of my Feefarm, holden of her Maiestye; I besech your Lordship, command him to deliuer hit to me, or to wayt on you at *Waterford*, to shew why he kepeth hit. I am, by these sondry Occasions, dryven moch to troble your Lordship, which I am sory for.

I will troble your good Lordship no longer with these Causes, till I waite on you my self, and so to Gods Guiding I comitt you. From *Kilkeny*, the xxviiijth of *June*, 1576.

Your Lordships assured Brother to command,

Thomas Ormonde Ossory.

Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Counsell in England.

Right honorable, and my verie good Lords,

I Havinge to longe as me thought, and lothesomelye as I felt, remayned in *Dublin* expectinge the Comminge of the Lord Chauncellor for this Realme; and Lord President for *Mounster*: Vpon the Arryvall of the Lord Chauncellor, which was the xxiiith of *June* last, I, together with Sir *William Druerye*, departed from *Dublin*, the xxvith of the same, and havinge apointed my Iorney, and intendinge to have passed thorough *East Leinster*, and the Countye of *Weixfoorde*, to the Cittie of *Waterffoorde*, where I purposed to have settled hym President for that Province, and had for that Purpose sommoned all the Nobilitie and Potentates, of the same, to mete me there. Beinge a Dayes Iorney in my Way thetherwardes, and my Cariage and Provision, more then one other Dayes Travell before me; I was overtaken with Lettres, fraught full of Feare, sent from the Bishop of *Meitbe*, whome I had left in the Confynes of *Meitbe*, and *Connaught*, for Orderinge of Matters that might arryse, betwene Partye and Partye; lykewise from the Mayor and other perticuler Men of *Galway*, well affected to the State, and from dyvers other the Quenes good Subiectes, as well of that Countries, as of the Birthe of this, all cryenge oute, with tremblinge Tearmes, and lamentable Reportes, that the Earl of *Clanrickards* Sonns, not without manifest Consent of their Father, and probablye by Councell of hym, were in the Night stolen over the Ryver of *Sbenon*, and there cast away their *Englishe* Habitt, and Apparrel, and put on their wonted *Irish* Weede; sent to all their Freindes to come to them with their Forces, solicited *Scottes*, and other lose mercynarie People to serve them; had bene at *Athenrye*, and there sacked those fewe poore Howsies, whiche were buylded, since their late Burning of the Towne; sett the newe Gates of the same on Fier (which I cawsed to be buylt, for the better Force and Strength of the Towne, for the Defence of the Inhabitaunts from Iniurye of the Ennimie, or soddeine Oppression) beat away the Masons, and other Laborers (which were woorkinge on the Wall, apointed by me to be made in *Aprill* last, and nowe in good Forwardnes) and sought for



for the Stones, wherevpon the Armes were cut, to have broken them; swearing, that none soche should stande in any Wall there; and beinge certified further, that daylye they multiplied in Number and Force, in soch Sorte, as if they were not spedilye resisted (which would not be donne, without myne owne Presence) not onelye all the honest and best Sorte of that Province should be spoyled; but that the Rebells might, and would do what Mischeiffe they listed els where, and the Towne of *Galway* feared Surprisall by Scale, or Famyn by Assiedge. Theise Advertisements I received on *Tuesday* in the Afternoone, and presentlye I resolved to alter my former intended Iorney, and to addresse me hetherwarde, and so came to *Dublin* the same Night; soche Expedition I vsed, beinge accompanied with my Lord of *Lowthe*, the President of *Mounster*, Sir *Lucas Dillon*, and the Master of the Ordinaunce, that on *Friday* longe before None I arryved here; and in Trothe, my Lords, founde all theise Reportes trewe, and sent Mr. *Agarde* immediatlye into *East Leinster*, to prevent the Vnquietnes that thorough theise Occasions might happen there, who so substaunciallye, spedilye, and soundlye dealt therein; as he not onely left Quietnes there, but brought away *Feaugh Mac Hugh Mac Shane*, the onelye Man to be doubted to make any Trouble or Commotion within his Rule, duringe his Absence, and within fyve Dayes after, he him selfe came vnto me hether, the vth of this Present. I gave Order that my Forces, aswell of the Armye, as of the Countrie, should spedilye followe me, which they most willinglye and forwardlye did; and the Brute was no soner blowen Abroade of my beinge here (which, in Dede, neither the Rebells dowed, nor the honest Subjects looked for, with soch Expedition) but the trayterous Boyes, with their loose Rascall and Kerne, and verye fewe other of any Accompte that remayned with them, came away to the Mointeines: The principall Gentlemen of their Fathers Countrie left them, and either came or sent to me, offeringe me Loyaltie and Service; all their Freindes els, and soche as they most presumed vpon, fayled them, and offered me lykewise their Service with Fidelitie: Their Father writt to me, faintlye excusinge hym selfe for their Escape, confessinge, that he was in Companye with them, one whole Night, before they passed over the *Shenon*, in *Mac Coughlans* Howse, and after in the Howse of *Vllicke*, his eldest Sonne, one of the twoe Rebells; protestinge that he was innocent in the Matter, and not, of Knowledge or Consent, of their Rebellion; and desired to speake with me, so as he might have Protection, for safe and free Comminge to me, Remayninge with me, and Departinge from me; which seemed to me an Argument, and some Manifestacion in it selfe, of a guyltie Conscience, and that he doubted his owne Cawse. Nevertheles, Protection I sent hym in the Ende, but with this Condicion, that before he should receive it, he should delyver the Possession of his Castell of *Ballylough Reough*, to the Commissioners, to be garded, or otherwise vsed, as I should lyke best; and if he would not so dooe, absolutelye without Condicion, that then they should proclayme both hym and his Sonnes Rebelles, besige the Castell, and seaze his Goodes, and spedilye advertise me of their Proceadinge; for by reason my great Artillerye was in some Disorder, I could not be there so sone, as otherwise I would have bene; for I knewe the Place to be stronge of it selfe, well furnished with Victuall, and Munition, and thoroughlye manned. The Commissioners, I sent to receive the Place, were the Lorde of *Lowthe*, *Thomas le Straunge*, *Henrye Harrington*, and Capten *Collier*, with 150 Horsses, and 300 Footemen; but it seemed the Earle was daunted before their Comminge, for immediatlye, vpon the first Conference with hym, and Disclosinge of their Commission, he delyvered his Howse to them whole and entire as it was, without removinge of Munition, Vittayll, or other Goodes, or Moveables, that he had remayninge there, and so received at their Handes the Protection I sent him; and they, levinge Capten *Collier* withe a Warde in the Castell, brought hym and the rest of the Bandes and Companies to me, to this Castell of *Athlone*: And, for that I would make short Woorke, I admitted him immediatlye to comme to me, where verie humblye vpon his Knees, he besought Pardon and Grace, for hym selfe, and his twoe Sonnes; I vsed hym bitterlye



bitterlye enough, and so I thought it best. And demaunding of hym, what was the Cawse, he, and his Sonnes, made this vnnaturall Stirre and Commotion; he answered by Protestacion and Othe, that he knewe no other Cawse, but that they alleadged soche a heauie Bourden was laied vpon them, for a Contribucion, towards the Reedifieng of the Towne of *Athenrye*, as they, and their Followers, were not hable to pay; which by Order was passed from her Majesty and your Lordships thence, and brought to me, by the Agents of that poore desolate Towne, with expresse Commaundement to me, that that Order shoulde be put in Execucion; and yet nothinge thereof was levied vpon the Countrie, and soche Taxacion as was made to have bene levied, was allowed by their owne Consents; and in Somme, when I received no other Answere from hym, this was my Conclusion, that I had not to thinke of hym, but as of a guyltie Man, so demed by his Doinge and Writinge, before, and now, confirmed by his cravinge Protection; and more then the Benifitt thereof, Parte whereof he had alreadye received, in beinge brought safe to me, and the rest I would performe, for his lyke Tarienge with me, and Departinge from me, so the same were within three Dayes, and more then that I would not promyse hym. He departed from me penyve, and hevyelye perplexed, not knowinge what Resolucion to make with hym selfe, and so remayned doubtfull, a Day or twoe, till Yesterday being *Sondaye*, and the viijth of this *Julye*, after Service donne, in the Parrishe Church of this Towne, he came thether vnto me, and there before sondrie noble Men of this Countrie Birth, fixe of the Counsell, and a Multitude beside; he, in most lowlye Manner vppon his Knees, thanked me, that I in Safetye had suffered hym to come to me, and openlye in that Assemblie, with verye good Woordes, and lowlye and reverend Speeches, renounced his Protection, and besought Mercye, and Grace, as may appeare by the Coppie of his Submission, which herewith I sende your Lordships.

And now, my Lords, I dare affirme, I have recovered as good a Pledge as I lost; for, in steede of twoe beggerlye bastard Boyes, I have their Father, an Earle, and all his Castells, yea, Men, and Followers of any Accompte, and all this in lesse then one Weeks Woorke. The Castell of *Ballyloughbreough*, that I have taken from the Earle, is distant hence xxiiij<sup>th</sup> Myles, and from *Galway* xiiij<sup>th</sup>, and almost the reddy and high Passage, and Bridge, betwixt bothe. It standeth in the Strength and Harte of *Clanrickarde*, and is soch a Place, as may kepe all the Countrie round about in Feare and Subiection: It is distant from the lamentable ruined Town of *Athenrye*, onelye seaven Myles, and the same standeth in the Midway betwixt *Galway* and it; and it seamethe, that that kindled their Spite the more, to have any soche Towne where Obedience and Civilitie is professed so niere them. My Lords, I am perswaded, if the Quene will but take that which Lawe will geve her, and that which in Pollicye, Conscience, and Honnor, she may do, she shall, by this Accydent, make her Majestie a greater Maistres in *Connaught*, and so consequentlie in all *Ireland*, then ever any of her Predicessors for theise 300 Yeares were: Marye, howe in particuler, I spare, for a Whyle, to signifie my Opinion, vntill I see further of theise misbegotten Brattes, whome I hope, ere it be longe, to have either quicke in Prison, dead in the Field, or banished the whole Lande. But, when I have donne, if your Lordships be so slowe in sendinge one to recyde in Governement in this Province, as you have bene, bothe for *Mounster*, and this hetherto; or not sende one so quallified, as in my former Lettre I writt, I shall but trindle *Sisyphus* Stone, and bringe it to the Brymme of the Bancke, and then forced to torne both Head and Hande, and so, haplye, breake either Backe or Necke; but that is the least Matter. In the meane Tyme, the Quene shall loose both Honnor and Treasure, and her People lacke both Distribucion of Justice amonge them, Suretye of their Lyves, and Savinge of their Goodes. Good my Lords, lett me here from you, or procure me Leave to come over to you. I knowe my Delyverie by Penne is tedious, it may please you therefore to heare me: This is the fowrth of whiche I have yet received no Answere; the first by *Gifford*, the second by *Catlyn*, the third by *Prescott*, and



this fowrth by *John Cockram*. In this my Expedition into *Connaught*, I finde howe necessarie it is, that this Castell be the simple Possession of the Governor of this Countrie, and therefore humbly beseeche your Lordships, that, accordinge to my former Lettres, the Graunt made to Mr. *Fitton* may be revoked; it is but *Durante beneplacito*: And, if it seme not so good to you, I pray you so advertise me, and looke for lesse good Service at my Hande in this Province.

Though, by this Accydent, I was forced to alter my Courſe, from the East, to goe by the West into the Sowthe, yet, God willinge, I wilbe there, and intend to be at *Galway* the xiiijth of this Present, and at *Lymericke* before the xxiiijth, and yet, at *Carickfergus*, in the Northe, before *Michelmas*. I trust, my Man *Prescot*, before this Tyme, hath received his Money, due for me, the Last of the last Monethe: If I have it not by the Last of this Monethe, I have no Foote to move towarde the Northe this Yeare. I have no more, but Almighty God sende your Lordships as pleasaunt a Progresse from the Beginninge to the Ende, as I have had a painefull hetherto; a happy Progreſſion in all your Proceedings, and Heavens Comforte and Blisse at the Ende. In Hast, from the Quenes Castell of *Athlone*, this ixth of July, 1576.

Your Lordships humble and assured

to commaunde,

H. Sydney.

The Copie off the Earle of *Clanrickards* Submission, as followeth:

WHere vpon this your Honnors Expedition into theise Partes of *Connaught*, to suppress the Rebellion, and trayterous Attempts of *Yllicke* and *Iohn Bourke*, the most ingrate and wicked Sonnes of me, *Richard*, Earle of *Clanrickard*; I was so far forth perplexed for myne owne Misfortune, and daungerous Estate, that I durst not repaier vnto your Lordships Presence, without your Honors Graunt of Protection to comme safe, remayne with you safe, and to departe at my Will and Pleasure. And nowe that I am safelye commen vnto your Honnors Presence, callinge to Remembrance her Majesties manifolde most gracious Mercyes, whereof I, of all others, have most often and bountifullie tasted: Here, I do most freelye and voluntarielye renounce, and geve over, the full whole Benifitt and Priveledge of the saied Protection; and, in Testimonie thereof, I do here simplye submitt my selfe vnto your Honor, to be ordered by your Lordship in all my Cawſies, and Accions, as if I had never made Petition, nor your Lordship graunted vnto me the saied Protection. And I humblye beseeche your Lordship, and all other that be here present, to testifie with me, that this is my plaine Meaninge and Entent; which I take God to wittnes, I doo francklye and frelye, in respecte of my bounden Duetie. In Wittnes whereof, I have hereunto, in your Presence, subscribed my Name, the eight Day of *Julye*, 1576, and in the eighteneth Yere of the Reigne of oure most dread Sovereigne Ladie, Quene *Elizabeth*, Quene of *England*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland*, Defendor of the Fayth, &c.

Present at this Submission

R. *Clanrickard*.

theise followinge:

P. *Lowthe*,

W. *Drewrie*

Ed. *Fitton*, *Lucas Dillon*,

Fraunces *Agarde*,

Jo. *Garvey*.

Sir



*Sir Francis Walsyngham, Secretary of State, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

**B**Y your Letters of the 20th of *June*, I fynde your Lordship doth make very good Acceptatyon of my fundrye Letters, wrytten unto you : For the which, I have just Cause to thanke you, for that the most Part of them were in Recommendatyon of my Frendes, and whom yt pleased her Majesty to imploye ther in her Servyce under your Lordship. From whom I have receyved so good Testimonye of your most honorable and frendely Dealyng towards them, as I have Cause to thinke my self greatly bounde unto you therfor. Bothe Sir *W. Dreurye*, and Mr. *Waterhouse*, have, by ther fundrye Letters, desyered me to thanke your Lordship for the same. I hope you shall fynde them so good Instruments under you, for the Advancement of her Majestys Service, as neyther of you shall have Cause to fore thinke any Favor you bestowe on them, nor I, in that I have been a Furtherer towards ther Immployment. I perceyve, by your Lordships Letters, the good Disposytyon you have to use the Earle of *Essex* well, whoe, I doe assure my selfe, wyll recompence the same, by well Deservyng any Kyndnes and Favour he shall receyve at your Handes. Before his Departure hence, I dyd laye before him the Inconvenience that would ensue, as well for the publycke Servyce, as his owne pryvat, in Case ther shoold not be good Agreement betwen you : Whoe protested unto me, that, thowghe he hopethe to receyve at your Handes all kynde Dealyng, yet, in Case you shoold mynister unto him very hard Measure, he would swallowe up any Injurye, rather then breake out into any Disagreement : So that I hope, consydering bothe your resolute Determynatjons, to contynewe good Friendship betwene you : Neyther *Inglyshe* nor *Iryshe* Mallice, or Practyce, shall separat you. For other Matters that concernethe the Governement of that Realme, so amply have my Lords wrytten unto you, in Awntswear of the fundrye Poynts, conteyned in dyvers of your Letters, as I shall not neade to saye any Thinge. Glad I am, to see your Lordship write so confydently, towching the Hope you have to dysburden shortly, this Crowne, of the intollerable Charges that that Realme puttethe yt unto. I feare that thes newe upsprunge Trobles in *Connaugh* will greatly impeache your former Desygnes : And yet ther may ensue great Good therof : For hardely can good Herbage prosper, emongest evyll and unprofytable Weedes : For yf the Grownde of the Conspiracye may be by you decyphered, and the Authors therof (of what Qualyte soever they be) receyve ther dewe Deserte ; ytt is the only, and reddye Waye, to reforme *Irelande*. Your great Dyligence used in repeyring towards *Connaughe*, immediatly upon the Newse of the Erls Sunnes Revolte, is verry well allowed of. We are in great Exspectation of the Yssue of thes Trobles, and have some Cause to doubt they are muche greater, then hetherto they appeare ; for we heare, that one *Angwys*, and Mr. *Connell*, of the *Scottishe* Isles, hath in a Readynes nyne Score Gallyes, for the Transportyng of Men, as we take yt, for *Ireland* ; thowghe the Erle of *Darbye*, whoe dyd fyrst geve Notyce of the sayd Preparatyon, fearethe somewhat to be attempted, in his lyttle Kyngedom of *Man*.

As Tyme shall serve, I wyll neyther be unmyndefull of the Archebysshop of *Dublin*, nor of the other two Bysshops, *Roscarburye* and *Ardaghe*, whom your Lordship dothe recommede unto me.

Here, at Home, we lyve in Securytye, as we weare wonte, growndyng owre Quyetnes uppon others Harmes. And soe having presently more good Wyll, then Leyfure to wryte, I ende ; beseching God to blesse your Lordships



ships Government, with moſte happye and proſperouſe Succeſſe. At St. James, the 17th of Julye, 1576.

*Your Lordſhips to*

*commaunde,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Edward Waterhouse, Eſq;*

*My good Mr. Ned,*

I Have yeelded unto my Lord Deputye my moſt hartye Thankes, for his well Uſyng of you, for that I knowe you wyll well deſerve. I am ſorrye for the newe Trobles lately broken out in that Contrye: I have great Cauſe to ſuſpect that yt receyveth ſome Nouryſhement from hence. And, by Proſſe, you ſhall fynde this Conſpyracye generall thorowghe owt *Irelande*. Yet, the Matter being well looked to in the Begininge, which I percevye is the Deputyes Determinatyon, ther may followe great Good therof.

Yf I had a Cypher, I would wryte ſome Thing unto you, that I dare not commyt to Letter. I praye you, therfor, ſend me one. And ſo God keepe you. At St. James, the 17 Julye, A. 1576.

*Your aſſured Friend,*

Superſcribed,

Fra. Walsyngham.

To his lovinge Friend, Mr. *Edward Waterhouſe*.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham, Secretary of State, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

AFTER my hartie Commendacions to your Lordſhip, whereas, by a Lettre of yours, written about *Eaſter* laſt, you ſignified vnto me, that the Beſtowinge of th'Office of the Clerkſhip of the Fynes in the Marches of *Wales*, was in your Diſpoſicion, by Vertue of your Preſidentſhippe there, I haue therevppon hetherunto ſtayd the Sute which Mr. *Wigmore* made for the ſaid Office; though I perceauid in her Maieſtie an Inclination to graunte the ſame vnto him. And now the Gentleman, being deſirous to obteyne your Lordſhips Fauor for his Preferment to that Office, hath earneſtly craued my Lettres of Recommendation vnto you vn his Behalf: Which, conſideringe Thinclination her Maieſtie had to do him Good, and the Hope I haue that he will cary him ſelf very honeſtly in th'Execucion therof, I could not denye vnto him, prayinge you to ſtand his good Lord herein. Wherby, as I am perſwaded, you ſhall aſſuredly, and for euer, bynde vnto you, a yonge Gentleman, willinge and apt to do you and the Countrie he lyueth in good Seruice. And ſo alwayes commending your Lordſhip to God, I take my Leaue. From the Courte at St. James, the xxth of July, 1576.

*Your Lordſhips aſſured Frinde,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verrey good Lord,*

Y<sup>T</sup> is no ſmaule Comforte unto your pryvat Friendes, to ſee you have ſo good Souceſſe in your Proceadynges ther, as your verrey Ennemyes can not but commende you. How her Maieſtie dothe allowe therof, you ſhall to your Comforte underſtande by my Lords of the Councells Letters. All honeſt Men,  
that



that wyshe well unto you and to the Reformatyon of that Realme, are of Oppinion, that, as you have used Celeryte in quenchyng the Fyer ther lately kyndeled, so you shoold prosecute the same with all Severyte. For as lyght Remedyes, for grevouffe and dayngerowse Dyseases, doe rather hurte then cure ; so suerly, in the curyng of soche a dyseased State as that is, it is a les Offence to offende in the Use of overmyche Severyte, then in the contrary. Therfor seing you have Authoryte suffytyent, and that owre Eares (under Hande) are overmyche open unto *Iryshe* Advertycements, tendyng to the Contynewance of the dysordered Governement of that Contrye : Your Lordship shall doe well to execute, fyrst, that which shall seeme unto you to apperteyne to Justyce, and to the Removing of the corrupt Membres of that State ; without receyvyng Dyrectyons from hence, and then to advertyse often of your Proceadyngs. Your Lordship lackethe no good Frendes here to stande with you in your good Causes, especially seing, emongst other Thinges, the End and Scope of your Servyce, is to spare the Treasure of this Realme, and to make *Ireland* to bear her owne Charges. Yt may be, your Lordship may receyve some wronge Informatyon, touching my late Dealyng in the Reformatyon of the Disorders of *Wales* ; only I shall desyre you to reserve an Eare for me, and then I doubt not but to satysfye you. And so I most humbly take my Leave. At *Whytehawle* the 24th of *Julye*, 1576.

Your Lordships assuredly to

command,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Thomas *Earl of Ormond* to Sir Henry Sydney.

**B**EING comm this Day hether, not dowbtinge, by your Lordships and Cownfels Order, to have receaved of my Lord of *Vpperossorye* the Castle and Lands of *Dorow* ; as I rode to the Bridge to go over to the Hows, 2 of his Men, one named *Nicholas Brenane*, and another called *Donell in Shain*, his Sarvant, met me at the Bridge End, and told me, the Ward that wear in the Hows wold shote at me if I did enter the Bridge, and that I shold not have the Possession of the Hows deliuered vnto me. Although I was lothe to receave suche a Flowt, I have thoght good to vse my accostomed Pasiens, and forebear to vse Force, prayeng your Lordship to direct your Commandment to the Sherif of the Cownty of *Kilkeney*, to put me in present Possession of the same. The Mill Stones and Irons of my Mill are taken away, sins this Order was by your Lordship taken. I hope your Lordship will consyder of my Lord of *Vpperossoryes* Dealing hearin as becommeth. So prayeng to know your Lordships Pleasur with Speed, I comitt you to God. From *Dorow*, this 13 of *August*, 1576.

Your Lordships Brother to command,

Thomas Ormonde Ossory.

Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell in England.

My verie good Lords,

**M**Y Dewtie most humblye remembred to your honorable Lordships, since the Wrytinge of my last, dated at *Athlone* the ixth of *Julye*, and sent by my Servaunt, *John Cockram*, wherein I advertized your Lordships of the Commyttinge of the Earle of *Clanrickarde*, who remayneth nowe close Prisoner in this Castell : The Possession I had of the Castells of his Countrie, and namely of *Ballylough Reough* ; and that his Sonnes were forsaken of all their Streingth, and fledd to the Mountaines : I departed towardes *Galway*, where after I had made some fewe Dayes Aboade, comforted the Townsfolke, who stood moche dismayed and fearefull of their State, and to be surprised ; and taken Pledges of all



the Gentlemen of Note, and Free Holders of the Countrie ; and namelye, those of *Clanrickarde*. I passed thence thorough *Thomounde* to *Lymericke*, settled the President, left him in his Chardge, accompanied and attended vpon withe the Nobilitie of that Province, and dyvers other Gentlemen of Accompte towards *Cork*, where he remayneth : Whilest I yet remayned at *Lymericke*, I had somme Intelligence of a great Confluence of *Scottes* arrayed in the Northe, and of greater Numbers expected to come thence owt of *Scollande*, and Preparacion of Shippinge and Boates for their Transportacion, who were (as it was affirmed unto me assuredlye) practized withall to ioine withe Therle of *Clanrickards* Sonnes. At the first I gave not so full Credit to the Matter, till it was eft sones confirmed, and nowe in deed so fallen owte ; so that it seemeth, by the Sequell, that this Devise hath bene longe in Hatchinge, and somme further Matter bothe Forren and at Home, then yet hath bene discovered ; for, since my Departure thence, theise *Scottes* are come into *Connaught*, to the Number of twoe Thowland at the least : They are ioined with the Earles Sonnes ; spoyle and waite the Countrie, and it cannot be intended otherwise, but they doo as moche Harme and Mischeiffe as they can : And although I heare not yet that any of the Gentlemen of the Countrie, whose Pledges I have taken, are ioined with them, or any other of Accompte do followe them but Stragglers, and idle masterles Men, nor any Place or Holde taken by them that I tooke when I was there : Yet their Power is so greate, as the Force of the Countrie is not hable any Wayes to resist, nor make Head against them before my Comminge, which I prepare to doe with all the Spede and Dilligence I can assemble and gather my Forces together ; and intend, God willinge, to be amongst them my selfe within these x Dayes. I least there, at my Comminge awaye, for the Garde of the Countrie, *Tho. le Straunge*, with 1<sup>st</sup> Horffe, and Capten *Collier*, with a Bande of one Hundered Footemen ; planted them in *Ballilowgh Reough*, which, as I learne, is either alreadye besiedged, or at least readye to be : But the Place is tenable, and cannot be wonne, if their Victualls hold out, which, if they wante, it is ther owne Fawlt, for there was enough left to suffice them, both Corne, Wyne and Fleshe. All the other Partes of the Realme, thankd be God, are in good peaceable State, and I nowe almost in Readines to advance towards *Connaught*, to repress the Sturres there ; and doubt not, God willinge, shortlye so to doe, and to make that Province as quiet as the other Partes of the Realme are, except this Enterprise have further Backinge, then yet can plainelye be decyphred. And even so, prayenge the Almightye longe and prosperouslye to preserve your good Lordships, in all Honnor and Happines, I humbly take my Leave. From the *Queenes Castell of Dublin* the xvth of *August*, 1576.

*Your Lordships humble and assured*

*to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

*P S.* I yeelde your Lordships, in the dutifullst and lowliest Manner I can, my humble and hartly Thanks for the honorable Consideracion you have had of me in myne Absence for the Matters of *Wales*, which, erre it be longe, your Lordships shall here from me in more ample Manner, towchinge the Particularities and Pointes of those Cawties.

*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lord,*

I Receavid a Lettre from youe of the ixth of *August*, which came to me the xviiiith of the same ; wherby your Lordship requirid that I shold give Commission to my Brother *Edward* to levye Men at his Choise, within the Countreyes of *Kilkeny* and *Tipperarie*, to make Heade against the Rebels, till I could put my self in Areadiness. Howe these may be furnished, with him, and others providid after,



after, to sett forth, I knowe not; but, yf he can provide Men, he shall not want my Furtheraunce. An other Lettre of your Lordship, of the xith of the same, I receavid the xixth therof, wherein were enclosid certaine Lettres to those vnder me, to be in Areadynes the xxiiiith of *August*. I wrote presently to the Freholders of both those Countreyes to mete me, who I knowe are badly furnisid for Sarvice: Till I confer with them, I can not certifie your Lordship howe sone they shalbe ready, nor howe long they shalbe able to victuall them selves; but this is the worst Tyme of the Yeare, for that their old Corne is holye spent, and the newe, not as yet able to be cutt. So committinge your good Lordshipp to Godds Guiding, I take my Leave. From the *Carricke* the xxth of *August*, 1576.

*Your Lordships Brother to commaund,*

Thomas Ormonde, Offory.

I wrote to your Lordship, how my Lord of *Vpperossory* kept the Castle at *Doro* Bridge from me, whearof I receaved no Awnswer; I pray your Lordship command him to deliuer hit; or, if he do not, command the Sherif of the Cownty of *Kilkenye* to put me in Possession of hit.

*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My ueray good Lord,*

**H**I T pleased you, at my Sute the other Day, goinge from *Castle Dermot*, to allow of my Frend, Mr. *Richard Aylward*, to be second Iustice in *Mownster*, of which your Lordships Goodnes to him I gave him to vnderstand; your Lordship then requyred, that I wold procure my Lord Presedent of *Mownsters* Letter, declaring his Acseptance of him, whose Consent, as I told you, I had afore I moved hit to you. Now vnderstanding, that som other is earnest for the same, I thought good to put your Lordship in Remembrance of this moche passed, and humbly pray you to bestow the Office vpon him, according to the good Opinyon I did finde you held of him, when I moved this Sute vnto you. So comitting your Lordship to Gods Guyding, I humbly take Leave. At *Karrick*, this Last of *August*, 1576.

*Your Lordships Brother to commaund,*

Thomas Ormonde, Offory.

I did pray the Master of the *Rolls* to put your Lordship in Remembrans of this Matter, knowing ther wear som others, Sutors for hit.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elisabeth.*

*May it please your most excellent Majestie,*

**T**O vnderstande, that, of late, it hath pleased Almightye God to call to his Mercye the Bishopp of *Offorie*, and so the Rome of that Sea is become voyde, and to be nowe by your Highnes conferred. I have therefore thought it my Duetie, moved in Zeale for the Reformation of the Countrey, and Good of the People, humblye to beseeche your Majestie, that good Care were hadd, that that Church might be supplied with a fitt Man, and soche a Person, as is acquainted withe the Language and Manners of this Countrey People, might be promoted to succede in the Place; of which Number I humblye recomende vnto your excellent Majestie Mr. *Davye Cleere*, one that hath bene long bred, and brought vp in the Vniversitie of *Oxforde*, a Master of Arte of a good Continuaunce, a Man esteemed not meanelye learned, besides well geven in Religion, and of a modest, discreete Governement, and commendable Conversacion, beinge a Man speciallye noted vnto me, by the good Report of the Lord Archbishop of *Dublin*, for his Sufficiencie to the Place, with a verie earnest Desier, that



that (the same beinge the Place of a Suffragan vnder him) the said *Cleire* might be preferred vnto it. The Bishopprieke is but a meane Lyvinge, yet a sufficient Findinge for an honest Man. And, because the soner the Place shalbe full of an hable Man (soch a one for his Integritye as this Man is esteemed) the greater Fruite will thereby growe to the Church, Honnor to your Majestie, and no small Hope to be conceived of Good to the People; whereof, as it becommeth me (havinge the principall Chardge of this Realme vnder your Majestie) I have a speciall Care. I write not onelye to your Majestie in this Case, by a Reporte of others, but partlye by Knowledge and Experience I have had of the Man my selfe. And therefore am the more desierous, that your Majestie should gratiouslye allowe of my Commendacion and Choise, and geve Order for his Admission and Consecracion, when it shalbe your Majesties Pleasure to signifie the same. And even so, with my most earnest and humble hartie Praier to the Almightye, longe and happilie to preserve your Highnes, to reigne over vs, your Majesties humble and obedient Subiects, to our inestimable Comforts, I humblye take my Leave. From your Majesties Castle of *Atblone*, the iijth of *Septembre*, 1576.

*Your Majesties most humble,*

*saythfull, and obedient Sarvaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lord,*

I Receivid two Lettres from youe; thone of the xvth of *August*, towching *Durro*, came to me the vth of *Septembre*, wherein your Lordship wrote, that my Lord of *Vpper Ossory* affirmith, that he was, and is redy to deliuer me the Possession of either House or Lande, which was the Bishops, in *Durro* (being that which your Lordship orderid to me.) I require onely the Benefut of your Order; and if I do not sufficiently prove, that the Castell, at the Bridg Fote, which he kepeth, is Parcell of the Bishops Land in *Durro*, I will forfeat 500 l. I wold hit might please your Lordship to give him lesse Credit in this Cause; he doth but abvse you with Vntroth, sekinge to detaine my Right. Thother of your Lordships Lettres, of the xxxth of *August*, came to me this Day, wherein you willid me to com to the *Skany* Side with xxj Dayes Victuall; I will not faile to be there, God willing, with as convenient Spede as I may, and woll sett forward herehence a *Saturday* next. So wisshing to your Lordship all good Successe, I most humbly take my Leave. From *Kilkeny*, the vjth of *Septembre*, 1576.

*Your Lordships Brother to commaund,*

Thomas Ormond, Ossory.

Sins my being benethe the *Baro* with my Lord Cancellor, I have had a Toche of the lose Diseas, that trobleth manye in this Land, and (God willing) hit shall not lett my Travell at this Tyme.

*Sir Henrye Sydney to the Lords of the Councell.*

*My verie good Lords,*

MY Duetie humblye remembred to your honorable Lordships. I have received your Lettres, dated at *Westminster* the xxijth of *Julye* last (which, by Reason of contrarie Windes and Wether, staied on that Side, and came not to my Handes, before the xixth of this present *September*) for the which I yeeld to your Lordships my humble Thankes, for the honorable Allowance of my small Expedition (soch as it was) made towards this Province, when the secrete Fier of this Rebellion was first in kindlinge; wherein, al be it (I thanke God) my



my Travells had, by the speedie Prevencion of the Tyme, the better Successe and lyke Hoope to be conceived by that Iorney of the reddier Quenchinge of the Flame, that it burst no further owte, then it hath spred it selfe alreadye, and then was vnder Hande in covert Woorkinge; yet I never esteemed my good Will and Dilligence in the Service, what soever it was, woorthie so gracious Acceptacion, as it pleaseth your Lordships to geve of it; for the which, eftsones I render vnto you all my most humble Thanks.

Since my Retorne to this Province, which was immediatlye after the Writtinge of my last, sent vnto you by Mr. *Bowes*; I have bene still occupied, as presentlye I am, in a Kinde of an actuall Warre, and contynuall Searche for the Rebels; sometymes dispersinge one Parte of my Forces into one Parte of the Countrey, and sometymes into an other, as I was directed by the best Intelligence where their Haunte was. But the hollowe Hartes of the Inhabitaunts, and the secrete Lurkinge of the Rebels, is soche, and hath bene yet hetherto, as I have had no great Hand vpon them, though I have at sondrie Tymes slayne of their Men, taken their Pray, and somme of their best and strongest Holdes from them. And where, in the Tyme of the Fathers Governement of the Countrey, they cried out of the Sonnes Oppressions, and their contynuall Exorcions, and Vyolence vsed vpon the poore People; and daylie Complainte was made vnto me against them, yet nowe they are so tender harted (as it seemeth) over them, whether it be for the Hate they beare to vs, and the Governement, or the secrete Love they beare to the Rebels, or bothe, I knowe not; but loth they are to discover them where they are, or to serve vpon them actuallye in any Sorte, more then they are by Force and Vyolence compelled vnto; so that this Service is not vnlike to be drawen, into a greater Length, afore the Rebels be thoroughly rooted out, then if there were any true Zeale, or Love in the Inhabitaunts to the Service, it could be. The *Scottes*, when they vnderstoode of my Approche niere the Confines of *Mac William Ewghters* Countrey, where they were then in Campe, sodeinlye they dispersed their Companies, and most of them fledd into the Rowte in the Noorthe, and some remayne still in this Province, but so scattered, as I cannot yet light vpon them in Troupes; which if I doe, I hope to make an Ende of the Matter, but if I cannot, whyles I shall remayne here, by Reason of their often Flittinge from Place to Place, in soch secrete Sorte, as I cannot have trewe Intelligence of them, and where they lurcke: I will appointe the Execucion of that I shall leave vndone to Mr. *Malbie*, who I hope will shortlye perfect the Matter. And I purpose my selfe, within fewe Dayes, to march into *Mac William Ewghters* Countrey, and so into *Sligo*; first to settle *Mac William*, who in this Rebellion is the onelye Man of Power in *Connaught*, that hath shewed hym selfe loyall, and donne best Service vpon the Rebels; and after I have strengthened and placed hym, and repossessed hym of his Castells and Holdes, that in theise Sturres have bene taken from hym; visited *Ocbonnor Sligo*, and *Orwoorke*, in their owne Countries, and sounded them, whether I may stande assured of their Loyaltie, or suspect their Goodwills and Dissemblinge, and ordered my Forces to lye here or there, accordinge as I shall fynde their Disposicions bent to Good or Ill; I meane my selfe to retorne towards *Dublin*: And the rather, for that I finde that Sufficiency in Mr. *Malbye* everye Way, as I thinke my selfe verie well assisted by hym, in the Service of this Province, being a Man of that Ripenes in Iudgement, and of that Discreation in Governement, of that Painefullnes for Marshall Service, and in all so complete, as I am to render your Lordships most humble Thanks for hym, and doubt not, but that he will prove so apt an Instrument, to frame the rude barbarous People of this Province to Obedience, and Civilitie, partlye by Force, and somewhat by Perswasion; and cheifelye by the Tast of the Fruites, and Benifitts of Justice, to be indifferentlye applied to the Curinge of their old festred Sores, as they will in a Whyle be brought to detest the Loathsomnes of their former Lyves and Disorders, and imbrace soche wholesome Orders, for Reformation of them selves, and the Countrey, as shalbe devised for them. Which will in Tyme, I hope, prove to the great Good and Comforte of the



People, and Honnor and Proffitt to her Majestie, which is the onely Marke I cheifelye shote at, and hope, erre it be longe, with Gods Healpe, to hit it, or els I shall far misse of myne Ayme. For the rest I have to write, touchinge the Answer of the particuler Pointes of your Lordships Lettres, and so consequent-lye for the State of the Chardge of the Realme for the whole Yere; and for the Matters of *Wales*, wherein I am by your Lordships Lettres directed to conferre with my Lord Chauncellor, which I cannot convenientlye doo, before my Retorne to *Dublin*, and therefore crave Pardon till then. I meane, God will-inge, to sett downe the Pointes to your Lordships at Lengthe, and so, for the meane Tyme, beinge not a little weried with the toylefome Travall of this weri-some Iorney, in tracinge and searcinge the Rebels from Place to Place, and the ill Successe I have to light vpon them. I humblye take my Leave of your good Lordships, with my hartie Praier to God, to prosper all your honorable Pro-ceedings, to your noble Harts Desiers. From *Galway*, the xxth of September, 1576.

Your honorable Lordships assured,

lovinge Freinde to commaunde,

H. Sydney.

*The Case of Thomas, Erle of Ormond and Ossorie, touchinge Prise Wynes of Irelande.*

**K**INGE *Edwarde the Thirde*, by his Lettres Patentes, dated at *Westminster* quinto die Junij, in the xlvj Yere of his Raigne, graunted vnto *James Butler*, then Erle of *Ormonde*, and Theires Males of his Bodie, amonges other Thinges, the Prise Wynes of *Youghell*, *Kinsale*, and of all other Portes and Havens of *Ireland*. And after Kinge *Philip* and Quene *Mary* (recytinge the said Graunte made by Kinge *Edwarde the Thirde*) by their Lettres Patentes, bearinge Date at *Westminster*, the xjth of *Marche*, in the thirde and fourthe Yeres of their Raignes, graunted the said Prise Wynes, amonges other Thinges, vnto the said *Thomas*, nowe Erle of *Ormond* and *Ossorie*, and to the Heires Males of his Bodie: And for Lake of suche Yssve, to the Heires Males of the Bodie of his Graundefather, *Piers Butler*; which Grauntes are all generall, and make no Excepcion of the Prise Wines of Strangers, more then of Denizins. By Force of which Graunte of Kinge *Edwarde the Thirde*, the said *James*, Erle of *Ormonde*, and his Heires Males of his Body, received Prise Wines, aswell of Straungers, as of Denizins, in the Portes of *Waterforde*, *Lymericke*, *Youghell*, *Kinsale*, and other Portes of the West Partes of *Irelande*, that had not their Prise Wines to them selves by former Grauntes: And the said Erle of *Ormonde* nowe receiveth the said Prise Wynes, in the said Portes and Havens of the Weste, in licke Manner, aswell of Straungers, as of Denizins, by Force of the said Grauntes; but the Citizens of *Dublin*, and the Inhabitaunts of the Towne of *Drogheda*, clayme, that all Marchauntes Straungers, commenge withe any Wynes to their Portes, have vsed, Tyme out of Minde, to pay no Prise Wynes, and that alwaies theie have bene discharged of such Prise Wynes.

And also theie allege Accomposicion to have bene made by Kinge *Edwarde the Firste*, with Marchaunte Straungers comenge to the Realme of *Irelande*, whereby he did release his Prise Wynes; and, for Prooffe of that Composicion, shewed fourth the Copies of certaine Memorandumes of the *Exchequer* of *Ireland*, makeing Mencion, by Way of Reherfall, of such Acomposicion; in somme whereof, is recited what Customes those Marchauntes Straungers should pay for Silkes, Scarlettes, Clothe in Graine, and Clothes, and Thinges to be caried by them owte of the Realme.

And also there alledge a Recorde, *Termino Pasche Anno xxj Ric. Secundi*; by whiche it apperethe, that a Commission was directed to one *Roger Maulefeld*, by whiche he was made the Kinges Collector, to receive and gather xx s. of everie

Tonne



Tonne of Wyne; for whiche, Prifadge fhoulde be due at the Hauen of the Citie of *Dublin*, in any Shipp thither commenge, and to receive ij s. of every Tonne of Wynes of Marchauntes Straungers, in any Shipp thither commenge.

Also they have an other Recorde, in *primo* of Kinge *Henrie the iiij<sup>th</sup>*, testifi-enge a Commission, by him to be awarded to *Hughe Frangton*, comaundinge him to enquire, by the Othe of lawefull Men of the Towne and Visinage of *Drogheda*, what Sommes of Mony for priseable Wynes, for which xx s. was dewe vnto the Kinge of euery Tonne, as also for those priseable Wynes of Straungers, that yelded ij s. of everie Tonne, have bene received and leuied, by one *Gotwham* in *Annis xxj et xxij* of *Ric. the Seconde*.

And theie shewe further Arecord of a Plee and Judgment vpon an Informacion, brought in the *Exchequer* of *Ireland*, *Anno v. Henrici Quartie*, againste one *Gulliam de Glauster*, Burges and Marchaunte of *Burdeux*, for a Custome of ij s. of everie Tonne, of xxxij Tonnes and Apipe, of *Gasconn* Wynes, discharged by hym in the Haven of *Dublin*; which *Gulliam*, for Aunswer to the said Informacion, said, that he sold the said Wines, at *Burdeux*, vnto one *John* of *London*, a Citizen of *Dwblin*, who, by the Lawe, ought to pay Prise Wynes, and not ij s. of everie Tonne without that; that the Propertie of the said Wynes was in him, after the said Sale; and the Kinges Sergeante maintained the Propertie of the said Wines to have bene in the said *Gulliam*, when theie were discharged at *Dwblin*. And so beinge at Issue vpon the Propertie of the said Wynes, a Jurie of the Citie of *Dwblin* tried the Propertie of the said Wines to have bene in the said *Gulliam*; wherevpon he was charged to pay ij s. for everie Tonne of the same; vpon which Recorde and Judgement, they do gather, that Straungers shoulde pay no Prise Wynes, but ij s. Custome out of everie Tonne.

And also theie alledge a Decree, geven at the *Starre Chambre*, in *Englande*, againste *Pieres*, Erle of *Ormonde*, in *Anno xix<sup>no</sup> Henrici Octaui*, whereby yt was decreed, that the Citie of *Dwblin* should pay no other Prise Wynes, then theie vsed, or were accustomed to pay, vntill the said Erle have shewed better Evidences, and Title, to prowe his Right to the same. All which Allegations, we of the Queenes Maiesties lerned Councell in the Lawe, whose Names be vnder written, havinge seene and perused, do thinke thereof, as followeth:

*Furst*, As to the Prescription, we thinke it not to be good, for that it is in the Negatiue.

Also, for that Prise Wynes are an aunciente Prerogative of the Crowne, against whiche Prescripcion cane not lye.

And also, for that the same Prescripcion hathe bene interruptede, in the Tyme of Kinge *Edwarde the Thirde*, by his Writte: And, in the Tyme of Kinge *Edward the Fourthe*, by his Lettres Patentes, and lickewise by Acte of Parliament, as the said Erle, by Recordes, and other Evidences, hathe shewed vnto vs, as more largelie hereafter followethe.

*Secondelie*, As the said Composicion, and generally to all the rest of the Recordes by them alledged, the said Erle hathe shewed vnto vs the said Write, directed by Kinge *Edwarde the Thirde*, vnder his Greate Seale, in *Anno xxix<sup>no</sup>* of his Raigne, to the Iustice of *Irelande*, declaringe that he was enformed, that Marchauntes, aswell Denizins of that Lande of *Irelande*, as Straungers, refused to pay his Prises, of Righte due, of the Wynes brought to the said Lande; and willinge that theie shoulde be compellede to pay the same Prices, and in that Writte did set fourthe the Maner how Prise Wynes shoulde be taken of the Wynes commenge to that Lande; like wise he hathe shewed vnto vs, that, in the Tyme of Kinge *Edward the iiij<sup>th</sup>*, *Anno secundo* of his Raigne, Thoffice of Highe Butlershipp of *Irelande* was graunted to one Sir *William Welles*, Knighte, by Lettres Patentes, for Terme of his Lief; in whiche his Patent it apeereth, that he shoulde have, by his said Office, the Prisinge of Wynes; which said Office,



Office, and his said Title of Prifadge of Wynes, was allowed, by Decree in the *Chauncerie of Irelande*, in the Yere aforefaid, whereof he shewed vs Arecord vnder Seale.

Also he hath shewed vs, that, in *Anno tertio* of the same Kinge, the said Office and Title of Sir *William Welles*, and also the Writ of Kinge *Edward the Thirde*, so by hym made in *Anno xxix<sup>no</sup>* of his Raigne, were confirmed by Act of Parliament in *Irelande*; licke wise he hath shewed vs, that the said Office was so graunted vnto the said Sir *William Welles*, duringe the Tyme that *John*, then Erle of *Ormond*, was attainted, for Takinge the Parte of Kinge *Henrie the Sixt*. Which Erle of *Ormonde* was after, in the Tyme of the same Kinge *Edward the Fourthe*, restored to his Blodde, and after had the Office aforefaid, accordinge to his former Title.

Vpon all whiche the Erles Allegations, we thinke fuerlie, that the said Composition, *tempore Edwardi Primi*, yf yt did extend to *Irelande*, as it is dowtefull whether it did, or not, yet beinge made but to endure at the Kings Pleasure, and beinge revocable at his Will, was in deede, by the said Writt of Kinge *Edward the Thirde*, revoked and vndone, and so were the said Prife Wynes of Straungers annexed againe to the Crowne, and beinge so annexed, were graunted to the said Erles Auncestoure, *James*, Erle of *Ormond*, by the said Kinge *Edward the Thirde*, *Anno xlvj<sup>o</sup>* of his Raigne; and, after the same Sorte, was the same Revocation of the said Composition contynued, by the said Lettres Patentes of Kinge *Edward the Fourthe* to the said Sir *William Welles*, and, by the said Acte of Parliamente in his Tyme, so as the said Erle, by his said Lettres Patentes, of all Prife Wynes, graunted in *Anno xlvj<sup>o</sup>* of the same King *Edward the Thirde*, beinge after confirmed vnto the said nowe Erle, in the Tyme of Kinge *Philipp* and Queene *Mary*, as ys aboue said, may verie well take the auncient and due Prife Wynes, accordinge to the said Writte of Kinge *Edward the Thirde*; and that, aswell in the said Citie of *Dwblin*, and the Towne of *Drogheda*, as in all the Residue of the said Cities and Townes in the West Partes of *Irelande*; all which quietelie yeld, and have alwayes vsed quietlie to yeld the same to the said Erle, and his Auncestors, as the said Erle hath declared vnto vs, and hath shewed vnto vs good Proof of a greate Parte thereof.

Moreover, whereas it appereth, in somme of the said Recordes, alledged by the said Citizens of *Dwblin*, that the said Straungers, in Consideracion of the said Composition of ij s. a Tonne, shoulde yeld dyverse Customes for Scarletts, and other Marchaundises, by them to be caried out of the Realme, of which Marchaundises, the best (as Silkes, Skarlettes, Clothes in Grain, Kerfies, and all other Clothes speceified in the said Recorde) ar not, nor never were to be had in *Irelande* (as the said Erle hath enformed vs) and the Customes of the Residewe which ar there to be hadd, as Hiddes, Skinnes, Tallow, Waix, course Wolle, and suche licke, are but of small Value, in Respecte of the rest, as he also hath declared vnto vs.

Therefore it seemeth, that vpon good Reason the said Composition was revoked in *Ireland*, and yet remaineth good in *England*, duringe the Queenes Pleasure, and not otherwise.

Also as vnto the Recordes in *xxi Ricardi ii<sup>di</sup>* and *Primo Henrici iiij<sup>ti</sup>*, it seemethe, that the said Commissions were wrongefully graunted, for that the said Erle of *Ormond* having the said Office of Butleradge (as appereth) the said Prife Wynes and all Dueties therefore appertained of Right to him; and then could not the Kinge, of Right, graunte any Commission for the Gathering of any suche Duties, or for any Inquirie towthching any Gatheringe thereof.

Therefore it seemethe, the said Commissions yssueinge out vnduely were graunted vpon some wronge Suggestion, duringe the Minoritie, Imprisonament, or some Trouble of some Erle of *Ormonde*; and the later of them in the Time of Kinge *Henrie the iiij*, might be graunted, rather to enquire of the evill Doinges of the said *James Gotenham*, then any Way to entitle the Prince: And so the said Recordes, as we thinke, are no Proof against the Erle. Then as to the



Reorde of the Informacion in v<sup>to</sup> *Henrici quarti*, that maketh rather for Therle, for yt apereth by the Verdict, that the said *Guilliam* was Owner of the Wynes; and that, to discharge himself of the ii s. demaunded, he alledged the Propertie to be in a Citizen of *Dwblin*; which had bene averie evell Polici if ii s. alon hade bene due, for by that Meanes Prisfadge should have bene due cclearly by the Citizen for the said Wyne; whiche Prise Wynes *Guilliam* should have losse by the Seiser thereof, although he hadd discharged himself of the ii s. in the Ton. Wherevpon it may be well gathered, that there was not only demaunded of him Prisfadge, but also the ii s. in the Tonne; and therefore he took that Way to ease himself of the ii s.

Lastlie; As vnto the Order in *Sterre Chambre*, the same maketh nothinge against Therle, for that Order, as we are enformed, was not taken for Marchantes Straungers, but only, as it seemeth, for the Citizens of *Dwblin*, that theie should pay no other Prise Wynes then theie were accustomed to pay, vntill better Matter were shewed, which Decree the Erle saythe he observeth; for the Citizens (as he saythe) do and alwayes fythens paid their accustomable Prisfadge, and neither more nor lesse.

*The Opinion of the Attorney General and Sollicitor General, in England, on the Erle of Ormondes Case, towching the Prise Wynes of Londoners.*

THE saide Erle, by Vertue of his Office of Highe Butlershippe of *Irelande*, whereof he ys seased in Fee Taile, ys to haue all the Prise Wynes in all the Portes and Creekes of *Irelande*; where vpon he came, by his Atturney, into a Shippe in the Haven of *Dublin*, to seise the saide Prise Wynes, of whiche Shippe, and of the Wynes therein, one *Roger Winstone* saide he was Owner: But the saide *Roger* saide further, that he was a Merchaunte and Free Man of the Citye of *London*; and that all suche Merchaunts and Free Men of the same Citye, ought to be and alwaies haue bene free from the Paymente of anye Prise Wynes, in all the Quenes Maiesties Cities, Townes, and Havens, within her Realmes and Domynions, bothe by Prescripcion and also by Charter; and their Charter being vewed, ys to this Effecte (as appereth by their owne Certificate) that ys to saye, that the Citizens of *London* shalbe quyte of all Prisfadge of Wyne. But this *Roger Winstone*, albe yt he be a Free Man of *London*, as he hym selfe saithe, yet ys not he any Citizen of *London*, for that he ys not any Dweller in *London*, nor beareth Scott nor Lotte, nor haith anye House within the same Citye, as the saide Erle saithe; whiche Case beinge seene and considered of by vs, of the Quenes Maiesties Councell lerned in the Lawe, we thinke, that yf the Case be so, then the saide *Roger Winstone* ys not to be discharged, but must yelde the saide Prisfadge of Wyne; for none are to take Holde of the saide Charter but Citizens of *London*; and we thinke none to be Citizens but such as dwelle in *London*, and haue Houses there, wherein they abide and dwelle, at the leaste somme Parte of the Yere: And yf a Man, tothende to take Holde of this Charter, will paye Scotte and Lotte, although he be not an Inhabitaunte in Forme aforesaid, yet can he not be counted anye Citisen, for that he dothe not inhabite, as ys aforesaide: And yf anye Free Man of *London* shulde haue all the Libertyes that Citizens can haue, the Quene then shulde be defraudet of a greate Parte of her Customes and Proffitts in *Irelande*, by the Multitudes of poore Men of *Irelande*, who are Free Men of dyvers meane Crafts in *London*, as the saide Erle enformeth vs: And as to the Prescripcion, we thinke the same not to be good, as we haue saide in the saide Erles other Case, of Prysfadge of Wynes of Merchaunts Straungers, in *Dublin* and *Drogheda*.

G. Gerrard.

Tho. Bromley.



Hereafter ensueth the Names of such as the Erle of Ormonde and Ossorie, now at his Goeing into Englande, doth appointe to take Charge of the Countie of Kilkenie, in his Absence; with a Note of their severall Charge. Which Countie the said Erle doth devid into severall Partes, as followeth:

|                                          |   |                                       |
|------------------------------------------|---|---------------------------------------|
| <b>F</b> IRST from Dobins House to the   | } | Pires Fitz Edmonde and Mr. Deane.     |
| Blake Water ———                          |   |                                       |
| From Blake Water to Currigge —           |   | Daton and Galle.                      |
| In the Baronies of Knocketoffer and      | } | Walter Waylsb and Fraunces Lovell.    |
| Kelles, John Tobins Lande and Fleddy lie |   |                                       |
| In Sillolegbe, that from Labenegapoll    | } | Mr. Sweteman and Richard Oge Co-      |
| to Benetes Bridge — — —                  |   |                                       |
| From Craumnegbe Duffe to the Water       | } | Mr. Grace and Mr. Shartall.           |
| of Owtney ———                            |   |                                       |
| Infasagh, Gluvley, Fasaghdeynyne and     | } | Donell Mac Shane and Phillippe Grace. |
| Iddongbe — — —                           |   |                                       |
| In the Baronie of Gawrone —              |   | Mr. Blanshuill and Cluttvell.         |
| In Buttlres Woode Fearon Oram and        | } | Pires Butler and Edmond Guldey.       |
| Monkes Land — — —                        |   |                                       |

Hereafter ensueth certaine Instructions tutchinge the Charge geven them and others.

**F**IRST, that the said Erles Deputie, my Lord Vicount of Mountgarret, and the Sherif of the Countie for the Time beinge, Assistaunt vnto him, shall have Authoritie, over and aboue those eight Quarters, to remove and punishe such of those Gentlemen as shalbe slake or neglegent in executinge their Charge.

*Item,* That the said Gentlemen shall have full Power and Authoritie to apprehind and punish all Vagabondes and idle Persones remainenge within their Charge, by Imprisonment, or other Waies, at their Discrecions.

*Item,* That the said Gentelmen shall cause such Gentelmen, dwellinge within their severall Charge, to booke their Men, and to delyver a Copie of those Bookes to the Erles Deputie, and to the Sherif; and that it shalbe lewefull for them to fine any that shall refuse so to do in fixe Pounds xiii s. iiii d.

*Item,* That all such Idellmen or Gentelmen, as shalbe founde vnbooked, may be taken and comitted to her Majesties commen Goale, there to remain till the next Cessions.

*Item,* Any Borderer that shall have his Goodes taken from him, and followes the Tracte to any of those Quarters, and shall shewe the same to anye the Gentelmen, or other dwellinge within the same; that the Townes within the said Quarter wher the Tracte is followed, shall aunswer the Goods so taken and followed, if the Dwellers within the same do not put the Tracte from them; so as the Capteines of the Borders doe vse the like of their Side.

*Item,* Vpon any the like Occasion of Tracte leste in any of those Quarters, or vpon any Robberie, Murder, or Stelth to be comitted, that all the Gentelmen and Idellmen of that Quarter shalbe aunswerable and attendant at the first Crie vpon their Captein in their best defensible Maner, vpon Pain of Imprisonmente, to every one makinge Default, and to be fined everie Time vi s. viij d. and so presentlie to followe the Tracte, and apprehend the Offenders.

*Item,* That in everie Quarter th'aforesaid Gentelmen having Charge be allowed vi Horsmen and xii Footemen, to be cessed vpon Landes cessable within the Quarters nightlie.

*Item,* That the said Gentlemen of the eight Quarters, with all their Force, vpon Warninge geven them, shalbe attendant vpon the Erles Deputie, the Lord

Mountgarret,



*Mountgarret*, and the Sherif of the Countie as Assistant vnto him, upon Paine of Imprisonmente, and to be fined for everie Default in xls.

*Item*, The said Erles Deputie, the Lord *Mountgarret*, and the Sherif as Assistant vnto him, shall have Commission to cesse their Men in any Place within the Countie of *Kilkenie*, as often as any of theme shall have Occasion of Service, and to do all other Thinges as if the said Erle were present.

*Item*, For the better Bannishinge of Idellmen owt of that Countie, that the said Erles Deputie, the Lord *Mountgarret*, and the Sheriff, as his Assistant, shall have Comission to parle with Rebelles, and, for the better Reformation of the Countrie, to graunt Protection for eight Daies.

*Item*, To get Pledges of everie Gentleman that shalbe thought to have any Traine or Companie in the Countrie, lyvinge in Discorde.

*Item*, That the said Comissioners shall not suffer any Castelles or Fortes, or any other Fastnes to be made, by any vpon the Borders of the Countrie, without especiall Leave of the said Erle, vnles it be thought to be for her Majesties Service, and the Welth of the Countrie.

My Lord *Mountgarret*, and Sherif of the Countie of *Kilkenie*, take care to see the Countrie well defended, and gouerned accordinge to the Instructions before written: And according as you shall receive further Direction from my Lord Deputie. From *Denmore* the Last of *September*, 1576.

*Your lovinge Cosine,*

Thomas Ormonde and Offory.

*Apud Ludlowe viceffimo primo Die Octobris Anno Regni Elizabethæ Dei Gracia Anglie, Frauncie, & Hibernie, Regine Fidei Defensoris, &c. decimo Nono 1576.*

**W**Hereas the Quenes Majesties Counsaill in the Marches of *Wales* are given to vnderstand, that there are sondrye lighte, lewde, desperate, and disordered Persones, dwelling and inhabiting within sondrye the Countyes of *Wales*, and the Marches of the same, that dailye weare, carrye, and beare dyvers and sondrye Kyndes of Municion, Armure, and Weapones, as Livery Coates, Shurtes of Male, quilt Dublettes, Sculles, quilte Hattes, and Cappes, *Mores* Pickes, Gleyves, longe Staves, Billes of vnlefull Sies, Swordes, Bucklers, and other Weapones, defencive and invasive, vnto divers Fayres, Markettes, Churches, Sessions, Courtes, and other Places of Assembly, in Affraye and Terror of the Quenes Highnes Subiectes, wherby divers Assaultes, Affrayes, Hurtes, Woundes, Murders, and Manslaughters, hathe bin don, perpetrated, and comitted, whiche this Counsaill conceive the rather to groweby the Incowragement of the vnlefull Weapons and Armor, and by the vnlefull Reteyning of Servaunts, and giving Liveries, contrary to the Quenes Majesties Lawes and Statutes, in that Case made and provided. And albeit, sondrye Proclamacions have bin directed from this Counsaill, vnto the Officers of the severall Counties vndermencioned, that all, and all Manner of Persons, shold laye aside their Armor, Municion, and unlefull Weapones, and to weare, beare, or carrye the same: Yet, they having smale Care or Regarde therunto, in meare Derogacion and Contempte of the Lawes and Statutes, doe weare, beare, and carrye the same Weapones, and Armur, facing and bracing the Quenes Highnes quiet, loving Subiects, and to their greate grevous Comitting diuers Outrages and Disorders, to the Imbolding and Incurraiment of Mallefactors. And where, alsoe, this Counsaill are given to vnderstand, that there are dyvers Sheriffes that have sold their Offices of Vnder Sheriffes, Shere Clerkes, Bailiffs, Gailors, and Vnder Officers, and have had and receaved for the same noe smale Somes of Monye; by Meane wherof, manifold Briberies, Exaccions, Comithers,



Comithers, Extorcions, and other Iniuries and Wronges have bin also perpetrated and comitted, and the cheeffest, meetiest, and honest Freholders, keapte from Apparaunces at Sessions; and the meanest Sorte that are not habile to give Rewarde, and have left Care of their Othes, or are otherwise vnablist to serve, are compelled to serve, whereby Fellonies and Malefactors escape vnponished, to their greate Incorraiment and Bouldnes, and the Hindraunce of Justice and Detierment of the Common Wealthe; and for that this Counsaill are given in Chardge and Comaundement, from her Highnes, and her most honorable Pryvey Counsaill, to have a speciall Eye, Care, and Regarde vnto the Official Comissioners, Chauncellers, and other Spirituall Officers; by Meanes of whose Negligence in doing their Duties and Offices, incontynent Living dothe muche abounde, and abhominable Inceest and Advlterye creapt in, and muche frequented in thes Days. And where alsoe vncharitable Excesse of V-farye and vnlefull Games ys much vsed, Artillarye and Shoting whiche was provided for the Defence of the Realme leste aside, many Allhowses, and Tippling Howses, not lefullye lycensed nor bounden, kept and muche haunted; Forestalling, Regrating, Buing and Silling of Cattelles out of Fayer and Markett dailye vsed, and the Statute of Drovers not dulye put in Execucion, whereby the Price of Cattelles is greatly enhauncid, and pryvellye conveyed and stollen from Place to Place, whiche will tende to the Impouerishment and Vndoing of her Majesties Subiectes, and Encrease of Offendors, if the same shold nott in Time be prevented and loked vnto, and the Offendors ponished, according to the Order of the Lawe. And, althoughe there hathe byn speciall Informacion given vnto this Counsaill of the said Misdemenors and Disorders, and vehement Presumpcions against diuers Persons; yett they meane not to send for eny of the Persons supposed to be Offendors, before they be truly aduertised, and vnderstand some probable Matter against theim, of the said Offence. And, therupon, to take Order for their Ponishment, that the same maye be a Terror to others not to comytt the like. And for that this Counsaill having made Choise of the Persons vndernamed, for their Dexterities, Knowlaidges, Wisdomes, and Vpprightnes, thinke good to putt them in Remembrance, that they have a carefull Eye and Regarde vnto the Premisses, that neither for Affection, nor Curruption, they wincke at any of the said Offences or Offendors, nor yet for Malice nor Displeasure, to vexe or troble eny innocent Person, nor eny Manns Fault, but vprightly, circumspectlye, and dilligentlye enquier and trye out the Offences, and Offendors. It is therefore considered and ordered, that severall Letters be directed vnto the Gentlemen vndernamed, of the severall Counties vndermencioned, or any twoe of them, whereof *Richard Vaughan*, Esquire, the Quenes Highnes Solicitor attending this Counsaill, to be one, mencioning the Premisses, comaunding them aswell within Libertyes as without, by all the Wayes and Meanes they canne, aswell by Examination of Wittneses vpon their Othes, as otherwise, to learne and trye out aswell who are, have bin, or shalbe, in the mean Time, of the Retorne of thes Letters, the Wearers, Carriers, or Bearers, of eny Municion, Armor, or Weapones, and the Time certaine of the wearing, carreing, and bearing of the said Municion, Armor, or Weapones, and vnto what Church, Fayer, Market, Sessions, Corte, or other Place of Assemblie, prohibited by eny Lawe or Statute: And what Goodes, Cattelles, Mony, Corne, or any other Thing, any Officer or Officers, spirituall or temporall, or any other Person or Persones, have levied, or gathered, by Way of Comither, Exaccion, Extorcion, or Brybery, whoe have offended against the Statute of Retainers, and wherein, with the certaine Manor thereof, the Statute of vnlefull Games, the Statute of Artillary; whoe are the Keaperes of Tippling Howses, and alle Howses without Licences, vnlefull Droving, Regrating, Forstalling, Buing and Selling of Cattell without Licens and whither eny were boughte out of Fayer and Markett; whoe were the Buyers thereof: Alsoe to enquier of all incontynent Living, Inceest, and

†

Adultory



Adultory and Fornicacion, and whoe have offendid against the Statute of Vferie, when, and at what Time, howe, and by what Meanes; and for howe much Mony, upon what Bargaine and Contracte, and the certaine Maner therof; what Assaults, Affrayes, Murders, Manslaughters, Felonies and Misdemeanors have bin committed, sithens the Quenes Highnes last, free, and generall Pardon, with the Names, Surnames, and Dwelling Places of the said Offenders, and the Manor and Circumstance therof, and the Sayinges and Depositions of the Wittneses in that Behaulf, to putt in Writing, together with the Presentments, their hole Doinges, Knowledges and Proceadinges in the Premisses; And suche as they shall finde culpable in enye of the Offences to bynde by severall Obligacions in x l. apeece, with sufficient Suretyes vnto the Quenes Maieftie, for their personal Apparaunce before this Counsaill furthwith; and, at their Apparaunce nott to depart without Lycencs of this Counsaill: And Incase they, or eny of them, refuse to enter into the said Band, then to comytt him or them foe refusing into Warde, there to remaine vntill he or they shalbe conformable to enter into the said Band, and of such Commitment (if eny be) together with the suche Bandes, and Depositions, as they shall have taken touching the Premisses, from Time to Time, to certifye the said Counsaill, in the meane Time of the sixth Daye of *October* next; and then to certifye their whole Proceadinges the same Daye, &c. Requiring further by the said Lettres, all Sheriffs, Maiors, Bailiffes, Constables, and all other Officers and Ministers, the Quenes loving and obedient Subiects, to be aiding, assisting and helpeing the said Comissioners, and euery of them, in due Execution of the Premisses, from Time to Time, as ofte as nede shall requier, as they tender her Majesties Service. And will for the contrary, answere at their Perilles.

*S A L O P P.*

*Roberte Pigott, Esq;*  
*Roberte Eaton, Esq;*  
*Frauncis Blunt, Esq;*  
*Richard Vaughan, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
*Richard Jones,*  
*Frauncis Smalman,*  
*David Lloyd,*  
*Richard Evanes,*  
*Hugbe Lloid, Gent.*  
*John Vaughan of Clone, Gent.*  
*Andrewe Blonuden, Gent.*

} fower of the Attornies of this Corte.

*W O R C E S T E R.*

*Sir John Littletonn, Knight,* one of this Counsaill.  
*Frauncis Welshe, Esq;*  
*John Follyott, Esq;*  
*Edmond Cowles, Esq;*  
*Richard Vaughan, Esq;* the Quenes Maiefties Solicitor.  
*William Gomond, Gent.* one of the Attornies of this Corte.

*G L O U C E S T E R.*

*Sir Nichollas Arnold, Knt.*  
*Richard Pates, Esq;*  
*Thomas Smithe of Campdenn, Esq;*  
*Richard Vaughan, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.

} twoe of this Counsaill.



Harry Cadogann, Gent. one of the Attornies of this Corte.  
 Roger Morgann, one of the Clerkes of the same Corte.

## MONMOTHE.

Thomas Morgann, Esq;  
 William John ap Proger, Esq;  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; the Quenes Majesties Solicitor.  
 David Thomas, } Gent. twoe of the Attornies of this Corte.  
 Harry Cadogann, }  
 Roger Morgan, Gent. one of the Clerckes of the same Corte.

## HEREFORD.

Sir John Huband, Knighte, one of this Counsaill.  
 Richard Seborne, Esq;  
 Frauncis Blont, Esq;  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
 William Gromond.  
 David Thomas. } Gent. three of the Attornies of this Corte.  
 Humffrey Haworthe. }

## GLAMORGAN.

Edmond Morgann, Esq;  
 Thomas Lewis, Esq;  
 Leizon Prieſe, Esq;  
 William Jenkines, Esq;  
 Miles Button, Esq;  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; the Quenes Majesties Solicitor.  
 Harry Cadogann, one of the Attornies of this Corte.  
 Roger Morgan, one of the Clerkes of the same Corte.

## RADNOR.

John Prieſe, of Mynaughtye, Esq;  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
 Owen Powell Phellipp, Esq;  
 Morgann Meredith, Esq;  
 John Wen, the Younger, Gent.  
 Rees Johnes, of Knighton, Gent.

## FLINT.

John Griffithe, Esq;  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; the Quenes Majesties Solicitor.  
 Thomas Kinaston, Esq;  
 David Johnes, Gent. one of the Attornies of this Corte.  
 John Davies, } Gent. ij<sup>o</sup> of the Attornies of this Corte,  
 Elles ap Elles, }  
 William Thomas, Gent.

## DENBIGH.

The Busshopp of St. Asſaphe, one of this Counsaill.  
 Elles Prieſe, Esq; one of this Counsaill.  
 John Prieſe Esq; the Quenes Highnes Attorney.  
 Richard Vaughan, Esq; her Majesties Solicitor.



*Foulke Lloyd, Esq;*  
*Robert Turbridge, Esq;*  
*Moris Kiffin, Esq;*  
*Ellis Abellis,*  
*Jenkin Meredith,* } Gent. ij<sup>o</sup> of the Attorneis of this Corte.  
*William Lloyd, Gent.*

*MOUNTGOMERY.*

*Edward Herbert, Esq;*  
*Richard Vaughan, Esq;* the Quenes Majesties Solicitor.  
*David Lloyd Jenkin, Esq;*  
*Jenkin Meredith,* } Gent. ij<sup>o</sup> of the Attornies of this Corte.  
*Morgan Glin,*  
*David Moris, Gent.*  
*Owen Jobnes, Gent.*

*MEREIONITH.*

*Ellis Prieze, Esq;* one of this Counsaill.  
*Richard Vaughan, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
*Rees Hughes, Esq;*  
*John Owen, Esq;*  
*Owen Wyn, Esq;*  
*Robert Owen, Gent.*

*CANERVON.*

The Busshopp of *Bangor*, one of this Counsaill.  
*Richard Vaughann, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
*John Griffith, of Lyen, Esq;*  
*Richard Moston, Esq;*  
*Thomas Maderenn, Esq;*  
*Roland Pulasone, Esq;*

*ANGLIZEY.*

*Richard Vaughann, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
*William Lewis, Esq;*  
*Owen Wooddes, Esq;*  
*Richard White, Esq;*  
*Rowland Meredith, Esq;*  
*Rowland Buckley, Esq;*  
*Rowland Kemick, Gent.*

*CARDIGAN.*

*Richard Vaughann, Esq;* the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
*John Lloyd, of Kilgwin, Esq;*  
*John Steadman, Esq;*  
*Rees David Jenkin, Esq;*  
*Morgan Lloid, Esq;*  
*John Thomas ap Engnonn, Gent.*  
*Rees Jobnes, of Knighton, Gent.*

*PEMBROK.*

*Sir John Parrot, Knighte,* one of this Counsaill.  
*Richard Vaughann,* the Quenes Majesties Solicitor.

*John*



John Barlow, Esq;  
 Thomas Revell, Esq;  
 Albon Stepneth, Esq;  
 John Thomas ap Ergnon, Gent.

## CARMARTHIN.

Richard Vaughann, the Quenes Highnes Solicitor.  
 John Davies, of Carmarthin, Esq;  
 Griffith Vaughan, of Trimsurne, Esq;  
 Griffith Dunn, Esq;  
 William Penrin, Gent.  
 John Thomas ap Engnon, Gent.

## BRECOG.

Richard Vaughan, the Quenes Sollicitor.  
 John Games, Esq;  
 William Vaughan, Esq;  
 Water Proffes, Gent. } ij<sup>o</sup> of the Attorneys of this Corte.  
 Dauid Thomas,  
 Rycharde Morgan, Gent. one of the Clerks here, exum. per Ri. Vaughan.

Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham, concerning the Reports  
 of the Earle of Essex's Death.

S I R,

IMmediatlye vpon my Retorne out of *Connaught* to this Cittie, which was the xiiijth of this present *October*, and knowinge of the Deathe of the Earle of *Essex*, which I did not certeinly, till I came within xxxth Myles of this Toune, and that his Boddye was gonne to be buried at *Carmarthen*. And hearinge besides, that Lettres had ben sent over, aswell before his Deathe, as after, that he died of Poyson, I thought good to examyne the Matter as farre as I could learne, and certifie you, to the Ende you might imparte the same to the Lords, and both fatisfie them therein, and all others, whome it might please you to participate the same vnto, and wold beleve the Trothe. For, in Trothe, there was no Appa-  
 raunce or Cawse of Suspicion, that could be gathered that he died of Poison. For the Manner of his Disease was this: A Fluxe tooke hym on the *Thurseday* at Night, beinge the xxxth of *August* last past, in his owne Howse, where he had that Day both supped and dined; the Day followinge he ridd to the Arch-  
 bishoppe of *Dublins*, and there supped and lodged; the next Morning followinge he ridd to the Vicount of *Baltinglas*, and there did lye one Night, and from thence retorned backe to this Cittie: All theise Dayes he traveled hastelye, fedd three Tymes a Day, without findinge any Fault, either thorough Inflammation of his Boddye, or Alteracion of Taft; but often he wold complaine of Greiffe in his Bellye, and sometymes say, that he had never hartie Grieffe of Mynde, but that a Fluxe wold accompanie the same. After he retorned from this Iorney, he grewe from Day to Day sicker and sicker, an havinge an *Irishe* Phisicion sente to hym by the Earle of *Ormounde*, Doctor *Trevor*, an *Oxford* Man, and my Phisicion, Mr. *Chaloner*, Secretarie of this State, and not vnlearned in Phisicke, and one that often, for Goodwill, geveth Counsell to his Freinds in Cafes of Sicknes; and one Mr. *Knell*, an honest Preacher in this Cittie, and a Chaplayne of his owne, and a Professor of Phisicke, contynuallye with hym, they never ministred any Thinge to hym against Poyson. The *Irishe* Physicion affirmed before good Wittnes, that he was not poysoned; what the other do say of that Matter, by their owne Writtings, which herewithe I sende you, you shall perceiue. And drawinge



drawinge towards his Ende, beinge speciallye asked by the Archbishopp of *Dublin*, whether he thought that he was poysoned or no, constantlye affirmed, that he thought he was not; nor that he felt in hym selfe any Cawse, why he should coniecture so to be: In his Sicknes his Coullor rather bettered then impayred, no Heare of his Boddye shead, no Nayle altered, nor Tooth loosed, nor any Parte of his Skinne blemished. And when he was opened, it could not appeare, that any Intrall within his Body, at any Tyme, had bene enfecte with any Poyson. And yet I finde a Brute there was, that he was poysoned, and that arose by some Woordes spoken by hym selfe, and yet not originallie at the first conceived of hymselfe, as it is thought by the wisest here, and those that were contynuallye about hym: But one that was verie niere hym at that Tyme, and whome he entirelye trusted, feinge hym in extreme Payne, with Fluxe and Gripings in his Bellye, by Reason of the same, saied to hym, By the Masse, my Lord, you are poysoned; wherevpon the Yeoman of his Seller, was presentlye sent for to hym and myldlye and lovinglye he questioned with hym, sayenge, that he sent not for hym, to burden hym but to excuse hym. The Fellowe constantlye answered, that if he had taken any Hurte by his Wyne, he was guiltie of it, for my Lord (saith he) since you gave me Warninge in *Englande*, to be carefull of your Drincke, you have drouncke none, but it passed my Handes. Then it was bruted, that the boyled Water, which he contynually drouncke with his Wyne, should be made of Water, wherein Flaxe or Hempe should be stiped, which the Yeoman of his Seller flatlye denied, affirminge the Water which, he always boyled for hym, was perfect good. Then it was imputed to the Sugar; he answered, he could get no better at the Stewards Hands, and saier though it were not, yet wholesome ennoughe, or els it had bene lykelye, that a great maney should have had a shrewed Toorne; for my Howseholde and maney more have occupied of the same, almost this Twelvemonthes. The Phisicians wer asked, what they thought, that thei spake doubtfullye, sainge it might be that he was poysoned, alleadginge that this Thinge or that Thinge might poyson hym, since they never gave him Medecine for it; they constantlye affirme, that they never thought it, but for Arguments Sake, and partlye to please the Earle. He had twoe Gentlewomen that Night at Supper with hym, that the Disease tooke hym, and they comminge after to visitt hym, and he hearinge that they wer troubled with some Loosenes, saied, that he feared that they and he had tasted of one Drugge, and his Page (who was gonne with his Boddye over, before I retorned.) The Women vpon his Woordes were afrayed, but never sicke, and be in as good State of Healthe, as they were before they supped with hym. Vpon Suspicion of his beinge poysoned, Mr. *Knell* (as it was told me) gave hym sondrie Tymes, of Vnicornes Horne, vpon which sometymes he vomited, as at other Tymes he did, when he tooke it not. Thus I have delyvered vnto you, as moche as I can learne of the Sicknes and Deathe of this noble Peere, whome I left when I left *Dublin*, in all Apparaunce, a lustie, stronge, and pleasaunt Man; and before I retorned, his Breathe was out of his Boddye, and his Boddye out of this Countrey, and vndoubtedlye his Soule in Heaven; for in my Liffe I never harde of a Man to dye, in soche Perfectnes; he was sicke xx or xxj Dayes, and most of those Dayes tormented with Paings intollerable, but in all that Tyme, and all that Torture, he was never harde speake an idle or angrie Woorde: After hee yeilded to dye, he desired moche to have his Freindes come to hym, and to a byde with hym, which they did of sondrie Sortes, vnto whome he shewed soche Arguments of hartie Repentaunce of his Liffe passed, so sound Charitie with all the Worlde, soch Assuraunce to be Partaker, of the Ioyes of Heaven, thorough the Meritts of Christs Passion; soch a ioyfull Desier, spedilye to be dissolved, and to enioye the same, whiche he would sometymes say, That it pleased the Almightye, to reveale vnto hym, that he should be Partaker of (as was to the exceding Admiracion of all that harde it.) He had contynuallye about hym Folkes of sondrie Degrees, as Men of the Clergie, Gentlemen, Gentlewomen, Cittizins, and Servaunts, vnto all which he would vse so godlye Exhortacions, and grave Admonicions, and that so aptlye,



for the Persones he spake vnto, as in all his Liffe, he never seamed to be Halfe so wise, learned, nor eloquent, nor of so good Memorie, as at his Deathe. He forgott not to sende weightie Warnings to somme of his absent Freinds by Message. Oft tymes, when greivous Pangs, had dryven hym out of Slombers, he wold make soche Shewe of Comforte in Spirite, and expresse it with soche Woordes, as maney about hym thought, he sawe, and harde some Heavenlye Voyce and Vision. Maney Tymes after bitter Pangs, he wold with chereful Countenaunce crye, Corage, Corage, I have fought a good Fight, and thus ought everye true Soldiour to dooe, that fighteth vnder the Standdard of his Capten, and Patrone, *Jesus Christ*. About a Leven of the Clocke before None, on the xxiith of *Septembre*, withe the Name of *Jesus*, issuenge out of his Mouthe, he left to speake any more, and shortlye after, lifting vp his Hand, to the Name of *Jesus*, when he could not speake it hym selfe; he ceased to move any more, but swetelye, and mildlye, his Gost departed, by all Christians to be hooped, into Heavenlye Blisse. The Almightye graunt, that all Professinge Christ, in their Liffe, may at their Deathe, make soche Testimonie of Christianitie, as this noble Earle did. And thus endinge my tedious Lettre, with the dolefull (and yet comfortable) Ende of this noble Man, I wishe you, from the Bottome of my Harte, good Liffe, and longe; and the Ioy of Heaven at the Ende. From the Castell of *Dublin*, this xxth of *October*, 1576.

Your assured lovinge Freinde,

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsingham.*

§ I R,

Whereas, the Bisshoppricke of *Ardagh* is nowe voyde, and at her Majesties Disposicion, by Reason of the Deathe of *Pattericke Mac Mahon* the late incumbent, and for that it is not convenient, that that See should be longe destitute of a spritual Pastor to succede in the Place, the rather for that, by good Teachinge, and Doctrine, the People might be drawen, first to knowe their Duties to God, and next their Obedience to their Prince and cyvell Order. I have thought fitt (partelye vpon myne owne Knowledge of *Sir John Pettit*, Clarke, and partelye vpon the good Reporte I have harde of the Man by others, that as firme vnto me, that aswell for his Sufficiencie in Learninge, and good Example of Lyffe, and honestie of Manners, he is one mete for that Rome) to prefferre hym, therefore to your Recommendacion to her Majestie. And, for that bothe the Lyvinge is verye meane, when it is whole, and entire, and yet the same by the late Incumbent, moche discypate, leased, and aliened to soch Personnes, as hardlye it is to be recovered againe to the Possession of the Church, except somme Man, who bothe by his Pollecy, and somewhat by his Strength in Freindshippe, and Countenaunce in the Countrie, be substitute in the Place; I have the rather geven my full Allowance of this Man, who aswell for that he is descended of *Englishe* Race, and speakethe the Languadge, as also for that he is well alied in Freindes, whose Landes and Lyvings adioyne to the Possessions of this Bisshoppricke. So that if it so like her Highnes, to nominate him to the Place, I knowe not any one Man of this Countrie Birthe, that will accept the Name of so great a Dignitie, with so small Commoditie as this Bisshoppricke hath belonginge vnto it; so fitt a Person for the Place as he is. And therefore, for that the Lyvinge is so meane, he desiereth that he may have the little he nowe enioyethe, and dwelleth vpon, beinge called the Personage of *Pierston*, in the Bisshoppricke of *Meithe*, which is not extended in Valewe above fower Poundes *Sterling*, by the Yere, by Way of *Commendam*, annexed to the Bisshoppricke, which beinge a Thinge of no greater a Valewe; I thought it not amisse to satisfye hym therein, the rather, therebye to encourage hym, to take the other Chardge vpon hym, which I hope he will well supplye: He hath bene allowed by the Bisshoppes here, for his Sufficiencie, and so commended vnto me from them: And even so

prayinge



prayinge you to further the Cawse to her Majestie, that I may with convenient Spede receive her gracious Pleasure for hym, I bid you farewell. From the Castell of *Dublin* the xxviijth of *October*, 1576.

*Your assured lovinge Friende,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell, with his Opinion for Reformation of the Disorders in the Marches of Wales.*

*My duetie humblye remembred to your most honorable Lordships,*

I first humblye crave Pardon, that I have not before this Tyme, answered your honorable Lettres, concerninge the Reformation of the Abuses creapt in of late, into the Courte of the Marches; which in Parte, the infinite Toyle of this Lande, forced me to pretermitt, and partlye the Hope I had, that I should soner have finished my Iorney in *Connaught*, then it fell oute I did, which made me over shoote the Tyme, lymitted by your Lordships Lettres. And next I most humblye thanke your Lordships for the honorable Respecte it well apeareth you have of me; that it pleaseth the same to knowe myne Opinion, in Alteracion of Orders, perteing to that Courte (where I have served as principall Officer, nowe almost xvij Yeares) before you will confirme or allowe them.

And if I had ben harde, when certeine newe Councillors were admitted into that Courte, since my departinge; I suppose that Howse should not have bene so chardged, as nowe it is; the Countrie aswell served, and your Lordships lesse encombred. I have sith my retorne hither, accordinge to your good Advises, conferred withe the Lord Chauncelor of this Realme, touchinge the State of this Cawse, wherein we agree; and trewlye my Lords, I ever found him the sufficientest Man, both for Judgement and Dilligence, that ever I knewe attende that Howse, and no small mayme, hath that Governement by the misse of hym, which if it be not substantiallye supplied (then for ought I heare yet it is) it is to be doubted, that the Credit, and good Service of that Howse, will fall to Ruine, which were greate Pittie; for beside the greate Dammage, that infinite poore Subiects should finde, by takinge away the Redresse of their Wrongs, and the Releiffe of their Greives (that withe Expedition they finde there) which if that Councell were not, they should either rest with their Harmes at Home, or seeke their Healpe a farre of, at the Chauncerye, or Courte of Requests; and the Terror, which the longe continued Severitie of that Howse, holdeth the base People of that Countrie in, in restrayninge them from robbinge and killinge one another; it were in myne Opinion, no small slackinge of the Reignes of Regiment of the whole Realme, either to dissolve that Howse, or to suffer it to be vnfurnished, with sufficient Men to Iudge and Commaunde. And omittinge as a Thinge nedeles, any Argument to prove what Obedience, Love, and loyall Fear, a Resident, and contynuall Ministracion of Justice, with a Representation of some Parte of the Majestie of the Prince, printeth in the Hartes of the Subiects, I will onelye remember your Lordships of the happie Successe, as I think iustlye to be attributed to the Service of that Howse; which is, that since the establisshinge thereof, that is now niere iij C. Yeres agooe, there nevar beganne Rebellion, within the whole Precinct of that Dominion, nor in any Parte thereof, which lacketh little of a whole third Parte of *Englande*; nor it hath bene seldome seen, nor harde of, that maney People of the same, assisted Rebellion, els where begonne; and that in eche Sovereignes Reigne, since that Tyme, there hath bene Rebellion in one Parte of the Realme, or other, your Lordships knoweth well enough. I nede not stande to prove it; and therefore leavinge that to your good Discreacions, I will proceede to declare myne Opinion of the Booke nowe sent me by your Lordships, which I, and my Lord Chauncelor, have delyberatlye considered of, and do verye well allowe of the Rules, and Orders sett downe; savinge in the Article, mentioninge what Cawses shalbe admitted to be harde in that Courte, and appointeth certeine, not to be received, vnles the Bills for the same, be signed by three severall Counsellors of that Counsell; my simple Opinion is, that one Counsellors Hand, so it be not his that hath the

Proffit



Proffit of the Signett, is sufficient, withe the President or Vicepresident, and in the Absence of them bothe, any two other of that Councell.

The lyke Disorders as those, for which theise seame, and in dede are good Remedies, have oft Tymes ben founde, and corrected in that Courte, and yet thorough Crafte, and Covetousnes of the Ministers of the same, have secretlye creapt in agayne; as about xv Yeres past, soch Disorders were complayned of to me, as nowe are to your Lordships, and therevpon (a great Deale the better by the Advice of Mr. *Gerrard*) Orders verye lyke theise, were sett downe, for Reformation thereof, well lyked by the rest of that Councell, as it seamed, published, and somme of them in publike Places fixed to the Ende, both Minister of the Courte and Countrieman, might the better knowe what their Duetie was. That whole Yeare it pleased her Majestie, to imploy my simple Service, in *Fraunce*, *Scotland*, and *Newhaven*, at *Porchmouth* for *Newhaven*, and at the Courte; all which Tyme Mr. *Gerrard* was my Vicepresident; for so had I Power at that Tyme by Instructions, to make Choyce of any of that Counsell, to supplie my Place in myne Absence, which Order was altered in an other Tyme of my Absencye; in all which Tyme, there was no soche Complainte, nor Cawse of Complainte, ministred to my Knowledge: In other Tymes of my Employment, out of that Place, others occupied the same; in which Tyme I suppose those good Ordinaunces, devised, and executed, to suppress soche Disorders (as both in that Courte, and in everye other Courte will springe) were neglected; whereof, if Complainte had beenne eftsones made duringe myne Abode there, I durst have vndertaken the Reformation thereof, without troublinge her Majestie, or your good Lordships. Whyle I attended there, the Howse was cleane out of Debt, and Money sufficient alwayes, in the Receivor of the Fynes Handes, to pay all that was due: And, besides, I am well assured, I cawsed to be layd out, for the Makinge of the Conduits of Water, for *Beawdley*, and *Ludlowe*, the Repaier of those twoe Howsies, and other her Majesties Howsies, above a thousand Poundes. When I retorned out of this Realme, I found the Howse twelve hundred Poundes in Debt, and no Reparacion donne; no, nor that finished, which, at my Departinge, I left halfe donne. While I attended there last, the Howse recovered well, so as though not out of Debt, yet moch lesse in Debt I left it, then I found it; and nowe is it so farre behinde Hande, as not onelye olde Bills of Counsellors cannot be paid, which they have foreborne a longe Tyme, but daylie growinge Chardges for the Howse, as for Fuell, Cariage, and soch other necessarie Incydents to Howseholde, as the Howse cannot be mainteined without, are left vnpaid; so moche to my Burden, as were it not for somme Provision, that by myne owne Pollecye I have made, I were not able to kepe the Howse, considering the Dearth of all Things, with the Allowance I have, though the same be verye honorable. And, my Lords, since it hath pleased you so honorablye to vse me, as to sende for my Opinion in the Reformation of the Disorders alreadye creapt in, or lyke enough to growe in that Courte, I am emboldened to write thus moche to your Lordships, That the best Way to reforme that, which is alreadye in Disorder, and to kepe it in good Estate after, is to mainteyne there, a discrete and bold Gentleman to be principall Officer; who, for soch Insolent Actes, as sometymes doth and will happen, will severely rebuke, and punishe the proudest of them; and that he have a willing Mynde, and an hable Boddye to take Payne, whereof he shall finde in that Office Cawse enough, soche a one was Bishopp *Rowland Lee*, as it apearethe, aswell by the honorable Fame, that yet foundeth of hym, for the great Reformation he made in that Countrie, as by maney yndoubted Testimonies of an established Obedience he held the People in. And here I have good Occasion, though, in Trothe, nothinge meaninge the Disadvantage of Sir *Andrew Corbett*, to beseeche your Lordships, to thinke of somme one, more able to take Paine, in that Place, then he is, as I finde speciallye by his owne Lettres: It is nowe a Yere, very niere, that he writt to me at good Length, of his Infirmitie; and by Reason thereof, his great Desier to be discharged of that Office, prainge my Healpe and Furtheraunce to her Majestie, and to your Lordships, for the same: And  

†

now



now again, not a Fortnight since, I received an other Lettre from hym of lyke Effecte, expressing the Contynuaunce and Increase of his Infirmities and Weri-someness of that Place. Wherefore, I humblye beseeche your Lordships, to have favorable, and speedie Consideracion of bothe. For, as it is of Importaunce, in Respekte of the Publike, that an hable Man be placed there, so were it great Pittie, in Respekte of the Gentlemans owne Particular, that he should be tyed to a Place, where he found hym selfe vnhabie to dischardge the Office belonging to the same; and, therefore, once again, I beseeche your Lordships have speedie Regarde to this: I will not take vpon me the Nomination of any, but leave the same to your Lordships Consideration, and her Highnes Choyce.

The second Person there, which alwayes hitherto hath bene the Justice of the Countye Palatyne of *Chester*, must put on a Minde to resyde for the most Parte with the Councell, for so did *Englefield*, *Hare*, *Silyayard*, *Townesend*, *Pollard*, and *Wooddes*; who, besides their Dexteritie to expedite Sutes, were, for their Gravetie, and Iudgement in the Lawe, demed woorthy to occupie a Place vpon the Benche in any Courte in *Englande*; and, when any of these attended that Counsell, as continuallye, for the most Parte, they did, light Cawses were presently hard and ordered, aswell out of Tearme Tyme, as in Tearmes, and Matters of more Weight, were determined in the Tearmes, when alwayes the Benche was furnished with Men of soche Gravetie, and Iudgement in the Lawe, as the Iangling Baristers wold not, nor durst not lye of the Lawe, nor over longe clamber in any bad Cawse of their Clyents; as since, and yet, as I heare they doe, to the great Losse of Tyme, and to the Drivinge of the Sutors, to needeles and intollerable Chardge. And, more over, the Justice of one of the other three Circuits, alwayes, in Tearmes, attended there; and so doe I wishe, that nowe they might be willed to doe, namelye, Mr. *Bromley*, or Mr. *Phetiplace*: And then was the Benche well able to over rule the Barre. But I have sene it farre otherwise, for I have maney Tymes, as me thought, felt the Barre so farre to stronge for the Benche (which hathe hapned, for the most Parte, in the Absence of the Justice, and the Want of his Assistaunce) as I have, consideringe myne owne Ignoraunce in the Lawes, deferred Iudgement after to longe Pleadinge, vntill I was better assisted; and, I feare, the Benche is not moche the stronger for them that were last made of the same: But I knowe the Howse moche bourdened by them; and, if the Counsellors Stipendarie by the Yeare, who ought, as they are lymitted by the Instruccions, and were heretofore accustomed, to geve contynuall Attendaunce there, be not enforced to remayne there, more than they doe: But that the Counsellors entertained by the Day, contynue there, to furnish the Howse for Want of them, there must be some other Meane devised for Payment of their Fees, then by the Fynes of that Courte, for sure they will not stretch vnto it, vnles more necessarie Allowancies be left vnpaid; for which Cawse, I gave Mr. *William Gerrarde*, nowe Lorde Chauncelor here, a hundered Marks a Yere out of the Fynes, which is not past halfe so moche, as one of them nowe hath, according to the Allowaunce by the Day, for which he gave, in Effecte, contynuall Attendaunce there. And the Benche beinge thus furnished, the Craft or Corruption of the Attorneys, will easelye be prevented, or reformed; and, in dede, the Number nowe is to great of them, so as if the same were reduced to a smaller Number, it were better, and all they to be vnder one Man, who might be answerable for all their Doings, it were the surest Way, both for the Honnor of that Courte, and Benifitt of the Subiecte. And, if it might like your Lordships to allowe one of my Choyce to that Office, I should thinke my selfe greatlye bounde vnto you for the same: It is *Edmound Molyneux*, a Gentlemen of woorthfull Parentage, not vnknownen, I suppose, to most of your Lordships, and to me, by a good many Yeres Service, as my Secretarie bothe there, and here, well proved to be honest, dilligent, and circumspecte; I beseeche your Lordships, therefore, shewe your Favor to hym, that he may be assigned to the Place: And, in the Patent that shall passe from her Majestie for the Ereccion of this Office, I pray your Lordships, that Mr. *Fowke Grivel*



may be joyned with hym, and placed in the Patent before hym, for that my Servaunt molt earnestlye desireth he should so be, if it may so stand with your Lordships good Allowaunces.

By this my over tedious Discourse, your Lordships may vnderstand my Opinion, aswell of the Booke you sent me to consider of, as howe that Howse of the Courte of the Marches, may be honorablye maintained, to the Honnor of the Quene, Commoditie of the Subiecte in particuler, and vniverfall Quiet of a great Part of that Realme, which I most humblye beseeche your honorable Lordships, with like Favor, to accept, as you vsed in sendinge the other, and then shall I acknowledge, that I have received a double Grace from you, of whome I humblye take my Leave, this xijth of November, 1576.

Your Lordships to be commaunded,

H. Sydney.

*A Memoriall sent from Sir Francis Walsyngham, by James Prefon, Gent.*

*Servant to my Lord Deputy.*

1. **I**nprimis, to let my Lord vnderstande howe it was looked for heere, that he should have spared some Parte of the ordynarye Allowaunce he hath from hence this Yeere; which, being not performed, doth geve his Enemies Cawse to Disgrace his Service, who do not consider that the vnlooked for Troubles of that Realm, is the Cawse of the Contynuaunce of that Charge.
2. That my Lord should avoide all Occasyons which may breede Troubles, in respect, thereby, to avoide Charge.
3. That I thinke it necessarye there shoulde be some profest Friendship betweene hym and Therle of Ormonde, which cannot be, onles he carry his Affection indifferently betweene the said Erle, and the Lord of Vpper Offerye.
4. That it were convenient, for the better Satysfaction of Therle, his Lordship shoulde allowe him some suche Porcion of Enterteynment, as he alloweth to the Lord of Vpper Offerye.
5. That Therle hath promesed me to doe any Thing that may deserve the Lord Deputies Favour, whom I have assured that he shoulde be well dealt with all by my saide Lord Deputye.
6. That I may receyve Aunswere from my Lord Deputy vnto the Erle of Ormonds Requests conteyned in his Lettre, whereof I send his Lordship a Copie.
7. That by secret Lettres sent owt of Irelande, it is advertized, that there was never so extreme Ymposicions laide vpon the *Englishe* Pale, as are presently; and that the Souldiors, notwithstanding the due Payment that is made them, are Burdeners vnto the Contrey.
8. That his Lordship graunteth many Pardons, which bredeth Boldnes in those that are evill affected to offende.
9. That his Lordship send over Aunswere to suche Points of his Instructions as remayn yet vnaunswared.
10. That I thinke it not good to move for a new Treasurer, vntill suche Tyme as hir Majesty may see some Part of hir Charge demynished.
11. That I will do what shall lye in me, to make good Freindship betweene Therle of *Leicester* and Erle of Ormonde.

Fra. Walsyngham.

Towchinge the Dispatch of the Bishoppes to commende *Welshe*, if *Cleire* be not allowed of.

Towchinge the Graunte of Conestabellshippe of *Arklow*, duringe Pleasure.

The



*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Francis Walsyngham.*

S I R,

I Have thought good to send you my Lord Deputyes owne Order : I assure you, there is nothing put in Execucion thereof, notwithstanding my severall Lettres requiring the same.

Only 3 other Things I have willed my Mann to geve you a Noate of, which be thies : That I may have Execucion vpon an Order past to me by Sir *William Fitzwilliam*, and the Counsell, for Price Wynes, to be paide by Straungers. That my Lord of *Vpper Ossery*, his Tennants, and Followers, may comm to Sessions, as the rest within the County of *Kylkenny* doe. That my Lord will do them Iustice with Favor and Expedition, that have the Charge of my Contrey and Tenants in myn Absence here ; is all I require ; and so to God I commyt you. The 12 of November, 1576.

Your very assured Freinde,

Thomas Ormonde.

*Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.*

May it please your Lordship,

THE Funeralls of the Erle of *Essex* have bene deferred 'till now that they be appointed to be honorably fynished at *Carmarthen* the 24th of this Month. I have forborne to wright to your Lordship, since my Arrivall in this Realme, because I wold give free Scope to all Men to utter their Opinions concerning my Behaviour hear in such Causes as I had to deale in ; and I doubt not, but you have herd enough of it ; but, if eny Reports have come unto your Lordships Eares, that in the Causes of my Lord of *Essex*, I have delt indirectly, I assure your Lordship, they have done me Wrong ; for, as I have justified hym and his Doings against all the World, without Respect of Feare or Favour, so have I been free from malitius Thoughts, and have quenched all Sparkes that might kindell eny newe Fier, in these Causes, which I hope be buried in Oblivion, wherein I stand to the Report of Sir *Phillip Sydney*, above enie other.

The State of the Erle of *Essex* being best knowen to my self, doth require my Travell for a Tyme in his Causes ; but my Burden cannot be great, when every Man puttith to his helping Hande. Her Majesty has bestowed uppon the yong Erle his Mariage, and all his Fathers Rules in *Wales*, and promisseth the Remission of his Debt. The Lords do generally favour and funder hym ; some for the Trust reposed, some for Love to the Father, other for Affinity with the Child, and some for other Causes. And all thes Lords that wishe well to the Children, and, I suppose, all the best Sort of the *Englishe* Lords besides, doe expect what will become of the Treaty betwene Mr. *Phillip*, and my Lady *Penelope*. Truly, my Lord, I must saie to your Lordship, as I have said to my Lord of *Lecester*, and Mr. *Phillip*, the Breaking of from this Match, if the Default be on your Parts, will turne to more Dishonour, then can be repaired with eny other Mariage in *England*. And, I protest unto your Lordship, I do not think that their is at this Day so strong a Man in *England* of Freinds, as the litell Erle of *Essex*, nor eny Man more lamented then his Father, since the Deth of King *Edward*.

In such Things as my Service might funder your Lordships Affairs, I have not bene silent since my Commyng into *Englande* ; and *James Prescott* will enforme your Lordship of the Place where I mynd for the most Parte to be Resident, so long as your Lordship shall allowe of myne Absence ; which, I hope, shalbe at my Choice, since I maye do your Honour Service herein, and there shall live but an idell Lief, without Credit or Hability, to please your Lordship.



ship. And, for the Tyme of my Continuance in thes Parts, I humbly pray your Lordship, that my Pension may be paid me by such, from Tyme to Tyme, as have the Conduction of the Treasurer. All other Things I repose upon the Report of this Bearer, Mr. *Prescott*, who is exceding well thought of, by such as are best hable to finde your Causes heer. And so wishing rather that my Duty to your Lordship, were discovered by others, then uttered by my self, I humbly leave you. At *Chartly*, the 14th of *November*, 1576.

Your Lordships most bounden,

and at Commaundement,

Ed. Waterhous.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councill in England.*

*My humble Dewtie remembred to your honorable Lordships,*

SINCE the Receipt of your Lordships Lettres of the xiiijth of *Julye* last, sent by my Servaunt *Henrie Catlyn*, amongst other Things, your Lordships thought it mete that I should deale with *Chatterton* beinge nowe here, and fall to some Agreement and Composicion with hym for the Revocacion of the Graunte passed vnto hym from her Majestie of the *Obanlons* Countrie: And, because the Matter is of soch Weight and grave Consideracion for me to deale in, and that (as I take it) I have not sufficient Warrant, by your Lettres, absolute-lye to compound the Matter my selfe, I thought it convenient, as well to satisfie your Lordships Expectacions, as his earnest Desier, to signifie vnto your Lordships, howe farre I have proceeded with him; and, withall, to yeeld my Opinion, what I thinke of the Matter. First, vpon oure Conference, I laid before hym, howe vnpossible a Matter it was for hym to do any Good in his Enterprise, and that he daylie wasted and spoyled hym self more and more, without any Hope of Recovery, or Likelyhood to do Good in that he went about. And, although there was some Hope to have bene conceived duringe the Tyme the Earle of *Essex* Enterprise was on Foote, that Good might have come of that he tooke in Hand, to expulse and subdue the *Obanlons*, and to reduce the Countrie of the *Fuze* and *Arriere*, to yelde hym Commoditie; yet, after the Earle had once geven over his Enterprise, there was no Reason for hym any longer to contynue his, or to hope that it could take any good Effecte. And, in trothe, my Lords, the poore Gentleman hath vtterly vndonne hym selfe in Wrafflinge with them, and hath nothinge left to mayntaine hym to lyve on; and his Brother likewise, an honest valiant Gentleman, wounded and mayned in the Service, and lost and spent all that ever he hath: So that I fynde their Case is too lamentable, and *Chatterton* to be in her Majesties Mercy and Grace, in some Sorte to be considered of. The Countrie, although it be large and longe, yet is it altogether wast, neither Howse, Pile, nor Castell left standing in it, but onely one little soorie Forte, pitched of Soddes and Turves, that he buylt there for his Streingth and Defence. I cannot, as yet, bringe the Inhabitaunts to offer above threeskore Pound Rent by the Yeare, but I will make it more, if I can; and humblye pray your Lordships to be a Meanes to her Majestie, that *Chatterton* may have some Recompence for his Stay to lyve by: And the first Degree is, that he may be protected for his Boddye, that he may not be troubled for soch Debts as he owethe, which (as he sayeth) by Reason of this Enterprise are growen greate, and to sondrie Persons: And next, that he may have somme Meane to lyve either by Inheritance, Fee Ferme, or long Lease, for that he hath nothinge left, nor Meane to gett any Thinge, that I can learne, but by her Majesties Benevolence, which I beseech your Lordships may be extended towards hym, by Way of Permutation and Exchange. And, if her Majestie will vouchsafe to bestowe vpon hym lx l. by the Yeare in some Sorte to lyve by, and better his Countenance withall, there



there can be no Losse in that Bargain for her Majestie. I will make her Majesties Profit greater, of that he will surrender againe into her Handes, if I can. And even so humbly recommendinge hym to your Lordships favorable Consideracion of his poore Estate, I take my Leave. From Tryme, the xxvijth of November, 1576.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

*The Earl of Ormond to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My veray good Lord,*

**H**AVING appointed my Frend *Richard Heibbe* to deale in my Causes, and the Causes of my Tenants, in myn Absence, I haue thought good to pray your Lordship, that it may please youe to do him Iustice against suche as he shall complaine on, and to shewe him your lawfull Favor in all his reasonable Cawses; for trewely he is honest, I dare vndertake. And so referring him to your Lordship, I take my Leave, wishing to you all good Successe. From the Court, the ixth of Januarij, 1576.

*Your Lordships louing Brother,*

Thomas Ormonde, Offory.

My Lord, I am geuen to vnderstand by my Wyfe, and others, that a Brother of my Lord of *Vpperofforyes*, with a Son of *Odwyns*, haue spoyled my Lands, which *Donell Mac Shane* holdeth of me: This beinge true, I pray your Lordship to caws present Restitution to be made, and so to punish the Offenders, as other ill disposed may take Example therby.

*Porcell* is also spoyled, to whome I pray you stand a good Lord for Restitution of his Goods also.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Counsell.*

*My humble Dutie remembred to your honorable Lordships,*

**S**INCE the Writinge of my Lettres, of the xxth of September last, dated from *Galway*, I still remayned in Expectacion of some Answer from thence to somme of my former Lettres, which came not vnto me, before the xxijth of this present *Januarye*, and the same brought me by my Servaunt *James Prescottt*, whose Negligence therein, as I cannot iustlye condempne, but lay the Fault (as in Troth) it was, to the Contrarietie of the Wyndes, and Vntowardenes of the Weather, which would not suffer hym to passe, though maney Tymes he enforced the Mariners, to take the Seas; yet, neverthelesse, he was still beaten backe, by Storme, or contrarie Wynde, so that, in stainge to heare, I have bene to longe scylent, to write, whereof I humblye crave Pardon of your good Lordships. And as in those my Lettres sent from *Galway*, I spake then of my Proceadings in *Connaught*, what I had donne alreadye in Pursute of those Rebels, and what I entended to dooe before my Departure thence: So consequentye after my Dispathe made to your Lordships thence; the Day followinge, I went to *Athenrye*, so to the *Skrugbor*, and into *Mac William Eughtors* Countrie; and within a Day or twoes Remove, came to the Castell of *Ibarrye*, which before I had cawfed to besiedged by certaine Companyes I had disperfed from me before, to lye in that Countrie, and to make Hed against the *Scotts*, who were reported to lye, not past fyve, or vj. Myles from the Place of this Siedge, and had gathered together all the Pray of the Countrie (as it was reported.) The Castle was noted to be a verye stronge



Place, and harde to be wonne by Assault, without great Slaughter, and Losse of Men: Att my Cominge thether, the Mother of twoe of the principall Gentlemen, that were in the Warde of the Castle, and Sonnes to one *Edward Bourck* (who was sent from the Earle of *Clanrickards* Sonnes, to enterteine the *Scotts*, to come into *Connaught*, to the Ayde of those Rebels) made humble Sute vnto me, that she might speake with her Sonnes; and first she entreated for their Lyves, that I wold graunte them Pardon, which I would not in any Sort assent vnto, except they would presentlye yeelde the Castell into my Handes, and simplye submit them selves, their Lyves, Landes, and Goodes to my Devocion; and assured her, that since I was comme thether, I would not departe thence, and leave the Place, before I had wonne it. She thought the Condicions verye harde; nevertheless she tendring moche her Sonnes Lyves, went to them by Lycence from me, and put them in so harde Hope to obtaine Mercye, but vpon these Condicions, as the Miserie of their State, made them to hazarde the Extremitie of Fortune, and so privelye at a Spike Hole, on the Backside, and in the mayne Wall of the Castell (which duringe the Parley, they had wrought somewhat wider) and made Passadge to lett downe a Man by Devise, into the Ditch, betwixt the twye Light, and Settinge of the Watche, the Warde stole away, and escaped with their Lyves.

Hether came to me *Mac William Eughter*, whome after I had somewhat rebuked, that I beinge commen thether into those Partes, cheifelye for his Defence, and to repossesse and settle hym in his Countrie, in as good State as he was before, that he had nether come, nor sent vnto me, before that Tyme. He excused hym selfe verye modestlye and wiselye, alleadginge, that after he vnderstoode, my Force was entred into the Countrie, whereof the *Scotts* stoode moche in Doubt; he gathered his Strength, and People together, and foorthwith gave a Chardge vpon the *Scotts*, and cried *Bowes, Bowes*, which Voyce so soddeinlye geven (and they thinkinge it in dede to be true) it stricke soche a Terror, into the amased Myndes of the beggerlye *Scotts*, as they leaft all the Pray behynde them, and saved them selves, by flyenge and ronninge away. I delyvered to hym the Castle I had taken, to kepe it to her Majesties Vse, and all the Castells and Piles besides he was disposessed of; settled hym quietlye in his owne, with soch Creditt and Countenaunce, as I hope he shalbe hable, to mainteine hym selfe in Despite of all his Ennemies, that shall hereafter attempt any Thinge against hym.

From this Place I meant to have gonne to *Sligo*, but by Reason, of the extreme Raignes, that fell in soch Aboundaunce, the Water of the *Moy*, which I must nedes passe, was rysen so high, and so moche increased, as havinge no Boates, I could not by any Meanes passe either my Horssmen or Footemen over, without to great Daunger. And besides, the Soldiours were so over toyled, and weried, what with contynuall Marchinge, Fowlens of Wether, and Wayes, weete Lodgings, after their Marche, and maney of them beinge feeble and sicke, as they could have hardlye indured, to have performed, this Iorney, but I should have bene forced to have left maney of them behynde me. And with all, for that *Oconnor Sligo* came vnto me thither, the *Clandonells*, and all the rest of that Countrie, either of any Accompte, Force, or Power. And also, for that I was crediblye advertized, and founde the Reporte true, that the *Scotts* were fled the Countrie, and had left *Ullick Bourck*; and he hymselfe likewise fled to the Mountaines of *Sleuartye*, to his Brother *Shane*: And moreover for that also *Orwarck* sent vnto me, to mete me, where I would apointe hym, I thought the Iorney lesse necessary for this Tyme, havinge in Effecte donne as moche with their Presences, beinge all together with me, as if I should have gonne to *Sligo*, to have founde hym there. And, therefore shortninge my Iorney, I retorned Homewards, by the Playnes of *Connaught* towards *Dublin*, and left Sir *Nicolas Malbye*, possessed of the Howsies of *Rossecommen* and *Atblone*, and all the Earles Howsies in *Clanrickard*, besides twoe Bandes of Footemen, and Capten *Daniells* Companye of Horssmen, two Hundred of the *Clandonells* of *Leinster* (beinge her Majesties Galloglas) with a hundred Kerne, all to be at the Direction of the Collonell, over and besides his owne Companye, being xxxtie Horssmen, and xxtie Footemen, and gave hym Order and Commission, to take *Bonnaught*; and spendinge  
for



for the Findinge of the Galloglas, vpon soche Countries, and Lordes, as had not yet compounded with her Majestie for their Landes; and so leavinge hym sufficient Authoritie, and Power, for the Governement of the Province, I departed thence, and arryved at *Dublin*, the xiiijth of *October*. And vndoubtedlye my Lords, soche a sufficient Man I fynde of Sir *Nicolas Malbye*, for the Service of *Connaught*, so forwardes, valiaunt, wise and resolute, so hable a Boddye to endure Paynes, and so patient in this hard Season, to bear any Travell, and his Successe so happie, in lightinge vpon the Rebels, and distresseinge them, as I am humblye to thanke your Lordships, for your Choyce of so fitt a Man to the Place; and must confesse (as Things have fallen oute since) your Lordships have donne better for me, then I devised for my selfe. Howe be it, the Hope of the Earles Inlardgement, is so daylye gaped for, as it is the onelye Cawse of the Contynuaunce of the Warres there, which Hope if it were once cleane taken away, the People of that Countrie, as they are, of their owne Dispocions, the most amenable, and tractablest People of *Ireland*: So would they yeeld to as moche Obedience, and frame them selves, to that Order of Cyvill Governement; as easye it would be to rule them (without any great Force contynuallye resident amongst them) and fashion and make them to do, what you woulde reasonablye commaunde them. And in Trothe the Earles Cawse, fawlethe oute against hym, everye Day fowler and fowler, as bothe by his owne Confession and the Deposition of others (which shortlye shalbe sent vnto your Lordships) it will plainlye and evidentlye apeare vnto you; at which Tyme, I meane lykewise to sende a Bill drawn for his Atteyndor by Parliament, if he be not found a Bastarde, as it is thought he may be, and then he may be tried by a Jewrye of common Persons. And his Sonnes Warres and his, once suppressed, which by this Meanes will be donne, there is no Doubt, but the Revenue of *Connaught*, will in short Space beare the Chardge of *Connaught*.

The Province of *Mounster* is vniverfallye quiet, as yet, but the President findeth somme Stubburnes of *Thomound*, in not obeyinge soch Orders, as be taken against hym, and somme Wilfulnes of *Desmound*, that will not be withdrawn from his wonted Exactions, and soche a generall Repininge thorough out to beare Cesse, not without somme Intelligence, or as it is rather to be suspected Conspiracie, with them of the *English* Pale. Howe be it the Lord President is so carefull in his Chardge, so watchfull of their Doings, and so dilligent to searche out their Intencions, and prevent their Driftes, and so vpright a Iusticer in Cyvill Cawties, and so readye for Martiall Service, if they should starte oute, as he holdeth them in a great Securitie of Quiet. And fuerlye, my Lords, if the Cesse, that they so moch kicke at, might be once converted to a certeine Subsidie (as, in a small Contynuaunce of Tyme, it wilbe no harde Case to bringe to passe, without any great Greiffe to the Subiecte) there is no Doubt, but that the Revenue of that Province would do more, then beare the Chardge of the same: And therefore I finde no Reason, but that the Thinge beinge so easye a Burthen to the Countrie, in Sorte as it may be imposed, and so great a Savinge to the Quene; but some Devise should be vsed, it were put in Execution.

The *English* Pale is, in all Partes, verye quiet, so that, in the Memorie of Man, never Winter passed over, with lesse Losse, and fewer Stealthes, and Bodraggs, then this hath donne.

The poore Subiecte enioyeth his owne without Feare, he is nether oppressed by his ritche Neighbour, nor spoyled of his noysome Ennemie, but lyveth safe, and in Securitie, without Daunger. The onelye Gawle of the Pale, for this Present, is the wilfull Repininge at the Cesse, which is stirred vp, by certeine busye hedded Lawyers, and discontented Gentlemen, who in dede beare not them selves the Burden of it, but the Fermors and Husbandmen, who willinglye wold contribute towarde it, if the Gentlemen wold suffer them; in so moche as the Countie of *Meith*, beinge twise as bigge as any other Countie of the *English* Pale, hath offered to geve fyve Marke *Sterlinge* out of everye Ploughland, which



which is not above ij *d. Sterlinge* out of everye Acree ; and yet, if the same were vniuersall over *Leinster* and *Meith*, it would amounte above 5000 Markes *Sterlinge* by the Yeare. And yet, in this Accompte, all auntient Fredomes shall remayne and contynue free still : The Repiners, from whome theise newe Freedomes are nowe taken, and to whome the same were first graunted, in Respecte of Service to be donne by them at generall Hostings, it was a Mockerye to see, what soarye Service those Men they set forth, either did, or for their Trayninge, or Abilitie, were hable to do for their Fredomes ; so that the Quene lost both ordenarye and extraordenarye Subsidie. The Consideracion whereof moved me to call the Statute in Question, wherebye they challenge theise newe Freedomes and Exempcions ; and the Statute beinge seene and skanned vpon, it was founde that they could not iustlye any longer clayme any Fredomes by Force of the saied Statute, and so adiudged both by my Lord Chauncellor, and Sir *Lucas Dillon* : None of the rest professinge the Lawes, willinglye agreed to that Iudgement, and yet not any of them all, hable, in Learninge nor Reason, to mainteine probable Argument to the Contrarie. And least this Name of Cesse, beinge not an vsuall Woorde there, might seme to carrye some secrete Mistrye in the Terme, beinge misconceiued : May it please your Lordships therefore to conceive, that Cesse is nothinge ells but a Prerogatyve of the Prince, and an Agrement and Consent, by the Nobilitie and Counsell, to impose vpon the Countrie a certeine Proporcion of Victuall of all Kindes, to be delyvered, and issued, at a reasonable Rate, and, as it is commenlye tearmed, the Quenes Price : So that the Ryfinge and Fallinge of the Prices of Victualls, and Achates, and the Seasonablenes of the Tymes, diere or cheape, makes the Matter easier or heavier to the Subiecte ; for when the Cowe was commenlye solde for viij or ix *s. Sterlinge*, the Pecke of Wheate at ij *s. viij d.* or iij *s.* the Pecke, and the Mutton at xij *d.* and so of the rest, after the lyke Prices, this Burden was not fealt ; but soch an Agrement betwixt the Soldiour and Countrie Man, and so desierous and lovinge one of an other, as there was no Repininge, but so welcome was the Gest to the Host, as their was ever Greiffe and Sadnes, at their Departinge, eche from other. And nowe although as moche be paied, as ever was in Rate, yet the Price growinge hier, and the Insolencye of the Soldiour more then it was wont to be, in exactinge of Money vpon the poore Fermors, and sometymes escapinge vncorrected for the same (which happneth as seldome as never, if they be complayned vpon) provoketh this Kickinge and Spurringe, at Cesse. Att the Beginninge when they found them selves greived at this Burden, they exhibited their Complainte by Supplicacion vnto me, and the Counsell, which we received verye willinglye, and I offered my selfe to ioyne with them in Advise, if any Way might be thought of to ease their Greives, and not any further to chardge the Quene ; for the Soldiour could not pay above the Rate he did for his Victuall, and yet of Necessitie he must be found at that Price, except they would vndertake to defende them selves, and lyve without the Soldiour. My Lord Chauncellor afterwardees tooke greate Travell to sett downe their Device, and had both the Gentlemen of the Countrie and Victuallers before hym, harde their Obiections, and the Victuallers Answers. And what he did in this Matter, and what he found, I referre to his Certificat and Reporte ; yet the Wilfulness of somme of the Gentlemen is soche, as not satisfied withe anye Thinge I can doo, or invent for their Goode, doo combine and conspire to lay their Purfes together, and to complayne of Cesse, and of me and my Governement. And therefore for the Firste, myne Opinion is, that your Lordships mightlye mainteyne it, with your grave Censure, for without that, or Subsidie in Liewe of that, her Majestie shall never reare a Revenue to beare the Chardge of the necessarie Defence of this Countrie : And for the other, what soever they shall say of me, or my Governement, I shall crave no more, but that I may be harde, before I be condemned. The poore Mans Burthen, whom I seeke most to ease, by Reason of the Revocacion of theise newe Freedomes, beare a farre more easye Chardge, since somme of the Gentlemen, their Neighbours,  
contribute



contribute with them more, then heretofore they did : They are glad and thankefull for it, though others repyne, and spurne at that, which they cannot in any Sorte remedie, as longe as they are not hable to defende and maynteine their owne, without the Ayde and Healpe of a Garrison to reside amongst them. It was avowched vnto me, in a generall Speach by the Countrey, that their was paid ix *l.* out of everye Plowghland for Cesse ; I offered to dischardge them for fowre Markes ; and this is the harde Hand and ill Will I beare to the Countrey, and therefore your Lordships may see what iust Cawse they have to complayne.

I have sent your Lordships, herewith, the State of the Chardge of the whole Yeare, begonne the First of *October*, 1575, and ended the Last of *September*, 1576, and cawsed the Auditor to make a perfecte Booke and Collection of the same ; and although I have somewhat exceded my Promyse, for this Yeares Chardge, the same hath growen cheifely by Payments and Imprests, I made out of my Assignacion for Matters growen dewe, before the Tyme I entred Governemente ; yet, for vrgent Cawses, and savinge her Majestie further Chardge, and to disbourden the Countrey of the Extorcions and Oppressions of the Soldiours, that remayned dischardged, and not paid, I cawsed to be issued oute, as may appeare more playnelye, by a Booke of Perticularities and Rates, set downe, and signed by Mr. Threasorer and the Auditor, which herewith I send to your Lordships ; of which Somme so disboursed for Things dewe before my Tyme, amountinge, in the Whole, to xv M. 2 C. lxiiij *l.* iij *s.* viij *d.* *Sterlinge*. I am humblye to crave Allowaunce and Consideracion at her Majesties Handes : Besides the large Imprest delyvered, by Order there vnknewen to me, or without my Privetie here, and some entred into Enterteinment so longe before their Comminge hether, and neverthelesse the whole Chardge contynued here, for the Service of the Countrey, as though no soche Allowaunce had bene graunted there, which grewe, in the Ende, to a double Chardge to the Quene. Moreover, this vnlooked for Broyle and Stirre in *Connaught*, which drewe some extraordinarye Exspence and Increase of her Majesties depe Chardge, that otherwise I meant to have bestowed in necessarie Reparacions, Fortificacions, and Buyldings, for Necessitie, Strength, and Defence of the Countrey ; so that, if theise extraordinarye Payments and Accidents had not happned, I had bene as farre vnder my Bondes, as nowe I have exceded them ; neither is it to be hoped for, or expected by any Possibilitie, that, this next Yeare, her Majesties Chardge can be lessened, theise Winters Warrs having bene allreadye so chardgeable : But as my principall Care and Travell cheifelye tendethe to cut of her Majesties great Chardge, and encrease her Highnes Revenue, both certeine and casuall, as moch daylye as I can, and possiblye may devise to doe, and to bringe eche Province to defraye his owne Chardge, and beare his owne Burthen : So, to make a more sound Foundation and Entraunce thereunto, I have, bothe in *Mounster* and *Connaught*, made Composicions with dyvers Lordes and Potentates of *Irish* Countries, for a certeine annuall Rent and Service to be answered to her Majestie, as may apeare by a Booke of a perticuler Rentall, sent to Mr. Secretarye *Walsinghame*, to be imparted to your Lordships. And although it may be, that the Payments of the *Irish* Lords, accordinge to their Composicions with her Majestie, will not be at all Tymes so duelye observed, as amongst the cyviller Sorte, wherebye there may be a Certainty sett downe of their Payments, by Recorde in the Surveior and Auditors Bookes, for the Lesseninge of her Majesties Chardge ; yet if Iustice may be contynued amoungst them, and not pulled away from them, I doubt not, within twoe or three Yeares, to make that as certeine a Rent and Revenue to the Crowne, as the *English* Pale yeldeth any. And therefore I hope your Lordships will consider, in the meane Tyme, that Things cannot be donne vpon the Soddeine, and looke for certeine and checker Payment at their Handes, as sone as Promise and Covenaut is past their Mouthes, but waye those Sorts of People in their Kindes, who must be trayned by Degrees, and wonne by lyttle and lyttle to knowe their Dueties, even as the Tree



bringethe forth his Fruite, and the Grounde yeldeth his Encrease of Grayne, not forthwith, but in due Season, and Contynauce of Tyme, which must be observed in them. So in lyke Sorte, in managinge of theise Things, Tyme must be had, and what Travell and Pollecy may do therein, I hope I shall performe to the good Lykinge of her Majestie and your Lordships. There is besides, for the Reducinge of *Mounster* and *Connaught* to more Plyantnes, and Aptnes to yeeld Obedience, and imbrace Iustice and Cyvilitie, severall Commissions devised (wherein the Commissioners take Travell) to apointe a Certeintie betwixt the Lorde and Tenaunt, that the Lorde may knowe what he should demaunde, and the Tenaunt what he should pay, to the Ende to abolishe all *Irish* Extorci- ons, and vniust Customes amongst them: Whiche Commissions have bene verye well proceded in, by the great Care and Dilligence of the Lord President of *Mounster*, and brought, in a Manner, to verye good Effecte in that Province. I lykewise sende vnto your Lordships, herewith, the Booke of the State of the Armye, and also a Booke of all soche Fees as are due to the Patenties, where- of, as may appeare to your Lordships, some have bene longe vnpaid. I hum- blye beseeche your Lordships to have spedie and gracious Consideracion of their Payments, that Money may be sent over hether, to dischardge that Debt; it wilbe greatlye to their Satisfaccions and Comforts, if, by your Order, soch spe- ciall Care be had of them in Tyme. For, if they should expecte their Payments to be made out of the Arreragies, as they are brought in, that will not be in a longe Tyme, and as the same comethe in, it must be imployd for the Payment of old Debts, due for Victualls taken vpp, for Wagies of Artificers, Laborers, and Stuffe taken by Commission for Buylings, for Wagies of Stipendaries, and other Extraordenaries, fit to be answered of those Arreragies; and therefore I humblye pray your Lordships, have spedie and gracious Consideracion of the Payment of the Patenties.

In my Memorials for *Connaught*, I leaft vnremembred to your Lordships the good Service donne by *Thomas Le Straunge*, and Capten *William Collyer*, whome I leaft in the Entervall, betwixt my first Iorney into *Connaught*, and the Settlinge Sir *Nicolas Malbye* Collonell there, to have in myne Absence the principall Rule of that Province; and beinge placed by me at *Ballyloughbrough*, a principall Howse of the Earle of *Clanrickardes*, they manfullye and valyauntlye defended bothe the Castle and the Towne; so that they beinge besiedged, with twoe thou- sand *Scottes* and *Irish*, brought thether by the Earles Sonnes, to dispossesse them of the Hold, they shewed soch Pollecy and Valor, in manninge of their Walles, and other Places of Strength and Defence, as they preserved the Towne, beinge verye large, that no one Howse or Cotage perished in it. And beinge in Nom- ber but one Hundered Footemen, and Fiffetye Horsemen at the most, they man- fully, sondrie Tymes, issued out vpon the Ennemye, and, at Tymes, slewe sixe principall Captenes and Gentlemen of Note and Accompte amongst them, and seaven Skore more of their Men and Soldiors, without Losse of any one Man, in all those hote Skirmishes. I humblye therefore beseeche your Lordships that they may receive your Lordships Lettres and Thankes, in Token of some good Al- lowance of their Service, which will be no small Ioy and Comforte vnto them, to finde that Testimonie of your Lordships Favors, which, in Troth, they have verye well deserved.

Some Hurte hath hapned of late in the *Kinges Countye*, by the soddeine Start- inge out of the *Oconnors*, growen cheifely by the vnadvised and negligent Deal- inge of somme put in Trust, who to hastelye gevinge Credite to the Othes of the Outlawes, dismissed the Gard of the Countrie, whereof insued the Burninge of some Ricks of Corne, and a fewe Cottagies, but nothings so moche as, I suppose, hath bene advertized over.

And where the Booke of Arreragies of the Quenes Debtes, which hath bene and is contynued, from Yeare to Yeare, and in Apparaunce and Bulke sheweth no smale Matter; so that great Hope hath bene conceived, of longe Tyme, to bringe in a great Porcion thereof towards the Answeringe of her Maiesties

owne



owne Debts, growen due here. For as moch as the Parties, vpon whome those Arreragies are contynued, are either for the most Parte dead, slayne, or in so miserable and poor Estate, as they are not in Case to answere theire Dewe, resting in Debt vpon them in any Sorte. And therefore, for that the same might more playnely appeare to her Majestie, which are sperate, and which are desperate Debtes, your Lordships should do well, in myne Opinion, to write expreffelye to the Auditor and Surveior, to certifie your Lordships the State of the said Arreragies, and which Debts be sperate, and which be desperate, and to yeelde you the best Reasons, why the Booke is contynued in Sorte as it is: And lykewise (for that somme more Proffitt might growe to her Majestie from the Parties or their Assignies, that owe the said Arreragies, if they might once gather Hope, that any reasonable Order might, in the Ende, be taken with them, and not vtterlye driven to dispaire of their Estates) to graunt me, and her Majesties Counsell here, a generall Commission to compounde with them att oure Discreacions, to the most Advantadge that may be to her Majestie; wherein I hope to make more Commoditie to her Highnes then now (in Sorte, as the Case standeth) is any Wayes to be hoped from at foche Debtors Handes; for where there is nothinge (they say) the Quene must loose her Right.

I intende, God willinge, within fewe Dayes, to repaier towards the Northe, and there to deale with *T. Oneill*, whome I have sent for to mete me at the *Newrye*, whether when he shall comme, I will compounde the best Bargayne I can for her Majestie, and likewise conclude with *Mac Gennesse*, and others of the *Irish* Lordes in those Partes, and certifie your Lordships of my Proceadings with them.

I will shortlye send over Bills for the Parliament, and then I will shewe my simple Advice, for Lettres for the Subsidye, which I differre till I be better informed of the Conclusion of theise Coniurates, who are yet in Hatchinge of their Devises. I may not omitt to make knowen to your Lordships the Worthines of the Lord Chauncellor, as the best belyked Man that ever was knowen to sitt in his Place, and, in deede, the best worthie for his Dilligence, Iudgement, and Dexteritye. And becawse I pittie the daylye Toyle he taketh, without Assistaunce to his Lykinge and Contentacion, and feare, that the Contynuaunce will hazarde his weake sickelye Boddye: I am therefore to put your Lordships in Remembraunce of the spedye Sendinge over of twoe learned Persons, the one to supplye the Place of a Iustice, the other to be her Majesties Attorney here; it hath bene my speciall Sute maney Tymes to your Lordships: I beseeche you therefore now, effectually remember it, that they may be apointed and sent hether with that Speede that convenientlye may be.

And now fearinge I have over wried your Lordships with my Tedioufnes of Diversity of Matter, ill cowched, and put together, I will ende with some speciall Requestes to your Lordships: First, your good Acceptaunce and Allowaunce of my Lettres for the Courte of the Marches and Marche Cawses, and your Answere vnto me vpon them, towchinge the Points and Perticularities, whiche before this I looked for. Next I crave, by your Lordships Mediations, to knowe her Majesties Resolucion in the Lykinge or Dislykinge of those Persons I recommended of late to her Majestie, to be placed in the Romes of Bischoppes heare, as namelye, for *Offery*, *Ardawgh*, and *Rosse* in *Carberye*. And, lastlye, for that, by reason of theise Winters Warres in *Connaught*, Supplye of Money must spedilye be had, to furnishe those necessarie Turnes of Service, which may not, without apparaunt Losse and Hinderaunce, be omitted: I therefore humblye beseeche your Lordships to take present Order, that aswell soch Money as is due alreadye the First of *January* present, as that whiche shalbe due the Last of *Marche* next, may be presentlye delyvered to the Threasorer, or his Factor there, to be spedilye convayed hether vnto me. And even so, withe my hartie Prayers for you all, and humble

Duetie



Duetie remembred to your good Lordships, I take my Leave. From *Dublin*,  
the xxviith of *Januarye*, 1576.

Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge

Freinde to commaund,

H. Sydney.

Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham.

S I R,

I Have received your Lettre of the xvith of *November* last, the xxiiijth of this *January* present, browght by my Servaunt *James Prescott*. And likewise sene soch Notes and Memorials as you delyvered to hym, to be imparted vnto me, and harde and vnderstand from hym, what you gave hym further in Chardge to say vnto me, vpon ech perticuler Pointe, for the which I hartelye thanke you. And must desire you, for the Presente, to hold me excused, that I answere not the same with myne owne Hand, partlye for that I am impedit by Multitude and Varietie of Matters, and thorough Urgencye of Busynes flittinge from Place to Place; and besides myne owne illegible Lettres and staggering Hand, wherein I finde soche Infirmitie, in the Weeldinge of my Pen, as it is very painefull for me to write. And withall, for that I meane very shortlye to write agayne, with myne owne Hand, vnto you at lardge, I desire you, for this Tyme, excuse me in this, and to expecte and accept that. And, first, I thanke you with all my Harte, that you take it thankefullye, any Thinge I have donne for Sir *Nicolas Malbye*, or Mr. *Waterhouse*, which I thinke verye well bestowed vpon them, and wilbe no lesse willinge nor readie hereafter to pleasure any of your Freindes, you shall recomende vnto me, in the best and freindliest Sorte I can, in lyke Manner as I will make bold with you for myne.

And towchinge the Pointes contained in the Earle of *Ormonds* Lettre, wherein first he desierethe to have an Execucion of an Order past by Sir *William Fitz William*, for Pryce Wynes to be paied by Straungers: I wold be glad therein, or in any Thinge els, to satisfie the Earle; but the Matter beinge of soch Weight, and for that neither his Lordship, nor any of his Auncestors, have at any Tyme had Possession of Price Wynes of Straungers, in the Havons of *Dublin* and *Drogheda*. And also, for that the Cittie of *Dublin*, and the Towne of *Drogheda*, against whome he would have the Order maynteyned, thinke them selves greatly interessed, that they should be condemned by an Order, and never called vnto it: And do offer, that if the Attorney and Solicitor, whose Opinions have bene alreadye certified of the Cawse, or any twoe Iudges of *England*, not *arbitrablye*, but *iudiciallye*, will affirme (after their Counsell be harde, who they wilbe reddye to send over at any Tyme) that the Earle ought to have Price Wynes upon Straungers; they will never stande in Tryall of the Matter any further, but yeelde to the Earle. But that an Order, taken agaynst one Straunger, should conclude all Straungers, they thinke therein, that they should be too hardlye dealt with all. Theise Respectes moved me, that I did not ratefie the Order, beinge not satisfied in Conscience of Therles Right. Neverthelesse, what I have donne to maynteyne the Order, and what Cawse the Earle hathe to complayne for any Thinge I have donne therein to his Preiudice, I referre the Declaracion of the whole State of the Cawse, and my Proceadings therein, to the Lorde Chauncellor, to whome I committed the Hearinge of the Matter.

To the Seconde, That my Lord of *Vpperofferye*, his Tenaunts and Followers, may come to Sessions, as the rest of the Countye of *Kilkenny*: It may like you to vnderstand, that this Iorney beinge ended for Conference with *T. O'Neill*, I have not onelye resolved to make *Vpperofferye* Shire Grounde; but all the  
other



other Membres, and Lymes of *Leynster*; so that therein the Earle may be satisfied.

For the Thirde, That I should deale favourablye in his Absence with soch as he leaft to take the Chardge of his Countrie and Tenaunts, what I have donne, and in what Sorte I have dealt with them, aswell in particuler as generall, for Confirmation of their Authoritie he leaft them; as also in the renewinge or grauntinge any other Commission or Authoritie, they have requyred at my Handes; I referre my Dealings with them, and Vfsage of them to their owne Reportes: And would wishe, that his Lordship should deale no lesse freindlye with me there, nor I do with his heare; then theise Matters could breede no Question betwixt us.

For the Order he writethe was not put in Execucion, if his Lordship meant that Order, which was taken for the *Dorowghe*: I do not remember, he made any further Demaunde, but to have the Possession of that, which was graunted vnto his Lordship from the Bishop of *Offerye*, and confirmed after by the Deane and Chapter; and that was ordered he should have: And I was moche offended with my Lord of *Vpperofferie*, as the Earles Agents can testifie, that he would stand in it, against the Earle. The Possession of that he had, or at the least might have had. But I see nowe, which I vnderstood not then, neither was their any for the Earle, that ever acquainted me withall: A Pyle buylt by my Lord of *Vpperofferies* Father, which the Earle claymeth, as Percell of the Bishoppes Landes, and so contained in his Graunte, which my Lord of *Vpperofferie* deniethe: There is an old ruynous Howse called *Bishoppes Courte*, that hath neither Dore, nor Wyndowe, good Flower, nor Rowffe, and lies open on all Sides, for the which I had thought the Contention had bene, and for the Landes belonging vnto it: This Pyle the Earle nowe challengethe, standeth on the other Side of the Water, and the Streame runninge betwixt; so that it is to be enqyred of by Commission, and by Verdict of the Freeholders of the Countrie, whether it hath bene at any Tyme taken, and reputed a Parcell of the Bishoppes Landes, or noe. And if it be founde to have bene, I shalbe as willinge the Earle should have it as the other; but this was not then, browght in Question before, which since hath bene opened.

And where you say, that it is looked for, that I should spare somme of the ordenarye Allowance from thence this Yeaere; and by Reason that this is not performed, Holde is taken (by somme that neither with moch Good to my selfe, nor yet to the Service) to my Disadvantage. I hope you will (as I perceive by your Notes you do) consider the Cawse of the Contynuanee of this Chardge. But theise Troubles of *Connaught* beinge ended, which dependeth for the cheife Pointe, as I have written to the Lords, on the Hope of the Earle of *Clanrickards* Inlargement; which Hope beinge once cut of, I doubt not then but *Connaught* wilbe quiet. And vntill that Tyme that *Connaught* be settled, Sparinge of Treasure thence, more then Spendinge above my Porcion, is not to be loked for; or vntill the Relieffe and Encrease of her Majesties Revenue, for the Discharge of Cesse, be agreed vpon: That donne and made vniverfall, fowre Thousand Pounds may be spared, from *Michelmas* next forward yearelye, and perhaps more, wherein I will travell to my vttermoost.

That I should avoyde all Occasions which might breede Trowbles, in respecte thereby to avoyde Chardge. Sir, I have ever loved and sought to settle a peaceable Governement, and all my Plotts and Devises have tended vnto that cheifley; and if I have bene either by Wilfulnes and Disobedience of somme, or by secrete Practise of others, crossed in this Course, the Occasion hath not at any Tyme growen from me; neither can I devise to followe a better Rule therein, then I have donne.

For the Confirmation of the Freindshipp betwixt the Earle of *Ormounde* and me, I wold be verye glad of it; neither, on my Parte, have I geven the Earle any Occasion of Discontentment: But what he hath desired at my Handes that I could do, he hath had it; he never asked me Pardon for any, that I denied hym; he never desired me to stay Pardon from any, that I have refuzed him: Those that he recommended to Offices of Chardge, I have accepted and



placed: Those he wold have dischardged, I have displaced; and all other Tokens of Favor and freindlye Goodwill, I have shewed hym: But for my Affection, that is not in my Power so to rule, as I can place it where I am directed, but some one Man I shall affecte more then an other: There be secret Instincts in those Cases, which will not be repressed; yet, in Matters of Iustice, I have and will beare my selfe so indifferent betwixt my Lord of *Or-mounde*, and my Lord of *Vpper Offerye*, as Right shall onlye prevayle, without Passion or Affection more to one, then to an other.

For the Allowaunce of Enterteinment to the Earle, of some such Porcion as is allowed to the Baron of *Vpper Offerye*, I meane this Service nowe in Action, against the *Omorres* and *Oconnors*, beinge finished, to allowe neither the one, nor the other, any Enterteinment at all; but save that and what I can besides, for the Lesseninge of her Majesties Chardge, which is called on daylye, and looked for at my Handes.

Touchinge the secret Lettres advertized hence, that there was never so extreme Imposicions laied vpon the *Englishe* Pale, and that the Soldiour, notwithstandinge his Payment is bourdenous to the Countrie. I assure you, Sir, that the Cesse and Bourthen vpon the Pale, is no greater nowe then it was wont to be; neither is the Outrage of the Soldiour soche, as there is any iust Cawse to complayne against him. For I have not onelye by expresse Proclamation restrayned the Soldiour from all Insolencies and Exactions, vpon extreme Payne for everye Offence he shall committ, but animated the Countrie Man to complayne vpon the Soldiour, if he passe the prescript Order and Rule I have apoynted him; wherevpon some Complaynts have bene brought vnto me, which, in Shewe, seemed greate at the Beginninge, and so by Complaynte they were made; but, in the Ende, when they have bene duely examined, nothinge materiall hath bene iustified and proved. And truelye, Sir, I am carefull to do the Countrie Good, and to prevent and take away from them all Cawses of Griefe and Complainte, but some busye hedded Lawyers, and discontented Gentlemen, that are towched with the Losse of their newe Freedomes: They are Procurers of theise Complaintes, more for Clamor, then for any Cryme, or iust Cawse of Greife they have.

For that it is saied I graunte maney Pardons, which breedeth Boldnes in those that are apte to offende: I never graunted fewer then nowe I do, nether graunt I any at all, but either at the speciall Sute of the Lord President of *Mounster*, the Collonell of *Connaught*, or at the Request of somme other that hath speciall Chardge vnder me. The Cawse they sue for them, and that I graunte them, is, for the better Quiet of the Countrie, and for Service Sake; other Respects moveth me not: For if he that hath bene an Outlawe, or other notorious Offendor, will nowe, vpon the Obteyninge of his Pardon, put in substancyall Suerties, hencefoorth to lyve obedientlye, and duetifully, and appear at all Sessions and Sifes, and answere in Iustice to every Mans Demaunde (for all the Pardons I graunte have that expresse Proviso) Good commeth to the Common Wealthe, and Safetie to the Subiecte, by Grauntinge of such Pardons. And therefore you may conceive by this, howe apt they be to complayne if they could finde Matter.

Concerninge the Answere to such Pointes of my Instructions as remayne yet vnanswered, I have herewith sent vnto you, to be imparted to the Lords, the Booke of the whole Chardge for the last Yeare; and an other Booke of the State of the Armye; the third a Rentall for *Mounster* and *Connaught*; and the fowerth of the Fees dewe to the Patenties; so that, as I take it, I have therein answered fully my Instructions.

And where I wrote unto you longe since for *Cornelius Obreino* to be preferred to the Bishoprick of *Rosse* in *Carberie*, Sir *John Petit* to *Ardagh*, and Mr. *David Cleire* to be Bishop of *Offerye*, I am estsones to put you in Remembraunce of them; and pray you to procure me her Majesties Resolucion and Answere for them, as sone as convenientlye you may. And for the last, if in Case it be so, that he be not thought worthye of the Place, but that I am crossed in my

Choyse



Choyse of hym ; and yet, in Troth, whatsoever is reported of hym, I assure you, he is a very honest and sufficient Man, and a Devyne and not a Civilian : Neverthelesse, if it shall not so stande with her Maiesties Pleasure, to allowe of my Recommendation of *Cleire* ; then, I pray you, commend Mr. *Walshe* vnto the Place, who is a very godlye and well learned Preacher, and soch a one as for his Modestie, Learninge, and other commendable Vertues, is verye worthye of that or a better Place.

And where I have bene earnestlye in Hand with Mr. *Agarde* for the Wallinge of *Arcklowe*, which he hath halfe promised, and wold vndertake to doe, if he might have a Patent onely duringe Pleasure of the Constableshipp of the Castell : For as moche as the Wallinge of the saied Towne, standinge in the Harte of a wylde Countrie, wold be a Meanes both to replenishe the Towne with People, and to drawe maney Artisans, and other mecanicall Persons, to dwell there, when they may be assured to remayne in Saffetye within Walles. And lykewise a great Cawse of Increase of Obedience and Civilitie in the Countrie, besides the Working of soch Commodities within the Towne, which are now transported over thence, for Lacke of soch People to be set on Woorke, to the great Hyndraunce and Preiudice of the Common Wealthe. I pray you therefore, for the common Benifitt of the Countrie, to procure Mr. *Agarde* a Patent of the saied Constableshipp ; it will encourage hym the rather to take vpon hym the Woorke.

*The rest off this Lettre finished and written with my Lords owne Hand, and so sent away.*

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham,*

*S I R,*

I Received a Lettre from you, dated from *Readinge*, and written on the Behalfe of a Freinde of yours, who, as it seameth, hath bene an earnest Sutor unto you, to obtaine for hym Lycence from her Majestie, to transporte over certeine Packes of Yarne out of this Countrie. And becawse the Matter might carrie a better Testimonie of my Goodwill and Allowaunce of the Sute (if that were brought in Question, or should neede to be shewed hereafter) you requyred my Lettre vnto you, to that Effecte, which I have not presentlye written as you desiered, becawse I wold be lothe to destroy a Creature of my Makinge, and an Invention of myne owne, which I devised for the Benifitt of the Commen Wealthe, that the People might be sett on Worke, and that the Commodities might be wrought within the Realme, and not to be transported hence rawe and vnwrought, as they were accustomed ; which, if it wold please you to looke into, and pervaie the Statute, (it is in Printe) you shall more playnelye perceiue the Grounde, wherevpon that Statute was made. If therefore I should nowe be the first Breaker of that I procured to be made, for the Good of this poore Countrie, and that doe of my selfe, without Consent of others, in a Thinge that may do so great a Hindraunce to the Commen Wealthe, and no Commoditye to the Sovereigne, I should not well allowe of myne owne Doings ; If nowe since Mr. *Hattons* Lycence is expired, the Grauntinge whereof was thought to be no Benifitt to the Countrie, I should be a Meanes to further an other Lycence of the same Nature : Yet becawse I would be lothe to denye you for any Freinde you write for any Thinge I might do : I wold wishe you to write your Lettre to me, and the Counsell here, to call some of the Marchaunts of the Porte Townes before vs, and to examyne the Matter of the Commoditye or Discommoditye of soche a Lycence, and certifie you what we finde by Conference with theim, and oure Opinions, what we thinke of the Grauntinge of it, wherein, if convenientlye, I may freinde you without to great Preiudice to others (the Quantitie not being great) you shall fynde howe reddie



reddie I wilbe to pleasure your Freinde for your Sake. And even so I bid you Farewell. From *Mellefont* the xxxth of *January*, 1576.

*Your assured loving Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Counsell.*

*My verye good Lords,*

**M**Y humble Duetye remembred to your honorable Lordships: After I was comme hether to deal in Cawses of the North, I received Lettres sent vnto me, by an expresse Messenger from the Archbisshopp of *Dublin*, to desier Lycence of me, to repaier into *England*, with somme Note and Testimonie from me, what I had found of hym here. And al be it the Motion semed to me at the first to be verye sodden: Yet consideringe the Manner of his Writinge, and the Conveyinge of his Meaninge, proceded from somme depe Concept of a perplexed Mynde, and a sorowfull Harte, for somme Matter that touched hym niere (as it semed) I could not denye hym so reasonable a Request, but graunted hym Leave to departe, with this Testimonie, that I have found hym reddye to comme to me at all Tymes, when I had Occasion to vse his Assistaunce for her Majesties Service, and verye willinge to sett forward any Thinge, that might either concerne the publike Benifitt, or Quiet, of the Countrey, or her Majesties Honnor or Proffit; besides a Man well geven, and zelous in Religion, dilligent in Preachinge, and no Nigarde in Hospitallitie, but a great Relyver of his poore Neighbours, and by his good Behaviour, and Dealinge, gayned both Love and Creditt, amongst those with whome he hath bene conversant; and caried hym selfe in that Reputacion in the Worlde, as I have not knowen hym at any Tyme, either detected or suspected of any notorious, or publike Crime. And thus moche I thought good to declare to your Lordships of hym, and that I have not had Cawse at any Tyme, to thinke otherwayes of hym, but as of a sound Councillor to the Quene, and good Minister to this Countrey and Common Wealthe. And even so, beseeching your Lordships favorable Acceptacion of hym, and in his Peticions (if he have any) to stand his good Lords: I humblye take my Leave. From the *Newrye* the xiith of *Februarie*, 1576.

*Your good Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.*

*May it please your most excellent Majestie,*

**B**Einge here at the *Newrie*, for Cawses of Conference with *T. Oneill*, and to deale in the Matters of the Northe. I received Lettres from Tharchbisshopp of *Dublin*, not conceived (as it semed to me) by the Phrase of his Writinge, without some great Perplexitie of Minde, and inwarde Sorrowe, and Greife of Harte; and made earnest Sute vnto me, to geve hym Lycence for a Tyme, to repaier over to your Majesties Presence, with some Testimonie from me, what I have found of hym here; and although it may like your Majestie, the Motion semed to me verye sodden; yet waying the Earnestnes of his Demaunde, thought his Occasion greate, and therefore lyke as I helde it expedient, to geve hym Lycence to departe, and not to deteine hym here: So I supposed it convenient thus farre to witnes of hym, that I have ever founde hym reddye to come when I had Occasion to call hym, to serve your Majestie; and in debatinge of Cawses, an vpright, and sound Councillor to the State, and

one



one willinge to advaunce and sett forwarde any Service, that might concerne either your Honnor or Benifitt, or the comen Quiet of the Countrie: Besides, I have found hym dilligent in the Woorkes of his Vocacion, zelous, and intire in Religion, a good Preacher, and one that as often occupied the Pulpitt, as any one of his Callinge, that I have harde in this Land; not spare in Hospitalitie, and so generally hath behaved hym selfe in the Woorld, as I have not knowen hym either detected or suspected of any notorious or publike Offence, but a Man that hath simply walked in the Feare of God (for any Thinge I knowe) and gayned Love and Creditt amongst those, with whome he hath bene most conversaunt. And thus having expressed that I thinke and fynde of hym, I humblye pray your Majestie, to stande his gracious Sovereigne, befeachinge the Almighty longe and happelye to preserve your Majestie to rule and reigne over vs, to your noble Hartes Desier, and to our inestimable Comforts. I most humblye take my Leave. From the Newrye the xijth of Februarye, 1576.

*Your Majesties most humble and obedient*

*Subiect and Servaunt,*

H. Sydney

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsyngham.*

*S I R,*

**W**Hereas of late certeine Agents, from the Marchaunt Straungers, of the *Lowe Countries*, have bene Sutors vnto me, that they might obtaine my Allowaunce, and good Consent, to have some convenient Place, within this Realme, assigned vnto them, where they might remayne and dwell in Saffetye together, in the Exercyse of their Religion, and be incorporated with certeine Freedomes, Privelidgies and Liberties, according to a Booke of Petitions they exhibited vnto me; I havinge withe the Advise of her Majesties Counsell, my Assistaunts here, had Consideracion of their Sute, and wayenge howe necessarie, and expediente it is, to have this Countrie more plentifullye peopled, and especiallye stored, with mecanicall and handye Craftes Men (whereof nowe there is to great Want and Scarcetie) for the Woorkinge of the Commodities, within the Lande; and likewise the rather, both to allure, and teache the Natyves of the Soyle, to be more industrious, and to learne to sett them selves a Woorke, wherebye so lardge Commoditye wold growe to the Countrie, Benifitt to her Majestie in the Encrease of her Custome, and otherwayse, in Licensinge the Straungers to reside and dwell here amongst them: I have therefore assented to dyvers of their Petitions, and put them in Comforte, that they shalbe both lovinglye receaved, countenanced by my Authoritie, and lykewise enioy soch Lyberties and Favor, as, in good Discreacion, I can graunte them. And for as moche as in their Removinge thence, to comme hither, they are to bringe over with them, both Money to sett their Artisans and handye Craftes Men on Woorke, Howsehold Stuffe, and other Vtenfills and Necessaries (such as in Removinge of Howseholds is accustomed) which they cannot doe, but they shall encurre Penaltie and Daunger of Lawe, and Forfeiture of soch Things as they shall transporte and carrye over, without speciall Lycence and Favor. I pray you extende your freindlye Goodwill towards them, and the Advancement of so good a Plott intended, for the Benifitt of this Realme, as to procure them a Pasporte, and Lycence, for the Transportacion of their Money, Howsehold Stuffe, Vtenfills, and other their Necessaries and Commodities, that they may not be stayed in their Comminge over, but may have fre Passage, payenge either no Custome, at all, or ells so reasonable a Rate for Custome, as they may not be discouraged of this their Adventure, at the Beginninge, which I hope in Tyme to come will torne to no small Commoditye to bothe the Realmes,

V O L. I.

4 U

if



if this Enterprife may be well favored and countenaunced: For it is a Thing I have longe wifhed, and fought for, to have this Countrie stored of Men of their Sorte (whereof there is in all Places of this Realme fo great Want): Their Factor, *Godfray Slabbard*, alias *Cotten*, will attende vpon you, for this Difpatche. I pray you both favor, and further hym in his reasonable Requests, the rather to haften hym, with his Companie hitherwards, which I exspecte at this next Springe. And even fo I bid you hartelye Farewell. From *Dublin*, 1576.

*Your affured lovinge Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.*

*May it please your most excellent Majestie,*

**T**HE Bearer hereof, *Sir Cormocke Mac Teige Mac Cartye*, hath desired Lycence to repaire over, to doe his Dutie to your Highnes; whiche he is drawen to dooe, fo moche the more, with an ernest Desier, for that he and his Aunceftors have so maney Yeares bene accompted loyall and duetifull Subiectes to the Crowne of *England*, and received Lettres from their Sovereignes, enriched with that worthie Blason and Title (which auntient Testimonies he kepes, as the rarest Jewells, and dearest Treasure he hathe) and yet hetherto nether he, nor any of his Aunceftors, have attained to that Felicitie, to have seene their Sovereignes; affirminge, that he hym selfe should be the first, that hath donne it, and thereby accompteth his Life, and State, so moche the more happier, then theirs was. And in Trothe, Madame, as he is not inferiour to any of them, nether in honest Qualities of the Mynde, nor Happines in Fortune, and Estimacion amongst his Equalls; yet in this Pointe he thinkethe him selfe farre to have exceded them all, that he may have Accessse to his Princes Presence, and beholde his deare Sovereigne, to his Ioy, and Comforte. His next Request is, that he may surrender his Landes into your Handes, and take them agayne of your Majestie, and yeld you Rente and Service; and last, that your Majestie will hold hym, in those Tearmes of your gracious Favor, as one of the dutiefulst, lowliest, and humble Subiecte, your Majestie hath of his Trayninge and Breedinge of all those Partes; for so I found hym at my beinge there, and placed him Sheriffee in the Countye of *Corcke*, and had that Service at his Handes, and that Readines to answere, that I commaunded and directed hym vnto; as I never held my selfe better satisfied of any Man of his Sorte, then of hym. I gave hym by the Hande to *Sir William Drewrie*, the President of the Province, where he dwellethe, who hath founde so good Effecte of his Travell in your Majesties Service, as he hath most speciallye and earnestlye recommended hym vnto me, nowe at the Leavinge of his Chardge of Sherifewicke, as the onelye odd Man he founde of this Countrie Birthe in *Mounster*, reddie to performe and execute that, that appertained to his Office. I therefore humblye beseache your Majestie, let hym fynde your gracious Acceptacion of his Service past, to his Comforte, and Encouragement of that to come; for assuredlye he deservethe to be moche cherished and made of, as a good Instrument of your Majesties Service, in the middest of those rude, and barbarous People, where Civilitie, and good Governement, and Tast of your Lawes, is but in her tender Infancye, and by Degrees to be hoped daylye to growe, to more Ripenes and Perfection, whiche I beseache God prosper your Hignes, that you may se complete, and perfect, in your most gracious and happie Reigne, to your immortall Fame, and perpetuall Memorie, to your Posteritie. And even so I most humblye take my Leave. From your Majesties Castle of *Dublin*, the of *Marche*, 1576.

*Your Majesties most bounden humble*

*Subiecte and Servaunte,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir*



*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell.*

*May it please your good Lordships,*

**T**H E Bringer hereof, Sir *Cormocke Mac Teige Mac Cartye*, havinge nowe ended his Chardge of Sherivaltie in the Countye of *Corcke* (where I placed hym) greatlye to his Commendacion, as may appeare by a Lettre sent me from the Lord President of that Province, the Copie whereof I herewith sende your Lordships, is nowe desierous to have Lycence to repaier thither, to do his Duetie to her Majestie, and to surrender his Landes into her Handes, and to take them agayne of her Highnes, and yeeld her Rent and Service. Younge *Ocaloghan* accompanieth hym thither lykewise, for that Purpose, to surrender his Landes, and to hold them agayne of her Majestie, vpon the lyke Condicion; he is Heire to his Grandfather, who is so aged and impotent a Man, as he hath geven vp, both the whole Chardge of his Countrie into his Handes, and assured his Landes vnto hym, beinge, by lawfull Discent, his next Heyre in Bloud. Off the first I have written in somme of my former Lettres to your Lordships, that I found him, for his Obedience to her Majestie, and her Lawes, and Disposicion to Civilitie, the rarest Man, that ever I found was borne in the *Irishbrey*, and therefore I told your Lordships, I entended to write more specialllye of hym, as of a speciall Man, and trewlye so I finde of hym, to be a speciall Man in deede: For his good Endeavours, and Forwardnes in the Advancement of her Majesties Service, geve me daylye new Occasion to encrease my good Opinion and Lykinge of hym everye Way. And therefore, I humblye beseeche your Lordships, let hym fynde thankfull Acceptacion of his Service at your Handes, and soche speedie Furtheraunce and Favor in his honest Sutes, as he may be encouraged to hold on the good Course he hath begonne, whiche vndoubtedlye he will doe, in doublinge his former Desertes, if, by your comfortable Speeches, he may receive good Countenaunce and Thankes, for that he hath donne alreadye. He is one desierous to have Iustice planted, and Civillytie imbrafed in his Countrie, and cravethe the due Correction of Offendors, and that they may be made of that Encline to Reformation, and seeke to obey her Majesties Lawes. And his playne Talke expresse the his honest Mynde, for he cannot disguise his Meaning; his Territorie is greate, and, in maney Commodities and Pleasures, abundant; he is desierous onelye to depende of the Crowne of *England*, as he and his Auncestors have donne, and to be well thought of by your Lordships, for his Loyaltie and Service. And even so humblye recommendinge hym, and his Cawse, to your Lordships grave Consideracions, I humblye take my Leave. From the Castle of *Dublin*, the                      of *Marche*, 1576.

*Your honorable Lordships assured*

*lovinge Freinde to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to his Son, Sir Philip Sydney.*

*Phillipp,*

**I** Have recommended this Bearer, Sir *Cormocke Mac Teige Mac Cartye*, aswell by my Lettres to her Majestie, as to the Lords, as one, that for his longe Fidellitie, and duetifull Behaviour, and Forwardnes to advance her Majesties Service, is to be cherished and made of. I would have you make hym knownen to my Lords, your Vnckles, and to other your Freindes in the Courte, as a speciall Man of this Countrie Birthe; and his Trayninge and Breedinge vpp. His Comminge over is to doe his Duetie to her Majestie, to surrender his Landes into her Majesties Handes, and to holde them agayne of her, in yeeldinge her Rent and Service. He is not the best Courtier, for his Bringinge vpp hath bene somewhat homelye, but his plaine Talke will well expresse his honest Mynde,



Mynde, which he beareth to the *Englishe* Governement ; and desierous he is of an vniverfall Reformation of this Countrie, vnder the most happie Reigne of her Majestie ; he is one, that in Hand and Harte, much honoreth me, and I have ever founde him iust of his Woorde, and forward in her Majesties Service. I recomende hym vnto you as my good Freinde, and a speciall Man ; acquainte hym, countenance hym, and further hym, as moche as you can. And so prayinge God to blesse you, and make you his contynuall Servaunt, I bid you Farewell. From the Castle of *Dublin*, the                      of *Marche*, 1576.

*Your lovinge naturall Father,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Councell.*

*My verye good Lords,*

**M**Y humble Duetie remembred to your honorable Lordships. After I had finished, and sent away my last Dispathe, addressed to your Lordships, from *Dublin*, the xxvijth of *January* last, I set forwardes immediatlye towards the Northe, and went as farre as the *Newrye*, of Intencion to speake with *Tirelaugh Lynaugh*, to conclude with hym the best Bargayne I could for her Majestie, vnto whome I had written afore, to come to me thither. He humbly, by Lettres (after he hard I was come) excused hym selfe vnto me, he could not repaier vnto me, partlye for that (as he alleadged) he was sicke and weake, and so not hable, with out Daunger of some apparaunt Perrill, to travell so farre : And somewhat he deferred longer (as it semed) for that he desiered, and made Shewe, as it were by newe Treatie to have larger Condicions at her Majesties Handes, then formerlye was concluded, betwene hym and me, together with Encrease of Territorie and Fee : But I found at length, it was but all Delay he went about, for he yeelded so moche to the fayre Speeches, and lewd Counsell of his Wyffe, as he would not come : Whose Designe is (and if it might take Place) to make her younger Sonnes, she had by *James Mac Conell* (her eldest Sonne beinge alreadye provided for in *Scotland*) Starcke in *Ireland* (for that is her Tearme) and therefore stayethe her Husband all that lyethe in her, that he should not yeeld to that Conformitie, as of hym selfe he was apt ennough, and enclyned vnto : Least if he should, her Plot for her younger Sonnes, would be quite overthrowen. For she supposethe, that if he kepe hym selfe a Loofe, and in Tearmes, as he dothe, the *Scotts* shall gett the better Footinge here, and soche a Plantinge and Setlinge in the Northe, by Contynuaunce of Tyme (as hard and difficult it wilbe to supplant them hereafter) for she sayeth she is not here, in Respecte of her selfe, but for the Benifitt of her Sonnes, and the Wealth and Good of her Countrie : And for a more cleire Manifestacion and Note, that she was the onely Lett of her Husbands Comminge vnto me to the *Newrye*, it appeareth in this, that he beinge at *Carigfergus*, desierous to be made free of the Towne, and so readye to take the Othe of his Freedome, she with held hym, and would not suffer hym to do it ; for (sayeth she) you have not bene yet with my Lord Deputie, you knowe not what Ende you shall have in your Cawties with hym. And therefore I would not have you take the Oth, and knowe not howe you shalbe able to kepe it. But *Piers* reported vnto me, that vpon somme private Conference *Terelaugh* had with hym, he told hym in secreate Sorte, that if I would come downe, and make Warre vpon the *Scotts*, and do one Dayes Service vpon them, that in deede they might feele my Forces, to make them stoope. He would put away his Wiffe, and do his best, to chase, and expulse all the *Scotts* out of *Ireland* : Yet mooste of his Strength consistethe by the *Scottes*, for he is not beloved, but rather hated of his owne Followers ; and without *Scotts* he is verye weake, and easye to be dealt with : And therefore I would wishe her Majestie shuld write to the Regent of *Scotland* (as formerlye I have written



written to her Majestie, or to your Lordships) that for the better Preservation of the Amytie, and Neybourhoode, betwixt her Majestie and the Kinge his Master, and their Dominions and Subiects, that he would, either by Lettre of Restrainte, or els by publique Edicte, forbid, aswell those of the meane Lande, as those of the out Ilandes, to comme hither: Vndoubtedlye, my Lords, it would make the Northe, easier to be governed, the People more quiet and obedient, and yeeld more both in Rent and Service to her Majestie, then without that they can be brought vnto. *Terelaugh* solicited and intreated me, at my Departinge from the *Newrye*, that the former Agreement he made with me at *Armach*, in November 1575, might be ratefied, which (by Reason I was presently drawn thence, by other Occasions) I rather yeelded vnto. But in Trothe I fynde he is easie enough to be subdued, what by Reason of his old Yeares (which rather covet Rest, and more willingly followe Quiet) his Infirmitie of Brayne and Boddye, geven to large Excesse and daylye Surffeit, and a Bullet or twoe in his Boddye, whereof he is not yet delyvered: So as if the rest of the Provinces were once settled, it were no hard Case to frame hym to do what I would, and to make hym little or great as I list my selfe. Duringe the Tyme of my Aboade at the *Newrye*, I concluded Agreement with *Mac Mahon*, who covenanteth to yeeld her Majestie in Rent 250 Bieues Yearelye, and a Laborer out of everye Howse, when Occasion of Service shall requyre, and the Ryfinge out to all Hostings and Iorneys, xij Horsemen, and xxiiij<sup>th</sup> Kerne; the Booke and Draught of which Agreement, concluded betwixt *Mac Mahon* and me, I sende to Mr. Secretarye, to be imparted to your Lordships. I lykewyse entred into Speache with some other of the Lords of that Province, who are desierous to make lyke Composicions with her Majestie as he hath donne. And I doubt not, if other more necessarie Occasions of Service, with drawe me not thence, but that I might freelye, without other Troubles and Impediments, spende but one Sommer there, to make all *Ulster* pay, certeine and good Tribuite to the Quene. But one Difficultie I finde, which geveth no small Impedimente in this Service, aswell in that Province as in others, which is, that I am restreyned absolutelye to make Composicion and Agreement with the *Irishrye*, when they make offer of Surrender vnto me; but that by Way of Mediacion, I must first certifie their Offers, and then expecte the Retorne of your Lordships Answeres: And the *Irishmen* thinke the Tyme so longe, if they be deferred, and not accepted at the first, when they shall make offer, as they imagyne, that there is no found Dealinge meante towards them; and that this Deferringe importethe no lesse, but that they shall never have that which they seeke for at her Majesties Handes, and that maketh maney of them to forbear to come vnto me, which otherwise would, yea, vpon their Knees, offer the Surrender of their Landes withall their Hartes. And therefore necessarie it were in my simple Opinion (savage your Lordships better Reformacions) for the Advancement of her Majesties Service, and the Disbourden of her Chardge, and the Increase of her Revenues, that I, and others with me here, should henceforth have absolute Commission sent vs, to deale without soche Circumstaunce and Ceremonie, and compounde with the *Irishrye* (I speake it, my Lords, for her Majesties Service) and then I would not doubt, but to make a spedye, and beneficiall Bargayne for her Majestie, and do a good Service to the State, and woorke no small Quiet to the Countrie: For all do not offer to surrender vpp their Landes, and take the same agayne by *Englishe* Tenure; but somme of them to surrender their Landes, and take it agayne at her Majesties Handes, to hold accordinge to the Custome of the Countrie. For where there are maney Pretendours, and collaterall Competitors to the Lande there, if the Lande should discende by *Englishe* Tenure to the eldest Chylde, the Striffe amongst the Competitors, would never be stinte, as longe as any of the Competitors were alyve: Experience hath taught it so maney Tymes, and in so maney Places, as I fynde rather Hurte then Good groweth of those Mannor of Surrendors. But contrarye wise, where there are fewe or no Competitors at all, and the Lorde that surrendereth hath sufficient

V O L. I. 4 X and



and hable Issue of his owne, there to extinguishe all Debate, the *English* Tenure (in myne Opinion) is the best : So that in theise Grauntes, a great Regarde must be had, and no generall Rule can be sett downe in the Case, but the Thing to be governed from Tyme to Tyme in good Discreacion, as Occasion shall fall oute.

*Mounster*, Thankes be to God, contynueth in good Quiet; moch the rather thorough the good, and pollitique Governement of Sir *William Drewrye*, Lord President there, whose vpright Justice, ioyned to his great Dilligence, Dexterie and Travell, to heare Greiffes and Complaintes, and so spedilye to redresse theim (as he dothe) his Severitie and Terror to the worst Sorte, in the Execucion of her Majesties Lawes vpon theim, and Courtesye and Bountye to those that deserve it, kepethe the Countrie in good Obedience, Cyvillitie, and Order: Somme Frowardenes he hath founde of late in the Earle of *Desmounde*, to yeeld to beare Cesse: Yet Fearefulnes in hym with all (as it seameth) to moche to offend hym, or the State, he is commen in to the President, and delyvered in his Men, that were demaunded (which before he denied) being in deede notorious Malefactors, and Breders of Vnquiet. His Brother, Sir *John*, is committed for Conference he had with *Shane Bourke*, and a Combinacion suspected to have bene concluded betwixt theim, for the Maintenaunce of *Shanes* Rebellion, Sir *John* promissinge to supplie *Shane* with Ayde out of *Mounster*, and so perswadinge hym to hold oute. He hath an Intencion to put away his owne Wyffe, and to matche in Marriage with *Shanes* Sister, who was *Orwacks* Wyffe, and of late forsaken by hym. The Intelligence (as I heare) betwixt *James Fytzmorice* and the Rebels, and their Complices, is still nourished; Lettres sent, and Mes-sagies curraunt betwixt theim, in Hope to have Force by *James* his Meanes thence, to invade here, as *James* promisseth by Lettres, for too maney there be, that carrie vnsounde Myndes, partlye for Religion, partlye for that by Reason of the resident and settled Authoritie there, they are bridled and restrayned daylye more, and more, from their wonted, and innate Tirrannies, which they are loth to forgoe.

I may not forgett to recomende to your Lordships, the great Travell and daylye Toyles of Sir *Nicholas Malbye* in *Connaught*, who thorough his contynuall Paynes, and infinite Labors, in the most harde Season of the Yeare, hath so broken the Harts, and daunted the Courages of the Rebels, as most of their Followers of any Accompte, have vtterlye forsaken them. The one Brother left the other, so that nowe they are so weake brought, as the onelye Hope of their Fathers Enlargement holdeth theim vpp, which if it were once determined, the intestine Warrs of this Countrie were sone finished, and without that, neither quiet Obedience nor Increase of Revenue are to be loked for there. And therefore I meane to procede withe the Earle, accordinge to Lawe, for the longer the Matter is deferred, the more Harme, and Perrill, will ensue, both to the Quiet of that Countrie, and the State of the Realme; for he is so ill a Member (savage your Lordships Reformacions) to be kept any longer: And the Preservation of hym, and the Hope conceived of hym, doth not onelye infecte the Province of *Connaught*, but all the Members and Provinces adioyninge; yea, and I feare the whole Realme too. I have therefore thought it expediente (to the Ende the Manner of this disguysed Dealings, and his subtile and Rebellious Intencions and Practizes, may the better appeare to your Lordships, to iudge of his Deserts) to sende to Mr. Secretarye, to be imparted to your Lordships, aswell the Accusacions that are layed against hym, as the Examinacions, and Depositions that are taken of hym, and his Answeres to the same, both at large, and by Way of Abbreviate, for your Lordships more Easies (if you so like) to viewe, and peruse them.

*Rorie Oge Omore*, and *Cormocke Mac Cormocke Oconnor*, accompanied not with above 140 Men and Boyes, on the Third of this Monethe, bourned betwene vij or viij C. thatched Howsies, in a Markett Towne, called the *Naas*; they had not one Horseman, nor one Shot with them; they ranne thorough the Towne, beinge open, like Haggs and Furies of Hell, with Flakes of Fier fastened on Pooles



Pooles Ends, and so fiered the lowe thatched Howsies; and beinge a great windie Night, one Howse tooke Fier of an other in a Moment; they tarried not halfe an Howre in the Towne, neither stode they, vpon killinge or spoylinge of any. There was above fyve hundered Mennes Boddies in the Towne, manlyke enough in Apparaunce, but nether Manfull, nor Wakefull, as it seemed, for they confesse they were all aslepe in their Bedds, after they had filled them selves, and surfeyted vpon their Patrone Day; which Day is celebrated for the most Parte, of the People of this Countrie Birthe, with Glottonye and Idollatrie as farre as they dare. They had nether Watche, nor Gate shutt, and if they had had, yet the Towne is open on all Sides of it selfe; but this makethe a good Proffe, and playne Declaracion, what good Champions theise People are, for the Defence of a Frontier, where no Soldiours are planted to defende them; yet howe vnwillinge to beare any Chardge towards the Maintenaunce of them. Howe be it, I hope erre it be longe, so to devise to healpe them, as the Towne shalbe better, then ever it would have bene, if it had not bene bourned. Theise Rebels, *Moore*s, and *Oconnors*, excede not the Number of one hundred fightinge Men, nor of that Companie, not above fowre able to leade to anie Exploite; so moche of late hath their principall Men ben bereft them, by the great Dilligene, Pollecy, and Payne Takinge of my Lord of *Vpper Osserie*, Mr. *Cosbye*, *Harpoole*, and *Owen Mac Hige*.

In my last I touched somewhat at length to your Lordships, the great Repininge at the Cesse, that is made by certeine Gentlemen of the Pale, whose Freedomes, by Order and Proclamacion, are of late taken from them; and in Troth the Bourden is great, as the Prices and Rates of Things are nowe; but since I came first Governor to the Lande, the Prices that are geuen nowe, are as moche as the Things were woorth then in Value, to be sold in the Markett, so that the Rysinge and Fallinge of Prices, is the greatest Matter, that maketh the Bourden of Cesse hevier or lighter to the People. But I entende to make it generallie more easie, by makinge it more indifferent. The Gentlemens Resistance is onelye for their owne Particuler, which nether furthereth Service, nor benifitteth the Common Wealth. The poore Fermors and Tenaunts, who beare the Bourden in deede, are verie desierous to geve fyve Marke out of a Ploughland, to be eased of the rest, which if it may be reduced, generallie, in the whole Pale, it will amounte to 2500 *l. Sterlinge* by the Yeare, which is a good Encrease of Revenue to her Majestie, and therefore not easylie to be forgonne, except her Majestie will beare the Chardge of Victuall for the Souldior, at the Rates he nowe payeth, or els encrease his Wagies; for he may pay no more for his Victuallinge out of his Enterteinment then nowe he dothe. My Lord Chauncelor hath in publike Place, both learnedlye, discretelye, wiselye, and stowtelye dealt in the Matter of Cesse (a Thing as it seemeth moch kicked against) and rather lyke a Councellor at the Barre, then a Iudge vpon the Benche, argued, and defended the Cawse for the Quene against all the Impugners, and proved evidentlye, both by the auntient Lawes, Statutes, and Customes of this Realme, the Contynuaunce of the lyke Chardges, from Tyme to Tyme had ben, and the Princes Prerogatyve to impose it. And here, my good Lords, Occasion offereth me to speake, and withall to lament vnto your Lordships, the Weaknes of the Quenes learned Counsell here, the feble Assistaunce my Lord Chauncelor had by them that Day, who in the Debatinge of the Case of Cesse, beinge twoe Howres at the least, stode all the Whyle still and mute, and laied the Bourden vpon hym alone. And therefore I eftsones beseeche your Lordships (as maney Tymes I have donne afore) to sende twoe learned Lawyers hither, one to supplie the Place of Cheife Justice, the other of her Majesties Attorney. They will gayne her Majestie more, to the Proffitt of her Cofers, and the Creditt of the State, when soch Cawses, or the like, came in Question in one Dayes Service, then their Fees and Enterteinements will amounte vnto in a Yere. I beseeche your Lordships therefore once more, thinke of it, and make Choyce of somme, and lett them be spedilye sent hither. My Lord Chauncellor



is not able, considering his weake and feeble Boddye, to endure the lyke Payne and Toyle he hath donne hetherto. And, my Lords, he is to be thanked by your Lordships Lettres for that which is past, for trewlye he hathe verye well deserved it. And so is lykewise the Lorde President of *Mounster*, and *Sir Nicholas Malbye*, who in their Places and Rankes, do her Majestie honorable, and most acceptable Service; and soch Assistaunce I have at their Handes, for the Governement of those Provinces, they have in Chardge, as I hope in short Space, to decrease her Majesties Chardge there, and to encrease her Commodities here. And so to conclude, for the Matter of Cesse, I heare greivous Complainge is made of it there, and moche sett downe against it, and I speciallye complayned of, for it; my Advice, and Perswasion is, to your Lordships, that no Gripp be loosed of the Quenes Possessions, till I may answere their Opposicions.

In my last vnto your Lordships, amongest other Things, I besought your Lordships to knowe her Majesties Pleasure, and Resolucion, touchinge the Nomination of the Bisshopps, to the Bisshoppricks I wrote for, as namelye *Rosse* in *Carberye*, *Ardaugh*, and *Offorye*; to the last I recommended, as speciallye, and effectuallye as I could to her Majestie, Mr. *David Cleire*, a Man both of good Learninge, good Discreacion, and good Fame; and I gage it to your Lordships, vpon my Creditt, that he is the fittest Man, to be Bisshopp for that Place, in all Respects that may be named vnto it. I beseache you therefore, procure me her Majesties Answere for hym, and lykewise for those Particulers I writ of for *Wales*.

And even so beseachinge God, longe and happelye to preserve you all to the Service of her Majestie, the Good of the Countrie, and Comforte to your selves, I humblye take my Leave. From the Castle of *Dublin*, the xvijth of *March*, 1576.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Frende to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

Edward Waterhows, *Esq;* to Sir Henry Sydney.

*It may please your Lordship,*

UPPON the Arrivall of Mr. *Gifford*, with your last Letters, Mr. *Philip Sidney*, and he, brought them to my Lord of *Essex*, and deliverid such farder Credence as you commytted to Mr. *Gifforde*; both which did so concur in expressing the great Good-will conceyved by your Lordship towards hym; and as he then to them, and since mannie Tymes to me, hath utterid honorable Speeches of you, wytnissing both his thankfull Acceptacion and willing Mynd to requite your Lordship with mutual Frendship. And, lastly, it hath confirmid hym in Opinion of spedy Departure towards you, and followith his Dispatch with the greater Diligence. Yt semith that your Letters to the Lordes were not agreeable to the Erle of *Leicesters* Mynde, whereby he took Occasion of misliking Mr. *Giffords* Dispatch, and somewhat of Offence against you, as though your Lordship had not made it apparent enough to her Majesty, or the Lords, that you earnestly wishid the Erles Return. And it semed his Lordship wold have had you to have made somme particular Offer to the Erle of *Essex* or to his Friends. But your Lordship did much better, and farre more agreeable to my Lord of *Essex's* Mynd, who understanding of my Lord of *Lecesters* Conceyt, did forthwith satisfy his Lordship of your most freindly and effectual Dealing. Seming better to like of this Cours, then of eny other, wherwith my Lord of *Lecester* is now exceeding well satisfied.

Your Lordships modest Maner of Writing, as in Basshfulness, to offer eny Thing that might be refused, did move the Erle of *Essex* to answer Mr. *Philip* your Sonne (whom he by Adoption callith his) in this Sorte. That as he still reteineth his



first Opinion, that in Matters of his Recompence, and tending in some Things to a State of Enheritaunce; and in other Things to a Perpetuitie during Lief, he would not accept eny such Matter, but ymediatlie from a Prince. So in such Things as were temperall, and not perpetuall; but uppon Pleasure and removeable; he thought them most meet to proceed from the Governor, and a Derogacion to that State to accept them otherwise: And therefore protested, that in such Things he wold be as scrupulus to receive them here, as he is resolute, never to receyve the other there. So (as my Lord) you may suppress that Opinion in your self, that Disdeine might follow of your Offers, or Presumption imputed to you for them, when you see how the Erle is affectid, to do Honour to your self, aswell as to your Place. Neverthelesse it is a singular Vertue in your Lordship, that sitting in the Chaire of your Sovereign, you will yet looke backe to your owne Estate, and think uppon a Difference betwene the Erle and your self. And your nicest Freinds, and amongst them my Lord of *Lecester*, doth much allow of your Judgement and Temperaunce in that Point.

I referre to the Erles owne Letters, the Declaracion of your Intencion: But I find that your curteus Letter hath geven Norishment to the Sparks of good Will, that were before no more then kindelid. As I see it now growes to a Flame, I will never hereafter suspect Disagrement, unlesse it be in a frendly Contraverfie, who shall deserve best of other: Wherin perhaps your Lordship may be offendid, because you shall hardely fasten eny Thing of hym, but such as be ne there discomodius to your self, nor repugnant to the Cours of your Government. And herin their must be exceeding good Handeling, or els you shall finde hym more willing to followe his privat Causes, and to accompanie your Lordship privatelie in all your Journeies, then to deall in Thaffaires of the State in enie publique Action.

In this, and in all other Causes, that may concerne you bothe, I feele mine owne Disposition to do you both Service, if God had ordeinid my Returne with his Lordship: But finding his Estate to be such, as he hath not the Disposing of eny Part of her Majestys Purse (by whome her own Servants ought to lyve) and finding in my self a Desier, rather to live meanlie of a litell here, then to be chargeable to his Lordship there (to whome even for Conscience Sake I would not be burdenous) I have resolvid to yelde to Quietnesse, to prevent that which Yeares wold shortly of Necessiti, oblige me to: So as I referr to Mr. *Agard* and Mr. *Mably*, the Confirmacion and Maintenance of that Unity, betwixt your Lordship and this noble Erle, which, in my Hart, I have ever wishid, and which no honest Man will corrupt, or impugne.

And now somewhat to myne owne Particuler, especially that may concerne my Credit, with your Lordship. I heare that I have been uncurteusly dealt withall, namelie, by Mr. *Edward Moore*, who, in a great Assembly, when a Cause was publicuely herde before you, betweene the Viscount of *Gormanstoun*, and *Thomas Flemyng*; and the Viscount challenging *Flemyng* for his sworne Sarvaunt; such a Sarvaunt (quod Mr. *Moore*) as *Ed. Waterhouse* was to your Lordship. My Lord, as I can never forget, what a Master you were to me; so I trust, that your Lordship will ever remember the duetifull Devotion of my Service to you. I know you had, and have maynie more sufficient: But Mr. *Moore* might judge, that your extraordinary Favour then unto me, procedid of somewhat; if he ascribe nothing to Defect in me, but altogether to your owne Liking and Affection: Yet he might have forborne for your Sake, to have slandered me openly; but uppon Condition that your Lordship will in as publique a Place bring hym to charge me with ill Demeanure towards you, I wold yet breake my Determinacion, and upon my own Charges repair unto your Lordship to have this Matter duely tried.

I speake not this of eny Policy, for I nether sue for eny Thing, nor looke for eny Thing by eny Mans Favour, but only wold advoid this Note of Ingratitude towards your Lordship, that Mr. *Moore* hath publicuelie laid uppon me. I will conclude only with this, that if your Lordship, by enie spedy Dispatch, doe write eny thing hether concerning the Erle of *Essex*, let it not be in eny particuler Offer, but



in Generallity, perswading his speedy Retorne, for such Causes as you think most convenient in Reason : And so assuring your Lordship, of all good Will from the Erle, and of all duetefull Offices, from Mr. *Malby*, I humbly ende ; restinge such towards you, as you have heirtofore judgid ; and not as Mr. *Moore* laborith to persuade. At the Courte the xxith of *March*, 1575 \*.

*Your Lordships most bounden and*

*at Commandement,*

Ed. Waterhows.

*Orders sett downe by the Queenes moste excellent Majestie, with th' Advice of her Previe Counsell, for the Direction and Reformation of her Highnes Courte in the Marches of Wales, An. 1576.*

**W**Heareas of late Yeares, greate and sondrie Abuses and Disorders are crept into the Courte of the Marches of *Wales*, thorough Lacke of Care in suche inferior Ministers, to whome the Reformation thereof did appertaigne, wherebie Justice hath lackt his due Execution, and the Inhabitaunts dwelling within that Province haue bene fundrie Waies most grevoullie molested and vexed : As also by long Delaie of Sutes and newe Exactions of Fees greatlie impouerished, whearbie that Courte (which at the Begening was erected for the Ease and Relief of the said Inhabitaunts) is nowe become vnto them, thorough theis newe crept in Abuses, most grevous and intollerable, whereof her Majestie being aduertized, like a good and gracious Princeesse tending nothing more then the good Government and well Vsadge of her Subjects by due Execution of Justice, caused the Lords and others of her Previe Counsell to enter into Consideracion howe the saide Abuses might be removed, and her Subjects relieued, whoe therevppon after dilligent Pervsing of such former Orders as weare latelie sent vppe by the Vice President and Counsell there, and Conference had with the Justice of Assise and others of the Counsell of that Province, did sett downe the Orders following, which her Highnes Pleasure is, shalbe dulle and inviolably observed.

*Th'orders concerning the Courte.*

1. **F**IRST, it is ordered that everie Man that by Proces is called before the Court, shall not be compelled to answere till the thirde Courte, accompting the first Court of the Daie of his Apparaunce for one ; at which thirde Courte if the Defendant appeare not and take vp his Bill or the Copie thereof, to make his Answere, then a Contempt shall passe out against him at the fourthe Court, vppon *Affidavit* made.

2. *Item*, If the Defendant doe appeare the thirde Court, he shall haue three Courts after, or a Daie and a half to aske Councell, and to make his Answere at his Perill : Wherevppon, the Plaintiff (if Replication be requisitt, and the Parties not at Issue vppon the Answere) shall haue twoo Daies after the Bringing in of the Answere, to take out the Copie of the same, and to consulte with his Counsell and to make his Replication : And like Tyme the Defendaunt shall haue for making his Reioynder (if the Issue be not perfite before).

3. *Item*, For everie Daie that the Plaintife or Defendaunt shalbe letted for Lacke of suche Pleading, the Partie making such Defaulte shall yelde to the other Partie xij *d*, and if there be more than one of a Side, he shall yelde to everie one xij *d* for everie Daie : And if it be a Gentleman having Servaunts with him, after his Degree that is so limited, the same to be thereafter considered

\* This Letter should have come in the Year before.



by this Counsell, the other to be ordinarie taxed according to this Order, without troubling the Court therewith.

4. *Item*, If the Plaintiff do not fetch forth the Copie of Thanswere to replie within one Daie after the Bringing in of the Defendaunts Answere, the Defendant then to be dismissed with his Costs, and that to be no lesse then xij *d.* everie Daie, for everie Defendaunt, in Comming, Going, and Tarying, over and besides th'ordinarie Chardges of the Courte; except alwaies Matters of Land, wherein the Courte being moved, shall graunt longer Tyme to pleade, as the Consideracions alledged by the Parties shall require. And although the Tyme aboue limited be the longest Tyme, that Men maie not except in personall Causes for Bringing in of their Plee, yet that shalbe no Restraint, for any Man that will, for his owne Expedicion, bring in his Answere or Plea, rather before the Daie.

5. *Item*, If the Plaintiff make anie Departure from the Matter of his Bill in anie his Pleading, that the Defendaunt vpon Disclosing of the same, shall be dismissed with his Costs. Moreover, all Issues shalbe sett forth according to the Pleading by bothe Parties Counsell (if bothe do assent thereunto) or els the same shalbe sett forth by the Courte, and none otherwise.

6. *Item*, That no Man of Councell, after the Books be once at a perfite Issue, shall either charge the Parties, or molest the Court with superfluous Pledings, at his Perill; to be considered by the Councell vpon Disclosing of the same.

7. *Item*, All Maters of the Court from henceforth, shalbe called, ruled, and ordred by Booke of Assignments, in Order as they be assigned, without Respect of anie Person, except the Councell, for Consideracions, shall call some other Matter.

8. *Item*, For the lesse Trobling of the Counsell, all Witneses, all Seruers of Proces, and such as come to excuse Mens Apparaunces, shalbe brought out of the Courte before anie one of the Councell, somewhat before the Court, to take their Othes.

9. *Item*, No Books or Originalls of the Court shalbe deliuered to anie Man, from henceforth out of the Office, but onlie the Copie or Copies of the same, in such Sorte as is appointed by Th'instructions.

10. *Item*, Witneses brought into the Court, aswell for the Queene as for the Parties, shalbe examined with all Speede; at the least in twoo Daies after they be sworne, except the Nombre of them be such, as a longer Tyme shalbe thought requiset by the Iudgment of the Court: And that no Man being of Counsell with either of bothe Parties, or their Attornies, shalbe at Th'examination of them, nor shalbe admitted to the Sight of their Depositions, before they be published by the Court.

*For the Ministers of the saide Courte.*

**I**TEM, It is ordered that the Clarke that maketh anie Bill to be exhibited to the saide Lord President and Counsell, shall subscribe the same Bill with his owne Hand.

*Item*, The said Bill shall conteigne the Name, Sirname, Dwelling Place, the Towne or Parrish and Countie wheare the Plaintiff named in the saide Bill dothe inhabite: And whither the said Plaintiff be present at Th'exhibiting of the said Bill, or not.

*Item*, It shall conteigne the Name, Sirname, Dwelling Place, Towne, Parrish and Countie, wheare the Defendauntes named in the same Bill doe inhabite, and so ensuinglie in eny Order.

*Item*, The Clerck that writeth anie Bill, Answere, Replication, or such other; and speciallie the Order; shall write the same faire, without anie Rasing, Interlyning, or Blotting.

*Item,*



*Item*, It is ordered, That the Clercke of the Counsell shall haue for the Supplie of his Office the Nombre of twelve Clerks, to be allowed vnto him by the Lord President, or Vicepresident for the Tyme being, of which Nombre, the said Clerke shall haue Libertie hereafter vppon Occasion to chaunge anie, and to putte other in their Places, and shall not haue nor retaine anie more in Nombre, to write and supplie in his Office, but onlie the Nombre so to him assigned.

And it is ordered, that the same his Clerks, for Meyntynance of their Living, shall haue Libertie to make Bills and Answeres concerning all suche Causes (Titles excepted) as their Capacities can extend vnto, of all Matters determinable in this Courte.

And that they shall haue Libertie to serue out Proces; but that they, nor anie of them, shall enterprise or presume to move Causes in Courte, or speake as Attorney for anie Person, or to putt his Hand to anie Order of Continuance, except in Tyme of Vacation; nor shall exact nor take for their Doings, anie more Somme or Somes of Monie, then the Fees allowed for the Making of anie suche Bills and Answeres.

And it is likewise ordered, That all the said Vnder Clerks nowe allowed, and hereafter to be allowed and reteined by the Clerks of the Counsell, shalbe sworne before one of the same Counsell, as well to obserue and keepe the Points before specified: As safelie to keepe, and well to vse the Records and Books of the Courte, during the Tyme they shall haue anie of them in their Keping and Chardge, and shall do their Indeuour to write and make their Bookes and Copies faire and legible.

And it is ordered, That the Clercke of the Counsell in all Things (corporall Punishment excepted) shall answere for all their Clerks afore mencioned, and paie suche Fyne and Charge as hereafter shalbe assessed (if anie be) for Th'offences and Misdemeanors in Courte of anie his said Clercks.

*Item*, It is ordered, That the Attorneis which shalbe allowed, nor anie of them, shall haue anie more Clercks to write their Books and Causes of the Courte, but onlie one a Peece, of whome they shall make Choise. And shall haue Libertie hereafter, vppon the Death, either Preferment or Misliking of anie their Clercks, to putte others in their Places, so as they doe write faire, and be suche as this Counsell shall haue no iuste Cause to mislike of, and shall present his and their Names to the said Clerke of the Counsell, to be registered.

And it is ordered, That all and everie the said Attorneis Clerks shalbe sworne before one of this Counsell, aswell for his good Behauour towards the Courte and Counsell, as that he and they shall trulie and vprightlie deale concerning anie Matter in Courte, and shall make nor preferre anie Bill, Informacion, or other Writing, to be exhibited in this Courte, but suche as whereunto their Masters Hands shalbe subscribed.

And it is ordered, That the said Attorneis, and every of them, shall answere for everie their said Clerks, except in corporall Punishment, and paie suche Fine and Chardge as shalbe assessed (if anie be) for enie their Faults and Offences.

And wheare the Attorneis are increased to the Nombre of foure and twentie, which heretofore haue bene thought more then needefull, It is ordered, That they shalbe reduced presentlie by the Vicepresident, and twoo suche as shalbe appointed by him, to the Nombre of eightene; and after, if anie die or departe, then none to be admitted, vntill they shall come to the Nombre of xij, which saide Nombre of xij they shall not in anie wise after excede.

And for asmuch as the Framing and Perusing of Bookes and Pleadings in Matters of Weighte, dothe chieflie apperteigne to the Counsellors at the Barre; and that it is requisett they shoulde haue convenient Tyme and Oppertunitie for that Purpose, wherebie they maie be the riper to open the Causes for the better Instructions of the Courte, to induce them to proceade to founde Iudgement. And it is requisett the same Counsaillors shoulde be harde in Mocions touching



touching Insufficiencie of Pleadings, Wager of Lawe, for Evidence, and for Stallacions of Possessions ; which commonlie are moued amongst other Rules in the After Noone.

It is therefore considered and ordered, That henceforth, in every Terme, the said Counsellors shall have to theim allowed the After Noone of twoo Daies in everie Weeke, viz. *Tewsdaie* and *Friday*, to make their Mocions, and move their Rules, for th'onlie Causes aforefaide, and to be heard without Disturbance or Interruption of the Attorneis. And that the same Attorneis, in all other Daies of the Weeke in the After Noones, shall haue Libertie, likewise, to move their Rules for all other Matters, without Interruption of the Counsellors.

*What Matters shalbe hearde in Court.*

**F**IRST, that hereafter no Sutes in the Nature of Replevie, Debte without Specialtie, Detynue, Accord vppon the Case, or Accompt, shalbe hearaf-ter receiued in this Courte, vnlesse the Bill thereof, be signed by three of their Counsell at the least resident, wheare the Seale apperteyning to this Courte shalbe. And of the same three, the Lord President, or the Vicepresident, to be, if they be there resident at that Tyme, and in the Absence of theim, and either of them, then one of the Quorum appointed by Th'instructions to be one of those, which shoulde signe suche Bill or Bills.

And also if Complaint be made for Trespasse, or wrongfull Enttring or Disturbing of the Freehoulde, or of the Possession of anie Fermor, for Yeares or at Will, within anie of the twelve Shires of *Wales*, viz. *Flint*, *Denbigh*, *Mountgomerie*, *Merioneth*, *Carnarvon*, *Anglezey*, *Cardigan*, *Brecknocke*, *Glamorgan*, *Radnor*, *Carmarthen* and *Pembroke* ; and surmise he is not of Habilitie to trie the Common Lawe, in the Countrie wheare the Wrong was comitted, and therefore for Inequality praieeth to be hearde in that Courte : No Proces to be graunted vppon anie such Bill, except the Complaint be first exhibited to the Justice of Assise within that Countie, wheare the Cause of such Sute ariseth, and he, by Lettres or other Note of Allowaunce, recommend the Hearing of the same for that Cause, to this Councell.

And also if anie Complaint be exhibited concerning forceable Entrie, or forceable Withholding of Lands, the Surmise to be transversed, aswell as the Title, and the same to be hearde before the Title. And if the Surmise of the Force be not directlie proued in suche Sorte and Manner, or to like Effect as it is sett downe by the Complaint, then the Matter with full Costs, to the Defendant to be dismissed, and the Title not to be hearde.

*Item*, That no Title of Copieholde Land be hearde, except against the Quene, without manifest Testimonie, that the Complaynaunt cannot haue indifferent Triall in the Queenes Courte.

*Item*, That no Bill of Complaint be *preferred*, conteyning anie Title of Freholde, Copieholde, Estate for Yeares, or at Will, except the same be drawn by a Counsellor learned, and his Name subscribed. And that the like Order be obserued, touching Answeres to be made to suche Bills.

Also, if the Order passe with the Defendaunt by Dismission, or otherwise, that then he by himself, or his Attorney, exhibite his Bill of Costs, what the same hath bene since the Begenning of his Sute, and the same to be allowed to him by the Discreacion of the Courte, the greater Costes especiallie when it maie be proved, or appeare the Sute was prosecuted without Title. And if the Order passe with the Complaynaunt, then Costs to be for him in like Manner assessed.

If anie Councillor, Attornies, or Clerks, doe imbesell or convey out of Waie, anie of the Bookes of the Courte ; or after the same be signed by anie of the Councell, doe alter or chaunge the same, by rasinge, adding, or diminishing ; the same Person to be punished by Fine or Imprisonment, and vtterlie debar-



red from all Attendaunce and Service, in anie Place, Rome, or Office, belonging to the Courte.

*Item,* If anie Person preferre anie Bill to be signed, and alledg in his Bill, the Partie to be present, knowing him to be absent; to be hereafter excluded from making of Bills.

*Item,* That no Councillor be permitted to pleade at the Barre, except he haue ben Vtterbarrister in Courte for five Yeare Standing at the least, and the same Counsellor of suche Standing, to be allowed or disallowed by the Lord President, or Vicepresident, according to his honest Behauior.

And everie one hereafter to be admittted Councillor, Atturney, or Clercke, shall take the Othe of the Supremacie to be ministred vnto them openlie in Courte, by some of the Councell of this Courte.

If it be dylie proued, that anie Councillor, Atturney, or Clerke attending, prosecute anie Cause, before the Councell, in the Behalf of anie other, having Affuraunce or Promise of the Thing sued for, or anie Parte thereof; besids Fine and Imprisonment, to be excluded for ever from such Place of Service or Rome, as he vsed before. The like Order for such as shall take anie Somme or Sommes of Monie, and for the same assure the Client to haue Order to passe with him, and the like Order with all suche, having Fee certain appointed either for making Billes, Proceffe, Indorcements, Examination of Witneses, or other Execution of their Office, as shall for the Thexecuting thereof exact more or greater Fees.

*Item,* That no Proces be graunted for Thapperaunce of anie before this Councell, except the Value thereof excede fortie Shillings.

*Item,* If anie Surmise be made that the Value of the Thing sued for, excede fortie Shillings, and then, vppon Profe, it falleth oute to be vnder the Value of xl s. then vppon the Hearing, the Plaintiff to paie the Defendaunts Cofts, and in Consideracion of his false Surmise (although the Matter fall oute vppon Examinacion with the Plaintiff) yet the Defendaunt to be dismissed.

#### The Fees of the Courte.

|                                               |                                                                                                                  |          |
|-----------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|
| The Office of the Clercke<br>of the Counsell. | <b>F</b> IRST, For the Making of everie Bill<br>or Informacion, if it be by him made<br>and not otherwise        | viiij d. |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> Everie Indorcement vppon a Co-<br>mission by Consents or Placarde                                   | ij d.    |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> Everie Warrant for Proceffe                                                                         | ij d.    |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> Everie originall Order                                                                              | iiij d.  |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> The Copie of Th'ordre with Conty-<br>nuance                                                         | iiij d.  |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> For the finall Ordre                                                                                | iiij d.  |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> For everie Band and for the War-<br>rant thereof                                                    | xij d.   |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> The Recording of Apparaunce for<br>everie Person, so it be vppon Band and not<br>otherwise          | ij d.    |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> The Coppie of everie Bill, Answer, }<br>the rest of the Pleading and Witnes }                       | iiij d.  |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> The Copie of Evidences, and for<br>Exemplificacions, according to the Quantitie<br>of the Busines } |          |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> The Search of everie Recorde with-<br>in the Yeare }                                                | iiij d.  |
|                                               | <i>Item,</i> For Registring of everie finall Order<br>of the Partie, for whome the Order passeth }               | iiij d.  |
|                                               | And if it passe by Consents, either of<br>theim, ij d.                                                           | iiij d.  |
|                                               |                                                                                                                  | All      |



All which Fees shalbe to him allowed, in Case the said Billes, Orders, &c. being aboue limited, shall be by him, or his Clerks, made without putting the Subiect to doble Chardges.

|                          |   |                                           |          |
|--------------------------|---|-------------------------------------------|----------|
| Clerke Examiners Office. | { | First, The Examination of everie Witnesse | } xij d. |
|                          |   | and other Parson examined                 |          |
|                          | { | Item, For the Copie of everie Deposition  | } vj d.  |
|                          |   | and Examination                           |          |

|                                       |   |                                                                                                                       |         |
|---------------------------------------|---|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------|
| Fees for Attorneis and other Clercks. | { | In everie Mattere the Attornies Fees, one with another, for one whole Terme, and not for everie Retorn                | } ij s. |
|                                       |   | Item, The Making the Bill, and everie other Pleading to him that maketh it, and so as the fewter be not doble charged |         |
|                                       |   |                                                                                                                       | vij d.  |

|                   |   |                                                                                                                           |                 |
|-------------------|---|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|
| Councillors Fees. | { | The Counsellor for the Penning of everie Bill, drawn by an other, and Subscribing the same, for one whole Terme           | } iij s. iij d. |
|                   |   | Item, Everie Councillor for to be of Council, for his Interteignment for one Terme onlie, to the Fees of v s. and no more |                 |
|                   |   |                                                                                                                           | v s.            |

|                                                 |   |                                                                 |               |
|-------------------------------------------------|---|-----------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|
| The Secretarie and Clerke of the Signetts Fees. | { | First, for everie Lettre at the Sute of the Partie              | } vij d.      |
|                                                 |   | Item, For everie Placarde                                       |               |
|                                                 |   | Item, For everie Exemplification to the Secretary for the Seale |               |
|                                                 |   |                                                                 | ij s.         |
|                                                 |   |                                                                 | iij s. iij d. |

|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    |         |
|----------------------------------|---|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------|
| Fees appointed to the Solicitor. | { | First, for Recording Thapparaunce of everie Person appearing vpon Informacion of Treason, Murder, or Fellonie                                                                                                                                      | } ij d. |
|                                  |   | Item, For the Coppies of Examinacions in the saide Causes                                                                                                                                                                                          |         |
|                                  |   | Item, For the Searche thereof, the Recorde being founde                                                                                                                                                                                            |         |
|                                  |   | Item, For the Drawing everie Originall for Discharge or Bailment of everie Person, appearing to be examined for Appearaunce againe, or otherwise in the same Causes                                                                                |         |
|                                  |   | Item, For Making of every Obligation for the Queenes Majesties Vse in the Causes aforesaid                                                                                                                                                         |         |
|                                  |   | Item, For the Coppies of Minuts of everie of the same Obligacions                                                                                                                                                                                  |         |
|                                  |   | Item, For the Making of Informacions, for Forfeiture of anie of the said Obligacions taken, or to be taken to the Queenes Majesties Vse, for or concerning anie Person or Persons accused of anie of the said Offences, at the Sute of anie Partie |         |
|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | ij d.   |
|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | iij d.  |
|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | vij d.  |
|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | iij d.  |
|                                  |   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | xij d.  |

|                   |   |                                                                                                                                                 |               |
|-------------------|---|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------|
| The Porters Fees. | { | First, To take and receive, as th'ordinarie Fee, of eny Person comitted for a single Contempte, ij s. vj d. and not aboue, except for his Diets | } ij s. vj d. |
|                   |   |                                                                                                                                                 |               |



The Porters Fees.

|                   |                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |  |             |
|-------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|-------------|
| The Porters Fees. | Item, Of everie Person of a Degree of an Esquier, or aboue, comitted for Offence, to weare Irons; for the Comitment ii s. vj d. and for Discharge of the Irons (if he seeke to be discharged) the Some of ij s. vj d. |  | v s.        |
|                   | Item, For Commitments in the Causes next aforefaide, vnder the Degree of an Esquire, ij s. vj d.                                                                                                                      |  | ij s. vj d. |
|                   | Item, For the Diett at the Choice of twoo Tables, the one at viij d. the Meale —                                                                                                                                      |  | viii d.     |
|                   | Item, The other at vj d. the Meale —                                                                                                                                                                                  |  | vj d.       |

*For the Porters Lodge.*

*First,* That everie Person comitted to the Chardge of the Porter, shalbe their deteigned as a Prisoner, according to the Qualitie of Th'offence, and not to departe out of the Circuite of the Porters Lodge without speciall Licence of this Counsell, and to take and receive of them such Fees as hereafter ensueth.

*First,* For Treason, Murder, or Felonie, to be deteyned in Irons during the Counsells Pleasure, and not to departe out of the Circuite of the Porters Lodge.

*Item,* All Persons comitted for Contempts or anie Misdemeanors or Offences, wheare the Queene to haue a Fine for the same; they likewise to be deteigned in Prison without Sufferance to go Abroade, except by the speciall Licence of this Councell.

*Item,* To take and receive as their ordinarie Fee of everie Person comited for a single Contempt ii s. vi d. and not aboue except for Diett.

*Item,* To take and reteine of everie Person, being of the Degree of an Esquier and aboue, and comitted for anie Offence, for the which he is to weare Irones, to take for his Comitment ii s. vi d. And of every Person being comitted, as is aforefaid, and vnder the Degree of an Esquier ii s. vi d. for his Fee.

*Item,* It is further ordered, that the Porter shall continewallie haue in a Redines for the Interteignement of Prisoners, twoo Tables for Diett, to be in this Sorte kept; *viz.* The best and first Table at viii d. the Meale, the second at vi d. the Meale, and the same to be with Meate and Drinke so furnished as the Parties maie, according to their Paiment, haue therein competent and convenient. And the Partie comitted, to choose at his Comitment, at which of those Tables he will remaine. And if he faile to make Paiment of his Fees of Comitment, the Daie following his Commitment, and th'ordinary Charge of his Diett after everie Weeks Ende, then the Porter to take Bands for the due Paiment thereof.

*Item,* It is further ordered, that if anie Person be comitted to remaine in Warde vntill he shall paie the Quenes Majestie anie Some for a Fine, or to anie Person anie Somme of Monie to the same Partie by this Counsell ordred, or for the not Accomplishing of anie Order taken by this Counsell, and shall not conforme him to performe the Order, discharge the Fine, and make Paiment to the Parties, within one Moneth after the Tyme of his Comitment; then the Porter, at the Ende of the said Moneth, to give Knowledge to the Counsell thereof, to th'end Order therevppon maie be taken, that the Partie be removed to *Wigmore*, or suche other Place as this Counsell shall thincke meete.

And when anie Person is or shalbe comitted to Warde, there to remaine vntill he shall paie Fine or other Debts to the Queene, or any Some of Monie for Costs, or other Cause to the Partie; to detaine him as a Prisoner in Manner aforefaid, vntill the Attornie of the Partie, and the Clerck of the Fines, by a Note in Writing, subscribed by their Names vppon the Copie of the Submission, shall acknowledge



acknowledge to haue reteined the said Some, wherein he is chargeable aswell to the Queene as to the Partie.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

**T**HOS that departed out of *Ireland*, to complayne of the Cesse, are alreadie arrayued here for the same Purpos, notwithstanding you maie assure your self that the Matter shalbe so handled as your Authoritie shall receaue no Preiudice therebie; and yet yf their Griefes appeare to be such as maie seeme to requyer some Easement, th'one shalbe in such Sorte remedied as th'other shall no whitte be empayred.

My Lord of *Ormond* hearing that there is Advauntage taken against such her Majesties Tenants, as fayle in Payment of ther Rent at the Daies limited, desyred me to wryte vnto your Lordship to deale fauorable with him in that Behalf, in Case any of his Vndertenants of such Things as he farmeth of her Majestie do negligentlie faile in Payment, wherein he promifeth, that whereas heretofore they haue ben perhaps negligent, they shall hereafter prepare to paie at their Daie. Further he desyred me that for such Monie as shalbe deliuered to your Lordship there by this Bearer his Servaunte, yt would please you to write your Letters to the Lord Thresorer, to make Payment of the lyke Somme here vnto his Lordship, out of such Portyon of the Allotement as shalbe dewe at *Midsummer* Quarter. And so I commit your Lordship to God. From *Leycester* Howse, the viijth of *Aprill*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assured Frind,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**T**HIS poore Gentleman, *Peter Carye*, thoughe he have hir Majesties Lettres written vnto you for some Provision of Livynge to bee assigned him in *Ireland*, yet dyd he also verie earnestly crave at my Handes, some fewe Lynes to your Lordship in his Recommendation: Which, for that I have heard so good Report of his Honestie and faythfull Service, whereof the Marckes apparant on his Bodie make good Demonstration to all the World, I could in no wyse denye him. And therefore most hartelye praye you, bothe in that hir Majestie writethe of for him, and also in anie other Matter you may, to stand his good Lord: Wherby as you shall greatly comfort the poore Man, so shall you, no Doubt, encourage all other poore Souldiers in that Realme the more willingly to aduenture them selves in anie Service, seeynge by this Mans Example, that the same shall not bee vnrewarded. And so humbly committynge your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. From my Howse in *London* the xvijth of *Aprill*, 1577.

*Your Lordships to commaund,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*\* Sir Francis Walsyngham to his Cosen Edward Moore.*

**A**FTER my hartye Commendacions, yt is very latelic come to my Knowledge, that some Controuerfies haue happened betwin your Sonne in Lawe, *Edward Brabazon*, and you, especiallie about a Bill, signed by the late Lorde Deputy, vppon a Warraunt directed from her Majestie, to him; which Bill

*\* Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.*



or Fiat hath ben taken by you, out of Th'office of the *Hamper*, and deteyned still vppon the Misliking of the Partie. The Losse whervnto yt seemeth that the yong Gentlemen is dryuen, by the Stay of his Graunte, hath procured him, as I thinke, to reueale his Case and to seeke Remedye of yt; wherein, albeyt he hath vsed much Temperaunce, as loth to invey against him, that hath married his Mother; yet hath yt not ben so secreatlie handled but that yt is come to the Knowledge of such as are very hable, and as I doubt, exceeding willing to prosecute Matter of misliking against you; and I haue heard the Faulte so aggrauated, as though by Lawe yt weare a Thing most daingerous. Whervppon, willing to take the Deffence of your honest Causes, vppon me, I sent for *Brabazon*, and do fynd that he is more vrged to complaine, then willing of him selfe, yf he might otherwies haue the Matter compounded. And therefore having receauid his Promis to staye for a Tyme, I haue thought yt good to wishe you to satisfie him some Way, otherwies I fynd yt will not be sufficient to saye that some Parcell of your Lyvings weare conteyned in the Graunte, or by any such Meanes to excuse your Doings, but that yt wilbe construed, and I feare, punished as a greater Contempt then you are ware of; for nether can her Majestie like that her Hand should be abused, or the Signature of her Deputye in that Place so contemptuousslie dealt withall; which in Respect of your self I frindlie tell you, hoping you will in Tyme prevent yt, and so do bid you hartelie Fare well. From *Leycester Howse* the of *Aprill*, 1577.

*Your loving Cousin and Friend,*

Fra. Walsynham.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*Right honorable and my verie good Lords,*

I Desire you will advertize me, by your Lordships Lettres, whether, to what Place, and to whome to sende for the Men. And lykewise Order wold be geven to the Captens and Soldiors, to comme when I sende for theim; my Desier is to have this Number levied in, *Sowth Wales* and *North Wales*, and the *Englishe* Shires within the Presidencye there. It is most requisite lykewise in myne Opinion (if it so lyke your Honnors) that a Masse of Munition convenient for soch a Number, or more, should be sent; and that to remayne in Store vnspent, except this Occasion fall out, and her Majestie shalbe duelye answered agayne of that Proporcion she sendethe hither, at the Master of the Ordenaunce Handes, except the same should chaunce to be spent in Resistinge this Invasiō; and without Money and Municion, beinge the Forces and Synewes of Warre, nothinge is to be hoped can be done, for the Repulsinge of any forreine Power. And for that I daylye heare by Intelligence the Confirmacion of theise Advertizements of forreine Invasiō, both what Preparacion is made, and what Number of Men are appointed, and in what Arreadines they are to sett forward, and that their full Intencion is to arryve in somme one Haven or other, towarde the West of this Lande, before Harvest next. I beseeche your Lordships thinke of the Weightines of the Cawse, the Honnor of the Quene, and Safetie of the Realme, and you cannot be so carefull to foresee, and prevent the Daunger that may ensue; for the Townes, for the moste Parte, in those Partes are all so weake (*Lymericke* onelye excepted) which is somewhat gardable, that it is almost impossible to kepe the Forreiners out, if they should attempt to comme: And therefore necessarie it were to have some Shippinge to be prepared and rigged vp, and sent Abroade to scower the Seas, and to be in a Readines to watche, and attende vpon *James Fitzmorris* Comminge; the rather to prevent this Attempt intended by hym against this Realme. For the hollowe Hartes and Disposicions both of the Lords theim selves, and the popular Sorte are so altogether geven to Papistrie, and apt to Innovacions, and Chaunges, as I dare not in any Sorte trust to their Forces. And therefore, my Lords, I humblye beseeche you once againe, have more speciall Care of me, that both, Money,  
Municion,



Munition, and Shippinge be presentlye sent, and Soldiours levied, and put in Readines to come hither, when I sende for them. And although the Number of a Thowsand be but fewe ; yet beinge well sortēd and chosē, I will venter my selfe with that Number with soch Bandes and Companies, as I have alreadye hearē.

There have bene afore you, as I heare, *Barnabye Scurlocke* and his Companions, who repine at her Majesties Prerogatyve for Cesse. They be bad Instruments for her Majesties Service, and so your Lordships shall fynde them ; and by their lewd Perswasions maney Men be drawen, to resist the Yeeldinge of Cesse, hopinge daylye of the Comforts and good Successe theise their Agents shall fynde there. For *Scurlocke*, before his Departure hence, threatned a Gentleman called *Garrot Wesley*, beinge Sheriffe of one of the principallest, and best Countie within the Pale, that if he should distreine or levye any Cesse, either for the Vse of the Garrison, or Provision of my Howsehold, for any Speache, Commaundement, Processe, or any other Thinge, that I should send hym for that Purpose, that he would endite hym of Treason. This beinge vttered by a Man of that Apparaunce and Creditt, he seamethe to carrye in the Countrie, hath wrought soch an Opinion amongst the common Sorte, as maney refuze to pay Cesse, which otherwayes most willinglye would have donne it. The Punishinge of hym for this his vndecent, and vnduetifull Speache, will bringe maney to more Pliantnes, and due Obedience. I speake it, my Lords, duetifullye, and without Passion or Affeccion any Wayes to the Man. And his Fellowe, *Richard Newtervill*, is as seditious, and mutinous a Person, as this Realme hath any, who although he hath had all his Lyvinge and Preferment by the Quene, doth yet more secrete Hurte with his Practizes, in sowinge Discorde, and Discention, devisinge Matters daylye to complayne vpon, and never satisfied with any Answer ; a common Proctor, and Promoter of any Cawse, that may either hynder her Majestie in Benifitt, disquiēt the Countrie or trouble the State : As he doth more Harme where he commeth, and breede more Vnquiet and Discontentment amonge the People, then any one Man hath donne in this Realme theise maney Yeares. And the better to allure others to beleve hym, and to drawe them to followe his Devises, he sticketh not to reporte, and so geveth it foorth, that this Nobleman, and that Nobleman be of the same Mynde he is of, yea and that he hath their Lettres to shewe : So that onelye by his Lewdnes, Vntrothes, and Misreportes, he gayneth his best Creditt amongst the Multitude, who maketh hym a Pillar of their Common Wealthe. The severe and due Correction of hym will woorcke soch good Effecte, and procure soch Obedience in this Countrie, as no one Thinge more, for he is one of the cheife Postes thei sticke to. And if he onelye, that bad Fellowe, *Newtervill*, had not bene the Impediment, by his Practizes and lewd Perswasions in the Countrie, I would not have doubted, but afore this Tyme to have created vnto her Majestie, in this Conversion of Cesse, ten thowsand Markes of yearelye Revenue. Of *Burnell* I will say little, but wishe he had bene better occupied, for he is a Man well spoken and towardlye enough otherwayes, if he would have applied hym selfe to his Profession, and followed his Clyents Cawsies, and not so busilye have medled with her Majesties Prerogatyve, which is not lymitted by *Magna Charta*, nor found in *Litiletons* Tenures, nor written in the Bookes of Assises ; but registred in the Remembraunces of her Majesties *Eschequer*, and remayne in the Rolles of Recordes of the *Tower*, as her Majesties Threasure. It were good therefore he were taught to knowe it better, if he have not yet learned so farre. And for the Cesse, it is the Quenes Right, it is her Royaltie, verye longe and of Auntientye contynued, and found to have had a Beinge, by the Name of *Cesse* and *Cessor*, in the auntient Rolles of Lawes, that are extant in this Lande ; the Impugners thereof are the more severelye to be dealt withall, which I referre to your Lordships grave, wise, and honorable Consideracions. And if this Manner of bearinge of Cesse, might be converted into an annual Rent, wherebye the Soldiour might in some Sorte be waged, and borne, and her Majestie eased of somme Chardgies,

the



the Plott were good, and soch a one as I cannot buyld vpon a better. And therefore, my Lords, it is to be stocke in, and maintained, and not suffered any Wayes to goe to the Ground, for it is her Majesties Prerogatyve and Enheritaunce, and may not be geven away. And for that it may be thought most lykelye, that the Enformers against me there, will suggest to her Majestie and your Lordships, that my hard Dealinge with them, in not yeelding them contented and good Answers, hath bene the Cawse of theire Complayninge there to your Lordships, to seeke Redresse at your Handes; becawse they founde so lyttle Comforte at myne: I humblye pray your Lordships to write to the Councell here, to certifie your Lordships the Manner of the Proceadinge for the Cesse, and their Opinion of it. And even so beseachinge God, to prosper you and all your honorable Proceadings, I humblye take my Leave. From *Kilmaynghame*, the xvth of *Maij*, 1577.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde humblye to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.*

**I**N the lowliest Manner I can, I most humblye beseache your most excellent Majestie, to pardon me that I have so seldome written to your Highnes: So bad a Delyverie of my Minde I have by Pen, and so illeagible it is when I do it my selfe, as I rather thought it necessarye for me, to addresse that which I had to write to the Lordes of your Majesties Councell, and to pray them to relate the same to your Highnes, then convenient to trouble your selfe with it. But nowe hearinge from some of my private Freindes there, that I am complayned of to your Majestie, do presume in Defence of my selfe, to write thus rudelye. As I am enformed theyr Complainte is for that they are chardged with *Cesse*, and annoyed with Disorder of the Soldiours: And for that your Majestie may the better knowe, what that *Cesse* is, it may like the same to vnderstand, that it is a Quantitie of Vittell, and a Prisage sett vpon the same, necessarye for soch Soldiours as here your Majestie is contented, to be at Chardge with for their Defence, and of so moche as is thought competent for the Expence of your Deputies Howse, so farre vnder the Valewe, as it goethe betwene Partye and Partye, as the Soldiour may lyve of his Wagies, and your Highnes Officer of his Enterteinment; and this to be taxed by your Highnes Deputie, and your Councell here established, callinge to them the Nobilitie adioyninge. The which your Highnes Price (as nowe it is) exceedeth the Value of those Things so prised, till of verye late Yeares that the same was woorth in the Markett. The Masse of this for the most Parte hath alwayes bene layed vpon fyve *Englishe* Shires, and certeine *Irishe* Countries adioyninge, and the same distributed accordinge to the Nomber of the Ploughlandes into which the same Shires are devided: And accordinge to this accustomed and longe contynued Order, I for this Yeaere proceeded at the wonted Tyme, and vsed lyke Summons, as in lyke Cases had bene donne, and a greater Assemblie was at the same, then often Tymes hath bene sene in semblable Cawsies; but when the Proporcion was sene, al be it so streightlye allowed, as neither by Skill of Baker, Boutcher, or other Victualler, lesse could be apointed then was demaunded, and by the most agreed vpon to be delyvered: And although I was content to take but for the one Halfe of the Nomber of the Soldiours that your Majestie geveth Wagies to, yet lookinge vpon the Prices of all Things, as nowe they be valued and sold, so farre exceedinge your Highnes Price, which the Soldiours may not excede, vnles your Majestie will encrease their Wagies, to your Highnes vnreasonable, and intolerable Chardge, the Losse seamed so greate vnto them as the Burden was not to be borne: Affirminge that the Chardge of eche Ploughland came to above



x l. yea somme faied xij l. and in dede as the Prices of all Things presently are, I found them to be verie niere viij l. For Ease of whiche, by makinge the Burden to be borne more vniversallye, and so more indifferentlye, I by Proclamacion dissolved all Fredomes, that had not had their Contynuaunce Tyme out of Memorye of Man, whereof they were maney, the most by a Statute, pretendinge thereby an Encrease of Militarye Men, which God knoweth, and I sometyme have proved, are little woorth; which Statute was but for x Yeares, and those Yeares expired, maney by spetiall Favor of me, and other Governors, were graunted to sondrie Parsonnes. And al be it I knewe this was for the Common Wealthe, and for the Ease of the greatest Number: Yet hereat did dyvers, namelye those that now are in *England*, and some other who had their Fredomes suppressed by Proclamacion grevouslye repyne, still cryenge out that they were so pore, they were not able to beare any Burden any longar. It was proved they bare nothinge, and that they had as moche as ever their Auncestors had; but it was the base Tenaunt that bare the Bourden, who for the more Parte lyved more wretchedlye vnder his covetous and gredye Landlorde, havinge Freedome, than maney did contributinge with the Chardge of the Soldiour: Yet this not satisfieng them, but still exclayminge of the Greatnes of their Burden and Losse, I offered to acquite them for fyve Markes vpon the Plowghland, whereof in those fyve Shires (*Meib* alwayes accompted for ij) and so are fixe Divisions, I beleve may be found at the least 700 Plowghlandes, which after the Rate of fyve Markes vpon a Plowghland, dothe amounte to 2840 l. *Sterlinge* Yearelye, beside your accustomed Subsidie, which is 13 s. 4d. out of eche. Than deneid they flatlye, that they would agree to any Cesse, alleadginge that it was Will, and contrarye bothe to Reason and Lawe to impose any Chardge vpon them without Parliament or Graund Councell. It was proved before them, and that by the most auntient, and credible Recordes, that are in the Realme, that in all Ages, from the xjth of *Henrie the iiijth* to this Tyme, which is above 160 Yeares, there hath bene still from Tyme to Tyme, as Occasion moved, Chardgies imposed, and sometyme by Name of *Cesse* and *Cessor*, and sometyme by other Names, and not alwayes by Parliament, but oftner by the Governor and Councell, and soche of the Nobilitie as beinge sent for did comme, which made that Graund Councell they speake of: And of this Opinion for a Graund Councell, are the auntient, and the learnedst in the Lawe of this Countrie Birthe. Finallye they saied they were *Englishe* and free Subiectes, and if they could not have Remedye at my Handes, they would seeke it at your Majesties; I answered them, I found that your Highnes and Progenitors had had it, I found you in Possession of it, and I would have it, vntill I knewe your Majesties Pleasure to the Contrarye. They desired me I wold write in their Favor: That I denied, vnlesse they would shewe me, what they would shue for; they desired me to geve them Leave to goe over, I told them I would not forbid them to goe.

The other Complaine (as I heare) that they make is, that I beare to moche withe the Insolencye of the Soldiore; which I protest before God, and will prove before your Majestie, or whome your Highnes will appointe, I do not, but do punishe severelye when I fynd any Matter proved against a Soldiour, whiche seldome or never I do, but when the Soldiour is appointed (thorough the Wilfulnes, of the People thereunto animated by the Landlord, to assist the Sheriffe or other Officer) to levye that which is apointed for the Soldiours: It must be confessed, that Soldiours are no Angells, nor yet amonge Men the harmelest Creatures. But this I dare avowe, that there is not in *Christendome* a Garrison, not remayninge in a closed Towne, that doth lesse Hurte to the Countrie where they do remayne, than the Soldiours of *Ireland* do, to the good Subiectes of the same. Thus moche, for so moche as I yet learne I am complayned of, and if there be any more, I hope to myne owne Discharge, and your Highnes Satisfaccion, being hard, I shall cleare my selfe; vntill which Tyme I do most humblye crave your Majesties gracious Suspence.

V O L. I.

5 B

I knowe



I knowe they will inculke into your Highnes most gracious and readye Eares, to heare the Greiffe of your Subiectes Povertye. But if I were their faythfull Advocate, knowinge them as I do, I could not tell howe to make Demonstracion thereof and speake truelye. Their Land was never more vniversallye tilled, nor fuller of Cattle then presentlye. Their Citties and Townes more populous than ever in Memorye of Man. Their Howsies so farre excedinge their Auncestors, that they may be thought rather, to be an other and a newe People, then Descendentes of the old. In bestowing of their Children, a Gentleman I have knowen of this Age, geve more then three Baronnes in Tymes past. In Plate and all other Furniture of their Howsies, in Apparrell of them selves, Wyues and Children, there is as great Odds, betwene present Ages People, and their Prediceffors, as in *England* is betwene a Yeoman and a good Squier. Beside the Number trebled of their Sonnes, Kinsfolke, and Freinds nowe by them kept in the Vniversities, and at the Studdye of the Lawe of the Realme, to that whiche their Elders kept, and eche one they have standeth them in treble the Chardge that one stode the others in before; and there be somme principall Gentlemen, that have their Sonnes in *Lovayne*, *Doll*, *Rome*, and other Places, where your Majestie is rather hated, then honored in, and it is to be supposed not without their Chardiges. And as deare as all Things are, they fare more delicatelye, and chardgeouslye then ever they did. And me thinke it should little impoverishe the People to sell now for a Pounce, which, in Memory of Man, was not woorth an Noble, as longe as in Quantitie, regardinge Vnseasonablenes of the Tyme and other Accydents, they have as before Tyme they were wont to have; onelye their Greiffe is, that your Majestie (though for their owne Defence, without which they should have nothinge left with them) should have any Thinge vnder the Price, a privat Person would geve them. They are not able, they say, to geve to your Majestie ether Stuffe or Money for Fynding your Soldiours. But to furnishe that Triumuirat, now sent to suppress your Majesties Prerogatyve, they can make above 1000 *l.* if they have gathered so muche as they made their Reckninge for, whereof I wishe it would please your Majestie to geve Order, that they may be examined. And of their owne Estates, in respect of their Parentage; first for *Scurlocke*, I am sure he hath purchas'd more, and buylded more, then ever his Father, Graundfather, or all his Surname ever did; and his cheife Creditt and Meane to gett this, was by beinge Attorney to your Sister and your selfe, from which Office, for his Negligence and Wilfulnes, in the Tyme of my Lord of *Suffex* Governement, he was displaced: Since which Tyme (as he might) he never ceased to impugne *Englishe* Governement, and in espetiall your Majesties Prerogatyve. *Nettervill* is the younger Sonne of a meane and second Justice of one of the Benches, borne to nothinge, and yet onelye by your Majesties Bountye lyveth in better Countenaunce, then ever his Father did, or his elder Brother doth; and not withstandinge that all he hath, he holdeth of your Highnes in Effecte, yet is he (your sacred Majestie not offended with so bad a Tearme as his Lewdnes deserveth) as seditious a Varlett, and as great an Impugner of *Englishe* Governement, as any this Land beareth. *Burnells* Father is alyve, and an old Man; but neither in Youth nor Age lyved, or was able to lyve, in halfe that Apparaunce that this Man dothe. He thirsteth earnestlye, to see the *Englishe* Governement with drawn from hence: But, for ought I knowe, he is the least vn timer of the three. By theise, it may please your Majestie to iudge of the rest; I do not meane for Mallice, but for Wealthe and happie Estate, which, in dede, is vn timer, as farre as your Authoritie is extended, savinge the verye base Tenaunt who lyveth miserablye, and not so moche for any Burden of the Soldiour, as thorough the Gredines of his covetous Landlord, for no where lyve they more wretchedlye, then where the Land is freed from the Soldiours.

And thus moche, my most gracious Sovereigne Mistresse, which I feare will seame to moche to your Majestie, I have written of the Estate of the *Englishe* Pale in this Realme (as they tearme it) what I have donne, and what they practice,



practice ; which is a vniversall Conspiracye to denye any Supportacion for your Majesties Armye, without which, as I have often saied, neither you shall be obeyed, nor the good People vnoppressed. If their Practize and Standinge in this Matter had not bene, all *Mounster* (the Lyberties of the Earles of *Ormond* and *Desmound* onelye excepted) had concented to yeeld an annuall Rent out of their Lands for their Defence ; as the Vicount *Barrye* and *Mac Gartye Reough* alreadye have donne ; the first 150 *l.* the other 250 *l. Sterlinge*, by the Yeare : Theise twoe make not a sixth Parte of *Mounster*. So the twoe Lybertyes of *Tipperarie* and *Kerrie* submittinge to the same Contribucion, as I knowe no Reason why they should not ; *Mounster* wilbe woorth in newe encreased Rent, beside the old and the Impost, 3000 *l.* yearelye. And as *Mounster* had donne, there is no Doubt, all the rest of the remote or vnreclaymed Partes of the Realme would have donne ; and as confidently as I can conceive of any Thinge which sensiblye by Sight or Feeling I have not, so probablye am I perswaded, that if *Nettervill* had not bene, I had before this Tyme assured your Majestie of above 10000 Markes of Encrease of Revenue yearelye, more then I found you posselt of. For I held a streighter Hand in the Matter of Cesse, the rather to bringe them to a certeine Rent for the Release of the same. *Nettervill* geveth it forth, that he was animated to do that he hath donne, by somme of the greatest of this Countrey Birthe. Nowe for that your Majestie hath to do in this Countrey, this is my simple Opinion, your Highnes must resolve without Intervall, continuallye to kepe an Armye here. If you do not, Madame, though no Boddie comme to take *Ireland* from you, it will be geven from you and your Crowne for ever, and 20000 *l.* Spendinge, with three Monethes Settlinge by any forreine Prince of Force, will cost you and your Countries 200000 *l.* before they be expulsed : This Armye wilbe some what chardgeous, which Chardge, as I have often saied and written, if it please your Majestie to take that, which by your Lawes and iust Prerogatyve you may and ought to have in this Land ; suppress the abused Priveledgies of your Subiectes, wyll, to be Sovereigne in dede, and not in Title onelye. Finallye, do but animate me and your Councell here, to proceade iustlye, and lawfullye, without Respect of Parson, who ever he be ; and that your Majestie will mainteine vs, as I have saied often, so say I nowe agayne, that I see no Cawse to the Contrarye, but that *Ireland* may, and shall in short Tyme, yeeld Revenue ennough to wage a sufficient Garrison, beside the Chardgies of Cyvill Magistrates. I meane one thowсанд Soldiours to suppress any Insolencye of the Natyves of this Realme : Whereunto dyvers Things for your Advantage must be donne yet not begonne, in espetiall a Mynt ; and in this I desier to knowe your Majesties Pleasure, howe in generall you lyke of it ; which, if your Majestie doth, I will in particuler sett downe my simple Device, howe the same I trust shall torne to your Highnes Benifitt and Commoditie of your People. But in theise myne Offers Making, I am not a lyttle terrefied, by a Speache which your Highnes Chauncellor told me, he hard your Majestie say ; which was, that I promised, at the three Yeares Ende, you should not nede, to be at any more Chardge for *Ireland*, than *Ireland* would yeeld ; and yet the same reformed, and kept in Order, and everye Yeare some Chardgies to be diminished. God knoweth best, my intirelye revered Maystresse, from what Mynde any of my Offers hath proceaded. But if your Majestie will say that I so offered, I will not agayne say it ; but rather then I will hazard your Highnes Displeasure, at the three Yeares Ende, whereof halfe the Tyme is past, in a Matter subiect to so maney Accidentes, as that is, I will rather and presentlye, do prostrate my Lyffe and Landes before the Feete of your Highnes, to take what you list for my Proffer so inconsideratlye made, and howe your Majestie conceivethe, and what the same expectethe of me herein, I most humbly beseech your most gracious Majestie, with Speede let me be advertized, for till then I shall not with that Comforte, and Cherefulnes, proceade in your Highnes Service, as for the same, and Animatinge of others, is necessary I should.



Even as I was thus farre writinge this my tedious Letter to your Majestie, I received Advertizements from sondrye Places, in Confirmation of soch as before I did, aswell out of *England*, as out of *Fraunce*, and from thence not onelye, from spetiall Spiall there maintained to attend vpon *James Fitzmorrice*; but from sondrie honest Marchauntes, your Majesties saythfull and lovinge Subiectes, and lykewise by Reporte of some verye vehementlye suspected to be sent into this Land from hym, whereof some are apprehended, and have sent out Searche for others. That *James* is in Readines with Force to invade this your Realme. It is saied he bringeth with hym 4000 Shott, and dyvers principall Gentlemen of *Fraunce*. It is certeine, that he is retorned from *Rome*, where he was Princelyke entertained: He retorned not without a good Masse of Treasure: He lyveth now in *Fraunce* chardgeouslye. All my Advertizements I have imparted to this Bringer, Mr. *Waterhouse*, your Highnes Servaunt, who can and will delyver the same to your Majestie, or your Councell, as it may please you to commaund hym. Madame, I have great Cawse to mistrust the Fidellitie of the greatest Number of the People of this Countrie Birthe, of all Degrees; they be Papists, as I may well tearme them, Boddye and Soule. For not onelye in Matter of Religion they be *Romishe*, but for Government they wishe Chaunge, and to be ynder a Prince of their owne Supersticion. Since your Highnes Reign, the Papists never shewed soch Boldnes as nowe they do; the Perticulers I leave to this Bringars Reporte. I most humblye beseeche your Majestie to geve expresse Chardge to put Force in Reddynes, to resist this imminent Force, intended against your Countrie, and Furniture for the same Force to serve with. The Number I desier is twoe thousand Footemen furnished, whereof the most Parte Shott; a large Masse of Powder, Lead, Matche, and Peeces, with Pikes and short Weapon, and 20000 *l.* to mainteine that Warre. If that Invasion happen, your Majestie hath to consider, whether it be not requisite to man forth some Parte of your Navye; in my simple Opinion it were. He cometh with 14 Sayles, as I am advertized. But if there were but three of your Majesties, and those but of a mean Sorte, with this I have alreadye, I hope, if they mett with them, they would make them repent their Comminge hether; and though they came somewhat to late, and after they were landed, yet, if they light on their Shippes, I do trust in Almightye God, they shall pay dearelye for their Landinge, before they recover agayne newe Shippinge. Your Thresure and Munition may lye safe, vntouched in your Officers Custodye, as a dead Thresure, not to be issued, but for that Service onelye. If this Advertisement had not comme, I had, notwithstandinge some actuall Rebellion presentlye here, diminished your Highnes Chardge in your Garrison of above one thousand Poundes a Yeare, which I nowe contynue with Encrease, by as much as the Manninge and Vittellinge your Highnes Shippe cometh to, beside other great Chardge for Spiall and Messengers, Fortificacions, and other Extraordenaryes perteing to the same Service. Which I most humblye beseeche your Majestie gratioulye to allowe, and to pardon me, that I remember your Majestie, howe, in your Sisters Tyme, *Calles*, the Jewell and Honnor of *England*, was lost for Lacke of Force in Readines. Though the Keping of this be somewhat burdenous, yet would the Greiffe for the Losse of it, be more insupportable; the Recoverye farre more chardgeous; and, if it were not recovered, the Dishonor irreparable.

Most deare Sovereigne, in the Beginninge of this my rude and evell digested Lettre, as their was Cawse, I besought your Majestie to pardone me for so fel-dome Writinge to the same; and nowe have I greater Cawse: And so do I beseeche your Highnes for Encombringe the same, with so many ill written Lynes, which I had once donne with myne owne Hand; but when I beheld them, they seamed to me so evell favored, as I thought them not worthy to come into your Sight, but made them to be written out agayne, by one that can better do it then I.

And



And thus, praying the Almighty God to contynewe with Encrease your Majesties Felicitie, with a greater Number of Yeares then ever Prince reigned in this World, and to crowne you after with a celestially Diademe, I most humblye kisse the Feete of your sacred Majestie. From your Highnes Howse of Kilmayngbame, the xxth of Maij, 1577.

*Your Majesties most humble and*

*obedient Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Instructions and Memorials given by Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the noble Order, and Deputie of Ireland, &c. to Mr. Edward Waterhowse, being sent to her Majestie and the Lords, for the State and Causes of this Realme, the xxth of Maij, 1577.*

1. **F**IRST to delyver my Lettres to her Majestie, the Lords, and other my perticuler Freindes, and to present my humble Service, Duetye, Thankes, and Commendacions, with the rest of other freindlye Ceremonies, and Accomplements, severallye to eche in their Degrees, as Course of Speache, and Framinge of Tyme, will geve you Leave.

2. Next to imparte to her Majestie and the Lordes, when you shall have Accessse vnto them, or be demaunded of them, the peaceable and quiet State of this Countrie, vnder my Governement for the present, and the great Lykelyhood of the Contynuaunce thereof (if the same be not impeached by forreine Attempts) and to encrease and growe daylye to more Aptnes and Pliauntnes of Reformation, and to shewe that the People frame them selves daylye to be more menable, and better geven to imbrace Civillitie, by the Meanes of the Plantinge of Justice, vniversallye amongst them, and speciallye in the remoter Partes, who of late have tasted the Sweetenes and Fruites of Lawe and Justice; and therefore the rather desier, to surrender the old States they have in their Landes, to take the same againe of her Majestie, and yeeld her Rent and Service.

3. To reporte what Intelligencies I receive out of *Fraunce*, and dyvers other Places, beinge daylye put in Mynde, freshe and freshe of the Intencion, and Preparacion made against this Realme, by the suttle Devises and Practizes of *James Fytzmorris*, and his Confederates; howe imminent the Daunger is at Hand, and what hollowe Hartes, bothe the Lordes and People beare to this Governement, that generallye all the Realme is addicted to Papistrye; howe weake the Townes be, to kepe out Forreiners, and howe feeblye and howe weakelye I shalbe assisted by this Countrey People, if I should be driven to vse their Healpes, and howe little I have Cawse to trust to their Forces.

4. To solícite with all Care, Ernestnes and Dilligence you can, to have a Masse of Threasure, sent presentlye over hither to wage and enterteine Souldiours; to have lykewise a Masse of Munition to be sent forth with, to lye in Stoare to be imployed, if Neade shall requyre, as a dead Threasure; to have some Shippinge rigged, prepared, and set forth to the Seas, aswell to skowre the Coast, and distresse Pirates, as to resist the Entringe of forreine Force, all that possiblye they may: Solícite also to have twoe thousand Men, at the least, well sorted, appointed, and in Areadynes at the Waterside, to be in Order to comme when I fend, and to procure Lettres to me, from the Lords, to knowe where I shall haue them, and other Letters to be sent into the Countrie, to commaund the Captens and Souldiours to come, when I fende, vpon an Howers Warninge. And you may signifie to their Lordships that my Desier is, to have one Thowsand of the Men levied and taken vp in *South Wales*, and *North Wales*, and the other *English* Shires, vnder my Governement there; and the other Thowsand niere the Sea Side, in soche Places, as their Lordships thinke metest.



5. To declare the extraordinarie Expenses, I nowe defray, aswell to kepe and enterteine more Souldiours, then otherwise I would do, or necessarie it were, for the Lesseninge of her Majesties Chardgies, and Savinge of her Threasure, I should do; what Chardgies I am at to enterteine Mariners, and Sea Men, what for Fortificacion, what for Pyoners, and Laborers, and dyvers other extraordinarie Wayes, which nowe would have bene spared, if the Feare of forreine Attempts were not; and therefore solicite with all Care and Dilligence, that in Respekte of any extraordinarye Chardgies, by Reason of theise vnlooked for, and extraordinarie Occasions of forreine Attempts, that my next Quarterage be encreased one thow sand Poundes at the least, and the same presentlye to be sent me, by Mr. Threasorer, or his Agent.

6. To procure me Warraunt, from her Majestie, to my Lord Threasorer, for the Payment of M.DCClxxiii l. iiii s. viii d. *Sterlinge*, issued and layed out by me, out of myne owne Assignacion, for Thinges due before my Tyme, and Acceptacion of this Chardge and Governement; which Somme was promised me (as I take it) should presentlye have bene paied, by speciall Lettres from the Lords.

7. Not to forgett to descypher the Devises and lewd Practizes of *Barnabye Scurlocke*, *Richard Newtervill*, *Burnell*, and their Associates, and to declare what Discontentment and Mutynye, they have before their Departure hence sowed, and disperfed amongst the People, by their privy Whisperings, and bad and vnfounde Perswasions; what Comforte the Countrey conceiveth of good Successe by them, that they, by their Repininge at the Cesse, and the Disputinge of her Majesties Prerogatyve, have sett both *Mounster*, and all the rest of the Realme on Goge, and made them startle and draw backe at the Matter; and namelye that bad Fellowe, *Newtervill*, hath bene the sole, and onlye Occasion of the Hyndraunce of her Majestie, in this Conversion of Cesse, into Certeinetye of Rent, tenne thow sand Markes at the least. That he may therefore, for this Respekte, and his other lewd, presumptuous, arrogant, and vnduetifull Dealings to me, the State, and Governement, be more severelye dealt with all, above the rest, for Examples Sake; and his Companions to fynde as little Favor for their Presumption, and bold Attempt, against me, and the Governement, as in Reason, Equitie, and Honnor, may any Wayes be shewed them. For assuredlye the Correccion, and due Punishment of them, wilbe soch a Preparatyve for the Amendement of the rest of the malitious, mutinous, and stubborne Sorte here, as it will make them have apt Boddies, to receive wholesome Medicyne for the Reformation of them selves, and the Countrey, and learne them both to be more wise, and advised hereafter, howe to yeeld to the lewd Counsells, and Perswasions, of so malitious Perswaders, and vnfound Councellors, as the Enformers be, though in their owne Conceite, and the Opinion of the People, they are reputed wise, and Fathers of the Common Wealth, or els at least would make Showe so to be.

8. Not to omitt to declare to the Lords, and namelye to my Lord of *Leycester*, my Lord Threasorer, and Mr. Secretorye *Walsyngbame*, to what Boldnes and Insolencye, somme of the Gentlemen and Freeholders of the Pale, thorough this Lybertie are growen vnto, in so moche as they were not afrayd, to prefere an Enditement of Treason against me, and most of the Counsell, for Takinge of Cesse, and that in no meaner Place, then in the *Kings Benche*, and shewe them the Bill of Enditement.

9. To remember, to delyver to Mr. Secretorye, the Copies of soch Intelligencies, of forreine Advertizements, as I gave you, and to shewe my Lord of *Slanes* Letters, both to my Lord of *Leycester*, to hym, and the Lords.

10. To solicite to have Warraunte from her Majestie to me, for the Admission and Consecration of the three Bishops, I have so often and perticulerlye written of, both to Mr. Secretorye, and the Lords, as namelye *David Cleire* to be Bishopp of *Offerie*, *John Petit* to be Bishopp of *Ardaugh*, and *Cornelius Obreion*, Bishopp of *Rosse* in *Carberye*.

11. To



11. To sollicite Mr. Secretorie for the Preferment of the Bill, to her Majesties gracious Signature, for my Sonne, *Robert Sydney*, and *Edmund Molyneux*, to have the Framinge and Makinge, of all originall Bills, and Making out of all Orders for Proceſſe of Apparaunce. The Lords have bene acquainted with the Sute, by my Lettres vnto them of late; and namelye my Lord of *Leyceſter*, and Mr. Secretorye more perticulerlye; and longe agoe it was commended to the Lords, by my Lettres, to have passed in the Name of *Fowke Grivell*, and *Molyneux*. But, becauſe *Fowke Grivell* is ſpedd ſo well alreadye, of the Reuerſions of twoe of the beſt Offices in that Courte, whereof I am glad, I have therefore in his Steede named my Sonne *Robert*, to be ioyned with *Molyneux*; I would therefore have you earnestlye, dilligentlye, and carefullye ſolicite it. And for the better Furtherance, and Expedition in the Sute, you ſhall do well to entreate my Lord Threaſorers good Will and Conſent, for that he hath heretofore, as it is thought, not bene the beſt affected vnto it. But you may nowe reſolve his Lordſhip of my good Lykinge, full Conſent, and Allowaunce of the Matter, that it ſhould goe forward, and take Place.

12. Solicite me a ſpedie Anſwere touchinge my Lorde of *Clanrickards* Caſe, and procure to be ſent thence the Manner, Order, and Proceſſe, that is uſed for Tryall of Noblemen, for here is no Preſident thereof to be found.

13. You muſt tell my Lord Treasorer and Mr. Secretorie *Walsingham*, that, at their Inſtaunce and ſpeciall Recommendation of Doctour *Hector*, and his Cawſies, that I am and wilbe as carefull to do hym Good, as I can any Wayes deviſe to do; and for that Purpoſe I will preſentlye write to the Lord Preſident in the Matter; but the Tyme is verye vnapt for the preſent, to enter into Cawſies of that Nature. That the Spoyle and Diſorder was committed within *Deſmounds* Liberties, and the Matter not ordered and decreed ſo autentikelye againſt *Deſmounde*, as any faſt Hold may be gathered vpon that Order to recover the Debt. And you may add withall, howe hardlye any Money is got out of *Deſmounds* Handes, and howe careleſſe he is to anſwere his Credit, or pay any Debt, and nowe ſpeciallye, ſince he hath his Sonne out of *England*, which was the beſt and moſt aſſured Pledge of his Loyaltie, and framed hym to ſome Shewe of Obedience, and that his Sendinge hether was without my Knowledge or Conſent. Howe be it I will deale as effectuallye as I can, and more preciſely then if it were myne owne Caſe, when the Doctour ſhall appointe hereafter any Agent or Factor here, to followe the Matter for hym.

14. To remember to ſhewe the Lettre the Biſhopp of *Meithe* ſent me touchinge the Friers of the *Novan*, and reporte the Intelligences I delyvered you of the Synode at *Armache*.

15. To ſolicite to have a Commiſſion to compounde for the Arreragies which the Lords, by their Lettres vnto me, dated in *Marche* laſt, promiſed that they would be a Meanes to her Maſteſtie I ſhould have.

16. To ſolicite to have this Proporcion of Municion ſent, and delyvered here, by ſomme of the Officers of the Ordenaunce, or by ſomme other of Truſt, her Maſteſtie ſhall apointe to remayne as a dead Treasore in the Maſter of the Ordenaunce Chardge to her Maſteſties Uſe, and not to be imployed to any other Service, but onelye to reſiſt the Invaſion intended, and forreine Attemptes, viz.

Fyve Laſt of Corne Powder.

One Laſt of Serpentyne Powder.

Sixe Fodder of Lead.

Matche xxxiiij M. Weight.

Bowes iiij C.

Sheffes of Arrowes xij C.

Strings fyſtie Groſſe.

Pykes iiij C.

Blacke Bills, v C.

Halberds, CC.

Turkey Murions, CC.

Corceletts



Corceletts complete of the best Mold, CC.

Spades and Shovells, xx Dozen.

Pick Axes, CC.

Hedging Billes, C.

Reapinge Hookes, CC.

Coyles of Handrope, M Weight.

Ginne Ropes, CC Weight.

17. You must tell the Lords and Mr. Secretorie, in my Excuse, that where in their Lettres, I made Request for M Men onely, and in her Majesties for ij M. it proceeded of this, that for as moche as from Day to Day, I received fresher and fresher Advertizements of these forreine Attempts, I thought it verie necessarie to crave a greater Supplye, the better to be hable, if Nede be, to resist the Invasion.

18. To declare to Mr. Secretorie *Walsingham*, that that I wrote vnto you touchinge the Plott of the Reformation, he hath by his Lettres remembred me of, and tell hym, that the Foundation of that I have cheifely to buyld vpon, is the vniverfall Conversion of the Cesse into an annuall Rent, whereunto I pray hym put his healing Hand.

Theise be the principall Matters and Heddes I have nowe for the present to delyver you, which I pray and requyre you solícite and followe from Pointe to Pointe acordingly. And if any Thinge shall either be farther demaunded of you, or shall happ vpon Occasion to fall in Consideracion and Debate by her Majestie or the Lords, touhinge either myne owne Perticuler, or generallye of the State and Governement here, which I have neither in private Speache imparted vnto you, nor expressed in theise Memorials and Notes; you may therein acordinge to the Tyme, Place, and your best Discreacion, satisfie their Demaundes for the present as you can, and advertise me with Spede, what you have saied or donne therein, to the End if Nede requyre, I may from Tyme to Tyme supplye you with further Matter and Enstruccion.

H. Sydney.

*Spetiall Notes for Mr. Waterhowse to remember at the Courte, which were omitted in my Lords Instruccion, xxj<sup>o</sup> Maii, 1577. viz.*

FIRST, if Occasion fall out, to send over Men to resist the forreine Invasion intended by *James Fytzmorris* and the *Frenche*, that the Captens and Soldiours, that are to be levied in *Sowth Wales*, and the West Partes of *England*, may be sent and appointed to land at *Waterfford*; and those of *North Wales* and the Shyres adioininge, to be sent to *Dublin*.

2. A Masse of Victuall to be provided and sent with the Soldiours, aswell for those that direct their Course to *Waterfford*, as those that shall comme to *Dublin*, and namelye Corne, for that the same is not in any Sorte to be had or found here, and some Proporcion would lykewise be sent of Cheese, Butter, and soch other lyke grosse Provisions, for that those Kinds are both skarce to be had, and at excessyve Prices to be bought.

3. To recommend Sir *Nicholas Malbye*, and his Service in *Connaught*, which my Lord hath in Parte touched in my Lord Threasorers Lettres, and to declare what Lykelihood there is, if this Course be held thorough *Connaught*, that *Connaught* will shortlye be brought to beare *Connaughts* Chardge.

4. To declare the Order taken with my Lord *Mountgarrett*, and the great Presumptions, that are gathered against hym, to be an Aydor, Succorer, and Relyver of detected and proclaymed Rebels.

5. To shewe my Lord of *Leycester* the Originall or Copie of the S of 14 Lettre, written by Way of Warraunt and Commaundement to my Lord 11 of 4; and pray his Lordship to note the Manner of the Signature.

+

6. To



6. To present my most humble Dewtie, Service, and Thanks to Mr. Secretorie *Walsingham*, to whome, for his sondrie Favors, and perfect Tokens of Goodwill, I confesse my self at all Tymes to have bene most bovind. And beseeche hym to excuse me, that I nowe do not this by Lettre my selfe vnto hym, and that all this Whyle hetherto I have omitted to do it. Which hath not proceeded (you may assure hym) either for Lacke of Remembraunce of Dewtie, or Forgetfulnes of that which I have found at his Handes, but that some other Rule hath made me scylent, which henceforth I will not be.

7. To aske soch Planks as *William Foster* left upon the *Tower Wharffe*; they were forgotten by hym, as it should seame, for Want of Cariage: It would do well you should demaunde of *Foster* what is become of theim.

8. My Lord hath written to my Lord Threasorer, that he thinketh it the best Course for Doctor *Hector*, that hee make *James Gold*, her Majesties Attorney in the Province of *Mounster*, to be his Agent, for the Followinge of his Cawse against the Earl of *Desmounde*, for he is the aptest and most sufficient Man to do it. And what my Freindshipp may any Ways stand hym in steade, he shalbe sure of it.

*E. Molyneux.*

*A Declaracion howe and in what Manner the Towne of the Newrie, in the Realme of Irelande, maye be fortified by the Queenes Majestie, without her Highnes Chardge, by the Trayvell of Sir Nicholas Bagenall, her Highnes Marshall of Ireland, to Thadvancement and Establishment of the peasible Government of the North Parts of the Realme. With Sir Henry Sydneys Notes.*

**F**IRST, where the said *Nicholas* hath erected and buylded a Castle and Towne vpon the Ryver of *Carlingford*, beinge one of the least Havens in the Land, at a Place cawled the *Newry*: He fynding by good Reasons and Experience the said Castle and Towne to be the veary Occasions and Grownds wherby, in so short a Tyme, his Tenaunts and Neighbours, not only be growen to great Cyvylytye of Lyef, but also do geave theym selves altogether to get their Lyvings by the Manuraunce of the Grownde, and the Noble Men and Gentlemen neere vnto him, do vse and governe theym selvs in farre more quyet and orderly Sort then before the said Fortificacions they were accustomed to do. The which Towne beinge already trentched and fortified with a Rampier of Earth; so is it further to be considered, that if the same Towne were so walled with Stone, as Marchaunts, and other of good Habillities, might perswade theym selves to lyve there in good Saefty with there Shippes and Goods; then it were no Dowbt nor Question, but both Towne and Countrie, in veary short Tyme, wold become of suche Force and Strength, as her Maiestie shold not need to be at any Chardge in defending the Partes of the Northe, but shold allwayse have of theym selves great Strength and Force of Men there, to serue her Highnes as they shalbe comaunded.

The said Sir *Nicholas* maketh Offer vnto her Maiestie, vnder the Condicions hereafter expressed, that he will, at his awne Costs, walle the said Towne with Stone, hable and sufficient to defend Thennymie, and to buylde two or three Churches, a Jayle, a Court Howse for Thassemblye of the People, and Keeping of Lawe Dayes, and a Stone Bridge over the Ryver, which, by Estymacion, wilbe x or xj Arches, the Accomplishment of which Workes will stand him, by all Judgement, in fowrty Thowsand Pounds at the least.

In Consideracion of the Premisses, and that he may be the better enabled to finishe the said Worke, his Sute and Petition is as ensueth, viz.

*First*, That yt will please her Maiestie to graunte vnto the said Towne a Sentuary, that her Maiesties Subiects, and others, maye freely, for certeyne Yeres, lyve there under the Protections and Government of the said Sir



*Nicholas*, and his Heires or Affigns, notwithstanding any Offences by theym comytted, Treason, Mysprison of Treason, Petty Treason, Wilfull Murther, Robbing by the Highe Waye, Burglaries and Rapes onely excepted; with further Privisho, that suche Persons as be broken or shall breake, cawled Banckrupts, shall aryve at the said Towne of *Newry*, or to any Parte of the Lands adioyninge therevnto, there Names to be recorded; and the said Sir *Nicholas*, and his Heirs, to do his and their Endeavours, everye Waye, to cawse theym to answeare the Creadytors, as their Habillities shalbe founde hable. 'For  
' no Rape, Felony, or other Trespas, but for one Year, and that but for his  
' Parson; and for Det absolutely for one Year; and after that for vii Yeares; so  
' as within that one Year the Detter put in suffycient Surety to pay the Det at  
' seven Yeares End.'

*Item*, Further, it maye please her Maiestie to graunte, that yt maye be lawfull for the said Towne to traffacte withall Nations, asweil in Warre as in Peace, in as ample Sorte and Manner, as *Garney* or *Fersey* dothe. 'To dangerous and  
' to evyll a Presydent for me to move.'

*Item*, It may please her Maiestie to allowe him vnder his Leading iij C Soldiars of her Highnes ordynary Garrison there, duringe such Tyme as the said Walle of the said Towne, Bridge, Jayle, and Churches, be in Buyldinge, with Provifo, that ij C of the said iij C Soldiars shalbe at the Lord Deputies Appoyntment, at all Hostings, if Necessytie of the Cawse shall so requyre.  
'I cannot agree to thys.'

*Item*, It may also please her Maiestie to graunte him the Lone of certeyne Brasse Peeces, with Allowance of Shott and Powder for Defence of the Haven of the said Towne, during the Tyme of the said Fortificacions and Buyldings. 'The Lone of the Peecys I agre to without Chardge of Powder or  
' Shot.'

*Item*, It maye likewise please her Maiestie to incorporate the said Towne of the *Newrie*, and to graunt vnto the same every Weeke a *Thursdaye* Markett; and every Yere two Fayers, to contynewe as a Free Mart, every of theym, for seaven Dayes at the severall Tymes.

*Item*, It maye also please her Majestie, for the better Enhabling of the said Sir *Nicholas* to fynishe the said Worke, to joyne his Sonne *Henrye Bagenall* in Patent with him in his Office of Marshall, which by Gods Grace shall turne to the Advancement of your Majesties Service, and Peace of that Countrey. The Creadytt wherof shall gayne great Furtherance to his Worke, and much enable the said Sir *Nicholas*, to brynge the same with the more Expedition to good Ende, whereby your Majestie shall, amongst all Posteritie, obteyne a most honorable and perpetuall Fame; for the doinge wherof will to the World most evydently the same, to be the most benyficiall Acte to the Furtherans of the Common Wealth, and Advancement of Gods Glorie, that hath bin donne in that Lande by any Prynce this iij C Yeres. 'I wyllingly will further thys.'

*Lastly*, Where the said Sir *Nicholas* hath seruyd your Majestie as Cheiff Comysioner in the Province of *Vlster* xj Yeres, and hetherto hath not had any ordinary Allowaunce for the same, assuring him self, that those whome hath bin Lord Deputies, and the whole Realme, will saye that his Chardges and Expences therin, hath not bin inferior to either the Presydents of *Connaught* or *Mounster*: He humblie besecheth your Majestie, that if he be thought a fytt Personne to contynewe the said Chardge, then he maye have somme convenyent Allowaunce to him assigned for Thexecucion therof. 'I agre to thys with all my Hart, the  
' Graunt to be *Durante bene Placito*.'

And your Majesties said humble Servant, according to his bownden Dewtie, shall daylie praye to Almighty God for the longe and prosperous Contyneuance of your Majesties Raigne.



My good Knyght,

‘Y<sup>O</sup>U may se by thys I have not forgotten you, yet haply not so largely graunted as you would; but indeed as largely as I can yet concent to. Uppon Conferens it is possible that we may alter sum Thyng. At *Kilmaynbam* thys 21 May, 1577.’

Your fast Freynd,

H. Sydney.

Edward Waterhous, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.

It may please your Lordship,

I Write vnto you from *Hilbrie*, at my Landing there on *Wednesday* Night the 22th of May. The *Sondaie* following being *Whitsunday*, I deliuerid your Letters at the Court erly in the Morning; Mr. Secretary having perusid his, and conferrid with me, had Spech with my Lord of *Lecester*. And vppon Deliuery of the rest of my Lettres, and Euidence to the Lords, they grewe to a Consultacion towching the *French* Advertisements, wherof Sir *William Drury* had sent them a Copy the Daie before my Comyng; vppon Reading wherof, albeit (the Stat of *Fraunce* considerid) it was thought impossible that any Attempt cold be made by them this Year: Yet when their Lordships had considerid farder the dailie Confirmation of this Newes in *Irland*, the open Discords that the Papists make of them selfs, the Soliciting of the *Irishe*, or such as comm from the Traitor; the Sinode appointid at *Armaugh*, the Combinacion of *John Burk*, and Sir *John* of *Desmounde*, and the Obstinacy of those of the Pale: In Conclusion it was resolvid by them, and by good Persuacion confirmid by her Majestie, that your Lordship shall presently have fyve thousand Pounds for this next Quarter, and tenne thousand Pounds for a dead Masse not to be broken, but for this Extremity. Two thousand Men shall be put in Readines in the Counties of *Somersett*, *Devon*, *Cornwall*; and within your Lordships Commission of *Wales*, seuerall Provisions to be made for them of *Corne*, *Buttor*, and *Cheefe*; but not before you giue a newe Alarme.

Three gallant Shipps goe presently to the Sea, the *Lyon*, the *Swiftesuer*, and the *Dreadnought*; and your Proportion of Municion with somme Encrease shalbe presently sent you. If your Master of the Ordnance had not sett downe a miserable Proportion, your Lordship shuld haue had a Roiall Provision to haue remainid in Store with you, for their was appointid by the noble Erle of *Warwick*, xv Last of Pouder, and all Things answerable, but Mr. *Wingfields* Note marred all.

Hir Majestie angry at the first, when Money was demaundid, said, that *Henry Sidney* did allwaies seek to put her to Charge; but when the Lord of *Lecester* had perswaded, that the Money was not to be broken but vppon thes foren Matters, and that it was all one to haue Treasure and Municion ether there or heere; her Highnes consented to all.

Your Lordship shall do well, vppon Receipt of the Counselles Lettres, which shalbe presently sent you with thes Things, to geue them a generall Letter of effectuall Thanks, that they haue with such Expedition resoluid vppon your Releif, and particularly to my Lord Threasorer, my Lord Chamberlain, &c. for to my Lord of *Lecester* I know you will do, and in deed his Lordships Care of your Causes, extraordinary in it self, deserues the highest of Frendship. I haue not seen him so cairfull of you at enie Tyme.

Vppon *Wednesday* last, the Erles of *Lecester*, and *Warwick*, went to *Killingworth*, and from thence to *Buckstons*, and so as it is thought to *Wilton*, to the Lord of *Penbroke*, who with his Lady went towards *Wiltshier*, vppon the same Day that the Erles departed towards *Killingworth*.

†

Mr.



Mr. *Phillip Sidney* is retornid into *Flaunders*, and there staieth, as I heare, to christen the Prince of *Oraunges* Childe. He is looked for heere within tenne Daies; but he passed his Journey with Honor and good Opinions, both Abrode and at Home, and is helthfull for ought that I can lerne.

My Lord of *Ormound* findith him self greivd with the Ouerburdening of his Tennaunts of *Rathvilly* by the holding *Kerns*, which he saith hath spoiled his Tennaunts in that County; wherevpon I tooke Occasion to declare vnto him, that they had not done eny Thing but that which Sir *William Fitz William* had done the like; I declarid the hole Circumstance, and how *Hary Davells*, and he had testified the Receipt of the *Kern* Money in Sir *William Fytz Williams* Daies: I told him farder, it was for the Securitie of the hole Sheire, and the Sparing of his Lordship (being not made free by the Queins Letter) that had bene an Iniury to the rest of the County, because the Burden shuld not haue bene vnequally carried and more laid vpon them then of Right ought. He said to that Matter, your own Concordate had made it free, and your Profession of good Will to him did banishe Mistrust that he shold haue bene so vnkindly vsid in his Absence. I tooke a Copy of the Words of the Concordatum, which I send your Lordship enclosid. Lastly, I answered that you had dissolued all Feudores, saving such as were auncient, and I said your Lordship had Cause to think Vnkindnes in him, that he wold animate *Netterville*, and his Companions, to complayne of *Sesse*, and told him *Nettervilles* Speeches to my Lord of *Slane*. And my Lord of *Slanes* Caws to disprove *Newtervilis* Reports, that it might not take Roote in the Lordship. To that he protested, that he never wrot of eny such Matter, and that if *Netterville* wold advow it, he wold prove him a lieing Varlet; I said the Erle of *Desmond* left to his Discrecion, to deliver or not to deliver the Complaints he made to her Majesty, which he also refused with Othes. That he sawe not the Lettre, nether knewe the Contents, till her Majesty had red it. And so we departed; but truly, my Lord, in Respect of the Concordatum I wold it had not been.

The Triumvirat are still close Prisoners; the Reasing of Rent vpon the Vicount *Barry*, with the Increase of the Revenue in *Connoght*, be generally liked; and great Hope conceyvid of a large Revenue if that Cours be followid; yet all Men be not resoluidd that the *Sesse* may be in Equity so converted, but rather mainteyned as a Prerogative for the Prince for the Releif of the Army, to be to the People ether more or lesse burdenus, as the Number of Soldiers shalbe necessary, mayny or fewe. I found the Mark whereat thes Words weir shott, and said that I was fuer the last *Sesse* was demandid but for V Hundred Soldiers, and lesser then that Number cold not be mainteynid in the most quiet Tymes hereafter. It was answered, that the Cesse of the Army ought to be laid vpon the *Irishe*; I said to her Majesty, if she wold compell them forceably. But if her Highnes had now xv C Soldiours, and laid but the third Part of the *Sesse* vpon the Pale, I thought it fauorable Dealing.

Mayny are Suters here for the Leading of the newe Bands, if they be levied; but I haue overthrowen their Sewtes, for it is reasonable your Lordship chuse your owne Captens and Officers, wherein howsoeuer you shall be procuered to chuse for privat Respects, I hope your Lordship will consider that your owne Safety, and the State standith vpon the good Choice of your Menn of Warre. And when your Request was opened by my Lord of *Leicester*, for one of Sufficiency to commaund vnder you, the Lords did excedingly well like of your Care in that Matter, and mayny were namid; emongst which your old Follower, *N. Errington*, was appointed to direct the Artillary.

Lastly, my Lord, let me remember your Lordship, that you live emongst a discontentid People; your Patent is to governe accordinge to your owne Discretion; if in this ticle Tyme they will be held with Lenity, it is the best Cours; but if that will not satisfy, if your Lordship laie as mainy by the Healis, as you doubt will obstinately persuaide the People, or encline to Rebellion, it will be allowid in you for Wisdom. God send your Lordship that Honor that your self



self wisheth of that Service, and so I humbly leave you at *London, primo Junij,*  
1577.

*Your Lordships, &c.*

Edward Waterhouse.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**B**Ecause your Lordship shall vnderstande sufficientlie by the generall Lettre from my Lords, what Order is taken for the necessarie Defence of that Realme against the pretended Danger, I will not trouble you with ouer many Lynes more, then to certefie your Lordship of one Poynt which is left vnan- swered in the same, and concernethe the Payment of the 1660 l. 3 s. 8 d. issued and laide out by your Lordship for Things due before your Entrance and Ta- kinge the Gouverment vppon youe. Her Majestie beinge moued therin, hath made Stey therof, vntill shee maye see Thaccoumpts, which her Highnes looked shoulde haue ben sent ouer at *Midsomer* next, and is displeased that they are deferred vntill *Michelmas*; wherefore I haue written vnto Mr. *Genison*, gi- uinge him to vnderstande of the saide her Majesties Displeasure conceived, and willinge him to see they be ended with all Dilligence; for, by Reason of the Want of the Vewe of those Accoumpts, there is Stey made of Payment to diuers, which her Majesty woulde willinglie shoulde be satisfied if shee might, as Reason is, vnderstande her owne State.

Now touchinge your Lordships perticuler, I am to impart vnto you the Returne of the yonge Gentleman, Mr. *Sidney*, your Sonne, whose Message verie sufficientlie performed, and the Relatinge therof, is no lesse gratfullie received, and well liked of her Majestie, then the honorable Opinion he hathe left be- hinde him, with all the Princes with whome he had to negotiate, hathe left a most sweet Savor and gratfull Remembraunce of his Name in those Parts. The Gentleman hathe given no small Arguments of great Hope, the Fruits wherof I doubt not but your Lordship shall reape, as the Benefitts of the good Parts which ar in him, and wherof he hathe given some Tast in this Voyage, is to re- dounde to more then your Lordship and him self. There hathe not ben any Gentleman, I am sure these many Yeres, that hathe gon throughe so honorable a Charge with as great Comendacions as he: In Consideracion wherof, I could not but communicate this Part of my Joy with your Lordship, beinge no lesse a Refreshinge vnto me, in these my troublesome Busines, then the Soile is to the chased Stagge. And so wishinge the Increase of his good Parts, to your Lord- ships Comfort, and the Seruice of her Majestie and his Countrie, I humbly take my Leave. From the Court at *Grenwich*, this xth of *June*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assured Friend,*

Francis Walsyngham.

*Edward Waterhouse to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*It may please your Lordship,*

**T**HE Things that may minister you the greatest Comfort is, that Mr. *Sid- ney* is returnid safe into *England*, with great good Acceptacion of his Ser- vice at her Majesties Hands; allowed of by all the Lords to have bene handled with great Judgement and Discretion, and hath bene honbrid Abrode in all the Princes Courts with much extraordinary Favour. The Emperour gave him a great Chaine, the Princeesse of *Orange* another with a fair Jewell. The rest I will leave to Mr. Secretary his Report, and to Mr. *Phillips* owne Letters. God blessid him so, that nether Man, Boy, or Horffe failid him, or was sick in this Journey; only *Folke Grevill* had an Ague in his Returne at *Rockester*.



I am employed Westward to prepare the 2000 Men, and to furnish them with Victuall, according to the Proportion namid in the Counsells Letters; where I think I shall spend 2 or 3 Monthes, without any Allowance for eny Thing, that yet I know; for all is sett heere uppon good Husbandry. Your Lordships Men and Victualls, shall be in Redines. I have earnestly solicyted Mr. Secretary, for the Dett of MDClxiii *l. iii s. viii d.* for which a Pryvy Seall hath bene longe made, and I perceyve by my Lord Thresorer he hath great good Will to please your Lordship; not only with that, but with Emprefts uppon Captors Billes, for which you wrote to him to use his Freindship: But both by him and Mr. Secretary, I perceyve that the Queene is bent uppon a generall Answer, both for that, and all Docquits; and the Thresorours Billis due to others, that she will pay nothing, 'till Mr. Auditour hath certified, what she owith in *Ireland*: But if it cannot be gotten, then I think the next Way is, that if this *French* Invasion proceede not, that Mr. Secretary do hereafter procuer you a Warrant, to pay yourself out of the 10,000 *l.* now sent; for all that is once past will be forgotten, and so more easily obtainid then out of Thexchequer here: But I humbly beseech your Lordship hasten Mr. Auditors Certificat. I have written playnly to him in this Matter.

I suppose your Promoters shall shortly optain that Favour to have the Liberty of the Fleet without Resours of *Irish* unto thes, and somewhat I think will be done for a smale Cure of the *Sesse*, wherof your Lordship shall heare more as soone as it comith in Question: Your Warrant for Consecration of Bishops will be shortly sent you, and the Sewt for Mr. *R. Sydney* and Mr. *Molineux* hath bene movid to her Majesty, wherunto she answerid that your Lordship did earnestly perswade her, that she shold not make any such Innovation in the Marches: But it is not receyvid as eny absolute Answer, but shall again be movid to her Majesty as sone as commodiously it may be.

I suppose a Forme of Arraignments, will be sent you for Nobility: But when I moved for the Erle of *Clanricards* Case, I was willed to forbear a While. It was not good to have to many Irons in the Fire at once; Tyme wold worke Things at better Leisure; but the Attorney and Solicitour have appointid to send me the hole Cours of the Arraignment of a Peere.

Thes be all the Particulers, that besids the Matter conteynid in your Letters, from the Lords and Mr. Secretary, I thought good to move them of at this Tyme; only this I think, that if you call not uppon Aide from thence, they will be cold enough here. If good Collour were to send the Men over, I wold then treat with your Lordship, for as it wold prevent the Mischeif which you feare, so wold it breake all Competitions, &c. Your Lordship knoweth my Meaning: And so to the Lord I comytt you, resting ever faythfully at your Lordships Commandment.

x Junij, 1577.

Ed. Waterhows.

Sir Francis Walsynham to Sir Henry Sydney.

My verry good Lord,

Fyndyng the Erle of *Ormonde* greatly discontented, as well for Imposyng a Cesse uppon his Tenants of the Countye of *Caterloe* (being exempt as they are by a Concordate sygned by your Lordships Hande) as also for the Commytting of the Lord *Mangarret*, I sowght to satysfyce him as well as I coold, wysshing him to staye from seekyng Redresse here, untill he might receyve your Lordships Awntswer; wherunto his Lordship hath yeelded, and therfor I shall desyre your Lordship, to deale in sooche Sorte towards him, in thes Poyntes, as he may have no just Cause of Offence. Whatsoever Reporte hathe ben made unto your Lordship, of my Lords Dealynges here towards you, I am right well assured, that he hathe don no evyll Offyces, notwithstanding the Injuries he conceyvethe he hathe receyved at your Lordships Handes. For the Matter of *Cesse*, seing by her Majestys especyall Grawnte his Lande in the County of *Caterloe* is

†

exempt;



exempt ; in my Opinion (not knowing what may be awntswered) yt seamethe he hathe ben hardely dealt withall. And as for the Commytting the Lord *Mon-garret*, being accused by one that hathe not ben the best affected towards him, and the Matters as yt thowght, eyther not verry great, or not well proved ; he thinkethe, that the Commytting of him growethe uppon some Dysposytion to deface him by the Perswatyon of sooche as are his Enemyes about your Lordship. Of these his Greeves, he desyered me to advertyce your Lordship, and to request you, that he, his Family and Tenants, may be otherwyse dealt withall, for that otherwyse he shall be forced to have Recourse to sooche Remedyes, as shall be good for neyther of you. I can not, but styll be of Opynyon, that yt is most necessarye for him that shall governe *Irelande*, to have the Erle of *Ormonde* a Frende ; for that the Gentleman is bothe wyse, valyant, and ould ; hath Credyt heere, both with her Majestye, and the great Parsonages of this Coorte ; and being an Ennemy, shall be able as well ther, as here, to crosse any Governor ther. And therfor good my Lord, let no lyght Causes drawe you, to doe any Thing that may mynister any just Cause of Offence. Yf you fynde any Cause of Myslyke, eyther pryvat or publycke, charge him with all roundely as becom-methe the Authoryte of the Place you houlde. And in Case he shall not yelde to Reformatyon, then may you proceade the more severely ageynst him. Thus your Lordship seethe, that I am bownde to imparte my Opynyon unto you, which I presume you wyll accept in frendely Parte. And so I commyt you to God. At *Greenwich*, 11th *June*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assured Frende,*

Supercribed,

Fra. Walsyngham.

To the right honorable Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knight of Th<sup>e</sup> Order, Lord Deputye of her Majestyes Realme of *Ireland*.

*James Lord Regent of Scotland to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*After my richt bertie Commendaciones to your gude Lordship,*

A NE honest Man of the Toun of *Air*, namid *David Colbird*, quha vses the Trade of Merchandice at *Dublin* and otheres Partes thair in *Irland*, hes certane his Guids stayed in *Dublin*, the Personis in quhais Handes the same remanys, pretending the same to be arrestit for certaine Custumes dew to haue been payed be the said *David* ; howbeit he affermis that he hes alwayes trewly and thankfullie payed all Custumes that he aucht, and wold repairis him self to satisfie and ansher for all Thing that iustly may be layed to his Charge. Before I will hertly request and pray your Lordship the Premisses considerit, that you will shaw your fauorable Guidwill toward this honest Man, in furthering him to haue expedite Iustise agains the Withalders of his Guidis, incaise thay refuse to do him Reasoun and Mesour with Beniuolence ; quherein ye shall do me gude Pleasher, quhilk I salbe verie willing to acquite, quhen any of the Q. Majestie her Souerains Subiects may happin to haue awd in this Cuntrie at your Re-commendatioun. And sa I commit your Lordship in the Protectioun of the Almightye Christ. *Edinburgh* the xx Day of *Junij*, 1577.

*Your Lordships verey assured Freind.*

James Regient.

*Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council of Ireland, to the Council in England.*

*Oure verye good Lords,*

OURE Dueties humblye remembred vnto your honorable Lordships, we have received (greatlye to oure Comforte and Contentacions) your Lordships honorable Lettres, dated from *Grenewitche*, the xiiijth of the Last, the xxvijth



xxvijth of the same: For the which, we render vnto your Lordships our most humble Thanks for the honorable and freindlye Consideracion you have had of oure Creditts, and the Countenaunce of this State, which well apeareth vnto vs, in the Manner of your most grave and wise Proceadings with *Barnaby Scurlocke*, and his twoe Companions: Who beinge more wilfullye bent, then wisly advised, and stirred (as it should seme) vpon an Humor to please the Multitude, and somewhat to power out their owne Malice, which they had so longe conceived against vs, and the State; beinge covered, nevertheless, vnder the Shadowe of their well Meaninge and good Intention, to ease the heauy Burthen imposed (by longe Cesse) vpon the Countrie, would not be dissuaded by any good Meanes we could vse vnto them, from the Enterprise they had taken in Hande; but nedes they repaier over to complaine of oure grevous and hard Dealinge towards them, to your Lordships. And nowe having received at your Honnors Handes (to your owne iust Prayfes) the dewe Rewarde of their Deserts, we thought it expedient, beinge led by so good and grave a President, accordinge to her Majesties Direction (whereunto your honorable Lettres referred vs) to sende not onelye for those Lords and Gentlemen that subscribed the Lettres sent vnto her Majestie and you, but also in Discreacion for some others, whose disguised and cunninge Manner of Dealinge, we had heard of before by Report, beinge Men speciallye noted vnto vs, to be cheife Counsellors, Ringleaders, and Procurers of the late Embassage sent to your Lordships. And when all theise (thus beinge sent for by oure Lettres) came before vs, havinge first Occasion to deale withe them, touchinge their Claime of Fredome from Cesse; found generallye in them all, by the Manner of theyer Answers to oure Demaundes, an arrogant, and wilfull Kinde of Repininge at her Majesties Prerogatyve for Cesse, affirminge boldly, in *playne Speache*, without any Stickinge, that no Cesse could be imposed but by Parliament, or graund Councell, and what soever was otherwise set downe by vs, was against Lawe: Wherevpon we grewe by Degrees from one Matter to another, over longe to be repeted by Discourse of Lettre; yet so necessarie to be known to your Lordships, as an vndowbted Argument of their Stubbornes and Arrogauncye, that what Greife and Bourthen so ever they complayne of to your Lordships, we could never yet finde hetherto any sounde Towardnes or Disposition in any one of them to conferre with vs, vpon any good Devise, how to lessen the Chargde of Cesse, and make the Bourden more easie vnto them, and her Majestie to be at no greater Chardge in Victuallinge the Soldiour, then nowe she is at; otherwise then in this Sorte, to have the Cesse totallye taken away, and referred to their Consideracions, what they thought good and expedient to be donne therein at the next Assemblie of Parliament: Though (we must confesse) that somme fewe of them, since the Tyme of their Restrainte of Lybertie (the better to dissemble their furder Intencions) have of late made somme Manner of Mocion, to comme to Conference, but so coldlye, and so farre from the Matter, that is expected at their Handes, as their Mocion is rather to be compted no Mocion at all. And therefore we stay to growe to any Resolucion in this Matter of Cesse with them, before we shall vnderstand your Lordships Opinions, as by your Lettres you have signified vnto vs we should do, which we desier spedilye to have from you, and cheifelye for this, because we finde this Manner of Metinge with their Arrogauncye and Stubbornes, hath framed the Tyme better nowe then of late it hath been, to deale vpon some good Devise, for her Majesties best Commoditie. And surelye, my Lords, as longe as a Garrison must be mainteined here, for their Defence (with out the which, they cannot lyve and defend them selves) somewhat must be contributed out of every Plough Lande, or rather rathered vpon every Acre, towardes the Victuallinge and Mainteininge of the Soldiour; otherwise her Majestie must nedes encrease her Pay, which we as Counsellors will not advise. And, my Lords, as longe as Cesse remayneth, there must be vnder Officers, and Ministers of Necessity appointed, to levye and gather the same, whose Disorders although when they shalbe knowen and complained of,



may be duely corrected by vs, yet hardlye or never so totallye taken away, or so prevented by any Devise we can set downe or devise, as they shall not happen at all. In the Entervall betwixt the Committment of theise wilfull Gallants, and the Writinge of theise oure Lettres to your Lordships, by the Proceadinge, and Dealinge, that somme of vs had with them, we had good Cawse to note, that they were bent in the Ende, to a certeine Kynde of more arrogant Wilfulnes, and stubborne Stoutnes, then they were before, refuzinge to yeelde to any Acknowledgment of their Offence, or to do as they ought (and we looked for) by Way of Submission, confesse their Error, in impugninge her Maiesties Prerogative (although vpon their second Examinacions taken, everye of them acknowledged both the one and the other) and mervaylinge whereof this soddeine Alteracion should growe; founde in the Ende, that this newe Habit of Chaunge and Encouragement, did growe thence, from somme of their Companions, that were committed there by your Lordships: And makinge dilligent Searche, amongst other Things, we found a Lettre sent from *Richard Nettervill* to the Lord *Howthe*, which carried soche Matter in their Conceits, as made them all to alter their former Opinions; and because the Manner of his Writinge seameth to vs somewhat obscure, containinge no good Meaninge, touchinge your Lordships Manner of Proceadinge withe them (as we take it) we have therefore thought good, to sende the Lettre enclosed to your Lordships, to the Ende, that if it seme so expedient to your grave Wisedomes, *Nettervill* may be called to expayne his Meaninge, and make Construcion of his Writinge. And even so with oure most humble, and duetifull Thanks, and Thanks agayne to your Lordships for the honorable and freindlye Care you have had both of vs, oure Creditts, and this poore disjoynted State, enclyninge howe (we hope) to some better Reformation by the Correccion of this wilfuller Sorte. We humblye take oure Leaves. From *Dublin*, the xxth of *June*, 1577.

*Your honorable Lordships assured*

*loving Freinds humblye to commaunde,*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council in Ireland, to Queen Elizabeth.*

*Most gracious Sovereigne,*

**O**URE Dueties most humblye remembred to your Majestie, we have, in oure lowliest and most humble Manner, received your Highnes gracious Lettres, dated from *Grenewitche*, the xiiijth of the Last, and by the same perceive the Manner of your Majesties most wise, grave, and princelye Proceadings withe *Barnaby Scurlocke*, *Richarde Nettervill*, and *Henrie Burnell*; sent hence withe Lettres and Enstruptions, from somme of the Lords and other Gentlemen of the Pale, to your royall Majestie, and the Lords of your Majesties honorable Privey Counsell attendinge vpon your Person. And as we are in oure most humble Manner, to acknowledge oure bounden Dueties to your Highnes, that aswell in Respekte of their iust Faults and due Deserts, for their Arrogancye and Presumption in impugninge your royall Prerogatyve to take Cesse, you have committed them. As also for the iust Preservacion of oure Creditts, who (as they affirme) in imposinge of the Cesse without Parliament, have done contrarie to your Highnes Lawes, and the auntient Customes and Statuts of this Realme: So we are on the other Side to crave your Highnes Pardon, for that we committed them not of oure owne Authorities vpon their bold Presumption in so publicke a Place, and in so open and plaine Speeches to impugne your Prerogatyve, which oure remisse Dealinge in oure humble Excuses, we must say, proceeded of the Care we had in all oure Proceadings, from the first to the last, with all device and mild Meanes, to winne them to



theyr Duties, and due Acknowledginge and Confession of their grosse Faultes, and palpable Errors; leavunge to your most gracious Iudgement, what Hold those Persons would have taken, to have troubled your Highnes with Complainte of oure Proceadings, had we, as iustlye they deserved, punished them; who impudentlye in those Lettres abashed not, to surmise to your Highnes, that they had not Redresse vpon Complainte exhibited to vs, although we (with Regarde to have saved the great Expences, wherewith by this Iorney they chardge your Majesties Subiects) graunted to enter with them in Conference vpon any good Devise, howe your Highnes beinge at no greater Chardge, with Victualinge the Soldiour, the Countrie might be eased of the heavie Bourthen, wherewith they were so greatlye greived: Whereunto they vtterlye refused otherwise to be holpen or healpe them selves, except we should have consented, to cut of the whole Cesse, and leave all Contribucion to your Majestie, to their Wills in Parliament. So that we conceived, had we then punished them, they would have bruted into the Eares of the common Sorte, that we went aboute rather, by Authoritie and with Severitie, to suppress them in a rightfull Cawse (as they bare them selves, and others in Hande) then by good Reason and sounde Argument to convince them or perswade them; and as it were so to restrayne and tye them, as they should not have Lybertie to have Acceffe to your princelye Prefence, to shewe their Greives, and sue for their Remedie. Theise, with other lyke Reasons of no lesse Weight, led vs, most gracious Sovereigne, to geve them the larger Reines of Lybertie, and not to vse that Curbe of sharpe Severitie vnto them, that they had well deserved. For which Fault, wee humblye crave Pardon at your Majesties Hands. Oure Proceadings withe the rest of the Furtherers of this Sute, hath bene in this Sorte; we sent aswell for them that subscribed the Lettre, that *Scurlocke* and the rest brought to your Majestie, as for dyvers others, that were noted and knowne to vs, to be the cheife Doers and Persuaders of the People, to resist and impugne the Cesse. At their Comminge before vs, we founde them all as obstinate in Speache, and wilfull in Concepts, as they were before, without Relentinge, or Shewe of Repentaunce for their former Faultes, but insistinge and mainteininge their late Error, that by Lawe the Cesse could not be imposed. And therefore, accordinge to your Majesties expresse Commaundement, we committed them all. Somme of them since hath made humble Submission, and Acknowledgement of their Faults to your Majestie, the Copie whereof, with further Notes of oure Proceadings withe the rest, we have imparted to the Lords in oure Lettres, to be declared by them to your Majestie, at your most gracious Pleasure, because we would not in theise be to tedious vnto your selfe. To those that have submitted them selves, and others that duetifullye have sought the same at oure Hands, we have declared the great Commiseracion your Highnes hath of their Greives, what open Eares you have to heare them, and readie Hands to healpe them, and what ells your Highnes hath commaunded vs to say vnto them for the Cesse, in as large Manner as was fitt to be told them; who most humblye and duetifullye acknowledge your princelye Bountye and Mercye extended towardes them. And this, Madame, beinge the Somme of oure Proceadings hitherto with the Impugners of your royall Prerogatyve, we thought it oure Duties to advertize the same to your Highnes. And so most humblye prostrate vpon oure Knees (beseachinge the Almightye longe and hapelye to prosper and preserve your Highnes to reigne over vs, to the inestimable Ioy and Comforte of vs, and all your faythfull good Subiectes) we most humblye take oure Leaves. From *Dublin*, the xxth of June, 1577.

*Your Majesties most bounden and*

*obedient Subiects and Servaunts,*

*H. Sydney, &c.*

*Edward*



*Edward Waterhous to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*It maie please your Lordship,*

**A**S I wrote in my last Letters, so it is comme to passe, that I am appointid to remaine here, to embarque such Soldiers as you shall direct to be sent vnto you out of thes Westerne Counties, and *Southwales*; for which I prepare Victualles for vij Daies, to serve the Transportacion of 1600, and Wheat and Malt, &c. for xxj Daies, for the full Number of 2000. Before my Going, I was condicionid with, that if the Journey went not forward, the hole Provision must light in my Neck, for the Queene wold be no Loser; and rather then the Service shuld haue failid, I was content to accept the Conditions. This makith me verie scrupulus in my Provisions, and therefore I beseeche your Lordship to giue me somme Watchword, whether you meane to vse the hole Number, or eny Parte of theim, to Thend I may be in some Certainty what to doe.

My Dewty to your Lordship doth also constraîne me to desier you not to doe eny Thing in the Calling over of thes Men, but by a generall Consent and Concordaunce of the hole Counsell of *Irland*, vnder their Hands; for if of your self you sholde extraordinarily encrease her Majesties Charge, and no forraigne Invasiõ followe, then it maie be ill taken, that such causeles Expenses shold growe: On the other Side, if having now absolut Auctority in your self to commaund more Aide, your Lordship shold not vse them, and that Invasiõ shold followe, then I know not what will be obiectid to such Hafsard of the Estate. And therefore I humbly praie your Lordship (if you be not plainly directid by the Counsells Lettres) to doe nothing in this Matter, but by generall Consent of the hole Bourde, though I knowe by your Letters Patents, you may governe according to your Discretion.

My Lord of *Lecester* was not retornid to the Court at my Comming from thence, but sent for in Respect of the Ambassadors that weare then come to *London* from the Emperour, from *Fraunce*, and from Don *John*, whose Ambassadour the Viscount of *Gaunt*, was honorably accompanied, having in his Traine 120 Persons, wherof 50 Chaines of Gold, as I was enformid by theim that sawe hym; but the Causes of thes Ambassages, and their Entertaingements, I referre to Mr. *Phillips* Letters, or rather to his Report, if he holde his Determinacion to visit your Lordship. And so depending altogether vpon your Resolucion for thes Matters of my Provisions, I humbly take my Leave. At *Bristowe*, the 26 of *June*, 1577.

*Your Lordships most bounden,*

Edward Waterhous.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

**Y**OUR Lordships thankfull Acceptacion of my plaine Manner of Writing, will make me the bolder to continewe the like Course. I am sorie, that ther should be giuen out here suche lewde Brutes of a generall Discontentment in that Realme; and yet, as appeareth by your Lordships Lettre, ther is not that Miscontentment ther, as is giuen out. Notwithstandinge, your Lordship may perceauẽ by her Majesties Lettre, ther hath bene some certaine Information giuen to her in that Behalfe, which makethe her to write somewhat offensiue at this Present (a Matter that cannot but bringe vnto your Lordship some Greefe) yet I doubt not but your Lordship, beinge so acquainted with her Majesties Disposition as you are (which is not to dwell longe in Displeasure) and beinge withall able to yeld good Accompte of your Doings, as I conceaue by your Lordships said Lettres, you shall haue the lesse Cause to be moued therwith. I moued her Majestie, that it would haue pleased her that you might haue sent ouer Mr. *Agar*, to haue giuen her full Information of the Estate of that



that Countrie, and of your Proceedings in the Matter of the Cesse, which seemeth to be the verie Ground of the said Miscontentment. But her Majestie doubtinge that you may ill spare so good an Assistante, will not consente therto as yet. Touchinge the Easyinge of the Burden of the Cesse, what my Lords Opinion is therof you may perceave by their Lettres. This Daye her Majesties Shippes departe towards your Coasts, wher is ordered they shall continewe vntill the latter Ende of the next Monethe, vnlest ther shall fall out some more Cause then presentlye appeareth, either for ther longer Staye, or speedier Returne: Duringe the Tyme of their Aboade vppon that Coast, they are appointed to yelde to your Direction. The Advertisements which we receaue out of *Fraunce*, of *La Roches* Preparacions, consistethe rather in Generallitys then Particularitys. I suppose, that duringe the Tyme of the Aboade of her Majesties Shippes in that Coast, they will not be over hasty to attempt any Thing. I send your Lordship here enclosed a Confession of *Calleys*, the notable Pyrate, of suche Speeches as passed betwixte *Soliano Beere* and certaine *Frenche* Capitaines, touchinge the *Frenche* Kings Disposition of attemptinge somewhat in that Realme, by the which your Lordship may perceave wher they meante to lande. Touchinge th' Allowaunce of the 1600 *l.* wherof you are put in Comforte by my Lords Lettres, the same beinge disbursed to so good a Purpose, as it was: Her Majestie can not otherwise be perswaded to allowe it; then out of the Alotement of the 20000 *l.* whiche shee is verie lothe to continewe. And yet consideringe, that the Imposition of the Ploughelande, which your Lordship intended, is not like to take Place: I see no Reason of any Abatement, vnlest her Majestie should withdrawe the Presidents, whervnto I see her somewhat enclyned. And surely, lookinge into her Disposition (as I do) if the Presidents were to be planted, I doubt whether I should giue my Consent thervnto. If Reformation of Contries might be had without Charge, *Irlande* should not remaine in that broken State that it doth. And so havinge nothinge els presentelye to write vnto you, I committe you to Gods good Keepinge. From the Courte at *Richemonde*, the xxth of *Julye*, 1577.

Your Lordships assured Frende,

Fra. Walsyngham.

At the Closing of this Letter, her Majesty being advertysed from her Ambassador, resident in *Fraunce*, that the Earl of *Westmoerlande* shold be privatly repayed into *Irlande* about some Practise; and thought she fyndethe yt a Matter vnlikely, yet her Pleasure is, that your Lordship shall, in some secreat Sorte, use some apt Instruments in the Discoverye, whether he be there or not; and in Case he be ther, to seeke all the Wayes you may, for the Apprehensyon of him. The lyke Charge she hathe wylled me to gyve unto the Presydent of *Monster*; for that it is thought he is retyred into those Partes, in Case yt be trewe that he should be com thither.

To Mr. Secretary Walsyngham, from John Calis, July, 1577.

May it please your Honor,

**T**O vnderstand and to foresee, that *Solivan Beere*, of *Beere Haven* in *Irland*, do not practise any Treason towards her Majestie in *Irland*; for that the said *Solyvan* declarid to me, in his Castell at *Berehaven*, being in familier Talke with him of *James Fitzmorice*, that the said *James*, and a Number of *Frenchemen*, determinid to come to *Berehaven* to lande there, if he had but Pilotts to conduct him thither. And all perswadid with me to ioine with theim in their Practise, and to be their Guyde, and promissed me many large Offres and Gifts. Whervnto I answerid him, I wold not consent or ioine with any Rebell against the Queenes Majestie, but hopid of her Mercy in Tyme to come. And in *Marche* last past, my Happe was to meete with a *Frenche* Man, being my self ryding at an Ancre in *Thorbay*, one of them called Capten *Mollonde*, and one

John



*John Grawth*, a Master of *St. Malloves*; the same *Mr. Mollonde*, being of my old Acquaintaunce, came Aboord my Shippe, and there did breake with me concerning the Coasts of *Irland*, and asked what Harboroughes wer best on that Coast. Wherto I answerid him, that *Cork* and *Kynsale* wer the best Havens in *Irland*. And askid me further, whether *Berehaven* and the *Dyngell* wer not a good Place to land Men on. Then I asked him why he did demaund those Questions of me. He said then, if I wold go over into *France* with him, I shuld not neede to feare the Queene of *England* for any Offence I had done against her. And that the Kinge his Master wold pardon me for any Thing I had done against him, or any of his Nation. And wold gyue threethowland Crownes to become his Subiect, and be sworne his Man, and also a yerely Fee duringe my Lief. Then I asked him to what Ende he wold have me so to doo. Because the Kinge his Master did shortly meane to haue some Seruice to be done on the Coast of *Irlande*, and did want Pylots for the Purpose. Then I answerid him, that what soever shuld become of me, I wold never be sworne to any forrayne Prince. Then he said, I shuld never haue the lyke Preferment offred me in *England*, as I might haue in *France*. And thervpon he went his Wayes; and I made small Accompt of him or of his Offeres.

Sir Henry Sydney to Edward Waterhouse, Esq;  
Mr. Waterhouse,

FOR that I vnderstande that you have made a Provision of a good Quantitie and Masse of Victuall for the Findinge and Victualinge of suche Number of Souldiors as are in Arredines to be transported thence for Thassistance of the Service heere against foren Invacion: I hartely and most earnestlie pray you that notwithstandinge those Souldiors comme not presentlie over: For lothe I wold be in any Sorte to encrease her Majesties Charge but vpon evident Growndes and verie vrgent Matter: Yet that you wold take present Order to sende over that Masse of Victuall that you have provided to be in Arredines to ainswere every Event whatsoever might happen: For the Want and Scarcetie of those Kindes (is suche heere) as namely of Malt, Wheets, Bisket, Butter, Cheise; as upon a soden non is to behad in Quantitie, what Care and Diligence ever be vsed. And therefore as you tender the Service or honor me, or wold have me conceive well of your good Endeavour and Travell, applie with Speede to sende me that Proporcion of those Kindes I have before remembered: (As for Bief I shall I hoope provide for heere as muche as shalbe necessarie) the one Half to be delivered at *Waterforde*, the other at *Dublin*: I have alredie cawsed Garners and Stoorehowses to be taken vp; and Ministers to attende at bothe the Portes, to see to the Discharginge and Vnloodinge of the said Provisions. And therefore I pray you hasten them away to be embarked and sent hither with all the Speede you can: For the Service earnestly requirethe that Stoore shold be at Hande and in Arredines, of those Things whereof this Countrie hathe so greate Want. And even so not dowtinge but that you will heerin carefully provide that Things be done with Speede. I bid you Farewell. From *Castell-Diermot*, the xxvjth of July, 1577.

Your lovinge Frende,

H. Sydney.

Edward Waterhouse to Sir Henry Sydney.

It maie please your Lordship,

I Have receivid by the Waie of *Waterford*, a Letter of yours datid at *Castell-Diermot* the 20th of July, wherein your Lordship doth direct me to goe to the Court. And therefore I prepare to go thether upon Monday next, and there

V O L. I

5 G

(till



(till I shall receive some Instructions from your Lordship) to follow the Opinion of Mr. *Phillip Sidney*, or in his Absence, to do that which in Discretion I shall think convenient.

I do leave here a Proportion of Victualls for the Transportation of the Soldiers appointed for *Irland*, and to feed them there, for a Moneth; but if they be not shortly employed, then must I make Sale of Parte of it, or els it is like to torne to Losse. So as the Care of this Provision must of Necessity drawe me hether again, in the Beginning of the next Moneth.

Your Lordship maie think that the Victualling was no Occupation fit for me, and I confesse myself apter for other Things: But if I had refused it, when no Man els was to accept it, I beleewe there had bene less Hastie in levieng of Soldiers, or setting forth of the Navy: And it is conceyvid, that if eny Thing do divert the Enterprize of *James Fitz-Maurice* for this Yere, it is the Knowledge of Preparacion of Soldiers and Provisions of Victualls, which is given forth to be in farre more Abundance, then is in deed ether prepared, or ment. For howsoever your Lordships Friends, have countenaunfed this Matter, with Men, Munition, Money and Victualls: Your Lordship is nevertheles to think, that nothing passith without Difficulty, that may concerne the Service in *Irland*. And if your Absence from the Court, have given your Enemies any Advantage, I am excusable by this, that I have not bene idell: And I doubt not, but at my Retorne thether, to untwyne all, that they have twisted: And so with my most humble Thanks for your Lordships favourable Acceptacion of my Service, and for your honourable Dealing with my Dwarfe, your Pursevant. I humbly take my Leave at *Bristol*, the 2d of *August*, 1577.

Your Lordships old Servant,

most bounden,

Ed. Waterhows.

I write to your Lordship soe lamentable Newes, that the Lord Chiefe Baron, and Mr. Sargeant *Barham* Justices of Assise, for *Gloucestershire*, and one Mr. *Stevens* and another Lawyer of this Contrey, with 10 or 12 Jurats are all suddenly dead. Mr. *Phetipace* in great Daunger, the Cause unknown. In *Oxford* a Desease is grown, being neither the Plague nor Swett, but as wors as eny of them; for which yet no Phisick can be founde.

Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

THIS Gentellman Mr. *Thomas Dillon*, coming hither commended from your Lordship, I could do no lesse at this his Returne, but recommende him vnto you againe. Whose Successe in his Suts here, though it have not ben answerable to his Expectacion, yet as him selfe can best declare vnto you, ther wanted not in me the best I could do for the Obtayninge his full Desyre: As I meane ther shalbe neuer any Defecte in me, to doe the like for any that bringeth with him your Lordships Commendacion. Also I am to let you vnderstande, that my Lords have not long since receaved Lettres from Sir *William Drurye*, wherein he answereth the Complaynte and Obiections made by the Erle of *Desmonde*, against him for some Matter of Cesse, and Provision taken for his House, wher withall their Lordships rest so well satisfied, as that they iudge the said Complaynte to be causelesse, and be more confirmed that the generall Murmure against Cesse proceedeth rather of Practise, then any iust Greefe. Last of all, your Lordship may vnderstande that *Scurlocke*, *Nettervill*, and *Burnell* since their Submission made here, by Reason of the Sickenes of the Plague, which is in the *Fleete*, where they were Prisoners, are enlarged vppon good Bands to remayne ether in the Citye, or within ten Miles therof, vntill further Order be taken with them; and that it

is



is meante, they shall not come into *Irelande* to make their Submission in like Manner there, vntill my Lords here may first heare somewhat more herof from your Lordship. And so humblie commendinge your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. From the Court at *Richemonde*, the ixth of *August*, 1577.

Your Lordships assured Frende to

commaunde,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sidney.

After my hartie Commendacions vnto your Lordship,

I Am willed by her Majestie to signifie vnto you, that wheras longe Tyme since, to witt the Last of *June* in the xith Yeare of her Raigne, she writt her Lettres vnto you on the Behalfe of the Erle of *Ormonde*, lettinge you to vnderstande that her Pleasure was, that his Lordships Lands within that Realme, should be exempted from all Cesses and Impositions (the Subsidie due vnto her onlie excepted) in Respecte that he shold forbear from thenceforth the Exactinge of Coyne and Lyverie vsually taken before by him, and his Auncesters, vppon the said Lands. Whervppon a *Concordatum* was made to that Effecte by your Lordship, and the Counsell there, which shee hath seene. And beinge enformed that, notwithstanding her said Pleasure signified vnto you in that Behalfe, you have lately imposed Cesse vppon his Lands: Her Pleasure is that you should advertise the Cause of your so Doinge, and in the meane Tyme hath required me in her Name to lett you knowe, that her Will is, your Lordship do forbear to laye any Manner of Tallages, Taxes, Charges, Cesses or Impositions vppon any his Lands or Mannors, whersoever they be within that Realme (accordinge to the Meaninge of the said *Concordatum*) the Subsidye onlie except, vntill her Pleasure to the Contrarie shalbe to you ether by her owne Lettres, or otherwise made knowen, after she shall have had due Consideracion of suche Causes, as have moved you, contrarie to the Tenor of her Lettres, to impose the said Cesse. And so I committ your Lordship to God. From the Courte at *Richemonde*, the ixth of *August*, 1577.

Your Lordships assured Frende to

commaunde,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Sir Francis Walsyngham to the Lord President of Munster.

S I R,

THEIS are to signify vnto you, that her Maiestie beinge geven to vnderstande that *La Roche*, who hath ben heretofore said to make Preparacions in *Britanny* for *Ireland*, is now at a Place of the said Country called *Vannes*, with a Force of fiften hondreth Men, fower Gallions, and dyverse other Vessells; her Highnes doubtinge the wourse, and sekeinge to provid in Tyme for the Meetinge with such Inconvenience and Perill as may growe thereof to her Realme of *Irelande*, by a suddaine Surprice, hath geven Order, that where her Shippes were appointed to contynue aboute the Coaste of her said Realme, but till the xijth or xiiijth of the next Moneth, they shall nowe contynue there vntill the Ende of the same; and to that Purpose there are Victualles provided at *Bristol*, to be from thence shipped to *Waterford*, where Mr. *John Winter*, her Highnes Viceadmirale of the said Shippes, is to receive the same, as by this inclosed Lettre of my Lords vnto him, he may vnderstande more at large. And therefore her Maiesties Pleasure is, that so soone as the said Lettre shall come to your Handes, you do advertise Mr. *Winter* of it by some Messinger, in case he be not at *Waterforde*, to Thend he may come and receive



receive his Victualles there. And so with my very hartly Commendacions, I bid you Farewell. From the Courte at *Richemond*, the xxth of *August*, 1577.

Your assured Friend,

F. Walsingham.

Edward Waterhous to Sir Henry Sydney.

It may please your Lordship,

**B**ECAUSE the Lords of her Maiesties Pryvy Counsell do judge, that the Continuaunce of the Ships at Sea will be a great Sewerty against Invasiō there, if eny be intendid. It is thought requisite, that the Ships shold be revictuallid vpon the Sea, or at *Waterford*, for iij Weekes longer, wherof their is Order geven to Mr. *Baisb* to send a Masse from *Bristol* with all Speed, to be transportid to *Waterford*; their ether to be deliuerid to Mr. *G. Winter*, or yf the Shippis be not vpon that Coast, then to be deliuerid their to the Surveior of the Victualls for *Irland*, by the Lords Direction, and according to an Indenture that comith with the Victualls; and therefore the Lords do expect, that in the Absence of Mr. *Winter*, your Lordship will cause the Victualler of *Irland*, or his Deputy, by your Auctority, to gyve his Bill to Mr. *Baisb*, for the Receipt of the same Provision; and for the better Ordering of it, Mr. *Baisb*, vpon Report of me and *John Bland*, hath made Choise of *James Brinklowe*, to cary the same to *Waterford*. I haue sent by the Way of *Chester*, other Letters to your Lordship concerning your Affaires at Court. And so do humbly take my Leave at *London*, the 20th of *August*, 1577.

Your Lordships humbly at Commandment,

Ed. Waterhous.

Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.

**I** Received the Lettres of your most excellent Maiestie, geven at *Greenwitche* the xvijth of the last *Julye*, the viith of this present *August*: Beinge thus farre Northwards in this your Realme, with Intention to have gonne further into the Province of *Ulster*, for the Setlinge of Quiet amonge the Potentates and People of the same Province, and to encrease Revenue to your Highnes in the same. But with Greife and great Discomforte I stay that my Journey, not for that I have any Doubt sufficientlye to satisfie your Maiestie in ech Pointe, the same seameth to be offended with me in (had I convenient Tyme, and were I in convenient Place.) And for the Doinge thereof, I will, with as moch Spede as I can, retorne to *Dublin*, where, after Informacion and Consideracion of some Things contained in your Maiesties Lettre (which possibly I cannot do here) I will, God willinge, addresse vnto your Highnes some soche Personadgies so well instructed, as I trust shall thoroughlye satisfie your Highnes in eche Particuler contained in your said Lettre; and also advertize the same of fondrie other Matters concerninge your Estate here, aswell in Suertye as Proffitt, whom al be it for Parliament Cawties I meant to have sent to your Maiestie, as sone as the Coppies of the Actes of Parliament had bene readye; yet for this speciall Purpose, I will nowe hasten theim, to present them selves to your Majesties Prefence. But, in the mean Tyme, I rest perplexed, and in no small Sorowe, for that it seameth to me, your Highnes, by the Instigation of myne Ennemies, Adversaries to your Prerogative and Proffitt, hath condemned me vnhard; for Ease of which my troubled Mynde, I foorthwith write theise fewe bad scribled Lynes: Most humblye cravinge by the same, the Suspence of your Highnes Conceptt against me, untill they, (whome I entende to send to your Maiestie with Lettres, may more at lardge declare



declare from me, and the rest of your Councell here, then I can here write them) shall arryve there, which, God willinge (Wynd and Wether servinge) shalbe before the xxvth of the next Moneth. By which I do assure my selfe, that it shall manifestlye appeare to your Maiestie, that I have not imposed more vpon the People of the *English* Pale, either for my Howsehold, or your Garrison, then is necessarye, nor chardged them so moche as heretofore they have bene; albeit consideringe the Price, farre excedinge that which hath bene in Tymes past, the Burden seemeth farre greater, though the Quantitie in Stuffle be not so moch, whiche, if it do comme to viij *d.* vpon a Ploughland (as haply, as they prise their Wares at this present, it commeth to little lesse) I thinke, and so I hope your Maiestie will judge, that I offered them no small Ease, when I accepted their willinge Offer of fyve Marks vpon a Ploughland. And my Trust is, that your Maiestie will conceive that I wrought for the Wealth of your People in generall, when I dissolved so many Freedomes as I did, whereby the Burden was the lighter to the Bearers, and whereat the great Ones repyned: For had not that bene, your Highnes should never have hard of this supposed Lamentacion of the Poore: And that which was imposed is not yet levied (and therefore the lesse Cawse to find them selves greived) and some Parte wholye remitted.

And for Alienatinge your Subiectes Hartes from their loyall Obedience to your Maiestie by this, I never sawe Lykelyhood of it, nor wilfull Refuzall to pay the rebated Porcion, vntill they were by them in *England*, and other their Sectaries, encouraged that they should yeeld nothing at all.

And if any have bruted that I have taken the whole Realme in Ferme (as I think some there be that hath) it is soch as impugneth *English* Governement that so hath bruted it, for it never came out of my Mouth, nor any borne on that Side of the Sea to my Knowledge.

If I have spent more for my first Yeares Chardge then your Maiestie hath hetherto determined to issue out of your Threasure there, besides your Revenue here, whereof you shalbe trewlye certified (God willinge) the next Moneth; as the same hath grown by the Payment of soche Things as were due before my Tyme, as in discharginge Soldiours, painge for their Transportacion and other Necessaries, and thereby savinge your Maiestie some daylye growinge Chardge, which otherwise would have bene spent; as in my former Lettres I have at lardge signified vnto the Lords: So I am humblye to praye Allowaunce and Payment thereof, submitinge my selfe to your Maiesties Misericord; and yet with this Confidence, that you shall see soch an Encrease of Revenue, as your Majestie shall not thinke the Pourchace over prized.

I am well assured your Highnes old Revenue was never better answered, then it hath bene theise two Yeares, since I served your Maiestie here, although haply it fall not out so moche, by reason the Wyne of the Impost, riseth not so great thorough the small Trade of Coynes in theise troublesome Yeares. But of the Estate of your Revenue, and Encrease of the same (for of any Decay I do not thinke, that I shall have any Cawse to write, if greater Fault be not in other inferiour Ministers) God willinge, your Highnes shalbe trewlye certified the next Moneth: And also what the whole Cesse levied since my present Governement here commeth vnto, aswell in Quaintye (as niere as I can certeinlye) as in Price, with as good Consideracion, as I and the rest of the Councell here can valewe it at: But of what your Maiestie is thereby disbourdened, I thinke I shall certifie nothings, savinge this, that if your Maiestie had not had that Contribucion, your Highnes must have geven greater Wagies, or have entertained fewer Soldiours.

Sir *William Drewrye* should not have lacked any Forces that I had to send hym vpon his owne Request, al be it your Maiestie therein had not remembered me to do my Duetye: For in Troth he serveth your Majestie there honorablye and effectually.

The last Clause in your Majesties Lettre, I am not possiblye able to answer presentlye, but I will by my next: The *Moores*, and *Oconnors*, have donne moche Hurte, and more it is possible they will do; and in so open a Countrie,



where your good Subjects inhabite they may do, if there were a thousand Men more for the Garde of it then there is, and being so freinded by their Neighbors as they are: But as they have spoyled some of your good Subjects of their Goodes, so have your good Subjects and Soldiors bereft 150 of them and their Followers (at the least) of their Lyves, since their last Revolt and Rebellion.

Thus endinge as I began, with my most humble Petition to your Maiestie, to stay from any Misconceit of me, vntill I may more fullye answere your Highnes Lettre, then presentlye I can, and addresse soch Certificat to your Maiestie, as in this Place I cannot; I most humbly ende this my Lettre, prayinge the Almightye to blesse your Maiestie with longer and happier Yeares, then ever Prince had, and after with eternall Glorie. From the *Newrie* the of  
August, 1577.

*Your Maiesties most humble and*

*obedient Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*Right Honorable and my very good Lords,*

I Have received your Lordshipps Lettres sent by *Colman*, my Lord President of *Mounsters* Servaunt, most comfortable and welcome vnto me, in the Respecte of your Lordships good and grave Allowaunce of my Proceadings with those Lords and Gentlemen, that so wilfullye withstand, and so obstinatelye contynue and persever in denienge her Maiesties Royall Prerogatyve to impose Cesse, vpon any Occasion of Necessitie, except the same be donne by Parliament. And although at the Beginninge, the Lords and Gentlemen committed, could well have framed them selves (as I suppose) after the Taft of fower or fyve Dayes Imprisonment, humblye to have submitted them selves, and, in lowlye Manner, by Way of Submission, to have acknowledged their grosse Errors, ignoraunt Wilfulnes, and former Offences against her Maiesties Prerogatyve and the State, were it not that they had bene animated by some of their Freindes out of *England*, and (as I take it) of some of the best Sorte of this Countrie Birth. Nowe they are growen to that deepe Degree of Induratnes, and contynue so maliciously bent, to persever in their former Obstinacye, and indutifull Wilfulnes, as havinge sent vnto me, at my late Retorne by *Dublin*, the Forme of a Petition, onely to pray for their Enlardgement (not remembringe in the same either any former Fault committed by them, or acknowledging any Kinde of Submission) which Petition, for that the same was not subscribed with any Hand, I refused to allowe and accept from them: And they afterwarde beinge requyred, that if it were their Acte to sett to their Hands to the same, with one Voyce and vniforme Consent (and yet confesseinge it to be their Acte) flatlye denied to do it. Whereby I can gather none other Thinge nor Lykelyhood, but that they are daylye encouraged thus to do by somme that beare them selves over bold of her Maiesties Favor, at whose Hapdes, somme of them say, they looke and expecte for Answer, and not from me; for that the Cawse is in Debate before her Highnes, and so I reputed a Partie in the Matter, and not a competent Judge.

I perceiue my Lords, that maney Matters be engrieved against me by myne Ennimies, and maney Thinges obiected against my Manner of Governement and Proceading here, as partlye to my no small Greife and inwarde Sorrowe of Mynde, I vnderstoode by her Majesties owne Lettres; in so moche as beinge here thus farre Northwarde in my Iorney, myndinge to have made a Visitation of the greatest Parte of *Vlster*; upon the Receipt of those Lettres from her Majestie, I torned my Course, and hastened my selfe towards *Dublin*, to the Ende more fullye to answere to eche perticuler Pointe contained in her Highnes



nes faied Lettres, I hope to her Majesties full Satisfaccion and good Lykinge, and your honorable Contentments. As lykewise to conferre and consider of soch Platts and Devises for the Matter of Cesse, as your Lordships sent me in Packett with your Lettres. And to addresse vnto you for that Purpose, some soch grave, discreate, and wise Personadges, as I hope your Lordships, both for their Callings, Reputacions, and Creditts, will geve both a readie Eare, and soch Beliefe, as the Nature and Qualitie of the Matters they are to entreate of, for her Majesties Service, and this State requyre; and in the meane Tyme I doubt not, but you will suspend your Opinions, and Conceites, either to disallowe or condemme my Doings. They shall come plainelye and fullye instructed, aswell of the Nature and Cawse of the Cesse, and the Effectes thereof, as of the Proporcions and Kinds set downe for eche Perticuler; what hath bene taken by others before my Tyme; what in my Tyme hath bene imposed and cessed, what thereof hath bene levied, and what is in Arrere behynd, and not paied; what eche Countye beareth, what the same amounteth vnto vpon a Ploughland, in Kynd and Proporcion; digested into so playne and manifest a Forme, and delyvered in soch Manner, as the full Boddye and State of the whole Matter shall at Eye and Viewe appeare to your Lordships, howe I have bene misreported, and what Drifts privat Malice, and wilful Obstinacye put together, hath devised against me. And thus in the meane Tyme hopinge, and even so beseechinge your Lordships to way soch Things, as hetherto have bene objected against me by myne Ennimies, in no Construccion to the Preiudice or Disadvantage either of me or the Matter, till you shall receive my further Answer to eche Pointe sett downe by her Majestie, which God willinge (Wynd and Wether servinge) shalbe before the xxvth of the next Monethe. In the Meane, I humbly take my Leave, beseechinge the Almightye longe and hapelye to prosper and preserve your Lordships, in all your honorable Actions and grave Counsells, for the Honnor of her Majestie, and the Benifitt and Wealth of her duetifull good Subiectes. From the *Newrie*, the of *August*, 1577.

Your honorable Lordships assured

lovinge Freinde to commaunde,

H. Sydney.

Sir Henry Sydney to Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester.

My dearest Lord,

**B**EING thus farre Northwarde in this Realme, with Entencion to have gone as farre as the Sea would geve me Leave, I received her Majesties Lettres by a Man of my Lord Presidents in *Mounster*; whereby, to my hartie Greiffe and vnspeakeable Sorrowe, I fynd her Highnes offended with me, by the Informacion of my Ennimies (Adversaries and Impugners of her Proffit and Prerogative) speciallye for a Cesse, or a Taxe, imposed by me vpon the *English* Pale, since my last Governement here, and for the disorderly Distribucion and Levieng of the same. I perceive also by Lettres from others, of the same Passage, that neither my Lettres; for that they were formed by my selfe onelye, nor any my Agents, thorough their Insufficiencie, hath so satisfied the Lords, as by their Reporte her Majestie might be induced to thinke well of my Doings in her Service. I am sorye that I trusted any that so badlye delyvered, or so fayntlye were able to answer in those Matters which they seemed so ripelye to conceive, and so thoroughlye to vnderstand at their Departinge from me. What so ever I write shalbe found trewe, be it tried by what Meanes it shall best lyke her Majestie and the Lords. Well, this cawsed me to cut of my Iorney almost in the Beginninge of the same, whereby there wilbe lesse Good donne this Yeare in this Province, then there was good Hope should have bene donne; and I doretorne to *Dublin* after a fewe Days (in which I hope



hope to have somme of the greatest of this Province with me) with whome (albeit not so well as if I had gonne furder) I trust yet to take some Order for the good Quiet thereof. And at *Dublin* have I appointed an Assemblye of the whole Councell of this Realme, and then by them shalbe collected and examined, of what Contynuaunce the Cesse hath bene, of what Necessitie and Vallowe, and howe the same is taxed, levied, and issued; and I trust, with playne and true Explanacion of eache necessarye Circumstaunce dependinge vpon the same: And with this I will send twoe of this Councell, I trust, sufficiently instructed, not onely in that Matter, but in sondrye others of Consequence, aswell for the Common Wealthe, as for the Proffit and Dignitie of the Crowne. I will also send with them an Officer of my Howsehold, who, vpon my Creditt, is an honest Man; and he shall make so simple and substantial Declaracion of my Receipts and Expences, as I trust shalbe to the Contentacion of her Majestie, the Satisfaccion of your Lordship, and the Shame of my Ennemies: This shalbe donne, and, God willinge (Wynd and Wether servinge) shalbe with you before the Last of the next Monethe.

I fynd it is thought in me a hard Dealinge, that I demaunded fyve Marks vpon a Ploweland, to dischardge them of all Manner of Cesse; I have often written it to her Majestie, and to you, and to Mr. Secretorye, and nowe agayne do: That it seameth to me to absurd, that fyve Marks should be thought overbourdenous, when it should dischardge them of that which they saied stode them in x l. And the Lords seamed to me, that I had made an evell Bargayne at so base a Price, to dispence with her Highnes Prerogative. And I protest to God, and as you take me to be a Christiane, or honest, I do knowe it, that the People most willinglye would have consented to it, had not the Lords forbidden them: Yea, and when they were committed, were redde with one Voyce to cry out vpon them, for that they stode with me in it.

And that Rebellion, or at least Alienation of the Peoples Myndes, were lyke enough by the same to arrise. My Lord, I do beleve, for farre the greatest Number of the Inhabitaunts of the *Englishe* Pale, her Highnes hath as trewe and faythfull Subiectes, as any she hath subiecte to her Crowne; and soch as if the great Ones would have them (for without them, they will never rebell) would not once stirre against the Quenes royall Estate; but if they and their factious Sectaries would, they, and as maney as would take their Parte, dare not, as longe as there is an Armye here; and rather, in my simple Judgement, this Kind of Bearinge with their Insolencye and Arrogancye, is a great Alluraunce to the People, rather to respecte and followe their meane Land Lordes Will, then the Sovereignes iust Demaunde; and if I have any Judgement, this hath ben, is, and wilbe the Destruction of *Ireland*.

I am condempned there, I finde, for Lacke of Pollecye, in that in this broken Tyme, and Doubt of forreine Invasion, I should committ soche Parsonadges, as I deteine in the Castell. My Lord, I am the Quenes principall Officer here, and have Cawse to vnderstand, as well as an other, of the Estate of this Countrie, and Humor of People of the same, and so whyle I am in Office, ought to be credited as sone as an other; and this is my Opinion, if *James Fitzmorris* were to land to Morrowe next, I had rather a good maney of them nowe in the Castell, should still remayne then be Abroade.

I heare I have maney Accusacions obiected against me; I would fayne knowe whether from maney or one, and who he or they be, and that the Matters may be reduced to Hedds sent to me, and I trust I will answere them.

I have often written for the Triall of the Earle of *Clanrickarde*; I can gett no Answer; if her Majestie will none of it, for ought I can perceive, it were best for her Majestie to geve over any Chardge out of *England*, and to leave the Rule and Ravyn of the Countrie to them selves.

It is bruited here, that I am to be reuoked, and that spedilye; the Brute doth no good; but if it be intended, the sooner the better, for the Quene, and for my selfe. I attest to God, I had rather have *Harrye Reswycks* Office in *Killingwoorthe*, then Sir *Harrye Sidneys* in *Kilmaynghame*.

My



My dearest Lord, I did not thinke to have entered into theise Particulers, vntill I had sent over the intended Commissioners above written (which, as is written, shalbe the next Monthe, God willinge) but when I was entered in, I ran on I feare to farre, at least so farre, I am sure, as is to your Payne in Readinge; and moche more should have bene, if after I had penned it, I had not made my Man to write it out agayne, for so maney Escapes passed me in double Writinge of Woordes, yea, and Lynes, and Rasinge agayne (through vnquiet Accidents) as the Letter semed to fowle to be sent you.

My dearest Lord, sende to me forthwith, and contynue your brotherlyke Care of me; you shall fynd me honest, and wel willinge to deserve well, and I hope to have bene no evell Servaunt. And so I take my Leave. Ouer Lord blesse you with contynuall and eternall Comforte. From the *Newrye*, the  
of *August*, 1577.

*Your Lordships bounden and most*

*assured Brother,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Secretary Walsingham.*

*S I R,*

I Have by this Dispathe brought by *Colman*, the Lord President of *Mounsters* Servaunt, received three Lettres from you, one touching soche Writings as you sent me in the blacke Boxe, concerninge Sir *John* of *Desmound*, which you received of my Brother Sir *William Fitzwilliams*; an other to hasten the Auditor to make vp his Accompts, which have bene so longe expected there; and the last of soch Reports and Informacions, as have bene made to her Majestie agaynst me, and my Manner of Government here, whereof her Highnes writt so offensivelye vnto me. And, al be it, you geve me comfortable and freindlye Advise, not to disquiet or discourage my selfe, with her Highnes sharpe Manner of Writinge, for that her Majestie cannot dwell longe in Displeasure: Yet you may conceive it cannot be any small Griefe and Torment of Mynde vnto me, that her Majestie carieth so open an Eare, and geveth so easie a Credit to myne Ennemies, that I may suspecte my selfe to be halfe condempned in Opinion and Concept before I be harde. How be it, for your speciall Freindshipp towards me, in that and all other Things, I finde my selfe moche beholding vnto you, and pray you to contynue the lyke vnto me still, for the which, I will not forget to be thankfull. And even so I bid you farewell. From the *Newrye*, the  
of *August*, 1577.

*Your assured loving Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*It maie please your Lordship,*

UPPON Receipt of your Letters latelie at *Bristoll*, I committed those Doings to myne Agents there; and according to your Lordships Commandement, I repaired to the Court, taking *Wilton* in my Way, aswell to do my Duty to the Countesse of *Pembrook*, as to have some Speech with Mr. *Phillip* concerning your Lordships Affaires; and to understand his Advice, what Cours he wold have me to take in your Lordships Busines. Who, becaus he found such dailie Alterations in Court, cold advise me none otherwise, but to referre me in Discretion to do as I sawe Cause: And therefore leving there the Erle, the Countesse, Mr. *Phillip*, Mr. *Robert Sydney*, and your litell Cofin *Mountagu*, all in Helth; and the Erle, in all Appearaunce, as duetifull to you,

V O L. I.

5 I

as



as Mr. *Phillip*. I arrivid at the Court uppon *Wednesday* last at *Richemont*, where the Erle of *Lecester* was newly retornid from his House in *Waltam* Forest. When I had reportid to him in what Estat I had left my Prouisions at *Bristol*, I declarid that I was now come to follow your Lordships Causes, and praid his Direction, and what Cours he wold have me take. His Lordship told me, that within a few Daies before, the *Irishe* Prisoners in the *Fleete* were enlarged, uppon Infection in the Prison, and that he wold have farder Conference with me about the Causes, having then no Leisure. From thence I attendid Mr. Secretary, by whom I lernid that *Barnabe Skurlock*, and his Fellowes, imediatly after their Enlargement, cam to the Court without praing eny Licence; for which rashe Parte (the Infection and their Offence considerid) Mr. Secretary gave them such a Wellcom, as they retornid in Post, in some Fere to be presently again committid: But it is lookid for that both they, and their Adherents, will shortly renue their Petition for Release of *Sesse*; about which Matter it is like your Lordship shall shortly have some Direction, at the Arrivall of your newe Judges, who nowe beginne to prepare for their Journey.

It semith some Practice hath beene attemptid, since myne Absence, for your Repair Home, under such Collours, as caried no Disgrace to your Lordship: But I perceive the Scope was to have translated the Government, as most judge, to your last Predecessor; but that Things are not like to happen now, before your selfe shall importunately seeke it.

The Letters that cam latelie out of *Mounster*, give great Occasion of Mislike of the Erle of *Desmounde*, which comparid with the Arrogancy of such as be imprissonid in the Castell of *Dublin*, who as it is said make a Sport of their Restraint; and considering also the apparent Discontentacion of some *Irland* Courtiers, it cannot be but your Lordship shall very shortly see some End of thos Contencions. Which in Reason I thinke must be in some Extremity, ether in a precice Maintenance of the Prerogatyve, or els in an over liberall Remission of the *Sesse*; for our *Irland* People are farr from eny Meane.

Some of your Friends think, that their is not enough said in her Majestyes Behalf, for the Maintenance of *Sesse*; and some blame yourself and your Agents heere; but they be suche as knowe not *Irlande*; and for myne own Part, I think it sufficient to say, that ether her Majestye must mainteyne it, as she found yt uncertaine, or as it is now devisid by your Lordship, to bring it to a Certainty, for the Inhabling of her Officers, Soldiers, and Relief of her own Charges, or els she must increase their Wages, and content her self with continuall Expence of Blood and Treasure, or commyt it to *Irishe* Governement. And with a farder Answer then this I will not beat my Brains, though if they shold wade in Particularities with me, I were an ill Scholler, yf after xii Yeirs Experience, I shold not be hable to give the Reason for your Doings.

At my Comminge now to *London*, I find a Letter of *John Cockcrans* unto me, with two Billes of your Lordships inclosid, the one of 300*l.* the other of 1600*l.* wherein I have alredy movid Mr. Secretary, who will once again be a Meane to her Majestye, protesting to do his best: But he saith the *Irishe* Marchaunt uppon the last Pryvy Seale, delt verie ill both with him and you, or els had the 1600*l.* bene paid. He hath taken newe Notes of me of those Billes, and of all such Sewtes, as your Lordship hath otherwise commended; namelie for Mr. *Mollineux*, *George Arglas*, and other Matters conceyvid uppon your Lordships Lettres, to all which I hope, uppon some good and spedy Answer; and howsoever it take Successe, I humbly beseach your Lordship to think of me, as of a carefull Solicitor of all your Causes; and truly, Sir, Mr. Secretary is your constant Friend, in great Assurance of Amity with my Lord of *Lecester*; which two, do take uppon them the Protection of all your Affaires, and therefore you cannot be to thankfull unto them; and if in your Lordships Letters you seme to take such Knowledge from me, it may enable me to do you the more effectuall Service.

I did Yesterday send Letters to your Lordship by the Way of *Waterford*, declaring that her Majestie, for Revictualling her Ships at Sea, had sent a Masse of Victualls



Victualls from *Bristol* to *Waterford*, and if the Shippes be not uppon that Coast, then the Victualls to be delivered to the Surveyour of the Victualls for *Irland*, to be issuid out at your Discrecion: They be sent in Charge of *James Bricklow*, who is to receyve a Bill, ether from Mr. *Winter*, if the Ships be there, or from Mr. *Woodford*, if they be absent.

Your Lordship may do well to send him to *Waterford*, to see the Victualls landid, and well orderid; which is a Proportion for 700 Men, serving in the Ships for 21 Dayes.

God send your Lordship Helth, Honour, and Contentacion, and so I committ you to his Protection. At *London*, the 21st of *August*, 1577.

Uppon a Practice made by Don *John*, to overthrowe the States, they are all utterly revoltid, and have possessed them selfs of *Antwerp* Castell, and all the Holds in the *Lowe Countries*. The *Spaniards* are comming back into *Flanders*: *Moundragon*, and *Julie*, are come alredy; the most of the rest did never passe the *Alpes*. Great Trobles are like to grow there; all do now depend uppon the Prince of *Orange*. The Duke of *Ascot* ran from Don *John*, and had lyke to have left his Hed behind for Hast.

There is no late Newes come out of *Fraunce*; but that *Jeresey* and *Gernesey* be in Fere; and then their is as good Reason for your Lordship to looke for your *Frenche* Gefts in *Irland*. *La Roch* is certainly in Armes with 1500 Shott. *James Fitz Maurice* is not knowen to be in *France*.

Your Lordships faithfully,

Edward Waterhows.

Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.

My singular good Lord,

After the Arrivall of Mr. *Briske* heere, their was some Staie made in the Delivery of your Letters, by Meanes of the Absence of Mr. *Phillip Sydney*, at whose Going the Pacquet was deliverid, and not red by her Majestie till two Daies after, because her Majestie hath not bene very well disposid in Body since her Going to this House at *Otlande*; but vppon the Vewe of the Lettre, she did generally like well of the Contents; and by Mr. Secretary I perceive, that an expresse Messanger shall shortly be sent from her Highnes to your Lordship. Your Friends here do very well allow of the Coming of my Lord Chauncellor, and Mr. *Agarde*, and have, I think, written earnestly to your Lordship for them; and truly my Opinion is, that if they comme together, it shall shortly work you a good and an honorable Resolucion. And although my Lord Chauncellor can of him self deale verie sufficiently in your Causes, yet their be mayny (and namely her Majesty) that will much more leane to Mr. *Agards* Experience and Judgement, then to eny one Man that servith in that State, and therefore if they comme together, you may assuredly hope of honorable Success. Mr. Secretary made me to frame Mr. *Malbyes* Composition for *Connoght*, into a plainer Maner, for her Majesty to vnderstand, and will take a Tyme to enforme her Majesty how her Charges in that Province are eased, and make that an Example to induce her to the reste. But the noble Men of *Irland*, which be here, wold faine further some Devise, that all of them shuld be free from all Burdens. And this Day the Erle of *Thomounde*, in the Chamber of Prefence, began to discours how he wold wyne the Queene CCCC l. a Yer clearly, when now she spendith a Thowsaund. I desierid to know how; but he hath taken Daies, wherein he saith he will tell me all; but the Devise is, that *Mounster* and *Connoght* shuld be in *Statu quo prius*, without eny President; Perhaps some other Mens Devises shall be putt into his Mowthe, and so he made an Instrument; but after nyne Daies we shall leave wondring at his Wisdom, for he is no Chaungeling.

Your Lordship comittid vnto me two Papers of Trust, the one a Letter from my Lord of *Slane*, the other a Warraunt for *Sesse*. I servid them both to  
such



such as you comaundid me, and to Mr. Secretary, because I wold haue hym know the Humor of the Man; and after I deliuerid that Warraunt where you willid me.

I will again remember your Lordship to strengthen my Lord Chauncellor, with the Coming of Mr. *Agard*. Both are thought to be well chofen, but the one without the other shall not deale to your Expectacion. And so I humbly leave your Lordship to the Protection of God. At the Court, the vth of September, 1577.

*Your Lordships most bounden*

Ed. Waterhows,

*Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council of Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*Oure very good Lords,*

**O**URE humble Duetyes remembred to your honorable Lordships. Beinge carefull as becommeth vs of the good Quiet of this Countrie, and the Preservacion of the same from Daunger, to be surprisid by any forreine Invasiō, as moche as in vs lyeth, have thought good, vpon soch Advertizements, as we received thence, takinge Knowledge by a Lettre, sent from Mr. Secretorie *Walsingham*, dated at the Courte at *Richmound* the xxth of this last *August*, and addressed to Sir *William Drewrye*, Lord President of *Mounster*, to assemble oure selves, and fall into Consideracion of the Matter: For the Lettre contened that her Majestie was advertized, that *La Roche* is at a Place in *Bretteine*, called *Vannes*, with a Force of xv C. Men, iiij Gallions, and dyvers other Vessels, and thought that he prepareth hetherwardes. An other Lettre we received lykewise from *George Winter*, the Viceadmirall here, of Advertizements that he had received from your Lordships commaundinge hym, that he should presentlye imploy hym selfe betwene this Land and the Coasts of *Fraunce*, for the Metinge withe *La Roche* and *James Fitzmorrice*. And although we were verye doubtfull, notwithstanding theise Advertizementes, to resolve to sende for any Force thence, consideringe the Tenor of the Lettres we received from your Lordships, bearinge Date the ixth of *June* last, expresseinge your Pleasures, amongst other Things, that notwithstanding ij M. Men were in a Readyness apointed to come at any Tyme, when we should think convenient for Occasion of Service to sende for them, without either Warraunt or further Direccion from her Majestie, or your Lordships; yet that you conceived that Opinion of vs, that without appa-  
raunt Cawse, and imminent Daunger, we would not call for them, since soch a Number could not be imployed without great Encrease of her Majesties Chard-  
gies, and some Bourden to her Highnes good Subiectes, in the Counties where they should be levied. We yet wayinge soch due Circumstauncies, as in a Cawse of soche Importaunce is requisite, thought it better, in Respekte of our Duties, and the Care we have to prevent any Mischeife that might be vpon the Soddeine attempted, to conclude amongst oure selves, that the Forces apointed there to resist this forreine Invasiō should be sent for; and withall, at the same Instant, to advertize your Lordships, what we had donne; to the Ende, that if any Perrill and Daunger should fall out, and we beinge forewarned by Advertizements from thence of the same, should not in Tyme provide Remedye, we might of oure Negligencies be iustlye condempned; so that we are nowe to crave your Lordships Aydes, and Advises in the Matter, that if your Lordships shall thinke convenient, either vpon theise Advertizementes that we have received, or any others that since you be advertized of, that the Men be sent; that then there be no Staye, but that they may comme, accordinge to our Lettres addressed in that Behalfe; otherwayes your Lordships to make Stay of them, or as maney of them, as to your grave Wisdomes and Consideracions (wayinge the Necessitie and Importaunce of the Cawse) shall seme best, and most agreable for her Majesties Service. Prayinge your Lordships neverthelesse, that if Stay be made  
nowe



nowe for this Tyme; yet that the Order may stande, your Lordships alreadie have taken for their Comminge, when I the Deputie shall send at any Tyme hereafter vpon iust Occasion for them, least if that Rule vpon this Accydent should be broken, and an other newe prescribed, the Service might fayle vpon the Soddeine, if any forreine Invasiō should be attempted, whereof we beseeche your Lordships to have due Consideracion. And even so we humblye take our Leaves of your good Lordships. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the vth of *September*, 1577.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinds humblye to commaund,*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Vice President, and Council of the Marches of Wales.*

**A**fter my verye hartye Commendacions, by Lettres written vnto you from the Lords of her Majesties honorable Privye Counsell, bearinge Date at *Grenewitche* the vth of *June* last, you were directed to put in Areadyneſs, with all Expedition, in the Shires vnder your Commission, to be sent vnto me hether, one thousand Soldiōrs, at soche Tyme as you should receive Order from me in that Behalfe, and not expect any other or further Warraunt, either from her Majestie or their Lordships for the same: And you were lykewise fuder directed by the same Lettres, that everye Hundered of the saied Soldiōrs to be sent hether, should be composed of lx Calyvers, or Harquebuse Shott, withe their Murriōns or Burgonetts, Swordes and Daggers, xx<sup>tie</sup> Pikes, and xx<sup>tie</sup> Bills or Halberds, with Corseletts, and other Furniture as apperteinethe, in soch Sorte as by a former Lettre from her Majestie directed to me, when I was there present amoungest you vpon lyke Occasion of Service was apointed to be donne; and you also by the same Lettres put in Mynd, that accordinge to my Plott you should make your Divisiōns, aswell for the Numbers of Men to be borne vpon every Shire, as for the Choyce of the Capteins, viz. those CC. that are to be leuiēd in *Gloucestershire*, *Worcestershire*, and *Hereffordshire*, to be vnder the Leadinge of *Thomas Throckmorton*. Those 200 to be leuiēd in *Monmowth*, *Brecknocke*, and *Glamorgan*, to be vnder the Leadinge of *Sir William Morgan* of *Penycoyd*. Those 200 to be leuiēd in *Carmertben*, *Penbrooke*, *Cardigan*, and *Radnor*, to be vnder the Leadinge of *Mr. Deveraux*, Brother to the late Earle of *Essex*. And so theise 600 oute of *Sowthwalles*, with their Capteins and Proporcion of Victualls, to be ordered by you to be imbarqued at *Bristoll*, and transported to *Waterford*, and there to attende and receive Direcciō from me. Further, those 200 to be leuiēd in *Merioneth*, *Mountgomerye*, and *Sallopp*, to be at the Direcciō and Leadinge of *Richard Corbett*, or *Lacon* of *Willey*. Those 200 to be leuiēd at *Flint*, *Denbighe*, *Carnarvan*, and *Anglesey*, to be at the Leadinge of *John Salisberye* of *Reeke*: And so those 400 of *Northwales*, with their Capteins and Provisiō of Victualls, to be ordered to be imbarqued at *Chester*, and landed at *Dublin*. And for that by Order from the Lords, aswell Conducte and Coate Money is apointed for the Soldiōrs, as the Maiōrs of *Chester* and *Bristoll* directed, to provide for the Lodginge and Victuallinge of them duringe the Tyme of their Aboade in those Partes, expectinge Wynde and Wether: I trust that vpon the Receipt hereof, that, without fuder Delay, you will geve Order for the Sendinge of the Men, furnished and sorted as afore, to imbarque as sone as the first Wynde and Weather will serve; the more spedilye to prevent the Preparacion and Invasiō intended by the *Frenche*: Who, as I am advertized, are nowe prepared in *Breitteine*, and readye to imbarque and take Shipping towards theise Coasts, for the Annoyaunce and Disturbaunce of the Quiet of this Realme. And al be it in this so weightie an Action of Service, I have no Cawse to doubt; but in Respecte of the Importaunce of the Matter, you will vse all Dilligence and



Expedition to see theise Numbers of Soldiours set forwards : Yet I hope, that partlye in Regarde they are sent to serve vnder me, who have borne the principall Office of Chardge there amongst you, nowe almost theise xviij Yeares ; you wilbe more readye both to sett the Matter forwards, and likewise the Soldiours them selves to be more readye and willinge to comme. And even so requiringe you, on her Majesties Behalfe, to vse all Dilligence to see them spedilye set forwards, and prepared hetherwards, I bid you Farewell. From the Castell of *Dublin* the vth of *September*, 1577.

*Your assured lovinge Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Sheriffe, Justices of the Peace, and Commissioners of the Musters in the County of Devon.*

**A**fter my hartie Commendacions. Whereas by Lettres addressed vnto you from the Lords of her Majesties honorable Privey Counsell, bearinge Date at *Grenewitche* the vth of *June* last, you were willed to put in a Readines the Number of 400 able and furnished Men of that Countrie, sorted with Weapon in that Order, as by the saied Lettres may appeare vnto you ; and those Men to be still in a Readines to be imployed for the Service of *Ireland*, at all Tymes when you should receive Order from me to send them over, and not to expecte either any other or furdur Warraunt from her Majestie, or the Lords in that Behalfe. I therefore, in her Majesties Name, earnestlye and effectuallye requier you presentlye, vpon Sight hereof, to assemble those 400 Soldiours, and put them in Order foorthwith, as sone as the first Wynde and Wether will serve to imbarque them selves at *Barnestable*, beinge the fittest Place for the Transportacion of them to *Waterford*. And likewise I am to put you in Remembraunce, that vpon some Conference amongst your selves, you make Choyce of some speciall Person, who may have the Chardge of the Conductinge of the saied Men to *Waterford*, expresselye chardginge hym to have Care for the Preservinge of the Soldiours Furniture, to the Ende they may be the better able to do her Majestie Service when they shall arryve here. And for that Order is taken by the Lord Threasorer, both for a convenient Proporcion of Victualls, Coate, and Conducte Money, and Chardge for the Transportacion of the Soldiours, to be delyvered vnto soch Personnes, as shalbe by you authorized to receive the same : I hope there shalbe no Stay, but that they shalbe presentlye sent over with the first Wynde and Wether that shall serve for their Transportacion, the more spedilye to prevent the Invasion intended by the *Frenche*, who, as I am advertized, are nowe prepared in *Breitaine*, and reddye to imbarque and take Shippinge towards theise Coastes, for the Disturbance of the good Quiet and Tranquillitie of this Realme. And therefore I doubt not, but accordinge to your wonted Wisedomes and approved Discreacions, you will have Care of so weightye a Cawse, as the Necessitie and Importaunce of the Service requyrethe, which in her Majesties Behalfe I estsones requyre and chardge you to do. And even so I bid you hartelye Farewell. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the vth of *September*, 1577.

*Your lovinge Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*The Lords of the Council in Ireland to Queen Elizabeth.*

*Most gracious Sovereigne,*

**W**hereas the Right Honorable your Highnes Deputye of this your Realme [Sir Henry Sydney.] hath signified vnto vs your gracious Pleasure, that we should once every Yeare at the least advertize your Highnes, of the Estate of



of this your Countrie, the Quiet or Disquiet of the same; and so consequent-lye, of the Disorders (if any were) and the Cause thereof; which were Letts to good Governement; and therevpon to sett downt oure Opinions, not onelye of the Meanes to reforme such Disorders, but also to devise some Way to diminish the great Chardge, your Highnes doth, and hath susteined theise many Yeares, for the Good of this People and Countrie.

It may lyke your Highnes vpon Relacion made vnto vs, by your Majesties Deputy, after the Ende of his longe Iorney into all the Provinces, the first Yeare after his Arryvall, that the Lords, and Cheifeteynes of all the *Irisbery*, had submitted them selves vnto your Highnes, with such Offers and Compositions, to hold their Lands and Countries of your Highnes; yeelding soche Rent, and Service, as was thought by vs, a good Encrease of your Highnes Revenue, with further Declaracion of your Majesties most gracious Intencion speedilye to sende vnto vs Presidents and Justices, to be resident in those remote Places, that he had visited; and a Chauncellor and Justices, to serve within the Pale: We comfortably lyved with Hope in fewe Yeares to have tasted of the Fruite of that your Highnes most gracious Intente, to the Good of this Realme, and the Benifitt of your poore obedient People, which we all acknowledge, is the sole and onelye Way, to cure and remedie the longe festered Cankers, which for so many Yeares hath had Contynuaunce, and sore greived this Estate. For when Justice and resident Authoritie shalbe pulled away, or discontinued in those remote Partes, your Majestie wilbe acknowledged (in oure Opinions) but onely by Title and Name, and not in Dede and Effecte; so moche Custome and Tyrannye hath prevayled, as in most Places the great ones, without Controlement or Resistauce, would expecte to possesse yours, and their owne. But most gracious Sovereigne, in this ioyfull Tyme (we say) of quiet and comfortable Hope of Reliefe: In the Moneth of *June* the Yeare past, vpon the Landing of your Majesties Chauncellor, and President, a Rebellion (conspired by the Earle of *Clanrickard*, in *May* before, to drawe Force of *Scotts* into *Connaught*) was by the saied Earle hym selfe then actuallye put in Execucion, as we have most apparauntlye perceived by sondrie Examinacions alreadye taken, whatsoever be saied or enformed of the Fathers severe Dealinge against the Sonnes. Which trayterous Rebellion, your Highnes saied Deputy (most worthy therein of singuler Commendacion for his Dilligence and Expedition) so daunted in the verye Beginninge, as the Forces and Healpes, which the Rebelle expected, were cutt off for that Tyme, the Fortefieng of the Castells and Holdes they were in Hand withall sodenlye stayed, and their Trenchinge and Wallinge prevented: But yet this Rebellion not altogether so totallye subdued, but that the Dreggs, and Remaynes that the Earle had leaft in the Harts of the People, that he had gathered, was soche, as they helde Sir *Nicolas Malbye* (your Highnes Collonell there) so occupied, as vntill almost *Easter* last, he had small Tyme to see Justice delyvered, or to deale withe the Countrie for Contribucion, towards the Supportinge of your Majesties great Chardgies of that Province: The Manner of which Conspiracye of Rebellion stretched it selfe (as we are perswaded) by sondrie Braunches into *Mounster*, with Determinacion to hold your Deputie and Presidents, in bothe the Provinces, so occupied in Armes, as they should not greatlye trouble Courtes with *Englishe* Justice, of those Conspirattors abhorred and hated, expectinge (as may be gathered) some greater Force from forreine Partes, to have wrought this Yeare the lyke, that the last yeelded. For this apeareth by the Confession of Sir *John* of *Desmound*, that sith the Earle was committed, his Sonnes, and their Force, beinge not yet subdued, but remayninge armed in the Fieldes, Mediacion and Entreatie was made for the Conclusion of a Mariage between *Marie Bourcke*, the Earles Daughter, and the saied Sir *John*, although he have a nother Wife lyvinge, and she another Husband. And further it apered by Examinacion, that he received severall Lettres from *John Bourcke*, and *Marie*; and as it is by others affirmed (although collorably by hym denied) he secretelye met, and had Conference with *John Bourcke*, who shewed



shewed hym Lettres of Advertizements of *James Fitz Morrice* Invasion, as it were in Vaunte of the Likehode of some forreine Invasion, and Healpe the rather to sturre hym to take his Parte : And as Rebels and rebellious Hartes, are easely knitt to ioyn together in Mischeife, so *Connor Mac Cormocke Oconnor*, and *Rorie Oge Omore*, contrarye to their Othes, Submissions, and Promises (hopinge for Ayde out of *Connaught*) beganne to gather of their Freindes and Confederates, out of severall Places, to the Number of a hundred Swoordes or thereabouts, and so to revolte ; who vpon a soddeine, at one Instant on *Christmas Eve* last, burnt dyvers Haggardes and poor Mens Cottagies of the *Kings* Countye to the Valewe, as was reported vnto vs, by the Testimonye of the Sheriffe, and others of the best Creditt and Accompt in the Countrie, of twoe hundred Poundes. And after Takinge some Encouragement by the Successe they had in this, with some greater Force of soche as they have gathered, came to the Towne of the *Naas* by the Night, and bourned to the Number of Sevenscore thatched Howsies, or thereabowtes : And likewise, since that Tyme they have bourned a great Parte of *Laughlin*, and donne some other Harmes and Spoyles vpon the Borders of the Pale. And not withstandinge your Majesties Force contynually followed them in Chase, who have cut of the greatest Number of those, who first were assembled, and of the best of them, as we have received Vnderstandinge by good Certificat ; yet soch is their Maintenaunce in the Counties adioyninge to *Leix*, and their Watche and Spiall so good, with the Healpe of their Fastnes, Bogges, and Woodes, as still they be oute. Vnto whose Daunger, Captein *Harrington*, and *Alexander Cosbye*, overmoch creditinge some futtle Promises and Othes, as we be enformed, have of late, thorough their owne Follies, cast them selves.

Theise Conspiracies and soch lyke, may be easelye devised and cast out as Letts to hynder your Highnes most gracious Determinacion and Proceedinge to settle Justice ; but as the first that beganne theise Rebellions, and their greatest Force are well subdued, so we mistrust not, but very spedilye to see *Rorie* and *Connor* of no Force to be accompted of ; which donne, we may then boldlye signifye vnto your Highnes that the People within your Pale, were not of longe Tyme, more apt to be framed to good Order and imbrace Justice, then at this Present.

The State of the Northe, and the Towardnes of good Quiet there, is soche, as of longe Tyme hath not bene better ; for *Tirlaugh Lynaugh* hath come in, to your Highnes Deputie, and after his Comminge, simplye, without Pledge, Proteccion, or Hostage, shewed soch Tokens and Notes of Duetye and Obedience, as the Troubles of those Partes are not to be feared as before ; which if they should brust out by Meanes of the Insolencye, and Pride of the *Scotts*, *Tirlaugh* is to be framed, as an Instrument and Scourge for them, to conteine them in the Bonds of Obedience.

And, most gracious Sovereigne, the Benifitt that hath risen by this last Yeares Travell of your Highnes President in *Munster*, and Collonell in *Connaught*, notwithstandinge the actuall Rebellion in the one Place, and the Shewe of Mislyke in the other, is an Argument to vs, what would have growen thereby to your Maiestie, had not the Rebellion in *Connaught* bene ; or if the Earle of *Desmound* had, in all Pointes, shewed soch willinge Disposicion to obey and lyve vnder the Rule of Justice, as he might have donne, as the Note delyvered by the saied President and Collonell to your Highnes Deputye ; and, as we vnderstand, certified to your Maiestie, will declare. And therefore, for the present, we passe it over ; but onely to remember your Maiestie of what Force resyent Authoritie is, if the same be contynued ; and what Increase both of Obedience and Revenue, will thereby grow yerelye to your Maiestie, to the Deminishinge and Decreasinge of the great Chardge your Highnes nowe susteyneth. And like as we must confesse vnto your Maiestie, that the People within the Pale are over moche blemished with the Spottes of the *Irishry* ; and that the fondrie good Lawes from Age



to Age, devised to wype out those Staynes, have rather bene hid and not knowen, then duelye executed : So are we to be beseache your Highnes of the Contynuaunce of that your gracious Care, to send Justices to put those and other nedefull Lawes fitt to passe at this next Parliament for the State of the Realme, in due Execucion. And because both by the severall and longe Journeys, which your Maiesties Chauncellor hath taken in this Land, he hath sene the severall Exaccions, Extorsions, and *Irish* Imposicions, which decayeth the Poore, and hyndereth Justice : And by his like Search into the Parliament Rolles, and Rolles of Accompt, hath sene into the Governement of this Estate in Tymes past ; and therefore the best able not onely to acquainte your Maiestie with what he hath conceived touchinge the same ; but also a Man, for his Judgement and Skill, fit to conferre with soche as your Highnes shall please to apointe, touchinge theise newe Lawes that are to passe this next Parliament. Therefore we have vpon Consideracion of soch Persons, as we thought metest to repaier to your Maiesties Prefence, with Advertizements, made speciall Choyce of hym, and accordinge to former Presidents, when, vpon soch like Occasions, the Chauncellors of this Land, have bene sent thether, we have taken Order for the faulse Vsinge and Custodie of your Majesties Seale ; whereunto, as vpon our Mocion, he hath willingly assented : So we humbly beseache your Maiestie, that he be not deteined there longe, but that he may be retorned to his Chardge agayne withe convenient Spede. For we assure your Highnes sithence his first Landinge, his Diligence in his Office, readye Dispatch of Cawties and Sutors, and Care of this Estate, deserveth Commendacion. And were it not for the verie Necessitie of this present Service, ill could we have assented to have spared hym. And for the Matter of Cesse, where with the Country seameth more nowe to find them selves greived then before, we are of this Opinion ; that other Order and Course would be taken, then hath bene, to take and receive the Countries yearelye Yeldinge to ease your Maiesties great Chardge, duringe the Tyme that Necessitie enforceth a Garrison to be kept. And do thinke it verie expedient, that they of the Countrey should fall to some certeine Composition, that a certeine Somme might yearelye be yeelded ought of everie Ploughland, and by somme of the best Callinge, put in Assuraunce, to be delyvered at Dayes ; for, as it is nowe, and for dyvers Yeares hath bene, the Exaccions and Disorders of the Gatherers of the Cesse, hath greatly oppressed the Poore. And if it hath bene reported to your Highnes, that your Deputy hath vsed other Manner and Order, in the settinge downe of the Cesse, for the twoe Yeares past, in Quantitie for the Garrison or his Howse, otherwise then was before vsed, we assure your Maiestie the same is vntrewe ; for he imitated the commen Order vsed heretofore, by callinge the Counsell and Nobilitie together, and layenge the Imposicion, which in Quantitie was lesse for the Garrison then had bene laied before. His Motion to the Countrey still was, to conferre vpon somme other Manner of Devise to victuall the Soldior, your Maiestie at no greater Chardge, and he would assent thereunto ; offeringe them openlye a Contentment in hym for their Ease, to receive fyve Marks of the Plowelande, and to dischardge them of all Cesses. And because the Lord Chauncellor was present, and can certifie your Maiestie fullye and particularlye, of the Manner and Order of the settinge downe of the Cesse this last Yeare, and of your saied Deputies and oure Proceadings therein. The Offers made to those travellinge vp withe Complaite : The Withstandinge of your Highnes Royall Prerogatyve in some Pointes, by dyvers the Lordes, Knights, and Gentlemen within the Pale, and oure Committinge of them, and their Enlardgment vpon their Submission. Therefore we, to avoyde Troublinge your Highnes with tedious Writinge, leave the Whole to his Report, and pretermitt the speciall Recitall thereof, craving your Maiesties Pardon, for that we have so longe, with this oure rude and longe Discourse, troubled your Maiestie, whome we beseache the Almightye longe and happelye to prosper and preserve, to the inestimable Comforte of your Highnes humble Subiects, and the Confusion and Overthrowe of your



Ennemies. We most humblye take oure Leave. From *Dublin* the xijth of *September*, 1577.

*Your Maiesties most humble, obedient, and*

*faythfull Subiectes,*

*H. Sydney, &c.*

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth, sent by the Lord Chancellor.*

*Most gracious Sovereigne,*

**A**F T E R the Writinge of my last Lettres vnto your Maiestie, dated from the *Newrie* in *August* last; I hasted hetherwards to fynde both more convenient Tyme, and apter Place, more fullye to informe my selfe of those Things, wherein your Maiestie requyred to be answered; which there, as I writt vnto your Maiestie, I could not so commodiouslye do. And duringe the Tyme of my Aboade there, *Tirlaugh Llenaugh* came vnto me in humble and dуетiefull Manner, shewing such Tokens of Obedience and Loyaltie, as greater could not be found in a Subiecte (farre above his Trayninge) offeringe to do soche Service vpon the *Scotts*, or any others where I should directe hym, as the lyke Offer hath not bene made vnto me, by any of his Sorte, since my Governement. And his simple and playne Manner of Proceadinge was soche, as comminge thether cheifelye to seeke Justice at my Hands, and Redresse of such Iniuries as had bene offered hym, he exhibited his Petitions in Writinge, wherein, and in all the rest of his Proceadings, I found hym so conformable to Reason, and so yelding to Order, as greater Conformitie I have not found at any Tyme in any *Irishman*. He remayned with me there some fewe Dayes, while his Cawties were in Hand, without Hostage, Pledge, or Proteccion; and, in the Ende, delyvered me a Lettre addressed to your Maiestie from hym, and besaught me, that I would accompanye the same, with my Commendacions to your Highnes; which, in Trothe, Madame, I thinke he hath very well deserved. His Petitions be, to be created into Degree of Honnor, and that his Sonne may be made Baron, and he to have some Enterteinment and Stipend from your Maiestie, soch as you shall thinke hym worthy of, to inhale hym the better to serve against the *Scott*, or any other Rebelle, where he shall be directed by the Governor: And for better Profe of his Loyaltie and Fidellitie, he hath, since his Departing from me, made a Iorney vpon the *Scottes*, and killed *Sorley Boyes* Sonne and his Brother; so that I am to crave your Maiesties Answer and Resolucion for hym. And for that his Wife hath bene an Instrument, and cheife Counsellor, to frame hym to this Order of Obedience, and dуетiefull Manner of Proceadinge, I humbly beseech your Maiestie to bestowe a Garment vpon her, as a Token of your Favor, which Mr. *Marshall* telleth me, your Maiestie did geve Order for, at his beinge there, who was a Sutor for it on her Behalfe; who, aswell in this as in dyvers other good Offices, in managinge those Northern Cawties, where I have apointed hym Cheife in Chardge; hath for his Care, Travell, and Dilligence, to settle good Order and Quiet in those Partes, deserved great Commendacion and Thanks, which I beseeche your Maiestie, by some comfortable Lettre to bestowe vpon hym.

After my Comming hether, beinge perplexed with no small Greife and Sorrowe conceived of the hard Phrase of your Maiesties Lettre, I fell to the Consideracion with my self, howe I might best satisfie your Maiesties Expectacion towching the material Pointes of the same; which, I thought, I could not so plaineley set downe in Writinge, were it never be so large a Discowrse (to tedious for your Highnes to reade) but havinge there soche Ennemies to me, and Adversaries to your Prerogatyve and Proffitt, they would impugne (as they have donne) as moche as lay in them any thinge I should write. And therefore I thought best, the Matters beinge of soch Gravetie and Weight, havinge no Boddye to resolve your Ma-  
iestie



iestie, nor the Lords, in Cawties of Doubt which arise maney Tymes; and to answere the Objections that are made against the Defectes of this Governement; to send some expresse Man over to your Maiestie, chosen by the Assent of your Counsell here, who should be of Sufficiencie to do the same: And for that Purpose have chosen, by a generall Consent of the Boorde, your Chauncellor, beinge a Man of that Gravetie, Wisedome, Staiedness, and Experience, as I hope shalbe sufficientlie hable to answere your Maiestie in that you shall demaunde of hym; to whome I beseeche your Maiestie to geve fym Creditt, who repayreth fullye instructed for the Matter of the Cesse. First, for the Beginninge of it; then of the Cawse and Contynuance of the same; the Necessitie to have it; and the rest of the Circumstauncies and Incydents to that Matter: Next, what Cesse, since my last Acceptacion of this Governement, hath bene levied for the Vse of the Garrison, or taken vp; for the Provision of my Howsehold, both for the Quantitie and the Manner; the Kinds and Proporcions in every Sorte; vpon what Countries the same is laied; what hath bene paide thereof, and what remaineth vnanswered; and, to make the Matter more evident and plaine to your Maiesties View, I have cawsed one of my speciall Officers of Howsehold, to attend vpon hym with my Howsehold Booke; to the Ende your Maiestie may see (or soch whome it shall please your Maiestie to apointe) what hath bene received, what hath bene bestowed, and thereby perceive in what Sorte I have bene misreported. And, most gracious Ladie, I had thought I had rather deserved large Thanks, that have had this Care of the Countrie, that where the Countrie afore was chardged with the Victuallinge of a thousand Soldiours, I demaunded Victuallinge onelye for 500; and as scant a Proporcion is demaunded for those 500, as in any reasonable Consideracion may be: So that the Grevaunce is not in the Quantitie but in the Price, which lyeth not in me to healpe. For a Cowe that was wont heretofore to be sold for vj s. is now worth xx s. and so after the lyke Rate in other Things; and the Soldiour may not have a lesse Proportion in Fode then he was wont to have; for he eateth now as he was wont to do, and thereof he may not be moch scant: So that except your Maiestie will increase the Soldiours Pay, I cannot see howe to ease the Countrie more then I have donne. And in some other Mens Tymes (as appeareth by the Counsell Bookes) there hath bene a greater Cesse layed for the Keping onely of twoe Fortes, then is now demaunded for the whole Garrison; and yet somme Soldiours lay vpon the Countrie still, and no Fault found withall, nor Complainte made: But my hard Happ is otherwayes, which discourageth me to serve, when I feare I am condemned, before I be hard, and myne Ennemies hard and believed. And touchinge the Alienacion of your Maiesties Subiects Hartes, by any newe Imposicion layed vpon them, me seemeth this may hardlye be constrewed a good Cawse or Grounde, when I offer to dischardge them for fyve Markes a Ploughland, where they complayned that they were chardged with viii l. vpon a Ploughland; neither is this any hard Kinde of Dealing with the Countrie, where the Bourden lay but vpon a fewe, to ease them the more, to make it more vniversall (as I have donne) and a greater Number to beare the Bourden. And albeit some fewe of the Lords, who are willfullye and maliciously bent, repyne and kicke that their newe Freedomes are touched (wherein lyeth the Gall of all this secreat Greife) yet others there be of the Nobilitie that lyke of my Devise and Distribucion; and protest in their owne Names, and the Names of the poorer Sorte, there was never a more gratefull and plausible Matter offered for the Ease of the Countrie. But what soever I devise or do, of somme I perceive it is ill taken, and I flandered; and the Greife of the Countrey made great, although it be lesse in my Tyme, both for the Garrison and my Howsehold, then it hath bene in former Tymes before me, whatsoever Reporte be made to the contrarie.

And, most gracious Sovereigne, the late Grauntinge of a generall Fredome to the Earle of *Ormond*, is the Cawse either of the Decrease of some Parte of your Ayde and Subsidie of Contribution for Service, or ells wilbe a greater Bourden



Bourden to the Subiecte, then in Reason they should or wold be willinge to bear; for in Equitie that cannot be imposed vpon them, which his Landes should beare; for therein were Oppression, and no Equalitie in Distribucion; so that your Maiestie onely is to beare the Losse. And howe can you expect so great an Encrease of your Revenüe, when your Highnes is so greate an Ennimye to your owne Proffitt, and geve it forth both by Woorde and otherwayes, as some reporte that your Maiestie will have no Cesse? For the Example of this wilbe a President and Encouragement to others, to sue for the lyke Immunities at your Hands, which, if you should graunte, it wold be a Decrease of that, which, in Tyme, would growe to be a certeine Revenüe: And, if your Maiestie should not graunte the same, it might happelye be a Cawse of Discontentment: For the rest of his Ranke (as it is to be supposed) will attempt to obtaine the like Favour at your Highnes Hands as he hath donne.

And theise People here are so incouraged and comforted of late from thence, by some your Maiestie geveth Countenance vnto, and soch Reportes brought hether of their Proceadings and the favorable Eare you encline to heare them, and healp them; as maketh both some of the Nobilitie and common Sorte to be more willful and obstinate, then otherwise they would be; and, on the other Side, the slender Backinge of me in your Services, discourageth me altogether either to attempt or do any Thinge with Comforte or Concept of good Lykinge; for Bruites flye hether, that I shalbe revoked, and that your Maiestie hath conceived Displeasure against me; and you knowe what Service is to be expected, and howe the People wilbe inclyned, when they shall suspecte your Maiestie is offended with me, and that I am in Disgrace with you. And, Madame, theise Bruites do no Good; if they be trewe (it be determined I shalbe revoked) I humblye beseeche your Maiestie that I may knowe your gracious Pleasure; if it be not so, it were good in the respect of Thadvancement of your Service, that these Bruites were suppressed. But when I looke into the Services that I have donne, the Care and Travell that I have taken, and the found Conscience I beare, that I have served you faythfullye, trewlye and profitably; I cannot but lament with Sorrowe of Harte, and Greife of Mynde, to receive soch sharpe and bitter Lettres from your Maiestie, which so moch have perplexed me both Bodye and Mynde since I received them, as I shall finde no Comforte till your Maiestie be fullye enformed, and thoroughlye satisfied, howe I have bene misreported vnto you; and they that so have enformed you, receive the iust Rewarde of their Vntrothes.

And where your Highnes hath conceived that I have not so well vsed your Threasure, or extended the same so farre as to your Benifitt I might have donne: For your Maiesties better Satisfaccion therein, I have cawsed a breife Abstract to be made of the Number of your Garrison, the Placeis where they serve, the Pay they have, and the Necessitie to vse and imploye them, and the Chardge to victuall them, besides your Pay; to be considered, searched, and tried, by whome it shall please your Maiestie to appointe.

And for the Increase or Decrease of your Revenüe, the Auditor vpon the Endinge of his Accomptes (which, I hope, wilbe shortlye) he will reduce the same to a certeine Somme; so that I doubt not, but your Maiestie shall rather finde an Encrease, then Decrease of Revenüe, whatsoever it hath pleased some others to say to the contrarie.

And nowe, most redoubted Sovereigne, havinge fullye and plainelye answered (as I take it) the Pointes of your Maiesties Lettre in soch Sorte, as in ech Particuler I will stand to my Iustificacion; if this (for the which I shalbe most hartelye soarye) shall not satisfie your Maiestie, I humblye beseeche your Highnes, that the same may stand with your gracious Pleasure, that I my selfe may come to answer myne owne Matters, and to prove vnto you that to be trewe which I have saied, to the Disprofe of them, whosoever have informed you to the contrarie; most lowlye upon my Knees prayinge the Almightye to blesse your Majestie with longe and happie Life, Obedience of your Subiectes, and Triumphe  
over



over your Ennemies. From your Highnes Castell of Dublin, the xvth of September, 1577.

*Your Maiesties most humble and obedient Sarvaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England, sent by the Lord Chancellor.*

*My very good Lords,*

**M**Y Dewtye humblye remembred to your good Lordships. Together with your Lordships Lettres of the xxth of July last, brought by Colman, the Lord President of Mounsters Servaunt, I received iij Plotts; one of the Greives of the Pale with Answeres thereto by Postills; a nother a Way howe to ease the Grievs of the Cesse imposed vpon the Pale for the Deputies Howse; the third conteyned certeine Wayes of Victuallinge of an Armye of a thowsand Men, whereby the Pale may be somewhat eased. All theise Plotts beinge considered of by me and the Counsell, and long Consultacion had howe to ease the Countrey (whereof we have a speciall Care) to take away all vnnecessarie Grevauncies, and Imposicions, without Hyndraunce of the Service. We first called the Captens vnto vs, and imparted vnto them that Parte of the Plott that concerned them selves; whereunto they made Answer in Writinge, which I delyvered vnto the Lord Chauncellor, to be presented vnto your Lordships; whereby you shall perceiue, aswell the Impossibilitie the Soldiour should lyve vpon that Condicion of Victuallinge offered vnto hym by that Plott, as also in Parte discover the heavye Loade laied vpon the Countrey, that are forced to victuall the Soldior at so base a Rate; which, in Troth, is no small Bourden vnto them. For Things growinge daylye to higher Prices, the Countrey is sore greived, and the State of the Soldiour not in any Sorte amended, who is forced maney Tymes, in his Travellinge, to pay his whole Dayes Wages for his Victuallinge, and sometymes his Dayes Wagies for one Meale; soche is the Dearth of all Things here, in so moche as the Question beinge asked at the Boorde, it was affirmed by somme of the Lords of the Countrey, that the Countrey could not aforde to beare the Soldiour better cheape then *vj d.* a Meale: So that I shalbe forced to be a Sutor vnto your Lordships, to be a Meane to her Majestie for the Ease of the Countrey, and the Increase of the Soldiors Pay, who assuredlye is not able to lyve of his Enterteinment, except the same may be increased. The other twoe Plotts were lykewise debated and considered of, and Answer made vnto them to eche perticuler Pointe, which I referre to the Lord Chauncellors Reporte, to whome, I beseache your Lordships, aswell in theise Matters of Cesse, as in other Things he hath to delyver vnto you from me and the Boorde, to geve full Creditt. And, my Lords, for myne owne Perticuler, I am to render vnto your Lordships my humble Thanks, that it pleaseth your Lordships so well to allowe of the Course of my Proceadings with those Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, that so vnduetifullye shewed them selves Impugners of the Cesse, and her Majesties Prerogatyve, who of late were by me and the Borde inlardged vpon their Submission: They made faier Shewe in Woordes, and expressed moch Duetiefulnes in Writinge, as may apeare by the Copey of their Submission, which the Lord Chauncellor hath to shewe vnto your Lordships: But howe farre that differed from their inward Conceite and Meaninge, they shortlye after made Demonstracion to the World; for beinge called (as the Custom is) to sett downe a Cesse for the Victuallinge of the Garrison and my Howsehold for this next Yeare, and requyred to ioyne with me, and the Counsell, in Devise howe the Countrey might be best eased of the Bourden of Cesse laied vpon them, refused either to enter into Consideracion with vs of the Matter, or to put their Handes to



the Booke of oure Agreement; alleading, that the Cawse was afore her Majestie, and that they had there Agents there, and that they expected Resolucion from her Highnes for those Matters of Cesse and Chardge to be imposed vpon the Countrie, which otherwise, they thought, except the same were either expressly signified from her Highnes, or ells agreed vpon and concluded by Parliament, they ought not to beare. Of whose Refuzall, I thought good to make your Lordships acquainted, referringe the rest of the Circumstauncies and Incydents to the Reference of my Lord Chauncellor, who was present, and a Witnes of all their Proceadinge, how, and what Manner, and by what Course and Degrees the same passed. And even so, with the humble Remembrance of my Dewtye to your Lordships, I take my Leave. From her Majesties Castell of *Dublin*, the xvth of *September*, 1577.

*Your honorable Lordships assured loving*

*Freinde humblye to commaund.*

H. Sydney.

*Instruccions geven by the Lord Deputie and Counsell, to William Gerrard, Esq; Lord Chauncellor of this Realme, beinge expressly chosen and sent to her Majestie and the Lords, from vs, to entreate of Cawses of this State, and to answeere soch Accusacions and Obieccions as her Majestie and the Lords have bene informed of, by soch Persons and there Agents, as have of late severed theim selves from oure Fellowship, and opposed theim selves against the Governement. Dated at Dublin, the xvth of September, 1577.*

1. **F**IRST, you shall with all good Dilligence make your Repaier to the Courte, and delyver soch Lettres as we have sent to her Majestie, and the Lords, and present oure humble Services, Dueties, Thanks, and Commendacions to ech in their perticuler Degrees, as the Course of Speech, and the Framinge of Tyme, will geve you Leave.

2. Next, you shall imparte to her Majestie, or to soch of the Lords to whome you shall have Acceffe, the State of this Countrie, and perticulerlye the State of every Province, according to the Effecte and Tenor of oure Lettres, from Pointe to Pointe, with soch further Inlargement or Addicion (not discentinge or disagreeenge from oure saied Lettres and Instruccions) touchinge eche severall Matter you shalbe demaunded of, or by moyinge of Quetions from her Majestie, or her Counsell, you shalbe vrged vnto, to the Ende, both her Majestie and they may vnderstand the full State of all Things concerninge the Quiet or Disquiet of this Realme, as niere as you can expresse or delyver the same vnto them.

3. You shall declare vnto her Majestie, or the Lords, from vs, that for the Reformation of this Realme, there is nothings so necessarye as the Plantinge of Presidents and Counsells, or some soch lyke resident Authoritie, in the remoter Partes of the Realme. And the better to induce the Matter, you shall shewe the Fruites thereof by all due Circumstauncies, that her Majestie may felinglye perceive, both the Increase of Obedience in her People, and Augmentation of Revenue to her Cofers, growing towards the Maintenaunce of her Chardge in those remoter Provinces.

4. You shall also put her Majestie and the Lords in Remembrance, that the Delyveringe of Justice vniversallye thorough the Realme, is the sole and onelye Meanes to reforme this disioynted State, and barbarous Countrie, and howe glad the common and poorer Sorte are to imbrace it, and that none but the great Ones vnderhand repine at it: And what Sweetnes her good Subiects feele, by the Benifitt of her Majesties Lawes administred vnto them, wherebye they



they are nowe of late Yeares, not onelye delyvered from the Exaccions and Oppressions of their Lordes, who tirannised over them, but also lyve in Hope of more Ease and greater Wealth from Day to Day (if the Course of Justice may duelye take Place) and be planted amoungst them.

5. You shall declare how wilfullye maney of the noble Men of the Pale, as namelye, the Viscount of *Baltinglas*, the Barons of *Deluyn*, *Trymleston*, and *Howth*, are bent to oppose them selves against the State, howe loth they were to make any Submission; which, although it carried Apparaunce in Writinge and Shewe of Words, to be verye duetifull, and from the Harte, yet within fewe Dayes after beinge called, as in former Tymes they had bene accustomed, to yeeld their Consents to lay downe a Cesse for the Victuallinge of the Garrison, and the Deputies Howsehold, refused to put their Hands to the Counsell Booke, alleadginge that the Cawse was afore her Majestie, and that they expected Resolucion from her Majestie, for those Matters of Cesse and Chardge to be imposed vpon the Countrie, which otherwise they thought, except the same were either expresselye signified from her Highnes, or ells agreed vpon and concluded by Parliament, they ought not to beare: You shall move therefore, that they be speciallye sent for over to yeeld their Opinions there of Lykinge or Dislyking of the Matter. For the Example in punishinge of them, will brede both a great Honnor to the State, and a Contentment and Quiet to the Countrie. For that their Wilfulnes, if the same be borne withall, and not gayne saied by Authoritie, will make a generall Discontentment and Mutinye amoungst the People, whose Opinions depend most vpon their Lordships Wills, to be framed in any Sorte that they list to direct them.

6. You shall furder declare vnto her Majestie, and the Lords, howe maney Wayes and Devises we vsed to ease the People of their Greives and Bourden of Cesse (which, in Troth, is heavy) and howe maney Tymes we offered to have ioyned with the Lords in Advise for Redresse of the Matter, which they from Tyme to Tyme refused to do.

7. You shall furder declare, that there is no iust Cawse offered of the Alianacion of the Peoples Hartes, by Meanes of any newe Greivauncies or Impositions laied vpon them; for that neither the Cesse for the Garrison, nor the Deputies Howsehold is so great, as in other Governors Tymes the same hath bene, wherein you are to remember soch Notes and Memorialls, as be collected out of the Councell Books touchinge those Matters.

8. You shall also make known to her Majestie the State of her Revenue, and that the same hath neither bene neglected, either duelye to be called for, or yet remayneth vnanswered, as her Majestie is informed; but rather, of late, there hath bene a good Increase of the same.

9. To remember to the Lords, that the Quarterage assigned for the Service of this Countrie, due the First of *October* next, may be delyvered to the Threasurer, or his Agent, to be presentlye sent hether; and to move that the Threasure that is here alreadye, may remayne as a dead Masse to answeere the Events of any foreine Invasion, if Nede shall so requyre.

10. You shall declare to the Lords, what Hurte and Hinderaunce to her Majesties Service, the Bruites do that are brought over; first, that I, the Deputie, shalbe revoked, which, if it be so determined, I would be glad to knowe it, that I may direct my Course accordinge; and if it be not so, it were good with Spede to suppress those Brutes, for they increase Mislyke and Discontentment in the People. They say furder, that her Majestie will have no Cesse, and that I, the Deputie, have taken the Land to Ferme; which, although it be no newe Thing, that Deputies have bene placed by Patent to governe the Land, sometymes for x Years, sometymes for vij Yeares, and sometymes for more, and sometymes for lesse; and have had, by Composicion, all the Revenues, besides other Allowauncies yeilded vnto them; yet no soch Rumor nor Bruite hath bene rayfed, as is nowe, for the Settinge and Takinge of the Land to Ferme; wherebye it may evidentlye appeare, howe farre the Disposicions then,



then, be different from the Disposicions nowe; and that Malice, and not Matter, are the Ground of all these Vntrothes, and lewd Reportse.

11. You shall say further, that where it is reported, that I, the Deputie, passe all Things by myne owne Mynde contrarie to the Course of other Deputies, who did never any Matter of Consequence, without present Advertizinge the Prince, and some other principall Counsellors: That it will therefore please their Lordships to call to their Remembraunce, what longe and large Lettres, I have written vnto them, from Tyme to Tyme of my Proceadings in this Service; and that I have set downe, from Pointe to Pointe, my Plottes, Iorneyes, and other Devises, in so moch as I have rather bene afrayed, that I have overweried, and troubled their Lordships, with twoe tedious and longe Discourses in those Matters, then in any Sorte (as I take it) left vntold, and not certified any necessarie Matter, concerninge the Service, wherewith it had bene expedient to have made her Majestie, or their Lordships acquainted.

12. You shall declare vnto the Lords, the great Hope that is conceived of the Reformation of those twoe Provinces of *Mounster* and *Connaught*, and what Likelyhoode we see, by the Effectes and Fruites of this Yeares Service, that those Provinces wilbe in short Tyme brought to beare their owne Chardges, so that her Majestie, for a Tyme, may be perswaded and wonne to be at somme Chardge, as presentlye she is at, for the Countenaunce and Maintenaunce of those twoe Authorities; otherwise if she will none of it, to advertize her Pleasure, that those twoe States may be dissolved, and her Majestie thereby to be eased of that Chardge, which we, as Councillors to her Majestie, would not advise for the Honnor of the Realme, and Good of the People, should be donne.

13. The like Reason would be yeelded for *Ulster*, and the Hope we conceive by the Conformitie we fynde in *Tirlaugh Lenaugh*, as may in Parte appeare by the late Service he attempted against the *Scottes*, which you may declare.

14. And where it is alleadged, that I, the Deputie, goe about to impose and lay a newe Kinde of Cesse vpon the Countrie; and that consideringe the Cesse of it selfe (as is alleadged) is but a Thinge casuall and voluntarie to bynd them and their Inheritors, to a Thinge Royall, and of Perpetuitie, were in it selfe iniust, and in Respect of the Tyme, neither in Equitie to be borne, nor in Pollecy to be allowed. You may declare to the Lords, that my Meaninge was not, neither had I any Intencion to chardge the Countrie with any newe Kinde of Cesse, or Imposicion, except they will tearme this newe to make a Conversion of the Cesse into Money, and thereby to creat her Majestie a Rent, in which Manner of my Proceadinge, I thought rather, I should have deserved great Thanks, both of her Majestie and the Countrie; first to have created her a certeine Rent, and then to have dischardged the Countrie of a Chardge, which they alleadged was viij l. vpon a Ploughland, to fyve Marke vpon a Ploughland; if this be Iniustice or voyd of Equitie, or, in Respect of the Tyme, of Pollecy, I the Deputie referre the Consideracion of the same, to their Lordships grave Iudgements.

15. For the Matter of the Cesse, generall and perticuler, and what hath bene imposed vpon the Earle of *Kildares* Land, by Reason of the Dissolvinge of the newe Fredomes, and what Proffer I the Deputie made for my Stable, and what Devise I sett downe to disbourden the Countrie of the Keping of my Horse, and Horseboyes, which (as they alleadged) is a Chardge to them of 660 l. at the least, and I offered to discharge them for lesse then Halfe the Money, and that from henceforth they should not be troubled hereafter, with Horse or Horseboy, which they refused to accept. The Fermors alleadginge, that they durst not enter into any Composition at all, were the same never so reasonable, for Feare to offend their Landlordes.

16. You shall declare vnto the Lords, that if her Majestie be resolved to take away Cesse totally, and thinke it not convenient, that her Deputie should have Allowaunce of the Cesse, for the Provicion of his Howsehold; if it shall please her Majestie to geve me that Allowaunce, that other Deputies have had, that have



have not had Cesse, viz. *Sterlinge* Pay for me, and my Companie, where nowe I have but *Irish* Pay, and such other Benefits, for Commoditie and Provision of my Howsehold, as other Deputies have had, when they had no Cesse; although the Prises of all Things, be farre dearer nowe, then they were then, I will yet be very well satisfied, and assent to submitt my selfe to that Order, and not demaund any Cesse for me, or my Howsehold, duringe the Tyme it shall please her Majestie I shall contynue in this Governement.

17. Touchinge the auntient Lawes, which you, by your Travell, and dilligent Search, have found out in the Records of the Rolls, we leave those to your Discreacion, to be recommended, inlarged, corrected, or amended; as you shall thinke expedient for the Tyme. Wherein you shall do well to have somme Conference, with somme of her Majesties learned Counsell there, and others of Gravetie and Experience; so that havinge agreed vpon a Forme, the same may be sent hether, to be ingrossed, and passed vnder the Seale, to be sent thither, as in such Cases of Actes of Parliament is commenlye vsed; wherein we requyre you to vse all Dilligence, that they, with the rest, may passe at the next Parliament.

18. To remember to procure to be sent thence, the Manner and Order of the Proceffe, that is vsed for the Triall of Noblemen, for here is no President of it to be found, if Nede should requyre.

19. These be the principall Matters, we have nowe for the present to deliver you, which we pray and requyre you, to observe from Pointe to Pointe accordinglye. And if any Thinge shalbe furder demaunded, touchinge the Governement here, her Majesties Honnor, the Good of the Common Wealth, or the Defence and Quiet of the Countrie, which we have neither by Lettre nor these our Instruccions imparted vnto you. You shall therein, accordinge to the Tyme, Place, and your grave Iudgement and Discreacion, satisfie their Demaundes, concerninge those Pointes for the present, as you can; and advertize vs with Spede, what you have saied or donne therein; to the Ende, we may (if Neade so requyre) supply you with furder Order, Matter, and Instruction.

Edward Waterhows, *Esq;* to Sir Henry Sydney.

My good Lord,

I Hope shortlie to optaine your Paiment of 1660 *l.* but if I shold make Motion for the other Bill of 3000 *l.* it wold be thought that *Irland* were a very happy Clymat: Yet to Mr. Secretary I have movid the Matter, and guesed at the Maner of your coming by it; namely that you have borrowed Billes of the severall Captens, drewe uppon their Intertaigments, and so the Use of the Money, and not the Principall yours: But Mr. *Phillip* and I do resolve to optain the First, before we move the Second.

For Newes, there is arrived in *England* the Marques of *Avery*, Brother to the Duke of *Ascott*: He cometh towards the Court with a great Traine, and his Errand, as 'tis thought, to solycit from the States, Amity and Furniture to their Wants: They have wholly rejected the *Spanishe* Governement, and reserve the Forts of *Antwerp*, and *Ghent*, and other Places of Importance. Don *John* gatherith Force: His *Spaniards* are againe uppon Retorne, and the Power of *France* expected to his Aide.

In *France*, it is thought that generall Peace is concluded, uppon Articles that are like to hold. The Protestants so weake as they will refuse nothing; and *French* Practices beginn to shewe them selfs agenst her Majestys State, every where. Therefore your Lordship hath done very wisely, to disburden yourself of the Care of Calling for Aide of Men to assist you, and to lay it uppon the Counsell heere, who have now staid the Soldiers you sent for; and you are, in my Opinion, very honorably discharged.

The only Courtier heere, is the Erle of *Toomond*: He hath exhibitid a Supplication, wherein he hath had somme of my Help in norishing of a vaine



Humour. He alleagith the great Honour and Auctority of his Auncestors, the *Obrines*, for a thowfaund Yeares on both Sides of *Shenyn*. The Submission of his Father to *Henry the 8th*, and the Yelding of certain of his Libertyes to the King for a Tyme, wherof he now praieth Restitucion. He requireth in Effect the Government of such, on the other Side of *Shenyn*, as his Ancestors had; as *Okennedy*, with *Ibrine Ara*, in *Ibrine Ogonough*, and some other in *Ormond*. He alleadgith the Palatynes of *Ormond*, and *Desmond*: And lookith for like Libertyes in *Toomond*. He praieth all the Abbey Lands, the Custom of the Havens, the Bounds thereof, the Gallogles, the Allowing of all Surnames within his Countrey; and lastlye, that if her Majestie would have their Lands to go by Dessent, and not after the *Irish* Custom; then that all Freeholders may hold of him, by the same Tenure he holdeth of her Majestie. *Ecce Rex gloriæ*; but you are beholden to his Lordship; for my Lord of *Lecester* telleth me, he hath offrid my Lord of *Ibreacan*, to be matchid with some of my Lords Bludde, to assure him the Interest of your Howse.

This Supplication hath not yet had his dewe Hearing; but it is commaunded to be written out in Articles, that the Lords may adde Codicills to every Braunch of his Peticion. So referring all other Matters to my other Letters, I humbly end. At the Court of *Otlonds*, the xvth of *September*, 1577.

Your Lordships most bounden,

dewring Lief,

Ed. Waterhows.

Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.

My very good Lord,

I Haue receaved your Pacquet, sent by one *White* your Servaunt, who in his Repaire to the Courte left these Lettres, that were directed to your Vice-president in the Marches of *Wales*, wherby it is iudged, that the Counsell there are preparinge for the Men to be put in Redines. But for asmuche as her Majestie heareth no Likelihood of the Comminge of the *Frenche*, a Staye is made of those Men for a Tyme, and all your other Lettres retayned, till further Order shall be taken heere. I am forye to see your Lordships Mynde wounded by heapinge one Affliction vppon an other. But as in that Case of your Nephewe *Harrington*, I heare litle Speache vttered, that might concerne either you, or the Gentellman, savinge that he is reported to have dealt overe carelessly in gevinge ouer muche Trust to those that can not have skill of Faithe keepinge: So in the Matter of her Majesties Displeasure, I do rather iudge the Bitternes of her Letters to have proceeded of some Passion for the Tyme, then of any grounded Conceipte of ill Opinion, or Dislikinge of you. For Confirmation wherof, I hope your Lordship shall shortlie vnderstande some Significacion and Apparaunce of her Majesties good Favor. For wee that are heere do note, that when her Highnes hath sometymes pressed the Mynde of her Subiecte with Greife, shee hath not deferred to raise him vpp againe with gracious and favourable Dealinge; which Experience must serve your Lordship for a Persuasion, not to make your selfe vnapt for her Majesties Service, ether by harde Interpretacion of your Doings heere, or by the vnhappy Accidents that may fall out there.

The Arrivall of my Lord Chauncellor is dayly looked for; but when her Majestie was moved for Mr. *Agard*, shee answered, that shee wold not leave you so naked of Advice, as to spare them both at one Instant; so as I wishe my Lord Chauncellor to be the more fullye instructed. And sithence her Majestie cannot be brought to suche a Charge, as is convenient to be bestowed vppon *Irelande*; and is above all Things to regarde her Estate heere, and the Greatnes of her Neighbours on all Syds, that nowe stande but in ticle Termes: I suppose



suppose it must fall out, that in Steede of Force, we must vse Persuasion, and see howe farre the Lords, and the rest of *Ireland*, may be drawen to contribute for a Tyme towards her Majesties Charge; and accordinge therunto, and the yearely Stipende that her Majestie will allote, so to pilote the Gouvernement with the Contentacion of the Subiects, till better Opportunitye shalbe offred. But this I deliuer as myne owne Opinion, beinge nowe in Expectacion of that which the Lord Chauncellor shall bringe, which may perhaps breed another Iudgement in mee. And thus redy to further any good Designement, that shall come from you for the State, or that which I may by the Office of a Frende in your owne Perticuler, I bid your Lordship Farewell most hartelye. From the Court at *Oteland*, the xvth of September, 1577.

Your Lordships assured Frend,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.

It maie please your Lordship,

SOME litell Occasions of Discourtesies have passid betwen the Erle of *Ormond* and Mr. *Phelip Sidney*, because the Erle lately spake unto him, and he aunswerid not, but was in dead Silens of Purpose, because he imputith to the Erle, such Practises as have bene made to alienat her Majestyes Mynd from your Lordship. But thes Contraverfies are I thinke at the fardest; for Theexpectacion of my Lord Chancellours Commyng, hath put all *Irishe* Causes to Silence, till he be herde; and Therle of *Ormond* saith he will accept no Quarrells from a Gentilman that is bound by Nature to defend his Fathers Causes; and who is otherwise furnished with so many Vertues, as he knowes Mr. *Phillip* to be; and on the other Side Mr. *Phillip* hath gon as farre, and shewid as much Magnanimity as is convenient: Unlesse he cold charge him with eny Particularieties, which I perceive he yet cannot, other then with a generall Defence of the Countrey Causes, wherin all the Nacion here, as I thinke, be culpable, faving the Lord *Donsany*, who, for ought I hear, hath not medlid in the Matter, nor will not.

Somme Spech is sodenly growen here, that your Lordship desirith much to be dischargid of the Gouvernement, whereat I thinke the Mislikers of your Cours will rejoyce. And therefore, my Lord, howsoever your Lordship determineth, I do not wishe that you shold apparently serve any such Entendment, lest it be gathered, that you see Impossibility to doe Good; but rather fortify your Plat, and requier the Queene to back it, which if she will doe, she must reape Gaine, and you Honour: And if she will not, then the Fault is not yours, and so in Equity you are (if you be revokid) to be revokid with Honour: And when your Enemies see you will not be wried with their Practises, they will make you a Binding of Gold, or els all com abought under your Lee, and seeke a Reconiliacion. I hope you shall have a good Issue of my Lord Chancellours Travell, and Mr. *Agards*, if he com; and in the meane Season, I will solicyt Mr. Secretary, and do the uttermost of my Service to your Lordship.

I have written to Mr. *Molineux* of some Particularitys, wherof I am sure, he will enforme your Lordship; and so with myne humble Dewty I take my Leave. At the Court at *Otlonds*, the 16th of September, 1577.

Your Lordships most bounden,

during Lief,

Ed, Waterhows.

Sir



*Sir Francis Walsingham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lords,*

**A**ccording to your Lordships long Desier, to haue a sufficient Man sent to be her Majesties Attorney Generall there, at length her Majestie hath resoluid and determyned vppon this Bearer, Mr. *Snagge*, whom she hath commended vnto you by her particular Lettre. And although the Discontinuance, by this Meanes, of his Study and Practice here, doth bring with yt many Discommodities, and therfore might moue him to be slowe in consenting to enter into this fruyteles Iournye, yf he had cheefe Regard to his owne Particular; yet the Dutye that he oweth to her Majestie and his Countrey, with th' Assuraunce that he conceaueth, by my Promis and otherwayes, of your Lordships good Fauor, doth make him leaue all other Respects, and willinglie to dedicat him self to that Seruice; for the which I thinke him a Man so well chosen, both for Iudgement, and bould Spirit to countenaunce such of her Majesties Causes as shall come to his Handling, as hardlie all the Howses of Court could yeld his like; which maie argue vnto your Lordship the great Care had of your Requests, and of the Reducing of the State there, especiallie the Revenue to be more certenlie aunswered. For your owne Parte, I tell him that he is happye to serue vnder your Lordship, whos Fauor shall alwayes accompanye his Trauell in her Majesties Causes, and whos Recommendation he cannot want at the Tyme of his hoped Returne. So as he going nowe with a full Mynd to do to her Majestie his vttermost Seruice, and to do your Lordship Honnor, shall, I hope, fynd all Things to proceade from you to his full Contentacion, and to the Encouragement of others that shall succeede him; and so I leaue, having committed him whollie to your Fauor and Direction. At the Corte at *Oteland*, not very well enioying my Healthe, this xxjth of September, 1577.

*Your Lordships assured Frind*

*to commaunde,*

*Fra. Walsyngham.*

*Edward Waterhows, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*It may please your Lordship,*

**I** Hope Mr. *Whitten* will wright to your Lordship what Entertainment he hath found at the Secretaries Hands. I had rather he did it then I; but vppon the Veiw that I have had of Mr. *Whittens* Notes, I dare warrant you an honorable End of that Busines; and I find my Lord Threasuror very well effectid to your Cawses. And I have obtainid that at my Lord Chauncellors Coming, your Lordships Matters shall have present Hearing: And I think that to the *Cess* Rates, Mr. *Philip*, Mr. *Whitten*, and I, shalbe called to assist him. Before the Arrival of Mr. *Whitten*, Mr. *Philip* had gatherid a Collection of all the Articlis, which have bene enuiously objectid to your Government, wherunto he hath fraimid an Answer in Way of Discours, the most excellently (if I have eny Judgement) that ever I red in my Lief; the Substance wherof is now approvid in your Letters, and Notes, by Mr. *Whitten*. But let no Man compare with Mr. *Philips* Pen. I know he will send it your Lordship, and when you read it, you shall have more Cause to praye God for him, then to impute Affection to me; in this my Opinion of him.

I humbly thank your Lordship for your honorable Letter, which I received by Mr. *Whitten*. It semith you hold the olde Opinion of me, which you shall never have Cause to change, unlesse it be from good to better, in all Things that may torne to your Honor or Service; wherof I hope the Succes of your Causes shall make Demonstration. Yet I find that I have not bene free from envious



envious Persecution, that have fought to make your Lordship conceive ielously of me. For Mr. *Agard*, my best Friend, doth in Manner charge me, with affecting Faintnes in speaking my Conscience ; but God knowith my Heart, and what Mynd I beare towards you, both as to my Master, and to my good Lord. Which doble Bond might perswade the ill disposid ; since I have never shewid my self fearfull to honour my Friends : But to conclude, my Lord, I am not utterly without Credit here, which I will stretch to the uttermost, to do you Service. Assuring your Lordship, that whensoever I shall finde you condemne me in your Opinion, I will give over the Worlde, and lede a most privat and solitary Lief. And so humbly praing you to pardon me, I take my Leave, oppressid with Greif. At *Windsor Castell*, the Last of September, 1577.

Your Lordships most bounden,

My Lord Treasurer, and Mr. Secretary, do  
very well like of Mr. *Whitten*. I assure my self  
his Comming will be to great Purpose.

Ed. Waterhows.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

My verye good Lords,

**M**Y Dewtye humblye remembred to your honorable Lordships. Not longe after the Departure of the Lord Chauncelor, who went hente fullye instructed, as I suppose, in all soch Things as concerned either her Majesties perticuler Service, or this Estate : The first Accydent worthye Note that hapned, was the Death of my deare Freinde, Mr. *Agarde*, whome it pleased God to take to his Mercye, the xjth of *October*, wherebye her Majestie hath not onelye lost a faythfull Servaunt and good Counsellor, but the Countrie an expert wise Man, and a rare Jewell ; and I the Want of such an Assistaunt and faythfull Freinde, as almost (for the Service of this Countrie) a greater Losse could not in any Sorte have chaunced vnto me.

I touched to your Lordships in my Last, of the hard Accydent that had hapned to my Nephewe Capten *Harrington*, who since that Tyme is delyvered, and taken out of his Ennimies Handes, after maney Attemptes and Proffers made by Treatie for hym, which were spiced with that Pollecye, to allure the Rebelle better to bite at the Baite, that all Things almost he requyred, were agreed vnto ; till at length, by a Draught that *Robert Harpoll* drewe, he was intrapped, who came to the Caben in the Woode where he lay, about two Howres afore Day, havinge with hym in his Companye, *Parker*, Capten *Furres* Lieutenaunte, and fitye Soldiours of that Band, besett the Place, tooke Capten *Harrington*, *Alexander Cosbye*, and the rest that were Prisonners there from hym, killed all in the Howse, save onelye *Rorie* hym selfe, and one other, who by Reason of the Darkenes of the Night, and the Gredines of the Soldiours, eche Man to wyne Creditt, *Rorie* escaped away, beinge once smitten downe (as they reported) and beinge so niere thrust together, by Reason of the Narrowenes of the Place, he crept from amongst them into the Thickett, beinge not past twoe Yardes of, and so saved hym selfe from any further Daunger. In the Intervall, betwixt *Harpolls* Comminge vnto the Howse, and the Breaking open of the Doores vpon the Rebels, *Rorie* hearinge a soddeine Noyce, and suspectinge he was betraied, put on a resolute and desperate Mynde to do some Mischeife, and gessinge at the Place where Capten *Harrington* lay (the Howse being darcke, and without Light) gave hym in a Moment dyvers Woundes, though none deadlye or Mayme vnto hym, save onelye the Losse of his little Finger on the left Hand. In the Howse there were found dyvers Lettres sent from *Shane Bourcke*, and other Rebels, to *Rorie*, to animate hym to contynue in his Rebellion, promisinge hym both Ayde of Men, and Supplye of other Necessaries, to kindle hym the more to persevere in his wicked Intencions. And *Rorie*, as it should seme, still reteininge fixed in his Mynde, what Reproche and Discreditt he had received by Losinge of his Prisonners in



that Sorte, privelye assemblinge his Freinds on everye Side, and havinge Ayde out of *Connaught* from *Shane Bourcke*, and Assistaunce from somme other of his Neighbours, who seme to carrye the Face of good Subjects, fayninge that the Cawse of his Assemblinge of them, was to take a Pray in the Countie of *Kildare*, came soddeinelye vnto *Caterlaugh*, the vijth Day of this present *November*, an Hower before Day, the Towne being large and greate, and the Walles ruined and downe in maney Places, entered and bourned most of the thatched Howsies, some fewe Ricks of Corne, and committed a fewe other Spoyles, without any further Harme doinge; but retýred hym selfe, and, in his Marche away, *Robert Harpoll*, with halfe a Score of Horssmen, chardged vpon them in the Ford, and there killed a xvij or xvij of his Men. And this is the Somme, aswell of the one Accydent as the other, howsoever the same may be there increased by Reporte.

Off late, the Gentlemen of the Countrey have bene earnest Sutors vnto me, to yeld some yerelye certeine Contribucion to her Majestie, to be freed of Cesse, which I have accepted, beinge after the Rate of five Marke vpon the Plough Land; which, al be it hetherto, rather for Wilfulnes (expectinge Answer of their Agents from thence) then vpon any Grounde of Reason they obstinately stode in with me; yet remembringe howe moche the Poore were easied, and them selves benifited by this Composicion, they sought the same earnestlye at my Handes. And although the best and aptest Season of the Yeare was alreadye past for Provision, and that most Things were growen to higher Prises then they were before, and they havinge so maney Tymes refused all good Conformitie, yet soch is and hath bene ever my hard Dealinge with the Countrey, that I consented, for the Benifitt and Ease of the poore Men, to accept the Offer for the five Shyres of the Pale, which the People, with humble Thankes, and great Reioysinge, have received at my Handes, as a large Favor and Grace: Yet, neverthelesse, if this Conversion may be brought to be vniuersall, the same will growe to a great Increase of Revenue to her Highnes, sufficient to wage and enterteine 300 Soldiours, without further Supplye of her Majesties Chardge, if she her selfe be not the Impediment. And in this Pointe I must remember to your Lordships, the good Service of *Sir Nicholas Malbye*, who hath almost reduced the whole Province of *Connaught* vnder his Chardge, to growe to Composicion with her Majestie, to be disbourdened of Cesse, of whose Travell somme soche as her Majestie hath freed of late, take Benifitt; so that where neither their Father nor Graund Father, ever received, at any Tyme heretofore, Proffitt of those Lands in *Connaught*, by Way of certeine and annuall Rent, nowe they receive an yerelye Benifitt of Revenue in Money, makinge their Commoditie of other Mens Travells, wherebye so moche Revenue is pulled away from her Majestie by their Fredomes, which otherwayes, if soch generall Fredomes had not bene graunted, would have accrewed vnto her Majesties owne Coffers, towards the Disbourdeninge of her Chardgies in that Province; which the Counsell there have maney Tymes touched vnto me, in their Lettres by Way of Complainte, for that her Majestie therebye looseth her certeine Revenue, which she must otherwise supplye out of her Coffers; for when the Earle of *Ormonde* shalbe freed onelye, and other Lordes bourdened (Perees as he is) they will finde them selves grieved; for either her Majestie must lose it, or they beare it, wherein is no Equalitie. And for that *Sir Nicholas Malbye* hath, since the Tyme he hath bene imploied in that Chardge (wherein he hath so well deserved) spent a farre larger Porcion then hath any Wayes bene allowed vnto hym, whereby he is growen depelye in Debt, and come moche behinde hande: I humblye beseeche your Lordships, that aswell in Respect of that, as in Consideracion of his good Deserte, and former Service past, to be Intercessors to the Quene, that it would please her Majestie to bestowe vpon hym some large Token of her Bountye and Favor, to enable hym the better hereafter to lyve, wherebye bothe he and his, may be daylye bounde with thankfull Minds, and cherefull Hartes, to serve her Majestie and her Posteritie for ever. What he hath donne in his last Iorney in *Connaught*, both with

†

*Orwoorcke,*



*Orwoorcke, Oconnor Sligo, Odonnell, and the Scottes*, I referre the same to the Reporte of his owne Lettres and Discourse, which, as I take it, by this Passage he sendeth vnto your Lordships.

And where your Lordships have longe looked to have somme Certificat from the Auditor of the State of her Majesties Debtes, and of the Arreragies due to her Majestie in this Realme; the Auditor nowe hath finished the Booke, whiche herewith I send vnto your Lordships: And also I have cawfed hym to make Certificate aswell of the Threasure sent from thence for theise twoe Yeares past, as of the State of the Revenue here, howe the same hath bene issued and expended by my Direccion; wherevpon I am to crave of your Lordship to geve Order that soch Money as is due vnto my selfe, as Money layed out by me for the Savinge of her Majesties growinge Chardgies, for Things due before my last Acceptacion of this Governement, that the same may be presently paid, which, by your Lordships Lettre of the Date of the of *Marche, 1576*. I was put in Comforte long erre this it should have bene: And fuerlye, the Want thereof hath, in the meane Tyme, bene a heavye Burthen vnto me, which I effectuallye pray youer Lordships to consider of.

I have apointed for Extirpinge of the Rebelle *Rorie Oge*, and the *Oconnores* and *Omores*, his Confederates, a generall Hostinge, to begin the First of the next Moneth, and hope, on all Sides, so to hedge them in, as somme one or other of the Companye (in soch Streigthes as I shall apointe them to lye) shall light upon them. And although I have to deale with a flyenge Foe, and one that dare not abyde my Comminge, to shewe hym selfe in the Field; yet so maney Starting Holes and Muffetts he hath to fly vnto, and soch Ayde and Succor of somme of his Neighbours, as I shall not so easilye light vpon hym, but onelye by good Guydinge; yet somme of his best and principall Followers I daylye cut of, and pare his Winges by little and little as I can; for I will neither spare Travell nor Chardgies to make some good Ende of this Service, and to settle her Majestie in the quiett Possession of those two Countries, *Leix* and *Offalye*; I meane, by the totall Extirpacion of those Rebels, which have cost the Crowne of *Englande*, I suppose, from the first to the last, at least twoe hundered thowfand Poundes.

The Bills of Parliament are nowe in a Readynes to be sent away by the next Passadge. Mr. *Snagge*, nowe her Majesties Attorney here, hath taken somme Paynes to consider of them: I fynd hym a Man well learned, sufficient, stoute and well spoken, an Instrument of good Service for her Majestie, and soch a one as is carefull to redresse by Wisdome, and good Discreacion, soch Errors as he fyndeth in her Majesties Courts here. So that by his Presence I finde my selfe well assisted, and humblye thanke your Lordships for the Sendinge of hym vnto me, and more of his Sorte are nedefull, which, I hope, your Lordships will not forgett when Tyme serveth to send. And even so I humblye take my Leave of your good Lordships. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xxvjth of *November, 1577*.

*Your honorable Lordships assured loving Freinde*

*humblye to commaund,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.*

*May it please your most excellent Maiestie,*

I, With the Assistaunce of your Majesties Counsell here, have of late had somme Consideracion amongst oure selves of somme Lawes to be devised, necessarie to passe here at the next Parliament, for the Good and Benifitt of this rude Countrie, whereof I (though vnworthy) next to your Maiestie, have the principall Chardge; and for that Purpose have cawfed certeine beneficiall and



and necessarie Bills to be drawen ; and as the Manner and Vsage of this State is, have willed the same to be put vnder your Great Seale here, and by your Chauncellor (to whome I have thought good to sende them) to be preferred and presented by him vnto your sacred Majestie, beseeching your Majesties good Allowaunce of them, and that they may be with convenient Spede returned agayne, with Commission vnder your Highnes Great Seale there vnto me, to the Ende that at the next Parliament they may be enacted and established for Lawes: They wilbe, most gracious Sovereigne, I hope, beneficiall for your Realme and Subiects, honorable and profitable for your selfe, and an Increase of Revenue to your Crowne. And therefore I most humbly beseech your Majestie, that after the said Billes shalbe considered of, and graciouly allowed by your Highnes, they may, together with your Chauncellor (whose Presence here for your Majesties Service, and the good Ease of your Highnes Subiects, may ill be spared longe) be speedily returned hither.

Your gracious Lettre of the Last of *October*, I received the vth of this present *December*, most comfortable to me, and your Counsell here, that it hath pleased your Majesty so judiciously, gravely, wisely, carefully, and graciouly, to proceede in these Causes of Complainte against me, your Counsell, and Government here, in causing those Matters (slandrously, and impudently, reported to your Majesty for Trothes) to be so duely examined, thoroughly hard, and after so gravely sentenced ; for this Course of so gracious, honorable, and iust Proceedinge, will make your Highnes to be both better loved and feared, your Prerogative regarded, your Commoditie increased, your Lawes better observed ; and me your Officer, and the rest of your Counsell here, with better Duetie, in such Things as we shall directe (for the Advancement of your Majesties Service) obeyed. That Course your Majestie hath sett downe and prescribed for my Direccion, to proceede with the Offenders, shalbe followed : How be it (by reason that I am nowe settinge forward in Iorney against the Rebelle *Rorie Ogie*, and his Confederates the *Omores*, and *Oconnors*, who contynue and increase in their wicked Insolencies and Lewdnes) somme of those Gentlemen, before the Receipt of your Highnes Lettre, I had appointed to attend vpon me this Journey ; and somme of the rest (beinge of the best Sorte) I had ordered to kepe and defend the Countrey in myne Absence : So that I cannot conveniently deale with any of them, before my Retorne, and this Iorney ended ; at which Tyme, God willinge, I meane to proceede with them, in Sorte as your Majestie hath commaunded. And I doubt not, but the iust Proceedinge with them, wilbe such an Example, to the rest, that feele in Concept, that they them selves are to be touched with the like Fault, by consentinge with the rest, in those Accusations and vntrewe Reportes (at which yet it seemeth somme of them blushe not, though there be iust Cause why) that both they and their Sequell, will ever hereafter more duetifullie and obediently feare and reverence you, and your Authoritie here. And this is all that for the present I can answere to your Majesties most gracious and comfortable Lettre ; for the which lowlye, upon my Knes, I render vnto your Highnes my most humble Thanks.

And whereas your Majesties Servaunt, Mr. *Edward Waterhouse*, havinge Pencion here for Terme of Lyfe, hath bene of late, and yet is imployed there in your Majesties Affayres, and is not tyed to any Attendaunce in this Realme, by any ordenarie Office or Place here, but compelled by an Infirmitie of the Stone to resort maney Tymes for Phisicke into *England* : It may please your Majestie to graunte vnto hym your gracious Lettres for his Warraunt of Absence absolutelye, wherebye I am perswaded your Majestie may imploy his Service there, to as good Purpose as here, though in both, in myne Opinion, he may be profitablye vsed. And even so beseeching the Almightye to blesse your Majestie, to the Comforte of your faythfull Subiects, with a  
long



long and most happie Raigne over vs, I most humblye take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xith of *December*, 1577.

*Your Maiesties most faythfull bounden*

*Subiect and Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

I Haue receauid Commaundement this Daye from her Majestie, to admonishe you of such Advertisments as her Highnes vnderstandeth, both out of *Fraunce* and *Portugall*; namelie, that the trayterous Defines of *James Fitzmorrice* are agayn reuiued; and, as yt is thought, so farre hath his Perswasion prevayled with other Princes, as yt is very likely that somewhat shall shortlie be attempted in *Ireland* by forreygn Invasiō. And because, by all Coniecture, some Practise is like to be first in *Mounster*, for Strengthening of the Confederats, her Majesties Pleasure is, that both you and the Lord President there (as admonished secretly from you) haue an Eye vnto yt, howe best to meete with thes Practisers, especially if *James* should land in privat Manner, for Conference with *Desmond*, or any other, as yt may faule out, because he is (as you may perceauē by th'incloased Aduertisments) on the Seas; vppon which Mañner of privat Landing, yt is thought that some Persons in *Mounster*, to be well chosen for that Purpos, might, for a good Reward, be wonne ether to slaye or intrappe him, and so to disapoint the whole Enterprise. And albeyt her Majestie, vppon any perfect Reporte, and assured Likelyhood, of a forceable Landing of Straungers, will give Order to haue Men put in a Readines to be sent from hence to the Reliefe of her Subiects; and is also of Opinion, that you may so order her Forces there as may kepe the Invaders from doing any great Hurte till that Reliefe come from hence; whereof her Highnes is not voyde of provydent Care: Yet least other Princes, her Neighbours, may take Pleasure, by Rumors, to put her to Chardge, as vppon like Bruities raised heretofore, they haue latelie don, she forbeareth to enter into any present chargeable Preparacion, till she seeth more Apparaunce of the Euill intendid; hoping, that your Lordships Vigilancy may prevent any Dainger to that State, with seasonnable Intelligence to be geuen to her from thence: And, in the meane While, yt weare good your Lordship had a speciall Eye to the Cittie of *Limerick*, least yt should vppon the soddeyn be surprised, being a Place of greatest Importaunce, both for Strength, Sci-tuacion, and the Commoditye of the Haven. And this being the Substaunce of all that I haue at this Tyme to saie, I referre yt to your Lordships good Consideracion and Wisdom; and so do commit you to the Lord: At *Hampton Courte*, the xviith of *January*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assurid Frind,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

The inclosed Advises I have received.

*By Lettres from Lisbona, of the xth of December.*

JAMES Fitzmorice came to this Courte from *Rome* in *June* last, and had Acceffe vnto the King, but receauid no great Countenaunce of him in outward Shewe; he departed from hence the xvijth of the last, with an *Irish* Frier, latelie made Bushop in *Spaine*, in a *French* Shippe of three score and tenne Tunnes, and caryed with him one hundreth Souldiors well appointed, besides two hundreth spare Harquebuses, with their Furniture and other Mu-



nicians; he pretended to go to *Morlais*, in *Britanny*, to fetch his Wyfe from thence, but we are in Truth advertised that he is gon into *Ireland*.

There is a Brute spread, that *Stukelie* should be come hether, and that he doth as yet keepe him self cloafe.

This King maketh great Preparacions by Sea, and some do thinke yt is for some Enterprise to be made in *Africa*, but the Certentie of his intended Purpos is not yet knowen.

Paris, 8 Jan. 1577.

Y<sup>T</sup> is confirmed vnto me of euerye Syde, that *Strozzy La Roche*, *Langsark*, *Langreau*, and others, proceede in theire Preparacions of Men, Shippes, and Munitions, with Pretence to go to the *West Indes*, or (as some saye) to *Molind* in *Affrique*, but in deed to make some Attempt vpon *Irelande*, as others of good Iudgment do imagine; to which Purpose they are saide to haue secreat Intelligence, aswell with *Fitzmorice*, as with the Earle of *Westmorlande*, or els to be in Readines against the Openinge of the Warre in this Realme, and then to make some Exploit against *Rockell*, and the Isle of *Reth*. *La Roche* is a *Guyfarde*, and a Man of no Habilitie to beare the Chardge of any great Enterpryse, and yet he makethe Accoumpt to bestowe in these Preparacions 200000 Francks, which may seeme to proue that this Iorney is furthered by some great Personages.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verry good Lord,*

H<sup>E</sup>R Majestye uppon the fyrst Knowledge, howe fare your Lordship had exceeded the Proportion agreed on, was greatly moved withall; not without some Offence ageynst thos that were Fortherers of you unto that Place you nowe hould. Somewhat she is appeased, notwithstanding in Respect of the Charges, which she is perswaded wyll not be lessened under your Governement, I fynde her dysposed to revoke you, whereof I thought good to geve your Lordshipp somme secreat Notyce: Yt is meant, that the Cullor of your Revocatyon shall be to confer abowt somme Plotte for the Deminishing the sayd Charges, and to satisfye her, towching the Exceeding of the Proportion allotted unto you. Your Friends here are not unmyndfull, aswell for her owne Servyce, as for your Credyt, to shewe her Majestye howe necessarye yt is for her to caule you Home, with some Marke of her Favor; eyther by Nobyltyatyon, or Grawnting your Sute, or bothe; wherin my Fellowe, Mr. Secretary *Wylson*, hath dealt most frendely towards your Lordship. What will be the Yssue, though I dare not put you into two good Hope; for that we are subject to change; yet I trust ther wyll be somewhat don to your Contentement. The Warrant for the xvi l. I trust to get dyspathed owt of Hande.

Within a Daye, or twayne, we meane to dyspathe hence towards your Lordship, her Majestyes full Intentyon, towchyng the Easying of that Cuntrey of *Cesse*, *Barnell*, and *Nettarvyll*. And so in the meane Tyme I commyt you to Gods good Protection. At *Hampton Coorte*, the 20th of *Januarye*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assured Frend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*After my bartye Commendacions,*

H<sup>E</sup>R Majestie having seen the Bookes of your Accompts you latelie sent over, resteth some what better satisfied in that Behalfe then heretofore she hath ben, though she do partlie find it strainge, that the Chardges of that Realm should



should this Yeare haue so much exceeded the ordinary Proportion allowed for the same. You maye do well, with as much Expedition as you can, to perfect the Residue of your Accompts yet vnfinished, and to send the same hether, for the better Satisfaction both of her Majestie, and some others, that thinke you do of purpos vse Delays in the Matter, to prolonge the Benefitt of your Enterterment; and thus I bid you hartelie Farewell. From *Hampton Courte*, the 21th of *January*, 1577.

Your loving Frind,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

**B**Y Reason of the Care and Businesse that presently occupieth vs here, throughe the late ill Accident in the *Lowe Contries*, whereof wee receaved Aduertisement but this Mornynge, I can not write vnto you so at Length as otherwise I would: And therefore desyre your Lordship to accept in good Part theise fewe Lynes, wherby I referre you to this Bearer, Mr. *Waterhouse*, whoe shall, and is able to enforme you thoroughly, bothe of the sayd Accident, and of all others, bothe forayne and domesticall Matters. And so most hartely commendynge your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. *Hampton Court*, the Fourthe of *Februarie*, 1577.

Your Lordships verie loving and

assured Frend to commaund,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Sir Henry Sydney to Queen Elizabeth.

May it please your most excellent Majestie,

**N**OT longe after the Retorne from my Iorney made vpon the Rebels, the *Omores* and *Oconnors*; whereof I have written at some Length to the Lords, to be reported by theim, when it shall best like to your Highnes. I first, accordinge to the Direccion of your gracious Lettres, bearinge Date at *Windsor* the Last of *October*, sent for *Barnabie Scurlocke*, and laied before hym your Majesties grave Senfure vpon hym and his Companions, and declared that your Majestie had nowe, vpon the Disclosinge of the Matter before you, by your Highnes Chauncellor, and their Vntrothes, Disguysings, and slaunderous Reportes, by good Matter and dewe Proffe by hym overthrowen, converted your princely Compassion into a trewe Iudgement, and therefore had sett downe Order for his Punishment. He seamed at the Beginninge somewhat more for his Reputacions Sake, then vpon any good Matter he had to produce, to iustifie hym selfe, and would have vsed some Perswasion, that his Intencion and Meaninge was not to attempt any Matter against the State and Governement, but onelye to shewe to your Majestie, by humble Peticion, the Countries Greives, which were so bourdenous vnto theim (as he saied) as they could no longer indure them. He was answered at full to all that he could say, and sharply reprehended for his Fault, Follye, and Presumpcion, and so in fyne, committed to the Castell of *Dublin*. Within fewe Dayes after his Committment, the Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale, both soch of them as had formerly at the Assemblye of the Cesse last agreed vpon, publikelye refused to subscribe to the same, as accustomablye heretofore at other Tymes they had donne, as other principall Persons and Men of Note, soch as were before committed by me for the Impugninge of the Cesse, were sommoned to apeare before me and your Counsell; and, when they came, after some Admonicion geuen theim of their former Faultes, and put in Minde of their Duties, they were demaunded whether they were of the same Mynde they were

of



of before, or noe; which was, whether it was against your Majesties Lawes, and the auntient Vſage of this Realme, in Cases of Neceſſitie, to impoſe a Ceſſe and Contribucion for the Victuallinge of your Garrifon, and your Deputies Howſehold, without Callinge of a Parliament, or graund Counſell; and, if they were not, whether they could be contented to ſubſcribe to a Submiſſion and Acknowledgement of their Fault, and in Writinge to allowe of the Ceſſe, and of the Cuſtome uſed in that Behalfe. To which Demaund they would not make any direct Anſwere, vſinge maney Excuses, and Evasions; but relyenge moſt vpon this Pointe, that they had their Agents in *England* with your Maſtie, from whome they expected Anſwere. And my Lord of *Delvin*, who was their Mouth, carried the Matter in ſoch doubtfull Tearmes, as he would ſtill leave the Ceſſe as a Matter of Debate, and Queſtion. It was told him, that the Matter was not nowe any more in Queſtion, but growen to a perfect Reſolucion, and iudged by your Majesties moſt wiſe and grave Senſure, as they ſhould perceive by your Majesties Lettre, which was read vnto them. In the Ende, after longe Debate, they deſiered Reſpitt of Tyme to conſider of the Matter for iij or iiij Dayes, expectinge (as it ſhould ſeame) Newes from their Agents thence in the meane Tyme, for that the Wynd ſerved well for ſoch a Paſſage. I told them, it was a ſpeciall Pointe of Favor to geve them that Scope of Libertye, and therefore I would be adviſed; and that Afternone, at ij of the Clocke, I would tell them howe longe Reſpitt I would geve them. So at oure Metinge, when they were before me, I asked them what Mynde then they were of, for I had reſolved to geve them no further Tyme of Breathing; if they would ſubmitt, ſay ſo; if they would not, tell me their Mynds flatly, and then I would proceade accordingly. When they ſawe that that Courſe was held on with them, they promiſed the Morrowe after to ſubmitt, which Reſpitt of Tyme was geven them. In the Morninge, they delyvered in a Submiſſion, ſubſcribed with all their Hands (the Copie whereof I hearewith ſend to your Maſtie) which beinge miſlyked by me, and your Counſell here, I told them the Defects I found in it, and ſhewed them, if they would make no other but that, it was not ſoch a Satisfaccion as your Maſtie looked for at their Handes; nor I knewe not howe (in the Diſchardge of my Duetie to your Maſtie) I could accept or allowe of. They ſaied they could make no other. I told them your Majesties Attorney ſhould frame them an other, and appointed them to come to hym the next Day in the Morninge, at vij of the Clocke: At what Tyme the Baron of *Delvin* came vnto hym, and his Vnckle *Nicolas Nugent*, the ſecond Baron of your *Eſchequer*, vpon whome moſt of the reſt ſeamed to depend; and there, after they had viewed and reviewed, the Forme the Attorney had drawen, they deſiered to have it with them, to conſider of it with better Advise, which was yelded vnto; and after they had a full Day and a Night debated the Matter amongeſt them ſelves, they brought it agayne vnto hym, and framed an other of their owne (the Copie whereof I likewise herewith ſend to your Maſtie) which beinge alſo miſlyked of, they were moved to ſubſcribe to that, which the Attorney had drawen, which was tempered in ſo good Woordes, and myld Tearmes (as your Majesties Meaninge and Direccion reverently obſerved) their was nothinge contained neither in Woorde nor Subſtance of Matter, but that every duetifull Subiect ought to ſubſcribe vnto, if he would not ſtand in Tearmes with his Prince, and be carried and led away, more by wilfull Paſſion, than Ground of good Reason. That notwithstandinge they ſtoode in flat Tearmes of Refuzall to ſubſcribe vnto it, alleadginge that they had good Cawſe that moved them ſo to doe: When they were demaunded what it was, they ſaied that they had received Intelligence from their Agents, that they were vpon an Agreement and Compoſicion with your Maſtie, and deſiered their Affents and Hands thereunto; and therefore loth they would be to do a Thinge that ſhould be ſo preiudiciall to them ſelves and their Poſteritie, beinge fore warned before what was donne there. I proteſted vnto them (as in Troth I might) that I had received no ſoch Advertizements, and therefore willed them not to deceive them ſelves: How be it,



it, they still insisted in their obstinate Wilfulness. I gave them Respitt till the next Morninge to be advised, and willed them not to engreive one Fault with an other, and so to provoke your Majesties iust Indignacion towards them, who was so well inclyned to do them Good; which, if they did, the Bourthen would be to heavye for them to beare. I dealt with them together, and likewise dealt with them severally aparte; first with the meaner, then with the better Sorte; with the Learned by them selves, and the Simple by them selves; but all were framed to one Bent. The most Parte of their Answeres was, what the Lords would do, they would followe; they were but Inferiors, and therefore they would do as their Betters did: They floode most vpon my Lord of *Delvin*, who seemed to be the cheife Ring Leader. When I sawe they were so vntractable, that neither faire Meanes, nor Perswasions, nor sharpe Speache, nor Threats, could wyne them to do that becamme them: And that *Missett*, *Flemminge*, and *Barnaby Scurlock*, one of their principall Agents, had subscribed the Submission (the Double whereof I hearewith send to your Majestie) I, by the Advise of your Majesties Counsell here, thought good to committ them till your Majesties Pleasure were further knowen; and, within a Day, or Day after, called them before vs agayne, and, for Examples Sake, and the greater Terror to others hereafter, imposed Fynes vpon eche of them: The cheifest of them, and those that in dede seme most wilfully bent to resist the Cesse, have received Benifitt from your Highnes and your Crowne; and one of them is of your Fee at this Day, which was told them by your Attorney; who, aswell in this, as in any Thinge els, that either is incydent to his Place, or concerneth your Majestie in Honnor or Proffitt, is a good Instrument, and a dilligent, carefull, and readye Man. His Assistaunce is a great Ayde vnto me, in any Thinge that apperteineth to your Service, or his Profession.

I feare, Maddame, I have bene in this Pointe over tedious to your Majestie; but I humbly pray Pardon, for that so longe a Matter cannot be delyvered in fewe Woordes, nor the Thinge well conceived, but by Declaracion of some Circumstance, which I have in as fewe contained as I could. There resteth yet vntold somewhat concerninge myne owne Peticuler, whereunto I must humbly crave your Majestie to encline a gracious Eare: The Matter is, most revered Sovereigne, that I heare (not a little to my Greife and great Discomforte) that your Highnes hath denied to signe your Warraunt, for the Payment of three Thowsand and one Pounce, that is dewe vnto me vpon certeine Bills; supposinge that those Bills were gayned by me, or, at the least, very easely come by, and procured. I am sorry (my most dere Sovereigne) that my hard Happ is soch, so to be condempned without Cawse, or suspected without Deserte; and for Tryall of the Troth, would to God it whuld please your Majestie, to apointe Commissioners, or somme others of Trust, to examyne the Matter, and reporte what they fynde to your Highnes: It would then plainely and trewly appeare vnto you, that I have bene misreported to your Majestie, for that I have never a Bill, for the which my Specialty lieth not, and I indebted for; and God knoweth, that all that I gayne, is but Tyme; for I dewly pay for every Bill; and none comme to me frelye without Payment; And those Bills I fought onelye, not to enriche my selfe (as some that envie me seme to geve forth) but (without my to great Losse) to inable me the better to pay my Lord of *Penbroke* the Mariage Money I ought hym for my Daughter; which Bills, amount but to one Pounce more then the Money I have, and must pay hym. And most sacred Sovereigne, that Things should be taken in that Sense, or so hardly construed against me by your Majestie, is no small Greife and Torment of my Mynde vnto me, which cannot be removed from me, before in my rightfull Cawse, I be cleared in your Majesties Concept and thought of, as I deserve for my Service.

An other Matter I hear of likewise, which is an equall Greife vnto me with the first, and that is, that your Highnes hath refused to graunte me the Fee Ferme of those small Things I my selfe have an Estate of for maney more Yeares (for some of those Percells I sue for) then I am by Course of Nature



likely to lyve : So that for myne owne Tyme, there can growe no further Commoditie vnto me by the havinge of them, then I have alreadye : How be it, I had a Desier in that Sute, to have donne somewhat for my Children and Posteritie ; but I shall leave them to the World to provide for them selves as they can, and content my selfe (since it so liketh your Majestie) with that my Father left me, and submitt my selfe to your Majesties gracious Misericord, for I am not to stand in Tearmes with your Highnes in any Thinge, but with all Humilitie, subiect my selfe, and all my Cawties, to your princely Pleasure and Will, as shalbe most agreable to your selfe.

And, most gracious Sovereigne, one other Matter there is, which most of all importeth me at this Tyme, and that is, that the last Yeare, by Reason of the frequent Reportes and Bruites so maney Wayes confirmed vnto me, and from so maney dyvers Places brought, and from thence likewise signified vnto me by maney Lettres from somme of your Majesties honorable Privey Counsell, of the Intencion and Practize of that Archrebell *James Fitzmorrice*, to bringe in forreine Power to invade this your Realme, I was necessarily forced, both for better Safety of your Realme, and Honnor of your State, to prevent all daungerous Occasions and Events that might in so broken a Tyme have hapned to enterteine moe Bands and Companies, and a greater Force both of Horffemen and Fotemen, then otherwise I would have donne ; to make Fortificacion in sondrie Places, to wage Spiall both Abroade and at Home, to have in Hold Marriners and Sea Men, and to imploy other extraordenarie Chardgies, which might well have bene spared, if this Accydent had not bene ; but since it is so, that in your Highnes Service this hath bene issued and spent, and could not in Honnor or good Pollecy have bene saved in your Cofers : And that by this Occasion onely, my second Yeares Chardgies have farre surmounted my former Yeares Expense (as I feare, contrarie to your Majesties Expectacion) that it would therefore please your Majestie to way the Cawse, and the Necessitie that moved the same ; accordinglye, and graciouflye to consider of my humble Petition for Allowaunce of soche Sommes of Money, as so have bene expended, which, in Qualitie and Kinde (if it shall like your Majestie to viewe them) shall appeare vnto your Highnes by the Accompt last sent over by your Auditor, and delyvered to the Lords of your honorable Privey Counsell ; wherein, and in all I have besids (moveable and vnmoveable Goodes or Landes, prostrate at your sacred Fete) I submitt my selfe to your Majesties Misericorde, to take what you will. And withall, in all Humilitie, put you in Remembraunce, that when your Majestie shall enter into Consideracion howe moch I have in yearly Rent and Commoditie encreased your Revenue, and what great Likelyhoodes and good Testimonies there be of the daylie Increase of more, and Augmentacion of your Proffitt, the Purchase is not diere, nor the Chardges greate, in Respecte of soche a Benifitt. And even so beseeching the Almightye, longe and haply to contynue youre most godly and prosperous Reigne over vs, your most happie Subiects, vnder so vertuous and blessed a Sovereigne, I ende. From your Majesties Castell of *Dublin*, the xiiijth of *Februarye*, 1578.

*Your Majesties most bounden humble*

*Subiect and Servaunt,*

H. Sydney.

*Thomas Earle of Ormonds Demand against Terrelagh Mac Brien.*

*To the Right Honorable the Lord Deputie,*

SHE WETH to your honorable good Lordship, *Thomas Earle of Ormond* and *Offerie*, that wheare he was seised, as of his lawfull Inheritaunce of the Cantred Landes and Territorie of *Arrae*, the Certaintie and certaine Name of the Landes whereof appeareth herevnder written ; and that by meane Conveighaunce from King *Henry the Second*, ones King of *England*, and Conqueror of



of this Realme, to certaine Persons which lawfullie conveighed the same, emongest other Parcells to the said Earles Auncestours, whose Heire he is; which accordinglie enioyed the same, and died successively seised, thone after thother, of the said *Arrae*; disposing, entayling, and otherwise conveighing, occupying, vsing and enioying the same, as their other Lands, Freholds, and Inheritances. So it is, Right Honorable, that one *Tirrelagh O Brien*, of *Castleton*, Gent. of his mere Wrong, clayming Intrest in the said Cantred and Landes, as eldest of his Blood, dwelling within the said Territorie; and by Vsurpacion vsed by certaine of the *Mac Briens* of the said Countrie, in the Tyme of Civill Warres and Discension in *England* and *Ireland*, have disseised your Suppliant of the said Cantred Territorie and Lands, contrarie to all Right and Equitie. The Premisses considered, may it please your Honnor to compell the said *Tirrelagh*, (being present within the Citie of *Limericke*) to mak inde-layd Aunswer therevnto; and your said Suppliant shall pray, &c.

*Pullice, Castleton, Bealenabe, Knockannenen, Castelgeard, Moneroo, Oghell, Carrigtogher, Crennagh, Coneboy, Ballyee, Kilcolman, Carrigmaden, Curriggeal, Borestleboy, Kilkrenan, Dirre, Currigweler, Dromon*, with all other Townes and Lands, with their Appurtenances in *Arrae*.

*Apud Lymeric xiiiith Februarii, 1577.*

Day is geven peremptorie to *Mac Brien*, to answere to this Bill, before the with Day of the next *Easter Terme*: And lykewise to the Plantif to amend his Bill, in the meane Time, if he think so convenient.

*H. Sydney.*

*Edmund Molyneux to the Archbishop of Dublin, with his Answer.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**B**ECAUSE I am desirows in this Matter for the Chancellorsshippe, to deale for that which appertainethe to my self, simpellie, plainly, and nakedlie, and to avoid (as niere as I cowlde) either Condempnacion, or Suspect on either Side, carienge an equall Frendshippe to yow bothe. At my Returne Home Yesterday, I cawsed all my Presidents and Formes of Presentacions to be reviewed, and finde most of them to have these Words: *Reverendissimo in Christo Patri ac Domino Adamo miseratione Divina, Dublinensi Archiepiscopo, Hibernieque Primati, ac Custodi magni Sigilli nostri, Regni nostri Hibernie, sive ejus in absentia Vicario suo in Spiritualibus Generali, aut Officiali principali, seu cui-cumque alteri Judici in hac parte, potestatem & auctoritatem sufficientem habenti salutem.*

And, my Lord, becawse I find this a commen Forme, and (as I take it) doithe neither hinder nor further the Right and Titell on either Side, being of no greater Effect and Efficacie, indeed, then the Law withowt them doithe geve to every Man: I thought it good to acquaint yowr Lordship with all, before I insert the Wordes in the *Fiant*; becawse lothe I wold be in any Sorte to geve yowr Lordship the least Occasion of Offence; and yet, as neire as I cowlde, to provide for mine owne Saffetie. And even so prainge your Lordships Answer, I humbly take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin* the xvith of *Februarye*, 1577.

*Your good Lordships assured to*

*commaunde,*

*Edm. Molyneux.*

*P.S.* The Dispatch of the *Fiant* from me standethe only upon yowr Lordships Aunswere; otherwaife it is pressed to be sent away, and brought to your Lordship to the Seale.

†

Good



Good Mr. *Mollineux*, Let the Words be only to me, and to my Officers, for so Mr. Attorney thought meete, and yowrselſe aſſented to the ſame Yeſterday.

*Adam Dublin.*

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

**T**HE cheefeſt Cauſis why her Maieſtie at this preſent hath ſent for you to come to her Preſence, are two ; as you may perceave by her Heighnes Letters ; thone that ſhe deſireth to conferre with your Lordſhip, by the removing of the Greefes and eaſing the Burthens, whereof the Subiects of that Countrey do complayne ; and thother, that marveylinge very much, and finding great Faulte that, contrary to her owne Expectacion, and the Hope ſhe was put into by others, the ordinary Chardges of that Realme are nothing diminished ; her Heighnes would underſtand from your owne Mouth the Cauſe whervpon the ſame doth growe ; being borne in Hand by ſome here, who haue ſet downe a Plotte of the Matter, that the Realm of *Ireland* may be peaceable governed, all Occaſions of Greefes and Miſcontentement remouid, and Thinconvenience of forrein Practiſes met withall, with half the Chardge your Lordſhip doth demaund, as at your Comming hether you may perceave more at large.

The Warraunt for your Quarterage Monney I haue mouid her Maieſtie for, but as yet can get no Aunſwer therein. This is as much as I haue to ſay vnto your Lordſhip at this preſent. And ſo I commit you to God. From *London* the xxviith of *February*, 1577.

*Your Lordſhips aſſured Frind,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

By the Reaſon of my Abſence, your Lordſhips Letters dyrected to her Maieſtie, were delyvered by my Fellowe, Mr. Secretarye *Wylſon* ; and therfor I can not let you underſtande, how her Maieſtie was moved to have Conſyderatyon of your Greaves conteyned in your ſayd Letters. Aſſure your ſelfe, that there hath not lacked earneſt Sollycytatyon by your Frendes, to have drawne her to have yelded ſomme Satysfactyon ; but the Tyme is harde, and was never more owt of Seaſon. And therfor, withowt your Lordſhips owne Sollycytation, no Good wyll be don. Yet ſometymes, when I have layde before her your Decaye of Lyvelyhood, by the Burden of her Servyce, her Highneſſe hath ben moved to Commyſeratyon, thowghe the Affects thereof cood not take Place. It is not yet reſolved whoe ſhall ſuccede you : The Speech goethe of the Lord *Graye* ; but untill her Maieſtie hath Conference with your Lordſhip, I ſee ſhe wyll growe to no Reſolutyon.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

**M**Y humble Dewtie remembred to your honorable Lordſhips. After I had made my laſt Diſpatche, and ſent away the Billes for Parliament Cawſies to her Maieſtie (whereof I beſeach your Lordſhips there may be ſpedie Retorne) and taken Order for the better Setlinge of the *Birns*, and *Tooles*, my Neighbourſ at Home ; I made my Repaier preſentlye to the Borders of the *Kinge* and *Quenes* Counties, to mete with the Inſolencie of the Rebels, the *Oconnors* and *Omores*, who were, ſince the Takinge of Capten *Harrington*, ſo increaſed both in Streintgh and Pryde, and growen to ſoch vnduetifull Tearmes, as they were not any longer for the Honnor and Creditt of the State to be indured ; but either by Deuiſe or Force to be forthwith ſuppreſſed : For which Purpoſe, I aſſembled Parte of the Ryſinge out, apointed for the generall Hoſtinge, which, from the Beginninge of *June* laſt, had bene from Tyme to Tyme diſſerred, and not diſſolved ; devidinge the ſame into three Partes, ech

to



to serve their Torne for fortie Dayes, to contynue the Iorney the longer, if Occasion so requyered : And likewise sent for *Nicolas Bagnall*, the Marshall, to take the Chardge of the Service in myne Absence, for the Profecution of the Rebelle, makinge hym my Lieutenaunt of *Leinster* and *Meithe*; apointinge the Lord President of *Mounster*, with his Chardge, to lye vpon the Confynes of the Province vnder his Rule next adioyninge to the Rebelle; and on the other Syde assigned Sir *Nicholas Malbye* to remayne with the greatest Parte of his Force vpon the Frontier of *Connaught*, where he might best annoy, and lie most aptlye to stopp the Rebells Passage. I my selfe spent some Tyme in takinge Pledgies of the *O Dempseys*, and other doubtfull Neighbours vpon that Border, gevinge Direccion to the Marshall what I would have donne in myne Absence, and sorted my Iorney in that Sorte, that on *Christmas* Even I came to *Kilkennye*, Sir *Lucas Dillon* onely accompaniinge me thether: And beinge enformed both before and after my Comminge thither, that the spediest and best Way to suppress the Rebelle, was to plague his Maintainers (whereof that Towne and Countie were to moch noted to be faultie) I fell to somme exacte Examination of the Matter, and found in dede that trewe which had bene reported vnto me, both that the mecanicall and meane Sorte, and somme of the principall and best Sorte of the Towne, had, from Tyme to Tyme, relyved the Rebelle both with Victualls, and all other Necessaries, for Fedinge and Defence, and the Countrie, in like Sorte, to be the Retreite and Sinke to receive the Rebelles Goodes, foster their Children, mainteine their Wyves, and in any other Sorte they could, from Tyme to Tyme to relyve and healpe them: And makinge further Profe of the Matter, fewe would comme vnto me with out Protection, and amongst the rest of the best Sorte, those that had speciall Rule and Chardge of the principall Howsies and Castells of the Earle of *Ormoundes*, refused to come at me, as namelye *Fowke Grace*, Constable of *Roscree*, who denied to admitt the President to enter into the Howse before he had graunted hym Proteccion. *Owen Mac Donagh*, *Oge Okenedye* of *Ballybagh*, and *Ferderrough Mac Edmund*, *Purcell* of *Potellrath* (one of the saied Earles Mannors) and Capten of his *Kerne*; eche of theise three last, to amend the Matter, and in Token of the great Hate they bare to the Rebells, fostered everie one of theim one of *Rories* Childeren, which was both dewlye proved, and confessed, in the Ende, by theim selves: Whereby I note both where the cheife Maintenaunce is, and howe hard it is to suppress the Rebelle, as long as he fyndeth soch Comforte and Succor of soch principall Men, who should rather both for their Dewties, Place, and Callings, seeke to destroy and not to preserve soch an vndewtifull and an vnnaturall Broode. And (as I take it) hardly they durst do it, if the Matter were taken so niere at Harte as outwarde Shewe is made, and is pretended, were not some vnderhand Dealinge and Winkinge at the Matter, by theim whome they serve. Nowe after I had had this Tast of theise principall Men, I fell into Consideracion howe to found the rest, and, by degrees, found daylie more Matter, and Cawse of more vehement Suspicion; so that both in the Towne and Countye, I cawsed every Day some one or other to be apprehended, and found found and iust Matter to chardge them to bringe them to their Triall. I therefore apointed a Cessions to be held, the same to beginne the Day next after the *Twelfth Day*, which contynued a Fortnight; and in that Tyme, and both before and after, there was soch Plentie of Accusacions, and good Matter produced, as, I suppose, if the Sessions should have held till *Easter*, the Commissioners should not have wanted Stuffle and good Matter to have wrought on, if they would have hard all that would have bene verified of that Towne, Countie, and *Offerie*, for Maintenaunce of the Rebells. But soch Parcialitie and affectionate Dealings were found in the Juries, as were the Matter never so playne and evident, the Evidence never so full and apparaunte, if it touched any of their Freindes, and namely, any of the Constables, Tenautes or Seruants of the Earle of *Ormounds*, no Inditement would be found, no, though the Partie made Submission and confessed the Fault: And, on the other Syde, if the Matter touched any of *Offerie*, were the Evidence never so weake, the



Proffe never so slender, the Jurie would fynd it: Which, when the Commiffioners reported vnto me, what Slacknes and Partialitie they found one Way, and what Want of Indifferencie on the other, in that which so moch touched her Majesties Service, I willed them to take Recognizances of the Juries, to appeare here in the Castell Chamber, and likewise to cawse the Prisonners to be brought; where, I hope, they shall better heare of their Proceadings, and learne better hereafter what is their Dewties in the Quenes Cawfies.

Duringe the Tyme of my beinge at *Kilkennye*, the Earle of *Thomound* came vnto me, and brought me Lettres aswell from her Majestie as from your Lordships; but he was either so curious or negligent, or both, in carriege of them, as he delyvered them vnto me open, and the Seales broken vp; I told hym somewhat roundlye, and in plaine Tearmes, that I was not wont to receive Lettres from her Majestie and your Lordships in that Manner. He would have excused the Matter vpon the Negligence of his Servaunt, and saied he had Copies of the Lettres hym selfe, so that he neded not to breake them open, knowinge the Matter they contened; which Answer satisfied me not, but I referred hym for further Order in his Cawfies hither, where I will with some Advise consider of the Nature and Qualitie of his Demaunds, and deale with hym for his Grauntes, as I may in best Sorte for her Majesties Service, and his reasonable Reliefe, according as her Majestie hath directed me.

A Day or twoe before my Comminge from *Kilkennye*, the Earle of *Desmound* came likewise vnto me, for whome I expressely sent for by Messadge and Lettre, for that I herd he had refuzed to comme to the Lord President, being sondry Tymes sent for by hym, and besids, had of his owne Authoritie, without Warraunt or Commission from me, gathered together a Rabble of lewd and vnruely Followers, which he harried with hym vp and downe, eatinge and spendinge the Countrie; so that if the Matter had bene any longer suffered, considering the Mans Humor, and howe sone he may be drawn by lewd and vnfound Counsell to runne hedlonge to forgett hym selfe, great Harme might have bene like to have ensued by his Disorder: I thought good therefore, after he was comme vnto me, to chardge hym with the Matter, which in somme Sorte he confessed, alleadginge for his best Excuse, that he was dryven to assemble this Companie for Feare of the President: I demaunded of hym what Cawse of Feare he had geven hym; he could alleadge no probable and good Matter, but some Conceite of his owne, and Reporte that was brought hym of somme Intencion the President had to staye hym. I reprehended hym sharply of his Follye, and the better to prevent all further Inconvenience, consideringe the Waveringe and Doubtfulnes of the Tyme, I cawsed the President and hym to comme together, and reconciled them, and made them Freinds in as good Sorte as I could (who before would not speake the one to the other) the Earle promisinge, presently vpon his Retourne, to disperse his Companies, and to obey the President as her Majesties principall Officer of that Province, and to comme vnto hym at any Tyme, when he should be sent for; which if he performe (as I hope, and he protesteth he will) it will save her Majestie a great Chardge, which otherwise necessarily should have bene imployed, to have made the Earle the better to have knowen hym selfe, and to do that which in Respect of Duetie he ought to her Majesties Officer, for the Countenaunce and Credit of the Place, which the Lord President (as became hym for her Majesties Honnor) stode moche vpon. And this I may assure your Lordships, that if I had not devised and wrought the Earles Comminge vnto me as I did, which by my Iorney to *Kilkennye* I procured: The Earles Follie would not have bene vnlike to have cost her Majestie tenne thowsand Markes, before he would have bene thoroughly reclaymed, holdinge on that dangerous and vnadvised Course he beganne, which by Degrees I hope I have brought hym from, and eased her Majestie of that Chardge. When the Earle went from me, I sent a Man of speciall Trust and Creditt with hym, to observe the Manner of his Proceadinge, and to reporte vnto me the Course he held when he came Home into his Countrie, who accompanied hym as farre as *Kerrie*, and told me at his Retorne,



torne, that duringe the Tyme the President and he were together, which was ij Dayes Iorney, lodginge and fedinge both in one Howse; Therle vsed hym selfe as orderly and reverentlye to the President, as became hym every Way, and after his Comminge Home, tooke Order forthwith for the Dispersinge of most of his Companie, and gave it out in every Place where he came, that he ment no Harme to the State, nor wold be Author of any Disorder, nor countenance any in their ill Intencions, if there were any soch Dealings; and that he was and ever wold be a trewe Subiect, obedient and duetifull to her Majestie and the Governor, and wold so contynue, and geve good Testimonie of it, duringe his Liffe. And, my Lords, I hold hym the least daungerouse Man of iijj or v of those that are next hym in Right and Succession (if he were gonne) and easiest to be dealt withall. So that be it for the Doubt of the Attempt of the Rebelle, *James Fitzmorrice* his Kinsman, if he should come in, and he ioyned with hym, or in Respect of his Harme otherwaife, which he could do, if he should growe ill disposed hym selfe, I suppose there is least Daunger in hym of any of the rest, and sonest may be mett withall, and cut of, beinge soch an impotent and weake Boddye, as neither can he gett vp on Horsebacke, but that he is holpen and lift vp; neither when he is on Horsebacke, can of hym selfe a light downe without Healpe; and therefore, in myne Opinion, the lesse to be feared or doubted, if he would forgett hym selfe, as I hope nowe he will not.

The State of the Countrie, Thanks be to God, is in good Quiet: *Ulster* at no Tyme quieter (save that which of late hath hapned betwixt *T. Oneill* and *O-donneill*, for Killinge of *T. Oneills* Sonne; wherevpon there had bene like, for this Matter, some Brawle to fall out betwixt them, but that I suppressed the same in dewe Tyme, wherein I must note to your Lordships, the great Conformitie I fynde in *Oneill*, that would not seeke his Right, but by Order from me: And in both, this I observed, that neither the one nor the other seeketh to enterteine *Scotts*, or to make their owne Revenges, but both desier and sue to me for Ayde of *English* Forces; and for the Matter, referre them selves to stand to myne Order: So that *Ulster* is a good Neighbor to the Pale, no Complainte of Bodragge or Stealth made by them since my Departure, but honest Neighborhoode, without Oppression either on the one Syde or the other. *Connaught* and *Mounster* in like Sorte quiet and obedient, gladd to imbrace Justice, and seeke their owne by Lawe without Oppression. The onely Gaull is this Rebelle of *Leinster*, which I hope, erre it be longe, to make her Majestie and your Lordships a good Accompt of, for I wast hym and kill of his Men daylye, and I assure your Lordships, there was never Rebelle better followed. I beseech your Lordships hasten hither the Lord Chauncellor, whose Absence may ill be spared longe, for the Dispatch of poore Mens Cawses, wherein he hath that Facillitie and Dexteritie, as to his great Commendacion, and the Parties no little Contentment, he endeth infinite Cawses, which till his Retorne ly still in the Derke, and are not ended and determined, expecting his Comminge.

In like Manner I beseeche you geve Order for my Quarterage, to be dewe the First of *Aprill* next; for that by Reason of the Advertizements, aswell of that I have from thence, as from sondry other Partes, of the Practise of the Archtraytor, *James Fitzmorrice*, as that the Rebelle, *Rorie Oge*, is still on Foote, I am enforced to vse Money, and to imploy no small extraordenarie Chardge, which otherwise, if that were not, might well be spared, and her Majesty dis-bourdened of that Expence, as I hope shortly she shall, whereof above all other Things I have a speciall Care. I gave Order, vpon the Receipt of your Lordships first Lettres, touchinge *Hix* the Pirate, that he should be presently sent thether. My Lord President promised he would do it, so that I hope, erre this, he be arryved and delyvered in Saufety to your Lordships, for so he hath written vnto me he should be. My Lords, it seemeth by soch Lettres I received of late thence from somme of your Lordships, and other my Freindes, that I am not onely greatly blamed, but almost generally condempned, that I advertize no oftner soch Occurrents as happen here, since there is so good Stoare of others, whose

Dilligence



Dilligence wanteth not, from Tyme to Tyme, to enriche you with Reportes, which if they would do as trewly, as they indevor to frame maliciously, I should have as great Cawse to thanke them for their Paines and Prevencions, as I have now to condemne them both of their Malice and Follies, and your Lordships have no iust Occasion to thinke I am to slowe in my Advertizements: And yet in Trothe, as I love not to write of every Accident, or sleight Matter that happeneth, so I hope I leave no Matter of Weight vnadvertized, but as the State of Things be from Tyme to Tyme, make trewe Reporte and Relacion to your Lordships, what soever other Men vntrewly devise by their Newes to flaunder my Governement.

Touching *George Wynters* lewd Dealinge, and vntrewe Reportes of me, who would cover his owne Faultes vnder the Shaddowe of my Authoritie; I am ashamed of his Impudencye, but I hope, ere this you have discovered so moche of the Man, by his owne Contradiccions and Confessions, as I nede not say any more of hym, but God make hym more honest. I willed my Lord President to answer the Contents of your Lordships last Lettres (the Copie whereof, with the Scedule I received from your Lordships inclosed, I sent hym) and desired hym, aswell for your Lordships better Satisfaccions, as for his owne Discharge and Creditt, to make a full Declaracion what had passed betwixt *George Wynter* and hym, from Point to Pointe, as I hope he hath donne. And for myne owne Parte, as I neither sawe hym nor dealt with hym, but referred the whole State of the Cawse to my Lord President, and others of good Creditt and Trust, I appointed in Commission for the Matter, as namely her Majesties Eascheator Generall, *Henry Davells*, *Peter Sherlocke*, and *Piers Aylward*, all substauntiall and discrete Men; the twoe last, the one the Maior of *Waterfford* that was the last Yeare, the other the Maior this Yeare: So I esteeme the Discourtesie and Wronge he offered me the greater, that so vntrewly would report of mee, for he dealt so straungely with me, as he would not let me have so moche as one hundred Hydes for my ready Money, which I desired for the Provision of my Howsehold, and sent an expresse Messenger with Money for theim; nor yet so moch as geve me a Perrot, which I hard say he had in the Shipp he tooke, although he were intreated by my Man to bestowe her vpon me. And thus fearinge I have bene over tedious to your good Lordships, for the which I crave Pardon, I humbly take my Leave. From her Majesties Castle of *Dublin*, the of *Februarye*, 1577.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde, humblye to commaunde,*

*H. Sydney.*

*Mr. Secretary Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

**H**ER Majestie having now written her Lettre vnto your Lordship for your Repaire hether to her Presence, for somuch as the Imposicion of the Cesse hath, as you knowe, breadd some Misliking of you there; I wishe that, for the Preservacion of your Credit and Reputacion, you would take some Order before your Comming, to leaue a generall Contentment and Satisfaction in the Myndes of the Subiects of that Countrie, wherein ye shall do her Majestie acceptable Service, and winne vnto your self a great good Name. And for that the same can no Way so aptlie be perfourmid, as by putting in Execucion the Plotte set downe by their Agents there, which, with my Lords of the Counsells Lettres, you shall receaue; I cannot but aduise your Lordship to yeld to the Allowing therof. Towching the noble Men and Gentlemen, long sithens committed for Impugning of the Cesse, though their Offence therein hath ben great, yet would I wishe your Lordship, in Respect of the Reasons alreadie mencioned, to deale with them as fauorable as you maie; following therein th' Example of her Majestie,



Majestie, who in her Gouvernement, vppon like Occasions of Offence, chooseth rather to vse Mercie, then to prosecute the same with Seueritie; and the rather, for that in theis troublesom Tymes a generall Discontentement of the Subiects of that Land maie prove of most daingerous Consequence; which Aduice I do geue vnto your Lordship, as your very Frind, being such in deede as I would followe my self, yf I weare in your Place. And so for this Tyme I commit your Lordship to God. From *Grenwich*, the xxijth of *Marche*, 1577.

*Your Lordships assurid Frind,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

Thomas Wylson, *Esq;* Secretary of State to Sir Henry Sydney <sup>a</sup>.

I Have ever had a wel disposed Mynde towards your Lordship, and the Howse with the whyche you have matched. This good Wyl continueth stil, and shal not fayle so longe as Life lasteth. Then I beeing thus affected, maye bolde-ly deale with your Lordship, for your own Welfayre, and use Freedome, by Advertisements, without Offence. It is towlde me, that grevouse Exactions are used under your Gouvernement, after a verie straunge Maner, and some Countries more charged then others, eaven of a Stomake Accusations, devised upon light Causes; and some verie hardche used, because they wyl not professe Thynges as they are requyred, although the Parties them selves bee vtterlie ignorant, and innocent of the same. It maye be, that muche of this is untrew, and yet it maye bee also, that somewhat is trew, without your Knowlege. The Countrie where you governe, is apte to complayne, and your honorable Dealinge for the Matter of *Sesse*, maye perhaps offende some, that woulde lothelie contribute by Force of Law, for the Advancement of her Majesties Service. I knowe not the Trewthe of Thynges, but I would wyshe that your Lordship were blamelesse, and your Officers, under yow, voyde of Corruption; that yow may geave good Accounte of the Talent committed to your Charge, with a cleare Conscience upon your Retourne. And greate Pitie it were, that her Highnes Prerogative, which is sacred, and verie honorable, beeing wel used, shoulde be a Colour, or Pretexre, to serve private Gayne, without publyke Profite. Mr. *Newtersfylde*, and Mr. *Bournell*, have their Dispatche from the Council to your Lordship, offeringe them selves with all Humilitie, to doe unto the Queenes Majestie, and her Realme, trew and faithfull Service; which Cowrse yf they take and followe, I dowbte nothing of your Lordships Goodnes towards them. Yea, and that yow wyl shew them Favour, when they shall bee so well affected. Courteyst Usage of these Men, who have felt some Trouble her, will doe moche Good, in my Opinion, for Advancement of the Queenes Service; and they not feeling any Extremitie, or hard Dealinge, wyll bee the more encouraged to doe good Offices. Thus yow see how bowlde I am, to deale with yow frankelie, for the good Wyl I have ever borne your Lordship; and so fare you hartelie wel. From the Courte at *Grynewyche*, the 23d of *Marche*, 1577.

*Your Lordships most assured*

Supercribed

To the right Honorable my verie good  
Lorde, Sir *Henry Sydney*, Knyght,  
Lorde Deputie of *Ireland*.

*to commande,*

Tho. Wylson.

Endorsed,

Received 23 April, 1578,

Mr. Secreterey *Wylson*.

<sup>a</sup> Ex Origin. apud Penshurst.



Sir Henry Sydney to his Son Robert Sydney, afterwards Earl of Leicester.

R O B I N,

Y OUR severall Letters of the 17th of September, and 9th of November, I have receved; but that sent by *Carolus Clusyns*, I have not yet hard of. Your Letters are most hartely wellcum to me; but the unyversall Testimony that is made of you, of the vertuous Course you hold in thys your juvenile Age, and how mutch you proffyt in the same; and what excellent Partes God hathe already planted in you, doth so rejoyce me, that the Syght of no earthly Thyng is more, or can be more, to my Comfort, than Heryng in thys Sort from, and of you. Ouer Lord bles you, my sweet Boy. *Perge, perge*, my *Robyn*, in the fyllyall Fear of God, and in the meanest Ymaginatyon of your self, and to the lovyng Dyrectyon of your most lovyng Brother.

I lyke very well of your beyng at *Prage*, and of your Intentyon to go to *Vienna*. I wysh you should curyusly looke upon the Fortyfycatyon of that; and consydering the Estate of *Chrystendom*, I can not tell hou to desygne your Travell into *Italy*. I would not have you to go spetyally, for that thear is perpetuall War betwyne the Pope and us. I think the Prynces and Potentates of that Regyon, ar confederated wyth hym, and for sum other Respects, I would not have you go thither. Yet from *Spayne*, we are as it wear under an Inhybytyon; *France* in endles Troubles; the *Low Cuntre* in irrecoverable Myfery. So I leave yt to your Brother and your self, whether *Vyenna* beyng seane, you will return into *England*, or spend the next Somer in those Partes; whych if you do, I think best (you beyng satysfied wyth *Vienna*) you se the pryncypall Cyttees of *Moravia* and *Siletia*, and so to *Cracoua*; and if you can have any Comodyte, to se the Court of the Kyng of that Realm; and from thens thoro *Saxon*, to *Holst*, and *Pomerland*, seyng the Prynces Courtes by the Way; and then into *Denmark*, and *Swedon*, and se those Kyngys Courtes. Aquaynt you sum what wyth the Estate of the fre Steates; and so at *Hamboro* to imbarke, and to wynter wyth me. But what do I blunder at thyes Thyngys, follo the Dyrectyon of your most lovyng Brother, who, in loving you, is comparable with me, or excedyth me. Imitate hys Vertues, Exercyses, Studyes, and Accyons; he ys a rare Ornament of thys Age, the very Formular, that all well dysposed young Gentylmen of ouer Court, do form allsoe thear Maners and Lyfe by. In Troth I speak yt wythout Flattery of hym, or of my self, he hathe the most rare Vertues that ever I found in any Man. I saw hym not thyes six Monythes, lyttell to my Comfort. You may here from hym wyth more Ease, then from me. In your Travells, thyes Documentys I wyll gyve you, not as myne but hys Practyses. Seke the Knowlege of the Estate of every Prynce, Court, and Cytte, that you pas thoro. Adres your self to the Company, to learn thys of the elder Sort, and yet neglect not the youngar. By the one you shall gather Learning, Wyfdom, and Knowlege, by the other Acquayntans, Languages, and Exercyse. Thyse he affectuatyly observed, wyth great Gayn of Understanding. Ons agayn I say imytate hym. I here you are fallen into Confort and Felloshyp wyth Sir *Harry Nevellys* Soon and Ayer, and one Mr. *Sawell*. I here of syngular Vertues of them bothe. I am glad of your Famylyaryte wyth them.

The 21 of thys present, I receved your Letter of the 12th of the same, and wyth yt a Letter from Mr. *Languet*, who semyth as yet to myslyke no Thyng yn you; for whych I lyke you a great deale the better; and I hope I shall here further of your Comendatyon from hym, whych wylbe to my Comfort. I fynd by *Harry Whyte*, that all your Money is gon, whych wyth sum Wunder displeaseth me; and if you can not frame your Charges, according to that Proportion I have apoynted you, I must and wyll send for you Home. I have sent Order to Mr. *Languet*, for one hundryth Poundys for you, whych is twenty Pound more than I promysed you; and thys I looke and order, that it shall farve



farve you tyll the Last of *Marche*, 1580. Assure your self, I wyll not enlarg one Grote, therfore looke well to your Charges.

I hope by that Tyme you shall receive thys Letter, you be at or nere *Strausborogh*, from whych, resolve not to depart, tyll the Mydest of *Apryll* cum Twelvemonyth; nor than, I wyll not that you do, on les you so aply your Study, as by that Tyme you do conceive felyngly, Rethoryk, and Logyk; and have the Tongues of *Latyne*, *French*, and *Dutch*. Whych I know you may have, if you wyll aply your Wyll, and Wyt, to yt. I am sure you cannot but fynd what Lak in Learnyng you have, by your often Departyng from *Oxford*; and the lyke, and greater Los shall you fynd, yf you resolve not to remayne continually for the Tyme apoynted, in *Strausborogh*. Wryte to me monythly, and of your Charges partycularly; and ether in *Latyne* or *French*. I take in good Part, that you have kept Promyse wyth me; and on my Blessyng I charge you to wryte truly to me, from Tyme to Tyme. Whether you kepe yt or no, and if you break it in sum dark Maner, how.

Pray dayly speake no Thyng but truly. Do no dyshonest Thyng for any Respect. Love Mr. *Languet*, wyth Reverens, unto whome in most harty Manner, comend me; and to Doctor *Lubetyus*, and Mr. Doctor *Sturmius*. Farewell. If you wyll follo my Councell, you shalbe my sweete Boy. From *Baynards Castell* in *London*, this 25th of *March*, 1578.

Your Loving Father,

Superscribd,  
To hys welbeloved Soon Robert Sydney,  
at *Strausborogh* ofer *Maes*.

H. Sydney.

Sir Philip Sydney to his \* Father Sir Henry Sydney.

Right honorable my singular good Lorde and Father,

SO strangely and dyversely goes the Course of the Worlde by the enterchange Humors of those that governe it, that thoughe it be most noble to have allweyes one Mynde and one Constancy, yet can it not be allwaies directed to one Pointe; but must needes sometymes alter his Course, accordinge to the Force of others Changes dryves it. As now in your Lordships, Case to whom of late I wrote, wishinge your Lordship to returne as soone as conveniently yow mighte, encouraged thereunto, by the Assurance, the beste Sorte had given me, withe what honorable Considerations yowr Returne sholde befall: Particularly to yowr Lott, it makes me change my Style, and wryte to your Lordship, that keepinge still yowr Minde in one State of vertuouse Quietnes, yow will yet frame yowr Cource accordinge to them. And as they delay yowr honorable Rewardinge, so yow by good Meanes to delay yowr Returne, till either That ensue, or fitter Tyme be for This.

Her Majesties Lettres prescribed yow a certaine Day I thinke; the Day was paste before *Pagnam* came unto yow, and enjoyned to doe some-things, the Doinge whereof muste necessarily requyre some longer Tyme. Hereuppon yowr Lordship is to wryte back, not as thoughe yow desyred to tarry, but onely shewinge that unwillingly yow muste employ som Daies thereaboutes; and if it please yow to add, That the Chaunceilours Presence shall be requisite; for by him your Lordship shall either have honorabler Revocation, or Commandement of furdre Stay at leaste till *Michelmas*, which in it selfe shall be a fitter Tyme; consideringe, that then yowr Tearme comes fully out, so that then yowr Enemies can not glory it is their Procuringe. In the meane Tyme yowr Friendes may labor heere to bringe to a better Passe, suche yowr reasonable and honorable Desyres, which Tyme can better bringe forthe then Speede. Amongst which Friendes, before God there is none proceedes either so thoroly or so wysely, as my Lady my Mother. For myne owne Parte, I have had onely Lighte from her. Now restes it in yowr Lordship to way the Particularities of

\* Ex Orig. apud Penshurst.

yowr



yowr owne Estate, which no Man can know so well as yowr selfe ; and accordingly to resolve. For myne owne Parte (of which Mynde yowr beste Frenches are heere) this is yowr beste Way. At leaste whatsoever yow resolve, I beseeche yow with all Speede I may undrestand, and that if it please yow with yowr owne Hande ; for truly Sir, I muste needes impute it some greate Dishonestie of some abowte yow, that there is little writtne from yow, or to yow, that is not perfittly knowne to yowr professed Enemies. And thus muche I am very willinge they shoold know, that I doe wryte it unto yow ; And in that Quarter, yow may, as I thinke, loke precysely to the Savinge of some of those Overplussages, or at leaste not to goe any furdre ; and then the more Tyme passes, the better it will be blowen over. Of my beinge sente to the Queen, being armed with good Accounts and perfitt Reasons for them, &c.

25 Aprill, 1578.

†

*Sir Henry Sydney and the Council of Ireland to Queen Elizabeth.*

*It may please your most excellent Majestie,*

**F**OR as moche as it is agreable to oure Dueties, and accordinge to your Majesties Instruccions and Expectacion, to make often and trewe Reporte of the State of this your Realme, vnto your Highnes : We have thought it therefore convenient, not onely to make oure humble Excuse for oure former Slacknes in that Behalfe ; but also nowe by a perfect Informacion particularlye to speake of the severall Provinces, to Thende your Majestie might the more fully conceive, how the Governement standeth of the Whole, which we protest faythfully to delyver, accordinge as the Tyme present geveth Occasion.

The vniversall Quiet of *Mounster*, *Connaught*, and *Ulster*, doth geve vs Matter to speake in Commendacion of soch of your Majesties Servauntes, and Subiectes, as either are Directors of your Services there, or are obedient Executors of the Designements sett downe by those your Majesties Officers. Wherein to leave the Commendacion dewe to Sir *William Drewrie*, for *Mounster*, who every Way in oure Opinions hath deserved his iust Praise, for the Care he hath had of his Chardge, and his wise and discrete Governement. We finde that the Earle of *Desmound* (since the Tyme that the Lord President and he were reconcyled by me your Majesties Deputie) hath carried hym selfe in a good and an orderly Course, dispersinge his Men, and seakinge Justice, from that Governement, and workinge all good Offices to make Shewe of his Obedience and Loyaltie, in so moche as he hath discovered lately to me, the president Practizes nowe in Hand, by *James Fitz Morrissh*, to move Rebellion in *Ulster*, and *Connaught*, thorough Solicitacion of certeine *Frenche*, and *Irish* Men, arrived at *Sligo* in a Shipp of *St. Maloes* ; the Copie of which Advertizements we send herewith to your Majestie, and the same is also confirmed by Lettres from Capten *Fisher* to me, and *Nicolas Malbye* ; so as by Conference with me your Deputie, a Plott is laied for the Stay of those *Frenche* Men, and for Apprehencion of soch Instruments, as come from the Rebelle to treate with your Subiects of those Partes. And as this and other good Shewes in the Earle of *Desmound*, make Demonstracion that his light and lose Dealings (whereunto he runneth maney Tymes rashlye) proceedeth rather of Imperfeccion of Judgement, then of malicious Intendement against your Majestie. So do we not doubt, but the good Meanes that are vsed to nourishe Likeinge betwene your President and hym, and to repress Injuries betwene Partie and Partie, shall kepe that whole Province in good Obedience, till your Majesties Laws shall have further Currencie and Allowance there. Which howe moche they have in this small Tyme prevayled, shall apeare by a Note sent herewith, vnder the Testimonie of your President, conteing a more perticuler Reporte of that

† In Sir Philip Sydneys Hand-writing at *Penshurst Place*, without his Name, but indorsed by Robert, 2d Earl of Leicester ; as follows : *To my Grandfather from my Uncle.*



Province of *Mounster*, aswell for the Revenue increased and revived there to your Majestie, as for the Disposicion of the principall Persons, and the Letts and Hynderauncies why the same is not alreadye brought to Perfeccion; and for oure owne Opinion generallye we do affirme, that the Countrey is vniversallye quiet, and that (if forreine Practizes do not dyvert the Myndes of the People) your Majestie may shortly have soch a Revenue in that Province, as shall mainteine a settled Governement, of as maney or more Men of Warre, and other Officers, as are now maintained in those Partes.

For *Connaught* it sufficeth (becawse your Majestie hath received latelye Reporte of that Province) that we confirme that which hath bene formerlye written, namelye, that your Majesties Revenue there is increased to the yearelye Somme of Mccxxxvij*l*. and that the Collonell hath vniversall Obedience, Service, and Rent from the perticuler Lords of everye Countrey, and Capteines of everye Surname, whereof *Orwarcke* beinge more skake then the rest, and noted for Pride amongst all the *Irishe*, is at this Instant, by a private Band of Footemen, sent thether by Sir *Nicholas Malbye*, distressed, his Men slayne, his cheife Castell wonne from hym, the Warde all put to the Swoorde, and he in all Humilitie submitteth hym selfe, and appealeth to me your Deputie, for Order betwene hym and the Collonell. Vpon Examinacion of which Matter it appeareth, that this Breache betwene Sir *Nicholas Malbye* and *Orworcke*, grewe vpon Intelligence, that there were certeine Coyners of Money maintained by *Orworcke*, which the Collonell sent for, and were not delyvered by *Orworcke*; for Correctinge of which Insolencye, this late Slaughter was made vpon hym. The rest of the State of *Connaught*, perticular and generall, with the Course which he intendeth there to take, and howe your Revenue may yet be farder revived and increased without Difficultie, your Majestie shall vnderstand by a Note vnder the Hande of your saied Collonell, and howe he fortifieth that Plott with probable Reasons to beare the full Chardge of the whole Province: And in the meane Season, he seaketh none other Pay for hym selfe, nor for the Horsemen vnder his Leadinge, then of those Rentes so acquyred to your Majestie. Howe be it, this Impediment he fyndeth, which crosseth all his Designes, that your Majestie so longe suspendeth your Resolucion touchinge the Proceadinge with the Earle of *Clanrickarde*, for the Hope that is conceived of his Delyverie, and that it is expected he should so sone be sett at Libertie (which so maney daylye looke for) moveth all his Followers so moche to be at the Commaundement of his wicked and rebellious Sonnes; which, if the same were once removed, by a determinate Resolucion from your Highnes, and his Followers thoroughlye assured that the Earle should be dealt withall (as he hath deserved) by the ordenarie Course of Justice, they would scarce geve his Sonnes Breade to put in their Mouthes, which they are nowe not so moche moved for Love, as for Feare to do, in Respect of their Fathers Displeasure; for that once before by Experience they learned, and to their Greives and Oppressions felt, howe in the like Case he dealt with them for Disobeyinge his Sonnes, assone as he was come amongst them, and enlarged hence, and restored to his Libertie.

Of *Ulster* we may declare, that the same is vniversally in Peace both in them selves (amongst whome no Discord hath hapned latelye, but a Shewe of a Distresse to be taken by *Tirlaugh Lenaugh* against *Odonnell*, for the Slaughter of one of *Tirlaughes* Sonnes, which was by a Chaunce killed in his Countrey, and that Quarrell nowe compounded) and also in good Neighborhode to the Pale, vpon which no Outrage hath bene committed of long Tyme, so firmly hath *Tirlaugh* observed his Promise and Covenantes: And the Baron of *Dungannon* hath also bene a good Neighbor, and restrayneth the Loosenes of soch Borderers as were wonte to disturbe the Quiet of the Countrey. So as vpon the Conformitie of *Tirlaugh*, and the Baron, withe the good Perswasion alwayes vsed by *Tirlaughes* Wiffe, this Peace doth chieflye consist; neverthelesse, amongst your Majesties Servauntes, the best Instrument for that Border is the



Marshall, Sir *Nicholas Bagnall*, who, till of late, that I your Deputye imployed hym in your Service in *Leinster*, where he hath donne your Majestie good and verie acceptable Service, did remayne vpon his own Lands, and was the onelye Countenaunce of that Northeren Border. And this we thinke sufficient to say for *Ulster*, savinge we conceive by that which hath fallen out vpon the Proffes made in *Mounster* and *Connaught*, that a good Porcion of Revenue, over and above that which the Lords and Freholders have alreadye, by Composition with me your Deputye, consented to pay, might be easilye obtained in *Ulster*, without violent Meanes, but in Manner by Perswacion, so as the Parties that be Captens and principall Men might receive Estates from your Majestie, either in Succession or Eleccion, and might knowe the Reservations certeine that should be made vpon their Landes, whereof your Majestie hath bene heretofore advertized from me your Deputye, and may be more particularly hereafter informed at your good Pleasure.

It resteth, that your Majestie be advertized of the State of *Leinster* and *Meithe*, the wonted Quiet whereof hath bene lately moche disturbed by twoe Meanes; the one by the Rebellion of the *Moore*s and *Connors*; the other by a certeine Discontentacion in maney of the Lordes and certeine principall Gentlemen of the *Englishe* Pale, whose Cause hath depended longe before your Majestie and your Privey Counsell in *England*. To the First, touchinge the Rebelle *Rorie Oge*, and his Complices, it is straunge that the Prosecucion of hym, havinge bene so fervent, his Escapes so beyonde all Opinion, the Execution so blouddye, by cuttinge of his Company frome 500 to 50, which are nowe his Remayne at the vttermost; those also distressed by Lacke of Victualls, nor daringe to abyde in any Place of the *Irishe* Countries, nor the Borders adioyninge, no not so long scarce, as they may relieve them selves with one Meales Meate; that neverthelesse they fynde Favor in the Pale, and other *Englishe* Counties, and namelye, *Caterlaugh* and *Kilkennye*, and do some Outrages without Hewgh or Crie, or any Followinge of any other Person in Effecte, then of the *Englishe* Soldiours in your Majesties Pay, which have and do so hunt hym, as there is small Opinion conceived of his Contynuanee in any Abilitie to do Hurte. But the other for the Discontentacion of the Lords and Gentlemen, is a Matter of more Consequence, because we see them, as it were, dilled with a Kinde of senceles Obstinacie, as appeareth in the Matter of Submission to your Majestie; wherein howe they stand vpon Forme more then vpon any reasonable Grounde, your Majestie hath alreadye vnderstoode by the Reporte of me your Deputye. And since this Discontentacion hath not growen vpon any Innovacion or unwonted Burden layed vpon them, as hath bene alreadye proved before your Majestie, we knowe not whereunto to impute their Behaviours; but we see, that either their owne careles Consideracion of them selves, or their dejected Myndes, geveth Scope to the Rebelle to do the Hurtes which have bene donne in the Pale, and could not have Contynuanee, if they did not (for Lacke of Will and Indevor to resist) shewe a Kinde of Consent or an Allowaunce of their owne Harmes.

This Concurrence with the Iniquitie of the Tyme, we do rather pittie in the Gentlemen then complayne of; and do hope, that when your Majestie shall resolve to dispatche their Agents with your princelye Direccion, which you will have obeyed, they will then dewtifully conforme them selves, and recover newe Life and Courage bothe to defende, and annoy soche as rebelle against your Majestie; at which Tyme we shalbe also most readye to make Reporte of the better Parte, as we are nowe compelled to disbourden oure selves, and lay the Fault where in dede it is: And touchinge the Rebelle, we thinke it mete for your Majesties Honnor, and for the Safetie of soche of the *Englishe* Nation, as have bene heretofore planted in those Rebells Landes, that your Majestie do contynuallye prosecute them with your Forces till they be ytterly extinguished; the Honnor whereof must be the Recompence of the Chardge. This Warre, with the Opinion of *James Fitzmorrice* Landinge, have



bene the Cawfies of extraordenarie Chardge, which nevertheleſſe have bene ſo temperatly expended, as nothinge hath bene vnnecesſarie or ſuperfluous, ſo farre as I your Deputye could ſpare with Honnor and Safetie of this your State and Kingedome.

And, moſt gracious Sovereigne, when theiſe, and ſoche like vnlooked for Occaſions, do arrife, and drawe ſome extraordenarie Chardge of Expence, more then your Maieſties ordenarie Affignment and Allowaunce; and ſo fall out ſomewhat beyonde your Maieſties Expectacion in that Pointe, which nevertheleſſe may neither, in reſpecte of Honnor, nor Safetie, and Prefervacion of your Realme and good Subiects, be well ſpared, but muſt of Neceſſitie be imployed in your Service, as may apear in Parte, by the Declaracion of your laſt Yeares Accompt: We hope therefore, and even ſo with all Humilitie, beſeache your moſt excellent Maieſtie, that it would pleaſe the ſame in like Manner, as you looke into and regarde your Chardge and Expence what it is; ſo, on the other Side, you would enter into the like Conſideracion, howe moch your Revenue is increaſed in your perticuler Provinces; and what Likelyhoods, probable Shewes, and evident Teſtimonies, there be of the daylie Increaſe of more, if this Plott of Governement may be followed and continued: So that, in oure Opinions, ſavinge your Maieſties moſt grave and princely Reformation, neither the Purchase can be well accompted deare, nor the Chardgies eſtemed great, in reſpecte of ſoche a Benifitt, beſides the longe hoped and wiſhed for Reformation of this miſerable and unhappie Countrey, in the Tyme of your moſt bleſſed and prosperous Governement over this your Realme, to the immortall Fame of you and your Poſteritie for ever. Wherein we humbly beſeach God, that your Maieſtie may be eſta bliſhed with all dewe Obedience from your Subiectes; and ſo we humblye leave your Maieſtie to the Lord. At your Caſtell of *Dublin*, the xxth of *April*, 1578.

*Your Maieſties moſt humble, obedient, and*

*ſaythfull Subiects and Servauntes,*

*H. Sydney, &c.*

*Sir Henry Sydney, to Queen Elizabeth, ſent by Edward Waterhouſe, Eſq;*

*May it pleaſe your moſt excellent Maieſty,*

**I** Have received your Highnes Lettres, bearinge Date at your Mannor of *Grenewiche*, the xxijth of *Marche* laſt: And for that the Wynde ſerved not ſoner for Paſſage thence hither (notwithſtandinge the carefull Dilligence of the Meſſenger, who loſt no Tyme, but tooke the firſt Wynde that ſerved) he arryved not here with your Maieſties Lettres before the xxijth of this preſent *Aprill*: And becauſe your Pleaſure and Commaundement to me in them is, that I ſhould put my ſelfe in a Readines ſo to imbarque here with ſoch Conveniencye, as I ſhould preſent my ſelfe to your Maieſties Preſence (if Wynde and Wether were not Impediment or further Stay) by the xth of *Maye* next; I thought it therefore agreeable to my moſt bounden Dewtye, and your Maieſties better Satisfaction, to advertize your Highnes, that beinge directed in the former Parte of your Maieſties ſaied Lettres, to deale aſwell with the Agentes that were ſent over from the Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale, and nowe retorned thence by your Maieſties expreſſe Order (who arryved not here before the xxvijth of this Preſent) as with the Lords and Gentlemen them ſelves. For the Doinge whereof alſo, I am by ſpeciall Direccion preſcribed, by an Order from the Lords of your Privey Councell there, what Courſe to hold in that Matter with them (if I and your Maieſties Councell here like of their Deviſe) wherein I am moſt humblye to thanke your Maieſtie and them for that Regarde of me, and the Place I hold here vnder you; ſo that if it like your Maieſtie (the Matter hanginge in ſome Conſideracion, and not determined, nor the Lord Chauncellor retorned, who in that

Matter



Matter of Cesse hath bene a great Traveller both there and here, and for that Respecte the more desierous I am to have hym at the Consultacion and Conclufion; and not to deale therein absolutely my selfe, before his Comminge: And further, for that some Inconvenience might growe of it, if the same should take no Ende before my Goinge) I cannot, theise Cawfies considered, make my Repaier thither so sone as your Majestie hath apointed me, which I thought fitt to make knowen vnto your Highnes for myne humble Excuse; and in the meane Tyme as theise Things may growe to their Ripenes (as I hope they will do verye shortlye, your Chauncellor beinge retorned) and I finished that I am directed here to doe by your Majestie in that Parte, I will put my selfe in Order with that Spede that I may possible, to make my Repaier vnto your Presence, except in the meane Tyme I shalbe countermaunded from your Highnes, by your owne Lettres, beinge not vnwillinge, in any Respecte, to serve your Majestie here, or seeke to withdrawe my selfe in a doubtfull or suspected Tyme (as some seame to have geven forth to my Disadvantage) but readdye and desierous, in any Sorte I can, either here or ells where, to serve your Majestie (in what Sort it shall best please you to imploy me) all the Dayes of my Liffe. But farre more willinge, and with a more cherefull Harte I should have performed it (if I may say so moche duetifullye, your Majestie not offended) that I had found that good Acceptacion of my Service, and good Intencion and Meaninge, that in my humble and not vnreasonable Requestes, I had not found your Majestie so harde and difficult with me; and amongst some other my ill Happs, namelye in this, for the Payment of my Warraunte of MMMJ l. which, as the Matter nowe standethe, except your Majestie assigne me more spedye Payment, then I yet fynde by any Apparaunce or Likelyhoode I shall have, it will torne to my Losse, and moche to my Disadvantage, for that my Bills and Speciallties lye for Payment of soch Bills as I received, and my Dayes and Tymes drawe on, that I must see my Creditt dischardged. And, gracious and most dere Lady, for that the Warrauntes are dewe for Service, and Enterteinment past, to faythfull and honest Servitors, that spent their Bloode in your Service, and so consequentlye a dewe Debt to be paied by you: I presume so moche of your gracious Goodnes and Inclynacion towards me, that you will not have lesse Regarde to pay the same vnto me, the Warrauntes nowe remayninge in my Handes, and restinge vpon my Creditt to satisfie the Owners at their Dayes, then you would have donne at the speciall Sute of them selves, if they had bene Petitioners in their owne Behalfes, as they would have bene, if I had not dealt with them; and I hope my Creditt, for my Rewarde and longe Service, deserve no worse towards your Majestie then theirs. But to come backe to this Matter of Composition for Cesse, and the Victuallinge of your Garrison here, in Sorte as the Soldiour may lyve of his Wagies, without Encrease of his Pay, and your Majestie no further chardged (wherein by your Highnes I am directed to deale) I fynde the same can growe to no perfecte Conclusion, but by generall Consent, aswell of the Lords of this Countrie Birthe that nowe remayne there, as those that be here; and so moche the rather I so conceive of it, becawse those Noblemen there have so maney to depende of them here, who will affirme what they affirme, and denye what they denye (so moche they are at their Devocion) and therefore, without them, hard it wilbe to make any full Conclusion: Wherefore I humblye pray your Majestie, to order those Lords presentlye to comme over hither, for their Prefencies in this Case, and at this Tyme, may do your Majestie good Service; and then consequentlye there must followe a Parliament, for so it seameth your Majesties Meaninge is, that the Aggrement should be confirmed by Parliament: Wherof I must humblye put your Majestie in Remembraunce, that if it stand not with your Pleasure the same be held in my Tyme, yet you must thinke of it, as of the most speciall Matter that concerneth your Proffitt and Commoditie, and the Contynuaunce of your Revenue, and cheifelye for your Custome of Impost of Wynes, the Contynuaunce whereof beinge lymitted for Yeares, is nowe almost expired, and therefore either to be lost, to the great Decrease of your Revenue, or els to be con-

tynued



tynded and revyved by Parliament. And for that, at my Repaier thither, glad I would be to be affistid with somme of this Countrie Birthe, or other grave discrete Counsellor, to testifie the Truthe of the State of this Countrie, and of the Proceadings here from Tyme to Tyme, since the last Tyme of my Acceptacion of this Governement, and of the Successe and Sequell of all Things, I humblye beseeche your Majestie to addresse your Lettres to somme soche of your Counsell here, as you shall thinke most fitt for their Experience, Knowledge, and Wisdomes, to accompanye me thether, to Thende your Majestie, by their Testimonies and trewe Reportes may be better certified and confirmed, both of the Trewth of the State of the Countrie; how I found the same, and nowe in what Case the same is, when I shall leave it, as also yeld their Opinions for the Plott of the Governement hereafter, if your Majestie shall like of it. And even so prayinge the Almightye, withall Honnor and Happines to contynue your Majesties Reigne longe over vs, your faythfull and humble Subiectes, I humblye take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the Last of *Aprill*, 1578.

*Your Majesties most humble, obedient, and  
faythfull Subiecte and Servaunte,*

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*May it please your good Lordships,*

**Y**OUR Lettres dated from *Hampton Courte*, the Last of *Februarie*, and those from *Grenewitche*, the xxjth of *Marche*, I received the xxijth of this *Aprill*; and because the cheife, and in Effecte, the onelye Pointe of those twoe Lettres, containe an Advise and Direccion from your Lordships, howe to procede, aswell with the Agentes of the Pale nowe sent thence (who arryved not here before the xxvijth of this Present) as with those Noblemen and Gentlemen that remayne Prisoners here for that Cawse; neither the Lord Chauncellor is come over yet, who, as your Lordships writeth, is to resolve me of sondrie other Pointes, which your Lordships have referred to his Negotiacion, and especially for the Plott laied downe by the Agentes for the Cesse, wherein the saied Lord Chauncellor hath bene, both there and here, a great Traveller: I am therefore the more desierous to have hym at the Consultacion and Conclusion, so that he beinge not yet arryved (whose Retorne I hope wilbe spedilye) I cannot with any Conveniencye make my Repaier thither, accordinge vnto her Majesties Pleasure and Commaundement, by the xth of the next Moneth, those Things beinge of so great Importaunce, hanginge yet in Consideracion, and not resolved on, which I beseeche your Lordships delyver to her Majestie for myne humble Excuse. And further, for that that Matter (touchinge the Composicion for Cesse, and the Victuallinge of her Majesties Garrison, at soch reasonable Rates, as the Soldior may lyve of his Wagies, and Enterteinment, without further Chardge to the Quene) can not growe to that Perfeccion of Resolucion, without the Consent of those Noblemen of this Countrie Birth, nowe attendinge her Majestie at the Courte, vpon whome depend so maney Followers; yea, and some of the most principall of them that are nowe detained for that Matter here: Your Lordships shall do well (in myne Opinion) for the Furtheraunce of this Service, to move her Majestie, that those Noblemen may be ordered presentlye to comme over, aswell for the Yeldinge of their Opinions, and for their Assistaunce and Consents in this Matter, as also for that, in this quesye and doubtfull Tyme, their Presence is necessarie in their Countries and Rules, to answere all Events, aswell forreine Attemptes (if any should happen) as otherwise, whiche I humblye beseeche your Lordships gravelye and advisedlye to thinke of: And where also it pleased your Lordships to signifie vnto me, in your Lettres of the xxjth of *Marche*, of some Speeches that were blown Abroade, of the great Wast and



Hurte committed vpon the Inhabitaunts of the Towne and Countye of *Kilkenny*, duringe the Tyme of my late beinge there, aswell by the Disorder of the Soldiors, as for Want of Payment for their Victualls, taken whilest they lay in those Partes : I have therefore, accordinge to your Lordships Advises (aswell for your better Satisfaccion, and for the Cleringe of soch Reportes, as to reprove the Reporters of their malicious Vntrothes) addrested Commission to examyne the Matter, and what hath bene founde and delyvered, aswell by the Sheriffe of that Countie (vpon his Examinacion taken vpon his Othe) who was the principall Officer ; as by the Othes and Testimonies of some other Noblemen and Gentlemen of the Countrie, beinge nowe present with me here this Tearme Tyme, I have sent your Lordships, by this Bearer, Mr. *Edward Waterhowse*, to whome I pray you, aswell in that, as in any other Thinge he hathe by Instruccion, in Writinge or otherwise, to imparte to you on my Behalfe, to geve Creditt as to my selfe. And besides, for that I suppose your Lordships be perswaded of his Sufficiencie and Fidellitie, I omitt some Thinge, which I ment nowe to have committed vnto Writinge, and referre the same to his Declaracion and Reporte, to the which I beseeche your Lordships to geve Creditt, and even so I humbly take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the Last of *Aprill*, 1578.

*Your honorable Lordships*

*assured lovinge Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

*Instruccions geven by Sir Henry Sydney, Knight of the Order, &c. and Lord Deputie of Ireland, to Mr. Edward Waterhowse, beinge sent to her Majestie and the Lords, for Matters touchinge the Affayres of the State of this Realme. Dated the First of Maij, 1578.*

**F**IRST, You shall, with that Dilligence you can, make your Repaier to the Courte, and delyver your Lettres to her Majestie and the Lords of her Privey Counsell, and present my humble Service, Duetie, Thankes, and Commendacions to eche, as shall apperteine.

2. Next you shall declare to her Majestie (if you may have Accessse vnto her Presence) or to the Lords in generall (if you shall come before them) or to soche of her Majesties perticuler Counsellors, as you shall repaier vnto, the Cawse of my Stay here longer then her Majestie hath directed me, which proceedeth, aswell for that I received not her Majesties Lettres in soch Tyme, as I could with any Possibilitie have bene there, accordinge to her Majesties Direction, by the xth of this present *Maye*, as also for that I should have left the Matter of the Cesse vndetermined, whereby great Inconvenience would have ensued, both to the State of the Countrie, and her Majesties Service, and no little Encombrance to hym, that should have succeded me, beinge not acquainted howe the Matter had bene hether to dealt in.

3. You shall declare vnto her Majestie, or the Lords, as Occasion shall fall oute, or when you shalbe demaunded, that I imparted her Majesties Lettres vnto her Majesties Councell here, and lett them vnderstand howe willinge and desierous I was to have performed that her Majestie directed me (as my Duetie was) and prayed their Advises therein who resolved with me, and even so have signified to her Majestie, that by Reason of the Shortnes of the Tyme, the Importaunce of the Cawties, and the Necessitie of the Endinge of them for the Honnor of her Majestie, and the Quiet of the Countrie, I could not by any possibilitie retorne so sone as I was appointed.

4. Touchinge



4. Touchinge the Auditor, you may declare both what daylye Travell he taketh, and howe intricate and crabbed be the Thinges he dealeth withall: So that at the Day appointed, he could not with any Possibilitie have bene reddye to have comme with me. Howe be it, he will nowe vpon this Alarum, sett Thinges as fast forward as he can, and prepare hym selfe to come with that Spede and Dilligence, that any Wayes he may dispatche the Things he hath in Hand.

5. To sollicite the Payment of the MMM l. which is dewe vnto me vpon the Treasurers Warraunt, and declare howe moche the same standeth both vpon my Creditt to see my Bills dischargd, and my Creditors paied at their Dayes, which likewise I am bound to doe by my Bills and Specialties to the Parties; and, therefore, what Hinderance it wilbe vnto me, if I be deferred any longer of my Payment.

6. To declare howe by the first Dayes Conference (whereat your selfe were present) I finde that Dissenting in the Matter of Cesse, and Contrarietie of Opinions for the Manner of the Composition for the same, that the Plott which the Agentes sett downe, will not be accepted nor allowed of the greater Number: For that in Trothe, the Agentes were not sent from the Boddie, and whole State of the Realme, but from certeine discontented Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale: So that some other Plott and Devise must be thought of, for this alreadie sett downe, will not be generallye concluded and agreed vpon.

7. To report to the Lords, the Course of the Proceadinge withe Mr. *White*, for the Office of the Custodie of the *Rolls*, and to shewe the Coppie of the Acte and Enterie thereof sett downe in the Councell Booke.

8. To shewe the Certificate and Depositions of the Sheriffe, and other Lords and Gentlemen of the Countye of *Kilkenny*, touchinge the Bruities geven out there of the Wastes and Spoyles donne vpon that Towe and Countye, at the Tyme of my late beinge there; by the Disorder of the Soldiours, and Want of Payment for that they tooke, or by other Meane or Occasion.

9. To sollicite likewise some Resolucion for *Clanrickard*, and yeld the Reasons whye I thinke it verye expediente that the Matter be no longer deferred, and what Vncerteintie and Inconvenience growethe thereby to the Service.

10. To obtaine Resolucion of *T. Oneills* Cawties, if the Lord Chauncellor have not alreadie procured it.

11. To declare the Necessitie to have a Parliament for the Contynuaunce and Encrease of her Majesties Revenue, which must be thought of with Spede, otherwayes the Impost for Wynes, which is a Matter lymitted for Yeares, will be expired, and being once discontinued, hardly wilbe revived.

12. To sollicite a Quarterage, if by Occasion of Letts and Impediments which may arrise by the Difficultie and Waywardnes of the Countrie, or otherwayes, Things cannot be resolved vpon in so short a Tyme as is expected for my Retorne.

13. Touchinge the Fines imposed vpon the Lords and Gentlemen nowe remayninge in the Castell here, for Resistinge her Majesties Prerogatyve for Cesse; that there Fynes may not be remitted by absolute Order from thence, but left to me and the Councell here.

14. To shewe soche Lettres as my Lord, and the Lord President received, touchinge the Practize of *James Fitzmorris*, and the Doubt that is conceived of some forreine Attempts.

15. The Accydent of the Lords of *Lowth*, and other Gentlemen of that Countye, the Second of *Maii*, by *Mac Mahon*.

16. To declare the State of the Countrie, and the Quietnes thereof; and what Increase of Revenue there is alreadie in everye perticuler Province, and what Hope there is conceived of Encrease of more, if this Plott of Governement may be dewelye followed. In like Manner you may declare the Likelyhood I fynde of the spedie Overthrowe of the Rebelle nowe in Prosecucion. And of all other Things that shalbe demaunded of you, which I have neither by private Speache imparted to you, nor expressed in theise Memorials and Notes: I pray

†

you



you accordinge to the Tyme and Place to satisfie their Demaundes for the present as you can; and if there be further Matter of Difficultie that you nowe conceive not of, or by theise are not delyvered vnto you, I requyre you aduertize me presentlye thereof, that I may supply you with further Matter and Instruccion.

*Sir Philip Sydney to Edward Mollineux, Esq; Secretary to his Father as Lord Deputy.*

Mr. *Mollineux*,

**F**EW Woordes are beste. My Lettres to my Father have come to the Eys of some. Neither can I condemne any but yow for it. If it be so, yow have plaide the very Knave with me; and so I will make yow know if I have good Prooffe of it. But that for so muche as is past. For that is to come, I assure yow before God, that if ever I know yow do so muche as reede any Lettre I wryte to my Father, without his Commaundement, or my Consente, I will thruste my Dagger into yow. And truste to it, for I speake it in Earnest. In the meane Time farwell. From Courte, this Laste of May, 1578.

Indorsed, Mr. *Philippe Sidney* to me, browght 1578, by my L. Chauncellor; receiued the 21 of June.

By me,

*Philippe Sidney.*

*Edward Mollineux, Esq; to Philip Sydney, in Answer to the abovesaid Letter.*

*S I R,*

**I** Have receaved a Lettre from you, which, as it is the first, so the same is the sharpest that I ever receaved from any: And therefore it amasethe me the more to receave suche a one from you, since I have (the World can be Iudge) deserved better somewhere, how so ever it pleaseth you to condemne me now. But since it is (I protest to God) without Cause, or yet iust Grownde of Suspicion you vse me thus: I bear the Iniurie moore patiently for a Tyme, and mine Innocencie, I hoope in the Ende, shall trie mine Honestie; and then I trust you will confesse you have done me Wronge. And since your Pleasure so is exprest, that I shall not henceforthe reade any of your Lettres; althowghe I must confesse, I have heretofore taken bothe greate Delite and Profet in Readinge somme of them: Yet vpon so harde a Condicion (as you seeme to offer) I will not hereafter adventure so greate a Perill, but obey you herein. Howbeit if it had pleased you, you might have commaunded me in a farre greater Matter, with a farre lesse Penaltie. From the Castell of *Dwblin*, the First of *Julie*, 1578.

*Yours, when it shall please you better to*

*conceive of me, humblie to commaunde,*

*E. Mollineux.*

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**T**HE Dispathe of my Lords Lettres touching *Stukeleys* Preparations, and Readinesse to attempt somewhat agaynst that Realme of *Ireland*, cawsethe mee to send awaye this Messinger, *William Grawnsam*, in some Hast; and my selfe to bee the shorter in Wrytyng. Thus muche only, therefore, I thought good to let your Lordship vnderstand, that the Chawncellor departed from hence



hence the Last of *Maye*, and will, yf not so soone, yet shortly after the Arrivall of this Bearer, bee with you. And for that your Lordship shall perceave by suche Lettres as the Chawncellor bryngethe, and as before have been sent from hence vnto you, that the Government of that Realme is, at your Departure, to bee committed chiefly to the Lord President of *Mounster*, I can not, in Respect of the Care I have hir Majesties Service; thoughe I am assured your Lordship of your selfe will have a speciall Care thereof, but wishe you leave the Matter of the Cesse, and all other Things within the *Englishe* Pale, in so good and peaceable an Order as possibly you maye, that the sayd President maye the better order him selfe in that Government: Also, that your Lordship, before your Commyng awaye, gyve him the best Aduise and Direction that you can, for his better Abilitie, to meete withe the Attempts of the sayd *Stukeley*, or anie other Forces, either Forayne, or suche as may be levyed within that Realme by ill disposed Subiects. And so most hartely commending your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. *Greenwich*, the Second of *June*, 1578.

This Daye the Earl of *Leycester*  
departed towards *Bristoul*.

*Your Lordships assured Friend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Apud Dublin.*

*Remembrauncies geven by Sir Henrie Sydney, Knight of the Order, &c. and Lord Deputie of Ireland, to Thomas Snagg, Esq; her Majesties Attorney Generall of this Realme, for Things to be donne by hym at his Arryvall at the Court. Dated xj<sup>o</sup> Junii, 1578.*

**F**IRST, To declare, if he be demaunded of her Majestie, or any of the Lords, when Oportunitie best serveth, the State of the Countrey, and the vniverfall Quiet thereof, for the present; and then to descend (as Occasion shalbe offered) into the State of eche perticuler Province; and howe everye Officer that hath principall Chardge vnder me, carrieth hym selfe in his Governement.

2. To requyre the spedie Sendinge over of the Lord Chancellour, and name-lye, for the Matters of Cesse and Cesse Cawties, and the rather to hasten hym, for that he hath bene a principall Dealer both there and here in those Matters.

3. To declare the State of the Courtes and of the Cyvill Magistrates; and therein to shewe howe Thyngs did proceade at your Comminge, and howe Things proceade now, and specialllye for the Matter of Revenue.

4. To declare the Necessitie of a Parliament, aswell for the Contynuance of the Subsidie of the Wynes, whiche beinge limited for a Tyme, is almost spent; as also to revyve the Subsidie of the Ploughland, which is now a Yeare agonne expired.

5. To sollicite some Money to be sent over for the next Quarterage, if Order be not taken for the same alreadye.

*Sir Henry Sydney, and the Council of Ireland, to the Lords of the Privy Council in England.*

*May it please your honorable Lordships,*

**Y**OUR Lettres dated from *Greenwitch*, the Last of *May*, were brought me by *William Grawnsame*, the Pursevaunt, the xjth of this present *June*, aboute viij of the Clocke in the Morninge: And althoughe the same were addressed vnto me the Deputie alone; yet I thought it convenient (for so the Importaunce of the Cawse necessariy requyred it) to imparte the Matter presentlye to soche of her Majesties Counsell as were here niere vnto me, who also have subscribed this Lettre with me. And after we had amongst oure



selves read the same fondry Tymes over, and considered of the Pointes and Substaunce thereof, touchinge the Advertizements geven oute of *Stewkley*, and of his Intencions and Deseignes: They concurred so evenly in a Manner both with soche, as I, the Deputie, had formerly received, and some other of vs likewise from fondrie forreine Partes, as we conceived it a Matter so likelie, and that carrieth in it selfe, soch a Shewe almost of an vndoubted Certeintie, as we cannot but humblye beseeche your Lordships to have dewe Consideracion that soch Supply of our Wantes may presently be had from thence, as we may in due Tyme prevent that which we evidently see at Hand before oure Eyes, we have Cause so moch to doubt; which if we shall want (when Tyme commeth) we may well make Shewe and Demonstracion of oure good Willes (as oure Duties be) but almost no Possibilitie remayneth in vs to do that which is Neade full and our Duties in deede requireth, and your Lordships wisheth should be donne in soch a Case. And, first, where your Lordships have apointed certeine of her Majesties Shippes to repaier to the Seas, vnder some Persons of Honnor and Skill, who, duringe this Sommer, may have Regarde to the Landinge of *Stewkley*: We humblye thanke your Lordships for it; and in like Manner beseech the same, that the saide Shippinge may be hastned to bend towards theise Coasts, so to prevent the Matter, as by reason of any further Stay of them, no suddain Daungere and Perrill ensue in the meane Tyme: And we, one the other Side (as oure Duties byndeth us) forecastinge the worst that may happen to this her Maiesties Realme (whereof vnder her Majestie we have the Chardge) which God defend. And desieringe as moch as in vs lyeth to avoyd the imminent Perrill (as we take it) are to reveale vnto your Lordships the Streingth and Force of the Countrie, which, in Troth, we fynde to be very weake, and not to have such a Number of Mens Boddies; namely, soch as we may assuredly truste (for all we may not, since so maney, for good Respects, are to be doubted) as wilbe a sufficient Strength and Boddie to make Head and resiste soch an Attempt, as it seemeth by *Stewkeley* is intended. And therefore we are humbly to pray, that your Lordships would geve present Order that those twoe thousand Men your Lordships write of, which are to be levied out of the Principallitie of *Wales*, and the Counties of *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Cornwall*, may be ordered presentlye to come over, and spedilye to be imbarqued; and that those that are to come out of Sowth *Wales*, and the West Partes of *England*, may be apointed by your Lordships Order to land at *Waterforde*, and those of North *Wales*, and the Shires adioyninge, may be sent to *Dublin*, without further Expectinge any Lettre from vs; and a greater Number forthwith to be put in Order and a Readines to be sent vnto vs, as Neade shall requier. And we humbly pray your Lordships, that since there are so maney Pensioners, expert Captens, and other sufficient Leaders here, that your Lordships apointe no Captens of Bandes there, but referre the same to oure Discreacion and Consideracion here, for so her Majestie (in oure Opinions) shalbe best served, and be sure of experte, able, and sufficient Men to leade her Soldiors, which otherwise may be dowbted, and when it commeth to Tryall, we feare will be found, and then it wilbe too late to remedie it. And likewise that a sufficient Masse of Victualls for the Victuallinge of iiij M. Men for iiij Monethes, may be provided for and sent accordinge to the Note and Docquett, which herewith we send to your Lordships, of eche severall Proporcion and Kinde, for that the vniversall Scarcetie and Dearth of all Things is soch here, aswell of Corne as all other Provision, of what Kind soever the same be, as the Provision thereof will not by any Possibilitie be made here, where the same is not in any Sorte to be had: So that we must expect to be Furnished thence of those Victualls for the fyndinge of all them that shalbe sent hether; and, in the meane Tyme, to prevent oure Wantes; and consideringe the greate Dearth and Scarcetie here, and that we are to sende presentlye Forces into *Mounster*, as we are advised and directed by your Lordships; whiche otherwise we cannot supplye with Victualls, but of such Store as commeth from thence: We have thought it needefull to send oure Letters, as well to the Maior of *Bristowe*, as to *William Glasier* of *Chester*, to send



send over such Proportion as they have alreadye provided, so that some Masse may remayne here to serve what Occasion so ever hapneth vpon the suddaine. And we will geve such streight Ordere for the Bestowinge, Preservinge, and well Employinge of the saied Victualls when they shall come, as may be for her Majesties most Profit and Advantage, so that your Lordships shall have (we hope) no Cause thereof to mislike. In like Manner we humblye desier, that a competent Proportion of Munition may be sent to lye in Masse here of all such Store and Kindes, as is contained in the Dockett, which herewith your Lordships shall receive, signed with the Master of the Ordinaunce Hand; to be accompted and answered for by hym, howe the same shalbe issued from Tyme to Tyme, beinge Things so neadefull as when Service should be donne, may not in any Sorte be wantinge or spared: And for that your Lordship may not be ignoraunt of the State of the Store of the Munition here, we have caused a Note to be sent to your Lordships, under the said Master of the Ordinaunce Hand, to the Ende our great Wante may be the soner supplied thence: And humbly pray your Lordships, that a greater Care may be had to send that which is good and well conditioned then was of the laste which was sent; the Particulers of which Defectes, as they were presented vnto vs, we referre to the Reporte of our lovinge Friende *Henry Sheffield* (whome we have expressly sent to attend the Bringinge over of the Munition) who bringeth the same testified vnder the Master of the Ordinaunce Hand; and the rather for the present we desier the same may be perfect and good, for that we are to deale (as we suppose) with Men of other Qualitie and Experience then at other Tymes we had, or heretofore have had moche Cause to doubt; and therefore we beseeche you spedilye to dispatche *Sheffield*. And that likewise we may have sent CC choyse Laborers, for they are the necessariest People that are to be desiered for the suddaine Service; whereof although we confesse that this Countrie hath some Stoare of Apparaunce of soche Men, yet such they be of so small Skill, Experience, and Dexteritie in those Things, as one good Laborer brought from thence will do more Service, then any twoe that canne be picked out here will or can do: Wherefore verie requisite it is, that some speciall Care be had, and Order geven, to send them. And towchinge the Places your Lordships supposeth to be fitt to be imployed for Fortification, assuredlye your Lordships have had that due and grave Consideracion, of the Scite and Description of the Countrie, howe the same lyeth, and is extended, as the aptest Places in Dede for that Purpose (in oure Opinions) are noted in your Lordships Lettres; and speciallye for Defence of the Havens, but not so apt for Fortifications (as we suppose) as the walled Townes be; if it so like her Majestie, to be at the Chardge to fortifie, as the Strengtheninge of *Lymericke*, by the Lord President the last Yeaere, may in some Parte testifie, what Necessitie there is rather to fortifie the Townes, then the Havens; for the Townes beinge once streingthened and fortified, are able to defend them selves, and the Bulwarckes be not so, for if those be made, and then we have no garrized People and Soldiors, to lye in them, to kepe and defend them, the same perhapps might be a Losse, both of the Strengthes and Places themselves, and likewise of the Artillerie that should be placed and left in them: So that we thinke it not in oure Advyses convenient (savinge your Lordships Reformacions) to attempt to make soche Strengthes, before we shall have Soldiors thence to put in, and man them; otherwise the Loosinge of them, when they be made, would be rather a Streingthe to the Ennimye, then any Healpe or Ayde to vs. And my Lords, such be the Stoare and Aboundaunce of Havens, Creekes, and apt Places of Landinge and Discent, a longe that Coast, beinge not in Distaunce of Place, above fyve Myles one from the other (most of them as we take it) as a hard Matter it wilbe to fortifie in so maney Places on that Coast, as shalbe neadefull of Defence: But cheifelye the same must rest in the Strength and Valor of the good Subiecte and Soldior, who are the best and most necessarie Bulwarcks of Strength and Defence, to empeache the Ennimies Landinge, if they should attempt it. And for that the Perfectinge aswell of these Things, as the Supplie almost



almost of all other Defectes, cannot be donne without Money; for without that in theise Matters of Service, nothinge can be well donne or attempted, and with that both Mens Boddies here may be had of Abilitie ennough to serve (thoughe not in some Respectes comparable with those that come from thence) which wilbe not onely a Meane to kepe them from the Ennimye, and Harme Doinge, but also some Strength and Healpe to vs. We humblye beseache your Lordships, that Consideracion may be had to send twentie thousand Poundes at the least, besides the ordenarie Quarterage, to remayne in Masse in the Threaforsers Handes, to be issued as Occasion of this Service shall requier, whome we have apointed to cawse his Agent to attend for it, and beseache your Lordships spedilye to dispatche hym away. And then we beinge supplied with theise Thinges, Men, Money, Municion and Victualls, we will not fayle to do oure Dueties, and best Indevors to prevent as moch as in vs lieth any Daunger that may be attempted, and hope to yeld so good Accompt of oure Doinges as shalbe agreable to her Majesties Expectacion and youers. Humblye prayinge your Lordships, that as we have advertized your Honnors, what Wauntes we presentlye have, and what Provision is convenient for vs in Sorte, as your Lordships requyred and directed vs, we should do: So that it would nowe please the same both to geve Order, that that we write for, may be spedilye sent vnto vs; and also that it would further please you to ayde and helpe vs, as Occasion and Matter from Tyme to Tyme shall requier. And as Things shall fall oute, we will (as becommeth vs) carefullye advertize your Lordships, from Tyme to Tyme; and in the meane Tyme we will geve the best Order we can (as partlye we have donne alreadye) generallye to all the Realme, and speciallye to those Partes that are most to be doubted and feared in this Case; that they be vpon their Keping, and Defence, prepare and fortifie them selves the best they can, and do assure them of oure Healpes, Aydes, Comfortes and Assistaunce, to the vttermost of oure Powers; beseachinge your Lordships, that for the better Stay of those Partes, you will hast over as spedilye as may be, the Earles of *Kildare*, and *Ormound*, for their Presences here may ill be spared in so doubtfull a Tyme, and therefore there Comminge is of no small Consequence, and we pray your Lordships so to thinke of it. And even so humblye beseaching your Lordships, to have dewe Consideracion of this Matter, beinge of soch Consequence and Honnor; and to weigh the same, as the Importaunce of so great a Cawse requyrethe, we humblye take oure Leaves. From the Castle of *Dublin*, xiiij<sup>o</sup> Junij, 1578.

PS. We have made Choyce of this Bearer, Mr. *Lodovicke Briskett*, Clarcke of the Counsell here, both to delyver theise our Lettres to your Lordships, and to solícite a spedie Answere from your Lordships; and have referred to his Creditt and Report, aswell the Declaracion of the State of the Countrie here at this Present, as to answere to soch further Matter (if any be) as may growe of our saied Lettres, for that they cannot replie them selves, and for that Purpose have delyvered vnto hym certeine Notes and Memorials. And therefore humbly beseache your Lordships, to geve hym Creditt on oure Behalfes in that he hath to say, and with Spede to dispatche hym thence, and retorne hither to vs agayne.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge Freinds*

*humblye to commaunde.*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Mayor of Bristol.*

AFTER my very hartie Commendacions. I received Lettres of the Date of the Last of *Maye*, from the Lords of her Majesties honorable Privy Counsell, whereby I was advertized of the great Preparacion that is made by *Stewkeley*,



*Stewkeley*, and other his Complices, and Aydes of forreine Power to do vpon the soddeine somme Attempt vpon this Realme; whereof, as by their Lordships Lettres, I have bene forewarned, and commaunded to be carefull, and with all Policie and Spede, to prevent the same; so I am likewise put in Comforte from their Lordships, that I shall have my Wantes from Tyme to Tyme so supplied from thence, as I shall have lesse Cawse to doubt of any Thing; the Traytor is able to do against me; and amongst other Supplies, I am given to vnderstand by their Lordships, that they have taken Order for the Provision of a certeine Masse of Victualls, which should be in a Readines there, and that vpon my Lettre and Direccion to you should presently be sent vnto me hether: Wherefore theise shalbe effectuallye in her Majesties Name, to requier and chardge you, that vpon Receipte hereof, you cawse the saied Masse of Victualls, that you have in a Readynes alreadye, or that you can presently provide for there (beinge apointed for this Purpose) to be presently imbarckqued to be transported thence, and (Wynd and Wether servinge) to be landed at *Waterford*; and provide the rest with all Spede possible you can, and delyver over that which you shall nowe send over vpon this my Lettre, by dewe Accompte, vnto *John Thickepennye*, whom I have of Purpose apointed to remayne there, and to receive the same at your Handes, and to delyver you his Bill, for the Receipte thereof, as apperteineth. And therefore I will, and in her Majesties Name chardge you, as you will answere the contrarie at your Perrill, to see the Effecte hereof accomplished accordinglye. And even so I bid you Farewell. From the Castell of *Dublin* the xiiijth of June, 1578.

*Your lovinge Freinde,*

H. Sydney.

The like Lettre to Mr. *William Glasier* of *Chester*, for Victualls remayning there, to be sent to *Dublin*, and delyvered to *Robert Woodfford*.

*Memorials and Notes for Mr. Lodovicke Briskett, touchinge the State of the Realme, beinge sent by the Lord Deputie and Councell to the Courte. Dated from the Castell of Dublin the xiiijth of June, 1578.*

1. **F**IRST, to declare to the Lords, when you shalbe demaunded, or when you shall fynde the best Oportunitie to delyver the same, in what State the Countrie remayneth at this Presente.

2. For *Ulster* you may declare, that the same of longe Tyme stode not in better Termes, for *Tirelaugh Lenaugh* is duetiefull and conformable to any Thing he shalbe directed and commaunded, and that *Mac Mahon* although he hath of late bene thouroughly plagued, for the Death of that noble and worthy Gentleman, the Lord of *Lowth* (who for his Loyaltie and Fidellitie, deserveth perpetuall Memorie) yet he is contented nowe to submit hym selfe to reasonable Order; soch as we shall thinke honorable for the Quene to accept, notwithstandinge the Hurtes and Spoyles he hath received, and that the *Dartrye* the best and strongest Parte of his Countrie is taken from hym, and given to another, who hath put in Pledge and good Assuraunce to answere Rente and Service to her Majestie. For the same, *Oreiley* likewise, whose Countrie was somewhat suspected of Harme Doinge, and Receivinge of Stealthes and Spoyles and some other Diforders, hath put in Pledgies and Securitie, for hym selfe, his Sonnes, and Bretheren, and came hither hym selfe vnto vs, and departed not from vs, before Assuraunce given for the Answeringe of soch Hurtes and Performaunce of soch Orders, for the Quiet of the Pale, as we tooke with hym; so that to conclude, you may assure their Lordships, that the State of that Province of *Ulster*, and of *Oreilies* Countrie adioyninge to the same, is in verye good Case.



3. *Connaught* we learne from Sir *Nicolas Malbye*, the Collonell, who presently is there, is quiet and in Tune, and so will contynue, if their be any that hath an Eye vnto them.

4. *Mounster* in like Manner is verie well in Order, and not vnlike so to contynue if the People be not otherwise animated by Forreine Practize, or vnderhand Dealinge by some that resorte from them, which nowe is moche to be, consideringe the naturall Disposicion of the People, howe inclyned they be to Chaunge, and howe apt to receive Newes, and to delyver Bruites, that may stirre Vnquietnes.

5. *Leinster*, Thankes be to God, is not in ill Case, save onely the Rebelle *Rorie Oge*, who is daylie persecuted and hath lost maney of his Men, since the Beginninge of his Prosecucion, and of late, some of his principall Counsellors, and those that in Right (of his pretended Title) are next hym selfe, as namely *Neill Mac Lysagh*, *Omore*, and others, which *Neill Mac Lysagh* murdered *Ony Mac Hugh*, whereby it is to be hoped, that he cannot longe stand vp.

6. To solícite with all Care and Dilligence, and according to the Trust reposed in you, the speedy Sendinge hether of Money, Men, Municion, and Victualls, accordinge as we have written to the Lords; and declare the State we stand in, for Waunt of those Things, and howe vnable we are, by any Possibilitie, without full Supplye of them to make Head against the forreine Ennemie, if he vpon the suddaine should come in, and therefore beseeche their Lordships, to have that due Care of the Matter, as the Weight and Importaunce of so great a Cause requyeth.

7. To solícite the Sendinge over of xxtie Cariage Horsies with their Furniture, which are specially remembred in the Master of the Ordinaunce Note.

8. Finallye, we would have you to shewe, as Occasion offerethe, soch Lettres, Reportes, Examinacions and Notes from Sir *Nicolas Malbye*, and others, as we delyvered vnto you; and you your selfe spedilye to retorne againe vnto vs.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Privy Council in England.*

*May it please your honorable Lordships,*

I immediately after my Dispatch made to your Lordships by Mr. *Briskett*, I sent a Gentleman of Creditt, of purpose, to the Earle of *Desmounde*, with Lettres and Message to sounde his Disposicion, and to discover how he liked of theise Bruites which were spread, of the Entencions and Deseignes of *Stukeley* and his Kinsman, *James Fitzmorrisze*, what Preparacion he made to resist them (if vpon the Suddaine they should attempt any Thing) and what Assuraunce the State might make of hym in this doubtfull Tyme. And because the Messenger I sent is a Man somewhat liked of the Earle, and one of that Skill and Experience, as can well temper with his Humor, I shall finde at his Retorne (which I looke for shortlye) I doubt not, so speciall and certeine Reporte, as I shall knowe what I may trust vnto of hym, and soch as he shalbe able to leade or governe; which, al be it I have no Cause to doubt of his honorable and duetiefull Proceadinge, yet for that, in theise waveringe Tymes, Men, that are not so thoroughlye reclaymed as were in all Pointes to be wished, may vnwarrs fall into some Errours, beinge misled by ill Counsell: I have caused his best and soundest Counsellors to remayne aboute hym, and not to departe from hym, till theise Broyles be overblown, and Things better quieted and settled: I have likewise written speciall Lettres to all the Porte Townes, and to the most of the Noblemen and Gentlemen of Accompte and Note, that be in the Sowth and West Partes, and have prescribed them Order what they have to doe, aswell for Matter of Streingth and Fortificacion, as for necessarie Preparacion and Provision, whereby they shalbe better able to resist any suddaine Attempt, when so ever the same shall hap to be offered. The Lettres that were brought me this Day, by Mr. *Croft*, I have geven Order for the Sendinge them away. Those of her Majesties, addressed to the Earle of *Desmounde*, and some



some other of the great ones of those Partes, I have sent by Mr. *Crofte* hym selfe, and recommended hym to them by my private Lettres: The rest I have distributed by other Messengers, and have directed the Blanks, whiche he brought, to such as I hope will take the greatest Comforte to receive them, and be readiest, when Occasion is offered, to do her Majestie the best and most faythfullest Service. And even so humbly prayinge your Lordships to dispatche away *Briskett* and *Sheffield*, with your Answer and Resolucion for those Things I write for, whereof I hope your Lordships will geve Order I shalbe presentlye supplied, I humbly take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xxjth of *June*, 1578.

POSTSCRIPT.

THE Day after my last Dispathe to your Lordships, I chaunced vpon the Transcript of a Passporte brought from *Spaine*, by a Merchaunte of this Cittie, which the Traytor, *Stewkeley*, had geven to certeine *Englishmen* (it seemed) he had redemed from Captiuitie at *Rome*; which herewith I send to your Lordships, to acquainte you withe his vayne and pretended Titles, vsurpinge the Names and Stile of other Mens Possessions, that I hope wilbe hable to defende their owne well enough from hym, come when he shall.

*The Copie of Stewkeleys Passeporte.*

*Weixford*, and *Caterlaugh Duffercy*. } I *Thomas Stewkeley*, Knight, Baron of *Rosse* and *Idrone*, Viscounte of *Murrowes* and *Rinshelagh*, Earle of *Gurfort* and *Cathelonsi*, Marques of *Leinster*, Generall of oure most Holye Father, *Gregorie the xiiijth*, Pontifico *Maximo*.

WE do certifie, in ample and infallible Manner, that from this present Porte of *Cadiz*, departeth *Benedict Veglan Gregorie Syluestre*, and *Dauid Martin*, *Englishmen*, the which were taken in *Rome* by the Holly Inquisition, of whose Persons the Holy Father hath geven vs the Favor and Lycenze to enlarge them: Declaring hereby the aboue named to be honest Men, and of good Conversacion, fearing God. And for their Retorne to their Howsies, and Dwelling Placeis, haue praied and besought me to geve them this present Passeport, by the which I do commaund to all Manner of Persons to geve them free Passage, and, for Gods Love, to healpe and fauor them with their Almes, to the Ende they may passe to the Countrey. And in Confirmation that we have thus commaunded, we have cawsed theise Presentes to be passed by oure Secretaries Hand, and signed withe oure owne Hand, and sealed with oure accustomed Seale. Geaven at the Porte of *Cadiz*, in the Shipp called the *Saint John Baptist*, the Eight of *Aprill*, 1578.

By Commaundement of his Excellencye.

*Sir Henry Sydney to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*My humble Duetie remembred to your bonnotable Lordships,*

THIS Day, in the Morninge, Word was brought me of the Killinge of the Rebell, *Rorie Oge Omoore*, who although sondrie Tymes before he hath bene so hotlye pursued, and so hardly sett, as leaving Targett, Skull, Swoorde, Mantle, and all; he hath escaped beyonde all Expectacion, either by Swiftenes of his Footemanshipp, or ells rather (if it be lawfull so to deme) by Sorcerie or Enchauntement; for never Wretche, beinge so longe and earnestlye followed, hath contynued on Foote so longe; yet nowe in the Ende he is chaunced by a Devise of his owne he laied to entrapp others (as it is geven forth) into the Handes of them he sought to betray, which was on this Sorte: On the xxixth of *June*, *Rorie* put forthe a Spiall, which he had framed apt for that



that Purpose, to goe to my Lord of *Vpper Offerie*, to tell hym, as it were by Way of great Freindshipp and Secrecie, that *Rorie* had bene of late in the Countie of *Kilkennye*, and there had taken a great Pray and Spoile of Pottes, Pannes, Pewter, Napperie, Lynnen, and Store of other Howsehold Stuffe and Implements, which easlye he might come by; and with all Hazarde, *Rorie* and all his Companie (which he pretended were but fewe in Number) so that he would attempt the Matter boldlye with a meane Force: For saith he, if you come with maney, you wilbe discovered, and then the Enterprise will quayle. My Lord of *Vpper Offerie*, neither fullye believinge the Reporte of this Companion, nor yet altogether mistrustinge hym, put hym selfe in Areadynes to followe the Occasion that was presented; and comminge niere the Place where the Baite was laied (as it should seame) to have entrapped hym, he sent xxx<sup>tie</sup> of his Men into the Woodes to searche the Rebelle, and he hym selfe stayed with certeine Horsmen and Shott in the Plaines, to attende the Issue of this Matter, and if Neade were, to reskue his Men he had sett a Woorcke. This Companie were no soner entered ihe Woodes, but the Rebelle shewed hym selfe with a fewe in Number, not excedinge xx<sup>tie</sup> or xxiiij<sup>tie</sup> Persons, the rest beinge in Ambushe; beinge of Opinion, that he carried that Fame and Estimacion amongst the *Irisbrie* for his Valor, as no *Kerne* durst venter vpon hym, if they once sawe his Presence, wherein he found hym selfe verie moche deceived: For at the first Viewe, the Lord of *Vpper Offeries Kerne*, gave the Chardge upon hym, and at their Reencounter one of them light vpon hym, and thrust hym presentlye thorough the Boddie with his Swoorde, which was no soner donne, but twoe or three more likewise hacked vpon hym at once, and gave hym soch mortall Woundes, as downe he fell; and this was the Ende of this rancke Rebelle, the last Day of *June*, in the Mornings, who by the Maintenaunce of his Neighbors, and Supplie of Ayde and Reliefe of somme of his freindly Borderers, whiche he wanted not in the Tyme of his Necessities, had so longe Continuanee, to the Chardge of her Majestie and the Disquiett of the State. The Remayne he hath leaft are not maney, and I hope either, verie shortlye, to scale them, or ells to make your Lordships as good Accompte of them, as I haue donne of hym. And in the meane Tyme, I humblye beseech your Lordships effectuallye to thanke my Lord of *Vpper Offerie*, who of his owne Chardge, and with his owne Forces onelye, without her Majesties Pay, hath adventured hym selfe in this Service, and so happelye hath atchieved it to his greate Estimacion and Creditt; which I am the gladder of on his Behalfe, for that all Men have not had that sound Opinion of his Fidellitie, which he, aswell in this Service as in maney other Thinges, hath verie well deserved, in myne Opinion.

Since the Writinge of my Last, the Gentleman I sent to my Lord of *Desmound* is returned, who hath brought so sound Tokens and Testimonies of the Earles Fidellitie (whereof although for myne owne Parte I had never Cause to doubt) as her Majestie may make as an assured Accompte of his Loyaltie, and of all the Freindes and Forces he is able to make to serve her Majestie, as of any one Subiecte she hath in this Land; soche hath bene his publique Speeches and Demonstracions, and so plainelye hath he nowe discovered hym selfe to the World, as a greater Proffe cannot be made of any Man, then he hath in this Tyme made of hyme selfe. And amongst other Thinges, I havinge conceived some Suspicion of his Brother, Sir *James*, beinge in this queisye Tyme accompanied with a greater Trayne then I thought it convenient, consideringe the waveringe Opinions of somme Men, howe easlye they will conceive the Woorst of the least Pointe that may be doubtfullye taken (and yet the Supposall was more then the Matter was in dede, when the Troth was knowen) I requyred of the Earle, by my Messenger, the better to satisfie the World, and put me out of Doubt of his Brother, Sir *James*, that he would either vndertake for hym hym selfe, so that thereby I might be assured of hym, that he should lyve dutifullye, and do no Harme, or ells that he would send hym vnto me. He answered my Messenger, that he would doe in the one and the other as I would direct



direct hym. And there vpon (hopinge by this Meanes the better to assure me) delyvered his Brother by the Hand to my Messenger, who, together in Companie withe the Bisshopp of *Lymericke* and *Morrice Shean*, the Earles Secretarie, came hither to me to *Dublin*, and offered to justifie hym selfe in any Thing he should be iustlye chardged with, and withall proffered, if it pleased me, in any Thing to commaund or imploy hym, he would make that good Prouffe of his assured Loyaltie and Fidellitie to her Majestie, as I should have Cawse to geve hym further Credit: I was glad to heare it, and hope that when I shall have Occasion of Triall for her Majesties Service, that I shall fynd it. Thus moch, my good Lords, I thought convenient to advertize your Lordships of the Earles Loyaltie, and of his honorable and sound Proceadings, to Thende your Lordships may hereafter take somme Occasion to thanke hym, and even so I humblye take my Leave. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the first Day of *Julye*, 1578.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freinde humblye to commaunde,*

H. Sydney.

*Edward Waterhouse to Sir Henry Sydney:*

*It may please your Lordship,*

According to your Commaundement, I haue had Conference with Mr. *Brisket* and Mr. *Sheffield*, towching the Lettres which they brought, and haue, as they know, vsed the vttermoſt of my Endeavour, towching Men, Money, Municion and Victualls: And after long Travall with my Lord Threaserour and Mr. Secretary *Wilson*, with whome I cheefely delt, I perceiue that a Proportion of Municion shall be sent by Mr. *Sheffield*, but not hastily, because he must stay till the Raits be made for Cariage of it; neuertheles, towching Armour, it shuld seeme her Majestie had bene enformid of a thousand Pounds, deliuerid to your Lordship in *Wales*, for which the Countrey is not satisfied. I said that I knew not how the Matter stood, but I thought that the Provision was made by you as farre as euer you had eny Imprests, and that if the Parcells were not deliuerid, yet I iudged it was left in some Place of Store, to the Countreys Vse. The Secreterry told me, that her Majesty wold write vnto you towching that Matter, and that it had bene complainid of here. I cold not inform my self who were the Complainers, but Sir *John Parrott* hath bene a great Courtier, and reportith that her Majestie wold faine have him Deputy of *Irland*, and I suspect him the Auctor of the Informacion.

For Victualls, the Queens Shippes are now dischargid, and the Victualls appointid to be sold; vpon which Direction I made a Motion, that the Bisket and Grayne might be sent to your Lordship, but it is otherwise concludid; for heere is no Suspicion of Invasiō in *Irland*, and because your Lordships Intelligence was not freshe, but your Petitions groundid vpon the Lettres sent from hence by *Graunsbury*, the Pursuuant, their is small Receuing made of the Matters which we solicyt; for they say that in *Fraunce* is no Preparacion, and that the King of *Portugall* hath assurid hir Majesty of all good Dealing: *Stewkeley* is also employed in *Affrique*; so, for myne owne Opinion, I think that if the 10000 *l.* lately sent, were heere again, it wold not passe with a small Difficulty. In Conclusion, because your Arrivall heere is expectid, your Lordships Friends are cold in Procuering of thes Wants: And therefore I look for no good Success of your last Lettres, other then for Municion; and yet I am suer, both Mr. *Briskett*, and *Hary Sheffield*, haue vsid all possible Dilligence and Ernestenes in the perticuler Points of your Letter; and what I haue done my selfe, I referre to them. It sufficeth me that your Lordship hath done your Part, and so preventid the Blame that might be laid to your Lordship and the Counsell there for Silence. But *Irish* Allarmes are so farre from waking Courtiers

V O L. I.

5 Z

out



out of their Sleapes, as I am fuer, till they heare that the Enemye is landid, they will neuer think of Aide, that may cary with it extraordinary Charge. Their is now no Speach of the Retorne of the Erles of *Ormond*, and *Kildare*, but all Eies and Eares are convertid to the Doings in the *Lowe Countreyes*, where the States air strong, and the Kings Force doth also encrease. The States have made *John Norries* Generall of all the *Englishe* and *Scottes*, his Regiment 6000, which are vnder iiij Colonells, *Balfour*, *Cauendishe*, eldest Son to the Lord of *Shrewesbury*, *Morgan* the Soldier, and *Cromwell*, as I take it; and thus having held your Lordship with Matter of small Emportance, I humbly end. At *London*, the iiijth of *July*, 1578.

Your Lordships most dewtifull

and most bounden,

Ed. Waterhous.

*Sir Henry Sydney and the Lords of the Council in Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England.*

Oure Dueties to your Honnors humblye remembred,

IT may like the same to vnderstand, that the Weeke after the Landinge of me, *William Gerrarde*, we called together the Nobilitie, and of everie of the Counties of *Dublin*, *Meith*, *Lowth*, *Kildare*, *Ophaley*, *Leix*, *Caterlaugh*, *Wexford*, *Kilkennye*, and *Typperarie*, certeine of the best Callinge. We have spent the Tyme sithence in Conference vpon the Offer made in the Behalfe of the Countrey to victuall the Number of one thowland Soldiours, and to allowe nyne thowland Pecks of Oates for the Fyndinge of three hundered Horse, in the Consideracion to have the same in soche Assuraunce, as her Majesties Service should take no Want therebye, and to graunte them the Contribucion of soch Countries as they requyred, and Lybertie to lay an equall Rate vpon all Landes, aswell soch as clayme to have auntient Fredomes, as vpon other Landes vsualle chardged; whereunto dyvers dissented, fell out sondrie necessarie Perticulers, worthie of Debatinge, which held vs longer in Conference then ment; although touchinge the Substaunce of the Matter, and the Assuraunce, we have drawn the Cawties to some Hedds, yet differre we in some Things requyred of vs in her Majesties Behalfe, and denied by them, and of other Things requyred by them, and not consented vnto by vs. Therefore we thought convenient, in a Case of so greate Importaunce, before we should breake of, or fullie assent, to order to acquaint your Honnors with the Effect of oure Proceadings, all which we have contained vnder the Titles of the Requests and Answers of vs in her Majesties Behalfe, and of those in the Behalfe of the Countrey, and the same in Notes inclosed send to your Honnors. And although I, the Deputie, do nowe prepare me with the convenient Spede I may, to take Shippinge, and after my Landinge, to make Repaier vp accordinge to her Majesties Direccion, and then to bringe with me soch further Matters, as are to be imparted to your Honnors, and which necessarilie concerne this Cawse of Composicion, aswell of the Chardge her Majestie hath susteined Yerelye by Losse of Victualls nowe to be saved, if this Composicion be perfected, and what also she shall foregoe, by Losse of the Subsidie, and otherwise the Composicion takinge Place: And so after Consideracion thereof, withe your honorable Advice to sett downe some Resolucion; yet because we cannot satisfie the Request which is made on the Behalfe of the Countrie, to have the Imprest of one Quarters Pay to the Soldiour (which we thinke reasonable to graunte) except we first receive some Warraunt from her Majestie to the Treasurer: Therefore have we also thought good, in the meane Tyme, to send this Bearer. The Quarters Imprest is MCxl l. The Day appointed to delyver the same is the xijth of *September* for their Provision. The fyve thowland Poundes for the Quarterage is reserved to



be defrayed accordinge to her Majesties Direccion ; the other fyve thousand Poundes is reserved, accordinge to her Majesties like Apointment, to be imployed, if Cawties of forreine Invasion do requyre the same ; so as, without her Majesties speciall Warraunt, the Imprest requyred cannot be delyvered, with which Warraunt we requyre your Honnors spedilie to retorne this Bearer, if your Honnors, vpon Consideracion of the saied Notes, conteynge oure Proceedings, shall so thinke good. Vpon the Delyverie whereof to the Countrie, there shalbe Assuraunce taken, that if your Honnors, vpon the Repaier of me the Deputie, shall mislyke with the Composicion, and leave vs to the Imponinge of Cesse, as hath bene accustomed ; that the same shall assuredly be repaid againe to the Treasorer. And thus ceasinge to trouble your Honnors with any further Discourties of that Matter, or other Cawties concerninge the State of the Land, vntill the Repaier of me the Deputie, we humblye take oure Leaves. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the First of *August*, 1578.

*Your honorable Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freindes to commaund,*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Sir Henry Sydney, and the Lords of the Council in Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*May it please your good Lordships,*

**I**N a Postscript of your Lettres, bearinge Date the xxth of *August*, touching the Composicion of the Countrie, we fynde your Lordships have conceived some hard Opinion of Auditor *Jenison*, for his Protractinge of Tyme, in Finishinge of his Accompts, imputinge the same to proceade of the Gayne gotten by his Allowaunce of Enterteinment, and withall, your Lordships do requier he might be dispatched hence with the saied Accomptes.

And for that we have knowen, and sene from Day to Day, the great Dilligence both of the Auditor hym selfe, and of soche Clarke as he hath apointed and waged for that Purpose ; that no Day hath overpassed hym, but that he hath continuallye applied his Office with that Paine and Travell, as hath bene nothinge beneficiall to his Health, besides the great Carefulnes he ever had for the Endinge of the saied Woorke, beinge heped daylie vpon hym, vpon sondrie Occasions as they have fallen oute, and so intricate, as requyred a more Tyme then was at the first expected and looked for : We cannot but geve Testimonie on his Behalfe, that he is altogether to be excused of Negligence, and hath so well dischargd hym selfe in the saied Office, as, in oure Opinions, none other whosoever could have donne more, or better for the Tyme then he hath donne. And therefore to with drawe your Lordships ill Opinion of hym (if your Lordships have conceived any) we have thought good with theise fewe Lynes, in regarde of his honest, plaine, and sincere Dealinge, to beseeche your Lordships to accept and allowe of hym, as of a trewe Minister to her Majestie, who with all Fidellitie hath imployed hym selfe, as hath becommed a discrete, carefull, and good Servaunt too doo. And now we have dispatched hym away vnto your Lordships, beinge in full Readines to have taken his Journey before the Receipt of your Lordships saied Lettres ; and even so recommendinge hym to your Lordships former Favors, do humblye take oure Leaves. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xijth of *August*, 1578.

*Your Lordships assured lovinge Freindes,*

*humblye to commaund,*

H. Sydney, &c.

Sir



*Sir Henry Sydney, &c. to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*It may like your Honnors,*

**T**HAT, notwithstandinge, we heretofore, vpon the Complainte of the Viscount *Baltinglas*, cawled Sir *Nicholas Bagnoll*, Knight, to answere soch Hurtes as the saied Viscount surmised, were committed by hym and his Soldiors, in there one Nights Lodginge at *Baltinglas*, in the Tyme of his Seruinge vpon the Rebelle *Rorie Oge*: And vpon the Reply of the saied Viscount, to the Answer of the saied Marshall, apointed Sir *Lucas Dillon*, her Majesties Chiefe Baron, and Sir *Thomas Fitzwilliam*, Knights, to examyne soch Witnessses as the saied Viscount would bringe in Proffe of his saied Surmise: Yet, perceivinge by Lettres latelie received from your Honnors, that the saied Viscounte, before the Retorne of the saied Commission and Depositions, had written to the Earle of *Ormond* his Lettres, certifienge such Spoiles taken, and of such Value, as a in Note inclosed in the same Lettres were contained; which beinge preferred by the saied Earle to your Honnors, it pleased the same to retorne to vs, for speedie Order to be taken.

We have, est fones, for a more perfect Vnderstandinge of the Truth of the saied Surmise, cawled the saied Sir *Nicholas Bagnoll* to answere, and have procured the Retorne of the saied Commission; and have not onelye reexamined, before oure selves, all the former Witnessses, but also, all soch other Witnessses as could be further produced by the saied Viscounte.

Vpon due Consideracion whereof, and fyndinge the same to differ in Truthe from the Contents of the Surmise, and at the Request of the saied Sir *Nicholas*, who thinketh hym greatlye touched in Creditt, if the Troth of his Dealinges be not made knowen vnto Honnors: We thought good to signifie vnto the same in Breife, what falleth out vpon this oure Proceadings, leauinge to your honorable Judgements, what iust Cawse the saied Viscounte had so to exclaime against the saied Sir *Nicholas*, or to fynde hym greived for Want of Justice.

The Viscountes Complainte rested in Hurtes donne vnto hym selfe, whereof (beinge then from Home) he was to take Knowledge of his Seruaunts who kept his Howse.

The cheife Personne who kept his Howse, before vs all, burthened the saied Sir *Nicholas*, with no more Hurtes donne vnto the saied Viscount hym selfe, then the Takinge of a Barrell of Drinke; a Bacon, and certeine Oetes, all which his Man delyvered for Enterteinemente, beinge of no soche Value, as for soche a Personne, to soch a Servitor, in his Tyme of Service to be accompted of.

The Man denied not, but for the same there was iiij Kyne paied, in oure Estimacion, more in Value, than the Things drouncken or eaten.

The Surmise of the rest of the Goodes supposed to be taken from hym selfe, and contained in the Note delyvered to your Honnors, viz. lv Kyne, xxviij Sheppe, ij Swyne, and Howsehold Stuffe to the Value of vj *l.* before vs all his Man vtterlye denied, that either his Master left any soche, or that any soche were taken.

The Goodes surmised to be taken from his Tenaunts, besides the Nombres of Cowes contained in his saied Noates, he valued at CC *l.* for Prooffe whereof, he produced of his Tenaunts, a Nombre of poore simple Creatures, everie one declaringe what was taken from them selves, not one bringinge the Testimonie of any other, to fortifie his Saienge; amongst whome vj of them, beinge examined before, fell into manifest Periurie, vpon there Reexaminacion, which Periurie one of them beinge punished for, hath confessed.

Neverthelesse, allowinge all their single Allegacions for Truthe, yet the Value of the Goodes taken, exceded not xx *l.* ratinge the same after their owne Values.



And we be of Opinion, except some pettie Theftes committed by the Kerne, that there was no Parte of those Goodes so valued at xx l. taken, as surmised.

For by the Declaration of *Henrie Davills*, *Robert Harpooll*, Capten *Macwoortbe*, and v or vj other Personnes of Creditt, who were with Sir *Nicholas*, it apearethe, that after he tooke vp Lodginge, he gave Chardge to everie Capten, to foresee that there should be no Spoile committed by the Soldiours, beinge in Nombre Cxl, nor any Thinge to be taken withoute Payment, protestinge Hanginge to any, that should take the Value of a Mutton.

And by the like Declaracion vpon their Othes, that there was not one Cowe taken, but soche as was brought with *Mac Shane*, and one *Carragh*, a knowen Rebell, and all put into a Bawne, to the Sight of all Persons.

They affirmed also, that he made Proclamacion at severall Tymes in the Morninge, thoroughe out all the Towne, before his Departure, that if there was anye, who had Cawse of Complainte, for Takinge of any Cattell (beinge no Percell of *Hugh Mac Shanes*, or the *Carragh*s Goodes) the same should be harde and restored, and that vpon Complainte of dyvers, there was Clxxiij restored, which the Kerne had dryven with the Pray.

They deposed also, that he sent his Servaunts, and the Viscounts cheife Man, thorough the Towne, with Money to pay for that could be demaunded, and taried hym selfe behinde the Soldiours a Tyme, to see if any would complaine.

By all which Circumstaunces, and the Othes of everie one of those, nowe brought to be sworne, who confesse, that they neither complained then to the Marshall, nor to the Viscounte his Servaunt, neither found them greived of a Quarter of a Yere after, at what Tyme they say they told the Lord of *Baltinglas* thereof. We can hardly be perswaded to thinke they nowe speake trewlye.

Neverthelesse, vpon that they have deposed, there shalbe a further Tryall; and vpon due Proffe, wee shall foresee bothe to do Punishment, and Restitution, if any Thinge fall oute to be taken.

And whereas in the saied Lettres, sent to the Earle of *Ormond*, and by your Honnors inclosed, directed to vs; the Viscounte hath not onelye with great Vehemencie affirmed the Truthe of his heynous Spoile, his Vnhabilitie to lyve with out Redresse. The oft Complayninge with out Countenance to have the Cawse hard, or Hope of Redresse, no Trust reposed in them, as may be gathered in hym, and the rest of the Nobilitie.

Wee humblye beseech your Honnors, feinge the surmised Vntruthes so nierielye touche vs, and oure Service, that it would please your Honnors, so to write vnto hym, as thereby, he and others may be terrefied, howe by Practize to devise soch Vntruthes to be preferred to your Honnors.

And to fortifie the Troth of that we have written, this Bearer hath an Abstracte of the Depositions to be sene to your Honnors, if it so please the same. And so ceasinge to trouble your Honnors, most humbly take oure Leaves. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xxiiijth of *August*, 1578.

*Your good Lordships assured lovinge Freinds*

*humblye to commaund,*

*H. Sydney, &c.*

*Sir*

*VOL. I.*

*6 A*

*Sir*

*Sir*



*Sir Henry Sydney and the Council of Ireland, to the Lords of the Council in England.*

*Oure Dueties humblye remembred to your honnorable Lordships,*

**I**N your Lettres of the xiiijth of *Julye*, dated from the Courte at *Haveringe*, the Answere of ours sent by Mr. *Briskett*, touchinge soch Supplies as we thought then most necessarie to be sent hether (if the Bruite of Thenterprise of *Stukeley* had taken Place) amongst other Things your Lordships noted vnto vs, that for as moche as the Certeintie of the Remayne in the Office of the Ordinaunce was not sent vnto you together with oure Lettres, you could not send so full a Proporcion, as we then writt for: Which assuredlye, my Lords, was not by the Default of the Master of the Ordinaunce, who delyvered a perfect Booke of the State of his Office, subscribed with his Hand, to be sent vnto your Lordships; but the Booke beinge mislaied, and (yet not by the Negligence of the Clarke of the Counsell) when the Packett was closed vpp, it was omitted to be sent, as was apointed to have bene; for vpon the Viewe of that Booke of the Remayne delyvered vnto vs by hym, we sett downe a Proporcion soch as we thought convenient, not onelye to supplye the present Want, but also to have a Store for the better Furnishinge of the Bandes of Footemen, intended to have bene sent hether for that Service, which was then most neadefull to have bene donne. And where your Lordships Pleasure was to have a speciall Commission addresssed to the Auditor, and others, to take Viewe of the State of the saied Office of the Ordinaunce, and to certifie howe moche remayned in Store before *Michelmas*, *An. 1576*; and what hath bene brought in since that Tyme, either out of that Realme, or otherwise provided, and to certifie what Quantitie of those Remaynes and Provisions have bene issued, and by what Warrants, and what Money is answered or answerable for the same. The Master of the Ordinaunce beinge acquainted with your Lordships Pleasures herein, made earnest Request and Petition to vs, that a Survey might not be taken for that Tyme onelye, but becawse his Doinges might be made more apparaunt and knowen vnto your Lordships, which he suspected were doubtfullye conceived; that therefore, a Viewe might be made by the Commissioners, and a Reckninge and Accompt demaunded and taken of all that had passed in his Office from the Tyme of his first Accompte, affirminge vnto vs, that in everie Governors Tyme, he hath desired and obtained that Commissioners might be apointed to take Survey of the Office; and for Proofs, shewed vnto vs, vj severall Surveys, taken by severall Governors Appointements, since the Tyme that Auditor *Dix* left this Realme. And where your Lordships requyreth further, that soch Municion as you nowe sent, should be more carefullye looked vnto, then that which was last sent; for that it seemeth it was reported to your Lordships, the Corseletts were cast in on Heapes, without any Care of Scowringe or Keping them cleane, whereby the saied Corseletts and Callyvers were spoiled with Rust, and so become vn-serviceable: We finde by Reporte of the Commissioners, that that last Provision which was sent by *Binghame*, was otherwise vsed, then your Lordships have bene enformed; for they say, that after the Viewe taken of them, the Master of the Ordinaunce cawfed a speciall Place in the Cittie of *Dublin* to be prepared for the Dressinge and Oylinge, not onelye of soch Corseletts and Callyvers as were then brought, but also of those that remayned afore in the Office, and cawfed Frames of Tymber to be made to hange them vp, to the Ende they might be preserved serviceable, and kept in Order, as nowe they be. And for that we cannot perceive by any Triall or Examinacion, but that the saied Master of the Ordinaunce hath carried hym selfe in his Office since his first Enterie verie directlye and honestlye everie Way. We hope your Lordships (if heretofore happelie he have bene vnfreindlye, or hardly reported of to your Lordships for that Matter) that it wold please your Lordships to conceive better of hym, and to geve Creditt to vs for his Dealings: For, in  
oure



oure Opinions, he hath carried hym selfe verie circumspectlye and carefullye, and fullye discharged the Trust committed vnto hym in the saied Office, as we hope shall more plainelye and evidentlye appere vnto your Lordships by the Retorne of the Commission, which herewith we send your Lordships, testified vnder the Commissioners Handes and Seales. And even so beseachinge the Almightye longe and hapelye to preserve your Lordships, we humblye take oure Leaves. From the Castell of *Dublin*, the xijth of *September*, 1578.

*Your good Lordships assured lovinge*

*Freindes humblye to commaund,*

H. Sydney, &c.

*Lady Mary Sydney to Edmund Mollineux, Esq;*

*Molenox,*

I Thoght good to put you in Remembrance to moue my Lord Chamberlein, in my Lords Name, to haue some uther Roome then my Chamber, for my Lord to haue his Resort unto, as he was woont to haue; or ells my Lord wilbe greatlye trubled, when he shall haue enny Maters of Dispache: My Lodginge, you see, beinge very lytle, and my sealse continewaly fyke, and not able to be mouche out of my Bed. For the Night Tyme, on Roofe, with Gods Grace, shall serue vs; for the Day Tyme the Quen will louke to haue my Chamber alwayes in a Redines, for her Maiesties Cominge thether; and thoghe my Lord him sealse cann be no Impediment thearto by his owen Presens, yet his Lordshipe trustinge to no Playce ells to be prouyded for him, wilbe, as I sayd before, trubled for Want of a conuenient Playce, for the Dispache of souche People as shall haue Occasion to come to him. Therefore I pray you, in my Lords owen Name, moue my Lord of *Sussex* for a Room forthat Porpose, and I will haue hit hanged, and Lyned for him, with Stoof from hens. I wish you not to be vnmyndfull hear of: And so for this Tyme I leue you to the Almyghty. From *Chiswike* this xi of *October*, 1578.

*Your uery assured, louing*

*Mistris and Frend,*

M. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to his Son Robert Sydney, after Earl of Leicester.*

*Robin,*

I Hear well of you, and the Company you keep, which is of great Comforte to me. To be of noble Parentage, usuallye raises an Emulation to follo their great Examples. Thear can be no greater Love than of long Tyme hath byn, and yet ys, betwyne Sir *Harry Nevell* and me; and so wyll contynu tyll our Lyves end. Love you thoas we have doon, and do. One Thyng I warn you of; arrogate no Precedency nether of your Cuntremen nor of Strangers; but take your Place promiscues, with others, accordyng to your Degree and Byrthyght, with Alyens. Follo your dyscrete and virteius Brothers Rule, who with great Dyscretyn to hys great Commendatyon, won Love, and could variofsly ply Ceremony with Ceremony. I here you have the *Dutch* Toung suffycyently, wherof I am glad. You may thearfore save Money and discharge your *Dutchman*; and do it in deed, and send for Mr. *Whyte*; he ys an honest young Man, and hys fairely honest, and good and sound to me and my Freyndys. I send you now by *Stephen*, 30 l. whytch you call Arrerages; tearm yt as you wyll, it ys all I ow you tyll *Easter*; and 20 l. of that, as *Gryffyn Madox* tellyth me, is *Harry Whytes*. I wyll send you at or before *Frankfort* Mart, 60 l. ether to bryng you Home, or to fynd you Abrode, as you and your Brother shall agre, for half a Year



Year endyng at *Mychaelmas*; so *Harry Whyte* nether hath nor shall have Cause to thynk, that I am offendyd with hym; for I cannot look for, nor almost wysh to here better of a Man, than I here of hym; and how I intend to deale with hym, you may se by the Letter I send hym. He shall have his *l. 20* yearly, and you your *100 l.* and so be as mery as you may. I thank you, my deer Boy, for the Martern Skynys you wryte of. It ys more than ever your elder Brother sent me; and I wyll thank you more if they cum, for yet I here not of them, nor ever saw *Cassymyres* Pycture. The Messenger (of the Pycture I mean) played the Knave with you, and me; and after that Sort you may wryte to hym; but if your Tokens cum, I wyll send you sutch a Sute of 'Apparell, as shall beseme your Father Sonn to wear, in any Court in *Germany*. Commend me to the Doctor *Symconys* Father. I love the Boy well. I have no more; but God bles you, my sweete Chyld in this World, and forever; as I in thys World fynd my self happy by my Chyldren. From *Ludlo* Castell this 28th of *October*, 1578.

Your very lovyng Father,

Superscribed

To my very loving Sonne,  
*Robert Sydney*, geve these.

H. Sydney.

*Lady Mary Sydney to Edmund Mollineux, Esq;*

**Y**OU have vsed the Matter very well; but we must do more yet for the good dear Lord then let him thus be dealt with'all. *Hampton Courght* Inever yet knue so full, as ther wer not spare Rooms in hit, whan hit hath ben thryse better fylled then at this Presenn hit is. But some would be sory, perhaps, my Lord should haue so suer Footinge in the Courght. Well, all may be as well when the good God will. The whylst, I pray let us do what we may for our Lords Eas and Quyet. Whear vnto I think, yf you go to my Lord *Howard*, and in my Lords Name also moue his Lordshipe, to shew his Brother, my Lord, as they cawle eache other, to shew him a Cast of his Offis, and that hit shall not be knone, and aleadge your former Cawfis, I think he will fynd out some Place to serue that Purpose; and also, yf you go to Mr. *Bowyer*, the Gentelman Vsher, and tell him, his Mouter requyreth him, which is my sealf, to healpe my Lord with some on Room, but only for the Dispatche of the Multitude of *Irish* and *Welsh* People, that follow him; and that you will giue your Wourd in my Lords Behalf and myne, hit shall not be accounted as a Lodginge, nor knone of. I beleue he will make what Shyft he cann; you must assure him hit is but for the Day Tyme for his Besines, as indead hit is for my Brothers Answer of my Stay hear for five or six Dayes; he knowes I have ventured farr allredy, with so long Absens, and am ill thought on for hit, so as that may not be. But when the woorst is knowne, old Lord *Hary* and his old *Moll*, will do as well as the cann in partinge lyck good Friends, the small Porcion allotted our longe Seruis in Courght; which, as lytle as hit is, seams somethynge to mooche. And this beinge all I cann say to the Matter. Farewell, Mr. *Ned*. In Hast this *Mondaye*, 1578.

Your assured louinge Mistris and Friend,

M. Sydney.

Yf all this will not serue prove Mr. *Huggins*, for I know my Lord would not for no Good be destitute in this Time for some convenient Playce for his Folowers and Friends to resort to him, which in this Case I am in, is not posyble to be in my Chamber, tell after Sun set; when the dear good Lord, shalbe as best becoms him, Lord of his owen.

Sir



*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Henry Sydney Lord President of Wales.*

*My verie good Lorde,*

**A**Lthoughe it is not to be doubted, but that your Lordship is more particularlie advertised from hence what is don and occurreth here, than I can of myne owne Knowledge be hable to write vnto yow; yeat to discharge my Duetie and Promise, made vnto your Lordship at your Departure towards *Wales*, I will not ommitte to write what I my selfe lerne.

Our great Doubte we had of the *Spanishe* Navie and Preparacion is at this present almoste taken waye, by some flyeng Newes arrived that the said Navie and Preparacion by the late Deathe of the King of *Portingall*, is divertid into *Portingall*; and nowe is it said that the same was in no Sorte so greate as it was bruited here.

The first Resolucion taken in Councell for the Withstanding of anie Attempt intended either for this Realme, or the Realme of *Irlande*, waer that the whole Power of *Englande* shoulde be first put in areadines, and speciall Order taken for the Garding and Defending of the maritaine Shores and Places of Discente in verie substancial Maner; that the whole Navie of her Majestie should be sette furthe, and xii other Shippes of the best of the Realme, to accompany them. But since we are become soche (after our old Manner) that there is nothing meant against her Majestie and her Dominions, our whole Resolucion is tourned to thre Shippes onlie of the Quenes, to be sett to the Seae and no more. Neuertheles the generall Musters through the Realme are like to goe forward.

Yt is saied here, that presentlie after the Deathe of this late King of *Portingall*, there is proclaimed Quene of that Realme, a Wief of the Duke of *Braganza*, a Ladye descended of Don *Edouardo*, sixt Sonne to *Emanuel*; to defeat *Phillip* of *Spaigne* descended of *Jfabell*, second Daughter to *Emanuel*. Your Lordship is not unaqueynted with the naturall Hatred of the *Portingall* against the *Spaigne*, and therefore I suppose that the King of *Spaigne* will come by that Kingdom with some Difficultie.

In *Flanders* the whole Fundacion of the Resolucion of the States, for the Continuance of their Warres, is deferred to be agreed on and determined this Monethe of *Marche*, at *Antwerpe*, by a full Assemblie of the Provinces vnited: In the meane Whyle the Prince of *Orange* hath ben in *Freiseland*, ys com to *Vtrecht*, and from thence comythe to *La Haye*, where the States of *Holland* and *Zelande* do mete him. I pray God their Temporifacion be more profitable vnto them then our Coldnes and Securitie here, may chance to be vnto our selves. In the *Lowe Countries* thay stande yeat vppon the Calling in of *Monfier*; and in Courte here, as farre as I perceive, the Cause of his Comyng heither, is either becom tepide, or altogether colde; there be Euasions funde in *France* and Doubts here at Home. And this is as muche brieflie, my good Lorde, as at this Tyme I am hable to write; and so desiring God to sende yow good Healthe, long Life, and a spedie Retourne to the Courte, where I wyshe all you Like. I take my Leave most humblie. From the Courte at *Whytehall* the vith of *Marche*, 1579.

*Your Lordship moste humblie to commaund,*

Tho. Wylkes.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord President of Wales.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**B**Y Advertisements lately receaved owt of *Ireland*, as well of the vncertaine Loyaltie and Devotion of the Nobilitie and Gentlemen of *Munster*, to hir Majestie, as of certaine Ayd that is expected by the Rebelles there, from the King of *Spaine* (which notwithstanding can not fall owt so great as ether was

V O L. I.

6 B

intended,



intended, or they looked for, by Reason of the vnlooked for Resistance of the *Portugals* against the King of *Spaine*, against whose Preparacions, hee shall bee constrained to imploy most of his Forces, if hee entend any Thing that Way) hir Majestie hath been moved to send a Supplie of eight hundred Men into *Ireland*, as well to keepe those doubtfull Subiects in Obedience, as to make a speedier End with the Troubles that the Rebels have cast hir Highnes into; beyng of Opinion that theis with the rest that are there aireadie, and hir Shippes, that lye vppon the Coastes of that Realme, and are to remaine there, vntill *September*, wilbee a sufficient Power to withstand all such foreine Ayd as in any Likelihood is to come vnto them this Yere. And this is the Cawse of that Levie, which by Direction from hir Majestie your Lordship is to make in those Parts. It may please your Lordship furthermore to vnderstand, that hir Majestie willed mee to acquaint your Lordship with hir Pleasure, for your continuall Resistance within your Charge, without any Kind of removing from thence, these dangerous Tymes, wherein Occasion may bee offred vppon the sodeine of Services to bee done, which in your Absence can not ether so well, or so conveniently bee perfourmed, as the Necessitie of hir Highnes Service may require. And this Care shee hath commanded mee to recommend vnto your Lordship the more earnestlie, for that shee is given to vnderstand, that your Lordship doth sometime resort to *Wyllon*; which for the Reasons aforesaid shee somewhat misliketh. And so I take my Leave of your Lordship. From the Court at *Nonesuch* the xxiith of *June*, 1580.

*Your Lordships to commaund*

*Fra. Walsyngham.*

The Prince of *Cardyn* arryved at *Sandwich* in secret Sorte the xix of this Present. The Ende of his Repeyre hether is to acquaynte her Majestye, with the great Wronges they dayly sustayne, and to demaunde Supports, whereunto I feare they shall receyve a cowlde Awntswer.

I thought good to let your Lordship understande, that my Lords are dysposed to commyt the lendynge of 100 Men to *Vaughan Jones*, whome your Lordship recommends.

*The Sheriff and Justices of Peace of the County of Glamorgan, to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord President of Wales.*

*Pleaseth it your Lordship to understande,*

**T**HAT whereas, vppon Peticion founded on mistaken Grounde, you addressed your Lettres, thereby requiring the Sherif and Justices of Peace of this Cowntie of *Glamorgan*, to bynde all those that shall refuse to contribute ratable towards the Finishinge of *Cardif* Bridge, accordinge to the Statute in that Case made, wee have thought requisite (least the feared Yll might hinder the wished Good) to crave the Revokinge of those Lettres by others; in that the State of the Bridge standeth presentlye vppon these Termes. After some Question betwene the Towne and Countrey, whether of them weare to be chardged by Lawe to bwilde the same: The Towne supposinge the Countrey to be chargeable therewith, and the Countrey the Towne, wherevppon Likelyhod of Sute grewe betwene them: And after severall Attempts to compownde the Question, and as many Breaches ensewing, the Countrey still offering, by Waye of Benevolence, to assiste them to bwilde the Bridge: The right honorable the Earle of *Pembroke* beinge made prevy therof, directed his Townesmen of *Cardif* to take a milder Course, which notified to the Justices of Peace of this Countie, they (havinge also some other Occation to conferre for her Majesties Service) directed fourth Warrantts to the Highe Conestables of

euerye



euerye Hundred within this Countie, requiringe them to geve Admonition to Thinhabitaunts of euerye Parishe within their Limytts, to appointe ij, iiij, or more, accordinge to the Greatnes of the Parishe, aucthorised for them to assente to, or disagree from Points to be considered, aswell for the Bridge as for other Matters, at an Assemblye called to *Cowbridge* on the *Eve of Palme Sondaye* was Twelve Moneth : At which, after longe Discourse, and feuerall Opinyons yealded, hit was at length agreed on all Sides (without Dissent of any) that a Stone Bridge shoulde be bwilt at the common Charge, and the Judges to be consulted, whether Towne, Countrey, or both, weare chargeable by Lawe with Bwildinge thereof ; and if the Burden laye on the Contrey, then wee to accept our Quittaunce, for our Money payed as due by Lawe ; if on the Towne, then they to yelde vs Quittaunce, as of a Some graunted of our Benevolens. And in the meane Tyme, hit was agreed that Taske shoulde be geuen, the Some rated with most Indifferencye, and the same immediatly levyed, which hath bene done, beinge proportionably rated accordinge to the ancient Custome through owt the Cowntie, vppon euerye Hundred, Parishe, and Person within the same, beinge judged by all Men to be the moste indifferent Waye : Sith which Time, as a great Number have paied, so are there not fewe whoe staye Payment, of whom wee rather judge the greatest Number to be vnprovided of what riseth vppon them to be presentlye disbursed, then maliciously disposed to hinder so charitable a Woorke, yet can wee not denye but divers have diuerslye caveled thereat, which not with standinge, wee thincke the most obstinate rather doubted, least the Course taken might tende to Exaction, then plainlye denyed to geve as Benevolens : Therefore, as before, these are to besech your Lordship by these Lettres to be graunted, to commaunde, that all those be bounde to appeare, that shall refuse to paie their Benevolence, by generall Assents graunted, and by Thadvise of the Justices of Peace (as the myldest Waie) ratably proportioned ; vpon the which Lettres received and published, wee truste wee shall make an Ende of all your Lordships Troubles and ours in that Behalf. Thus wee humbly take our Leave, the viijth of *Julye*, 1580.

*Your Lordships at Commaundment,*

N. Herbertt, Edwarde Mansell, William Mathew, Mathias Herbert, Ley. Pryce, Edward Stradlynge, Thomas Lewys, Anthony Mawe, Myles Dutton, William Carne.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

I Have receaved your Lordships Lettre of the vjth of this Present, and towching the Placyng of my Lord *Stafford*, a Cownsellor in the Marches, for suche Cawses as you have expressed, I think it inconvenient : And therefore mynd, according to your Desyre, to stay this Matter, vntill such Tyme as all his Cawses dependyng in that Court bee determined ; and yf Need be, herein also to move hir Majestie. I am nowe further to desyre your Lordship, that where of late you writte to me, towching some Thinges to bee added to the Commission, you have to deale with Recusants ; the same, your Lettre, beyng by some Mishappe lost, you would send me the lyke ; wherevppon I will accomplishe as soone as I can that you require. Howbeit for that, in the Mending of the Defect in the sayd Commission, hir Majestie hir selfe is to be dealt withall ; which peradventure will require some longer Tyme : Myne Opinion is, that it weare good your Lordship, with the rest, proceeded agaynst the Recusants, in the meane Tyme as well as maye bee, by Vertue of the Commission in suche Forme as allreadie you have it ; and so most hartely commendynge your



your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. From the Court at *Nonfuche*, the viijth of *Julye*, 1580.

Your Lordships assured loving Friend,

Fra. Walsyngham.

The seldome Meetyng of my Lords of the Counsell, is the Cause why the Delaye of Awntswer is made.

And as for Thinges that are made to passe the Queenes Signature, yf they be not obteyned with that Speed you desyer; your Lordship and the Counsell ther, must beare with us the Secretaryes; for we cannot doe therin as we woold.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord President of Wales.*

My verie good Lord,

**M**Y Lords of late callenge here to Remembrance the Commission that was more than a Yeare agoe given out to your Lordship, and certayne others, for the Reformation of the Recusants and obstinate Persons in Religion, within *Wales* and the Marches thereof, marvayled verie muche, that in all this Tyme they have heard of nothing done therein by you and the rest; and truly, my Lord, the Necessitie of this Tyme requiryng so greatly to have those Kynd of Men dilligently and sharply proceaded agaynst, there will here a verie hard Construcion bee made, I feare mee of you, to reteine with you the sayd Commission so longe, doying no Good therein. Of late, nowe I receaved your Lordships Lettre towching suche Persons as you think meet to have the Custodie and Oversight of *Mongomerie Castle*, by which it appeareth you have begone, in your present Iorneyes in *Wales*, to doe somewhat in Cawses of Religion; but having a speciall Commission for that Purpose, in which are named speciall and verie apt Persons to ioine with you in those Matters, it will bee thought strange to my Lords to heare of your Proceading in those Cawses, withowt their Assistance: And therefore, to the End their Lordships should conceive no otherwise than well of your Dealyng withowt them, I have forborne to acquaynt them withe our late Lettre, wishyng your Lordship, for the better Handlyng and Successe of those Matters in Relligion, you called vnto you the Bushoppe of *Worcester*, Mr. *Phillips*, and certayne others specially named in the Commission. They will, I am sure, be glad to wayte on you in so good a Service, and your Proceading together with them in theise Matters will bee the better allowed of here; and so, with my hartie Commendations to your Lordship, I take my Leave. *Olelands*, the ixth of *August*, 1580.

Your Lordships assured loving Friend,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Your Lordship had neade to walk warely, for your Doings are narrowly observed, and her Majestie is apt to geve Eare to any that shall yll you. Great Howlde is taken by your Ennemyes, for Neglectyng the Executyon of this Commission.

*Sir Henry Sydney's Account of the State of Lands, &c. in Anglesey, between Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, and Sir Richard Buckeley, 2d of September, 1580. Anno Regine, &c. xxij.*

**T**HE said Daye it pleased my Lord President to wryte his Lettres to Sir *Richard Buckeley*, signefieng to him therby, the Receipte of her Majesties Lettres, and of his verie good Lord and Brothers, my Lord of *Leicester*, his Lettres, touchinge the Forrest Causes in *Anglesey*. And that he shold come



over to his Lordship, to signifie his Travell and Furthraunce he had taken in the Service, as it was expected for by my Lord of *Leicester*; which said Lettre was deliuered by *Whyte*, my Lord Presidents Seruant, the iijde Day of the said *September*, in the Morninge.

The Fifte of the same Moneth, Mr. *Thomas Buckeley*, Vncle vnto Sir *Richard*, deliuered in Message to my Lord President at *Denbigbe*, from Sir *Richard*; that his Nephewe wold have wayted vpon his Lordship accordinge to Dutie, but that he was partly sicke, and not apte to travell; with further Speech, tending to that End, in Excuse of Sir *Richards* Absence. And at that Instant, afore further Speech vsed, came Sir *John Huband*, Mr. *Townesbend*, and Doctor *Ellice*, whom his Lordship did call vnto him.

And then my Lord President, in the Presence of the said Gentlemen, and the said Mr. *Buckeley*, declared what Message he had receved from Sir *Richard Buckeley*; and then Mr. *Buckeley* further said, that he had in Commission from his Nephew, to imparte vnto his Lordship what Travell and Corse he had taken for the Service in *Anglesey* (*viz.*)

That he had called before him, at feuerall Times, all his owne Tenaunts, his Friends, and his and there Followers, and had demaunded of them to geve there Consents, that two thousand Pounds might be leavied in the said County, to gratifie my Lord of *Leicester*, with; vsing these Reasons to perswade them:

*Furst*, That my Lord of *Leicester* was Aman of great Honor, Power and Strength, and such a one, that for his owne Parte, he found him self to weake to contend with, and that he would assiste and defend them no longer; and that if there Estats were loked to, they wold be found verie weake, with other Speeches, howe others were dealt with, and had yelded, and said that it was answered by those his Tenaunts and Friends (*viz.*)

They thought there Estats perfect and sure, the Proclomacion that was set furth of late did helpe them, and that they feared not, but they shold have Justice, and sawe no Cause whye they shold contribute to geve any Some of Money; to which Answers the said Sir *Richard Buckeley* replied, saing, *viz.*

I wishe you to be better advised, and yet iterated his former Perswasions vnto them, wishing them to be advised vntill a certen short Day, at which Day they gave full Resolucion, that they were all contented to be Contributaries for the said two thousand Pounds, so as the Busshops Tenaunts, Sir *William Harberts* Tenaunts, Mr. *Bagnolts* Tenaunts, *Owen Woodds* Tenaunts, and all others of the said County, wold be Contributaries for the said Some also; after which Meting, he reported that his Nephew, Sir *Richard*, dealt with diuerse Gentlemen, Freholders, and Friends in the said County, and found them to be gret Hinderers, and not willing to the said Payments; concluding, that his Nephewe desired to knowe his Lordships Opinyon and Advise what to doe, and that for his owne Parte he was at my Lord of *Leicesters* Comaundment.

The said Lord President finding the said *Thomas Buckley*, in this his Message and Circumstances, to be verie discret and wise, his Lordship therfore advisedly answered, and wished him so to imparte vnto his Nephewe; that albeit he receved by him no Letter of the Mynde of his Nephewe, yet for that, he deliuered the same so fully, and in such good Sort and Termes, he therfore accepted the same in good Parte. And for the Matter, his Lordship said, that he well knewe, that Sir *Richard Buckley* had no such Comission from my Lord of *Leicester*, nether to demaund no such Somme of Money, nor yet to take any such Corse in this Service there; therby to sattisfie his Lordships Expectacion; affirmyng further, that the Gentlemen and Freholders had gret Reason to deny Sir *Richards* Request, in that they shold be required to make Payment, and no Consideracion on my Lord of *Leicesters* Parte to satisfie them for the same; adding further, that this Mans Offering of Service was not honorable to his Lord-



ship; and as my Lord President termed yt, yt was but a Kind of Comerthe; and rather then his Lordship shold geve Place herevnto, or that yt shold be said, that the Lord President, travelling hether by her Majesties expresse Commaundement, shold consent hervnto, he wold furst sell a C<sup>l</sup>. Land of his owne Inheritance, to his Lordships Vse; concludeinge an vtter Mislike, and that there was no good nor synfere Meanyng in Sir *Richard*, in this Handling this Cause.

To this Effect also, Sir *John Huband* vsed the like effectuall Speeches, saing that Sir *Richard* before hand did well knowe that this Offer wold not be accepted, nor Proceedings liked, and that yf no other Corse wold be taken by Sir *Richard*, the Service wold proceede accordinge as heretofore hit hath bene well begonne, for that there was no Reason that the Ynocent shold be Contributor as well as the Offender; and then the Lord President said he wold travell thether in Person, rather then this Service shold have no good Passage and Successe.

And Mr. *Townesbend* then adding, that he wished that Sir *Richard Buckley* shold faull from this Corse, and that he him self and his Tenaunts shold furst come and compound with my Lord President, for those Lands of his already found by Office in the Counties of *Anglesey*, and *Carnarvon*; and thereby he shuld bothe showe agood Begynninge towards the Fynyshinge of the Service, and his last professed good Will to his Lordship; but by any other Kinde of Travell herin, yt was but Wynnyng of Tyme, and but Showe of Frendshippe; which Doctor *Ellice* affirmed.

And nowe these last Speeches, my Lord President and Sir *John Huband* thoroughlie confirmed; my Lord President requieringe Mr. *Buckley* to departe, and to returne with Answer furthwith, advising Sir *Richard*, that he shold vse plaine and honest Dealing towards my Lord of *Leicester*, and not to forgett his honorable Frendshippes and Countenance he often shewes towards him, to the Augmentacion of his Credyt and Lying, thre or fower C Marks Ayere. And thus Mr. *Buckley* being fully satisfied with Answer, departed, with Promes to returne spedelye.

*Sir Richard Buckley to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord President of Wales.*

*My very good Lord,*

WHERAS vppon the Receipt of your Lettre I forthwith sent over my Men and Horses, puttinge my selfe in a Redines at the next full Sea to be transported over, for more Expedition of my Repaier towards your Lordship, to whom both in Dutie and good Will, I long sythens fownde my selfe verry muche bownden; yet beinge in the meane Tyme taken with an extreme Paine and Stiche in my Syd, was inforced for that Present to omytte my Determyncions; and beinge by the Vehemencie of my Greefe vnable to writt, to avoyd Losse of Tyme, thought best to adresse vnto you, my Vncle, as well to signifie the Cause of my Staye, as alsoe to receve from your Lordship suche Direction as pleased you to deliver for Fortherans and Accomplishment of my verrye good Lords Proceedings in this Countie, which, above all Things, in Sort as his Lordship gave me Order, I wyshe and will labor to advaunce; at whose Returne and Report of your Lordships Pleasure in that Behalfe, I am verelye brought to thinke that he hathe muche misconceaved of your Speeches, for that the Order of Proceedinge, which, as he saithe, your Lordship wisshethe me to take, dothe varye, and is all together from the Direction delivered vnto me by my Lord, aswell by Worde as by his Lordships Lettres, one wherof I receaved within this Fortnight. Somme Ease I finde of my Stiche, and as sone as I shal be able to endure Ridinge, I will attend your Lordships forther Plesure; and I trust vpon Conferance with your Lordship, yf it please you, Matters in this Ile may be brought to suche End as my Lord wisshethe. Soe still, with my humble Comendacion, wishe the Continuaunce of your Lordships well Doinge. *Bewmarryes,*  
September 7, 1580.

*Your Lordships to command,*

Richard Buckland.

Sir



Sir Henry Sydney's Answer.

After my verrie hartie Comendacions,

I Receaved your Lettre, dated at *Bewmarries* the vijth of this present September, the vijth of the same at Night, delivered vnto me by this Bearer your Servaunt; declaringe your Willingenes and Redines to come vnto me; but prevented by a sodden Payne and Greife in your Syd, the Vehemencie whereof mad you bothe vnable to Write, and cut of youre former Determynacion to com; yet for the avoydinge the Losse of Tyme, you adressed youre Vncle vnto me aswell to signifie the Cawse of your Staye, as to receive Direction for the Furtherance of my Lord of *Leicester* Causes in that Countie, which you seme to be verrie desirous to advaunce. And as I am of Opinion that your Example in doinge that effectually which you may doe, will doe great Good, for that the greater Number within that Countie will nott refuse to followe that Course, which you shall lead. Soe if you comm and offer Composition for your selfe, and your Friends, Tenaunts and Kinsfolkes, for those Lands you and they have encroched in the Counties of *Anglesey* and *Carnarvon*; the same wilbe an Argumente of your good Will in ded; and suche as here tofore you have manie Tymes offered and professed: And therfore in this Point I am desirous to receave your private Answer what you will doe. And whereas you write, that you are brought to thinke that your Vncle hathe misconstered of my Speeches; yf you had eyther written vnto me what he reported from me, or sent him backe againe with your Answer vnto me, which I expected, you might therin have bene better resolved, and I muche more satisfied; and where you saye, that the Order of Proceedinge nowe intended doth varrie, and is altogether from the Direction delivered you by my Lord of *Leicester*, as well by Word as by Lettre; for that you shewe not what Direction you receaved, I am not easilie to be induced to thinke, that you have been prescribed to hold any other Courses but suche as hath bene generally resolved vpon for the Advancement of the Cause, wherein you of all shewe your selfe moste conformable, yf you will geve the Example, to come to compownde for your selfe and Tenaunts, for those Lands you and they have encroched. And evensoe expectinge your Answer herein with convenient Speed, I bid you Farewell. From *Denbighe* the ixth of September, 1580.

Your lovinge Friend,

H. Sydney.

Sir Henry Sydney to Arthur Lord Grey, Lord Deputy of Ireland;  
how to proceed in his Government of that Kingdom.

I Doe remember, my verrie good Lord, that I wrought unto you; I would by Auditor *Jenison* wright more at Large, whose Comminge hether to me, put me in Remembraunce of the same. And now, my Lord, in Satisfaction of your Requests, and Easynge of my desirous Mynde of your happie Successes, in that vnhapie Countrie; in the louingest Manner that I canne, I sende vnto your Lordship theis Notes followinge, which, if I shold laye downe as Principles of Gouvernment to your Lordshippe, I might well be likened to the Puttock, that taught the Faulcon to flie; or, if I shold wright vnto you any Instructions for martiall Deffines, or Actions, I might well be scorned with that Scholler that offred to reade to *Hanibale*, *De Arte Militare*.

But nowe to beginne, and that with Godde Almightye: As I knowe you are relidgious, so I wishe your Lordshippe to frequent Sermons and Praier in publique Places; it would comforte the fewe Protestants you haue there, and abashe the Papistes, whereof you haue many.

Haue speciall Regarde to the Helthe of your Bodie; be not withowte a Phisition of your owne; and he of this Lands Birthe; and as you haue ben alwaies



waies delighted in vertuous and noble Exerfises ; fo what Bufines foever you haue, vfe wekely fome Daies, or rather dailie fome Howers, to continewe the fame ; otherwise ye fhall bothe dull your Sprights, and mak your Bodie vnhabable to ferue.

Prouide carfull and bowlde Officers for your Howshold, and put on a Determinacion, to live within the Compas of your Allowaunce ; wherin I wifhe you to make a Patterne of other Men, rather then of me ; who by fpending there (and yet in Truthe not prodigalie) am forced to fpoile my Patrimonye heere ; with what Reward or Thank, I knowe your Lordship cannot be ignorant ; and lett one of the princepall Officers of your Howshold haue a Care for the Collection of your Ceffe for the fame : And now *ut vno Verbo dicam*, never agree withowte Ceffe, for if you take Money, it wilbe made a greate Matter heere, and yet not ferue your Torne their. Trust me, my Lord, this one Perticuler was the Thing that chesely brak my Backe, which I only releafed, to bringe the People more wiling to aduance the Reuenewe of the Crowne ; and fo I did, as herafter your Lordship fhall perceiue in this Lettre : This Officer I termed my Clarke Controwler ; and albeit I had bothe Threaforer and Controwler ; his Precedents in Ranke ; yet had I never a one that I trusted better : If your Lordship, or your Officers, have Neede of any Formiler of my Howshold held there, if you wright vnto me for it, I will fende it you, fo fone as I can gette it ; for here I have none for that Countrie : Be fuer of a iufte and painfull Man, to be Gentleman of your Horfe, who fhall have Neede to have a Yoman vnder him ; in theis two Officers refteth mvch, importinge bothe Honnor and Proffitte. There liveth yet an owld Man, *Powle Greene* by Name, vnto whome, by the Waie, I befeche your Lordship to be good Lord ; he can inftucte, and I am fuer will, for fo have I written to him, who foever he be, that your Lordship will putte in that Office.

Your beinge in actuall Warres, I neede not to aduife your Lordship to make none, withowte the Confente of the Councell ; but for any Charge that may be for the fame Warres layde vppon the Countrie, doe it not withowte calling them to it, and others of the Nobilitie, as hath ben accuftomed ; for althoughe you have not all to confente with you, yet I dowte not but you fhall have fo ftrong a Partie, as alwaies fhallbe fufficient for your Difchardge : One greate Matter you fhall have to deale in at the Councell Borde, which is the Ceffe for the Armie, and your Howshold ; and, my Lord, as this aduifed, compownde not for any Moneye, they will offer you. I did, and, as I writ before, vndid my felf by the fame ; for, vppon their greuous Complaintes, afirmitinge that fome one Ploughe Land was chardged with twelue Pounds, and I think might prove theye were chardged with eight, I compounded with them for five Marks *Sterlinge* ; which five Marks *Starlinge*, vppon everie Ploughe Lande, amownted to two thowfand and fower hundred Pounds *Sterlinge*, for one Yeare, and the fame received within one hundred Pounds, little more or leffe, by the aboue named Clarke Controwler ; and the fame might haue ben fixed to the Crowne Imperiall for ever, yf it had ben well ftode to here : The Limites and Counties chardged to this, I thinke wil apere in the Councell Booke ; if not, I knowe none fo able to informe you as the Secritery *Chaliner* ; my Opinion is, your Lordship fhould be refolute in this, that you ceffe them accordinge to Theftate of your Howshold, and Number of your Garifon ; the Man lafte named I ever fownde painfull, skilfulle and faithfull, and praie your Lordship to be good Lord to him, and lette him knowe that I forgette him not. My deere Lord, in Consultacion of this Matter, and of all other Matters that muft be treated of at Councell Borde, fuppreffe Paffion ; you fhallbe tempted in *Summo grade* : I had forgotten one late Thing, and yet materiall, and that is, the Choife of Ceffiers for the Garifon, and Raters for your Howshold ; for albeit I fownde fome more honefter then other, yet amongest them all, never a perfect honeft Man.

For



For the Warres nowe in Action, I wotte not what to wright, for that not long agoe my Lord of *Lecester* wright vnto me of your Lordships safe Arivall there, of the Deathe of Sir *Jeames* of *Desmond*, and of Thouerthrowe of Sir *John* his Brother, and howe everie Thing wente well ther; but since I have harde of a shrewde Conflifte in *Goulranell*, and divers principall Men slaine in the same, and that the *Desmonds* aer of such Force as they be able to kepe two Armyes; and to whether of theis Factions I shold aduise your Lordship to adresse your self, consideringe the Nereness of the one to *Dublin*, Thopinion and Possibilitie of the Landinge of forren Force, to Thaide of thother, towards which if this Yeare you doe aduaunce, leaue a stronge Garde vppon the Pale behinde you; for a Cottage burnt there wilbe made more here, then a Towne burnt in *Mounster*. If you will this Yeare goe about Thextirpinge of those Caniballs of *Goulranell*, and theire Neighbowres, or when you will, if your Lordship lette me knowe it, I think I will laye you downe a better Plotte then ever any yet of your Predecessors for these two hvndred Yeares ever followed; and lette it not troble you, that your People tok some Blowe there, for I doe not remember that ever any Attempte was made there, nor yet ever harde by my Elders, but that we had more Losse then Gaine; those Vermin have lived there offensivelie to *Englishe* Men, and *Irish* Gouvernment, aboue iij. C. Yeares: And yet I thinke it verry possible, and verry feycible, to subdue or expulse them; and dowteles an Acre wonne there is more honorable and profitable for the State, then a Myle in any other remote Place. Once again, my Lord, if you goe into *Mounster*, leave a stronger Garde vppon the Pale, and spare not to burden them of the Countrie to doe it; it is for them selues; and what Masse of Threasure this Crowne exhausteth, besides that they yerelye doe, they cannot be ignorant of; I wishe your Lordship should in Person be in either Action.

If you goe into *Mounster*, I cannot perceiue that there is any Maner of Proceedinge yet, but marcially; this I had forgotten that you leaue all of that Countrie Birthe behinde you, that are Men to make any Defence, and truste to your Soldiers. Some Covnsellors of the Countrie you shall Neede to haue, with you; the Potentates of that Province truste not, till you have tried them, yet happily you mvste vse them, but lette them comme imbrued, before you greatelie allowe them.

And since it is marciallie that you mvste proceede, and considering your Experience and Judgmente, I seasse to treatie any more of that, lest as I wright in the Begininge of my Lettre, I might power more Follie out of my self, then put Wisdome into you; only this, that you spare for no Coste to gette Spies; Knaves wilbe bought for Money, and for helpinge of you to suche. I knowe none so apte Men, as *Thomas Masterfon*, *Robert Pipno*, and *Robert Harpole*, all which I fownde honeste, seruisable, and faithfull; all which I doe recomend vnto your good Lordships Fauoure.

My thinks it is nowe owte of Season to mak any Treatise or Discorse of a generall Reformation, for that were like as if a Man seinge his Howse on Fire, wold sette downe and drawe a Plotte for a newe, before he wold put his helpinge Hande to quenche the owld. Neither yet doe I knowe, what Course you shalbe directed, or of your self are inclined to howld; for if your Course be either by Direction or Inclination to temporise, then mvste you proceede in different Maner, from that Course which you mvste howld; if you aspire to a perfecte Reformation of that acursed Countrie. Here will come in Question whether provinciall Councells and Forces be to be maintained, or not, and as theis Courses be different, so mvste you vse Difference of Action, Councellers, and Mynisters; and herin, when soever you will make me priuey, you shall have the beste Aduice that I shalbe able to geve you; protestinge that if *Philip Sidney* were in your Place, who most earnestlie and often hath spoken and written to doe this louinge Office, he I saie shold haue no more of me, then I moste willinglie will wright to you from Tyme to Tyme. But it wilbe beste, that you oppose me by Questions, I will answer them aswell as I can.



And nowe my good Lord, and beloued Companion, I will sease to wright of any Matter, and to treate a little of Men; the moste sufficient moste faithfull Kinde that ever I fownde there, were the Barron of *Vperoffery*, Sir *Lucas Dillon*, and Sir *Nicholas Malbie*, these for princepall Men both for Councell and Action, and who ever moste dilligentlie and faithfullie discharged that which I comitted to them, and trulie they be Men of greate Sufficiencie: Make much of this Bringer, for he may and I am suer will stand your Lordship in Stede, I have alwaies fownde him a iuste fownde Frende: If he be a live there is an honest Gentleman called *Thomas le Strange*, he was some Tymes Henchman to Kings, and at the laste Seruaunte to me, and nowe to the Quene planted there by me; yf it please you to call him to you at Tymes and geve him good Countenance, he will well informe you of that Tracte of the Countrie where he dwelleth: I recomend to your Lordship allso *Launcelot Alforde* the Survaioir; all theis I have fownde fownde and faste Friends to me: I had almoste forgotten my nereft and dereft Frend and Kinsman, and Knight of myne owne Makinge, Nephew and Godson, Sir *Henry Harrington*: I beseeche your Lordship bestowe on him your fauowrable and lovinge Cowntenance, you shall finde in him Nobiletie of Mynde, and that he is not voide of good Councell throughe Experience. It is not for Lack of Loue that I place not aright, your Martiall there, Sir *Nicholas Bagnall*, whom I have ever fownde a faithfull constant Frend, and servisable and moste faste and assured to that Famelie wherwith I am matched, and with which your Lordship is allied; his Sonne my Godson and Knight, I recomende vnto your Lordship: I desier your Lordship to geve your good Covntenance to my owld Cossen *Jaques Wingfeld*, I truste he will deserve it, and nowe laste thoughte not least in Likinge, the Bishop of *Methe*, whom I ever fownde a good Councellor, for the State, a good Countrieman for the Comon Wealthe, a good Howsekeper, and alwaies my faste and fownde Frend: These that I have thus writen of, I pray you lette them knowe that I have not forgotten them to your Lordship.

I might wright of many other, but I will wright Evell of none, yet Evell have I fownde of some whome you mvst vse, for hapelie God ordeined them to be Scourges for my Sinnes, and yet they may be good and fruitefull Instruments, to further your Service (which if you finde) vse them therafter, and lik them never the lesse for any Thinge don to me; but if Benefit wold have bownde, I shold have fownde faste where I fownde lose.

As I finde your Lordship liketh this, I will supplie you with more, and nowe desire you to comend me to the Newcomes of *Ireland*, *Videlicet* my Cossen *John Chek*, who withowte Challenge be it spoken, passed by *Chester* and sawe me not albeit he tarried there Daies enoughe; and to my good Allie *John Zouche* whom I thanke for Comminge to me to this Towne, and to my Gouverner and deere Frend Mr. *Edward Denny*, vnto all which I wishe from my Harte all Good and Happynes.

My Lord, I had forgotten thre Kinsmen of myne, Sir *Edward More*, *Owen More*, and *Thomas More*; one of them was my Man and nowe the Quenes, thother my Lord of *Warwicks* and nowe a Knight, the Third my Man still: I pray your Lordship lette them knowe that I forgette them not; the beste worthy of Captens that I lefte behinde me was *Humfrie Mackworth*, he was a Boye of myne owne Breddinge, I praie your Lordship fauower him the rather for my Sak; I knowe I shall have many other that in Respecte of me will desire Grace at your Hands, and accordinge to the Goodnes of the Cawse I beseeche you to extend the same vnto them: I wold that they for whome I have written might knowe that I haue not forgotten them, and that you would kepe this Lettre secret, least others not named might take Occasion to deme them selves of me condemned.

My Lord, I did omitte to wright this Lettre my self, only for the Shaking of my Hande, which is such as with Difficultie I wright myne owne Name, but allso for that my Lettres writen, are to any Reader, yea almoste to my self illegible, and so I praye you accept it thoughte sette downe by the Penne of my Man, yet deliuered by the Tonge of my self: Finalie I comend my self. my Sonne



Sonne *Phillip* (who is not here) and the Frendship and Seruice of vs bothe, to your good Lordship, whom you shall finde your faste and fownde Friends. From *Denbighe* the xvijth of *September*, 1580.

*Your Lordships ancient Allie lovinge Companion,*

*and faithfull Friend,*

H. Sydney.

P O S T S C R I P T.

*My Lord,*

THERE is a Debte due vnto me by *Oreilie*, for the Recoveringe wherof I have put *Launcelot Alforde* in Truste; but for that Men of his Sorte, who are not commonlie to be delte withall by ordinarie Au<sup>th</sup>oritie, become slowe Paiers of theire Debtts excepte they be verrie earnestely solicited, I praie your Lordship therfore (if Neede be) to asiste *Alforde* by your Covntenaunce and Commission, the rather to quicken him to procure me Paimente. My good Lord, I had almoste forgotten by Reason of the Diuersitie of other Matter, to recomende vnto you amongst other of my Friends, Sir *Henry Cowley*, a Knight of myne owne makinge, who whilst he was yonge and the Habilitie and Strengthe of his Bodie serued, was valliant fortunate and a good Servante, and havinge by my Appointement the Charge of the Kings Covntie, kepte the Countrie well ordered and in good Obedience: He is as good a Borderer as ever I fownde any there. I lefte him at my Cominge thence a Councillor, and tried him for his Experience and Judgment, verrie sufficient for the Rome he was called vnto: He was a fownde and faste Friend to me, and so I dowte not but your Lordship shall finde when you haue Occasion to imploye him: And once more, my Lord, I praye you to be good to *Thomas Masterson*, he is one of the ancienteste Followers I had there, and one that hath ben of longest Acquaintaunce with me; you shall finde him valliant, of greate Experience and a verrie good Borderer, and fitte to be vsed when you shall have any Occasion to trie his Seruice: Finally my Lord, tak this for my laste Precepte, make not many Ministers for the Layinge owte of your Money, and to deale with your Purser: What Losse I susteined that Waie, no Man can better informe your Lordship, then this Bearer, who knewe my Estate, and by what Meanes and Degrees I toke the moste Harme.

*Sir Philip Sydney to his Brother, Robert Sydney, who wns the first Earle of Leicester of that Name.*

*My deere Brother,*

FOR the Mony yow have receaued, assure your selfe (for it is true) there is nothing I spend so pleaseth me, as that which is for yow. If euer I haue Abilitie you will finde it, if not, yet shall not any Brother liuing be better beloved then yow of Mee. I cannot write now to *N. White*, doe yow excuse me. For his Nephew, they are but Passions in my Father, which wee must beare with Reuerence; but I am sory he should returne till he had the Circuite of his Travell, for you shall neuer haue such a Servant as he would proue; vse your owne Discretion therin. For your Countenaunce I would for no Cause haue it diminished in *Germany*; in *Italy* your greatest Expence must be vpon worthy Men, and not vpon Housholding. Looke to your Diet (sweete *Robin*) and hould vpp your Hart in Courage and Vertue, truly greate Part of my Comfort is in yow. I know not my selfe what I ment by Brauerie in yow, so greatly yow may see I condemne yow; be carefull of your selfe, and I shall neuer haue Cares. I haue written to Mr. *Savell*, I wish yow kept still together, he is an excellent Man; and there may if yow list passe good Exercites betwixt yow and Mr. *Nevell*, there is greate Expectation of yow both. For the Method of writing Historie, *Boden* hath written at large; yow may reade him, and gather out of many Wordes some Matter.

This



This I thinke in Haste, a Story is either to be considered as a Storie, or as a Treatise, which, besides that, addeth many Things for Profite and Ornament; as a Story, he is nothing but a Narration of Things done, with the Beginnings, Causes, and Appendences therof; in that Kinde your Method must be to haue *Seriem temporum* very exactlie, which the Chronologies of *Melancthon*, *Tarchagnora*, *Languet*, and such other, will helpe yow to. Then to consider by that as yow not your selfe, *Zenophon* to follow *Thucydides*, so doth *Thucydides* follow *Herodotus*, and *Diodorus Siculus* follow *Zenophon*: So generally doe the *Roman* Stories follow the *Greeke*, and the perticuler Stories of present Monarchies follow the *Roman*. In that Kinde yow haue principally to note the Examples of Vertue or Vice, with their good or evell Successes, the Establishments or Ruines of greate Estates, with the Causes, the Tyme, and Circumstances of the Lawes then write of, the Entrings and Endings of Warrs, and therein, the Stratagems against the Enemy, and the Discipline vpon the Soldiour; and thus much as a very Historiographer. Besides this, the Historian makes himselfe a Discourser for Profite, and an Orator, yea a Poet sometimes for Ornament. An Orator, in making excellent Orations, *e re nata*, which are to be marked, but marked with the Note of Rhetoricall Remembrances: A Poet, in painting forth the Effects, the Motions, the Whisperings of the People, which though in Disputation, one might say were true, yet who will marke them well, shall finde them taste of a Poeticall Vaine, and in that Kinde are gallantly to be marked, for though perchance they were not so, yet it is enough they might be so. The last Poynt which tendes to teach Profite, is of a Discourser, which Name I giue to who soeuer speakes, *Non simpliciter de facto, sed de qualitatibus et circumstantijs facti*; and that is it which makes me, and many others, rather note much with our Penn then with our Minde, because wee leaue all thes Discourses to the confused Trust of our Memory, because they being not tyed to the Tenor of a Question, as Philosophers vse sometimes Places; the Divine, in telling his Opinion and Reasons in Religion; sometimes the Lawyer, in shewing the Causes and Benefites of Lawes; sometimes a Naturall Philosopher, in settinge downe the Causes of any strange Thing, which the Story bindes him to speake of; but most commonly a Morall Philosopher, either in the Ethick Part, when he setteth forth Vertues or Vices, and the Natures of Passions, or in the Politick, when he doth (as often he doth) meddle sententiousslie with Matters of Estate. Againe, sometimes he giues Precept of Warr, both offensive and defensive; and so lastlie, not professing any Art, as his Matter leades him he deales with all Arts, which because it carrieth the Life of a liuely Example, it is wonderfull what Light it giues to the Arts themselues, so as the greate Ciuillians helpe themselues with the Discourses of the Historians; so doe Soldiours, and even Philosophers, and Astronomers; but that I wish herein, is this, that when yow reade any such Thing, yow straite bring it to his Heade, not only of what Art, but by your Logicall Subdiuisions, to the next Member and Parcell of the Art. And so as in a Table, be it wittie Words, of which *Tacitus* is full; Sentences of which *Liuy*, or Similitudes wherof *Plutarch*; straite to lay it vpp in the right Place of his Storehouse, as either Militarie, or more spetiallie defensive Militarie, or more perticulerlie, defensive by Fortification, and so lay it vpp. So likewise in Politick Matters, and such a little Table yow may easelie make, wherwith I would haue yow ever ioyne the Historicall Part, which is only the Example of some Stratageme, or good Cownsaile, or such like. This write I to yow in greate Hast, of Method without Method, but with more Leysure and Studie (if I doe not finde some Booke that satisfies) I will venter to write more largely of it vnto yow. Mr. *Sauell* will with Ease helpe yow to sett downe such a Table of Remembrance to your selfe, and for your Sake I perceauie he will doe much, and if ever I be able I will deserue it of him; one only Thing, as it comes vnto my Minde, lett me remember you of, that yow consider wherein the Historian excelleth, and that to note, as *Dion Nicæus*, in the Searching the Seacreats of Gouverment; *Tacitus*, in the pithy Opening the Venome of Wickednes, and so of the rest. My Time exceedingly short



short, will suffer me to write no more leisurely; *Stephen* can tell you who stands with me while I am writing. Now (deere Brother) take Delight likewise in the Mathematicalls, Mr. *Sauell* is excellent in them. I thinke you vnderstand the Sphere, if you doe, I care little for any more Astronomie in you. Arithmatick, and Geometry, I would wish you well seene in, so as both in Matter of Number and Measure you might haue a Feeling, and actiue Judgment: I would you did beare the Mechanicall Instruments, wherein the *Dutch* excell. I write this to you as one, that for my selfe haue given over the Delight in the World, but wish to you as much, if not more, then to my selfe. So you can speake and write *Latine*, not barbarously, I never require great Study in *Ciceronianisme*, the cheife Abuse of *Oxford*, *Qui dum verba sectantur, res ipsas negligunt*. My toyfull Books I will send, with Gods Helpe, by *February*, at which Time you shall haue your Mony: And for 200 *l.* a Yeare, assure your selfe, if the Estates of *England* remaine, you shall not faile of it, vse it to your beste Profite. My Lord of *Leicester* sendes you forty Pounds, as I vnderstand by *Stephen*, and promiseth he will continue that Stipend Yearely at the least, then that is aboue Commons; in any Case write largely and dilligently vnto him, for in Troth I haue good Prooffe, that he meanes to be every Way good vnto you; the odd 30 *l.* shall come with the Hundred, or els my Father and I will iarle. Now, sweete Brother, take a Delight to keepe and increase your Musick, you will not beleue what a Want I finde of it in my melancholie Times. At Horsemanship when you exercise it, reade *Crispion Claudio*, and a Book that is called *La Gloria de l' Cauallo*, withall, that you may ioyne the through Contemplation of it with the Exercise; and so shall you profite more in a Moneth, then others in a Yeare, and marke the Bitting, Sadling, and Curing of Horses. I would by the Way your Worship would learne a better Hand, you write worse then I, and I write euell enough; once againe haue a Care of your Dyet, and consequently of your Complexion; remember *Gratior est veniens in pulchro corpore Virtus*. Now, Sir, for Newes, I referr my selfe to this Bearer, he can tell you how idle wee looke on our Neighbours Fyres, and nothing is happened notable at Home, saue only *Drakes* Returne, of which yet I know not the seacreat Poyntes; but about the World he hath bene, and rich he is returned. *Portugall* we say is lost, and to conclude, my Eies are almost closed vpp, overwatched with tedeous Busines. God bless you, sweete Boy, and accomplish the ioyfull Hope I conceiue of you. Once againe commend me to Mr. *Neuell*, Mr. *Sauell*, and honest *Harry White*, and bid him be merry. When you play at Weapons, I would haue you gett thick Cappes and Brasers, and play out your Play lustilie, for indeed Tickes and Daliaces are nothing in earnest, for the Time of the one and the other greatlie differs, and vse aswell the Blow as the Thrust; it is good in it selfe, and besides exerciseth your Breath and Strength, and will make you a strong Man at the Tournej and Barriers. First in any Case practize the single Sword, and then with the Dagger; lett no Day passe without an Hower or two such Exercise; the rest studie, or conferr dilligentlie, and so shall you come Home to my Comfort and Creditt. Lord how I haue babled, once againe farewell deereft Brother.

Your most louing and carefull Brother,

Philip Sidney.

At *Lesterhouse*, this  
18th of *October*, 1580.

Robert, first Earl of Leicester, to his Father, Sir Henry Sydney.

My Duty most humbly remembred to your Lordship,

**T**HOUGH I haue no greate Matter to write to you of, yet hauing the Opportunitie by a Gentleman, the Bearer heerof, I thought it my Part not to let him go into *England* without writing to your Lordship. Yesterday I came hether, where I meane to stay a good Part of this Winter, and if I may, will learne to ride. My Brother, in his last Letter, put it to my Choise, whether I would go next Yeare into *France* or into *Italy*; I haue chosē *Italy*, because it is

V O L. I.

6 E

not



not so farr from hence, and afterwards into *France*; and so will do, if your Lordship shall thinck it good, and will giue me Leauē. My Brother likewise, in his Letter to *Harry White*, wrote that if there were any good Warrs I shoulde go to them, but as yet I haue hard of none. But besides that the Setting out will not stand me in a little, if I go, any Thing like to them; what for Horse and Armor, and my Charges, before I can come where they are. But before any such Wars will be, I hope to heare further from your Lordship. As touching my Iorney from *Nurenberghe* hether; first wee came to *Ingolstadt*, then to *Augsbourg*, *Munchen*, and *Regeusbourg*; lastly hether. After *Christmas* wee thinck to go towards *Vienna*, and there to remaine till it be your Lordships, or my Brothers Will, I shoulde go further; and in the meane Time see so much of *Hungarie*, as I may; and *Cracow*, if the King of *Poland* come thether. And so being forced by the Hast of the Messenger to make an End, I take my Leauē; most humbly beseeching your Lordship of your dayly Blessing. From *Prag*, the First of *November*, 1580.

Your Lordships most humble and obcdient Son,

during Life,

Robert Sidney.

Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

HAVING so convenient a Messenger as this Bearer, my Nephewe *Amyas*, I thought good in a Word or twoe to aduertise you of our Proceadyngs here in Court. Here is at this Present one *Marchemond* come owt of *Fraunce* from Monsieur, whose verie earnestly sollicitethe his Majesties Resolution in the Matter of the Mariage; but what the End thereof will bee God only knowethe. Though his Majestie his selfe seeme to hearken verie muche therovnto, yet when it shall come to a Conclusion, it may peradventure bee as doubtfull as heretofore. In the Northe Matters goe ill forward; for the Erle of *Morton* continewethe styll Prisoner in *Dumbritton*, and Mr. *Randolphe*, though he presse verie earnestly that he may bee brought to his Triall, yet hitherto hath prevayled litle or nothing: For so great Creditt carriethe *D'Awbignie* there, as the Kynge will rather hazard the Love his Majestie hath allwayes borne him, and the Amitie between bothe Crownes, than offend him. His Majestie hath readie vpon the Borders, as well for Defence of the same, as Reliefe of his Partie in *Scotland* (and Need bee) ij M. Footemen and v C. Horsemen. Vpon the xxth of this Present a great Convention of the Nobilitie of that Realme was appoynted in *Edenburgh*, at what Tyme and Place is expected what will bee their Resolution touching their troublesome State, as also their Answer to Mr. *Randolphe*. As wee shall receave further Aduertisements, so I will make your Lordship Partaker of the same. This Bearer having maryed my Neece, and being peradventure so happie as hereafter to lyve and serve vnder your Lordships Governement there; yf it so fall owt I must needs, and so doe most hartely recommend him vnto your Favor, for which as he shall rest greatly bownd, and I behoulding to your Lordship; so I doubt not but you shall fynd him a Gentleman of so good Disposition and Parts, as you will well lyke of. And thus commendying your Lordship to God, I take my Leave. From the Court, the xxiiijth of *Februarie*, 1580.

Your Lordships assured loving Frend to command,

Fra. Walsyngham.

Sir



Sir Philip Sydney to Queen Elizabeth, An. 1580, perswading her not to marry with the Duke of Anjou.

*Most feared and beloved, most sweet and gracious Sovereign,*

**T**O seek out Excuses of this my Boldness, and to arm the Acknowledging of a Fault with Reasons for it, might better shew I knew I did amis, than any Way diminish the Attempt, especially in your Judgment; who being able to discern lively into the Nature of the Thing done, it were Folly to hope, by laying on better Colours, to make it more acceptable. Therefore carrying no other Olive-branch of Intercession, then the Laying of my self at your Feet; nor no other Insinuation, either for Attention or Pardon, but the true vowed Sacrifice of unfeigned Love; I will, in simple and direct Terms (as hoping they shall only come to your mercifull Eyes) set down the Overflowing of my Mind in this most important Matter, importing, as I think, the Continuance of your Safety; and, as I know, the Joys of my Life. And because my Words (I confess shallow, but coming from the deep Well-spring of most loyal Affection) have delivered to your most gracious Ear, what is the general Sum of my travelling Thoughts therein; I will now but only declare, what be the Reasons that make me think, that the Marriage with Monsieur will be unprofitable unto you; then will I answer the Objection of those Fears, which might procure so violent a Refuge.

The Good or Evils that will come by it, must be considered, either according to your Estate or Person. To your Estate, what can be added to the being an absolute born, and accordingly respected, Princess? But, as they say the *Irishmen*, are wont to call over them that die, *They are rich, they are fair, what needed they to dye so cruelly*: Not unfitly of You, endowed with Felicity above all others, a Man might well ask; what makes you in such a Calm to change Course; to so healthfull a Body, to apply so unsavory a Medicine: What can recompence so hazardous an Adventure: Indeed, were it but the Altering of a well maintained, and well approved Trade: For, as in Bodies natural, every sudden Change is full of Peril; so in this Body Politick, whereof you are are the only Head, it is so much the more dangerous, as there are more Humours to receive a hurtful Impression. But Hazards are then most to be regarded, when the Nature of the Patient is fitly composed to occasion them.

The Patient I account your Realm; the Agent Monsieur, and his Design; for neither outward Accidents do much prevail against a true inward Strength; nor doth inward Weakness lightly subvert it self, without being thrust at by some outward Force.

Your inward Force (for as for your Treasures indeed, the Sinews of your Crown, your Majesty doth best and only know) consisteth in your Subjects, generally unexpert in warlike Defence; and as they are divided now into mighty Factions (and Factions bound on the never dying Knot of Religion) the one of them, to whom your happy Government hath granted the free Exercise of the eternal Truth; with this, by the Continuance of Time, by the Multitude of them; by the principal Offices, and Strength they hold; and lastly, by your Dealings both at Home and Abroad against the adverse Party; your State is so entrapped, as it were impossible for you, without excessive Trouble, to pull your self out of the Party so long maintained. For such a Course once taken in Hand, is not much unlike a Ship in a Tempest, which how dangerously soever it may be beaten with Waves, yet is there no Safety or Succour without it: These, therefore, as their Soules live by your happy Government, so are they your chief, if not your sole Strength: These, howsoever the Necessity of humane Life makes them lack, yet can they not look for better Conditions then presently they enjoy: These, how their Hearts will be galled,



if not aliened, when they shall see you take a Husband, a *Frenchman* and a Papist, in whom (howsoever fine Wits may find further Dealings or painted Excuses) the very common People well know this, that he is the Son of a *Jezebel* of our Age: That his Brother made Oblation of his own Sisters Marriage, the easier to make Massacres of our Brethren in Belief: That he himself, contrary to his Promise, and all Gratefulness, having his Liberty and principal Estate by the *Hugonots* Means, did sack *Lacharists*, and utterly spoil them with Fire and Sword. This, I say, even at first Sight, gives Occasion to all, truly religious, to abhor such a Master, and consequently to diminish much of the hopefull Love, they have long held to you.

The other Faction, most rightly indeed, to be called a Faction, is the Papists; Men, whose Spirits are full of Anguish, some being infested by others, whom they accounted damnable; some having their Ambition stopped, because they are not in the Way of Advancement; some in Prison and Disgrace; some whose best Friends are banished Practisers; many thinking you are an Usurper; many thinking also you had disannulled your Right, because of the Popes Excommunication; all burthened with the Weight of their Conscience; Men of great Numbers, of great Riches (because the Affaires of State have not lain on them) of united Minds (as all Men that deem themselves oppressed naturally are) With these, I would willingly join all discontented Persons, such as Want and Disgrace keep lower than they have set their Hearts; such as have resolved what to look for at your Hands; such as *Cæsar* said, *Quibus opus est bello civili*, and are of his Mind, *malo in acie, quam in foro cadere*. These be Men so much the more to be doubted, because, as they do embrace all Estates; so are they commonly of the bravest and wakefullest Sort; and that know the Advantage of the World most. This double Rank of People, how their Minds have stood, the Northern Rebellion, and infinite other Practises, have well taught you; which, if it be said, it did not prevail, that is true indeed; for if they had prevailed, it were too late now to deliberate. But, at this present, they want nothing so much as a Head, who, in Effect, needs not but to receive their Instructions; since they may do Mischief only with his Countenance. Let the *Singiniam* in *Henry the Fourth's* Time, *Perkin Warbeck* in your Grandfathers; but of all the most lively and proper, is that of *Lewis* the *French Kings* Son, in *Henry the Third's* Time; who having at all no Shew of Title, yet did he cause the Nobility, and more, to swear direct Fealty and Vassalage; and they delivered the strongest Holds unto him. I say, let these be sufficient to prove, that Occasion gives Mindes and Scope to stranger Things, than ever would have been imagined. If then the affectionate Side, have their Affections weakned, and the Discontented have a Gap to utter their Discontent; I think it will seem an ill Preparative for the Patient (I mean your Estate) to a great Sicknes.

Now the Agent Party, which is Monsieur: Whether he be not apt to work on the Disadvantage of your Estate, he is to be judged by his Will and Power; his Will to be as full of light Ambition, as is possible; besides the *French* Disposition, and his own Education; his inconstant Temper against his Brother; his Thrusting himself into the *Low Country* Matters; his sometimes Seeking the King of *Spains* Daughter; sometimes your Majesty; are evident Testimonies of his being carried away with every Wind of Hope; taught to love Greatness any Way gotten; and having for the Motioners and Ministers of the Mind, only such young Men, as have shewed they think evil Contentment a Ground of any Rebellion, who have seen no Commonwealth, but in Faction; and divers of which have defiled their Hands in odious Murthers: With such Fancies and Favourites, what is to be hoped for; or that he will contain himself within the Limits of your Conditions; since, in Truth, it were strange, that he that cannot be contented to be the second Person in *France*, and Heir apparent, should be content to come to be a second Person, where he should pretend



pretend no Way to Sovereignty. His Power, I imagine, is not to be despised, since he is come into a Country, where the Way of evil Doing will be presented unto him; where there needs nothing but a Head, to draw together all the ill-affected Members: Himself a Prince of great Revenues, of the most popular Nation of the World, full of Souldiery, and such as are used to serve without Pay, so as they may have Shew of Spoil; and, without Question, shall have his Brother ready to help him, as well for old Revenge, as to divert him from troubling *France*, and to deliver his own Country from evil Humours. Neither is King *Philips* Marriage here any Example; since then it was between two of one Religion, so that only he in *England*, stood only upon her Strength, and had Abroad King *Henry* of *France*, ready to impeach any Enterprize he should make for his Greatness that Way. And, yet, what Events Time would have brought forth of that Marriage, your most blessed Reign hath made vain all such Considerations. But Things holding in present State, I think I may easily conclude, that your Country as well by long Peace, and Fruits of Peace, as by the Poison of Division, wherewith the Faithfull shall by this Meanes be wounded, and the contrary enabled, made fit to receive Hurt; and Monsieur being every Way likely to use the Occasions to hurt, there can almost happen no worldly Thing of more eminent Danger to your Estate Royal. And as to your Person, in the Scale of your Happiness, what Good there may come by it, to ballance with the Loss of so honourable a Constancy; truly, yet I perceive not. I will not shew so much Malice, as to object the universal Doubt, the *Races* Unfaithfulness; neither will I lay to his Charge the Ague-like Manner of Proceedings, sometimes hot and sometimes cold, in the Time of Pursuit; which always rightly is most fervent: And I will temper my Speeches from any other unreverend Disgracings of him, in particular; (though they might be never so true) this only will I say, that if he do come hither, he must live here in far less Reputation than his Mind will well brook, having no other Royalty to countenance himself with; or else you must deliver him the Keys of your Kingdom, and live at his Discretion; or, lastly, he must be seperate himself, with more Dishonour, and further Disuniting of Heart, than ever before. Often have I heard you, with Protestation, say, no private Pleasure, nor Self-affection, could lead you to it; but if it be both unprofitable for your Kingdom, and unpleasant to you, certainly it were a dear Purchase of Repentance; nothing can it add unto you, but the Bliss of Children, which, I confess, were a most unspeakable Comfort; but yet no more appertaining unto him, than to any other, to whom the Height of all good Haps, were allotted to be your Husband; and therefore I may assuredly affirm, that what Good soever can follow Marriage, is no more his than any Bodies; but the Evils and Dangers are peculiarly annexed to his Person, and Condition. For, as for the Enriching of your Country with Treasure, which either he hath not, or hath otherwise bestowed it; or the Staying of your Servants Minds with new Expectations and Liberality, which is more dangerous than fruitfull; or the Easing of your Majesty of Cares, which is as much as to say, as the Easing of you to be Queen and Sovereign: I think every one perceives this Way to be full of Hurt, or void of Help. Now resteth to consider, what be the Motives of this sudden Change, as I have heard you in most sweet Words deliver; Fear of standing alone, in Respect of foreign Dealings; and in them, from whom you should have Respect, doubt of Contempt. Truly, Standing alone, with good Foresight of Government, both in Peace and Warlike Defence, is the honourablest Thing that can be, to a well established Monarchy; those Buildings being ever most strongly durable, which lean to none other, but remain from their own Foundation.

So yet in the Particulars of your Estate at present, I will not altogether deny that a true *Massinissa*, were fit to countermine the Enterprize of mighty



*Carthage*: But how this general Truth, can be applied to Monsieur; in Truth I perceive not. The Wisest that have given best Rules, where surest Leagues are made, have said, that it must be between such as either vehement Desire of a 3d Thing, or as vehement Fear, doth knit their Minds together. Desire is counted the weaker Bond, but yet that bound so many Princes to the *Holy Land*. It united that invincible King *Henry V*, and that good Duke of *Burgundy*; the one desiring to win the Crown of *France* from the *Dauphin*, the other desiring to revenge his Fathers Murther upon the *Dauphin*; which both tended to one. That coupled *Lewis XII*, and *Ferdinando* of *Spain* to the Conquest of *Naples*. Of Fear, there are innumerable Examples: Monsieurs Desires, and yours, how they shall meet in publick Matters, I think no Oracle can tell; for as the Geomatricians say, that Parallels, because they maintain divers Lines, can never join: So truly, two, having in the Beginning contrary Principles, to bring forth one Doctrine, must be some Miracle. He of the *Romish* Religion; and if he be a Man, must needs have that manlike Property, to desire that all Men be of his Mind: You the Erector and Defender of the contrary, and the only Sun that dasleth their Eyes: He *French*, and desiring to make *France* great: Your Majesty *English*, and desiring nothing less than that *France* should not grow great: He both by own Fancy and his youthfull Governors, embracing all ambitious Hopes; having *Alexanders* Image in his Head, but, perhaps, evil painted: Your Majesty with excellent Virtue, taught what you should hope, and by no less Wisdom, what you may Hope; with a Council renowned over all *Christendom*, for their well-temperd Minds, having set the utmost of their Ambition in your Favour, and the Study of their Souls, in your Safety.

Fear hath as little Shew of outward Appearance, as Reason, to match you together; for in this Estate he is in, whom should he fear, his Brother; alas! his Brother is afraid, since the King of *Navar* is to step into his Place. Neither can his Brother be the safer by his Fall, but he may be the greater by his Brothers; whereto, whether you will be an Accessary, you are to determine. The King of *Spain* certainly cannot make Warr upon him, but it must be upon all the Crown of *France*, which is no Likelyhood he will do: Well may Monsieur (as he hath done) seek to enlarge the Bounds of *France* upon this State; which likewise, whether it be safe for you to be a Countenance to, any other Way, may be seen: So that if neither Desire nor Fear be such in him, as are to bind any publick Fastness, it may be said, that the only Fortres of this your Marriage, is of his private Affection; a Thing too incident to the Person, laying it up in such Knots.

The other Objection of Contempt in the Subjects: I assure your Majesty, if I had heard it proceed out of your Mouth, which of all other I do most dearly reverence, it would as soon (considering the Perfections of Body and Mind, have set all Mens Eyes by the Height of your Estate) have come to the Possibility of my Imagination, if one should have told me on the contrary Side, that the greatest Princess of the World, should envy the State of some poor deformed Pilgrim. What is there, either within you or without you, that can possibly fall into the Danger of Contempt, to whom Fortunes are tyed by so long Descent of your Royal Ancestors? But our Minds rejoyce with the Experience of your inward Virtues, and our Eyes are delighted with the Sight of you. But because your own Eyes cannot see yourself, neither can there be in the World any Example fit to blase you by, I beseech you vouchsafe to weigh the Grounds thereof. The naturall Causes are Length of Government, and Uncertainty of Succession: The Effects, as you term them, appear by cherishing some abominable Speeches, which some hellish Minds have uttered. The longer a Prince reigneth, it is certain the more he is esteemed; there is no Man ever was weary of well-being. And Good encreased to Good, maketh the same Good, both greater and stronger; for it useth Men to know no other Cares, when either Men are born in the Time, and so never  
saw



saw other; or have spent much of their flourishing Time, and so have no Joy to seek other; in evil Princes, Abuse growing upon Abuse, according to the Nature of Evil; with the Encrease of Time, ruins it self. But in so rare a Government, where Neighbours Fires give us Light to see our Quietness, where nothing wants that true Administration of Justice brings forth; certainly the Length of Time, rather breeds a Mind to think there is no other Life, but in it, than that there is any Tedioufness in so fruitfull a Government. Examples of good Princes do ever confirm this, who the longer they lived, the deeper they sunk into their Subjects Hearts. Neither will I trouble you with Examples, being so many and manifest. Look into your own Estate, how willingly they grant, and how dutifully they pay such Subsidies, as you demand of them: How they are no less troublesome to your Majesty in certain Requests, than they were in the Beginning of your Reign; and your Majesty shall find you have a People more than ever devoted to you.

As for the Uncertainty of Succession, although for mine own Part I have cast the utmost Anchor of my Hope; yet for *England's* Sake, I would not say any Thing against such Determination; but that uncertain Good should bring a Contempt to a certain Good, I think it is beyond all Reach of Reason; nay because if there were no other Cause (as there are infinite) common Reason and Profit would teach us to hold that Jewel dear, the Loss of which would bring us to we know not what; which likewise is to be said of your Majesties Speech of the Rising Sun; a Speech first used by *Sylla* to *Pompey*, in *Rome*, as then a popular City, where indeed Men were to rise and fall, according to the Flourish and Breath of a many headed Confusion. But in so lineal a Monarchy, where ever the Infants suck the Love of their rightfull Prince, who would leave the Beams of so fair a Sun, for the dreadfull Expectation of a divided Company of Stars: Virtue and Justice are the only Bonds of Peoples Love; and as for that Point, many Princes have lost their Crowns, whose own Children were manifest Successors; and some that had their own Children used as Instruments of their Ruin; not that I deny the Bliss of Children, but only to shew Religion and Equity to be of themselves sufficient Stays. Neither is the Love born in the Queen your Sisters Days, any Contradiction hereunto; for she was the Oppressor of that Religion, which lived in many Mens Hearts, and whereof you were known to be the Fauvorer; by her Loss was the most excellent Prince in the World to succeed; by your Loss, all Blindness light upon him, that sees not our Misery. Lastly, and most properly for this Purpose, she had made an odious Marriage with a Stranger (which is now in Question whether your Majestie shall do or no) so that if your Subjects do at this Time look for any Afterchance, it is but as the Pilot doth to the Ship-boat, if his Ship should perish; driven by Extremity to the one, but as long as he can with his Life, tending the other. And this I say, not only for the lively Parts that be in you; but even for their own Sakes, for they must needs see what Tempests threaten them.

The last Proof in this Contempt, should be the venomous Matter, certain Men imposthum'd with Wickedness should utter against you. Certainly not to be evil spoken of, neither *Christs* Holiness, nor *Cæsar's* Might, could ever prevent or warrant; there being for that no other Rule than so to do, as that they may not justly say Evil of you; which whether your Majesty have not done, I leave it in you, to the Sincereness of your own Conscience, and Wisdom of your Judgment in the World, to your most manifest Fruits and Fame throughout *Europe*. *Augustus* was told, that Men speake of him much Hurt: *It is no Matter*, said he, *so long as they cannot do much Hurt*. And lastly *Charles V*, to one that told him, *Les Hollandois parlent mal; mais ilz patient bien*, answered he. I might make a scholar-like Reckoning of many such Examples; it sufficeth that these great Princes knew well enough upon what Way they flew, and cared little for the Barking of a few Currs: And truly in the Behalf of your Subjects, I durst with

my



my Blood answer it, that there was never Monarch held in more precious Reckoning of her People ; and before God how can it be otherwise ? For mine own Part, when I hear some lost Wretch hath defiled such a Name with his Mouth, I consider the right Name of Blasphemy, whose unbridled Soul doth delight to deprave that, which is accounted generally most high and holy. No, no, most excellent Lady, do not raze out the Impression you have made in such a Multitude of Hearts ; and let not the Schum of such vile Minds, bear any Witness against your Subjects Devotions : Which to proceed one Point further, if it were otherwise, could little be helped, but rather nourished, and in Effect began by this. The only Meanes of avoiding Contempt, are Love and Fear ; Love, as you have by divers Meanes sent into the Depth of their Souls ; so if any Thing can stain so true a Form, it must be the Trimming your self, not in your own Likeness, but in new Colours unto them ; their Fear by him cannot be encreased, without the Apperaunce of *Frenche* Forces, the manifest Death of your Estate ; but well may it against him, bear that Face, which (as the tragick *Seneca* saith) *Metus in authorem redit*, as because both in Will and Power, he is like enough to do Harm. Since then it is dangerous for your State, as well because by inward Weakness (principally caused by Division) it is fit to receive Harm ; since to your Person it can be no Way comfortable, you not desiring Marriage ; and neither to Person nor Estate, he is to bring any more Good than any Body ; but more Evil he may, since the Causes that should drive you to this, are either Fears of that which cannot happen, or by this Meanes cannot be prevented : I do with most humble Heart say unto your Majestie (having assayed this dangerous Help) for your Standing alone, you must take it for a singular Honour God hath done you, to be indeed the only Protector of his Church ; and yet in worldly Respects your Kingdom very sufficient so to do, if you make that Religion, upon which you stand, to carry the only Strength, and have Abroad those that still maintain the same Course ; who as long as they may be kept from utter Falling, your Majesty is sure enough from your mightiest Enemies. As for this Man, as long as he is but *Monsieur* in Might, and a Papist in Profession, he neither can, nor will, greatly shield you ; and if he get once to be King, his Defence will be like *Ajax's* Shield, which rather weighed them down, than defended those that bare it. Against Contempt, if there be any, which I will never believe, let your excellent Virtues of Piety, Justice, and Liberality, daily, if it be possible, more and more shine. Let such particular Actions be found out (which be easy as I think to be done) by which you may gratify all the Hearts of your People : Let those in whom you find Trust, and to whom you have comitted Trust, in your weighty Affairs, be held up in the Eyes of your Subjects : *Lastly*, doing as you do, you shall be as you be, the Example of Princes, the Ornament of this Age, and the most excellent Fruit of your Progenitors, and the perfect Mirror of your Posterity.

*Your Majesties faythfull, humble,*

*and obedient Subject,*

P. Sydney.

Sir



*Sir Philip Sidney to Edmund Molyneux, Esq;*

**I** Pray yow, for my Sake, yow will not make yowr self an Instrument to crosse my Cousin *Fowkes* [*Grevill*] Tytle in any Part, or Construction of his Letters Patentes. It will turne to other Boddies Good, and to hurte him willingly weare a foolish Discourteisy. I pray yow, as yow make Accownt of me, lett me be sure yow will deale heerein according to my Request, and so I leaue yow to God. At *Bainards Castell*, this 10th of *Aprill*, 1581.

*Your louing Frend,*

Philipp Sidney.

*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**A**BOWT the End of *Februarie* last, I writt to your Lordship on the Behalfe of my Cousen *Foulke Grievell*, for the Proffitts of the Office fallen vnto him there in the Merches, by Mr. *Dudleys* Death. At that Tyme also, I writt to Mr. *Fox*, frendly advising him to suffer my Cousen quietly to enioy the sayd Office, with all such Commodities as Mr. *Dudley* had, which no Doubt was ment vnto him by hir Majestie; and, I thincke, to bee caried away by sufficient Words of his Patent. Howebeit, as I vnderstand by your Lordships Lettre, and more plainly by Mr. *Fox* him self, hee intendeth to stand in Lawe with my Cousen for the Proffitts which Mr. *Dudley* had by the late Increase of Fees in everie Proesse passing the Signett. Yf Mr. *Dudley*, serving but a Noble Man, could enioy that Encrease of Fees, much more, I hope, my Cousen shall, being hir Majesties Servant, and a Gentleman of whome shee maketh, as your Lordship doth knowe, some good Accompt. I knowe your Lordships good Affection towards my Cousen, and therefore doubt not, but you have allreadie, and will further doe what you may with Mr. *Foxe*, to yeald to that is Reason without Lawe, which if hee will not, but that Lawe must needes be commenced between them, surely the same shall bee prosecuted in such effectuall Sort, as Mr. *Fox*, in the End, will have small Cawse to reioice of the Issue therof: Whereas now, by yealding to that is required, hee may avoyd Trouble, and purchase to him self, not only Assurance of the good Love of my selfe, but also of all other my Cousen *Grievells* Friends, which are manie, and of great Callyng, and may stead Mr. *Fox*, and his, in Matters possible of greater Importance than this Thing now in Question is. Much to this Effect I have now written to Mr. *Fox*, in whome, if you shall fynd no present Disposition to yeald to my Request, then I wyshe it would please your Lordship to sequester the Proffitts in Controversie between them (as in former Lettres was required) vntill this Cawse bee determined by Lawe, or otherwise. And thus, with my hartiest Commendations to your good Lordship, I take my Leave. From the Court, the xith of *Aprill*, 1581.

*Your Lordships assured loving Frend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Edmund Molyneux, Esq; to Sir Philip Sidney.*

*S I R,*

**I** Have receaved your Lettres, and doe acknowledge the same as a speciall Note of your lovinge Favour, that it wold please you to write vnto me; and what may lye in me in any Sorte to doe, you shall not need to requier me: But you have (yf it may soe lyke you) full Power and good Warrant to commaund me. Sir, yt semethe by your said Lettres, that you have beene informed, that I either have already, or in some Sorte pretend hereafter, to be



an Adversarie to Mr. *Grivell* in his Sute heere; and that I make not that good Accounte of the Validitie and Goodnes of his Patent, as in Reason and countervailing Dealinge, I should doe, somewhat, as you gather, to his Disadvantage, beinge a Matter, as you saye, of noe Benefite to my selfe; which, yf I should foe forgett my selfe (yf it were only in Respect that you esteeme Mr. *Gryvell* as your deere and entier Friend) I should justlie condemne my selfe of vnadvised and twoe great inconsiderat Dealinge. And therefore I pray you, and foe effectuallye desyre him to hold a better Opinion of me, till you have further Proove howe I doe deale, and have dealt, in the Cause from the Beginninge. And as I have neither Will nor Power to hurt in this Case if I wolde, havinge onlie to walke in the Pathe I am directed: So yf I had either, beinge otherwise directed by you, I wold not. And therefore beseeche you, what soever Course be held in the Matter, lay noe further Fault in me, then I justlie deserve: For assure your selfe, you and yours have, and ever shall have, that vndoubted Interest in me, as I will obey your Commaundement, as farre as in Dewtie and Credit I may, which I crave yt maye lyke you to accept. And evenso I take my Leave. From *Salloppe*, the xxviijth of *Aprill*, 1581.

*Yours ever in all to be comaunded*

*as your obedient Servant,*

E. Molyneux.

*The King of Portugal to Sir Philip Sydney, translated from the Original.*

*Illustrious Nephew Philip Sidney,*

I Write this not only to inclose and forward to you Captain *Allen's* Letters, but also to desyre you to write to me often, and preserve me in your Friendship. My Affairs (praised be God) go on extreemly well. The Fleet is ready to sail fully manned and well equipt, and I do expect to receive a considerable Quantity of Stores or Ammunitions by the Ships from *Flanders*, in order to equip a second Expedition, on Board which I intend to go, with about six or seven thousand Men; which Number is getting ready by three or four Friends, who are willing to risque the same Fate with me; these are Monsieur *De Babues*, Monsieur *de St. Luc*, Monsieur *de Sordiac*, and Monsieur *de Belleville* (that is, if they can get Leave for that Purpose) there will come also Count *Roxasocar*, who is now in *Flanders*. Besides the abovenamed, there are other Gentlemen that will go in the best Manner they can: This is to be understood, if they continue in the same Mind, and do not retract: But I am of Opinion they will not, or at least the four above named; and though many more should go, if I did not see you in the Company, I shall say, *Numerum non habet illa suum*.

I have received good News from *Portugal*, both in Regard to the Natives, as well as to *Spaniards*; the former wishing my Presence, and the latter desiring to return into their own Country. The King of *France* assists me sufficiently, his Mother still better, the States of *Flanders* very well; and only *Dominga* keeps silent, but she is not to be blamed, considering her Husband's Affairs. I remain in Health, God grant you the same, according to my Wishes. *Tunis*, the Third of *May*, 1581.

*Your greatest Friend,*

The King.

Sir



*Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**I** Vnderstand, that vppon the Recommendation of my Cousin *Greuills* Matter, concerning his Office in the Marches of *Wales*, and grauntid vnto him by her Majestie, the whole Cause was by your Lordship, and the rest of the Counsell, referred to the Iudgment and Ordering of Sir *Thomas Leighton*, and Mr. *Philip Sydney*; who, according to the Authoritie geuen them in that Behalf, haue proceedid to the Setting downe of an Awarde betwin the Partyes, which they send downe vnto your Lordship, and the rest of the Counsell. There resteth nowe, that I do put your Lordship in Mynd, that yt will please youe to haue a Care, and to further with your Authoritye, that the Order set downe for the Putting of the said Arbitrators Awarde in Execucion, maie duly be accomplished and perfourmid. I neede not to alleadge any more Reasons vnto your Lordship in the Gentlemans Behalf, then I thincke youe do already knowe, that maie moue youe to fauor him in the Right of his Cause; and vppon so reasonable a Request for his quiet Enioyinge the Benefitt of her Majesties Liberalitie and good Meaning towards him, whereof, I doubt not, but that youe haue that Regarde that aperteyneth. I will only tell your Lordship, that in Respect of th'Accompt I make of the Gentleman, I shall accept any Fauor yt shall please youe to extend towards him herein for my Sake, and vppon this my Recommendation as don to me self, whom youe shall not fynd vnthanckfull for the same, in any Thing wherein I maie requite yt; besides that, youe shall thereby greatlie bind him vnto youe, to do you any Seruis he may. And so I commit your Lordship to God. At *Barnellms*, the xxjth of June, 1581.

*Your Lordships assured Frend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

*Certain speciall Notes to be imparted to Mr. Philippe Sidney, in the Hand-writing of Edm. Molineux, Esq; and signed by Sir Henry Sydney, 27 April, 1582.*

1. **F**IRST, that the principall and chiefe Cause that moveth him to fancie, or have any Likeinge to take the Charge of the Governement of *Irlande* (if the same be offered him) is the Respect he beareth to him. So that if he will assuredlie promesse him to goe with him thither, and withall will put on a determinate Minde to remaine and continew ther after him, and to succede him in the Governement (if it may so like her Majestie to allowe him) he will then yeld his Consent to goe; otherwaie, he will not leave his quiet and contented Lief at Hoome, consideringe his Yeares, and the Defectes of Nature, that comonly accompaynie Age, to enter into so toilsomme a Place, bothe of Bodie and Minde, but only to leave somme Memorie and worthie Marke to his Posteritie.

2. Next, that if her Majestie doe not conceive and iudge that he hathe done as good Service (if not better) as any other Man hathe done, either afore his Tyme, or since his Tyme, or that any other Man can doe. But that her Majestie will stande on the Termes with him, that he hathe beene a charge-owle and wastfull Servant, the Place (as he supposethe) is not fitt for him to accept with that Disgrace.

3. Then if his former Service be allowed, he is of Opinion, that it can not carrie dew Countenance of Credit, withowt some Badge of publique Favour be annexed: As Rewarde by Titell of Nobilitation, both ther, and heare; together with somme Lande or Fee Farme (as may best stande with her Majesties



sties Pleasure to bestowe vpon him) that it may be knowen, and made apparant to the World, that her Majestie hathe had graciowse Consideracion of his Service past, for his better Encouragement hereafter.

4. That if it fall out, that he be sent into *Irlande*, he wishe the rather to carrie the Titell of Liewtenant, then Deputie.

H. Sydney.

*Sir Henry Sydney to Mr. Sackford, Master of the Requests.*

*After my moste hartye Comeandaciones vnto you (moste louinge Cozene)*

**S**MALE Favors at others Handes in that Office, as yett haue I founde, yett hope I (my good Cozene) to taste summe better Frendshippe at your Handes; and therefore, as Conscyence bynedethe me to favor the Innocente, as alsoe to see the Deserver have Punyshement, doe nowe make my self the boulder with you, to crave your Helpe one the Behaulf of twoe poore Menne, whoe are indycted of Manslaughtor, for the supposed Kyllinge of a verye commone Dronckarde: And this is the Totall of my Desier, that you will receue the Bill of my Servaunte *Edmunde Mulleneuxe*, and to preferre the same vnto the Quenes Majestie for them. In Truethe I examyned the Matter, and canne fynde noe Matter to be layed to their Chardge but Troble: Therefore once againe I praye you forther their Cause, the rather at my Requeste; and what you shall doe heryn, I shall take the same, as a Thinge donne to my self. And foe hauing noe other Matter to wrytte to you of, I bydd you Farewell. From the Cyttye of *Hereforde*, the vjth of *June*, 1582.

*Your assured louinge Cozene,*

Good Cosyn, freynd me effectually in thys  
small Matter, and I wyll requyte yt.

H. Sydney.

*Sir Philip Sydney to Edm. Molyneux, Esq;*

*Mollineaux,*

**I** pray thee write to me diligently. I woult yow came down your self. Solicitt my Lord Treasurer, and Mr. Vice Chamberlain for my beeing of the Cownceill. I woult fain bring in my Cofin *Conningesby* if it wear possible: Yow shall do me much Pleasur to labour it. Farewell, even very well, for so I wish you. From *Hereford*, this 23d of *Juli*, 1582.

*Your louing Frend,*

Philip Sidney.

*Robert Sidney (after Earl of Leicester) to Edm. Molyneux.*

*Good Mr. Mullinax,*

**I** Pray yow sett doune in Writing the Reasons why her Maiestie shoulde erect the Office I sue for. Yow must doe it in good Terms, for it is to be shewed to her Maiestie. I pray yow lett me heare quickly from yow, for the Queene will be spoken to, very shortly about it. Farewell. Court, this *Sonday*, 1582.

*Yours assuredly,*

Robert Sidney.

William



William Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer of England, to Sir Henry Sydney, concerning the Queens House at Otford.

*After my very hartie Commendacions to your Lordship,*  
**I** Haue of late receved Certificat from Mr. Bosseuyle, and Mr. Lambard, of the Decaies that are at hir Majesties Howse at Otford, and the Spoyles that have bene made there, through the Default of such as having Charge thereof, vnder your Lordship, shold have had better Regard therevnto. The Charges whereof for the Howse, are by them esteemed to xx l. and for the Pale being xij Rods, and the Making of a new Gate, v l. amounting in the Whole to xxv l. And forasmuch as I vnderstand, the same do require present Repaire; and that your Lordship hath the Collection of certein hir Majesties Revenues belonging to that Howse, your Lordship maie geve Order for the present Doing thereof. For the which, this my Lettre, together with a Certificat of the Employment, shall be sufficient Warrant to the Auditor, to geve Allowaunce thereof, not exceeding the said Some of xxv l. vppon the next Accompt to be made of that Revenue. After which Reparacions so done, it shall be well that some speciall Charge were geven for the Preservation thereof from the lyke Spoyles hereafter; for that such voluntary Wastes are to be repayed by your Lordship, having Custodie of the Howse, as I think my self ought to be, where I haue lyke Charge, if any such Spoyles shold happen to be committed. Whereof I nothing doubt but your Lordship will haue Care accordingly. And so I bidd your good Lordship right hartely Farewell. From my Howse at Westminster, this xxvjth of June, 1583.

*Your Lordships assured loving Frend,*

W. Burghley.

Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester to William Lord Burghley Lord High Treasurer.

*My good Lord,*

**H**ER Majestie willed me to delyver a Message to my Lord Chancelor and you, and I thought yt had ben a *Starr Chamber* Day, and coming this Morning to my Lords House I told him of yt and prayd his Lordship to impart yt to you also: Hit concerned the Staplers.

I wold also my self have gladly spoke with your Lordship, but my Busines was such as I could not stey, and I know your Lordship was to be occupied this Forenone. Hit was to lett you se how true ye late Informations to her Majestie was, that I procured xxx M Clothes Yerely for ye Merchants; and had I cannot tell how many thousand Pounds for yt. But as I was assured of the contrary, so I partly told your Lordship ye other Day, how untrew yt was. For Confirmation whereof, I doe send your Lordship the Counterparte of all that passed betwene me and the Merchants. And yet I se ther ys sett down a 1000 l. more then ever I had. I send yt to your Lordship, that hit may please you that her Majestie may know the Informacion was very false, yf Occasions may serve you. And I partly now know, who informyd hit. Truly as God lyveth, I never made Sute for them, nor ever had Penny nor Farthing of them for yt. And you shall now see that I was forst to condytion with them; that my iiii score M Clothes should be over and beside xxx M that hir Majestie had, and might have Power to grant them.

*Lastly,* I wold have intreated your Lordship to graunt me, during my Lady Warwyks Lunacye, the Keping and Mastershipp of the Game of the Chase of Malvern, which I hear ys almost destroyed. Hit lyeth not farr from a Lord-

<sup>a</sup> Letter 38, Not. 161. C. 8. in Bibl. Harley.



ship, a lytle Howse I have. I wold be carefull of the Game, and the rather, being once my Fathers, and the auncyent Inherytance of the Erles of *Warwick*. Yf yt please you to graunt yt me, that your Lordship wyll take Order for yt presently. Ther ys no Boddy now lookes to yt, and Mr. *Vmpton* left yt out of his Porcyon, for thir ys nothing but Pleasur of the Game to yt. I am busye about the Forrest Causes, <sup>b</sup> agenst Fryday Morning at *Waltham*. And so byd your Lordshipp Farewell; in some Hast this *Tuesday* Morning.

Your Lordships assured Frend

July 8, 1584.

R. Leycester.

<sup>c</sup> Sir Philip Sidney to Sir Edward Stafford.

S I R,

THE Caws of my sending at this Tyme, this Bearer Mr. *Burnam* will tell yow. Onely lett me salute yow in the kyndest Manner that one nere Frend can do an other.

I would gladli know how yow and your noble Lady do, and what yow do in this Absence of the Kinges.

We are heer all *Solito*. Me thinkes yow shoold do well to begyn betymes to demand something of her Majesti as might be found fitt for yow. And lett Folkes chafe as well when yow ask, as when yow do not. Her Majesti seemes affected to deal in the *Low Contrey* Matters, but I think nothing will com of it. We are haulf perswaded to enter into the Journey of Sir *Humphry Gilbert* very eagerli; whereunto your Mr. *Hackluit* hath served for a very good Trumpet.

I can wryte no more, but that I pray for your long and happy Life. And so I commit yow both to the Giver of it. At Court this 21th of *July* 1584.

Yours assuredli

Superscribed

Philip Sidney.

To the right honorable *Edward Stafford* Knight, Embassadour for her Majestie in the Court of *France*.

Sir William Borlas <sup>d</sup> to Sir Robert Sydney Lord Governor of *Flushing*.

My very good Lorde,

I Haue written divers Lettres to your Lordship to Thende that yow woulde establishe your Garrisonne, and that I maie knowe what Companies yow shall kepe here continually, and that your Lordship woulde set downe the Names of those Companies which must remayne as cavtionary Companies. For I assure your Lordshipp I am daily troubled with Lettres, from the States, and Mr. *Bodeley*, to have owt some of theis olde Companies that be here for the present Service that they have in Hande, and to receave in their Places some of the Companies that be come out of *Portingall*, which I have refused to doe, for that I have no Order therefore from your Lordship. Mr. *Gilpin* came hether for no other Purpose, but onely to deale with me about it.

I have accordinge to my Lords of the Cownsell's Letter and your Lordships, placed Captene *Smith*; and I assuer your Lordship if Mr. *Champernon's* Companie had bene of any Strength, or armed, I had receaved him into this Garri-

<sup>b</sup> Being Lord Chief Justice in *Eyre*.

Office for Papers and Records of State, Ex Origin.

<sup>c</sup> *Gallia* Letters from 1584, to 1589 in his Majestys Office for Papers and Records of State, Ex Origin. <sup>d</sup> This Sir *William Borlas*, was Leivtenant Governor of *Flushing*, and was a Commander of Note, during the whole War in the *Low Countries*, where he greatly distinguished himself. From this Sir *William Borlase*, descended Sir *John Borlase* of *Buckmer* in *Buckinghamshire*, Bart, whose 2d Son *William Borlas* of *Great Marlow* in the same County, Esq. left Issue *Alicia* one of his Coheirs, Mother to the Right Honourable *John Wallop*, the present Earl of *Portsmouth*.



sonne, and sent *Smith* presently owt into the Feilde ; but there is no Time paste : By this Time I thinke Mr. *Champernon's* Companie is in better Order, for there are Men come over to fill it. I can soone have him from *Bergen* hether, if it be your Lordships Pleasure ; and sende owt any other Companie that your Lordship shall apointe.

Theis newe Orders are arrived here, and accordinge to your Lordships Lettre, they have mustered the Garrifonne, but I assure you, it is impossible to be kept, there are so many of Mr. *Digges* his Articles, suche as were never sene nor hearde of amongst martiall Men. All his Articles are to be concluded in onely three ; but the one of them I see no Meanes howe it can be kept.

The *First* of the three is to muster streightly.

The *Seconde* is to punishe either Captaine or Soldier, that dothe deceave the Queene, severely.

The *Thirde* is to paie well, if it may be.

And if theis three be well observed, wee shall have no Neede of Mr. *Diggs* his fine Heade amongst Souldiers ; and her Majestie shalbe a great Deale better served. Besides there must Choise be made of suche Men to be Comissaries, as are both honest, and have a Care to serve their Prince truly, and not to sende such Men as wilbe corrupted by anie Captaine. For he that must come to take such a Muster as this is, beinge a generall Muster of all her Majesties Forces, must be a Man of some Countenance and one of Creditt.

I sende your Lordship the Names of all the Companes in this Garrifonne, because if I shoulde be commaunded to sende out any Companie, your Lordship maie name him, or such as yow will have sent owt, and also to name whome yow will have come in their Places.

I am very sory to heare of the Death of my very good Freinde Captene *Henry White*, in whome I knowe your Lordship hath lost a very good Servaunt : I woulde wishe your Lordship to take some Care whom yow admit into the Place which yow had appointed for him, for that he had neede be a Man of some Governement that shall occupie that Roome.

Thus with my humble Dutie to your Lordship, I leave yow to the Tuition of Almightye God. *Vlshinge* this xvth of September, 1584.

*Your Lordships most assured to comaunde,*

*Wylliam Borlas.*

*Geo. Gilpin, Esq; Resident at the Hague, to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My very good Lorde,*

**T**Hopportunitie of this Bearer I would not overslippe, though otherwise vnfurnished of Matter worth the troubling you, onely that a few Dayes past I sent to Sir *William Brown* a Packet, to be conveyed by the first safely to your Lordship, coming from Monsieur *Aldegonde*, whose Desyre was such, and will, as your Leasure shall permit, expecte an Aunswere ; and I also no lesse gladde to heare of your Lordships Health, with whatsoeuer els you shall please to bestowe vppon me. Here we have not any Thing, all restinge in Tearmes, as by my last, expectinge to heare of the Deputies Successe in *Fraunce*, whose Lettres from *Angiers*, conteyned no other then of their Audience and gracious Vsuage by the Kinge, whose Inclination they fownd not such to any Peace, but might be diuerted, yf he could obteyne the desyred Helpe, to the better Redresse of his Estate, and Ease of those complayne of the Miseries the Warre hath brought with yt. Mr. Secretary they had seene and conferred with, but fownd not his Commission or Order, other then to heare and see how Matters had passed about the Conference of an Accord, and what would be propownded or offred. This litle lyke them, and breeds a generall Doubt that other Inconveniences will followe, the Peace being more  
hese



here talked of openly, and sondry Discourses made by such as wish, yt might so fall out, though to the Harme and Alteracion of those Personnes that hitherto haue mainteyned the Cause; and if that succede, it is much dowbted all will not continew constant that are now of Tharmie: Havinge also giuen som Subiect to those that are slow, in contributing to seek and vse Delays, whatsoeuer their Purpose may be besides otherwayes, to the Grief of the wel affected, whose Feare is most, that the Enimie will get much by these Courses, and that yf one beginne more will followe, such being commonly the Humor of all Commonalties or popular Gouvernments. After the Retorne of thabsent Deputies, more wilbe knowen; and for other particular Matters (being felt) I referre to the Report of this Bearer Captain Cary. And so ceasing to be furder troublesome, beseech Thalmightie for the longe and prosperous Estate of your Lordship. From the *Haeghe*, this 25 of *Aprill*, 1590.

*Your good Lordships most assured*

*to do you all Service,*

Geo. Gilpin.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**I** Haue perused those Articles, which your Lordship sent vnto me, and I haue shortly sette downe, what I thinke of euery Point. There is very great Reason in the most of them; but because the chiefeft can not well be performed, without some further Order from her Majestie, you shall finde it a great Ease to delay your Answear till my Lord of *Buckbursts* Comming hither, and then to put them in good Hope of some speedy Redresse, to their full Contentment. This Course is the best that I can thinke vpon; which yet your Lordship will vse with better Dexteritie then I can expresse. Whervvpon I commend it, and all your other Actions, to Gods good Direction. From the *Hage*, May 29, 1590.

*Your Lordships at Commaundement,*

Thomas Bodley.

Vppon the Closing up of this Letter, I receaued your Lordships of the 25, and haue dealt with the Councel in your Behalf. Howbeit they will take no Answear to hold your Lordship altogether excused, vnles they may have, at the lest, one Company.

1. This Article doth carie a Shew of Equitie, but I suspend my Iugement until I heare the Allegacions of those of the Garrison.

2. It is so required by the Treatie, and it hath bin lately promised by my Lords of the Councel to the States and Councel heer. Howbeit, because the cautionarie Companies are incomplete, the Treatie must bee so vnderstood, as it may always stand with the Safetie of the Yeare.

3. Their Orders of Mvsters were neuer approved by my Lords in *England*, nor the late Orders sett downe by my Lords, allowed heer by the States of thes Provinces, who haue alwaies reiected the 15 dead Paies, and sondrie other Points of the said Orders. In which Respect there can bee no Satisfaction giuen vnto them, vntil there bee a mutual Establisement of such Orders as are to be obserued, which I hope will be perfourmed at my Lord of *Buckbursts* Coming hether.

4, 5. Your Lordship will confyder whether thes frebuting Souldiers bee necessarie Euils in that Garrison; for otherwise in other Places, it is found by Experience, that the dailie Wrongs and Enormities committed by Frebuters, are full of Danger and Inconuenience.

6. Vnles



6. Vnles it be in extraordinarie Cafes, the Graunt of fuch Kinde of Paffeports doth wholie belong to the Councel of State, and this Prohibition ought to bee general. Neuertheles, the Gouuernors of thefe Prouinces vſurp that Authoritie daily.

7, 8. The 7 and 8 Articles ſeem to be conſonant with the Contract. The States of *Holland* have complained of late to my Lords of the Councel againſt the Officers of the *Briel*, for your late Impeachment of their Nauigation; and I have bin required by my Lords to take ſuch Order as it ſhould bee practized no more.

9. No Officer is exempted by the Contract from paieng Impoſte and Acciſe, for which I ſee not, for my Part, how any can claime that Priuiledge without their ſpecial Permiſſion.

10. It is ſo required by the Treatie, and, for ought that I can learne, it is ſo obſerued.

Geo. Gilpin, *Eſq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*Moſt honorable Knight,*

**Y**OU'RE Reſolve how to deale touchinge your Comminge hither, or Sending eſpecially, now his Excellencie is abſent, me thinks, vnder Correction, would ſarue to ſmall Purpoſe, for youe ſhould fynd no fitt Companie: And will better pleaſe theſe Men, that your Lordſhip being (as it were) but newly arryved, ſtay yet a Whye in your Gouernment, til ſuch Order be eſtabliſhed as youe ſhall haue fownde needfull, and thinke conuenient for the Diſcharge of your Place, to the Contentment of all Syds. Mr. *Bodly* hath written youe his Mynde vppon the Articles youe ſent him, ſo as I neede ſay nothinge, onely this, that I have fownd by Experience, that to giue theſe Men good Words, and not to contend with them, in that depends on the Diſpoſition of others, is moſt Wiſdom, and workes both more Good and Credit to the Parties in Action, and tends alſo to the better Sarvice of hir Maieſtie. Mr. *Wilkes* is now ſayd to com ouer, and by that I can perceauē this People do not ſhew any great Lykinge, but of the Iſſew cannot be iudged, til his Erraunt be knowne. All Things continewe at one Stay; his Excellencie remaynes at the Campe; ſom ſmall Skermiſhing now and then betweene Thennemies and ovr Men; the Forte goeth forward apace, which being finiſhed, there wilbe other Sarvices attempted worthie the being at. In *Groeninghen* there is a niew Stirre, by reaſon *Verdinge* had a Praettyſe to bring in Soldiars by Intelligence within the Towne, meaning to haue taken a Gate in the Morninge of the Watch, and ſo to have let his Men in, which fayled, Count *William* wrote for Horſemen, meaninge to have attempted ſom Sarvice, whyleſt they are (as yt were) denyded in the Towne, but can gett no Helpe hince, til the Sarvices intended by his ſayd Excellencie be finiſhed. And thus, for Want of other, do take my Leave, committing your Lordſhip to the Protection of the Allmightie. From the *Haghe* this 2 of June, 1590. *Stilo Angliæ.*

*Your Lordſhips at commaundment,*

Geo. Gilpin.



\* *Sir Thomas Heneage to Sir Robert Sydney.*

S I R,

I Must desire you, to vnderstand my good Will, rather by my Wurks then my Words; for having presently both my Hands and my Hedd full of Busnes, a shorte Lettre must not be interpreted as of shorte good Will; and hauyng told you I love you, you may looke for enowgh from me, yf I be an honest Man.

Now, by her Majesties Commandment, I wrighte this vnto you, that her Highnes hath Intelligens, that ther is some Devyse in Hammeringe for an Enterpryse against *Flushing*, that you have in Chardge; and that it is therefore very needfull, that you be very heedfull and vigilant, to meete with Practyse, or Attempt, that may be vsed agaynst you, either within or withowt. Ther ys an Opinyon that *Bodnam*, that is at *Dunkyrke*, setts owt presently 2 Shippes well manned and furnyshed, yt is thought to passe to *Andwerpe* by *Flushing*, with Gooddes to returne, to which yt wear good to haue an Eye; and so both to the Maryners and the Armour of the Towne, which your Brother I knowe was euer ielouse of; and you, I am sure will think of. More I haue not nowe to wryte, but to wysh you euer as my self. At the Courte this xiiijth of *June*, 1590.

Your assured Friend,

When *Burnham* coomes to you,  
you shall knowe more.

T. Heneage.

Superscribed, To my honorable good Friend Sir *Robert Sidney*, Knight,  
Gouerner of *Flussinge*.

*Sir Thomas Wyldes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

My verie good Lord,

VERDUGO, with 2000 Horse, and 500 Foote, is entred vpon the Skyrte of *Frize*, ioyning vpon the Lande of *Groeningen*, where he hath taken (sithence my Arrivall here,) a Forte from the States, caled *Cemetyl*; and from thence is marched vp towards the Sea Syde, and maketh his Approches to a second Fort of very great Importance, which, if he can take, he will thereby greatly annoy the whole Province of *Frize*. Yt seemeth that Cont *William* is in verie great Feare, not hauing sufficient Strength to make Head against the Enemy, and therefore hath written hether for some speedy Succour to be sent vnto him: And bycause Cont *Maurice* is in no Case able to spare any Parte of his Forces, and but fewe to be had of these Countrie People on the soddeyn, to be employed in this Seruice. The Councell of State haue bene constrayned to write vnto you for the two Auxiliarie Companies remayning vnder your Gouernment, which it may please you (considering the Necessitie) not to refuse; but that, according to such Direction as you shall receyue from the said Councell, you will vouchsafe to send them furth: And if you shall so thinke fyt, geue Notice of the Necessitie, and Sending of them, to my Lord Thresurer. Your Lordship were best to consider how vnfit yt were to refuse to send them at this Tyme, both in Respect of the Seruice, and of my Negotiation, which

\* Sir *Thomas Heneage* was Captain of the Guards to Queen *Elizabeth*, also Treasurer of her Chamber, Vice-Chamberlain of her Houshold, Chancellor of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, and one of her Privy Council. He married *Anne*, Daughter of Sir *Nicholas Poyntz*, Knight, by *Joan*, Daughter of *Thomas Lord Berkley* of *Berkley* Castle, two of the most antient and noble Families in *Gloucestershire*, whose Ancestors had been eminent by their Quality and great Alliances from the Time of the Conquest. By which Match, he left an only Daughter and Heir, *Elizabeth*, married to Sir *Moyle Finch*, Knight, who was by King *James the First* advanced to the Dignity of Viscountess *Maidstone*, in *Kent*; and by King *Charles the First* to the Title of Countess of *Winchelsea*, in *Sussex*, with Limitation of those Honours to the Heirs Male of her Body, lawfully begotten. She died on the 13th of *March*, 1633, and from her Ladyship the present Earl of *Winchelsea* is descended.



hitherto is muche applauded by the States, and great Hope and Expectacion had of the Issue thereof: And so (with many Thanks to your Lordship for myne honorable Enterteynment at *Vlyssing*) I committe you to the Protection of Almighty God. From the *Haghe*, this xvth of *June*, 1590.

*Your Lordships verie assured to commaunde,*

Tho. Wylkes.

*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

THE Counsell of *Ostat* are sent by the States Generall to reside at *Arnham*, there to second the Purposes of the Count *Maurice*, for some furder Attempt vppon the Forte before *Zutphen*, &c. so as I cannot aqueeint them with the Lettre to your Lordship from my Lord Threfurer: How be it, if there shalbe Cause for your better Excuse, I will take the Opportunitie to aqueeint them with it by Writing. We haue here no Newes, but an Incling or Imaginacion of the Cominge of the Duke of *Parma* to *Nuymeghen*, and that *Verdugo* attempteth the Fort of *Nieuzell* in *Frise*. Yf your Lordship shall heare any Newes out of *England*, or any Thing of *France*, I beseech you let vs be Partakers with you here. Yt hath ben an olde Custome at Home, that when Men are Abroade in any publike Services, they are written vnto at Leyfure; I feare the Continuaunce of that Custome nowe the more, bycause there is no Secretarye. I will not forget the Mater of your Lordships Postscript, as Tyme shall serue. I fynde hetherto, the States verie slowe, and am as yeat hardly hable to make Construcion of their Meanings or Inclinations towards her Majestie. As I shall lerne furder, your Lordship shall be aduertised; and till then, I will recomend you to God, and my self to the Continuaunce of your good Love and Fauor. From the *Haghe*, the xxijth of *June*, 1590.

*Your Lordships assured to comand,*

Tho. Wylkes.

*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

YOUR Lettre of the xxvth of the last Moneth, I received this Morning by a Soldior comyng from the Camp, signifieng the Refusall of the *Dutche* Commissioner to joyne with him for her Majestie, in the Signing of the weeklie Certificate, and Taking of the Musters. Yt hath ben a Thing vsuall with the States not to joyne with vs in any Musters offered to be taken by our selfe, in Respect of the common Fraudes vsed by our Captaines; and therefore, in that Pointe, it is not to be wondred at, if they refuse the like still: And, as I remember, ther is Direction geuen by Lettres from my Lords, either to your Lordship, or your Lieutenant Gouvernor, to muster at all Tymes when the States shall so require. For not Signing the weeklie Certificates, I suppose they doe it, as not allowing (as yeat) of the Orders established for the Maner of the Paye, &c. All these Things I shall in their Courses so remedie; and, in the meane Tyme, your Lordship may doe verie well, to will the Commissarie *Englyshe*, to procede in the Execucion of her Majesties Orders as he hath, by inviting the *Dutche* Commissary thereunto; which, if he shall refuse, to take some Wittnesse of his Refusall, of the Townes People, and him self to procede as he hathe accustomed.

I am here entertayned with verie strang Delayeres, and as hetherto can receive no Answer to suche Propositions as I haue exhibited, so that my whole Tyme,

to



to this Instant, hath ben spent with out Fruite. They seame glad of my Com-  
yng, and of the Maters I haue deliuered, but do nothing: I suppose their  
Dellayes to growe by Lacke of sufficient Auctoritie, wherewith they dare not  
aqueynt me, in Respect of their Lettres lately writen to my Lords of the  
Counsaill, giving them to vnderstand, that they haue Auctoritie to treat with  
any suche as her Majestie shold send, which I fynd not to be so. As I shall  
procede, your Lordship shall heare further from me: In the meane Tyme, I  
will committ you to the Tuition of Almighty God. From the *Hagbe*, the  
First of *Julie*, 1590.

*Your Lordships assured to comand,*

Tho. Wylkes.

I beseeche your Lordship, cause the Lettre sent herewith, to be, by some  
trustie Person, deliuered to Mr. *Meredethe*, who is furthwith to repare hether,  
to enter into the Maters of the Accompts. Before this was closed vp, Mr. *Mere-*  
*deth* arived here.

*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

I Received your two Lettres, the one of the iijth, and the other of the viijth of  
the Presente, this *Mondaye* the xijth, in a Packet inclosed to Mr. *Gilpin*, for  
the which I thank your Lordship with all my Harte; for althoughe I receive  
Lettres often out of *England*, yeat they com for the moſte Parte from suche  
as doe not write me muche Newes (as from the Lord Thresorer, and Lords  
of the Counsaill) or from suche as cannot write, but of Maters current in  
Th'exchange, or in the Horsfaire in *Powles*, where (as you Lordship know-  
eth) many Things are daily, and sowndly reported, and with Advantage.

I doe wounder who should be the Auctor of the Bruiſte of her Majesties  
Treating of Peace with *Spaigne*, or that I should be employed hether about any  
suche Mater: I doe protest vnto your Lordship, that for my self, I haue no  
Commission to that or the like Pourpose, nor doe vnderstand that there was any  
such Thing in Handling at my Comyng out of *England*; but am of Opini-  
on, that if her Majestie did affecte a Peace, she should more hardlie obtayne it  
nowe, then euer at any Tyme heretofore. I haue had some Aer of this Con-  
cept deliuered here vnto me by *Artſens*, the Greffier to the States, who de-  
clared vnto me plainlie, that the States feared some suche Deuise: I answered  
him directly, and with Protestation, that there was no suche Mater, and  
might assure his Masters thereof, if he would, from me.

But, my good Lord, I hold nothing so strange as the Delaies and Dallyance  
vsed with me by theise Persons: I am so farre beyond my Latin therwith, as  
I cannot tell what to coniecture rightly of the Causes thereof: Howbeit, I  
fynde that suche as are euell affected to *England*, haue playd their Partes  
egregiouſly here, bothe before and ſithence my Comyng, to drawe this People  
from all Liking towards her Majestie, and to affect their Humors to *France*;  
a Thing not a litle to be regarded, and yet not like to be prevented, but  
with some Danger. Assure your Lordship, the Discontentements of theise Men  
have ben let runn somewhat to long.

*Valke* hath deliuered vnto me certen Reasons to be imparted to my Lords of  
the Counsell, towching the Debts of the two Companies mentioned in your  
Lettres, which remayneth with me not sent, bycause I foresee there wilbe no-  
thing don in the Mater, vntill it shall appeare what Course wilbe taken in the  
greatest and chiefeſt nowe in Handling.

I will, according to your Lordships Request, write Home to the Lords con-  
cerning your Powder, and will give all the Furderance thereunto that I maye;  
and as that wilbe nedefull for your Defence, so I think it as necessary for  
you



you to haue your Eye bent vppon your Charge, having in some Degree fithence my Comyng hether, changed my Opinion of the Integrity and plaine Dealing of theise Countreys towards her Majestie, as I will give your Lordship more to vnderstand hereafter.

Here we are aduertised of the Coming of the Duke of *Parma* to *Brusselles*, where *Richardot* hath ben, and is with him, who from the King hath, in an Assemblie of the States in that Place, deliuered many Things vnto them: That there is some Practise in Hande to sett *Brabant* and *Flanders* on Work to mediate a Peace with theis Provinces Vnited: That the Duke of *Parma* maketh Leavies of Men within the Counteys to fill the Garrisons of the chefest Places, and from them to drawe out all the olde Regiments and Companies, and with them to marche fourthwith into *France*, to the Succor of the *Ligueurs*: Your Lordship may happilie in these Partes lerne more of this then I shall here, and more Certaintie. I beseech you, therefore, fynde the Meanes to be informed, and let me be Partaker with you. And so for this Tyme, with my most hartie Salutacions, I committ your Lordship to the Protection of Almighty God. From the *Haghe*, the xiiijth of July, 1590.

Your Lordships euer assured to comand,

and ready to doe you Service,

Tho. Wylkes.

De Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidnay, Gouverneur de Flisshinge.

Monsieur,

LE Capitaine *Metkerke* vous fera entendre a que i'ay trouue bon que ce fasse au faict que cognoissés, i'ay escript a Messieurs de *Zelande*, qu' il laissent fumire des hommes pour l' executer et si vous en ay encores faict donner d' *Hollande*, comme il vous dira plus particulierement, et aussi tout a ceque, se passe icy pour le present, et ne seruant cestes a autre fin je prie Dieu.

Monsieur, qu'il vous donne en sante longue vie et heureuse, et l' Heur que vostre entreprinse puisse reusier a honne fin ce que vous souhaitte.

Vostre tres affectionne Amy

Du Camp deuant *Nimeghen*,  
15 De Juillet, 1590.

de vous faire Seruece,

Maurice de Nassau:

Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

TO bothe yours of the xiiijth and xvijth (which I would haue feuerally answered, but that by your Promise I hoped to haue sene yow here) I am bold to answer yow by this: First, I thanke yow humblie for your Newes, whereof we are here but too barren, and thereof I am ashamed: Then concerning myne owne Proceedings with thes People, I doe assure my selfe they are as hedstrong as so many Bulles; no Reguard of her Majesties Merites towards them, nor so muche as good Maner to thanke her for their Preservacion; which I fynde to proceede of two Causes, the one of Want of Witte and Judgement, and vppon the Advantage they haue, that their Coniunction dothe more import her Majestie, then the Succours of *England* dothe benefitt them; and the other, of the comon Gawles we haue given to them, which to this Houre are rested vnplastered, and *Quia magis injuriæ quam beneficij memores*, whereof we haue ben a litle too negligent towards them. Neuertheles, I haue not as yeat lost all my

V O L. I.

6 K

Hope,



Hope, but that with a few Daies more Travell, I shall reduce them to a better Temper, albeit hetherto I haue don iust nothing, and yet haue spent some Daies with them in Conference, scolding and brawling, thoughte to no Porpose.

I haue offered some smale Overture to the States of the Matter I spake of to your Lordship, but I fynd them not to byte at it, to my Liking, but meane not to leave it so, and will take a fitter Opportunitie for it hereafter.

For the Practise for *France*, there is doubtles some Canvassing vnder Hande, but by some perticular Persones, who, the better to frame the Humores of the People thereunto, goe about to engorge the People with slanderouse Reports and Concepts of her Majesties Actions towards theise Countreys; it wilbe daungerouse to let it goe forward, and therefore I haue geven some Advise hence howe it may be prevented, and insisted vppon the Execution thereof, if it be liked. I feare no Peace with *Spaigne*, they are fixed so strongly vppon their Libertie, and hate with a most perfect Hatred, as well the *Spaniard*, as any other Monarchical Comaundement over them.

I haue heard of a sharp Lettre writen latelie vnto yow from the Counsaill of Estate, about the ij Companies auxiliarie vnder your Charge; I doubt not but yow will answer them as appertaineth; and I could wishe for that Respect, and bycause they wilbe earnest with yow here for those 2 Companies, that you did forebeare yet a While to com hether, vnles there be some Cause of Importance concerning your self, or any publik Service that may presse your Comyng. Thus, my Lord, resting wholly at your Lordships Comandement, I ende my Epistle, with my most hartie Salutacions to your self and to my Lady. From the *Haghe*, the xxijth of *July*, 1590.

*Your Lordships euer assured, and ready to*

*do yow Service,*

Tho. Wylkes.

*Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidnay, Gouverneur de Flisshinge.*

*Monsieur,*

**I**'AY entendu par le Chevalier *Vere*, que vous seriez d'intention de nous venir trouver, si tost que vous scaviez que nous nous viendrions camper aultre part. Surquoi le n'ay voulu laisser de vous advertir, que le suis resolu de desloger de devant ceste Ville, endedans deulx ou trois jours, & mettre le Camp en quelque aultre endroit, ou l'espere nous en rapporterons plus de Passetemps, que devant ceste Ville. Et pourtant le vous prie Monsieur si vostre commoditè peult souffrir de nous venir trouver, accompaigne avec quelque nombre des vostres, jusques a *Gornicson*, qu'il Vous plaise, Vous y encheminer, ou que Vous me trouvez, ou sinon, de madvertir de la, de Vostre venue illec, affinque le Vous y puisse trouver. Et me remettant avec ce a Vostre arrivement, lequel j'attens a bonne devotion; le me recommanderay tres affectueusement en Voz bonnes graces, en priant Dieu Vous maintenir.

*Monsieur,*

En la sainte Protection du Camp devant *Nimeghen*, le 10 de *Aougst*, 1590.

*Vostre tres affectionné Amy*

*de vous faire Service,*

Maurice de Nassau.

*Sir*



Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**S**ithence my last vnto yow by Mr. Kiffin, I tooke Occasion to make a Voiage to see the Townes of *Nort Holland*, and was absent from the *Hagbe* about x Daies, fynding at my Retourne 2 Lettres from your Lordship, one of the 29 of *July*, and another of the 6 of this Present; the first contayning your Opinion of the Dealings of theise Men nowe towards her Majestie, wherein yow concur in Opinion with my selfe, and others, that can discerne any Thing of their Doings; and for myne owne Parte I hope of no better at this Tyme, what so euer may alter hereafter, vppon any dangerouse Accident growing to their Estate, either from the Enemy Abroade, or from their civill Diuisions at Home; the Seconde mentioneth, for the Place, as muche as your Lordship promised in the First, wherein I wishe all happie Succes and Honor to your self.

The longer I staye expecting my Answer, the more Delaye appeareth; for theise Men have resolued vppon Temporisation, to Th'ende they may discouuer what wilbe the Succes in *France*, that thereby they may straighten or enlarge them selfs in graunting or denying our Demaunds. But if your Lordship could discovuer what they doe in *Zelande*, and give me Knowledge thereof before Hande, I should thereby ghesse of all the rest: The Man that is nowe imployed thither, is very lewdly affected vnto vs, and yet maketh Shewe of verie great Affection to her Majesties Service. It is *Vander Warke*, I beseech your Lordship, if yow may haue Meanes, procure him to be observed.

I trust by the next Dispathe from the Lords, to haue Newes of my Revocation, which will some what repaire her Majesties Honor in sending hether to so litle Pourpose, and lesse Reguard and Accompt made of her Goodnes towards theise Countreys; albeit this Backwardnes procedeth not from the Generalitie of the Townes and People, but from 2 or 3 Companions here, that affect ambitiously to continue the Gouvernement in their owne Handes, which (if her Majestie wold be counsailled) might easily be avoided, and they suppressed in some Tyme.

I am sorie to vnderstand of the Garboil like to growe in *Scotland*, whereof I haue received 2 or 3 Aduertysements from Home; it will happen in a verie vnseasonable Tyme, onles the Liguours be tymely and well beaten, which God graunt for his Mercye.

Your Lordship knoweth we haue nothing here of the Doings of the Worlde on that Syde, but it comyth along by yow, and from yow; and therefore I cannot make yow beholding vnto me for any Newes worth the Writing from hence; which doth the more increafe my Debt to your Lordship, in that it pleaseth yow to afford me so many of your Lettres, contayning Variety of good Mater, and I can requite yow with nothing, but with the Complaints of my Discontentments, and the frowarde Proceedings of theise Men: I will therefore here make an Ende with many Thankes, and comitt your Lordship to the Protection of Almighty God. From the *Hagbe*, the xth of *August*, 1590.

Your Lordships euer most assured to comaund,

Tho. Wylkes.

Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

**I** Am forced to take my Leave of your Lordship by Lettre, in Respect of the Conueniencie of my Passage from hence, being now revoked and desireouse to be at Home. I retourne in all Things *re infecta*, and haue no better Hope of any Succes from the States. I would to God there were in me, any Thing that were agreable to your Lordship, and that as it hath pleased yow to vse me with muche Fauour sithence my being here in thies Partes, that it wold also



also please yow to vse and commaund me at Home to doe yow Service, where although I shalbe least hable of a great many, yeat no Man more ready and willing then my self. And so with this Brevitie, in Respect of the hastie Departure of the Berer; and my self in some other Busynes to be at this Tyme dispatched, bicause I looke to imbarke this Afternoone; I committ your Lordship to the Protection of Almighty God, with my moste hartie Salutacions. From the *Briell*, the xxijth of *August*, 1590.

Your Lordships euer assured to commaunde,

Tho. Wylkes.

George Gilpin Esq; Secretary to the Ambassy to the States General, to Sir Robert Sidney.

My very good Lorde,

**A**FTER Mr. *Wilkes* his Departure, since the Busines were of that small Importaunce, as gaue us rather an Occasion to be occupied in feinge the Contrye Abroade, then to stay at Home and doo nothinge; which made Mr. *Bodley* (whome I accompaigned) make a shorte Progres, towards *Vytrecbt* and those Partes, whence wee retornyd not vntil *Friday* last, when as I determyned to wryte to your Lordshipe, stayinge onely Thoppportunitie of a Messenger, which could not light vppon til this Present. And may now please youe to vnderstande that I haue receavyd your last of the Seconde of this Monthe, thereby perceavinge myne to haue come in Saefte to your Lordships Handes with thinclosed Copies. As yet the States haue made no Aunswere to the Propositions deliuered them by Mr. *Wilks*, neyther can I learne of any Lykelyhood to hasten yt, but do rather iudge they wil deferre the Time exspectinge the Successe in *Fraunce*; and thereafter to frame their Course. The Ambassadors or Commissioners of *Thempyre* and *Liege*, haue not yet their Aunswere, but is a framinge, and whyle they exspecte yt, new Matters of Complaynt fall owt, havinge received the Newes that the States Men haue gotten the Towne of *Burick*, and the Ennimies Garrison forsakinge the same retyred with their Baggage into the Castel or Fort there, which being beaten with a Peece or tweyne was surrendred and is possessed by owrs, who since lay Siege with those few Forces they haue to a Fort against *Wesol*, called *Graeve*, and hope to gett yt. Sir *Frauncys Vere* is in thoose Partes, with Commission to attempte the Reskewing of *Lattekenbome*, a Place in *Munster* or *Westphalia*, a Fortyres, surprysed by owr Men, and beset by Thenemy; he hath with him nier 600 Horse and 1000 Foote-men wherouer he commaunds. The Wawters growinge hye lately, hath forced the Ennnemy to abandon the Fielde, where he lay in the Frontyers of *Foyse*, and is retyred with his Troupes into the Countie of *Benthain*, being so discontented that they lacke but the beinge in a gud Towne to make a Mutiny: Count *William* hath retorned the 400 Horse that were sent to his Ayde, and remaynes still; exspectinge what *Verdugo* will doo, and then eyther to attempte further or to give ouer and place his Men in Garrison; which is thought wilbe Thende of those Warres, now their Lymits are freed; eech caringe for him selfe and no further. The Count *Maurice* is here, and passeth the Tyme in Huntinge and Hawkinge, seeing he cannot get the States to sett him a Worke Abroade; being straunge that Men can suffer so fit Opportunitie to ouerpasse and do nothinge.

The Count *Hobenlo* hath bin a Whyle at *Burey*, to accompanie the Ladye of *Orange*; which made som Speache as yf the Mariage should goo forwarde; the sayd Count is com this Night to this Towne, but do not heare where he lefte the Lady, neyther that any such Matter was meant.

There haue bin diuers Entreprises offred and debated vppon, but none will goo forwarde, eech fearinge the Charges. And so these Warres continewinge onely defensiu, wil last this seven Yeres and more. The Counsell haue writen to your Lordship, about som Disordre or euil Dealinge of your Soldiars, against the



the Searchers for discharging their Deutie in siftinge owte fraudulent Dealings. Also touchinge the Trench or Fort youe meane to make on *Flaunders* Syde ouer against *Flushing*. Yf your Lordship com not hither shortly, I could wish I had somme good Errand into *Zelande* which I labor to espye or meete with. The meane Whyle yf your Lordship continew, in Mynde to com, yt wilbe necessary wee knew thereof about your Lodginge, for they are scaunt here; the Innes being excessiff deare, and dayntie, to receave any of oure Nation, and to be prouyded by the Harbinger is longe Worke; the best were to seeke to hyer som fit Place for a Tyme and there to make your owne Dyet. Which to furdur yf youe please to send any one afore, I wilbe ready to yelde my Helpe and Aduyce. Receauinge of late a Lettre from *Augusta*, what the Newes were there the inclosed Copie doth conteyne, which makes me think that the Duke of *Parma* will not fight with the Kinge till all the Forces be together, in hope by Nombere to be the better; but the Lord of Hostes can alter the Matter and disapoynt his Purposes. From the *Haeghe* this 7 of Sept. 1590.

Your Lordships most ready at Comaundment,

Geo. Gilpin.

Geo. Gilpen, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My very good Lorde,

**T**HIS Night the Generall States bestow and make a greate Bancket to Thymbassadors of ThEmpyre, whose Aunswere is framed and wilbe sent or deliuered within a Day or tweyne: And then I will fynd Meanes to procure and send your Lordship a Copie. Sir *Frauncis Vere*, as him selfe, wrote the Thirde of this present comminge, nere the House of *Luttekenbome*, did fynd Thennemy yntrenched very strongly, lyke in a Forte, on Thadvenue to the said House, lying in a Marrishe, havinge no other Acces vnto yt: He first somoned them to yelde the Place; they refused flatly, declaringe plainly, that they meant to holde and mayntaine their Fort to the last Man. Vppon which Aunswere, he resoluyd presently, on all Sydes, to assalte them; and soo the seconde Charge took yt by Force, puttinge aboue 300 Men to the Sworde, and soo reskewed the Assieged; havinge since furthered the Bringinge of those Contryes vnder Contribucion, and was purposed to haue imployed his Forces about som other Sarvice in those Partes; bvt his Excellencie havinge purposed to proceede with an Entreprise of som Moment, Sir *Frauncis Vere* writtes to come downe with all Diligence with his Forces. *Verdugo* contineweth in the Land of *Benthan*, and can do no more then his Men list and lyke of. Other I saw not at this present; and therefore humbly takinge my Leave, do beseech Almightye God for your Lordships prosperous Estate, long Lyffe, and Increase of daily Honors. From the *Haeghe*, this 12th of September, 1590.

Your Lordships at Commaundment,

Geo. Gilpen.

Occurrences sent with the Letter beforementioned.

**L**E Roy d'*Espaigne* fait fort haster ce qui ce fait perdra, qui est de six mille chevaulx, & de 36 compaignies de *Lansquenetz*, leur rendez vous est prez de *Bacarach*, au dessus de *Bonne*. Les noms des Colonells de la Cavalerie sont S<sup>r</sup> *Bellomont*, qui mesne douze cens chevaulx; le Baron de *Kenbergb* 12<sup>c</sup>, *Jan Prendel* 12<sup>c</sup>, *Schlegel* 12<sup>c</sup>, le frere de l'Evesque de *Treves* 12<sup>c</sup>. Les Colonells de Infanterie, sont le Conte de *Schwartzembourg*, *Arkenlergh*, *Bentin* Gouverneur de *Venlo*: les quelles Forces doibuent au plus tard estre en Cam-



pagne, le 16 *Septembre*, ou ce joindront les forces du Ducq de *Lorraygne*, desquelles forces eitant assemblees le Duc de *Parma*, en doibt estre le Chief & Conducateur au nom du Roy d'*Espaigne*, pour entrer en *France*, les Forces du Pape, qu'aultres Potentatz d'*Italye*, ce joindront au Ducq de *Savoye*, qui sera aussij un aultre Chieff, pour entrer en *Provence*, & *Daulphin*, un *Dotain Dorie Geneuois* fera cheff de l'armée de mer, pour l'*Espagnol*, pour fournir des vivres & choses necessaires d'artilleries & munitions de guerre. L'armée du *Savoyat* en somme ils font estat aux deux armées de terre, de soixante a 80 mil homes, tant de piet-que de cheval, pour attaquer la *France*, a la resolution du Roy d'*Espaigne*, cheff de la Ligue, est demployer entierement tous ses moyens & forces, pour ce faire Maître de la *France*, s'il peult par le moyen de la Ligue de *France*, qui ly attire, de la craincte, qu'il a du Roy de *France*, & de la Roynie d'*Angleterre*, qu'il tient ses Enemieez mortelz : car quant aux aultres il n'en fait pas estat, estimant de les corrompre aysement par argent, & les affaires du Roy de *France* retardées ou recullées, a faulte d'argent, sans lequel lon ne faict rien pardeca ; non obstant les dilligences possibles de 3 Ambassadeurs, que le Roy de *France* a en ces pais. Il ne parle, ou parlera des paix Roy du d'*Espaigne*, avec eulx ou l'Empereur, & les Princes de l'Empire y doibuent estre employez. L'on dict que les forces ontourny l'argent pour la presente levée qui se fait en *Allemaigne* pour le Roy d'*Espaigne*.

Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sydney.

Monsieur,

IL a esté resolu, par Messieurs du conseil d'Estat, de faire assembler quelque bon nombre de gens de guerre ; & les employer en service du pays. Et d'autant que J'estime, que vous desirez de vous y trouver. Je vous prieray Monsieur tres affectueusement, si vostre commodité le permettra, de me venir trouver a *Willemstadt*, pour le dimanche prochain : Venant avec tout des Soldats, de Vostre Garnison & Gouvernement, qu'il vous fera aulcunement possible, & que ce soyent des Compagnies entieres. Et en esperant que nous ferons chose dont nous rapporterons honneur, Je me recommanderay en voz bonnes graces, en priant Dieu vous maintenir.

Monsieur, En sa sainte de

la Haye, ce xix de Septembre, 1590.

Vostre tres affectionné Amy a

vous faire Service,

Maurice de Nassau.

Sir William Borlas to Sir Robert Sydney.

My verie good Lord,

THIS presente *Saterdag* I receaved a Packet of Letters from my Lords of the Counsell, directed to Mr. *Bodley*, and to be deliuered here to your Lordship, or to me in your Absence to convey them vnto him. I opened it not, because I knewe not of what Importaunce it might be, but haue sent it vnto him, with Request, that if there be any Lettres for your Lordship therein, he will convey them vnto you, as speedilie as he maie, which, I doubt not, but he will performe. Newes here is none, but as I wrote your Lordship in my last Letter, my Lady and your Children are in good Health, and those Women which she sent for are come over to her from *Englande*. This Lettre enclosed was intercepted in *Flaunders* by the Freebuiters. I haue thought best to sende it to your Lordship, that you might haue



haue the Perusinge of it. And so with my humble Dutie, I leave your Lordship to the Almightye. *Flushing*, this xxvjth of September, 1590.

Your Lordships most assured

to commaunde,

Wylliam Borlas.

Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My very good Lorde,

Accordinge to my last Wrytinge, there is an Aunswere giuen to the Deputies of Thempire, whose Propositions, though somewhat longe in Words, tended chiefly, that all Places subiect to Thempyre, and presently possessed by the States, should be surrendred vnto them; and that from hence fourth nothinge should be any more attempted vpon the lyke; and that the Subiects of all *German* Princes, or others, vnder ThEmperiall Iurisdiction, should remayne vntroubled, and to be vsed as Neighbours and Newtrals: Herevpon is resoluyd (as I vnderstand) that the Townes and Places aforesayd, shalbe voyded by owr Garrysons, and delivered to the sayd Deputies, or whome thereto they shall thinke good to appoynt; and to that Ende there is written to the Commaunders in those Places; but the Forte of *Gravenweert* is not comprehended in the Number; and though the Deputies insisted hard with Threatenings of Proscription by ThEmpyre (which indeed is not much more cared for then the Pope his Ban or Curse) yet at last haue in that Behalfe accepted of the Aunswere, being smouth and delatory.

Those of *Liege* are not yett aunswered; but yt is thought the States wil accompte and vse them as Neyghbors and Friends; Lettres havinge in lyke Sorte fins bin writte to the Governors of *Bargues* and *Breda*, that they shall release all Prisoners, being Liegoys, and not to take any more hereafter, without Commaundment from the Superiors.

The Count *Maurice* is thought to be com ere this Tyme at the Place of Rendezvous, and that the other Troupes being come to *Huy*, he will presently proceede with Thenterprise, wherein he hopeth to haue good Succes, and then to take others in Hande neerer your Quarters.

Here is a Bruyte that Sir *Frauncis Vere* should have assalted the *Graeve*, a Forte afore *Wesel*, and was repulsed, but that he was determined to recharge them the nexte Morninge; whereof this Day wee shall heare the Certaintie.

*Verdugo* his Men do stil spende on the Boores, which he cannot yett, for Feare of Alteration, the *Spaniards* (as som of them that haue bin taken Prisonners declare) being at afterhande of their Pay aboue ten Monthes. Al other Things remayne at one Staye.

By Letters owt of *Englande* wee heare, that her Majestye dislykes much the Vfrage of these Men towards Mr. *Wilkes*, but will not take any Resolution vntil she sie their Aunswere to his Propositions, which was promysed, should be delivered to Mr. *Bodley*, but hitherto harde nothinge thereof.

Thus your Lordship heareth how the World goeth; and so most humbly comit myself to your Favours. From the *Haeghe*, this 26 of September, 1590. *Stilo nouo.*

Your Lordships at Commaundment,

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir



Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My good Lorde,*

I Haue received bothe your Lettres, the one written at the *Hagbe*, and the other at *Flushing*, sent by Capt. *Browne*. To the first, whereas you haue ben informed, that you should stand, in some Sort, in her Majesties Indignacion, in respect of your Privitie to the Mariage of my Lord of *Essex*. I dare assure your Lordship, vppon my poore Credit, there is no suche Mater; for besides the good and gratiouse Speeches vsed to me by her Majestie of your Lordship, at the Tyme I signified the same vnto you, she hath sithence vppon other Conferences to me expressed the like. And because I would not altogether trust myne own Sense and Concept therein, I haue sithence the Receipt of your Lettre (in as discrete Manner as I coulde) inquired among suche as could well informe me, and cannot fynde there hathe ben any suche Mater at all. So as, without all Doubt, the Partyes that haue geuen you Notice of this Mater, haue misconceived or misvnderstood the same.

There was some Likelihoode of sending over 4000 Men from hence, the Men being put in a Redynes, and a daily Expectation of their Going; the Purpose was by some convenient Armie in Feild to haue wrought a Diuision of the Duke of *Parma* from *France*; but sithence vppon some Aduertisement of the Distresses, Want, and Sicknesse of the Duke and of his Armie, who, by this Meanes (as her Majestie is aduertised) is ready to retourne Home; our Resolution of sending groweth cold, so as, in my Concept, there will nothing be don. Yf it go forewarde, I will not faile to remember your Lordship according to your Request.

I can write you nothing of our Home Causes, in respect there is no Alteration in any Thing here; my Lord Treasurer being still Secretarie, and so like (in my Concept) to continue in his Handes as long as he shall live, and be hable to travell. And thus, with my verie duetifull Salutation to yourself and my Ladye, I leave you to Gods Protection. From *Windfor*, the xvjth of *October*, 1590.

*Your Lordships assured Frend to command,*

Thomas Wylkes.

Roger Seys, Esq; † to Sir Robert Sydney, concerning Robert Dudley Earl of Leicesters Inheritance.

*Right Honorable,*

YT muche rewyfethe your good Lordships Folowers, to heare of the good and happie Deliuerance of my good Ladye; I praye God yt may move your Honor the sooner to loke to your owne Estate more; I cane wryt lyttell Comfort to your good Lordship of any greate Hope to come of my Lord of *Leycesters* Inheritance to your Lordship: I would to God I had Cause otherwyse to wryt. Mr. Seriant *Harryes* havinge only entryd into the Cause, drewe yt, and layd yt downe. Your Lordships Counsell, my Lord of *Huntingdon*, and my Lord of *Pembrokes* Counsell, meet at the Beginninge of the Terme, to resolve vpon Mr. Seriant *Harryes* Case, which stode vppon twoe Poynts: The one, whether the Revocacyone made by my Lord of *Leycester* were good, which ys the chefeeste Thinge we must yet stycke vnto; the other was, that by a Fyne levied by my Lord of *Leycester*, in *Anno* xxiiij. *Elizabethe* after the Deede of xxi. and before the Revocacyone in *Anno* xxvj. the Lands therin contayned was

† This Roger Seys, Esq; was a Councillor of *Lincoln's Inn*, and was imploied by Sir Robert Sydney, to look into his Estate in *Wales*, and the Counties adjoining, and reposed in him an entire Confidence, for his Integrity and Abilites. From him descended Richard Seys of *Bowerton* in *Glamorganshire*, Esq; whose Daughter Anne was married to Peter Lord King, Baron of *Ockham* in *Surry*, and Lord High Chancellor of *England*, who had Issue by her Peter the present Lord King, &c.



forfeited, be that noe Revocacyone myghte after serve. Thes twoe Poynts beinge agreed vppon, the one that ys whether the Revocacyone were good or noe, leaste doutfull; the other agreed to be a Forfeiture. Then was there a Courſe dyrectyd to drawe the Office, which I toke in Hand, hopinge of muche Good therof to your Honor; but after the Entrance into the Cause and dewe Consideracions had of the Lands mencioned in the firste Deede of xxiv, of the Lands in the twoe Fynes; the one to confirme the Deed in xxi, the other made in xxiiij; vpon which Forfeiture muche was hopyd of. I found noe Lands to be forfeited, but only twoe Lordshipes in *Worcester shire*, that ys to saye, *Hampton Magna*, and *Hampton Parva*, that any good Licklod myght growe to your Lordship, thys beinge impartyd to Mr. Seriant *Harryes*, whoe was the Auctor of the great Hope, he could not tell howe to answer yt; this ys trewe, my good Lord, I thought yt better to fynd yt nowe, then to contynewe your Lordship in Hopes of Things, which would be found by others; there be maney Questiones rayſene vppon the Opening of the Case by me. It is necessarye that the Office be founde vppon Hope that the Revocacyone wyl be imperfect; but *Hampton Magna* and *Hampton Parva*, wilbe your Lordships without Doubt, I hope: The Assurance made by *Thomas James* his Directione to Sir *Thomas Sherley*, ferethe euery other Mane to deale with anye the *Suffex* Lands, seeinge there was yealded to him other Lands in Securytie, and he wyl agree for Sales of Lands, and appoynt whate Assurance and Waranties shalbe made; and then your Counsell must procede accordinge to that Agreement, whatſoeuer yt be resonable, or not resonable, his Senſure must stand in that, as in all other Things. I praye your Lordship looke to his Proceedinge for your owne Goode. Is there any honest Man, that wylbe (yf yt were throwene vpon him) Surveyor; the only Agreer for Fynes (and Rents, and none but him selfe to know yt) the Maker of all Leases, the only Baylyf and Rent-gatherer, the Receuer of all other Profits, Heryots, Fynes, and Amercyaments, and to yeald whate Accompt he wyl; cane any Mane controule yt, or fynd Fault with yt, whoe hathe ſoe many Offices? Pardone me, I praye your Lordship, to remember you of this; there be many marvaylethe at yt; you maye, at your good Lordships Pleasure reforme yt. Thus restinge redye to doe your good Lordship any Seruyce I maye, I leaue you to Gods Protection. From *Lincolns Inn*, the laste Daye of this *November*, Anno 1590.

Your Lordships assured to comaunde,

Roger Seys.

Roger Seys, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

I Receved, my honorable good Lorde, your most honorable louinge Lettre, wherby yt pleasethe your Honor to promiese, that Order shalbe shortly takene concerninge your owne Estate, I praye you haue Care of yt for your owne Good; I neuer knewe any ſoe far out of Order, and where is Disorder ther is Confuſyon. Your Lordships Lands lyethe extendid, the Profits the Queene will ſewerly haue, vntyll Pardones be ſewed; ther is diuers Extents in *Wales*, ſome for ſome Moneys vnpayed to Mr. *Goringe*, ſome for not Entringe the first Fruits for *Coyte*, ſome for Tenthes in Courte Coulmane, ſome for ſix Shillinges eyght Pence Pencone, which goethe Yearly out of *Coyte* Benefice, ſome for Respit of Homage; the Chardge is duple, when hit comethe to the Shirifes Hands. *Thomas James* will paye none; he thinkethe to carye hit in Clouds, but allthoe hit be deferred for a Tyme, hit will faule duple Chardg vppon your Honor; your poore Tenants, whom you must dischardge, shalbe trubled; therefore, good my Lord, lett ſuche as your Honor thinkethe meete; conſider whate mustbe Yearlie payed, and laye that downe vnder their Hands, that your Receuer may dischardg hit; and lett not one Man haue ſo many Offices, that he may not be controuled in hit. To be Surveyor, Lease Maker, only Bargayne Maker for all your Reuenewe, Rent Gatherer, Taker vp of all Casualties, and Diſpoſer of all Things, as him



pleaseth: Whoe cane controule him, as the most ys to be made of Things? Which ys one Thing necessary by your Officers to be locked vnto, foe thother Thing as necessary; and that is in all Things that your Honor must be at Chardge with, to haue Care that ther be not more in suche Sort spent, then needithe; and that is least locked vnto in the most of your Honors Causes. Mr. *Boswell* hauinge gevene ouer his Office, and Mr. *Hare* in his Place, the Lyvery sued out for my Lords Lands in *Wales* ys cauled for agayne to be enrouled; Mr. *Gooldinge* saythe yt is not in the Evidence Howse, your Lordship must take Order that yt be found. Your Lordship haue bestowed *Rogyat*, which ys voyd by the Bushops Deathe; one *Moore* maketh Clayme to some Parte of hit, yt must be locked vnto, for I doubt whether he that hathe the Advousone will defend hit. Therefore, my good Lord, yt was neuer my Counsell to graunt any Advouson, but to suche as should protect yt; for by grauntinge of Advousons meny hathe byn disherited. I haue wished your Lordship first to see the Hand of some one that is learned to euey your Graunts, before you signe hit, foe dothe Men of Experience; and althoe your Lordships Pleasure be not I should doe yt, yet for your Lordships Good lett some doe yt: Mr. *Jeford* desierethe to deale for *Michillmarsh*, and prayed me to wrytt foe to your Lordship; Mr. *Carne* makethe Tytell to certen Wood in *Coyd* Muster for Estovers to his Howse of *Ewenny*, he would haue had me to deale with his Counsell therin. I tould him I had noe Warant foe to doe; yf he writt to your Lordship concerninge that Cause, I woulde wishe your Lordship not to answer hit in Hasten; yf yt will please you to aquaynt me with his Lettre, I shall help your Lordship to frame ane Answer to the same: Your Lordship had a Lease from my Ladye of *Essex*, in her Wydowod, of Parte of her Dower at a certene Rent; at the Exchange of *Lee* Personage for *Vdyame*; yt was agred there should be a lesse Rent payed, and a newe Lease made therof; I would wishe your Lordship to writt therof to my Lord of *Essex* and my Ladye, that your newe Lease myght be sealed. There ys a *Kentishe* Mane that hathe Tytle to some two or three Acres of Lands in *Lee* Personage, that should haue byn assured to Mr. Secretary, but yt was not; therefore yt is good that Order be takene, that yt may be assured to your Lordship. My Lorde of *Pembroke* wishe the to place me in Mr. *Atkins* Rome at the Marches, whoe suppliethe the Place of her Majesties Attorneys; I haue agreed with Mr. *Atkynes*. My Lord of *Pembroke* desire the that the Benche of *Lyncolns Inn* should yeald their Opinyon of me, which they have promised; my Lord Chef Justice of *England* beinge the Chef of the Howse, I praye your Lordship, yf yt shall foe please you, to write your Lettre in my Favor to my Lord Chef Justice to joyne with the rest of the Benche, and to that End I haue drawen a Lettre, yf hit please you to licke of hit, or eles as your Lordship shall think well; with twoe other Lettres, the one to my Lord of *Essex*, and the other to Mr. *Robert Cycill*, to praye their Favors in my Behalfe therin. The Copie of which Lettres that I wishe to haue, or the lyke in Effecte, be herin contayned; thus humbly takinge my Leave, I comitt your Lordship to Gods Protection. From *Lyncolnes Inne*, the xvth of this *January*, Anno 1590.

## P O S T S C R I P T.

Yf I cane fynd any Course, without fyndinge of ane Office for the Recouery to your Lordship of *Hampton Magna* and *Hampton Parva*, I think it best to followe that Course, for yt wilbe chardgable for your Lordship to fynd ane Office of the Whole, and to haue the Benefit but of that twoe Things; for I cannot fynd, by the generall Opinione, that the Revocacyon wilbe made voyd; and then haue your Lordship noe Tytle but to that whervnto I would wysh Entry to be shortly made; but first I will confer with the rest of your Councill, and writt therof to your Lordship.

Your Lordships assured to comaund,

Roger Seys.

Sir



*To my Lord Chief Justice of England.*

**A** Frynd of myne, one Mr. *Seyes*, of *Lincolnes Inn*, ane vtter Barister of eyght Yeares Standinge, by my Lord of *Pembrocks* Favor is promised to be placed in the Rome of Mr. *Atkynes*, her Majesties Attorney in the Marches of *Wales*; but my Lord of *Pembroke* wishing to haue some Comendacione of the Sufficiencie of the Gentleman for supplienge of the sayd Rome, wisheth him to procuer the Benche, or some of them of *Lyncolnes Inn* to comend hym, which they haue willingly promised: Because your Lordship was of that Howse, and ys the chefest, I praye your Lordship to vouchsafe to joyne with them in Certificat in his Favor, for the which I shalbe thankfull vnto your Lordship.

*To Mr. Robart Cycill.*

**T**H E R ys a Gentleman, a Frynd of myne, one Mr. *Seyes*, ane vtter Barister of *Lincolnes Inn*, of viijth Yeares Standinge, whoe hathe agreed with one Mr. *Atkynes*, the Queenes Attorney in the Marches of *Wales*, for Yealding to him his Place; Mr. *Atkynes* ys appoynted ther vnto by certen Instruccionen vnder her Majesties Hande for the Directinge of the Councells Proceedings there. I heare the Instruccionen be shortly to be altered, my Desier ys, yt may please you for my Sake to move my Lord your Father in his Behalfe, that vppone the next Renewinge of the sayd Instruccionen, his Name may be placed in the Rome of Mr. *Atkynes*; my Lorde of *Pembroke* hathe a Certificat from *Lincolnes Inn* of the Sufficiencye of the Gentleman.

*To my Lord of Essex.*

**T**H E R E ys a Gentleman, a Frynd of myne, one Mr. *Seyes*, ane vtter Barister of *Lyncolnes Inn*, of viijth Yeares Standinge, whoe hathe agreed with Mr. *Atkynes*, the Queenes Attorney in the Marches of *Wales*, for Yealdinge to him his Place; Mr. *Atkynes* ys appoynted ther vnto by certen Instruccionen vnder her Majesties Hand, for the Dyrectinge of the Counsellis Proceedings there. I heare the Instruccionen be shortly to be altered, my Desier ys, hit will please you for my Sake to moue my Lord Tresuror, or suche other, as Mr. *Seyes* shall pray your Help herin, that vppon the next Renewinge of the sayd Instruccionen, his Name may be placyd in the Rome of Mr. *Atkynes*; my Lord of *Pembroke* hath a Certificat from *Lyncolnes Inn* of the Sufficiency of the Gentleman.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*May it please your Lordship,*

**T**H E more that I haue to impart to your Lordship, the lesse is my Leasure to impart it as I would, for my often Meeting with the States and Council, and my necessarie Dispatches into *England*, doe so occupie all my Time, as I am forced to be short or silent with my Frindes. Sir *John Norreis* hath sent his Letters and Messengers to cause the Companies to marche; and in Case they cannot for the Contrey, that then euery Captain shall cashe his owne Company. The States, to withstand his Proceeding, haue sent their Letters of Charge to all their Townes and Officers, where the *Englishe* are in Garrison, not to minister any Meanes whereby they may passe. They haue also framed a Forme of Protest, which they haue sent to Sir *John Norreis*, with an autenticall Insinuation of the same to Sir *Francis Vere*, Sir *Thomas Morgan*, Sir *Edward Norreis*, and my self. And to tell yow very truly, I neuer see them in any Thing so perplexed as in this; wherof I knowe not what Successe Sir *John Norreis* doth expect. But for my self I am against his Cashing of Companies, it tending to no other but to the Ruine of the Companies, to the Losse of those Townes,



Townes, where the *Englishe* only are in Garrison, and to the general Detriment of the State of these Prouinces. Because in this Mater I am put in some Trust, and must answear for my Trust, if I doe not confaile for the best, I am fully resolued, whatsoeuer other Courfe shall be taken by others, to direct mine owne Actions to the Indemnitie of the Contrey. I am not vnmindful of your Lordships Request, about your Cornet of Horfe, but I take it to be a fitter Opportunie to moue it, when this Mater of Sir *John Norreis* is somewhat more ouerblowen; and so for this Present I bidde your Lordship most hartely Farewell. From the *Hage*, Feb. 9, Anno 1590.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Thomas Bodley.

Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

**I**N my last Lettre vnto your Lordship, I forgatte to make Mention of Capt. *Wray*, who is purposed to be shortly with yow, and to craue your good Furtherance in the Mater of Enterprise, whiche I imparted heere vnto yow. Because yow knowe it is not meete, to put a Letter in Trust, with Affaires of that Importance, I am to refer your Lordship to his Report, and to beseeche yow very earnestly, to assist him in his Purpose with your best Aduise and Direction; to which Effect I haue written into *England*, that I would deale with your Lordship. Of our other Maters heere, I writte vnto yow in a former by Capt. *Spring*, which I trust is deliured, and so I bidde your Lordship most hartely Farewell. From the *Hage*, Feb. 12, 1590.

Your Lordships most assured

at Commaundement,

Thomas Bodley.

Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

**B**Y your Lordships Lettre of the Fowerth of this Present, I am advertised of the gentle Opinion conceyed of me, on that Side, that I shold haue ben a great Advancer of the present Negotiacion of Sir *John Norreys*: In good Truth, I am not any Way Partaker of the Counsaill or Aduise geuen in that Behalf, but cold haue wished the Contrarie for some Respects; although for myne owne Parte, I cold haue also wished that the whole Troopes had ben drawn downe to the fower Townes, there to haue remained without any further Imploiment, vntill her Majestie might haue receyued Answear of better Satisfaction to her late Demands. I receiue from other Hands, that the States are notablie distempered with her Majesties Purpose in that Point; and that they have caused to be geuen out, that when the Commissioners from the Emperour shalbe arriued, they will incline to a Peace with *Spayne*; by which Deuise they thinke to terefie her Majestie. Yt seemeth your Lordship hath ben aduertised, that my Lords of the Counsaill shold like that the former Orders for the Manner of the Paie and Victuell shold be continued in your Garrison, and in that of *Ostend*: I am of Opinion yf you desire yt so, yt wilbe yelded vnto; howbeit, bicause your Burghers haue alwayes misliked of the Victuelling, it wold be considered, whether howe it is reformed, it wold not increase their Offence. But if your Companies were paid by the Pole in Money, after Half a Crowne by the Weeke, reserving the ij *d.* for their Armes, I thinke yt wold be best, both for the Soldior, and for the Burgher. If your Lordship shall desire either of theise, and will write to the Lords, and aduise me to mediate the same for you, I will doe my vttermoost therein; as also in aduising that Care be had for the sufficient Defence of the Places vnder your Charge.

†

I cannot



I cannot write to your Lordship any Certainty of the Affaires in *France*, but as we are aduertised here, the Duke of *Savoie* is entred with his Forces into the Towne of *Aix* in *Province*, and withall, as yt is thought, is admitted into the Towne of *Marsalles*. Yt is expected that the Duke of *Alvas* Sonne shall pass into *France* by the Way of *Nauarre* with 8000 Men; we are credibly informed that the Preparations in *Spayne* by Sea for *Brytaine* are verie great, and like to be speedely ready: And what Provision is made by the Duke of *Parma* to retorne into *France* this next Spring, you may be best aduertised where you are.

All these Preparacions concurring, and we here doubting what will become of the poore King, her Majestie hath dispatched vnto him Mr. *Edmund Yorke*, to be informed of his Case and Estate, to Thend she may proportion her Succors accordinglie, for his Reliefe. By this Meanes my Lord of *Essex* is in some Hope (if her Majestie doe increase her Numbers intended to be sent into *France*) that he shall haue the chiefe Conduction of them as Generall. *Sed hec sub sigillo dicet.*

I haue no home Newes to write vnto you, more then of the Queenes Remouing to *Greenwich* this Daie, and the Death of my Fellowe Mr. *Daniell Rogers*; and so restinge at your Lordships Devotion alwayes ready to doe you Seruice, I betake you to God. From *London*, the xijth of *February*, 1590.

Your Lordships assured alwaies

to Commaund,

Tho. Wylkes.

Roger Seys, *Esq*; to Sir Robert Sydney.

YT doth, right honorable, appeere, by the Letter herin enclosed, howe your Lordships Landes are encumbred, which wilbe noe small Hinderaunce of the Sale entended by your Lordship, yf all Things fawle not out according to *Thomas James* Assertion: Yf I endeavor to assist hime, with all the Furtherauce I may, whatsoever shall happen to be amisse, wilbe obiected against me, as heretofore yt hathe byn. He procured your Lordships Lettre vnto me, to Thende I shold not Allowe of any Leases, butt of suche as were good (as though I wold doe otherwise, had not your Lordships Lettre byn) he enforced, that I allowed a poore Mans Lease, beinge nought, and of noe Force, knowinge the same: Whervnto I am perswaded your Lordship gave suche Credit as yt deserved: Yet his Obstinacy wold not otherwise be satisfied, vntill the poore Man obtayned Mr. Attorney Generalls Hande vnto his Lease, that yt was good: This is his conteenewall Order of Abvse, bothe of your good Lordship, and of suche as most inwardly wishe your Prosperity. Wherefore I humbly beseeche your good Lordship, vnlesse some one other more, at least, be appointed to deale, that I my selfe alone doe not ioine with hime in those Actions. The Reason of thys my Request ys, for that he hathe cofooned your Lordship, besydes other notoryous Abvses: Of which, yf your Lordships Pleasure be to allowe, then have I not Cawse to dislike therwith. The Chardge he puttethe your Lordship vnto yerely ys not small, which I have wished to come to your owne Purse, and may easily hereafter be brought to passe; and allsoe your yearly Revenewes trewly awnswered by some other your Lordships Servaunts. Not, I protest, because I meane to crave any his Offices to my selfe, or any of myn; what Profit soe ever he repethe thereby; but ame fory to see hime soe prey vpon your Lordship without controwle: *Myckelmarche* might be well fowld: And some one may be fownd for Money to begge the Reversion. *Arkyngwalls* Farme is sought; yf your Lordship were here your selfe, I doubt not Money (seeing yt must soe needs be) wold be hade. At your Lordships Appointment (notwithstandinge yt be agaynst my Stomacke) I will by every Means further any Thinge for your Lordships Good. And



for restinge redy at your Lordships Commaundement, with my Duty remembered vnto my good Lady, I commit your Lordship to Thalmighty. From *Lincolns Inne*, the xxijth of *February*, An. 1590.

Your Lordships assured,

Roger Seys.

Geo. Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney:

My Lorde,

THIS Day I receayd a Letter from the Deputie of the Marchaunts, and therein one from you to Mr. Bodly, which I delivered him fourthwith, and will by the first Retorne aunswer. Your Sute to his Excellencie about the Companie of your Lordships Horsemen, has not bin forgotten: And Yesterday, uppon Mr. Bodlyes Motion to him in Counsell, was determyned to wryte to those of *Gelderlandt*; and tolyke Effecte Letters directed to Monsieur de Locres. Their Aunswere is expected, and then shall your Lordship be advertysed thereof, to Thend yow may send to Quarter them. I see his Excellencie favoureth and affecteth yow greatly, but cannot doo as he would. Sir John Norreys hath obteyned the Graunt of the ten Companies; and do thinke that he will com towards yow on Monday or Tuesday Night. Wee feare that the Duke of Parma will not go for *Fraunce*, but send Men and a Commaunder; meaninge him selfe to com towards *Nimeghen*, whoe threaten to agree with the States yf they be not holpen, and the last Yeres Forte made by the States taken within a very shorte Tyme. What the Successe wilbe, wee shall see ere longe. His Excellencie purposeth, so soone as he shall heare of any Assembly of the Ennemy, to draw all the Forces he can nere the Field, and oppose against his Deslingns. Thus, for Want of other, I humbly take my Leave, and committ your Lordship to the Favour of the Allmightie. From the *Hagb*, this 14th of *Marche*, 1590.

Your Lordships at Commandement,

Geo. Gilpin.

\* Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

YOUR Lordships of the 10th, came two Daies past vnto my Hands, with the inclosed from my Lorde. I attended no Commission to perfourme ye Contents: But yet the Negligence was great, of those that kept it so long, before they sent it vnto yow. I have caused his Excellencie to deale with this Councell, for the remouing of your Cornet; which they haue resolved to send to *Waggening*, and to that Effect, they haue written to Monsieur de Locres, the Gouvernor, to signifie their Intention. Within these 3 Daies, we expect his Answear, wherof yow shall haue Knowledge, and a Patent sent vnto yow. I am sorie Capt. Littleton hath failed of his Purpose, which is knowne all Abroade. The Occurrences heere, and howe Sir John Norreis hath spedde with the States, he himself will signifie, being almost ready to depart assoone as this Messenger. And so for this Present I bidde your Lordship farewell. From the *Hage*, *Marche* 16, 1590.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

Captain Sampson is newly come vnto the *Hagbe*, who shall Want no Assistance that I can giue, albeit his Request will, no Doubt, be rejected by the Council of State.

\* This was the famous Sir Thomas Bodley, who left to the University of Oxford, the public Library, which bears his Name. He served his Country in several Ambassies, with great Applause; as may be seen in his Life, printed at Oxon. 1647, Quarto; and in Wood's *Athenae Oxonienses*, Vol. I.



Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

THERE was nothing in my Letter, but your Lordship might see; nor I neuer have any, but yow may open very freely; albeit, I am assured, it was not what you wish. With much a doe, I haue ouerintreated this Councel, for a couple of Companies to be sent to *Ostend*. But they must be *Dutche*, and they must be returned, when the rest of their Forces shall goe into the *Fielde*. And this they haue done, to satisfie her Majestie; for otherwise they knowe, that these Alarmes are deuised by the *Gouernour*. His Courses in all Things are wonderfull displeasing to the States and the Councell; and if his Care be not the greater, to governe to their Liking, he will purchase to himself a great Deale of Trouble. To that Sir *Airnsma* proposed to your Lordship, I was neuer made privie; nor I knowe not as yet, by whome he was autorised, or what it was that he deliuered. But I thinke he was sette a Worke by those of *Zeland*. There is nothing with vs, that is ether *Newes*, or like to *Newes*; but Sir *Tho. Baskenille*, can discourse it all at large. I would be glad to heare from your Lordship of Capt. *Wraies* Imploiment, and of your good Proceeding in that Enterprise. And so for this Present, I commend your Endeavors to Gods good Direction. From the *Hage*, 23 *Marche*, 1590.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Henry Sydney.

CAPT. *Wray* hath bin heere, and we haue conferred of the Mater of your Lordships Letters; of which I receaued one by him, and another this Morning. Before the Messenger can returne, that your Lordship shall imploy to visit the Places, the Nightes will be too short to goe in Hand with that Enterprise. To disclose the Mater to the States, for mine owne Part I dare not, without Warrant from Home; which yow knowe the Time will not suffer to attend. I am of Opinion, which is also the Iudgement of Sir *Fra. Vere*, that it will be best to differ it till *October* next, at which Time, if there be no Alteration of Circumstances, but that it must be imparted of Force to the States, it may be then done, as her Highnes shall prescribe. For it would steede her Majestie exceedingly, if it could be compassed by her self, without the States, and that for sundrie very weightie Respects. I am nothing in Doubt of the Discoverie of these Maters by any of those Persons, that deliuered them to me; and your Lordship, I hope, can promise for the rest. I beseech your Lordship, because the Partie sent thither of late, was imploied by your self, and hath made Relation but to you, howe it standeth in the Towne, to aduertise her Highnes what yow thinke of the Matter, as I, in my next, will referre my self therein to your Lordships Report; wishing yow the While, all Health and Happinesse. *Hage*, 26 *Mar.* 1591.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

I have newly receiued a Letter from Sir *Horace Pallauicine*; by which I am aduertised, that the Princes of *Germany* are better affected then he could expect, promising suche Succors as haue bin required, which he is in Hope shall be ready to marche the middle of *May*. After I had written my former Letter, I receaued your Lordships of the 24 of this Month. The Companies expected here from your Lordship, for ought that I haue vnderstoode, are but two, which you did alwaies promise, and may alwaies be suche, as yow shall appoint.



point. Other two, to witt, Capt. *Wingfildes*, and Capt. *Hinders* Companies, were chosen by Sir *John Norreis*, by Order from Home. If your Lordship desire to haue any Thing changed, his Excellencie will be with you the next Weeke, who I knowe will be willing to assent to any Course that you shall require.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

THIS Bearer came to signifie of his Going to *Flushing*, when your Lordships Letter came vnto me, of the Last of *Marche*. And for the Enterprise whereof yow write, if it can be atchieued without the States, then better so, then not at all. But happily Tract of Time will minister some Ouerture, to Effect it well enough; without their Priuitie. Count *Maurice* hath promised this Councell, at his Arriual in *Zeland*, to Cause two Companies of their owne to be sent to *Ostend*. If it come, your Lordships well to passe, as I thinke it will, to speake with him of it, a Word or two vnto him, to hasten his Promise, will be very requisit. For as farre as I can perceaue by the Gouverment of *Bergben*, he was not willed by her Majesties Letter, to send any thither, vnles the States did neglect it. I knowe Sir *Edward Norris* will be very much troubled, to be then disappointed; but the Councell heere is troubled more, that they can not Commaund in a Towne of their owne. For mine owne Part, I thinke I knowe their Humor so well, as I suppose they will rather doe, as at *Gertrudenburg*, give the Towne to the Enemie, then be bridled of their Willes. It doth reuiue among some, a sinister Suspition, that her Majesties Ministers would be Masters of their Townes, and bring their Contrey into Thraldome as muche as the *Spaniard*: Whose Gouvernment they abiured for Defense of their Liberties. In Effect, the End of this Course will but falle to be Troblesome and Preiudiciall, both to her Majestie, himself, and to all our Nation, and her Majesties Seruice aduanced nothing by it. Sir *Fra. Vere* hath written from *Vtrecht* vnto me, that it hath bin his owne good Happe, to finde the Theefe that robbed him. His Mony is all come to 15 *l.* but it seemeth his Apparyll will be all recouered. Hauing no other Mater, I End with all good Wishes to your Lordships Endeours. From the *Hage*, *Aprill*, 4. 1591.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Affure your Lordship there hath wanted no Willingnes in the Council of State, to take some Order, about your Company. But those of *Waggening* (for other Place they knowe not) haue bin vrged by their Letters, very earnestly twice, and will not hearken to any Thing. For they will nether admitte any Companies more, nor no *Englishe* Men at any Hand. Hereof they haue aduertised his Excellencie, with whome if your Lordship shall please to Conferre, some other Meanes may be found; especially now, that their Forces are ready to be drawn into the Filde. Your Lieutenant was desirous to haue the Councils Patent for remouing out of *Bergben*, and of him self would make a Shift, to be receaued some where in those Vpper Quarters. But the Council would wonder, if I should make suche a Motion, and they will neuer proceede in that disorderly Sort. Howbeit, I doe not Doubt, but your Lordship, with his Excellencie, will take some other Course, that may be more to your owne, and the Contreis Satisfaction. And so I bidde your Lordship most hartely Farewell. *Aprill* 8, 1591.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

I writte



I writte this Letter, to be sent by Lieutenant *White*; but though I signified so much vnto him, and vsed him Courteously, he went his Way without my Letter, and without any Farewell.

*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

V P O N the receat of your Lordships Letter of the 12. of this Present, I acquainted the Councel both with the Tenor of her Majesties Letter, and with your Lordships desire to be excused vpon it; which they tooke in good Part in Respect of your Lordship, but disliked Count *Maurice* for detracting the Time in sending the two Companies of their owne Nation. For had they bin sent, as it was resolued, yow might well haue forboaren the sending of any Company. When that Answer is come hither, which is signified by her Majestie to be sent vnto them heare, they are fully purposed to replie againe, with a good Remonstrance. For in Truth it is needfull. And for mine owne Part, because I see the Inconuenience that is like to ensue of these crosse Proceedings of Sir *Edw. Norreis*, I will doe that Duty pertaineth to my Place, both by aduertising home, and by telling Sir *Edward* my frindly Opinion; so as I may answer all heereafter, whatsoeuer shall befall between her Highnes and this Contrey. I doe onely attend the Courtes coming hither, which I hope will be to Day, or to Morowe at the furthest, and then I will intreat him to take some better Course, for disposing of your Cornet, in some other Garrison. For Mater of Newes, all that I can signifie, is an Enterprise that was intended to be perfourmed as Yesterday, by the Count *Ouerstein*, and Sir *Fra. Vere*, vpon *Straeten* in *Guelderland*, a Place of smalle Importance, but yet held with a Garrison, and, as it is thought, a very good Booty for the Souldiers. I have no other Mater, but to wishe your Lordships Actions all happy Successe. From the *Hage*.  
*Aprill 16, 1591.*

*Your Lordships wholly at Comaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

S I N S my Last vnto your Lordship I receaued that Letter for the Generall States, which her Majestie doth mention in her Letter vnto yow. They doe greatly dislike this Maner of Proceeding, and have replied very effectually to her Majestie vpon it. Because I thought yow might desire, to see the Forme of their Answer, I haue sent yow here inclosed the Transcript of it, which your Lordship will be pleased to referue vnto your self. Count *Maurice* is come Home, but sate not yet in Counsell; but by my next, I will aduertise, what may be done about your Company. The Surprize of *Straeten* hath failed, from whens Capt. *Wray*, and Capt. *Clifford*, are returned a litle hurt, and some Twenty of our Souldiers, and 7 or 8 were slaine. I thinke Sir *Fra. Vere* will be at the *Hage* within 3 or fower Daies, by whome we shall be informed of euery particularitie of the Enemies Proceedings, we knowe nothing more, then your Lordship may see by the Letter of the Counsell, for which I End with my wanted; which are alwaies my best and most affectionat Wishees to your Lordships Estate. From the *Hage*, *Ap. 19. 1591.*

*Your Lordships assured*

*and at Commaundement*

Tho. Bodley.



George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My very good Lorde,

**N**Eyther forgetfulnes of Dewtie, nor any other Occasion, haue or could haue caused my Sylence thus longe, yf there had bin any Niewes or other Subject, offred worthy the troublinge of your Lordship; all havinge bin of late soo quyet and still, that I asure yow, I know not what to write; and therefore beseech your Lordship, not to take any Offence there at, neyther to dowbt of my sincere Affection towards yow, with no lesse desyre to doo youe all ready Sarvyce to thuttermost of my Power, when, and where foeuer yt shall please youe to commaunde me. At this Present we haue not any Niewes, but such as com from your Partes; here is continual Meetinge of the States, but heare not what they do as yett; his Excellencie is very earnest to further thintended Campe, whereto all the Prouisions and Necessaryes, are all most in a Readynes, and Thofficers for the Fielde sett downe; resteth onely to draw the Men together, and determyne vppon the Place of Sarvice, which I think will fall owt towards *Gelderlande*. The wurst is that yt seemeth they of *Frieslande* are not soo redy to fend the Men, were promysed. All the Horse Companies of these Contries are renforced and mustred to 120 Horse; They of *Vtrecht* make still denial to pay the Horsmen of the Count *Ouersteyn*, and to yelde to any extraordinary Contribution towards the Campe, pleadinge their Pouertie. Owt of *Germanie* no Certaintie harde of the Army, but the Reportes diuers; the Count *Hohenlo* had sent a Messenger with Lettres, but are intercepted by those of *Nimegben*. From the *Haeghe*, this 28 of *Aprill*, 1591.

Your Lordships, &amp;c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

**I** Was at *Enchusen*, when your Lordships Letter came hither of the 20 of this present; which was the Cause of my Stay, from answering sooner, albeit there was no Mater that required a speedy Answer. Your Lordships Coniecture is very right concerning Sir *Edward Norris*, who giveth great Occasion, and euery Day more, of iust Discontentment to the Councel of State.

If your Lordship haue suche Stoare, as you can spare me a Copie of those *Brownistes* Bookes, I will giue them the reading; and your Lordship hartly Thankes. I would your going for *England* at *Michaelmas*, were brought to *Midsummer*, for that it is easier at first to hinder ill Impressions, then to route them out after, being once conceaued. Albeit for your Lordship, I can not ghesse at any Mater, that should cause a Dislike, vnles it be not to be liked, that you keepe so well in Tune, with the States of these Contreis: which I knowe is the best for her Majesties Seruice, and shall be alwaies my Endeauour; and if it be not well construed, it will occasion, I hope, that I shall be revoked; which hath bin very lately my humble Sute vnto her Majestie. I haue moued his Excellencie about your Lordships Company, in whome there wanteth no Willingnes, as he hath shewed by his Speeches, in conferring with the Councel. But they can not for the present, assigne you any Place, and they think it not needfull, considering they are ready to goe into the Feelde. Wanting other Mater, I commend your Lordships Designs to Gods good Direction. From the *Hage*, *April* 29, 1591.

Your Lordships euer, and at comaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

Geo.



Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Henry Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

**H**IS Excellencie thinkes long till he be in Field, and omitteth no Meanes to further the same. Sir *Frauncis Vere* departed this Morninge towards his Quarter, with Chardge to haue Care and Regard, that there be no Prouisions put into *Deuenter* or *Sutpsin*, but to attempt the letting thereof. *Verdugo* is retorned to *Groeninghen*, where he entred on *Sonday* last, and was receavyd of the Magistrates, and those that fauour him, very ioyfully, with Shewting of Thordinaunce, and such lyke Thinges of Joye, but Men brought he none hither; and these Fellowes he hath in Felde, are in poor Ordre and Weake. In *Nimeghen* the Burgers beginne to feare, and are lik to fall into Diuision, and would er this haue bin by the Ears together, had not the Garrison setled yt, being thought yf his Excellencie go thither, that they would not holde ovt, but com to an Agreement presently. I heare that within thes six or eyght Days, his Excellencie will depart towards the Rendezvous. All Things els stand and continew after the old Course and Order: From *Germany* yt is written the Levy for the *French* King goeth forwardes apace, and that the Emperoor studyes to practise a Peace. From the *Hague*, this 8 of *May*, 1591.

*Your Lordships at commaundment,*

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

**I** Affure your Lordship, I knowe not what to make of that Siege of the Towne of *Ostend*; for methinkes that Garrison is more trobled with a Siege in report, then some other would be troubled with a Siege in Action. We shall see by this Winde, what Answear will be made to that Letter of the Councel, which was sent vnto her Majestie. To your Lordships Letter, with the Booke of *Barowe*, for which I thanke you very hartely; I sent a present Answear the next Day after, which I cannot nowe remember to whom I delivered, nor what other Mater it contened. And though I thinke there were nothing that could turne me to Anger, yet, in Truth, I am angrie that any Letter should miscarrie. Our Councel of State is removed to *Vtrecht*, and will reside ether there, or in some other Place, that is near to the Campe: Where I purpose to goe after, but that I looke by this Winde for some Letter from Home, which I would willingly receaue before I go from the *Hage*. Since the taking of *Zutphen* Sconce, I know not what Action is vndertaken at the Campe; for in the Absence of the Councell our Intelligence heere is exceeding Slender. Howbeit it is given out, that they are busily occupied about the planting of Artillerie before the Towne it self of *Zutphen*. As any Certaintie cometh hither of any Mater of Worthe, I will aduertise your Lordship with the spediest Opportunitie; which I would not haue omitted for a Weeke or two past, but that I made full Account, that your Lordship was departed, and would before this have bin at the Campe. The *Germany* Levie goeth forward very slowly; for I am newly nowe aduertised from Sir *Horace Palavicine*, that they will not be ready to come forward till the 12 of *July*. Their Numbers will be suche as were demaunded at the first; 6000 Horse and 9000 Foote, 1200 Pioners, 6 Canons, and 12 Feeld Peeces; which Way they shall passe it is not yet resolued. And so I cease at this present from troubling your Lordship, till other Mater be offered. From the *Hage*, *May* 20, 1591.

*Your Lordships wholly, and at commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

Sir



*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**S**IN S the Writing of my former, which I sent your Lordship by this Bearer, we haue Intelligence from the Campe, that the Count of *Ouerstein*, attended by certaine Souldiers of the Enemie, that lay in Ambuscado, was shotte in the Head, wherof he died presently. Sir *Francis Vere* being with him, escaped very narrowly, his Horfe being hurt. *May 21, 1591.*

*Your Lordships at commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**T**O shewe your Lordship my Opinion in the Mater of *Dunkerk*, there is no danger in Delay. For the svrest Season is the Moneth of *October*, when the Nightes beginne to lengthen; for which, me thinkes, at your Leasure, you may talke with Count *Maurice*. To this Effect I haue written into *England*; and withall I haue signified, that I will wholly proceede, with your Lordships priuitie, not doubting but what her Majestie doth desire shall be accomplished in good Time. This Bearers haft doth affourd me no Leasure to be longer with your Lordship, for which I wish you, as alwaies, all Maner of good Successe. From the *Hague*, *June 4, 1591.*

*Your Lordships at commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**F**OR want of good Leasure to discourse, as I would, I send your Lordship herewith the Copie of a Letter, which I writte this Morning vnto my Lord Treasurer. I thinke the Party will embarke at *Flushing*, and, as I am perswaded, will come to your Lordship. Sins his going from hens I doe learne, that he is very full of Mony, to a greater Summe then a common Souldier, and a Man of his Shewe is wont to carie. His Answer was to one that sawe his Mony, that he had it of your Lordship to pay at the Campe: Which maketh me suspect, that he may have bin hired for some worse Intent then he pretendeth, and that he vseth my Letter, but in steade of a Passeport, to gette in to *England*. I pray your Lordship, if he chance to come vnto you, or otherwise, if by enquirie you shall find him in *Flushing*, to examine him strictly, to suche Purpose as your self shall see Cause, and if you finde it requisite, to take my Letter from him; and to detene him, till suche Time as you haue aduertised my Lord Treasurer of him; which I referre to your Lordships Wisdome. The Man is of a lowe Stature, of the Age of 53, or thereabout, apparelled meaneley, with a Cloke of the Colour of this Bearer, a greene Paire of nether Stockes, and an old embrodered Sattin Doublet. Our Camp this Morning remoued to-wardes *Groeninghen*; but their Artillerie was embarked 4 Daies before. If your Lordship please to send your Letters to Mr. *Copert*, I haue giuen such Order, as he will send them very safely. From the *Hage*, *June 6, 1591.*

*Your Lordships euer and**at commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir*



Sir Thomas Bodley to William Lord Burghley.

May it please your good Lordship,

THE Bearer hereof, *Ibon Minche*, hauing serued a long Time in these Countreys, was taken Prisoner by the Ennemy about 5 Weekes past, and brought Prisoner to *Bolduc*, and from thence to *Bruxels*, and laste of all to *Andwerpe*. In the Time of his Emprisonment, he had Conference in *Bruxels* with one *Ibon Dampor*, a *Cheshire* Gentleman, and a Pensioner to the King of *Spaine*, who seeming to be weary of the Kings Seruice; and desirous to forsake the Companie of the *Englishe* Fugitiues, discouered his Minde to this Bearer, and willed him without all Delay, to repaire into *England*, and there notifie speedile, that there were certain *Englishe*men in *Bruxels* which had a mischievous Practise in Hand vpon her Majesties Shippes. For the effecting wherof they had sent certain Mariners into *England*, and appareled like *Burgers*, which were addressed to a *Duche* Mans House in *St. Katherins*, near to the *Towre*, who bestoweth them in Seruice in the foresaid Shippes, with Instruction to watche an Opportunity to sett them on fire. The Truthe hereof I knowe no otherwise but by his owne Report, who as far as I can perceauce, hath no other Proofo nor Coniecture, but by the Speeches of *Ibon Dampor*, which also I knowe not how truly he avoucheth. Neuertheles, because he offereth of him self to make this Voyage, requiring nothing of mee but to giue him Meanes by a Letter unto your Lordships, or some other of my Lords, to haue acceffe, I thought to write thus much by him, and to signifie heer vnto him, that yf by his Travell and Seruice the Parties be descried, he wilbee well rewarded, otherwise I could make him no Promise, nor he mighte not build vpon it, for his onely good Will, and this bare Declaration to receave any Recompense. And thus, &c. Hage, June 6, 1591.

Your Lordships, &c.

Thomas Bodley.

\* Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.

YOUR Lordships Lettre of the xxviiijth of *April* came to my Hand the xxvth of *May*: I beeing at that Tyme at my House in *Wiltshire*, where by her Majesties speciall Licence I had continued some xx<sup>tie</sup> Daies, not having seene it twoe Yeares before. This Occasion of myne Absence hath somewhat interrupted my Course of Writing vnto you, which I will amend nowe I am againe in Place.

I doe assure your Lordship, vpon the Faith and Trewth of an honest Man, and by the Loue I beare vnto you (which I beseech you beleue, not to be inferior to the Affection of any Man borne towards you) that I doe not finde in the Counsaill here any other then a verie good and honorable Opinion conceaued of you in the Managing of your Governement on that Side, which they

\* Sir Thomas Wylkes had his Education in *All Soules Colledge* in *Oxford*, and was first Secretary to Dr. *Valentine Dale*, Ambassador from Queen *Elizabeth* to the King of *France*. While he continued there, he comforted the King of *Narvar*, and the Duke of *Allensan* (after of *Anjou*) in the Queen of *England*'s Name, when they were in Custody by Order of the Queen Mother, for plotting to remove her from the Government. On which the Queen Mother forced him to withdraw into *England*, where she also followed him with Letters of Complaint; and to pacify her he was sent back into *France*, and there humbly craved her Pardon. But the King of *Narvar*, when he came to be King of *France*, retained so grateful a Remembrance of him, that when he saw him in *Normandy* 25 Yeares after, he conferred on him the Degree of Knighthood, and shewed much Favor to him. In 1577 he was sent Ambassador into *Spain*; and the Year after was sent to Don *John* of *Austria*. In 1593 he was sent into *France*, on the Report of the *French* King's being reconciled to the Church of *Rome*, and to dissuade him from it. Also in 1598, he was againe sent into *France* with Sir *Robert Cecill*, but died there soon after he landed.



doe not lett by Speech to signifie oftentimes, when your Name and Doing doe come in Question : And Sir, I doe assure you there is noe lesse good liking had of your good Correspondencie with the People of that Countrey, considering yt is mixed with the Care of your Charge and Preseruacion of the Place to her Majestie. I am of Opinion there wilbe noe Defection in them from her Majestie, so long as they shall finde we seeke not to maister them, or depriue them of their vsuall Trade and Commoditie by their Traffique and Shipping ; and withall you will consider howe beneficiall a Thing yt is vnto them to haue a Garri-son well governed amongst them, from the which they drawe so continuall a Profit and Benefitt, as they doe from our Nation, in that Place vnder your Conduction. Ther hath ben of late some Suite attempted by Mr. *Raph Lane* to drawe from her Majestie the Disposing of the *Ramekins* vpon him, which hath ben incountred by my Lord Thresorer and other your Freinds here, who made yt appeare, that the same was in your Lettres Patentes, and therefore the Disposition therof in your self, which is some good Effect of their Care and Respect had of you. Yf there shall at any Tyme happen, that there be Cause to aduise you, concerninge your Charge and Honor in that Place, I beseech you beleue that my poore self shalbe one of the first that will give you Notice, and acquaint you with the Errour, that yow may knowe howe to reforme yt. But I maie say truelie vnto you without Flaterie, that if the rest of your Government doe answere that which hath ben hitherto, you shall continue and end with Honour.

I suppose you haue hard of her Majesties great Entertainement of late at Tibballs, of her Knighting of Mr. *Robert Cicill*, and of the Expectacion of his Advancement to the Secretarishipp : But soe yt is (as we saie in Court) that the Knighthoode must serue for both. Other Alteracion there is none in Court, but all Things swaie after the old Manner, saving that we are of late gladded with the good Successe of the Counte *Maurice*, and of Sir *John Norreys*, in *Britayne*, wherof I wold write vnto your Lordship at large, but that you shall receaue the whole Discourse herewith from Mr. *Richard Wigmore*, my good Freind, and a Man that doth loue and honour you ; to whom if yt shall please your Lordship to write, I will see your Lettres safelie conveyed ; and so resting at your Lordships Devotion and Comandement, I comitt you to the Protection of Almighty God. From the Court at *Greenwicke* the viijth of June, 1591.

*Your Lordships assured euer to Commande,*

Tho. Wylkes.

This Daie, Sir *John Perrott* is for the last Tyme examined at the *Tower*, by my Lords of the Counsaill, and before the Ende of this Terme he is to be indited of sondrie Treasons, and so further proceeded withall at her Majesties Pleasure.

*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Haue receiued your Lordships of the second of this Present, in the which you make noe Answere to my former, nor any mention therof, so as I feare yt came not to your Hands : Yt conteyned Matter of Answere to another from your selfe, which I greatlie desired might come to your Knowledge.

The Knowledge of your owne Vertues haue made me loue you, besides the Inclination I haue alwayes had to doe Seruice to your House : I professe to loue but a fewe, and every of those are assured of a large Portion of my Harte, which when they haue, they haue all : For, besides my Loue I haue nothing in Habilitie or Place to expresse yt, as you knowe. And therefore my Debt is  
† the



the greater vnto you, that you accompt of my Loue, which can yeild you no better Effects.

In the Matter of the *Ramekins*, so earnestlie prosecuted by Mr. *Lane*, I finde my Lords of the Counsaill, your good and assured Freinds; for although yt was once resolued by her Majestie, and her Pleasure to haue ben signified from the Lords vnto you, and I receiued Instructions to write vnto you, that notwithstanding the Disposing of that Place were left vnto you by your Lettres Patents, the same shold be bestowed on Mr. *Lane*; the Lettres being thervpon drawn and presented to the Borde, they were vpon some small Motion of myne reiected. Wherein my Lord Chancellor and my Lord Thresorer cheefely did shewe their Affections towards you, deliuering many good and honorable Speeches of you. You are so wise as I shall not neede to aduise you, to entertaine the good Opinions of those two Men, by all the Meanes you may.

You are beholding greatlie to Sir *Thomas Sherley*, who vppon all Occasions that doe concerne you, or your Reputacion, ommitteth noe Office of a true Freinde.

The xxth of this Moneth my Lord of *Essex* intendeth to imbarque with his Troopes of 4000 Men for *Normandy*; in which Expedition Sir *Thomas Sherley* and my self were appointed Counsaillors to the Earle, which with much adoe we haue auoyded (as I hope). And I haue not knowen so gallant a Troope goe out of *England* with so many young and vntrained Commanders.

Your Opinion of the Humour of that Contrey People (I feare) will happen to be more trewe, then were fitte for her Majestie to finde; and yt is as impossible to alter the Courfes here, which doe and will prouoke them to so dangerous Alteracions, as yt was facile at the first, to haue remoued all Jealousyes on both Sides. Good Sir, I must saie truelie vnto you, I finde no Man that hath Place about her Majestie take Care of theise future Inconueniences; and for Men of meaner Place to moue any Remembrance of those Matters, were but to breede himself an Opinion in them, to be more curious and officious then becometh him. Yf you hadd seene the Answares of the States to the Propositions deliuered by me at my last being in those *Lowe Countreys*, they wold not a little confirme your present Conceipte; and therefore for my Parte, I will praie for the Better and feare the Worst. We doe not a little marvaile of the present Actions and Intentions of the Duke of *Parma*; we haue Newes that the Army of *Germany* marcheth: Sir *John Norreys* with the Army in *Britaigne* prosper and goe forewarde; we take Courage here in Court, and expecte some good Yssue of this Sommer. What is intended by Sea against the *Indias* Fleete, you haue ben aduertised by Lettres from my Lords: And thus much you must vnderstand, that although *Holland* and *Zealand* assist vs not in that Enterprise, yet doe we prepare sufficient Strength of our owne; and so with my most hartie Salutations I leaue you to Gods Protection. From *London* the xjth of *July*, 1591.

*Your Lordships assured euer to Commande,*

Thomas Wylkes.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Told your Lordship, at your being at *Arnhem*, howe much the States are discontented with the Gouvernour of *Ostend*, who continueth his Proceedings so offensively vnto them, as he had neede of a great St. *Chrestopher* to carie him out of the Danger of a hard Resolution to be taken against him. I pray yowr Lordship, when you knowe what is done by Mr. *Lakes*, to lette me vnderstand it. For I can not be perswaded, that it should be to communicate any Mater of such Secrecie; for his Treaty about a Peace was imparted by his Letters, and I doubt a greater Mater, or more deserving to be closely caried, he



he can hardly haue any. Howsoever, in my Opinion, all his Secrets and Deuises are but Wordes and Winde, and mere Chimeres, which purchase in the Ende the Discredit of his Actions. His Excellencie for *Hulst*, doth expect euery Houre some Informacion from Count *Holmes*, and I thinke therupon will attempt it presently, for the Contrey calleth on him to doe somewhat somewhere. The Enemye, we are informed, doth marche to *Mastrich*, which causeth those of *Guelders* to calle againe for the Forces, to be imployed against *Nimeueghen*. If any Thing of Worthe be determined here, or any good Occurrence come to vs, I will not faile to lett yow knowe it, as I wishe continually your Happines in all Thinges. From the *Hage*, Aug. 31, 1591.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

\* Thomas, Lord Buckehurst to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

THE Bearer, Mr. *Ratlif*, can at large informe you of the good Succes of his Caus. Toching your owne I moved her Majestie twise for your Leave, but found her at both Times unwilling; and at the later pressing her Majesti very hard, with such Reasons as cold not in Reason be gainsaied. I found that in her Majesties Brest there resteth some what of a bye Matter, in which she standeth not so well pleased towards you. Her Wordes were thes, wherby I think you may esely conjecture the Matter. Namely, That you were at a Bankett here, &c. Thes Thinges I impart unto you, as in my true Love unto you, praieing you to hold the same to your self, as never imparted by me; for that might prejudice me for my good Will to you. Nevertheles I am at this Instant returning to the Court, and mene againe and againe to presse her for you, and if I can obtain her Licens, you shall heere from me; if I write not, then the Succes is not such as I wishe. I shall not now stay at the Court above 4 or 5 Daies, and if in that Time I can not effect it, I will earnestly move my Lord Threforer to doe it for you in mine Absens; for untill *Michelmas* I shall not be at the Court, which wold be to late for your Purpose. For lack of Leafure, I must pray you to commend me very hartely to Mr. *Borlaise*, with many Thanckes for his courteous Writing, and to excuse me for not writing to him againe. I will requite him with a better turne; namely, to rest redy on all Occasions to frend him. The same Request I must also make to your self, from whom receving many courteous Letters, I return few, not for lack of good Will, but of acceptable Matter to write. I rest al and ever yours. From *Draiton*, 13 Aug. 1591.

Your very loving and assuired Frend,

Supercribed,

T. Buckhurst.

To my very loving and assuired Frend, Sir Robert Sidney, Knight, Governor of *Flusbinge*.

\* His Lordship was Lord High Treasurer of *England*, both in the Reigns of Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James*; was created Earl of *Dorset*; and is celebrated by our Historians for the Brightness of his Parts, Integrity in the Service of his Country, and all those Virtues which adorn every good Man. And it is no less remarkable, That every of his Descendants, have inherited as well his Abilities, as his Titles; and have born the highest Stations in the Government, honoured and esteemed by Men of all Parties and Perswasions. And his Grace *Lionel*, Duke of *Dorset*, the 5th in Descent from him, (but 6th Earl of *Dorset*) was, in Consideration of his great Merits, created Duke of *Dorset* by his late Majestie; and is now Lord President of his most honourable Privy Council.



*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

S I R,  
**T**H E Occasion of the Repaier of Mr. *Lakes* into those Countries, hath geuen me this Opportunitie to write vnto you, more to signifie my Affection and Devotion to doe you Seruice, then to aduertise you of any Noveltye from hence; for that Mr. *Lake* is well acquainted with the State of all Things here, and can best informe you of such Particularities as are worthie of your Knowledg.

Sir *Robert Cecill* (as you may haue hearde) is sworne of the Counsell, though not Secretarie; whose Election (as I conceaue) will be a Barre to the Choice of any Secretary during the Life of his Father.

Out of *France* we receiue, that the King is marching towards the Confines of *Bourgondie*, to receaue the *Germane* Army, which is alreadie passed through *Lorraine*; by Meanes wherof my Lord of *Essex* continueth still about *Diepe* with his Armie.

Out of *Bretaigne*, by Lettres of the Last of *Julie*, we are aduertised of the Death of *Monsieur de la Nouë*, of a Wounde receiued in the Heade before *Lamballis*: He departed this Life the xxiiijth of *Julie*.

*Monsieur de la Verdin* is ioyned with the Prince *de D' Ombes*, and renforced his Troopes with 1200 Foote, and 200 Horse; whervpon there is a Resolution taken, to offer Battaile to the Duke *de Mercure*, which we suppose is alreadie given, or the Enemy forced to forsake the Fielde. This briefelie is as much as I can at this Tyme write vnto you, and therefore I will ende with my verie humble and hartie Salutacions. From *London*, the xvijth of *August*, 1591.

*Yours, assured ever to Commande,*

Tho. Wylkes.

*Geo. Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*May yt please your Lordship,*

**Y**OUR Lordship wrytes, yowe vnderstand nothinge of *Hulst*, and his Excellencie of late sayd, that he expected to heare from those Partes, naminge the Count *Solnis* and youe; thus much I perceive, that he will not lightly Attempt any Place, without certain Lykelyhood to Speede; here is not any Niewes stirring, vnlesse yt be that our Men, which were sent to scarre the Levy of Men by *Lingen*, haue effected nothing, onely in their retorne, light vppon Kowes, Swyne, and other Cattle, and brought greate Stoare for Prouision against Winter: Yf yt had bin Thenemies al would be wel, but they are Newetrals, and Lettres com from all Places full of Complaynts and Exclamations; what Reason they shall haue wilbe seene: The Gatheringe of the Duke of *Lawnborgh*, is about *Munster*, and had som 6 or 700 Men; yt seemeth his Number shall stay and be imployed in these Contryes. We looke for Sir *Frauncys Vere* euery Day, and yf he bringe vs any Niewes, your Lordship shalbe Pertaker; in Recompenſe of these my humble Desyre is, we may heare of Mr. *Lakes* Negociation with Sir *Edwarde*, whome som do Dowbt to haue proceeded to farre by Dealinge in Matters beyond his Charge of Gouvernorship, and can be no other Fruytes expected, then to breede niefelousies and Diffidencies wich make these Men loathe, and loth to imploy our Nation; whereof at our Meetinge may be discourſed furdre. From the *Haeghe*, this 31th of *August*, 1591.

*Your Lordships, &c.*

Geo. Gilpin.



*Conte Maurice de Nassau a Monsieur Monsieur de Sydney.*

*Monsieur,*

**J**É suis arrivé en ce lieu de *Cathbeck*, avec bon Nombre des gens de guerre, & aultres Provisions, a Intention de Mettre fin a nostre Enterprise sur la Ville de *Hulst*, la quelle J'espere moyennant la Grace et Aide de Dieu, remettre soubz l'obeissance de Messieurs les Estats Generaulx. Je vous prie Monsieur si vostre Commodité le peut souffrir, de me faire ce plaisir, que de me Venir trouver, et si possible est avec une bonne Compagnie de Vostre Gouvernement, laquelle je Vous prie tenir preste, si faire se peult, pour quand je passeray par devant *Ulissinghe* : Car par la fault il que je prenne mon Chemin. Et sur ce apres mes humble Recommendations, et voz bonnes Graces, je prieray Dieu vous avoir.

*Monsieur,*

En sa saincte Protection. De mon batteau a *Cathboeck*, ce xviii de Septembre, 1591.

*Vostre tres affectionné amy*

*a vous faire Service,*

Maurice de Nassau.

*Conte Maurice de Nassau to Monsieur Monsieur de Sydney.*

*Monsieur,*

**J**É suis resolu, suivant ce que je vous ay escript ce Jourdhuy, de faire Voile ce soir, pour me trouver demain a laute de jour a *Hulsterhaven* et *Calverstert*. Et pourtant, je vous prie une aultre fois, si vostre Disposition et Affaires permettent, de me faire aultant du plaisir, aultant du plaisir, que de me venir trouver au mesme lieu, avec la Compagnie que je vous ay prie ce Jourdhuy. Et de mesme chemin prendre avec vous, tous les meilleurs Cannoniers que vous avez a *Flissinghe*, pour servir a cest exploict : Car se fera comme j'espere, sinon que pour bien peu de joues. Et sur ce apres humbles Recommendations en voz bonnes Graces, je prieray Dieu Vous maintenir.

*Monsieur,*

En sa saincte Protection. De mon batteau a l'opposite de *Arnhemuyden*, ce xviii de Septembre, 1591.

*Vostre tres affectionné amy*

*a vous faire Service,*

Maurice de Nassau.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**H**EERE is nothing stirring, that is worth the Writing to your Lordship. Only as this Day we are informed, that the Castel of *Anholt* is in Parley with those of *Gueders*. I thinke your Lordship hath heard of the Taking of the Town, which was done by Captain *Lambert*, without Commission from hens, and in that Respect disliked ; but yet the Contrey is contented to reape the Benefit of his Service. We looke euery Houre for Count *Maurice* Returne, till when it will not be resolved what is next to be attempted. Howbeit, *Nieu-meghen* is chiefly thought vpon. I would gladly heare from you, how you propose to execut your long intended Surprise. Whether you hitte or faile, there is nether Danger nor Dishonor. But your Lordship that knoweth euery Circumstance, will putte in Practise what is best. If your Leau for *England* be graunted, I beseeche you lett me knowe some litle Time before. For I would



would write a Worde by your Lordship about my Reuocation; and, withall<sup>l</sup> I would intreat yow, to afforde me of your Fauor, if it come yow well to passe. I haue all the Reason in the World to alleage for my self, as your Lordship, er yow goe, shall be thorowly instructed: Besides, I haue her Majesties Promise for the End of this Sommer. In this, or any Thing els, I will make that Reckning of your Willingnes to pleasure me, as yow, I hope, will account that I am yours at all Essaies. And so I bidde yow most hartely and happely farewell. From the *Hage*, Sept. 21, 1591.

Your Lordships at Commaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

\* Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney.

YOUR Lordships Letters I receaued at the Court on *Wednesday*, with Letters to my Lord of *Buckburst*, and Mr. *Stanhope*, sent vnto me by Mr. *Burnham*, which I deliuered. They speake well both, but what they will doe you shall best iudge as you fynde. Our Matters of *Ostend* are very much encumbred. The States resist very bitterly. Mr. *Bodley* doubtfully, and Sir *Edward Norris* hath fallen into the high Indignation of my Lord Thresurer, which chanced during the Tyme that I was there. For Matters startid to tedious to expresse in a Letter, but in Effect for nourysing a Dependency vppon others, besides his Lordship, which will hardly be put vp. And therefore, if your Lordship have any Thing to doe here, move as few Friends as you can besides; for it is ill taken. I thought good to put you in Mynde of it, because I fynde him in a good Opinion of you, and enquired of me manie Particularites of your Gouverment. It is good to hold in; olde *Saturnus* is a melancholy and Weyward Planet, but yet predominant here, and if you haue Turne thus do doe, it must be don that Way; and whatsoeuer Hope you haue of anie other, belieue it not.

Our *French* Matters goe very Waywardly, the Queen is fallen out with the King, for misbehaving of him selfe towards her People, as she conceaveth it. And both the Lord and his Troupes are peremptorily sent for, yet his Friendes here doubt he will not come.

Mr. *Burnham* I thinke will writt to your Lordship such Newes as are Currant, here and the Reports that are come here, of our Fleets at Sea, which are very discomfortable. Sir *Richard Grenfeld* is sayd to be taken with the *Revenge*.

\* Sir Thomas Lake was born at *Southampton*, and having a learned Education, and good natural Parts, was imployed by the memorable Sir *Francis Walsingham*, Secretary of State, as his Amanuensis; and by him recommended to Queen *Elizabeth*, to read to her *French* and *Latin*, who made him Clerk of her Signet. On the Demise of the Queen, he was by the Regency, sent to attend King *James the First* from *Berwick*, who after Knighted him, and made use of his Service in *French* Affairs. Also by Patent dated 2 *January*, in the 7th Year of his Reign, constitutes him (being then one of the Clerks of the Signet) his Secretary for the *Latin* Tongue, during Life. His Sufficiency further appearing, he was sworn of the Privy Council, 29th of *March*, 1614; and on the 3d of *June*, 1616, was sworn one of the principal Secretaries of State: But in *February* following, having married his eldest Daughter to *William Cecill*, Lord *Roos*, only Son and Heir of *William*, Earl of *Exeter*, by his 1st Wife; he was involved into the Quarrel of his Wife and Daughter, with the Countess Dowager of *Exeter*, which was the chief and only Cause of his Ruin; for thereupon he was dismissed from his Office of Secretary of State, and sent to the *Tower* 15th of *February*, 1619; having continued till then in the honourable Esteem of all Men, and of the King himself, who advised Sir *Thomas*, to leave his Wife and Daughter to the Law. Whereunto he humbly thanked his Majesty, but said, *He could not refuse to be a Father, and a Husband*. On the Hearing in the *Star-Chamber*, he and his Lady were fined 10000 *l.* to the King, 5000 *l.* to the Countess, and 50 *l.* to one Mr. *Hutton*. The King is said to compare their Crimes to the first Plot, of the first *Sin in Paradise*: The Lady Lake to the *Serpent*, her Daughter unto *Eve*, and Sir *Thomas* to poor *Adam*, whom he thought in his Conscience, that his Love to his Wife, had beguiled him. And he was truly pittied by all the Court. His Wife was *Mary*, eldest Daughter of Sir *William Rytter*, Lord Mayor of *London*, by whom he had Sons and Daughters. *Anticus Coquinarius*, P. 98, & Seq. *Wood's Fasti Oxoniensis*, Vol. I. *Camden's Annals*, &c.

The



The Lord Harry Vettingale is come out of *France*, and bringeth Word that *Gourni* is taken, and that the Army is marching towards *Candebec*, to attempt that, and the Castle of *Bleynvill*, while the Horse is coming forward with the Reysties, which I thinke wilbe long first, for we heare he is marched towards *Franch* Counte to make Head against the Popes Forces.

There are in the Army of *Normandy*, Mar. *Byron* with 7000 of Horse and Foote, *Hallot Montmorency*, and Lieutenant to the Duke *Montpensier* 4000 Foot, and 500 Horse. The *Engliss* 4000 Foot, 200 Horse, 10 Cannons out of *England*; 8 of the *Low Countryes*, 8 from *Calais*; but that Mareschall *Byron* hath but little Prouision of Munition answerable thereto.

I writt not much because I loue not to writt but the Truth of that I meddle with. And so leaue your Lordship to the Protection of the Almighty God. From *London* the First of *October*, 1591.

Your Lordships to command,

Tho. Lake.

Thomas Lord Buckhurst to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

I Moved her Majestie upon *Saturday* last, for her gracious Licens for your Returne. I found her Majestie much more inclinable than heretofore; and yet she touched a little upon the old Greife, wherein I presumed to justefy you, and as to me semeth, it wrought some good Effect with her. And she said, that as touching your Returne, she would first be assured of the Duke of *Parma's* Intentions, either for his Journey into *Wormes*, or for his Designes in the *Low-Countryes*. I told her Majestie, that by *Albantide*, that would aparantly be sene; and though she misliked not of that Time for your Returne, as I gathered, yet she wold not have me to certify you, but willed me to stay a While longer. And talking with my Lord Thresurer, he seemed to understand her Majestie, that it were not fit you returned til the End of the Terme. So as though the Time of your Return be not yet certain. Yet her Majesties gracious Agreement for your Returne within a very short Time, is certain. You shalbe sure, that I will not forget to sollicite it to her Majestie, till I bring it to a final End. And so al, and ever yours, I end. Her Majestie is now plesed to continue my Lord of *Essex*, and the Forces in *France*, for one Month longer. In Hast this 6 of *October*, 1591.

Your very loving and assurid Frend,

T. Buckehurst.

My very good Lorde,

SIR Thomas Baskefielde, deliuered me yours of the 21 of the Last, beinge sorry the Entrepryse had no better Succes, which in som Sorte I feared afore because the chief Mover and Informer of the same, is somewhat Infortunate, as appeares by other attempted Sarvices; and yet is thought by som not to be so straunge, because if a certain Humour doth in som Sorte possesse him, whereof I omit to wryte further, in Hope, ere longe, to meet with your Lordship. I was at my Being in *Middleboroughe* to visit Mr. *Villers*, where I fownde my Interteynement coolder then heretofore; what the Cause is I cannot imagine, but sure I am, that I desaryd better, and will Content my selfe, though yt had bin Lesse; the Copies your Lordship desyres, I will haue written freshe, and shalbe sent by my next, if they be dispatched, with certain Copies of intercepted Lettres written by the Kinge of *Spayne*, to his Ambassador in *Germaine*



*manie* beinge of Importaunce : His Excellencie is here, and as wee heare meanes to be Abroade agayne ere longe, but diuers thinke he will first vnto *Vytrecht* to take Possession of the Gouverment and establishe som better Order. They of *Gelderland* insiste to haue him accepte of their Offer, and that the Counsell of State would dispense with the Mediation which the Treatie appoynteth, but that is not yet resolved of. Yet I perceiue they will assent to the Choyce made of him ; here were certain Speeches that Sir *John Norrys* was sent for owt of *Ireland*, to com hither, with certain Troupes, but I perceave his Welcom should be coalde ; Count *Hobenlo* is stil Abroade in *Kemperland*, but nothinge said what he effecteth. They of *Zelande*, haue bin earnest in complayninge against the staying of Shypes bownd for *Spayne*, and haue at last obtayned an Aunswere, that Deputes shalbe sent ouer to hir Majestye ; whoe they shalbe not known as yet. From the *Haege* this 1 November, 1591.

Your Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

I Doe not doubt but your Lordship is informed of her Majesties Desire to haue some Companies from hens for the Seruice of *Rouen*. There was neuer worse Time to propose suche a Mater, for that the Deputies of the States are all in their Prouinces, and no Assemblie held at all ; and as for this Court, it is impossible to drawe them to determine vpon it, for that it passeth their Commission, to send any Forces out of the Territories of the Contrey. Howbeit, with muche adoe, and with long Debate, I haue brought them to this, that albeit they can giue no License, yet they will be contented, by Way of Conniuation and secret Permission, to suffer them to passe, and to cast it vpon vs, that are heere for her Majestie ; which I thought expedient to certifie with all possible Speede, to the End that suche Prouision, as your Lordship is to make, may be presently prepared. For the Commissary *Sparhawke* is already dispatched with Patents to those Places, where the Companies are in Garrison. All is so silent and quiet heere with vs, that I have nothing els of Worth to be written vnto your Lordship ; for whiche I bid you for this Present most hartely Farewel. From the *Hage*, Nov. 21, 1591.

Your Lordships most assured,

and at Comaundement,

Tho. Bodley.

George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sidney.

My good Lord,

I Was very gladd to vnderstande, by yours of the 28th received Yesterday, your Lordships good Passage and saife Arryvall, as I allsoe shalbe when I shall heare your Leave to be com, though I would be sory your Absence should be a Hinderaunce any Wayes to thintended Service, whereof, in my Feelinge, the Successe is very likely to be certain and good. Here is not any Thinge passed since your Lordships Departure ; the Princeesse expects and wissheth with greate Deuotion, that the Winde would come to the *East*, and the yong Lady beginnes to think the Time longer ; Messieurs *Les* Deputies, that should go into *Fraunce* will scarce be ready these 10 Daies, and the others for *England* meane to departe at the same Time, preparinge harde on all Sides ; and Monsieur *Buzenwall* Vrgeth as harde forward, findinge Fault with their Longnes. I have by Order from some, made these Men acquainted with the Pro-

V O L. I.

6 R

ceedinge



ceedinge of Monsieur *de Maiffe*, and her Majesties Answere concerninge the Treatie betweene the Kings Ministers and the Cardinals, about an Agreement, wherevnto it seemes hir Majestie inclines so farre, that shee wilbe content to see what Auſthoritie the Cardinal hath to deale, and afterwards consider further of all: What these Men will say to yt I shall heare shortly, but me thinkes they could rather haue wished hir Majesties Answere other, though it be assured that withowt them no Accord wilbe entred vnto, neither that they neede to dowbt of any Separacion; it will hasten theer Deputation to hir Majestie the more, and what shalbe resoluid I shall vnderstand ere longe: And thus watinge other I humbly take my Leauē, committinge your Honour to to God his Protection.

*Your good Lordships most ready*

*to doe you Service,*

George Gilpin.

*Haghe, the 30th  
of Dec. 1591.*

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**A**Lthough I come very weery from a tedious Dispathe, that I haue made by this Bearer, yet I may not lette him passe without a Letter to your Lordship, which I would stuffe as full of Thankes, as I can any Way deuise, for the Kindnes of your Letter that yow sent by Capt. *Browne*. But because I am perswaded yow are no Louer of Ceremonies, I hold it sufficient to giue yow hartly Thankes. I would your Lordship being in *England*, could hasten my Returne, which I haue earnestly of late, and oftentimes solicited. But I am willed by her Majestie to haue Patience till the Spring, which yet I feare very muche will passe the Equinoction. It doth come me greatly ill to passe in my priuat Estat. If the Opportunitie should serue you, a Worde of your Mouth might further that Suite, I pray yow affourd it. For any Thing els I haue nothing to request yow, but to keepe your Loue vnto me, and to defend me where yow come; and where yow see there is Occasion, which if any special Service, or Token of kinde Affection, towards yow or any of yow, may requite in any Sort, I protest vnto yow vnfaignedly it shall not be omitted. I haue no Direction out of *England*, for any Company to be sent vnto yow, nor any Kind of Newes to aduertise yow from hens, which is not knownen to this Bearer. Ther is a Passeport graunted by the Counsel of State, to the Baron of *Reide*, one of the Emperors Ambassadors at *Brussels*, who earnestly solicited, to be suffered to come hither. And because he is taken for an honest Fauourer of their Cause, and well affected in Religion, they are willing he should come, hoping by his Presence to returne him with an Answear, that shall shake of all the rest. Hauing no more Mater nor Leasure, I take my Leauē of your Lordship. *Haghe, Jan. 10, 1591.*

*Your Lordships most affectionat,*

*and at Comaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**I**Doe assure your Lordship, if I goe not Home the sooner, I shall be sicke with Melancholie; for I haue spent all my Patience a great While agoe. Many Things doe moue me to seeke it very earnestly, but nothing so much as my priuat Estat. If Importunitie would serue, I haue written about it fower or fife Times. For an Answear at first, I was bidde to attend till Sommer were past; and next, till an other were found to succede me: After that I was  
willed



willed to tarie till the Spring, and nowe at last I am told, that as long as this Peace is in Daunger of a Parle, I can not be spared. Once the Spring is at Hand, and I thinke this Peace will come to nothing, or will proue litle better then a paltrey Practise of the *Spaniards*, to gette Aduantage in dealing with a credulous People; we shall see er be long whereto it will come; and I thinke for Certaine, there will be no suche Cause as to stay me heere about it. But whether I come or tarie, be it sooner or later, I am your Lordships to be vsed both heere and at Home in all your Occasions. To tell yow freely my Opinion of your Going into *England*, I thinke they finde it inconvenient, that the Cautionery Townes should be both at one Time without the Presence of their Gouvernors. I knowe nothing at all of those Reportes that are caried Abroade about your Lords *Burgh*; I am right well assured that the *Burghers* loue him well, and thinke it longe till he returne. But yet of late they haue bin forced for many Weekes together, to pay the Souldiers there in Garrison their Weekly Imprestes: Wherupon they haue complained, and sought to be rembourfed by the States of *Holland*, who haue addressed them to me. The Summe that they demaunde doth amount at the lest to 1200 *l. Sterling*. I doe not doubt but her Majestie doth pay that Garrison as duly, as any of the rest, that I feare there is a Fault, though I knowe not yet in whome, which will hardly be answered.

It doth stand very odly between Sir *Edward Norreis*, and the Councel of State, as yow may see by that Letter, which they sent of late vnto her Majestie, wherof I send yow the Copie, to be read in your Study. There is no Answer yet vnto it, and I can not coniecture what Answer can be made; for he hath vsed strange Deuises to engage her Majestie and my Lords, with the Excuse of his Actions. And yet the Abuses are so great, as they will see them in the Ende, and must yelde of Necessitie, and in common Equitie, to cause him to satisfie and answer the Contrey. The Count, and Sir *Francis Vere* are about some Enterprise, which is contriued by themselues, and vnknown as yet to the Councel of State, I would otherwise willingly impart it to your Lordship. Although the Winde hath serued, to bring vs Newes out of *France* or *England*, any Time this 4 Daies, we haue yet no Letters, nor Aduertisements from any; howbeit we hope we shall haue to Morowe. In the meane While I recommend my self and my Seruice to your Lordships Disposition, and I wishe yow Happines in all Thinges, to your greatest Contentacion. From the *Hage, Marche 1,* 1591.

*Your Lordships at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Doe not Wonder a Whitte at that Maner of Proceeding of my Masters of *Zeland*; for I assure your Lordship, I did neuer yet perceauie any hartie good Will, in any one of this People, ether towards her Majestie, or any one of our Nation. Our good Offices, and good Cariadge, bothe towards this State in general, and towards some in particular, may haue forced some one, or some fewe, to make a Shewe at some Time of Frindship and good Will, but vndoubtedly in a Cause of any Moment, you shall see them so falter in the Duties of Affection, as a Man would hardly credit, that their Plaines were accompanied with such notable Cunning. It is a great While agoe, sins by Means of my Imploiments, I haue noted in their Actions their badde Disposition. And therefor for my self, without any Jote of Respect to their Faults or Diffaults, what is fitte to be perfourmed for her Majesties Service, I doe it roundly and vprightly. And, for ought I can perceauie, in Regard of their good Wishe, I may account as much vpon it, as any other that is heere of her Majesties Ministers.

Their



Their Dealing with your Lordship was too, too rude and iniurious: But what will yow haue? It is not possible to drawe Wine out of Vessels full of Vineger. In my Opinion, it was greatly requisit, that yow should write, as you did, to the States of that Place, to the End they might not thinke, that they walke inuifible. But I knowe they will answer yow with Courtesie and Wordes, and litle to the Purpose, for your Satisfaction. This I can assure yow, that there was neuer no Ouerture of that Exploit to this Councel, vntill they heard it had failed. To impart to your Lordship, as you Desire by your Letter, my simple Aduise; methinkes, that for the better Manifestation of the Wronge done vnto yow, and to her Majestie in your Person, and for your owne Discharge heereafter, it will be needefull yow should signifie that Abuse to this Councel, as being appointed by the Contract to manage all Affaires appertening to these Warres, and to giue yow Audience to any Motion, that shall tende to the Seruice of her Majestie, or Preseruacion of the Place that is committed to your Charge. Your Lordships Writing to them, to suche Effect, as yow please, if yow send your Letter vnto me, I will accompany the Deliverie with some verbal Remonstrance. At this very Present, Count *Maurice* is Abroade about some Mater of Surprise, as we are perswaded, vpon the Towne of *Mastricht*; which is also attempted without the Priuitie of this Councel; whereat they doe disdain, and purpose, as they say, to tell him plainely of it. Sir *Francis Vere* is also with him, and hath imparted nothing to me; whereat I meruell very much: But of this I would say more, if I were in any Place, to conferre with yow by Worde: For truly, to speake plainely, I am flatly of Opinion, that continuall Soothing, and Courting, and Flattering of some Persons that we knowe, or may knowe, to be alienat in Hart from her Majestie, and the Nation, doth but giue them more Occasion, to watche a fitte Opportunitie, when their Turne may best be serued, to abuse the good Meaning of her Majesties owne Seruants, to her notable Preiudice. But that it is a Mater not fitte for Inke and Paper, I would hold you longer with this Talke, which nowe I leaue to your Discretion, and wishe your self and your Estate that Happe, that your Hart doth chieftest Desire. From the *Hage*, 10 *Marche*, 1591.

*Your Lordships most affectionat,*

*and at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney.*

*Monsieur,*

**A**IANT par les lettres que puis naguerrres vous mavez escript, veu vôtre bon desir, afin que pour les raisons touchées, Je voudrois pour quelque temps, vous prester ma Maison a *Flissinghen*. Et desirant non seulement en ceste occasion, mais aussy en chose plus grande, dependant de mon pouuoir et autorité, vous faire pue bono effects, parroitre l'estat que Je faiz de vôtre amitié, et l'entiere et sincere affection, que Je vous porte. J'ay pour vous accommoder d'une bonne partie de ma dite maison bien voulu vous dire, que Je suis content que vous entriez quand il vous plaira, en la dite maison; prenant pour vôtre commodité, et de vôtre famille, tout le quartier d'enhault, avec une des Sales d'embas, et quelques caves, mes mes aussy telle part au Jardyn, qu'il vous plaira: Suivant que J'en escrips presentement aussy a mon Recepueur et Couchierge Illecy, Lequel Je desire, que pour la garde de la dite maison, demeurer au quartier qu'il tient: Laisant aussy les aultres Chambres Joignants sondict quartier (excepte l'une des Salles susdites) a la garde du dit Conchierge, pour la commodité de Madame la Princeesse ma belle mere, et la avenue a fin de vous pouuoir servir, lois que Madame ou moy pourrons vous  
trouver



trouver a *Flissinghen*. Et n'estant ceste a aultre effecte. Je la finiray par mes. Tres affectueuses recommandacions, en voz bonnes graces. Priant Dieu vous donner.

*Monsieur,*

En parfaite sainctè heureuse et longue Vie. *A la Haye*, le 3me d'*Aupril*, 1592.

*Vostre tres affectionne Amy,*

*a vous faire Service,*

Maurice de Nassau.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**I** Am glad that my Lettres was opened by your Lordship, for it gaue yow some Occasion to write that Lettre vnto me, which happely otherwise I had missed for that Time. I pray yow aske me no Pardon for Opening of Lettres, for I doe giue yow a Warrant dormant to doe it of Purpose, as well as vnawares. To what Termes Sir *Ed. Norreis* hath reduced his Affaires, I know Mr. *Gilpin* will informe yow at large. I doe not Doubt, but though he write to some Frindes to solicit his Returne, yet he writeth to the chieftest to solicit the Contrary; for I knowe not who at Home will prouide him so well. My Lord Treasurer doth intreat me somwhat earnestly, to finde him what I can; and I purpose for my Lord to doe my vttermoist Endeuer, though Sir *Edward*, and his Frindes, deserue but litle at my Handes. And though I see not as yet, howe Maters can be caried, but with a special Staine vnto his Credit: Yet, I thinke, in the End, if he will folowe good Aduise, he shall escape better cheape, then his Dealing doth deserue. Heere is nothing stirring, that is worth the telling to your Lordship. This I haue written, to giue this Bearer some Cariage. If your Lordship see Mr. *Gent*, I pray yow, for my Sake, as wel as his owne, to bidde him Welcome to *Flushing*. From the *Hag*, *Ap. 9.* 1592.

*Your Lordships all at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidnay.*

*Monsieur,*

**V**OUS entenduez sans doubte par les lettres, que Messieurs du Conseil d'estat vous escriuent, la resolution qu'ilz ont prinse, de mettre quelque bon nombre des gens en Campaigne. Et ores que Je m'asseure, que vous lour assisterez tres volontiers en la demande qu'ilz vous font, touchant ce fait. Si est ce, que Je ne puis laisser d'accompaigner leur Lettres avec ce menure, qu'est pour vous prier Monsieur bien affecteusement, et si avant que le garde de la Villa de *Flissinghe* le peult aucunement permettre, qu'il vous plaise les seconder, avec deulx bonnes compaignies de vostre gouvernement. Et de les tenir prests pourle temps, que Je les pourray mander, que comme J'espere sera bien tost. Et surce apres mes tres affectuenses recommandacions, en voz bonnes graces, Je prieray Dieu vous auoir.

*Monsieur,*

En sa saincte protection. *De la Haye*, ce 10 de *Aupril*, 1592.

*Vostre tres affectionne Amy,*

*a vous faire Service,*

Maurice de Nassau.



*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**T**HOUGH I knowe not a Iote of any Newes, that is worth the Writing to your Lordship, yet the Opportunitie of this Bearer, and the Receipt of your Lettre of the 20 of this Present, which was brought me this Morning, will not suffer me to be silent. We doe nothing but hearken what Occurrence this Winde will bring vs out of *France*, which we hope will redound to all our good Likinges. And if it come so well to passe, we must cast a watchefull Eye to the Doinges of this People: For vndoubtedly there are some, that will aduise vpon the suddaine, to play a iadishe Tricke. I feare Mr. *Bulenual* doth no very good Offices; for that I see that the chiefeft are exceedingly *frencheified*, as in deede they were alwaies; but lately more then euer. I am wholly of your Opinion for Sir *Edward Norreis* Proceeding. It may amend for a Month, or perhaps a litle more: But, in the Ende, there is no Remedie; they must be contented to lette him liue as *Regulus*. Which doth make me to Prognosticat, that his Dealing, in Time, will cause a great Deale of Trouble, between her Highnes and this Contrey. But of this at your Coming; till when, and alwaies, I wishe very hartely your greatest Prosperitie. From the *Hage*, *Ap.* 26, 1592.

*Your Lordships most affectionate*

*and at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Conte Maurice de Nassau a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney.*

*Monsieur,*

**J**E suis resolu de me mettre en campagne avec les troupes, que Je pourray assembler, pour le 20 de ce Mois. Et pource, Je ne voullu failler, suivant ce qu'il vous plaisoit me declarer estant chez vous, de Vous prier bien affectueusement de me faire cest Semain que de me Venir trouver icy, pour le mesme temps. J'espere en la bontè de Dieu, que le passetemps que nous aurons, redonnera au Service de Sa Majestè et du Pays. Et surce, apres me tres affectueuses recommandacions en voz bonnes graces, Je prie Dieu vous maintenir.

*Monsieur,*

En sa saincte Protection. De la *Hage*, le 8 de *May*, 1592.

*Vostre tres affectionne Amy,*

*a vous Servir,*

Maurice de Nassau.

Je vous prie Monsieur, d'autant que Je partiray d'icy le 20 de ce Mois au plus tard, de me venir trouver pour le mesme temps, ou si vous le pouvez faire plustost.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**Y**OUR Lordship may perceave by the Copie of that Letter, which I sent my Lord Treasurer, to what Effect I haue dealt with my Masters, the States. I haue praied Sir *Francis [Vere]* to impart it vnto yow; but I knowe not in what Sort, nor with whome I might request yow to further the Mater; for both the Court, and the Councel, and this Assemblée of the States, is as deafe as is possible. Methinks, in the End, it will but proue a Sommer Storme. As any Thing commeth of it, either heere in Conference, for that I haue not yet



yet their Answear, or from Home by other Lettres, I will acquaint your Lordship with it, and leaue yow for this Present. At the *Hage*, June 2, 1592.

*Your Lordships at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Doe rather salute your Lordship, for that this Bearer doth come so fittely, then for any Kinde of Mater that is worthy of a Letter. For here, at the *Hage*, there is nothing stirring; and we have litle from the Campe, but your Lordship hath it quickly. They are buisied at this Present in Drieng vp the Ditch, which is easely done, if there come no Raine; and so, it is thought, they shall be Masters of the Place; there is other wise litle Hope, as the Occurrences goeth heere. The Leuie of *Juliers* doth daily repaire to the Towne of *Sheremberg*, so as many Men giue out, that there are at this Present 700 at the left: Besides, their Forces out of *France*, are expected to returne with the very first Winde, which will make in all a good Supplie, for the withdrawing of the *Englishe*, which I see her Highnes is resolued to send for by the next: But of that, I thinke your Lordship knoweth more then my self. For which I will not nowe trouble with Intelligence of no Moment, but commend yow most earnestly to Gods good Protection. From the *Hage*, Aug. 11. 1592.

*Your Lordships at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

I Doe assure your Lordship, this Mater of withdrawing the Companies from *hens*, doth moue this People not a litle. But to say the very Truth, they have no such Occasion, as they do pretend; for the Troupes of Count *Philip*, which are lately returned, and the Leuie of *Juliers*, which are come a great Part to *Sheremberg* already, will amount to a greater Number, then all the *Englishe* that are sent for. For mine owne Part, what with deliuering her Majesties Messages, reporting againe their Answers, and replieng continually, with other Things Appertinent, both my Head and my Handes haue euery Day their fill. When the Companies are departed, I haue had so many Promises to be reuoked from *hens*, the Time of my Imploiment hath ben so long in this Seruice, and I haue notified so plainly the Necessitie of my State, as then me thinkes, I should not Doubt of some present Perfourmance. But if it should not so happen, I must addresse my self Perforce with some greater Importunitie to her Majestie and the Lords. If my House in *London* had bin voide, it had bin for your Lordship, and for no Man so soone. But truly my State is so mightily disordered, as I can lette it goe no longer, but that ether I, or my Wife must be alwaies at Home, and that will Cause her to remaine, till I doe returne; and then I Purpose, God willing, to passe by your Gouvernement, not to be requited for any Cheere that I haue made yow (for yow knowe, I nether did it, and I am not in Place) but to see your Lordship and my Lady, and the Place of your Charge, and to knowe in what Sort I may further your Desires, in my Speeches with her Majesties, which I pray you be perswaded, that I will frame to doe yow Honour, and to giue yow good Content in all that I am able. It is fise Daies agoe, sins I heard from the Campe, that I can write yow very litle, to be accounted worth the Writing. As then the Count was in Hope, to dispatche his Maters quickly: Howbeit, if the Enemie be approched with suche Forces, as is said, to witte 20 Enseignes of *Spaniardes*, 16 of *Dutche*, and 6 of



6 of *Wallons*, it may happen to cost vs broaken Headdes. I thinke with the *Englishe*, there are at the Campe, and neere vnto the Campe, to giue Assistance at a Pinche, at the lest 8000 Foote, besides the Horsmen. Hauing no other Mater, that is vnknownen vnto yow, I bidde your Lordship for this Present, most hartely Farewell. At the *Hage*, Aug. 23. 1592.

*Your Lordships most Affectionat at Commaundment,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**Y**OUR Lordships Letter of your Hand, was my first certaine Tidings of your good Recouerie; for which it was welcome a thousand Times more. I hope that Capt. *Browne* hath receaued my Letter, and is satisfied fully of my Affection to his Suite, if it lay in my Power. There are 4 of the Companies of your Garrison required by Name to be shipped for *France*, of which his is one, and Capt. *Purleis*, for whome Sir *Mat. Morgan* should be sent out of *France*. And for the other two, to witte Capt. *Randolphe*, and Capt. *Ratcliffe*, Sir *Comiers Clifford*, and Capt. *Foukes*. If the Troupe of Sir *Mat. Morgan*, be not sent, there is nothing written to me, what Order should be taken. But I knowe your Lordship vnderstanding her Majesties earnestnes, to haue these Companies for *France*, and knowing what is requisit for the Assurance of your Garrison, will take a fitte Course to giue her Highness Contentment. But if yow should not send them both, me thinkes in Regard of Sir *Fra. Veres* Company, there may one of them be spared conueniently; your Lordship, I am sure, will dispose of all Things for the best; for which I trouble yow no further, but with my hartiest Commendations. From the *Hage*, Sept. 16. 1592.

*Your Lordships at commaundement.*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**I** Would I were departing together with your Lordship, being wonderfully weery of this *Hage*, and this Soile, and this paltrie Kinde of People. I haue written about it, by this Bearer, and vsed some Termes of so earnest Request, as nowe I thinke or neuer, I shall Speede of my Purpose. If I doe not, I am here to doe your Lordship any Seruice, and so I am wheresoeuer, with my vttermoost endeuour. If your Lordship goe so shortly, I beseeche yow bestowe, when yow come to the Court, a Letter vpon me, and signifie your Opinion of my Likelihood to Returne. Which I knowe yow can deuise to learne by many Meanes. If I see, I shall be kept in this *Tantalus* Paine, with Promises and Hopes and no Perfourmance in the End, I will take some other Course, to procure some greater Grace. Wherein I will be ruled by any Note of Aduise, that yow shall please to send vnto me, as in the meane Season, I am alwaies as I haue bin, and yow shall finde me in all Occasions, most affectionatly bent to doe yow any Seruice. From the *Hage*, Oct. 24. 1592.

*Your Lordships at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**I** Doe not write with any Hope, that this my Letter will find your Lordship in *Flushing*. But yet this Post comming to me, and hauing newly nowe receaued by my Lord *Burghes* Seruant, a Letter from your Lordship, of the  
Last



Last of *October*. I could not but signifie of the slacke Deliuerie, and also thanke yow most hartely for the Mater of your Letter. It hath eased me greatly of a great Deale of Melancholie. For I Doubt not a Whitte, but that yow may haue good Meanes, to knowe what is intended, as touching my Returne; and what yow knowe, I make Account, yow will signifie vnto me, assoone as yow may, which in Truth I shall Esteeme as a singulare Benefit, among a great many former, for which I hold my self deeply indebted, to your Lordship. I am sorie for that yow write of the Weakenes of your Body, that it should so continue. But yet I trust the Aire of *England*, and the Sight of your Frindes, will reftoare yow very quickly. I pray yow hartely if yow heare, what is said to be the Errand of Sir *Thomas Wilkes*, vnto the States, lette me haue a Letter from yow, though I thinke yow will be gone, before this come vnto yow. And so I bidde yow for this Present, most hartely Farewel. From the *Hage*,  
Nov. 16, 1592.

*Your Lordships assured and at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.

*Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.*

**B**Y your Lordships Letter by this Bearer, and by an other before, which was sent me from *Flushing*, I see yow haue no Care, how farre you putte me in your Debt, before yow knowe in what Sort I am able to discharge it. But I finde methinkes againe, that my Affection ys as muche, as yow desire for Re-  
paiment, till your turne may be serued with some better requital. And if that be your Meaning, yow shall see I will able to crosse out your Booke. It doth trouble me greatly, and is exceeding preiudicial to my priuate Estate, that not onely I cannot gette from this Place, but that I cannot come to Knowledge wherto I may trust; for which no Order can be taken, in muche of my Buisness. I doe see in the End, I must addresse my Petition to her Majesties Handes, and put it in Aduenture how other Men will like it. As in the meane Season I am to thanke your Lordship infinitely, for your loving remembrance in inquiring about me. The Affairs of this Contrey doe stand I knowe not howe: For they are half in a maner, lie what to doe this Sommer, some inclining to doe litle, and some to make a Levie, as I writte yow in my last; but I thinke in Conclusion, they will fall to do litle. For it will be this Moneth, before the Prouinces will meete to shewe what Summe they will contribute, to the making of a Leuie. Count *Solmes* is heere to gette some Souldiers out of *Holland*, for an Incurfion into *Flanders*, whereto, as I thinke, they will willingly assent. It is also proposed, and like to take Place, that there may be a Succour of ten thousand Pound *Sterling* yelded to the *Frenche* King, for the Levie of 2000 Men for certaine Monethes. Other Mater heere is none that is worthy the Writing, and I will not take all from this Bearers Relation; but still I recommend my last Suite to your Lordship, as I pray you vnto me recommend what you please, where my Service may aduance any Buisnes of yours. From the *Hage*, 22 Jan. 1592.

*Your Lordships most ready*

*at Commaundement,*

Tho. Bodley.



*The Lord Threasurers Lettre, written to the several Partes of the Realme, in Behalf of the Town of Flushing, and directed to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*After my hartie Commendacions,*

**W**HEREAS her Majestie, by her Warrant vnder her Signature, dated the xxviith Daye of *Maye* last, hath bene pleased, in favor of the Magistrats and Inhabitants of the Towne of *Flushing* in *Zeland*, to yelde to them her Priviledge, that all Manner of Grains that shalbe transported by Licence out of any Part of this Realme, for the *Lowe Countries*, should be carried to the sayde Towne of *Flushing*, there to be vsed, as in lyke Cases other foraine Commodities are speciallie directed, by Way of Stapling the same in other Townes in *Holland*, and *Zealand*, commanding me by the same her Warrant, to give Order to all the Ports of her Realme, where anie such Corne vppon Lycence shalbe laden, that the transporters thereof be bound with sufficient Suerties to performe her Majesties sayd Order. These are therefore streightly to Will and Command you, that according to her Majesties said Placaert and Priviledge graunted to the sayd Towne of *Flushing*, as above is recited, you doe take good Bond, with sufficient Suerties of all Manner of Persons whatsoever, that shall lade att that Port anie Manner of Graine, to be transported to anie Part of the *Lowe Countries*, by Vertue and Force of any Licence, to discharge the same Corne and Graine att the said Towne of *Flushing*; and thereof to bring good and sufficient Certificat from the Magistrates of the sayde Town of *Flushing*.

*Geo. Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My very good Lorde,*

**D**O not, I humbly beseech youe, thinke much that these many Monthes I haue omitted to wryte vnto youe, for Excuses, I might alledge sondry; but, amongst the rest, and that not the least, that your comminge ouer hath bin looked for and desyred this good Whyle. The effects remayne yet uncertain, and my self cannot forbare longer, especially havinge dealt in a Matter that concerned your Lordships Gouernment; procured as I am sure by the Care had of the Place, for her Majesties Service, and the Good of these Contryes. The 5th of the Last, brought me her Majesties Lettres; and within 4 or 5 Dayes after, the furder Instructions, refarringe me for the rest to their Pencionary of *Flushing*, who in due Sorte shewed me the Copies of their Priuiledges; and so being requested by them to diferre a few Dayes from delivering of the Letters and my Charge, for Reasons which I Leave til our Meetinge, I prepared my Propositions; and this Daye, with hir Majesties Lettre, presented the same to the States General, as by other Copies I send your Lordship herewith will appeare; meaninge to do all Indeavours in the procuringe of this Resolution and Aunswere; and then of all to aduertise your Lordship, with humble Desire yf there be any Thinge wherein my Service may stande youe in further steede, yt may be your Pleasure to command him that have professed, and so remayne, deuoted to your Lordships Service. Mr. *Bodly* remaynes stil here, attending some Kynde of Answere from the States to his Propositions, which, for the first, wilbe very coulede, and consisting of the Difficulties they fynd in the mouing of yt to the Prouinces, which (yf I should speake truly, in my Opinion) tends onely to Delayes, and requyres a more particular Reasoning, then can be handled by Lettres: When this perfect Aunswere will com I know not, being dyfferred vntil the Assembly of all the States; and then to your Reply, yt may be as much or more Tyme wilbe sought to be wonne, vnlesse they be dealt rowndly with, and the Matter insisted on; whereto I think yt wil com vnto at last. I would I might make a Steppe ouer, but know not how to beginne to compas Leave in that Sorte I wysh; to Mr. *Bodly* I haue tolde my Intention, but many Exceptions are mouyd; yt may be, I wil feele my honourable Friends what they will say vnto yt, and the whylest prepare and resolute my selfe for all. The States prepare



pare for Warres; *Huy* is surprised, and wilbe kept; the Ambassadors of *Liegeborg* aunswered, that *Bernk* being restored, the other shalbe yelded. The Troupes that are in *Fraunce* wil stay there no longer; so il is their Intertheynement lyked; and yet haue from hence Mony sent to them Monthly. His Excellencie increaseth in Aethoritie daily; the Prouinces auledge their Contributions; and the Companies shalbe reformed, being purposed that by the 21 of *April*, New Style, the Camp should to Fielde, but weather, unknown as yet. All Things els after the olde Sort. From the *Haeghe* the 14 of *Marche*, 1594.

*Your Lordships most assured, and ready at Command,*

Geo. Gilpin.

George Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

**M**R. Bodly lyveth here with me: Yesterday he had Audience in full Colledge; hir Majesties Lettre, and his Propositions, little contented them; having requyred answere in Wrytinge to consider and resolve what to be donne, that may stand both with their Estate, and satisfie her Majestie in any good Sorte: I could not yet devyne what shoul followe; but sure I am, yt much troubleth them every Way; whereof hereafter wee shall speake further. From the Camp which lyeth by *Wesel*, not much cometh; the Ennemie sent 600 Horse to view his Excellencies Camp, but ere it was resolved to Chardge them they retyred, and is thought yf the States would lyken thereof, theie would be fought ere *Mondragan* repasse the *Rbyn*. Yf any Thing come to my Knowledge before your Lordships comminge, and that I fynde fit Conueyaunce, I will not fayle to make you Partaker. *Haegh*, 15th *August*, 1595.

*Your good Lordships most humble to vse,*

Geo. Gilpin;

Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney.

*S I R,*

**T**HE last Weeke I had discharged my selfe of my Debt, but that Mr. *Burnham*, who should haue been my Conveyance, was sent by my Lord of *Essex* out of the Way; and I am wary in sending of Lettres, for we are now so ieaious here, as the Postes Lettres are often visited. To satisfie your Requests, or anie Thing els, wherein my Seruice may steed you, I shall be very ready, as one that holdeth your Vertues in Price, and will not fayle to haue an Ey to the Coorse intermitted, both by Conference with my Lord *H.* and by myne own attentivenes, to all Accidents that may further it. And I was of late in hope, that the Apprehensions we had taken of Danger from forraine Parts, wold haue caused vs to thinke of strengthening Councell, and Speech was of it, but quitted againe either by slacking of our Feares, or by Cunning; which, in Truth, was the Ground for to lett you vnderstand plainly how Things are heare. We dwell in a most certain expectation of being attempted the next Yeare, ether directly here at Home, or by the Way of *Scotland*, where there is very great Practise entertained, not altogither by the Kings Consent, but yet not without Connivence to worke some Turnes with vs. We ground not this our Apprehension onely, vppon the certain Knowledge we have of the Preparations in *Spaine*, to be farre greater then in the Year 88; but vppon Aduertisements of the Purpose for which they were made; from both private Persons and Princes, such as I may not name. The expectation of this Danger bred here great Diversity of Opinions, of the Proceeding of our Sea Voyage. They that wold have it stayd, alleaging



alleaging the impossibility of their returne in a small Tyme, fitt to serue our Turne, if need required; the hazard of the Losse of so manye Mariners going into hott Cuntryes, the Absence of the Shippes and Ordonance. The other Partie alleaging the Losse of the Queene, and the Adventurers if it brake of. The Dishonour, because it wold be imputed to feare, and a probability that the return might be tymely enoughe, with hope of Treasure, which is our greatest desire and want. Some Proposition was made by the actiue Sort (you may ghesse whom) to convert this Fleet, assimbled with some Enforcement, to an offensive Course, vppon the Ports of *Spaine*; but checked from aboue, or crossed vnder Hand, not without a great Distemper of Humours on both Sides, for a few Dayes; yet, in most Mens Iudgements, the likeliest Way to divert our present Feares. But now in the End, they are directed to proceed, and in them resteth much of our Hopes; for it beginneth now to be spoken, that these great Rumors of Preparations are partely for feare of vs, and partely to have stayd this Voyage; *exitus acta probat*. But I am of Opinion, that seing we rest here in these Doubts, you may doe some Service to cause such of those Countrey Men as trade to *Spayne*, to make some speciall Observation, and thereof to aduertise vs by you: We are no lesse grieved with the Affairs of *Ireland*, where we do yet little good, but consume very muche Money vppon smale Hopes. I think Sir *John Norris* will shortely return from thence. Here is come within these three Dayes a Master of Requests, called *Chevalier*, sent from the Prince of *Conty*, *D. Neners*, *D. Bouillon*, and the Towne of *Paris*, with a very lamentable Declaration of the Losse at *Dourlans* adjoyning; that there are slain 550 Gentlemen, of Name and Armes, besides the Vulgar: That *Cambray* is heald for lost, they having no Meanes to succor it, and the Town willing enough to leave the *French* Gouernment; whereuppon they haue made Request to haue an Ayd of 4000 Foote, at the Charge of the Towne of *Paris*, who shall giue Caution to pay them. Of this we falle to Consultation; and if we were sure to haue some of our old Footinge in *Pycardy*, for a Place of Retraiet, or in *Pawne*, it wold be. I think it wilbe moued, and some hope that Need will make it be done, if the Gouernor hynder not, with whome some Traficke will be had; but this is to you onely.

I hope you will now hold me acquitted of any Debte by this tedious scribling, which I haue made the longer and more particular, because you conceauing hereby the Humors that now we rest in, and being not ignorant, as you cannot be, of such Things as shall happen in the World, that may ether confirme or alter them. You shall not looke to haue many Lettres from me, who am a very spare Writer; but when I shall see Cause to aduertise you of any Thing that may giue you ground to frame any Concept vppon for your own selfe: Other Things that ordinarily falls out. I know you haue here Friends enough to lett you know them. I forgotte to lett you vnderstand before, that to assure vs of the Intention against vs, there is a Plotte ledde by the King of *Spaine* for a Peace with the *Turks*, not without some good round Charge to him. And so I leaue you to a Subiect of many Discourses. From *Nonfuch*, where this Night we are arriued, this xxijth of *August*, 1595.

*Yours to command,*

Tho. Lake.

Robert Beale, *Esq;* Clerk of the Council, to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

I Haue of late receaved your Lordships of the xijth of the Last Monethe, and thincke my self greatlie beholdinge vnto you, that it pleaseth you to make some Accompte of my poor Frindshippe, and to haue begon to wryte vnto me. Trulie, Sir, I haue allwayes vnfaignedlie loued and honoured you, for diuers good and commendable Partes that are in you, and haue wished to haue some good Meanes, whereby I might declare the Affection which I haue borne and doe beare,



beare, to doe you anie Seruice that I shalbe hable: You haue seen, that I haue lytle Credit here, and trulie in this thankles Worlde, I haue not sought nor seek to entermiddle in any Matters, more then suche whereto I am by others forced. And therefore it maye be, that I shall not be hable to satisfie your expectation in suche Things, as you maye looke for at my Handes. But I trust you will accepte my good Will in frendlie Parte. I lyked not Mr. *Bodlyes* eger and peremptorie Commission; for eger and bitter Messages neuer did good with such Democraticall Estates. Monarches maye well vse them at Home, but they were neuer commendable Abroade, especiallly where they be vsed in an vnseasonable Time, as I take this to be; for the common Enemye, by raising of the Siege of *Groll*, and the late Overthrowe of the *Frenche* Forces in *Picardie*, waxethe insolent. We are here putt in feare of greate Preparations by Sea in *Spaine*; and it cannot be, but that the greater Tempest is meant to fall vpon these Partes. It hath ben accompted a good and necessary Pointe of Policie, when Prince or Estate hath to do with a puissant Enemye, to make fayre Weather with the rest of his Neighbours, that if he cannot procure them to be ioyned with him, yet he maye at the least keepe them from Ayding him, that intendethe to doe Mischiefe. But how is this cared for now? The *Easterlings*, and *Hannses* [Towns] are (I feare me) at our Enemyes Deuotion, and will assist him. *Frauncelytle* esteemeth our pettye Succours, and small regarde that he thinckethe hath ben and is had of him. If *Baligny* be so soone entred into Communication with the Count of *Fuentes*, I feare that the next Newes wilbe worse. It is wrytten out of *Italye*, that there should should be a Truce made for xxx<sup>th</sup> Monethes, betwene the *Frenche* Kinge and the Duke of *Sauoye*, which is lyke inoughe to drawe on another with *Spaine*; for I haue allwayes feared, that consideringe the small Accompte which they esteeme to be made of him here, those Counsellors that broughte him to forsake his Religion, will also finde plausible Reasons for him to forsake our Amitye, notwithstandinge that Protestation which you brought from thence. And the Kinges longe lingringe in those Partes, maye be suspected to be for suche a Purpose. From your Estates he can exparte lytle; and here the Troubles of *Irelande*, and preparacions to resiste the Inuasion of *Spaine*, will so occupie vs, that we shall not be hable to yelde Favours to anye other. Wherfor this Message of Mr. *Bodlye*, cannot but breede both a Dislyke in the Estates, and the *Frenche* Kinge also. And if afterwarde we be left alone; consideringe our manifolde inwarde Weakneses, what will become of vs in the Ende? Sir *Henrye Killegrewe*, Mr. *Alye*, and my self, haue of late ben appointed to looke into the Accomptes between her Majestie and the Estates; and, in Trothe, finde the Matter so, that they haue ben to cunnige for vs, accordinge to the olde Imperfection, which *Philip de Comines* reportethe to be in our Nation, to be ouertaken by others with whom we are to treat. But yet it is no Time now to breake with them, neyther doe I thincke that it is meant. And therefore I could wishe, that they would be contented to condescende to send some Commissiones out, to referre the Poyntes that in the Treatie are amisse, rather than to kindle more Stryfe and Contencion, which can but reioyce the common Enemye, and turne to bothe our Preiudices. They haue receaued greate Benefitts at her Majesties Handes, and it becomethe them to seeke to haue Things frendlie compounded, rather then to be sought vnto. If the Vnkindnesse doe continewe and increase, it behouethe you to looke vnto your Charge; and that was (as I suppose) the principall Cause of the sending out of the Lord *Boroughe*, and your selfe, at this present. God forbid that anie Breache shoulde fall out; but yet in former Tymes, popular and headye Gouvernmentes, have grown to Poyntes eyther of Desputacion, or of Hostilitie: *Quicquid delirant Reges, plectuntur Achiui*; and wheresoever the Fault shalbe, yet Princes will not seeme to committ anye Errors, but the Blame is cast vpon inferior Officers, that are least culpable. You knowe how to deale with your Burgers there, and haue the late Prince of *Orange* for a good Example to imitate, who by his popular familiaritye kept them more in, than with anie Force; hauinge a vigilant Eye vnto their Doinges. By suche Meanes, you maye (with Gods good Assistance) preuent the Mischiefe,



if anie, should be intended, and continuwe them in good Deuotion to her Majestie and our Nation still. And so beseeching Allmightie God to take bothe vs here, and you there, into his holie Protection; I humblie take my Leauē. From my poor House in *London*, the Second of *September*, 1595.

*Yours assuredly at commandment,*

Robert Beale.

This Day I hear other Newes of the Overthrowe of Count *Morrices* Troopes, whereat the common Enemy will greatly reioyce; and therefore it is not good, that Frinds shold fall out, but seeke all Means of a frendly Reconciliation and Attonment, which I pray God may ensue betwene her Majestie and the Estates.

Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

**H**Avinge since your Departure hence taken Occasion to conferre with som of these Men, I perceave they find it altogether expedient to vse Matters so, that her Majesties Favor towards them may be continued, and a Resolution will followe, to send ouer Deputies ere longe, though happely it may chaunce that they will seeke to winne Time, to see what wil becom of *Cambray*, which being not so much distressed as was imagined, can holde owt til the King his Succors be ready: And to force it afore, it is thought *Fuentes* would, if he were stronge enough to do that, and send Ayde to the Constable of *Castille*, whoe is so lessend in *Burgomguie*, that if the King can leave sufficient Strength there to make his Partie good, he wil conquere him by intercepted Lettres: At our Camp they haue the Niewes that *Mondragan* is written for, and is removuid higher ouer the *Rhoer* already, but what to doe not yet known; if he departe, his Excellencie will not giue ouer so sowne, though these Men will haue certain Troupes hastened towards *Fraunce*; he had an Enterprise vppon *Meurs*, and were passed twoe Palisados, but the Day approaching, durst not aduenture further, those that should haue seconded them, comming to slowly forwarde; but the Fault being in the Chieff (as is muttered) such Peccadillos are ouerpassed. The States Deputies are not yet retourned from Camp, but looked for daily; shortly after we shall see how my Lord Ambassador is like to speede, for he then meanes to presse them forwarde, and if that shall passe, when Occasion fauourith, your Lordship shallbe made Partaker. *Haeghe*, this 11th of *September*, 1595.

*Your Lordships, &c.*

Geo. Gilpin.

Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

**T**H E Deputies of the Generall States that were at the Camp, being retourned, we shall ere longe heare what Aunswere they bringe vppon Mr. *Bodlyes* Proposition, from his Excellencie and the Counsell of State: Touchinge the Aide that should be sent into *Fraunce*, the States Resolution shalbe performed, and 20 Companies appointed fourthwith to be sent toowards *Callays*, whereof tene are *Scots*, and the other of these Contriemen. Owr Nation was spoken of, and I thinke were as likely to haue bin sent as any other, and Sir *Francis Vere* to haue had the Commaunde; but the Dowbt these Men conceave, that it may chaunce her Majestie will call them away souldainly, hindreth all: Yt seemeth his Excellencie as yet purposeth to kepe in the Fielde, though



though like enough to remoue to som other Quarter, all Fourage being spent vp where they lie now. *Mondragan* continueth where he was, neere *Keyfers-Wert*, and fortifieth his Camp with Trenches and other Defences, which makes us thinke he meaneth to send Parte of his Troupes (as was vnderstood by thintercepted Lettres) to the Count *Fuentes*, whoe is resoluid to stay and abide the King of *Fraunce* his Coming. Of late there was sent vnto me from the Camp certain Discours about a Peace, written by som one of Thenemies Side vnto Themperors Court, and lighted into ovr Mens Hands. I find it wel donne, and worthie the Readinge, whiche is the Cause that I send a Copie to your Lordship; my Lord Ambassador sent the like into *England*. *Haege*, this 15th of *Septembre*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Your Lordship must make *French* of Thinclosed, being written in Haste; and by me neuer perused.

Callinge to Remembraunce, that your Lordship meant to vse for your Exercise, to distil and make Extractions, I haue thought good to fertifie, that while wee were in *Amsterdam*, there was one Doctor *Carwer*, whoe I heare is very skilfull therein, and otherwise wel learned and practised; if your Lordship could like of his Labor and Service, he would be very glad to imploye him selfe, and am of Opinion, your Lordship would like wel of him; vppon your least Aunswere (which I humbly craue) he wilbe willinge and readie to make his Repaire vnto yow, and vppon Conference dispose of his Busines and him selfe accordingly.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

THIS Morning there came to vs from *Ireland* aduertisment, that *Tiron* had drawen our Force to fight of Necessity; that Sir *John Norreis* was shot in the Belly; that Sir *Thomas Norreis* was shott in the Thigh; that Capt. *Richard Wingsfeld* was shott in the Elbow with a Muskett, and likelie to loose Life or Arme, thother are not in daunger of Liffe. The Hope we had here of a Peace is now turned to an assured War, for twere to much Dishonor to dally longer.

I fownd, at my Return from *Tibbols*, Capt. *Browns* Man with a Packett for me, and another for my Lord Treasurer; I sent him with them away this Night, and I goe to Morrow with your Lettres to the Court, whom these Occasions will draw my Lord Treasurer sooner then he thought to doe; there I will procure an Answer of your Lettre of Importance. As for Sir *John Fortescue*, you gaue me no Direction to speak vnto him, nor Lettre for him, but willed me to let it alone, lest it might hinder your Return; only this I know, that he neuer moued your Sute since your Departure, as *Pendant* assures me.

My Lord *Rich* is not in Town, and therefore I know not what to say of him; Sir *John Wingsfeld* tels me, that he delivered all your Lettres. I haue written to Mr. *Hary Sidney*, but yet cold not heare from him. Touching your Lordships Lettre to Mr. *Golding*, I find my Ladie greatly pleased with your Lordships honorable Love and Care of her.

*Fookes* and I doe goe vp and down to seeke a convenient House for your Lordship and my Lady, and doe vse all my Friends Help in it; as yet we can not speede. I wilbe carefull to know how it stands for your Lodging promised in *Epsom* House. In my Lettres by *Wagborn*, I signified that *Askaing* had sent your Bookes to his Factor in *Flushing*, to be deliuered vnto you. I cannot as yet hear of *Cuff*, your Booke he saies it is with Doctor *Gifford* in *Lewsam*. I

spake



spake twice to Sir *George Carew* for your 2 Pikes, he differs it till their be a Deliuerer in that Office, which is voyd.

Forgett not, my Lord, to wright often to my Lady of *Huntingdon*, whoe of late begins againe to mourn the Death of your Brother. Sarjeant *Flemming* tels me, that it is most necessary to record the Deed of Intaile, which my Lady will haue donne at your Return, and not before.

I will goe to all your Friends, and will harken after such News as happen. I am going with your Lettres to my Lord *Essex*, and the rest at Court, and will now humbly take my Leauē, and euer remain

Your Lordships most obedient,

and most bownden Saruant,

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My Duty very humbly remembred,*

YOUR Lettres sent by Capt. *Brownes* Man were pleasing to my Lord Treasurer, for he allowed him *v l.* for his Pains, but comanded him to attend the Answers, and to carry them vnto you. Sir Robert *Cecill* diluiered me the Dispathe, but with this Charge, that I should cary it to his Father, enclosed within his Lettre, which I did this Morning, and fownd my Lord Treasurer at *Lambeth*, ready to goe to Court; he took all the Lettres with him, and bid me to Morrow attend his further Pleasure. My Lord of *Essex*, when he had read a Lettre I gave him, he demaunded another, which I told him I had not, but the next Day, Sir Robert *Cecill* brought him it from *Tibbols*, as it shuld seem inclosed within my Lord Treasurers Packett.

Mr. *Rays* Man left a Packett at my Lodging for me, which now I receued. I haue already sent my Lord of *Pembroke* and my Ladies vnto them, and will goe, when I haue donne this Lettre, with my Lady *Huntingdons* vnto her, and the rest to Morrow I will deliuer at Court. In your Lordships Lettre to me, you will me to goe to Sarieant *Wilbys* about the Fine, which I will doe, and haue bene carefull of, but he is not yet returned; your Cosen *Montague*, the Lawyer, hath your Lettres sent him, and asone as euer he comes he will deliver it, and will him not to proceed further in it. You marvaile why you heare nothing of *Beecher*, I haue by Sarieant *Main* written at lardge of that Matter, and wold haue donne sooner, but that *Beecher* was at the Marriage of *Stephen le Sieur* in *Hampshire*, whoe is married to Mr. *Warders* Daughter by *Yorke Howse*, when his other Wiffe died. My Lord *Rich* is not in Town, and his Lady is in *Staffordshire* with her Mother: My Lords Lettres was enclosed with Lettres in a Packett, and directed vnto her, which may be the Cause he had it not soone as you did desire.

Touching Sir *Edward Vvedals* Return, his Man *Cooke* by *Mainard* hath discovered the Likelihood of your Return. And he demanded of me, if I stayed about such Busines, which I denied, and that it was about the Busines of the Town; if he doe come ouer, it will very much hinder yours, and your Lordship shall doe well to give few Captains Leauē to come ouer. I did follow my Lord Treasurer dilligently about Municion; he euer answered, that at his Return to Court he wold mention it, and now I will not doubt, but that one Way or another I shall haue a Resolution.

I was told that Sir *William Cornwalles*, doth often trouble her Majesties Eares with Tales of my Lord of *Essex*, who is thought to be an Obseruer of all his Doings, and to examine *Mudriff*, which brings Vnquietnes in the Quene, and occasions the like in my Lord.

My Lord of *Southampton*, doth with to much Familiarity court the faire Mrs. *Varnon*, while his Friends observing the Quenes Humors towards my Lord  
of



of *Essex*, doe what they can to bring her to fauor him, but it is yet in vaine.

The Quene is nothiug moued at the Newes which I writt vnto you by the Post in my last Lettres of *Ireland*, though it is said that our brauest Comanders are hurt, and in Danger, but Sir *John Norres* and his Brother are like to doe well.

Tis aduertised, that in *Duncarcke* their are many great Chains of Yron made, to blocke vp Hauens.

That a *Spaniard* that wold haue kild the King, and *Antonio de Perez*, is taken and imprisoned.

Your Honours, &c.

London, 23 of Septemb.  
1595.

R. Whyte.

Robert Beale, *Esq*; Clerk of the Council, to Sir Robert Sydney.

My verye good Lorde,

**B**Einge vppon the Beginninge of a Iourneye, which (God willinge) I minde to make into *Warwykeshire*, for some three Weekes or a Monethe, I receaued your Lordships Lettre of the xijth of this Present, signyfying the Receipte of my former, which I would not suffer vnaunswered, althoughe my Leyfure be at this Present verye small. It cannot be, but that the Stayinge of the Estates Shippes in *Spaine*, and the late Losse besides *Wesell*, will make Mr. *Bodleyes* Message vnpleasant vnto them that gouerne; and besides cause the inconstant People to enter into sondrie Conceiptes, if the Matter be so seuerelie vrged. And yet her Majesties Goodnes hathe ben suche towards them, as that it hathe deserued to be more accepted of by suche, as will pretende to be wise Rulers, and haue no better Staye, then vppon the vncertaine and wandringe Impressions of a Populace, then hitherto they haue don. But the Common Cause is more to be regarded, then their Ingratitude; and it cannot be, but if they be abandonned or alienated from vs, we shall neither obteyne that which we require at their Handes, nor be warranted from the Annoyance of the Common Enemye. Wherefore I thinke (all Circumstances considered) that that Message will not be so strictlie followed, especiallie if they will goe about to yielde vnto her Majestie anie reasonable Satisfaction: Her Charge, how meane soeuer it be esteemed, hath ben greate in those Partes, and suche as no other Prince would haue yielded vnto them. Therfore it behouethe them, bothe thankfullie to acknowledge it, and seeke by all good Meanes to continewe it. I am of the same Opinion that your Lordship is of, that the Makinge of a newe Treatie would carrye some Difficultie and Inconuenience with it, as the Time now is: But yet if some of them, that were Commiissioners in the Making of the former Treatye, be nowe sent ouer, to explaine such Pointes, as maye seeme doubtfull, and geue Occacion of Correction hereafter. I suppose, that the Colledge of Estates hathe sufficient Power to deale in suche a Cause, without anie further newe Authoritie from the particular Prouinces: And so her Majestie might, by receauinge from them some better Satisfaction and Assurance, be moued to forbear the Prosecution of Mr. *Bodleyes* Demaundes, and lykewise continewe towards them her accustomed Succour. And if they refuse to doe so small a Matter, they will shewe them selues to waywarde, and not to care either for their owne Preseruacion, or for their Friendes. The Enterprises and Preparacions, which the Kinge of *Spayne* makethe in those Prouinces, *France*, *Spayne*, and *Britayne*, shewe his Resolutions to goe throughe with the Matter, that he hathe taken in Hande, and is lyk to atchieue, if suche against whome his Mischiefe is intended, shall not seeke by all Meanes to resist and annoye him, as he purposethe to hurte others. Suerlye our Irresolutenes and Carelessnes at Home, and the lytle Estimacion that is made of vs Abroade, makethe me feare, that beinge abandoned of



other, and left to our selues, we shall receaue some Blowe, if the Lorde doe not prouide for vs otherwise then we haue deserued: Howbeit he will not be allwayes tempted, but at lengthe punishe the Ingratitude of suche, as hitherto haue receaued so greate Benefittes at his Handes, and are so lytle thankfull for the same. I feare the Matter of *Irelande*, sett on and mainteyned by the Subornacion of *Spayne*, will proue greater then it was at the first thought of. You shall heare from others of a late Bickeringe there, wherein Sir *John Norryes* is said to be hurte; and allthough it was geuen out not longe sythe, that the Erle of *Tiron* was come in, and all Thinges compounded; yet by Lettres out of *Irelande* it semethe, that no suche Thing was meant, nor lykely, but rather Apparaunce of further Hostilitie and Charge; which will so occupye vs here, as that our Neighbors cannot looke for any greate Supplie or Ayde from hence. And if heruppon *France* yields to a Peace, and anye Alteracion happen in the *Lowe Countreyes*, we shall hardlie be able to beare the Burthen of the greate Tempest, that is lyke to fall vppon these Partes. It behouethe vs therfore to praye vnto the Lorde, and to amende our Liues, if happelie he will heare vs, and ouerthrow *Sennacharib*, that threateneth so greate a Mischiefe to his Churches and People euerye where.

I heare that of late a veye vile Booke hathe ben printed in *Englishe*, in *Antwerp*, touchinge the Succession of this Crowne, diffaminge her Majestie, and dishablinge all the Tytles of suche, that herafter maye pretende anye Interest therunto, and deriuinge a strange Pretence from *John of Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, vppon the Kinge of *Spaine*, which he mindethe shortlye to challenge: I trust the Lorde will neuer suffer him to preuayle in so wicked and vniust a Cause. If you could procure me anye one of the said Bookes, I should thinke my selfe much beholdinge vnto yow, for I would gladlie see, vppon what Grounde he establisshethe so vnlauffull a Surmise: I heare also, that it is dedicated to the Erle of *Essex*, of an Intent furlie to bringe him in Ialousye and Disgrace here. And so hauinge nothing els to trouble yow with at this Present, I committ you to the Lorde, whome I humblie beseeche to receaue bothe vs here, and yow there, with all suche as feare him, into his mercifull and almightie Protection. From my House at *Barnes*, in *Hast*, the xxvth of *September*, 1595.

*Your Lordships assuredly at Commaundement,*

Robt. Beale.

*Sir Thomas Wylkes to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My Lord Gouernor,*

I Haue of late receiued from yow two Lettres, the one written here before your Departure, and thother at *Flushing*: By the first yow desire to be made acquainted with such Orders as might passe here concerning your Garrison; sithence which Tyme there hath ben something don, to reforme a notable Disorder discovered by *Birchenshaw*, and some others, said to be practised chiefly by the Captaines of your Garrison. I doubt not but yow haue ben made acquainted with that Order by Mr. *Thomkins* the Commissarie, which happely yow will mislike, bicause it is ordayned, that no Man may passe from hence for the Supplie of your Companies, but with my Priuetie and Certificate, which maye be an Impediment to such as shall take vp Men in *Essex*, *Kent*, and other Places remote from *London*. Which Difficultie was had in Consideracion, and verbally ordered, that in that Case, Testimonial from two Iustices of the Peace, signifying the Persons taken vp, their Names, and other Accidents, and for what Companies, should warrante me for my Certificate, to be given for their Admission. I was gladd to obtaine this Qualification, for reforming the Disorder, otherwise I doe assure yow, vpon my Creditt, the former Order so beneficially



ficially sett downe, for the Captaines, had ben absolutely revoked; and sithence the Passinge hereof I haue receaved expresse Commandement from her Majestie, by the Mouth of Sir *John Fortescue*, that no Supplyes be suffred to passe ouer, nor I giue Certificate for their Admission, without her Priuety and Allowance. So as yow will hereafter find it a Thing very difficulte to haue any Supplyes at all, which growing out of the Disorders of your Captaines, doth make them Authors of their owne Harmes.

Your second Lettre concerning Mr. *Thomkins*, I haue well considered, and wilbe ready to doe any Thing to procure him his whole Entertainment, althoughe I cannot deuise howe old *Higbam* will liue, if that Portion be taken from him.

We haue ben lately aduertised out of *Ireland*, of a Conflict between Sir *John Norreys*, going to victuell the Forte by *Blackewater*, and the Troupes of the Earle of *Tyrone*: Yt happened, after the Place victualled, on the Retourne of Sir *John Norreys*, towards the *Newrye*, wherein he was assayled by 500 Horse and 2000 Foote of the Ennemy, Sir *John* having only one thousand Foote and 120 Horse. In this Rencounter Sir *John Norreys* was hurte with two Muskett Shotte, the one throughe the left Arme, and th'other athwarte the Belly, but neither of them daungerous: Sir *Thomas Norreys* receaued a Musket Shott through one of his Thighes, and diuers Captaines and Officers were hurte in that Fighte, which sheweth the same to haue ben warmly attempted: Fewe of ours were slaine, but iij C of Thenemy left dead in the Field.

This notwithstanding, we haue here an Expectacion of the Earle of *Tirones* Coming in vpon Pardon for himself, *Odonell*, and *Macguire*; and to that End Auethoritie is giuen to the Lord Deputie.

This is all worthie of your Knowledge, that I can write at this Tyme: Yow knowe I am yours, and wilbe ever ready to doe yow Service, and with this Conclusion I will here end, and commytt yow to the Protection of Almighty God. From *London*, the xxvijth of *September*, 1595.

*Yours assured to be commanded,*

Tho. Wyikes.

George Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sidney.

*May it please your good Lordship,*

THE Commoditie of this present Bearer, was Occasion of the wrytinge of these few Lynes, onely to send thenclosed Copie of an intercepted Lettre, which we got this Sommer, and is Thopinion of *Yuerra vnto Fuentes*, vppon the Negotiation of *Leisvelt* in *Zeland*, with his Excellencie, about the Motion of Peace; wherein appears the vnlykelyhood of any good to be donne with the *Spaniards*: Ere longe, I will send your Lordship a Copie of the last State of Warre, conteyninge the Number of Men in Service, the Charge they amount vnto, with certain Particularities that may be, and is, very apperaunt; that this Winter another wilbe made, being many Things chaunged since the last. My Lord Ambassador continueth at one Stay. The Counsell of State is thought wilbe here this Weeke, and then will a Resolution be taken, which, methinks, the Losse of *Cambray* will forward, fearing that the Kings Abolition with the Pope looketh further; and that yt will behoeue her Majestie and them here, to stick harde together. The Camp stil continueth; a Bridge there is ouer the *Rbyn*, where our Horsemen goo a Fouraginge. *Mondragan* never stirreth; but som of his Men fayled of late to surpryse *Duffeldorp*, and yf he can, he wil possesse one Place or other in *Cleueland*, to sarve for his better



ter Warrant, if euer he should chaunce to com agayne another Tyme in those Quarters. From the *Haughe*, this 1 Oct. 1595.

Your good Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

I Will not use manie Wordes of Reciprocation to your kinde Offer in your Lettres. My Composition is not of Wordes. I hope you shall fynde enough by other Proofs, what Value I make of your Favour and Love. If I should write much to you of the Condition of our Affairs here, I should but repeat what already I have lett you know; for anie Thing that hath happened since then, either here or beyond Sea, doth but confirme that which I signified to you by my last. I doubt not, but the Particularities of such Things as haue happened of late in *Ireland*, have been written to you by so manie Friends as you have here. By that you may perceave, that our Enemies there are of another Proofs then we expected. Judge you whether either Syde have Cause to boast of Wyning, when twice they have fought with our Armye, and departed without Hurt. At this last Encounter, our Generall, and all the Commanders in the Field hurt; and howsoever Things be somewhat favourably reported to the Advantage of our Generall, I can assure you, he was never better put to the Tryal of his Courage and Skill. Two Armyes of ours, within three Months Space, broken up and dispersed into Garrison, without ever Entering into his Country, or Slaughter of 100 of his Men. There is a Report come, that *Tirlagh Dermagh* being dead, the K. hath taken upon him the Title of *Oneale*, whereby you may ghesse how farre he is from Obedience.

From *Florence*, we know now for certain, by Lettres Yesterday brought, that *Du Mane* is reconciled. The King to be absolved at *Rome* on his Demand thereof. In which Purpose, some honorable Persons are to go thither presently. And as its advertised also, that immediately upon his Absolution, the Pope is mynded to send Legats unto both those great Princes for a Peace. Of whom here is some Doubt justely to be conceaved, that the Plotte is privately agreed on already. Among other Conjectures, one is, what the *French* King paed *Alonso d'Idiarges*, amountes to 50000 Crownes, who presently went into *Spaine*, speaking first with the Dukes of *Lorraine*, and *Mane. St. Luc*, and the States of *Bretagne*, have sent hither to demand Aid, for preventing the Mischeafe of the *Spaniards* Troops there, writing a very lamentable Lettre. In which, among other Things, they mention, that besides the Forts of *Beaval* and *Frouldaly*, Don *John d'Aquilar*, is now planted with all his Force upon the River of *Radon*, and buildeth on each Syde the Mouth of it a strong Fort. Besides that, one *Fontenelles*, a Gentleman of the Cuntrey, hath passed to their Use an Isle in *Base Bretagne*, which he doth fortify in Sort, as if he may continew but two Monthes, to joyne Art, to that which already is by Nature; it will be, as they say, one of the most inpregnable Places of *Fraunce*: So that, in Effect, they are Masters of the Coaste.

For the Matter of *Scotland*. It is very true, that such a Worke hath been in Hand there, to get the young Prince out of the Custody of *Marre*; of which the Heads were the Queen, and the Chauncellor. The King hath very resolutely expressed himself against it hitherto, knowing that his own Lyfe wold thereby rest at Discretion. And it is thought he hath broken the Plott. But heare, for certain, that most of those that were Supporters of the Devise, were of the Devotion of *Spain*, and the Chauncellor himselfe. The Kings Displeasure hath shewed it selfe so great against him, as he hath absented himselfe from Court, and of late hath been sick, and some Speech that he is dead; which,



which, if it be true, that Poste is at an End. The same Parties that should have been the Doers in that Attempt, are all our Borderers; as *Hume*, and *Cesford*, &c. who have committed and doe dayly great Spoyles upon our People, without Redresse.

Concerning your selfe, I can say nothing; and Things rest here as they did, without Likelyhood yet of Change. My Lord of *Rutland* hath Leave to Travayle, and departed within ten Days; his first Visitt shalbe to you. My Lord of *Suffex* is returned, but we cannot hear by what Occasion. I leave further to Trouble you. From *Nonfuch*, the first of *October*, 1595.

Your Lordships to command,

Tho. Lake.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

Right honorable,

I Receued at this Instant a great Pacquet from you, dated 29 September, by the *Dutch* Post; I haue already deliuered my Lord Treasorer his, and sent my Lord of *Essex* his Lettre, the rest I will deliuer at more Leisure. You are to receue from me yet, a Pacquett from Sir *Robert Cecill*, and my Lord *Essex*.

The Skins for the young Prince wilbe ready within 7 Dayes, and I will bespeake the filke Stokings. At my Lord Treasurers next going to the Court, I will follow hym, both for Municion, and to see what he will say for your Leaue; if he will giue that Liffe, I will then acquaint my Lord of *Essex*, my Lord Admirall, and the rest of your Honors Friends; but I doubt yt is yet somewhat to soone. I am exceedingly troubled that your Lordships Buifnes concerning her Majesties Service, hath, by my Solliciting, no speedier End. How I shall speed for your Leaue, God knows; but that drawn to a Resolution, I will very humbly request to be recalled; and neuer will I, with my Will, come hither again, to spend your Lordships Allowance to so small Purpose; but this Comfort I haue, that your Lordship knowes the Court.

My Lord Treasorer is come to Town; because the Terme begins to Morrow, he tooke Phisick this Day, which doth not worke, and disquiets hym.

Serieant *Williams* is come, and doth assure me, that he will never deale further in the Matter of the *Fyne*, to *Buck*, till he haue Warrant from you, vnder your Hand and Seale. Thus much hath he promised in the Presence of your Cosen *Montague* the Lawier.

Great a doe there is about the Deed of Intaile you haue. My Lord of *Pembroke* thinks that yt will come to his Children: But I am of another Belieffe, and truste in God your Name shall live many hundred Years, to enioy the Benefitt that may come of yt. His Lordships Lettre vnto you, is only concerning the Deed, and Uses. I heare no mention at all of your Office in *Wales*, which he hath disposed of. *Massinger* continues not with hym long. *Sanford* is come vp to follow his Cawses, and my Lord hymself, with my Lord *Harbart*, come vp to see the Queen, and (as I heare) to deale in the Matter of a Marriage with Sir *George Careys* Daughter.

*Massinger* is threatened, although he did not but what he was commanded, to let you haue yt, when by you twas desired. Now my Lord sayes, that *Massinger* should haue gon with the Deed at all Tymes your Lordship had Occasion to use yt. Yt concerns your Lordship to be very well aduised, er you part with yt. Yt instantly appertaining more to you and yours, then to all the World besides.

I did wryte in some of my Lettres, how carefull I was for a House in *London* for your Lordship, and that at last, Alderman *Catcher* was contented to let you haue his for a Rent. I expect houely to heare my Ladys Resolution of hauing yt, or not hauing yt. Tis 50 l. for half a Yeare Rent; but tis furnisht of all Things necessary, saue Bedding.

My Lord *Rich* is not yet come to Town: I haue left a Lettre for hym at *Essex* House.



Yf yt wold please your Lordship to haue a View taken of all her Majesties Munition, and to certify in what State you fynd yt, seruiceable or vnseruiceable, yt wold further your Buifnes here.

When my Lord Treasorer mentioned, why the Companies in *Flushing* were not supplied of Powder by the States, as well as in *Brill*, I answered, that yt was an Error *ab initio*, for no Gouvernor had yt; and now I thought yt wold be hardly granted or obtained.

There is no Speach of the Queens Remoue. I haue bene once more at *Heigat*; but can neither come to my Ladys Speach [Countess of *Huntingdon*] nor haue any Answer of your Lordships Lettres. They say her Ladyship is still Sorowing your Brothers vntimely Death.

I humbly take my Leave; and will pray to God to bleff all your Vertuos Actions. From *London*, this *Wednesday* Night, 8 of *October*, 1595.

Your Lordshipsmost bounden and obedient Seruant,

R. Whyte.

Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

Although within these few Dayes I writte to you, which were more then my Covenant, yet I thought to lett you have this more of Supererogation, because it conteyneth Matter that concerneth you. Sir *Roger Williams* is of late returned, and with him one *Lomeney*, a Secretary of the Kings Chamber; who both by the Kings Lettres, and by his own Speech, have dealt so plainly and roundely with the Queen and our Councell, as hath moved here great Offence. The Substance is, to let the Queen understand, that he hath his Absolution, that there are deputed to him four Cardinals, to give him the Solemnity thereof; but their chief Errant to draw him to a Peace with *Spaine*, and unite against all that are divided from the Church. That he is assured to receive for himselfe honourable Conditions; but knowing that he shalbe fought to be divided from the Queen and the *Low Countreys*, desireth by her to be enabled by a common Concurrence of both their Forces, that he be not compelled to such a Peace, as willingly he wold not make, but such as may comprehend them all in such Termes, as holding always together, they might be a Ballance against the *Spanish* Greatness. That yf she refuse him in it, he must provide for himselfe as he may. These Lettres deliuid with very stout Speeches, hath greatly offended the Queen, who loveth not to be terrefyed. The Gentleman is dispatched without anie Hope of obtaining Relief from hence. So as you may ghesse what will follow. He hath withall advertised her Majesty by his Lettres to this Effect, That if she be not well informed of the Preparations and Intentions against her, she is then abused or betrayed. Which being by some taken as meant to themselves, hath moved the more Collier. He desired a Conference to be had between the Duke of *Nevers*, and *Bovillon*, whom he would send to *Calais*, or *Bolyon*, and some of the Queens Councell; which is denied. But that which I wold let you know, is, That he hath written very roundly, to require the Queen to forbear the Calling for her Money from the States, as a Thing far out of Season. And hath spoken plainly to Sir *Roger Williams*, that these Cuntries love not the Queen. And that he doth assure himselfe, that whensoever he shall enter into Treaty with *Spaine*, he can dispose of them, as he shall thinke good, and that they will turne his Corse. And that of late they have required him not to forget them. Whether this may be well grounded, or spoken onely of Boast, you may ghesse. And, I thinke, will not be amisse for you to have an Eye unto. For if all be true that hath been here alleaged by the *French* Gent, uppon his Returne, the King is like to frame his Drift another Way. The King hath also advertised, and shewed Sir *Roger Williams* some Lettres to make it good, that the whole Navy of *England* is returned from all Places where they were Abroad (the *Indian* Fleet



Fleet being safe come Home, and assembled at *Lisbone*, to the Number of viii Score Sayle). And that it will not be long, eyre they be in *Bretagne*, and from thence dispatch some Part into *Ireland*; wherewith some other Advertisement of ours doe concurre. I have nothing els to trouble you with, but to kifs your Handes. From *Stepney*, this ixth of *October*, 1595.

Yours to command,

Tho. Lake.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

Right Honorable,

MY Lady *Borrow* hauing, as I wryt vnto your Lordship, an absolut Denial for his Return, hath sent his Man *Mynne* to giue Notice vnto my Lord of *Essex*, that his Sicknes is growen to a Consumtion, and he is fallen so weake, that he cannot recouer, but with the Change of Aire, which he hopes the Queen wilbe so carefull of, as to send for hym, he not daring to desire a Thing that is not pleasing to her Majestie.

*Burchinshaw* had 100 Crownes giuen hym by the Queens Comandment, and, as I heare, is countenanced by Mr. *Brooke*. My Lady of *Essex*, and Lady *Walsingham*, are come to the Town, and doe hope to see you here, although my Lord of *Essex* told them he saw litle Hope of yt. my Lady *Walsingham* hath deliuered vnto me old *Languets* Picture, which she promised you. I will send yt to *Penshurst*.

My Lord of *Pembrookes* Comming is put of, vpon a Speach of my Lord Treasurers at Cownsell Bord. That considering the dangerous Tyme, it were good her Majestie sent my Lord of *Pembroke* to ly about *Milford Hauen*, for half a Yeare, to strengthen those Parts with his Presence. At his Comming, I heare the Queen meanes to deale with his Lordship in yt. Here is a Speach that *Tiron*, vpon the Sight of her Majesties Pardon, sent for hym, and all that entered into Thaction with hym, is come in; but this is much doubted by Men of Judgment.

Mr. Vice Chamberlain is sicke, so is my Lord Chamberlain, both of the Goute.

My Lord of *Essex* promises to write somewhat, that he wold haue sent carefully and safely. I doe attend it. Court 18 of *October*, 1595.

Yours, &c.

R. Whyte.

My Lord Treasurer is at *London*, and not looked for at Court till the Queen come to *Richmond*. I will then ofte shew my self vnto hym, and let hym know, I doe only attend the Tyme his Honor shall thinke fitt to moue her Majestie for your Return. These *Spanish* Preparations, I assure your Lordship, doth breed incredible Feares in the Mynds of most Men.

Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My very good Lorde,

AT Length, and with much adoe, the States haue taken a kinde of Resolution; not to send (as was purposed, and had bin the best for boath Sydes) but to wryte to her Majestie, excusing their Delay in makinge an Answer; and withall, by other Lettres at large, to sett downe to my Lords of the Counsell, their Impossibilitie to yelde to that desyred, and what Inconueniences they fynd and feare, in mouing the Matter to the Prouinces; the Dispatch is made, the Post departed; and my Lord Ambassador hath written his Opinion; and my selfe, to some pryuate Friends, haue deliuered my Feelinges. What wee shall now receaue from Home, I longe to see, a fayre Opportunitie beinge ouer slipped: Wee do now rest ovr selues a Whyle, and yf there were Post Horfes  
+ betweene



betweene this and *Flushing*, your Lordship should, ere this, haue seene me; and now, I hope, ere longe, to see youe here with my Lord of *Rutland*: His Excellency wee expecte this Weeke; and of the Gettinge of the House of *Weerdt*, and other lyke, I leave to Captain *Morgans* Report. From the *Haughe*, this 22th *October*, 1595.

Your good Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Rowland White, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

**M**Y Lord of *Hertford* was sent for by a Messinger, is come vp, and commytted to his own Howse. The Cause sayd to be a Record secretly put into the Court of Th'arches, to prove his first Marriage lawfull, and his Children Legitimate. Yt was discouered by a Case found amongst Doctor *Awbries* Papers, by hym studied, with Thopinion of Strangers. Tis sayd he is one of the wealthiest Subiects of *England*.

My Lord *Sbrosbery* is like to fall into new Trouble about the old Matters, for *Wood* is called in Question to the *Star Chamber*, vpon better Proofes of his former Doinges.

*Probi* is comanded to wayt at Court; hath spoken with her Majestie, and is sayd he shall haue the Disbursing of the Treasury of the Chamber, till her Majestie be pleased to bestow yt. Sir *H. Umpton*, and Mr. *John Stanhope*, stands for yt.

Here haue bene 6 Borderers of *Cumberland*, in the Name of the Prouinces frontring on *Scotland*; they complaine of great Incurfions and Spoiles donne vnto them at plaine Noone Dayes by the *Scots*. They haue Order for 100 Horse or Foote to recouer their own, because the King doth not punish Thoffenders, nor reforme their Proceedings, although desired by her Majestie vnto yt.

My Lord of *Pembroke* is a great Further and Persuader to fortifie *Milford Hauen*; the Charges are thought intollerable: There is Care giuen vnto yt, and in the meane Tyme, Sir *Tho. Morgan* is dispatcht to lie in *Pembroke* Castell, and 500*l.* wilbe allowed to fortifie and Repair yt; he shall haue a Garrison for that Place. Their are 3 and 4 Deputie Lifenants apointed in all Shires, and we now credibly belieue the *Spaniards* prepare against us.

*Beare* of *Grauesend* was with me here. I shewed vnto hym, and the Searchers of that Town, your Lordships Letters Patents. They say, that if your Lordship will haue any Thing transported from *Grauesend*, they will shew their lawfull Fauor, if yt please you to autorise *Beare*, vnder your Hand and Seale, to send you over what you want. Your Lordship, in my Opinion, shall doe well not to allow *Beare* a general Warrant, but when you wold haue any Thing transported, to signe and seale those Parcels you require, and soe euery Tyme that you want to do yt, for there is lest Abuse in yt. From *Catchers* House, this 29 of *October*, at 10 a Clock in the Night.

Yours, &c.

R. White.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**I** Haue had much adoe about the transporting of 5 Ton of Beere to your Lordship; the Searchers made Stay of it vntill a Warrant might be procured from my Lord Treasurer, which I obtained at last, upon this Condition mentioned in the Letter, that I should enter into Bond to return your Lordships Certificat to the Custom-house, that you haue receued yt for your own Vse. I brought your Lordships Lettres Patents to the Officers in the Customes; they



they promise your Lordship all Fauor they can, if they can fynd any Words to keepe them from Blame. My Lord Treasurer hath sent a generall Restraint that no Beer or Corn shalbe transported.

I haue received your Lordships Letter sent by Mr. *Finch*, and yours of the 26 of *October*. All your Lettres to my Lord *Harry*, to Mr. *Standen*, to Mr. *Locke*, are deliuered; and my Lord of *Essex* burnt your Lettre I gaue him, and promises to wryte.

For your Letter sent by *William* to my Lord Treasurer, I made mention in my Last of the 29 *October*, that yt was argued before the Queen by the Lords of the Council, and since that Tyme my Lord of *Essex* tells me, that the Queen was pleased your Wants shuld be furnisht; so saith my Lord Treasurer to, but he wills me to beare with him for 2 or 3 Days; but I perceiue by Mr. *Mainards* Speeches, yt will not be in as lardge a Manner as the Queen commanded yt.

Touching your Leave; tis advised by your Friends at Court to put yt of till the Queens comming to *London* 12 Dayes hence, and then yt shalbe moued to better Purpose than now. The Queen herself, and the Lords of her Cownsell, being exceedingly busyed in giving Directions for all Things fitt to hynder an Inuasion. The Matters of *Ireland* are troublesome; and the Rebells stands vpon more high Termes than with Honor can be granted; but the Daunger of the Tyme may yeld vnto much.

My Lord *Boroughs* Leave is still denied; but I vnderstand his Lady shuld say, that he is resolued to come ouer without Leaue for to recouer his Health.

For my Lady *Huntingdon*, your Lordship now shall heare shortly from her, and Mr. *Bromley* tels me, she takes very kindly your Letters, and often sending to know howhe doth. I heare that Sir *Posthumus Hoby* hath had Access to your Sister *Sydney*, and likes her so well, that he means to return out of Hand. I heare she shold say, that she is in Substance much worse than when she knew your Brother.

My Lord of *Pembroke* is here still, talking of the Deed of Intaile.

*London*, 3 *November*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

I send your Lordship the 4 Bookes of the Civil War imprinted; and a *French* Discours.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq*; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

V P O N *Monday* last, 1500 [Queen *Eliz.*] shewed 1000 [Earl of *Essex*] a printed Book of *t—t*, Title to *a—a*: In yt their is, as I here, daungerous Praises of 1000 of his Valour and Worthines, which doth hym harme here. At his comming from Court he was obserued to looke wan and pale, being exceedingly troubled at this great Piece of Villanie donne vnto hym; he is Sick, and continewes very ill. 1500 visited hym Yesterday in Thafternoone. He is mightelie crossed in all Things; for *Bacon* is gone without the Place of Sollicitor; and as yet *Flemings* Bill signed ys at a Stay, but shall undoubtedly passe; 24, ys gonne to the Country; but his Friends are many and great, and, as I heare, haue foe preuailed, that he shalbe sent for again. The Chauncelorschip of the Dutchie ys committed to eight Commissioners. Iudg *Owen*, *Clinch*, *Beaumont*, *Braggrave*, *Thattorney*, Sir *Philip Butler*, *Wrener*, and the 2 Auditors; and the Queen herself keepes the Seale, and my Lord Treasurer, as Occasion serues, doth Seale and Dispatch all the Busines: *Peter Proby* hath a Chamber in her Court, with Thallowaunce of 3 Dishes of Meat, and paies the

V O L. I.

6 Z

Money



Money till a Treasorer of the Chamber be chosen, which will not be in hast. Many late Occasions is like to breed a deadly Vnkindens betwen 1000 [*Essex*] and 900. 6000 is in the Custodie of 700. The World iudging his heaping of Wealth, and Amors, to be to no good End; his Trouble may be pleasing to some of our Neighbours. Their is a Resolution taken for all Things, if any Invasion be attempted, as well for our Forces by Land as the Fleet. Out of *Yreland* tis aduertised, that Sir *Richard Bingham* went to succor a Castell distressed, of which some Rebels in *Conaught* hauing Intelligence, met him in his Iorney, and fought with hym; the Ennemy lost 80, and he but 20; yet the Place ys not deliuered. My Lord Treasorer, as I wrytt to your Lordship some 4 Days past, desired me to forbear him for 4 or 5 Dayes; but now he ys come to *London*, and lies in Bed so ill of the Gowte in his Hands, Armes, Knees and Toes, that his Paines make hym pitifully grone. Your Lordships sees, by this Accident, that the Dispatch of my Buifines, though by her Majestie determined, is like to haue no End till his Recovery. I haue bene here long about those 2 Points, of your Wants and Leaue; and, I protest before God, haue bene very carefull and diligent in them, and therefore yt greues me to see these Delaies not to be remedied but with Patience. I humbly beseech your Lordship, in your own Wisdom, to consider the Tyme and the Person I attend here, and the Nature of his Place. For your Wants, he promised a Dispatch before he fell sick; but now their ys no Body that must trouble hym for any Thing. For your Leaue, I was aduised by some of your Friends not to haue yt moued till the Queen commes.

I haue bene soe often with my Lady of *Huntingdon*, that now I am assured she takes yt very kindly you care so much to heare of her Health; for I am comanded to attend a Letter she will wryte vnto you.

My Lady of *Bedford* is in Town, and sayd to be with Child. My Lady of *Essex* is not.

At Court, this 5th of *November*, 1595, late.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Vpon *Monday* Night the Court Gates were shutt, my Lord Chamberlain had the Keyes, and *Brown* the Controller carried a Torch; I doe not yet know what the Story might be.

The Book I spake of is dedicated to my Lord *Essex*, and printed beyond Sea, and tis thought to be Treason to haue it. To wryte of these Things are dangerous in so perillous a Tyme; but I hope yt wilbe no Offence to impart vnto you Thactions of this Place.

† *Sir Edm. Vvedale to Sir Robert Sydney.*

My good Lord,

I Haue not bene at the Corte this fortene Dayes and more, and ther for I refer the Reporte of the Accountes of that Place to Mr. *White*; he is there often folloinge harde to haue you furnished of those Wantes of Powder, &c. you desier, and hath good Hope to obtayn it; but my Lord Treasurer being now sicke of the Gowte, is some staye therof.

The Lord of *Harforde* was Yesterdaye carried to the *Tower*, and two of the *Stanopes*, and dyvars other committed about that Matter.

Sir *Harrebotle* is committed to the Fleate for some Matter that hath past betwene my Lord of *Pembroocke* and him, and fined 1500 *l*.

I haue not reseaued any Letter from your Lordship sines my commeng over, when I do, whatsoever hit shal please you therin to commaund, I

† This Sir *Edm. Vvedale* was Lieutenant Governor of *Flushing*, and very much distinguisht himself in the Wars of the *Low Countries*.

wilbe



wilbe carfull to performe; and, in the mean Time, I leaue you to the Protection of the Aulmighti. *Fleetstreet, the 7th of November, 1595.*

*Your Lordships in all Seruis,*

Edm. Vvedall.

This Booke, which I send you herwith inclosed, is latli set forth, and is peruyfed and disprayed by mane.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My Lord,*

YOU are to receue from me Lettres, from Mr. *Grivel* and Sir *John Wingfeld*, of the 5 of *Nouember*. This I send by Mr. *Musky*, who is dispatched to Mr. *Bodeley*. My Lord of *Essex*, as I wryt vnto you in my last, was infinitely troubled with a printed Booke the Queen shewed hym; but since he is prepared to endure the Malice of his Ennemies; yet doth he keepe his Chamber. My Lord of *Hartford* is comytted to the *Tower*, and, as I heare, 2 *Stanbops* with hym, but not the Courtiers; Sir *Hen. Barkley* is comytted to the *Fleet*, and fined in 100 *l.* for the Riott against my Lord of *Pembroke*; so are nine of his Men, and fined in 100 *l.* a piece. The Matter was hard at *Starr Chamber* vpon *Wednesday*.

My Lord Treasorer is sick a Bed, and my Buifnes lies dead till his Recovery. I hope within 4 or 5 Dayes we shall have access vnto hym, for now few come neare hym. Capten *Sauvage* promises me to haue his Father in Law moue Sir *John Fortescue* about your Cheques, as theasier to be compassed at this Tyme; when by her Majesties Lettre you had Leave to come ouer to recouer your Health, and after were sent to *France*, a Iorney full of Charge, and never receved Recompence. My Lady of *Northumberland* is now knowen to be with Child.

My Lady of *Huntingdon* is gon to take the Ayre of *Heigate*, but very priuatly, leauing the best Part of her Family at *Sauoy*, and within 4 Daies to return. My Lady *Lester*, and Lady *Rich*, are Yesternight come to *London*, and my Lord *Riche* will wryte vnto you about his Hangings; I fynd by hym, that if those Hangings that are made doe not answer the Note he sent vnto *Bloq*, they will not serue their Turn. But by his own Letter you shall heare more. Here is a Rumor that their are *Spanisb* Forces landed in *Brittagnie*, and that Part of his Nauy is come to *Groine*. That the King of *Fraunce* calles a Parlement at *Amiens*. And here is a Speach of a Parlement about *Candlemas*. Sir *Antony Sherley* goes forward on his Voiadge very well furnisht, lead by the straung Fortune of his Marriage, to vndertake any Cowrse that may occupy his Mynd, from thincking on her vaineft Words. I humbly take my Leaue. At *London*, this *Friday Night, 7 of Nouember, 1595.*

*Your Lordships, &c.*

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My Duty very humbly remembred,*

Yesterday in Thafter Noone I was at my Lord Treasurers, who still lies a Bed. Mr. *Mainard* did me the fauor to let his Lordship know I was there; who returnod me this Answer: That he wold send for *Windibanck*, and giue hym Directions what the Queens Pleasure is touching the Wants of *Flushing*. I will carefvly attend *Windibanck*, because I will know what Quantities are fett down; that I may aduertize you accordingly. For your Leaue, my Lady



is so carefull in yt, that I am daily sent to my Lord Admirall, and my Lady *Warwicke* about yt. They Promise at the Queens comming hither, which wilbe this Weeke, to haue yt moued, when my Lord Treasurer is with her, who still continewes willing to procure yt for 2 or 3 Moneths, yt so much and soe nearly concerning your Lordship. This Day yt appeares, that Mrs. *Mary* hath the Mesels, but, God be thancked, she is nothing Sicke withall; the feare we haue here is of my Lady herself, who is apt in this State she now is, to take them: Yet will she not by any Persuasion be moued to keape from her, and with much ado brought to lie from her. The Child her self humbly beseeching my Lady to haue a Care of her own Health, as she loued her. Mr. *William* is very well, and forbears not to come to his Sister; for, he saies, his Turn wilbe next. I wryt vnto you, that my Lord of *Hartford* was comytted to the Tower; since then yt is giuen out, that by Comandment his Sonne shall no more be called Lord *Beawchamp*, but *Seimor*, and that he is sent for. And yt is credibly sayd, that my Lady *Hartford* is become starck Madde. The Doctor *Stanhop*, and *Stanhope* the Lawier, of *Graies Inn*, that were comytted about that Matter, as being acquainted with Thappeale, with diuers others, are put at Liberty, and, for a Day or two, Mr. *Michael Stanhope* came not to the Court. Yt is muttred here, that 200 had some inckling in these Cawses, which doe trouble goo. My Lord of *Essex* hath put off the Melancholy he fell vnto, by a printed Booke deliuered to the Queen; wherin the Harme was meant hym, by her Majesties gracious Fauor and Wisdom, is turned to his good, and strengthens her Loue vnto hym; for I heare, that within these 4 Days, many Letters sent to her self, from forren Countries, were deliuered only to my Lord of *Essex*, and he to answer them.

The Matter of Vittaille lies dead, vntill your Letters to the Queen revive yt again. Mr. *Beecher* hath wrytt vnto you his Opinion of yt, and expects your Answer. So hath he donne about your Account and Reckoning; for vnless your Lordship be willing to yeld some Satisfaction vnto him, and *Hix*, I fynd hym not so willing to deale in it, though you pay well for yt; he still alledging your Lordship can make no great Commodity of yt, in 4 Years or more.

My Lord of *Pembroke* is here, and, as I am told, is very inquisitive for the Deede of Intaile; I haue bene earnestly delt withall by diuers to know what is become of yt: For the Conference desired by my Lady *Warwicks* Officers, I beseeche your Lordship, wryte to Mr. *Montague* and *Golding*, to be here at yt, and to give Order which of your Counsell you will haue at yt, and to appoint their Fees. In a Matter of such Consequence as this is, I desire to haue the Assistance both of your Cosen *Montague*, and your own Officers.

The Queens Sollicitor *Flemming*, and Serieant *Harris*, doe now accord, that yt wilbe nothing hurtfull to your Lordship, but rather more good, because yt will giue them more Light, if they produce any new Matter, I meane their Counsell. London, this Tuesday Morning the 12 of Nouember, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Sir *Ed. Harbarts* Sonne and Heyr, was examined by my Lord of *Canterbury*, and doth goe to Church; and now shalbe a Deputy Liffenant in *Mongomery* Shire.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

I Send your Lordship, by *Will* of the Scullery, the Piece of Hanging. My Lord *Rich* saies that the Border is too deep, and that it is not so deep as he desires by the Note *Bloq* hath of his; my Lady *Lester* sayd, that if it be aboute 10 s. the Sticke, it is to deere. I answered, that it seemed Hangings were good Cheap, when she bought any. Sure I was that your Lordship wold buy



buy them as good Cheape for my Lady *Ritch* as for your selfe, and so was my Lady *Ritch* assured, who liked the Hangings very well. I shewed the Piece to Mr. *Mainard*, he sent for an Arras Man, who truly did esteeme the Goodnes of it as it is, and thinkes it well worth 16 or 18 s. the Sticke. My Lady *Warwick* tels me this Euening, that my Lord of *Essex* has bene very earnest for my Lord *Boroughs* Leaue, and brought her Majestie to pittie his Weakenes, and consuming away; so that now a Hope is had, that the Queen wilbe pleased to license his Return. My Lady *Warwick* being by, saies, that she told her Majestie the Desire your Lordship had to come ouer for 2 Monethes, about a very earnest Occasion in Law, that concernd the Good of your Children; but the Queen sayd, that the Time was to daungerous, and that she cold not beleue you your selfe desired it. And she bid me goe to my Lord of *Essex*, who promised her to second it. Your Lordship may iudge of this as you please. My Ladies Determinacion is, to haue it moued by my Lord Treasurer, Lord Admirall, and Sir *Robert Cecill*, who I hope will be able to effecte it.

The Letters to the States Generall are not yet signed, I talked with one that saies, the first Part of the Letter doth comprehend an Account taken by her Majesty of her Officers, that haue the Charge of her Artillery and Municion, who inform, that their was sent to *Flushing*, of late Yeares, a great Quantity of Powder, which the Queen now was aduised to vse for the Furnishing of her own Ships at Sea, against the Common Ennemy; and hauing written to your Lordship of it, you return the Answer I sett down at lardg in my Letter yesterday Morning by the Post. I cannot come by any Meanes to speake with my Lord Treasurer, and therefore I went to Sir *Robert Cecill*, humbly to desire him to put my Lord, his Father, in mind of the great Wants of *Flushing*, and to pittie my long Stay here, that attended these 3 Moneths, the Queens Pleasure. He then told me that I shuld haue Lettres to the States; and when I replied, that it were to dangerous to expect their Resolutions, and besought him your Lordship might enioy the Benefitt of her Majesties Comandment, who was pleased (as my Lord Treasurer told me himself) to giue Money to prouide our Wants. *Whyte*, said he, I know your Wants are great in *Flushing*, but the Queen saies, the States shall speedely supply them. This is all I can gett from them; if your Lordship were not exceeding wise, and very well acquainted with those vncertain Proceedings of Things, you might much blame me, that aduertise one Day what the next Day is altred; but God is my Judge, I write nothing but what I haue delivered vnto me by them selues, or some of their Ministry from them, I know to be honest, and of Credit; lett the Event fall out as it will.

I wold I had bene sent any other where, when I came hither, for it greiues me, that the Paines and Care I take to doe you Seruice, brings no better Successe. Sir *Posthumus Hoby* is rid down again towards your Sister *Sydney*, and hath carried with him good Store of faire Jewels and Pearls, and my Lord Treasurers Lettres to my Lord of *Huntingdon*, to make that Marriage.

My noble and worthie Cosen, Mr. *Dean Wood*, the Queens Chaplen, is married to *Ritch Ballets* Widow of *Cheapside*; he hath by her 300 l. a Yeare Iointer, and she is besides worth 4000 l. Here is great Preparacion for these Triumphes, and such Deuises promised as our Age hath not seen the like. Mrs. *Touchet* hath catcht Mr. *Thinnes* Son and Heire, and married her selfe ynto him, to his Fathers Mislike, for with hur shall he haue nothing, but those vertuous Qualities she brought from Court.

Their are Lettres sent Abroad, to discharg the Watch of Beacons till *March* next, and that in all our trained Bands, all our Billes be converted to Pikes. My Lord of *Pembroke* neuer sent but once to see my Lady. My Lord *Herbart* came once to visit her.

My Lord of *Essex*, and my Lord Treasurer haue their Bore Pies, and this Day the rest are presented, my Lady referuing none for her self, bestowing her



two vpon Sir Robert Cecill, in Hope he wilbe careful for your Leave. God keep you in Health, and so I take my Leauē. London, this Soday Morning, xvijth of Nouember, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My Duty very humbly remembred,*

**T**H E Bore Pies are all deliuered, and specially much comended for their well Seasoning. Sir Rob. Cecil, as I was twice credibly informed, refused the Present Sir Edward Vvedale sent him, and hath denied to medle in the Busines for his Accownts, which maketh him much to maruell.

Capt. *Sauage* begins to come Abroade, and promises to deale for your Checks; he is of Opinion, it is not good to mingle thold Accownt with it.

I told Sir Robert Cecill, that the Wants of Flushing, were extreme and daungeous in such a Town, if any suddain Vprore vnlooked for might happen; he answered that he knew it, but cold not remedy it, for this was the Queens Pleasure.

My Lord of *Essex* Deuise is much comended in these late Triumphes, some pretty While before he came in him self to the Tilt, he sent his Page with some Speech to the Queen, who returned with her Majesties Gloue. And when he came himself, he was mett with an old Hermitt, a Secretary of State, a braue Soldier, and an Esquier. The first presented him with a Booke of Meditations; the second with polittical Discourses; the third with Oracions of braue fought Battles; the fourth was but his own Follower, to whom thother three imparted much of their Purpose, before his Coming in. Another devised with him, perswading him to this and that Course of Liffe, according to their Inclinations. Comes into the Tilt Yard vnthought vpon, thordinary Post Boy of London, a ragged Villain all bemired, vpon a poore leane Jade, gallaping and blowing for Liff, and deliuered the Secretary a Packet of Lettres, which he presently offred my Lord of *Essex*; and with this dumb Shew our Eyes were fed for that Time. In thafter Supper, before the Queen, they first deliuered a well pend Speech to moue this worthy Knight, to leaue his vaine following of Loue, and to betake him to heavenly Meditation; the Secretaries all tending to haue him follow Matters of State, the Soldiers perswading him to the Warr; but the Esquier answered them all; and concluded with an excellent, but to plaine *English*, that this Knight wold neuer forsake his Mistresses Love, whose Vertue made all his Thoughts Deuine, whose Wisdom taught him all true Policy, whose Beauty and Worth, were at all Times able to make him fitt to comand Armies. He shewed all the Defects and Imperfections of all ther Times, and theirfore thought his Course of Liffe to be best in seruing his Mistres. Thold Man was he, that in *Cambridg* plaied *Giraldy*, *Morley* plaied the Secretary, and he that plaied Pedantiq, was the Soldior, and *Toby Matthew* acted the Squires Part. The World makes many vntrue Construtions of these Speeches, comparing the Hermitt and the Secretary, to two of the Lords, and the Soldier to Sir Roger Williams; but the Queen said, that if she had thought their had bene so moch said of her, she wold not haue bene their that Night, and soe went to Bed.

Their are Lettres come out of *Ireland*, with good Newes of *Tirons* Submission, which brought my Lord Treasurer to the Court, from his sicke Bed. The Lords haue bene these 3 Daies in Cownsell, about this *Irish* Peace; a formale Pardon according to our Lawe is now a drawing. Sir Henry Bagnell is landed, and looked for hire daily. *Tiron* blames him much for Wrongs done vnto him.

As for D——d I hard that all his Gouvernment is wholly misliked, if he doe any Thing without first acquainting 140 here; he is to rash, if he direct by the



the Aduise of 140 their ; then is he thought to take to much vpon him ; and thus is he like to endure Disgrace, while *E———e* is only imploied, and graced, his Opinion best allowed of and followed. I hard it is like to grow to a Faction between them.

Vpon *Thursday*, Sir *Thomas Heneges* Funerals were solemnised, his Offices all vnbestowed. Here is a Speach that Mr. *Arthur Gorge* shalbe sent into *France*.

The Speach of Marriage between 9000 and *qq* is quite broke of, by his not liking ; and I feare me, their is like to grow great Vnkindness between 1000 [*Essex*] and 2000 ; when I know the true Cause, I will aduertise your Lordship. My Lady *Pembroke* hath bene dangerously ill of a Swelling in the Throat ; *Goodrich* went down, and is said to lawunch it.

My Lord Treasurer, my Lord Admirall, and Sir *Robert Cecill*, promise to moue your Leauē, when they haue dispatcht for *Irelande* ; and that the Sheriffs are prickt. I will lose no Time in attending their Pleasure.

Sir *Edward Harberts* eldest Daughter is married to Sir *William Stanleis* eldest Sonne, which makes my Lord of *Pembroke* very melancholy.

My Lady of *Hertford* is nowe better then she was, and yet *Rowland* tels me, she is very ill.

My Lady and all your sweet Children are well, my Lady praying for your Leauē, and that God will please to send her a good Howre, for she is very bigg and neare her Time. *London*, this *Saturday* Morning, 22th of *November*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

Right Honorable,

I Haue receued your great Packet of Lettres, sent by Capt. *Brownes* Soldior vpon *Tuesday* last, and according to their Directions haue deliuered them all. Sir *Robert Cecill* hath those you sent to his Father, for he told me this Afternoone, I cold haue no Answer of them these 5 or 6 Daies. My Lord of *Essex* told me, he cold do no good in the least for your Return ; but my Confidence is in my Lord Treasorer, and my Lord Admirall, and Sir *Robert Cecill*, who promise to take a fitt Time to moue her Majestie about it. And vpon *Monday*, my Lady dines at Court, and then will visit all her Friends about it. I staid at Court till 6 a Clocke, and saw the States Lettres signed and sealed ; and fearing lest my Lord Treasurer might forgett to send you a Copie, I haue procured them Word for Word, examined, and hereinlosed send them. The Lettres them selues, Sir *Robert Cecill* carried to his Father, who promises to write this Night, if he haue Leisure : I haue left my Man to stay their for them till my Lord Treasurers going to Bed, desiring Mr. *Mainard* to deliuer them vnto him, if his Lord will send any Dispatch. I heare *Tiron* is accepted, and Sir *George Carew* of the Ordonance shalbe presently sent ouer to take his Othe, and to be Comissioner in that Buisnes with my Lord Deputy, to whom smale Cowntenance or Trust is comitted, in this or in any Thing els ; and the Credit of all Thinges giuen to Sir *John Norres*. This is the Busines my Lord Treasorer hath now in Hand, which peraduenture will stay the Dispatch I expect, for one or two Daies longer. My Lord *Staffords* Sonne is basely married to his Mothers Chambermaid.

The Post is come, and deliuered vnto me a very great Packett of Letters from your Lordship. To morrow Morning I will goe to the Court, and deliuer them all with my own Hands, and will not faile to lett Mr. *Stanhop*, *Griuell*, and *Manners*, know what you comand me. About the Conference I will desire Mr. *Mountagues* Presence and Aduise, and doe looke for Mr. *Golding* here vpon *Monday* ; then will Mr. *Olsworth* apoint a Time of Meeting, and will haue their



their Resolution vnder their Hands. My Lady is exceedingly pleased that your Lordship is so carefull of her, in sending of cordiall Things for her. Here was the honest Doctor *Brown*, who bid her in no Case to medle with the *Laudamum*, because it was very daungerous.

I saw the same Mr. *Cox* you speake of, at my Lord of *Essex* Chamber this Day, who told me, that he had often put my Lord in mind to answer the Lettres he brought vnto him from you. Assone as my Lady is brought to Bed, what you wryte of Goships shalbe obserued.

My Man is returned from my Lord Treasurer, and Mr. *Mainard* sends me Word I must come to my Lord to Morrow Morning for the Lettres, about 9 a Clocke, and I will not faile to aske him what the Town shall doe for Powder, while the States are resoluing. At *London*, this *Saturday* Night, 22 of *November*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Row. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My good Lord,

**T**HIS Day my Lord Treasurer is very priuat, that I cold not come to his Sight, but Mr. *Mainard* deliuered vnto me the Packet for the States, and assures me, that if they do not spedely furnish your Wants, he hard his Lordship say the Queen wold do it, for she is very carefull of the Town. I am aduised by him not to deliuer this last Lettre I had from you, about your Leauē, till his Lordship hath ended some Busines, he now hath in Hand, about *Ireland*. In the meane Time I will deliuer to Mr. *Manners*, Mr. *Stanhop*, Mr. *Grivell*, their Lettres, which I cold not doe this *Sunday*, because it was a great Court; but I found my Lady *Warwicke* at Leisure, she read your Lettre, and tels me, that she is much beholding vnto you, for, according to this Conference, it shall much content her, to heare what her Cownsell will say vnto it. I protested vnto her, that your Lordship, before you euer stirrd in it, tooke so good Aduise as possibly you cold get, and being by them assured of your Title, you were willing to giue it Lisse; and as far as I cold perceauē by you, you were not minded to proceed in it, till her Honor, by her own Cownsell, might haue Time to know and consider of your Right; she resolued, that if it were yours, she was farr from hindring any Good vnto you, but most ready in her self, to make the World know how much you were esteemed of her for your own Worth, and nearnes of Kin to her late Lord; and when this Matter between her and the Queen were ended, your Lordship shuld see her Care of you. To which I answered, that her Ladyship cold not bestow her Favors vpon any living Creature, that wold with more Humblenes doe her Seruice; and told her, that Mr. *Golding* and I wold attend the Time Mr. *Olsworth* wold sett down for the Meeting.

My Lord of *Essex* being at Dinner, and many Lords with him, cald me vnto him, and said, by God I cannot persuaue the Queen to giue your Master Leauē to returne, though I told her that he was troubled with an Ague, which might proue dangerous, and that it concernd him, for to settle his own Fortune, to be here. She answered, that she hard *Flushing* was worfs in the Somer then the Winter, and to giue him Leauē now to come ouer, were to seeke to liue still from his Charg. That he replied, you did not desire to be here but for one Month or 6 Weeks. To which she said, that the Cardinal was daily expected, and she wold not haue you away at his first Comming, vntill it were seen what he purposed: This he wills me to aduertise, an promises to write himself, though I find he hath no Hope of it. All this my Lady *Warwicke* confirms, who was by, when my Lord of *Essex* tooke as good a Time as might be



be to moue it. I will carfully follow Mr. *Stanbops* and *Griuels* Aduise, as you comand me. I rest,

Your Lordships, &c.

Sunday Night, 23 November. 1595.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

Right Honorable,

**I**N my late Lettre vnto you, I aduertised that my Lord Tresorer told me, the Queen was pleased to supply the Wants of Powder in *Flushing*, by deliuering of Money, because that Municion was very scarce here. He at that Instant cawsed an Allowance to be sett down, which was cast vp by Mr. *Mainard*, and then viewed by him self, and I promised to haue it dispatcht; my Lord of *Essex*, as I writ vnto you, told me, that the Queen gaue Comandment their shuld be 500 *l.* deliuered for to provide Powder. Notwithstanding all this, my Lord Tresorer now doth seeke to supply all your Wants, by sending her Majestys earnest Letters to the States Generall, and likewise to them of *Zealand*; and in such Manner, as your Lordship peraduenture will much marvaile at it, when you see them.

Their was deliuered vpon *Thursday*, in thafter Noone, to Sir *Robert Cecill*, by his Father, the Minutes or Draughts of the said Lettres, to be put into *French*, and, as I am informed, they cheifly contain these Points: That her Majesty, in this Time of Daunger, arminge and preparing all Things necessary for the Defence of her own Cowntry, cawsed Lettres to be sent vnto you, to aduertise her of the particular State of your Gouvernement, which she had a speciall Care of, and how you were provided of Things fitt for the Safety of it.

That your Lordship in Answer of these, doth by your Lettres at lardge make knownen, their is no Powder lefte in the Town; that the States being by you desired, haue delayd the Supplying of your Wants, and theirfore you were forced to spend the Store of Powder (which from hence was from Time to Time sent ouer to ly their for the Defence of the Town) vpon the Soldiors and Artillery, wherein you are much blamed by her Majestie; that the Fortificacions are in many Places weake, the Ramparts and Diches decayed, and vnrepaired; that the Ordounances vpon the Walles ly vnmounted. Her Majestie doth therfore much maruaile at it, and according to the Contract, doth pray and require them speedely to furnish your present Want with a good Supply of Powder, and also to restore back all the full Quantity of Powder by her sent ouer (which contrary to her Meaning was spent) because she wold haue it here againe to serue her own Turne; that they mount all your Artillery, repaire your Fortifications, Ramparts, and Diches; and to all this she expects their speedy Answer and Resolution.

I thought good to aduertise your Lordship of this with all possible Speed, and to let you knowe, that I thincke these Cowrses are consulted vpon by the Father and the Son only, the Lords not priuy vnto them all. And I dare not acquaint others with these Proceedings, because I wold not offend your Lordship in erring from your Directions, to sollicit my Lord Tresorer only. Yet this I conceue, that the Queen and his Lordship wold haue the Town provided for, and if the States refuse to furnish your Wants, that then their is no Remedy, the Supply must come from hence. When the Letters are signed and read, I purpose to send my Man *George* with them.

The Queen came to *Whyt Hall* Yesternight, my Lady to Morrow goes to the Court, to haue your Leauue moued, and to make her best Friends know, how much it imports you to be here for 2 or 3 Moneths. God send her better Succes then my Lady *Borough* had, whose Desire was absolutely denied, and the



Queen toke it very ill, that in such a Time he wold desire to be from his Government.

I am now going to the Court, and what I can hear I will this Night by the Post send vnto you. London, this Saturday Morning, 25 of Nouember, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

Yesterday my Lady was at Court, where my Lord Admirall, and all that Tribe, were exceeding glad to see her. She alledged the Want of your Health, the Greatnes of your Busines, for the Good of your Children only, since the Death of your Brother; and desired my Lord Admirall to promise your Return back shuld be within 2 or 3 Moneths. After that he had much pitied her Iorney, being so big and so neare her Time, he went vp to the Queen, and, as busy as they were there about the Pricking of Sheriffs, he spoke to my Lord Treasurer, my Lord of *Essex*, and my Lord Chomberlain, to ioine with him in this Motion to the Queen, for your Leaue for so short a Time. And they all are willing vnto it, and they say they will doe it before the Queen remoue back again to *Richmond*, which wilbe vpon *Thursday*. My Lord of *Essex* being busy aboue, sent Mr. *Carew Reinald* twice vnto her, to excuse his not Comming himself, and now that he was so well backt, he hoped to bring her the first News of your Leaue himself, to her House in *Brodstreet*. My Lady of *Kildare* was sent purposely to keep my Lady Company, who had my Lady *Hobies* Chamber alone to her self to dine at.

I must not forget to acquaint your Lordship, with Mr. *Cholmleys* exceeding Care of my Lady, who vpon his own Cost prepared such a Dinner for my Lady, of good Meat and well dressed, that for 12 Dishes I neuer saw better in my Liffe. She visited my Lady *Warwick*, my Lady *Skudmore*, and my Lady of *Hartford*, who is now more comforted then she was.

As my Lady passed thorough the Garden, she mett by Chaunce with the two Sisters, my Lady *Elizabeth*, and *Katharine Somersett*, and they were very glad to salute her and see her.

My Lady tooke with her Mrs. *Mary*, Mr. *William*, and Mrs. *Katharine*; my Lord Admiral sware, if it had not bene so busy a Time, his best Cosen and her Children shuld haue seen the Queen, but he wold tell her of their being at Court. I haue, according to your Directions, deliuered Mr. *Stanhop* and Mr. *Griuell* your Lettres, who promise much; and this Day I goe to my Lord Treasurer and Mr. *Manners*. As I can dispatch your Busines, I will advertize your Lordship.

This Lettre, I now send you from my Lord of *Essex*, I thinck doth confirme what I writ vnto you of his Motion to the Queen for your Leaue, and her Denial; but my Lady being at Court, hath giuen it new Liffe: She was at *Baynards* Castell with my Lord of *Pembroke*.

My Lord Admiral did very much ioy in your Children, and told Mrs. *Mary* she was already a fitt Maid for the Queen. God blefs them, and make you long liue to be carefull of them; for goodlier Children this World hath not. London, 25 of Nouemb. 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Sir



Sir Thomas Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

THE Letter heerwith was sent me to convey, with which I haue no Mater to send yow besides, but that the Queen hath written hither, That for her Demande she will vrge it no longer for the Present, if so be they will assist her with 30 of their best Shippes against the *Spanishe* Preparations, and defray the Expenses of her Auxiliarie Forces, which is but Half of the Offer which was made by my Overture; and yet it will not be accorded. For we will aske it as a Debt, by Vertue of the Contract, which they contend we ought to keepe as a Matter of Right, and a iust Stipulation, and dare not signifie to the People, that the Queene will dissolue it; and therefore, in the Ende, if any Thing be gotten, it must come by the Meanes of an other newe Treatie: But for the Shippinge required, they doe promise altogether, to come well provided. The Sending of Deputies, to enforme her Majestie at full of the State of their Affaires, is once againe a Foote, and I thinke they intende it out of Hande, and haue signified so muche by a Lettre to her Majestie. Heere is no other Matter so much worth as a Sheate of Paper; for which I leaue yow, and comend yow to Gods good Tuition. *Hage, 25 Nouemb. 1595.*

Your Lordships at commandement,

Tho. Bodley.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

YOUR last Lettre to my Lord Treasurer, that came in your Packet vnto me by the Post of the 19 of *Nouember*, I thought had concerned your Leave only, and therefore I chose out a fitt Tyme to send yt in to hym by Mr. *Mainard*, hauing attended two Dayes to fynd hym at Leisure. Yt was so ill wrytten, that my Lord hymself cold not reade yt; so Mr. *Mainard* was faine to helpe hym in yt. Your Lordship giues my Lord Treasurer Thanckes, for hauing moued the Queen to yeld vnto the Supply of the Wants of Powder in *Flushing*, as I had certified, his Lordship had informed me, which I protest before the living God, was true, though he now denies yt. As Mr. *Mainard* can well witness, when I put hym in Mynd how that he and I cast vp a lesser Proportion of Powder, according to a reformed Allowance: To this he shrugged vp his Sholder, and sayes, that my Lord forgets yt. My Lord tels me I misvnderstood hym; that yt was true, he moued the Queen, but that she was not willing to giue the Supply of Powder, till the States Intent were first known, who, by their Contract, were to do it, as in *Brill* and *Ostend*: Let me neuer be believed, if at that Tyme he vsed any such Speach vnto me. My Lord of *Essex* is honorable, and I know will not forgett he told me the very same Day, that yt was argued and disputed before the Queen, and that she was pleased, that 500 *l.* should be deliuered for that Supply. I did not thincke yt Wisdom to contend with such a mighty Lord, but to beare this Wrong patiently; that he assured the Queen when she blamed you, yt was not a Fault of yours, but an Error of theirs that went before you. I humbly thancked his Lordship, for hauing sayd so much in your Behalf; that sure I was your Lordship, was most vnwilling to draw the Queen to any of these Charges, if you cold haue fownd any other Way to have remedied yt: That now hauing her Majesties Lettres to warrant you, you wold deale very carefully, to bring the States to performe this Article of the contract. But my Lord sayd I, their is no Powder in the Town, and what shall we doe for Powder, while the States be resoluing. To this he made Answer, that he wold acquaint her Majestie once more with yt; and that he had earnestly delt with her, to deliuer Powder, to be



be answered vpon the Soldiours generall Pay, but she wold not consent vnto yt; but was content, yf yt might be defalked out of their weekly Lendings; that is a Thing impossible, quoth I, for they doe most hardly liue vpon yt, and doe murmur, that their full pay is kept from them.

Well sayd he, for the Wants of the Queens Ordonnance, I will wryt a Warrant to Sir *George Carew*, for Carriages, and to certifie what your Demandes comes vnto, which Lettre I haue sent hym.

And understanding his Lordship was to goe to the Queen, I humbly besought hym to remember to speake vnto her Majestie, for your Leauē, but for 6 Weks or 2 Moneths, to which he answered that he wold doe his best; though your Lordship, in no Letter you wryt vnto hym of late, made any Mention of yt. But it is one Parte of my Busines here, to sollicit yt, and in all your Lettres vnto me, I am comanded to desire his honorable Fauor and Furtherance in yt; soe I departed from hym, and he went vp to the Queen, but did no good in this; but only delt for Thanfwer of your last Pacquett of Importance vnto hym, sent by Capt. *Browns* Soldier, and this enclosed is Thanfwer, as Mr. *Mainard* tels me. Now to answer all other Points of your Lettres vnto me, by the Post, which came to my Hands, the 22 of *November*.

I will begin with Mr. *Roger Manners*, when I deliuered him your Lordships Lettre, he brake yt vp, and went to his Window, and from one Corner to the other, for more Light; at last he cald me vnto hym, and sayd that he wold not take 100 *l.* to read this Lettre. I was faine to read yt for hym, and he was exceeding glad to heare such Praise, of my Lord of *Rutland*, because yt came from your self, that he knowes can rightly iudge of the Hopes he expectes in his Nephue; and for hym self (when I had deliuered vnto hym, the Message you comand me) he protested, that he was now the same, he was then, and in all other Occasions, he wilbe right glad, and willing to shew his Love and Affection vnto you.

I acquainted Mr. *Griuell*, with the Reasons that moued you to desire to return, but for 6 Weekes, and besought hym to direct me the Course I shuld obserue in yt; he hauing understood how farre yt was proceeded in by my Lord of *Essex*, and how my Lord Treasurer, and Lord Admirall, wold againe moue yt. He assured me, that he liked the Cours, but he was affrayd that my Lord *Borough*, and your Lordship, both iumping at one Tyme for Leauē, might hynder each other, yet willed he me, to follow them, and bring yt to some Resolution; and that he would not faile to doe all kynd Offices to further yt.

Mr. *Stanhope* assured me, that he esteemed yt as a Fauor, your Lordship did repose such Confidence in hym, that he wold not faile, both to take a fitt Tyme with the Queen, and to put my Lord Treasurer in Mynd of yt.

I have followed my Lord of *Essex*, and my Lady *Warwicke*, very diligently, and they both assure me, that yt must be my Lord Treasurer that must doe yt, if yt wilbe donne at all. For my Lord Admirall speaking of yt, with my Lord of *Essex*, for his Assistance, he answered that he wold back hym, telling hym how far he had already delt with the Queen, and what absolut deniall was giuen hym.

With Mr. *Mainard* I brake the Matter, as from my self; his Opinion is, that we shall haue no Parlement, till the last Subsedy be payd, that the Speech of a Parlement was vpon the Preparacion of *Spaine*, which being waxen cold, he thought the Speech wold dy to, of a Parlement. As for the Creation of Noblemen, he of hym self remembred, that your Lordship was once named, and made no Doubt, but you wold be named againe; and deeply protested, that if their were any such Thing intended, or when yt shall be, he will most carefully give me Notice of yt, and would grace my Saruice here, in any Thing I had Occasion to vse hym: That he knew his Lord loued you, that he hard hym say, you had many good Parts in you, able to doe your Cowntrey Seruice, and wished your Lordship to beare with his Age and Buifnes; if you had not assone as you expected Resolutions, in those Things that concern your  
Gouernment;



Gouernment; that vpon the Answer of the States, you shall speedely receue Contentment, aduising me, to wryte vnto you as from my self, to deale so effectually with them, as her Majestie may vnderstand you are willing this Charg shuld light vpon them.

I mett Mr. *Lake* at Court, and told hym I was comanded by your Lordship to attend hym, and to be directed by hym, if their were Occasion, to which he answered. That in the Buifnes I spake of, their was no sturring; for that the Report of a Parlement was ended, and that he had wrytten vnto you of yt already, and lefte his Lettre at Mr. *Burnhams*, to be sent vnto you.

Mr. *Golding* was here, and we went to Mr. Sollicitor, who hauing better thought vpon this Conference, deliuered his Opinion plainly vnto us. That her Cownseill [*Lady Warwicks*] and yours, would neuer agree, but wold stand vpon such Doubts and Cauels, as cold neuer be ended but by Triall and Judgment; and therefore, his Opinion was, that to satisfie my *Lady Warwicke*, Mr. *Finch* should acquaint some of her younger Cownsaill with the Case, but not giue yt them in Writing; and in the meane Tyme, your Lordship might surcease your Sute in Law.

I went to Mr. *Oldsworth* and told hym, that Mr. *Finch* was ready to meet with some of my Ladyes younger Cownsell, to talke of this Case, which he liked of very well; they mett Yesterday, and as Mr. *Finch* tels me, he will handle the Matter soe, that he will draw from them, more then they shall from hym; and if my *Lady Warwicke* will needs haue a Meeting of both Cownfels, yt may be the next Terme, which *Oldsworth* rather desires then, then now; because all my Ladys Cownsell may haue Tyme to be better instructed, and prepared for a Conference.

Mr. *Finch* told me, that he hard your Lordship would stand to be Knight of the Shire in *Kent*, that the Cowntrey wold be glad of yt, and that he wold shew many Offices of his Seruice, if Occasion required; to this I cold say nothing, as hauing neuer hard any Word of your Lordships Inclination that way. I iudged yt to be some Motion of your Friends, that peradventure thincke to doe you a Pleasure in yt.

Mr. *Beecher* hath broken the Matter of your Accownts to *Hix*, who already hath made Sir *Robert Cecill*, priuy vnto yt; and as I heare, his Answer was, that your Lordship was denied yt in the same Kind that *Becher* Demands yt out of the *Checquer*, but Mr. *Hix* answered, that your Lordship in Consideracion of great reckonings between you and *Beecher*, was content to turn ouer vnto hym, that Debt of the Queens, which now was no more your Lordships, but the Interest in *Beecher*, and vpon that Grownd followes the Sute. Mr. *Hix* hath yt a Foote, and will loose no Tyme to bring yt to some End. Yt was told me, that the Queen of late gaue speciall Comandment to my Lord Treasurer, and Sir *John Fortescue*, that out of the generall Cheques, no Paiment shuld be made without her own Warrant.

I haue sought amongst many Papers, your Brothers Aduise of Trauell vnto you, but yet cannot fynd yt, and I am not sure I haue yt.

Mr. *Hen. Sidney* is so busy and carefull, about this Assurance, for the Purchase he makes, that Night and Day he liues with his Lawiers. *Whiting* tels me, that he fynds by his Master, that he continews his former Purpose towards you, and yours; but as yet hath not setled his Estate, or signed any Will or Conueighance; when he doth, your Lordship shalbe assured of his Seruice, and Furtherance. That if his Mistris knew, how he was inclined towards you, he might receue blame, and therefore refers all Conference to his comming to *London*, which wilbe euery Terme, and desires to haue no Lettres sent vnto hym. Mr. *Sidney* tooke your Lettre very kindly, and will answer yt er he goe away.

The Queen went Yesterday to *Richmond*, my *Lady Hartford* was at *Whitehall*, with my Lord *Essex*, my Lord Treasurer, Sir *Robert Cecill*, and others, very meanly attired. I hard, the Queen should say, that her Husbands Liffe nor Liuing, shuld be called in Question.



The Master of the Rowles, was sent to examine my Lady *Shrosbery*, who answers very discretly and prudently to those Articles objected by the Phisician against her.

This Matter is to hotly pursued by Mr. *Talbot*.

My Lord *Shrosbery*, and my Lady liue here, hard by us.

London, this Saturday  
Noone, 29 Nouem.  
1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

My Lord *Pembroke* is gon out of Town this Day, and the Matters between hym, and my Lord of *Essex* not ended, about *Norwod Parcke*. My Lord *Pembroke* saies, that my Lord *Essex* doth not perform Covenants. My Lord of *Essex* saies, that he wold haue that for 6000 *l.* which he may haue 12000 *l.* for. But their is some Fault attributed to *Sanford*, who was by my Lord *Pembroke* imploied, to my Lord of *Essex*'s Officers, about this Buifnes, and thought to haue bene to peremptory in his Speech, which he saies, were the Messages of his Lord. The seeking to ouerthrow Sir *Hen. Berklees* Lease, vpon so nice a Point, as the Paiment, of his Rent, to a Bailiffe, that entred not into Bond, according to the Statute, and therefore was vnlawfull; is very much spoken of euery where. Sir *Harry*, hath deliuered his Petition to the Queen, who is angry at soch Corfes. Yet is yt, *Summum Jus*. My Lord of *Essex* is weary of yt, and wold haue my Lord of *Pembroke* comence the Sute in his own Name. What will grow of this between them, I know not.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**A**L L this Day my Lady hath kept her Bed, and now it appeares to be the very Measels; she is not sicke with them, but as the Children were when they had them. Doctor *Brown* was here, and saies, that seeing my Lady is soe neare her Time, Godwilling, it will not proue daungereous. The Midwiffe is in the House, and Mrs. *Bacon*. I know not now what to say for Goships, for sure I am, these great ones you name wilbe vnwilling to come, and therefore will attend your Lordships further Directions. I was going to the Court to morrow Morning, to bring your Leauē to a Resolution, but I am comanded by my Lady to attend here, till I see what will grow of this, which I trust in God wilbe past within two Daies, as the Children were. My Lord Treasurer is in Town, and vntill his being at Court, I doe not know to what great Purpose I shold be their, only to follow my Lord Admirall, who I am vnwilling shuld moue it without my Lord Treasurers Presence. For the Instruction you giue me to deale with my Lord of *Essex*, I wilbe aduised by Mr. *Lake*. My Lady receues great Comfort by her Children, who are continually with her; so is Mr. *William*, that hithervnto hath escaped them. London, this Saturday Night, 29 of Nouemb. 1595.

Your Honors, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

**M**Y Lady was safely brought to Bed Yesternight, at 9 a Clocke, of a goodly Sonne, being Monday, the 1st of December, 1595; and now I will tell yow the Circumstances: These 3 Daies past my Lady was full of the Measels, had withall a great Cough, and a gentele Feuor, it made vs all very fearfull; and my Lady herself all Day Yesterday tooke your Lordships Absence as a great Part of her Affliction, and burst out into these Words: *That now she had most Cause for your Presence and Comforte, it was not Gods Will for her to haue it.* About 4 a Clocke in thafter Noone, *Risley* came in with Lettres vnto her



her from your Lordship, which indeed brought great Comfort vnto her, seeing your Lordship could not be here, you were most carefull of her; and to heare of her welldoing, in sending him of Purpose ouer to that Intent; and when she had oft and oft asked him how you did of your Ague, she gaue him Leauē to goe to my Lord Treasurer. I went with him, and let *Mainard* know he was sent of Purpose with those Lettres, and speedely to return. He went in with the Lettres, came out againe, and told *Risley* he needed not stay; by 7 a Clocke we were come backe againe to my Ladys House; half an Houre after she began to haue Paines; her Midwiffe, by her own Leauē, was at the Labor of one in the *Spittle*; we sent for her speedely, and hauing a convenient Number of Women about her, I sent for *Jacob*, Doctor *Brown*, and *Nash*, who all 3 presently came; her Ladyship receaued great Comfort by their being in the House; but, I thank God, she had no Occasion to vse *Jacob* or the other, for from 8 to 9 her Paines were sharpe and naturall, and God, according to his wonted Goodnes towards her, deliuered her of the Paine, by sending into this World a goodly fatt Boy, but as full of the Measels in the Face as can be. They gaue it some of the Nurfes Milke and Saffron, which he suckt out of a Spooone, and they keape him very warme; he suckes as well as any Child doth, and cries as strongly\*. See that we hope in God he shall liue long, to both your Comforts.

Doctor *Brown* lay here all Night, and is the most carefull Man in the World of his Profession. All your Children are in very good Health. As for the foolish Brutes giuen out of her Majestie, beleue me my Lord they proceed from some ill disposed Humors, for I know their was no Cause to lead them to it, her Highnes daily shewing her self to her faithfull Subiects, and they most ioying in her Sight, as well appeared at the Triumphes of her Coronation, and at her Remoue from hence vpon *Thursday* last. I doe duly obserue her Welldoing, which God grant may be long among vs. *Risley* is gone to the Court with my Lord of *Essex* Lettres, because the Capt. of the Ship is gon to *Stretam* to *Charon*, and will not away till to morrow Morning. I thought good to send this Lettre, because I know your Lordship is desirous to heare of my Lady. She is in good State, as Doctor *Brown* and the Wives tels me, and God will strengthen her. Your Leauē being denied to my Lord of *Essex*, I am aduised not to haue it moued again, but by my Lord Treasurer, who goes to Court this Weeke, and I will attend him. In Hast, this *Tuesday* Morning, 2d of *Decemb.* 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte,

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**I**N my last, of the 2d of *December*, I signified my Ladys safe Deliuērance of a goodly Sonne, which was born vpon *Monday* Night, at 9 a Clocke, the 1st of *December*; and in it I specified how my Lady and the Child had the Measels; that my Lady fownd as great Care had of her, as was possible to be had of any in the same Case, which she knew proceeded from some former Directions of your Lordships vnto me, in your deereft Loue to her. Your Letter to my Lady *Rich*, sent by *Risley*, as she sayes, was to desire her to be a Godmother, which she doth most willingly agree to, and so desired me to let you know, which she wold her self haue donne, but that she was going to *Epsom*. I then told her, That long before I knew both your Lordship and my Lady had an Intent to desire that Honor at her Hand, but as Things fell out, I was assured that neither of you wold, for any Thing in the World, request her vnto it. And she being most desirous to know why, I answered her, that my Lady and the

\* This was *Robert Sydney* the second Earl of *Leicester*, who highly distinguished himself by his eminent Abilities and Services; and when he died, was eighty-one Years and eleven Months old, viz. the 2d of *November*, 1677.



Child born had the Measels : To which she sodainly replied, that after 8 Dayes their was no Daunger to be feared, and therefore it shalbe no Occasion to keape me from doing Sir *Robert Sydney* and my Lady a greater Kindnes. When I saw her so desperat, I humbly besought her Ladyship to take a longer Time to thincke vpon the Daunger, which she did till that after Noone ; and then coming to her to *Essex* House, she told me she was resolued, and therefore desired me to let your Lordship and my Lady know it. She asked me who was thought vpon to be the Godfathers ; I said my Lord *Monjoy* for one, but I cold not well tell who the other shuld be. Thence I went to *Holborn*, and found my Lord *Monjoy* at his House ; I said my Lady sent me vnto him, to desire him, both in your Name and hers, to christen your Sonne that was newly born, which he very honorably promised to doe ; and when I told him my Lady *Rich* was God-mother, he was much pleased at it ; and assuring me, whensoever the Day was apointed, he wold not faile to be theire.

My Lady cannot yet bethinke her self of an other Godfather, but desires your Lordship to name one, and to giue her Leauē that his Name be *Robert*. Her Ladyship meanes (if your Leauē cannot be obtained) to haue Sir *Edmund Vuedall*, and Capt. *Savage* here, to bid your Goships welcom. And Mr. *Cholmley*, with my self, will vndertake to provide the Banquet, of what Goodnes, your Lordship shall please to set down.

My Lady *Rich* desires the Christning may be some 3 or 4 Daies before *Christmas*, because till then she wilbe in the Countrey ; my Lady by me sent her Word, that it shuld be then, or when els she wold please to appoint it.

*Risley* and I haue bene euery Day at my Lord Treasurers for an Answer to those Lettres he brought, and yet can haue none ; only this I learn, that he sent them to Sir *Robert Cecill* to the Court.

My Lord of *Essex*, euer since *Monday*, was at *Petworth*, and came this after Noone to the Court ; *Risley* deliuered him your Lettres with his own Hands, but is returned without Answer.

Sir *Michael Blunt* is put out of his Place, and this I heare said to be the Cause : He grew very familiar with Mr. *Neuell*, alias *Latimer*, and Capt. *Wainman* ; and in Discours with them, they began to talke of the Dangers of the Time ; from that to argue of the Towne, how it might be made defensible, what Provision, what Men wold serue the Turn, what a braue Comand it was in a Change ; then they grew madder, as to talke of Titles, and tis reported the Lifetenant deliuered his Mind how he was affected ; that he and his Friends wold keape that Place till he saw great Reason to yeld it. But when they had waded so far, Masters, said he, these Matters we speake of are perrilus, and therefore I will haue nothing to doe with it. But *Latimer* and *Wainman*, fownd Meanes to discouer it first to the Queen, wherevpon the Liestenant was examined by the Lords, and is now comitted in the Towre. Upon *Tuesday* last, Sir *Drue Drury* was sworne in his Place.

Sir *Henry Bagnoll* is come to *London*, and finds so few Friends here, that he lies sicke at his Lodging, and sends his Lettres to the Lords.

Sir *George Carey* takes it very vnkindly, that my Lord of *Pembroke* broke of the Match intended between my Lord *Herbart* and his Daughter, and told the Queen it was because he wold not assure him 1000 *l.* a Yeare, which comes to his Daughter, as next a Kinne to Queen *Ann Bullen*. He hath now concluded a Marriage between his Daughter and my Lord *Barkleys* Sonne and Heire.

The Queen vsed my Lord of *Pembroke* very well at his Departure, and sent my Lady your Sister a Jewell, but hath not graunted my Lord *Harbart* his Sute for *Clarindon*. Truly I hard, that if my Lord of *Pembroke* shuld die, who is very purfise and maladise, the Tribe of *Hunsdon* doe laye Waite for the Wardship of the braue yong Lord.

I mett this Day with a Cosen of mine, the Customer of *Lynne*, who in Secret told me, that he had, within these few Daies, Conference with Mr. *Hen. Sydney*, and that he findes him so well bent towards you, and your Name, that he will leaue you all his Lands..



My Lady *Darbys* great with Child, staies still at Court, and many wonder that she doth not return.

As for your Busines, touching Creation, I wilbe, as I write vnto you, aduised by Mr. *Lake* in what Sort I shall deale with my Lord of *Essex*, vpon the Instruction you gaue me, and will watch Opportunities to find him alone.

My Lady not being well, hath kept me from the Cort these 7 Daies, but I had Busines enough in Town, about some Supplies now granted from the *Towre*, for the Queens Ordonnance in *Flushing*; as by another Letter, I will presently write purposely of that Seruice vnto yow, because I will make an End of this.

London, Friday the 5th of  
December, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Row. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

I Deliuered Sir *George Carew* my Lord Treasurers Letter, which containd a Collection of certain Parcels, necessary for the Queens Demi Canons, taken out of the Note of the generall Wants of *Flushing*, deliuered by the Master Gunner at his being here; which feuerall Parcels were by my Lord Treasurers Direction prized by the Officers of the *Towre*. And now their is a Warrant and a Priuy Seale fairly ingrossed, for the Queen to sign, which hath bene my three Dayes Labor: Assone as it is dispatched at Court, the Officers of the *Towre* promise to transport them speedely vnto you, which I will alsoe haue a Care of. The Store that shalbe sent at this Time comes to 192 l. 15 s. 8 d. As for Pikes, Powder, Musket, Calliuer, Match, Lead, which are the principall and necessary Wants of *Flushing*, I can haue no Answer of, only that the States must first Answer her Majesties Letters for Powder, er any Order wilbe taken; but I will sollicit an Answer to this Lettre you sent by *Risley*, to know what you shall doe while the States be resoluing for Powder.

As for Shott for *Culuering*, *Saker*, *Minion*, &c. the States are to doe it; As for Vittailles, your Lordship must nourish Liffe in it by your Lettres, els will it dye.

London, 5 Decemb.  
1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

MY Lord of *Essex* tels me, that when he acquainted the Queen with the Contents of your Lettres, sent by the Page, she demanded where the Boy was, and wold haue let him come to her Prefence, but being comanded by my Lady not to stay at Court, he missed of that Hapines; it may perchaunce neuer come so again as long as he liue.

Sir *Hen. Vmpton* was in a good Forwardnes of going into *Fraunce*, but within theise 2 Daies their is some Backwardnes in it, and the Cawse muttred, to be *Villeroyes* present Imploiment from that King to the King of *Spaine*; which Aduertisement I doe not heare comes from Mr. *Edmonds*, and theirfore held doubtful, but if it be true, their is great Negligence imputed vnto him.

I heare that Mr. *Killigrew* shall receve and pay the Treasure of the Chamber, till the Queen find one fitt for it; but if this continew true, Mr. *Killigrew* will haue it in the End himself. Sir *Henry Bagnall* is at Court, and doth answer discreetly and stoutly to what is said vnto him; he is somewhat blamed for being to severe in his Gouvernment.

*Wood*, Yesterday in *Cheapsyd*, vpon a Pillory, had one Eare cut of, and three Lettres burnt in his Forehead. He made an Oracion to the People, that the

V O L. I.

7 D

Fact



Fact was his own, procured vnto it by others ; that his own Confession was voluntary, leade vnto it by the horrible Sting of his Conscience, to accuse him of his owne Villanies, which els cold neuer haue bene discouered ; that he had rather goe to Heauen with one Eare, then to Hell with both Eares, and desired the People to pray with him, that God wold receaue his Contrition.

In his Examination, he doth charge my Lady *Sbrusbury* very deeply with the Matter, but her Honor denies it ; and thother brings no Prooffe but himself to confirme it, which in Reason, beinge a perjured Fellow, ought not to be beleued.

I can haue no Answer what the Queen will haue you doe for Powder, while the States be resoluing, nor what her Pleasure is for Pikes, Muskett, Calliuer, Match, and Lead, with a Proportion of Vittailles. My Lord Treasurer will not be here till *Tuesday* or *Wednesday*, then will I sollicit the Resolucion for your Leaue to return, the Time is fitt for it, because Men speake litle of the *Spanish* Preparacion, only the Cardinalls comming down is the Thing that is thought to bring many Matters with it. I heare by diuers, that the Queen was very angry when my Lord of *Essex* moued her for you, but all your Friends here doe wish me to see the End of my Lord Treasurers, and Admirals Promises, which, God willing, I will doe.

Here is all Speach of Parlement quite dead, and for the Matter, you will me to breake with my Lord of *Essex*, I must attend my Time to doe it. I will call vpon *Lake*, *Stanhop*, *Grivell*, and *Ferdinando*, to write vnto you. I will attend your Lordships Pleasure for the Banquet, and what Honor you will haue donne to my Lady *Rich*.

I was desired by my Lady *Warwicke* to comend her very kindly vnto you. My Lady *Huntingdon* promises to write ; I cold neuer haue Access vnto her, she hath gotten my Lords Leaue to come vp.

My Lady *Elizabeth Clinton*, and my Lady, mett at my Lady *Comberlands* before her lying down, and she sent twice to see how my Lady did since her Deliuery. Your Cousen, Mr. *Henry Sydney*, is gon into the Cowntry, and desires you to excuse his not answering of your Lettre, for Want of Time ; he promises much, and that he loues you ; God send him to perform it in Deedes. I know *Whiting* will continew all good Offices.

At Court, this *Sunday*  
7 of *December*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sidney.

My Lord,

I Signified the Cause of Vnkindnes between 1000 [Earl of *Essex*] and 2000 [*Pembroke*] which yet continewes, but the Queen takes the Matter in Hand, and mightely fauors the Western Knight, is angry with 1000 for taking so violent a Course, and tels 2000 he shall goe without the Thing in Question, who sware vnto her Majestie, that he wold neuer deliver vp the Couenants and Assurances he had, and that to be denied the Cours of Law, was an Injury donne to the meanest Subiect. But away is he gone, being at his Departure graciously vsed, and a Jewell sent to C——c ; but since here are like many Stormes to fall vpon him, by Complaints growing vpon some of his Proceedings within his Gouvernment, and here hath he now no Frend to leane vnto ; 500 truly touched with a Scorn, as he thinkes donne vnto him, by refusall of the intended Marriage, and indeed bent to fauor all that are his Aduersaries. My Lady, your Sister, is very well : *Beecher* hath, as he tels me, written to you what his Opinion is touching the Vittaille, which is not to medle in it without an Imprest, and withall to haue your Lordships Fauor to sell it from Time to Time, but still to haue a Care to the Safety of the Town and your Honor. I haue had Speach with Mr. *Lake* about Thinstruction you sent me, who wills me to forbear doing your Comandment for a While, because the Speach of a Parlement is dead againe. Yet doth honest 11  
tell



tell me, that though it receue many Checks, it will forward, because it brings necessary Profit with it, and that vpon *Sunday* he hard it shold be; but I will haue an Eare opened and an Eye vnto your Lordship, and wilbe aduised by Mr. *Lake*, whom I fynd very carefull to doe you Seruice. I writt vnto you I had bene with my Lord *Monjoy*, and my Lady *Rich*, and now here are resolued of the 3. I will goe in your Name and my Lady, to my Lord *Compton*.

As for the Wants I writ vnto you of the Artillery, they shalbe supplied, for the Warrants I deliuered to Sir *Robert Cecill* for the Queen to signe, are recomended by my Lord Treasurer with his own Hand. As to your Leave, I was comanded by my Lord Admiral, my Lady *Warwick*, and Mr. *Stanhope*, to signifie this much vnto you: That the Queen talking of *Low Cowntrey* Matters with my Lord Admiral, told him what Reports were giuen out of her, and that your Lordship had sent very carefully a Page ouer of Purpose, to bring you assured Word how she did.

This Opportunity he tooke to moue her about your Return, and kneeling down besought her Majestie to heare him. He said, that the Death of your Brother occasioned a great Alteracion in your priuat Estate; that one of his Cownsell, whoe was also one of yours, assured him, that it did much concern you to be here for one Terme, to settle your Fortune; that this Care in you was specially for the Good of your Children, his very neare Kinred, that wold be much preiudiced, if any Thing otherwise then well hapned vnto you before you returned, and theirfore humbly desired her Majestie to license your Return but for six Weekes; that he wold giue his Word you shuld stay no longer. Those 6 Weekes you speake of wold be 6 Moneths, said the Queen, and I will not haue him away when the Cardinall comes there. My Lady *Warwick* assured her, that if there were any Occasion of her Seruice to call you away, you wold prefer it before all your privat Busines, and return, leauinge it vndonne. And Mr. *Stanhope* kneeled, and told her, that she needed not feare your Return to your Gouvernment, if her Seruice required it; for if she wold, at your being here, but lay her Comandments vpon you to begone, he euer knew you foe respectiue Obedient of them, that you wold depart in 6 Howres. But for all this she wold nether grant it, nor denie it. And in deed no Resolution wilbe had till my Lord Treasurers being at Court, who is at *Strand*, and by the Queens own Comandment (lest he shuld take cold) to stay thire till milder Weather. The Lords came of Purpose from the Court vnto hym, and satt in Cownsell this after Noone, about *French* Busines, which indeed troubles them very much, for as I hear, the King answers, that as a Prince carefull of his Subiects; he must by some Meanes or other looke vnto their Safety, and keape his Cowntry from vtter Ruin, that is like to perish, if some Remedy be not found out to comfort it, which is laid open vnto him by many of his faithfull Subiects, but that he is most vnwilling to harken vnto it, being vnpleasing vnto him, as long as he can possibly stand without it; but to what Cours soeuer he be driuen vnto, he will neuer forgett her exceeding Fauors donne vnto him. And I heare that the Duke *d'Espernon*, having of late lost by Reuolt 3 Townes in *Prouence*, is now content to accept of Thoffers the King heretofore made vnto him. That the Cardinals Stay is not wholly for the Christning in *Sauoy*, but to nourish those Factiones and Broiles at *Marseiles*, and *Prouence*; to give Orders for the Levying of new Troops, and the Furnishing of all Things necessary for the War, if the States refuse the Peace he brings with him.

At our Court the Queen is well (euer may it be foe) and the faire Ladies doe daily trip the Measures in the *Counsell Chamber*. Sir *H. Vmpton* is vpon his Dispatch, but is most vnwilling to goe this Iorney; some of his Friends tell him, that the Queen meanes to bestow some Honor vpon him before he goe, but it is much doubted of by others. Sir *Roger Williams* hath bene dangerously sick of a hot burning Ague, that came by a Surfett, but is a very little better.

At London, this Monday Night,  
8 of December, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Row. Whyte.

Conte



Conte Maurice de Nassau, a Monsieur Monsieur de Sidney.

Monsieur,

**J'**A Y esté adverti par Messieurs les Estatz de Zelande, que l'ennemi seroit d'intention, d'assiéger la Ville de Oostende ; Laquelle comme Ilz me mandent, seroit mal proveue tant de gens guerre comme aussi de Commandeur. Et d'autant, que vous sçavez combien que la conservation de la dite place Importe, pour le Service de sa Majesté et de ces pays. Je n'ay peu laisser de vous prier Monsieur, que vous plaîse envoyer cent et cinquante hommes de *Flissingne*, Illec pour peu de Jours seulement, et Jusques a ce que nous puissions voire ce que l'ennemi voudra entreprendre J'envoie aussy quatre Companies de ces Garnisons, nonobstant ce temps de gelee : Il ne se peult faire sans meltre les places en danger. De ce que vous m'aviez mandé des fortifications de *Flissingne*, j'ay le faict a Messieurs les Estats serieusement, et tiendray la main qu'il y soit proveu. Et sur ceste fin apres mes humbles Recommendations en vos bonnes graces, je prie Dieu vous maintenir.

Monsieur & la sainte Protection. A la Hay le 11 de December, 1595.

Vostre tres Affectionné a vous

faire Service,

Maurice de Nassau.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**H**ER Majestie is in very good Health, and comes much Abroad: Vpon *Thursday* she dined at *Kow*, my Lord Keepers Howse (who lately obtained of her Majestie his Sute for 100 *l.* a Yeare Land in Fee Farm.) Her Intertainment for that Meale was great and exceeding costly. At her first Lighting, she had a fine Fanne, with a Handle garnisht with Diamonds. When she was in the midle Way, between the Garden Gate and the Howse, there came Running towards her, one with a Nosegay in his Hand, deliuered yt vnto her, with a short well pened Speach; it had in yt a very rich Jewell, with many Pendants of vnfird Diamonds, valewed at 400 *l.* at least. After Dinner, in her Privy Chamber, he gaue her a faire Paire of Virginals. In her Bed Chamber, presented her with a fine Gown and a Juppin, which Things were pleasing to her Highnes; and, to grace his Lordship the more, she, of her self, tooke from him a Salt, a Spoone, and a Forcke, of faire Agatte.

Your Lordships Leave stands as yt did, not moued since my Lord Treasurers Comming to the Court; but all promising to doe yt within 3 or 4 Dayes. If your honourable Friends doe me Right, they can witness, with what Care and Diligence I sollicyt and attend them, humbly desiring the Queens Resolution for your Returne; and daily alledging vnto them Thoccasions, and the Shortnes of the Tyme, desired to stay here. They all answer me, that now they are busy about Sir *Hen. Vmptons* Dispatch into *Fraunce*, that ended, they hope to fynd the Queen at better Leisure to be spoken vnto.

Here was Yesterday, *Mynn*, my Lord *Boroughes* Man, who is departed with an absolute Denial for his Leave; yet did he assure me, that his Lordship wold be here before *Candlemas*, let hap what list. He likewise told me, that in *Sussex* and *Kent*, whence he was newly come, yt was bruted Abrode, that your Lordship was sent for to be made a Counsailor, and asked me if yt were so or no. I did wonder how yt should rise.

The Lords satt this Forenoon about Sir *H. Vmptons* Instructions; some doe further his Going, some are more cold. Their is a Complaint come to the Lords against Mr. *Foulk Griuell*, for some Abuses in *Kanck Wood*, and an Information of 14000 *l.* Spoile, by good Certificat of Gentlemen dwelling their abouts.



abouts. Yt will grow hardly with hym: The Matter is referd to my Lord Treasurer, and Sir *John Fortescue*.

Sir *Roger Williams* died of a Surfett in *B. Castell*, Yesterday; at 3 a Clocke after Midnight. He gaue all he had to my Lord of *Essex*, who, indeed, faued his Sowle, for none but he cold make hym take a Feeling of his End; but he died well, and very repentant. His Jewels are valewed at 1000 *l.* Tis sayd he had 1200 *l.* out at Interest. In ready Gold he had 200 *l.* and 60 *l.* in Silver. His Plate is worth 60 *l.* his Garments 30 *l.* his Horfes 60 *l.* and this is his End. He desires to be buried in *Powles*, and I heare my Lord of *Essex* meanes to haue it donne in very good martiall Sort.

My Lady *Hertford* is here, sues to haue her Husband at Liberty, or at lest-wise to be comytted to my Lord *Canterbury* or my Lord Keapers. The Queen sees her not, though she be in the Privy Lodgings, but sends her graciouse Messages, that neither his Liffe or Fortune shalbe touched; sends her Brothes in a Morning, and at Meales, Meat from her Trencher.

My Lady *Dacres* is here, an earnest Suter for her 2 Sonnes Pardon, and takes a Course to make her Way easy; she is promised to come to the Queens Prefence. And I heare yt feared, my Lady *Sbrofbery* wilbe called in publique Question for *Woods* Perjuries; yet hath she here many great Friends of both Kinds.

Their is great Meanes made for Sir *Wal. Rawleighs* Comming to the Court, he lives about *London* very gallant; his Voiage goes forward, and my Lord Treasurer venters with hym 500 *l.* in Money: Sir *Robt. Cecill* venters a new Ship bravely furnisht, the very Hull stands in 800 *l.*

My Lord *Monjoy* was here, and spake with the Queen in privat, having his Gown girt about hym, because of an Ague: Some say he would faine be a Cownsaillor. And I hard that 200 should in priuat say to another, whom he trusted much, that the *Long Slang*, meaning 1000 [Earl of *Essex*] since *d d* going away, was never from 1500; and that . . . . now wold doe nothing but what he and my Lord knew.

To Morrow Morning, Sir *Edward Vvedall* deliuers to the Lords his Petition for his old Accounts, and makes no Doubt but to obtain yt in 12 Dayes, because all the Lords doe promes to further yt, and none will crosse yt. But I beleue the Queen her self will not grant yt. At Court, this *Saterday*, 13 of *December*, 1595.

*I am your Lordships, &c.*

R. Whyte.

Geo. Gilpin, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My very good Lorde,*

**B**Y Captain *Lamberts* Hands, I receavyd yours of the 4th; and for the first Point, touching *Ostende*, the Matters being ended, and Sir *Edward* returned thether, there needeth no Aunswer, leauinge the Particulars, vntil I see your Lordship. And as for my owne Cause, I would be loath to be troublesome vnto any, and beseech youe to pardon the Boldnes yf I vsed any, leauinge that, and any other, to your honorable Discretion and Pleasure. Want of Matter hath made me sylent this few Days; and had it not bin to fertifie youe of the Recepte of your aforesayd Lettre, I would, as yet, not have troubled your Lordship. This thawe fell owt very fitly, for the Enimie, as by intercepted Letters was discovered, prepared to have passed the Rivers into *Hollande*, which to oppose against, though his Excellencies Will was good, I insure youe, his Forces would haue bin slender, the Companies being weake, and the Places many, where he might haue entred. Of the mutynied *Italians* comminge agayne to *Turnhow*, I am sure youe haue vnderstood they have ryfled the Villages in those Quarters, demaunding 3 Months Contributions owt of Hand, threateninge all with Fire and Flame, yf they performe yt not. These Men do nothinge lyke of this Course, but how to amend yt, that is the Difficultie, havinge fauoured them thus longe. Most of the States Deputies that assembled

V O L. I.

7 E

here



here, are gonne to their Provinces to further the Graunt of Contributions for the nexte Yere ; so as here is no great Meetinge, and lesse Resoluinge. As yet, wee know not whome they will send ouer, stayinge for Aunswere to their last Lettres, weather hir Majesty lyke of those ment to send. Monsieur *Buzenval* hath lately assured the States, in the Behalfe of his Master, that he will make noe Peace nor Agreement with the King of *Spayne*, without their Knowledge and Lykinge ; but what Holde may be taken on such Assuraunce that consists in bare Words, I leave to others Iudgement. *Haeghe*, this 13 of *December*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Sir Thomas Lake to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

Althoug I haue no Newes to writte, yet meeting here with Mr. *White*, who from Tyme to Tyme hath acquainted me with his Proceadings in your Busines, aswell for your Leaue, as for the Supplyes, I thought it not amisse, doubting, least the Successe of Things, being not altogether as you perhaps expected, may cause you to impute it, to Want of Diligence in him, to answer, or that he hath exceeded all Rules of Dilligence, so farre, that he hath rather been troublesome with Importunity ; and without it, had neuer brought Things so far as they are ; your Leaue is yet in Hope. My Lord *Borroughes* absolutely denyed, and his Man sent away ; your Supplyes are yet vncertain, some Thing perhapps from hence, but not vntill we finde it desperate, to be don by the States. We are now dispatching Sir *Henry Vmpton*, to the *French* King, hoping to diuert him from a Course with *Spayne*, which by his own Aunswares, and Mr. *Edmonds*, and by other Coniectures, it seemeth he is lyke to enter into, the Pope working earnestly to bring it so to passe. And almost all his Councell discouering no good Concept of our Amity. I know not yet what wilbe the Successe of his Iorney, nor what we shall offer him, sufficient to diuert him from anie other Way, whereby he come to the Quiet Possession of his Kingdome. The cunning of Princes are great, and cannot be discernyd by euery Countenance ; but if he be in deed in Hope of a Peace, vppon any reasonable Conditions, I doe not see what we are able to offer and performe, that may incourage him to continew the Warre.

We heare still of the Preparations of *Spaine*, which me thinketh you should haue better Meanes to gett Knowledge of, then we. And because I would be glad that you might doe euery Thing, that may make you gratefull here, I thought good to lett you know, that we begynne to haue so feeling an Apprehension of the Deseigns of *Spayne*, as we wold be glad to be at some Coste, to discouuer the Certainty of the Preparations. And therefore if you could bethink of anie fitt Person there, that might make a Iorney into *Spayn* for that Purpose ; I thinke such an Offer being probable, wold be welcome.

I leaue to you, if it shall be your Chance to light on any such Concept, you must be thinke your Witts, by whom here you will present it, for you are not ignorant of the Iealousyes ; peraduenture it were best to make it to the Queen. I leaue further to trouble you. From *Richmond* this xiiijth *Decemb.* 1595.

Yours to command,

Tho. Lake.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Henry Sydney.

My Lord,

Word came hither Yesterday, that my Lord of *Huntington*, was leste in *Yorcke*, so sicke, as that yt is now feared he is dead. The Queen sent my Lord of *Essex* in Post vnto hym, and as I heare, to see Things well ordered  
† in



in those Quarters, vntill the Queen can fynd a trusty President, to send in his Place, if God shuld call hym away. My Lady of *Huntington*, knows nothing of this, and by the Queens Comand kept from her.

Here were sent for certain of Thaldermen of *London*, who are comanded to furnish speedely, 15 of their best Ships. And Letters are sent to all the Ports of *England*, to prepare such Ships, as by the Statute they are injoined, and to be ready out of Hand. My Lord Admirall is gonne to *Chatam*, to see the Nauie prepared, and that some be presently put to Sea, for here is a Suspicion conceued, that *Fuentes*, will with his Army now a Foote, attempt something against *Cales*.

My Lord Admiral spake very earnestly to my Lord Treasurer to move the Queen for your return for one Moneth, and that he wold giue his Honor, you shuld stay here no longer, which he hath promised to doe, and byd me attend yt. My Lady *Warwick*, and Mr. *Stanbope* tells me as much, so doth Mr. *Ferdinando*. I will not stir hence, till I know what my Lord Treasurer hath sayd to the Queen, and what her Pleasure is.

Yt was told me, that my Lord *Boroughes* Friends despairing of his Leaue, gaue yt quite over; but now fynding that your Return is like to be, they stand againe for yt; and why shuld not he return as well as you. So fearing lest yt might hynder yours, I went to my Lady *Warwick*, and Mr. *Stanbope*, and befought them to satisfie my Lord *Boroughes* Friends so far, as to assure them, your Lordship wold not stay here longer then *Candlemas*, at which Tyme he might come and stay here as long he pleased; and that this Cours might Occasion no Hyndrance to either of you, which they promes to doe.

Moreouer I did assure them, that Sir *Edmond Vvedall*, wold leaue all Buifnes, and carry ouer the Leaue hymself, which will further yt much, and soe doth Sir *Edmond* hymself offer, as he promised you, and truly acknowleges the Fauors you doe hym. His Buifnes is like to haue but cold Success, for all his great Hopes and Promises. The Queen is very well.

The two Warrants are signed for the Wants of the Queens great Ordinance in *Flushing*, and I will send my Man to the Town to hasten yt away. As for the Powder, Pikes, Vittailles, here is little Good, to be looked for; and the States Lettres are expected, what they will say to Powder.

Court 16 December,  
1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Roland Whyte.

Sir Tho. Bodley to Sir Robert Sydney.

S I R,

FOR as much as yow had written to haue her Majesties Lettres addressed vnto me, and it hath bin, notwithstanding consigned to yourself, without any Thing to me, of any suche Mater; and because, in very Truth, I am vtterly vnacquainted with any Part of those Affaires, ether touching the Provision of Powder sent vnto yow, or the State of those Places, that yow require to be fortified, or other Paticularities contained in the Lettre. In my Conceat it was intended, that as Maters appertaining to your owne Charge, and wherein yow could best pleade for her Majesties Right, and answer all Obiections, they should be folowed by your self, as methinkes the Lettre it self, doth expresse it very plainely, by referring them vnto yow. For in me, yow knowe it were no Grace, to present a Lettre publickly, which is not sent vnto me, and wherein I am not named (as I am alwaies in all, that I am willed to exhibit) and of the Subiect whereof I am nothing so informed, as that I am able, to answer, and replie, and debate it with them, as is fitte. In which Respect, lest the Lettre should miscarie, with wandring too and fro, I will retaine it with me heere, that if your Leasure and Comoditie will serue therunto, it may be presented by yourself in Person; if not, I should wishe yow to write to the General States, and



and signifie some Reason of your not comming hither, and suche Mater withall, as yow shall thinke expedient, for the Furtherance of your Buifnesse; whereupon I will take Order, that her Majesties Lettres, together what yours, shall be deliuered to the President of their College, and that they shall be solicited for an Answer out of Hande; which is the very best Course, that I thinke vpon yet, to be taken in your Behalf. The Copie of the Lettre I returne heere inclosed. As yet I haue no Answer to my last Dispathe into *Englande*, nor a Scrappe of any Newes, that is worth your Paines to reade it, for which I leaue yow saluted and resaluted very hartely.

*Your most affectionat Frende*

From the *Hage*,  
Dec. 17. 1595.

*to doe yow Seruice,*

Tho. Bodley.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

*My Lord,*

**I**N my last, of the 16 of *December*, from the Court, I signified my Lord of *Huntingdons* being ill at *Yorke*; in this, that he is assuredly dead: The Certainty of yt was brought to the Queen, upon *Wednesday* Morning, by one Mr. *Neuell*, a Kinsman and a Seruant of his own, who was with hym all the While he was Sick, which was 9<sup>th</sup> Dayes, and at the Howre of his Deathe, whiche was vpon *Sunday* last. He reports, that the Bishop of *York* being with hym, desired two Things of his Hands; to prepare hymself to dye, which he did; not vsing many Words but such as did giue good Assurance he died a good Christian; and to dispose of his Estate, which by no Meanes he wold harken vnto; and sayd litle to yt, only that yt was a wild World, which he wold not thincke vpon. This is kept from my Lady *Huntingdon*; but the Queen of Purpose is come to *Whytehall* on such a soddayn that yt makes the World much wonder at yt, and iudge Things that neuer were, what yt is, but to comfort her, and to breake yt unto her herself. My Lord Keaper was sent to her to tell her from the Queen, that my Lord was sicke, and therefore if he had not settled his Estat to her content, she wold see and send about that yt shuld be donne. In the After noon he came againe vnto her, to let her know, that the Queen was aduertised he was in some Danger, and therefore besought her to consider what she wold haue donne about his Estate. And thus, you see, her Majesties gracious Care of her; and now that the Way is prepared, the Queen this Day will let her know the Truth. Assone as I could find Oportunity I went to my Lady *Warwicke*, and Mr. *Stanhope*, and told them, that I was carefull to impart vnto them, what, in my Opinion, did much concern you, which was, that my Lord of *Huntingdon* was dead. I knew yt would infinitely grieve you, both for his Losse, and that you cold not be here both to comfort your disconsolate Aunt, and to do her Service in this Tyme; she, without Question, shuld haue Occasion to vse one that truly loved her, and honoured her; and that none was fitter for yt then your self, being now sole left, as yt were, of her Blood. They allowed very well of my Reasons; and my Lady *Warwick* broke yt to the Queen; my Lady *Hoby*, and Mr. *Stanhope* being by. Who then sayd, *She had rather than 100 l. you were here, for none so fit as your self to looke vnto her.* Whereupon she gave Order to my Lord Treasurer, to signifie this hur Pleasure vnto you, by his Lettre, which most willingly he did, and sent for me, gaue me this enclosed vnto you, which he wryt with his own Hand; and, as he saies, for you to prepare your self against the Queens own Lettre came, which shalbe donne at the first Signing Day. He byd me tell you, that he sends you no Word of my Lord *Huntingdons* Death, because he wold not send you any Thing to trouble you. I had a whole Howres talke with him of our Wants of *Flushing*, of your Living and my Ladys, of your Children, Sonnes and Daughters, which being a Discourse apart, and of great Length, I haue at this Tyme no Leisure to deliuer yt vnto you, because of my hast to send this away. But I will say thus much,

that



that your Lordship is as much beholding vnto hym for his good Speeches of you, as I know any Gentleman of *England*, that is of no Kin vnto him, and foe say his neereft Seruants. Mr. *Lake* sent vnto me from Sir *Robert Cecill*, to know who your Lordship wold Leave in your Place, now that Sir *Edm. Vuedale* was here. I sent him this Word, that the Charge of the Town you wold be most carefull of: That you had in the Town at this Howre Capt. *Brown*, a Gentleman your Lordship knew to be discrete, valiant, well affected in Religion, well languaged, and one that was specially well acquainted with the Humors of the Burgers and Mariners, and euery Way such a one as your Lordship wold be answerable for. But if Sir *Edm. Vuedall* being here were any Hindrance to your Leauē, he was right willing to return with your License. Mr. *Lake* imparted yt to Sir *Robert Cecill*, who sayd, that their was litle Reason to post Sir *Edm. Vuedall* ouer again in such hast, having a Sute in Hand that his Prefence might help to obtain, and that his vndoing did depend vpon yt. And theirfore he was glad your Lordship had so sufficient a Man to leauē behynd you: Then went Mr. *Lake* to draw your Lettre, which contains, that her Majestie being ofte earnestly delt withall for your Return about some vrgent Buīnes, of your own, she was won to graunt yt; although yt was but lately you had been here: That you might so determine as to be returned to your Charge againe by *Candilmas*, and to leauē in your Place the eldest Captain. For this Purpose, if yt be not altered is this Lettre, the Shortness of the Tyme is put in to satisfie my Lord *Boroughes* Friends, who storme at this, and think them selues injured; but when you are here, your Lordship shall find Occasions to stay longer. I will attend and sollicit the Queens Letter; have a Care to the Fine was left with my Lord of *Huntingdon* for Capt. *Bucke*; and harken after my Lady of *Riches* Pleasure for the Christning, who sendith Word, she will not be here till *Christmas* Eve. My Lord *Monjoy*, and my Lord *Compton*, do willingly accept of this Kindness you desire them vnto. My Lady is well, and exceedingly glad of your Leue, and your last Lettre did more content her than euer any you wryt vnto her. All the Children are well, saue Mrs. *Betty*, who is troubled with a great Cold, and burnes much. Your Lordship is beholding to my Lord Admirall, as my Lord Treasurer told me, for his good Speeches of you to the Queen, and his earnestness to procure Leave. Soe are you to my Lady *Warwick*, Mr. *Stanhope*, and Sir *Robert Cecill*. They looke for Thanckes, and it is due vnto them. The two Warrants are dispatched, and sent to the *Towre*; and they tell me, they will send ouer those Wants with as much Speed as they can. All Things are ready saue the 4 Carriages, which are in Hand. My Ladys *Elizabeth*, and *Katharine Somerset*, take my Lord *Huntingdons* Death most grievously.

Mr. *Arthur Gorge* makes Sute for the great Park of *Winsor*; and they are in Paine whare to fynd one fit to succede hym in his Goverment of the North, Some name my Lord of *Worcester*. I beseech your Lordship except my scrolled Lettre: My hast is great because of the Tyde. From *White-Hall*, this Friday Morning 19 of *December*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Roland Whyte.

Rowland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

Right honorable,

BY *Christopher Brown*, I sent my Lord Treasurers Letter, signifieng the Queens Letters for your Return. To-morrow I shall have the Queens Letters signed, which I will send you. This enclosed is from my Lord of *Essex*; and Sir *Robert Cecil* tels me, he hath wrytten vnto you, and sent yt by the Post, with a Packett to Mr. *Bodeley*. The Queen goes backe againe to *Richmond* vpon Monday. Here is a Speach that the Queen will make both Cownsaillers and Officers of Houshold; I hear named Lord *Monioy*, Lord *North*, Master of



the *Rowles*, the Chieff Justice Sir *Henry Leigh*. Vpon this Report I went to 12, and tooke an Occasion to speake of yt. He made straunge of yt, and thought their wold be none made in hast; but, sayd he, yt will encrease the Queens New Yeares Giftes. Sir *Hen. Vmpton* is dispatched, save one Lettre to be signed, to the Duke of *Monmorency*, which not being redy to Day, was the Cause that yours was not presented to the Queen till To-morrow, to haue them both signed together, as Mr. *Lake* assures me. The Queen hath promised hym the Threshership of the Chamber, and stands constant in yt, and at his Return to haue yt. But yf 900 and 200, that wold 40 had yt, can hynder yt, thother shall goe without yt. The Vnkindnes doth continew between 1000 [Earl of *Essex*] and 2000 [Earl of *Pembroke*] and for the Cawse I wryt unto you; 2000 by no Meanes will release those Bonds and Covenants thother entred vnto, who now saies, he was drawn to doe he knew not what hym self. But 1500 (Queen) is much offended with all, and saies 2000 shall doe yt.

My Lord Chamberlain, and my Lord Admirall, were in the *Towre* to view the Remain of all Things; and a speciall Care is taken for all Kind of Armes and Municion fit for the Defence of the Land.

The City must furnish 16 Ships and 4 Pinnases, and arme 10000 Men, which they thincke to be to much. I hard yt said, that within these 20 Dayes there are 30 Marchants, that were esteemed wealthy, become Banckrowpts.

I was desired by an honest Gentleman that is in Ward with 1000 [Earl *Essex*] to tell you, that he hoped your Return wold be for your good, if his Fauor and Creditt, I mean 1000, cold effect yt; for to all he can name, Exceptions are taken, vnles yt be your self, of whom 900 and the rest, doe hold no ill Opinion of.

Your Lordship, by my former Lettres, have hard of my Lord of *Huntingdon*s Death; and now I will wryte of my Lady your Aunts vnhard of Sorrowes. Vpon *Thursday* Night (having before hard by my Lord Keeper of her Husbands being but ill, suspecting more, she cawsed all the Men and Women in the Howse to come before her, and by their very Countenances, who could not choose but lament, she apprehended the Greiffe that so much afflicts her; and yet all that Night none durst not breake the Matter vnto her. Vpon *Friday* Morning, my Lady *Puckering* came to see her, and finding her so disquieted, she told her by Circumstaunces that his Daunger was great, and smale Hope of Recouery; but being desired by my Lady to tell her the very Truth of it, she then told her, that indeed assured Word was come he was dead. I am not able to deliuer vnto you the Passions she fell into, and which yet she continues in. Sure I am, I was greued to here a Gentlewoman of hers with weeping and crying, made me know it; who said, that none but your self were fitt to Comfort her, and therefore she hoped you were sent for; which I did assure her was true; and besought her to lett my Lady know of yt, as she found Occasion to doe yt. The Queen her self, in a Litter, went to visit her about 4 o'Clocke this Euening; I will goe To-morrow Morning, and know what Comfort she receiued by yt, and daily aduertise your Lordship of her Estat.

I hard that a Gentleman, whose Name I cold not yet learn, having had 300 l. a Yeare Land conueied vnto hym, of Trust by my Lord of *Huntingdon*, to the Vse of my Lady, in lieu of so much Land of her Iointer fold, makes refusall to do yt vnto her, but to the new Earle, whose Sonne *Frauncis* died Lord *Hastings*, vpon *Monday* last, as yt is here by Letters advertised. I thincke his Wiffe was Sir *John Harrington*s Sister, whoe by her is now Lady *Hastings*, her Husband not enioying that Honor a whole Day.

The Queen, much offended hereat, comanded my Lord Keeper, my Lord of *Buckburst*, Sir *John Fortescue*, and the Master of the *Rolls*, to examine the Cause; and, as I heare more of yt, I will impart yt vnto you.

I vnderstand he died a very poore Lord, extremely in Debt, wold make no Will, and therby my Lady hath nothing but her bare Iointer left her. God send your Lordship soon ouer to Comfort her, and to looke to such Things as her Sorrows will not giue her leave to doe.

Her



Her Officers are looked for daily : I will enquire after the Fine your Lordship lefte with hym for Capt. *Bucks* Matter.

Sir *Roger Williams* is buried vpon *Tuesday* in *Powles*. Sir *Tho. Morgan* continewes still very ill, and smal Hope conceaved of his Recouery.

My Lady *Darby*, was brought to Bed Yesterday of a Boy, to the great Comfort of her Grandfather. My Lady *Rich* will not be here till *Christmas* Eue, and then shall she apoint the Day for the Christning. The two Lords do attend her Pleasure.

Sir *Edmond Vuedall*, wold haue bene as good as his Promes vnto you, to return with your Leauē, if his being here had giuen yt any Hyndrance ; but me thinckes he begins to marvell he hath receued but one Lettre from you, in answer of many he sent, and to fear least your Lordships Loue be growen more cold towards hym, then yt was wont to be. For any Thing that euer I cold heare, he hath carried hymself here towards you, as one acknowledging to haue receued Credit and Benefitt by your Fauor.

My Lord Treasurer, is ording of a Proportion for your spending Powder in *Flushing* for thauxiliary Companyes, and for a Store for the Safety of the Town. I dare not importune hym much till this Leauē be signed, and sent away ; then will I deliver vnto hym a Petition for Gunpowder, the Town being at this Instant without any, and so send yt with the Wants of Thartillery. He still sayes, that the States must fynd the cawtionary Companies Powder.

15 tells me, that my Lady *Borough* gives yt ovt, that her Lords Return wilbe his undoing ; and wishes his Abode where he is ; and for any Thing I heare, he is like to stay till your coming and going back again.

The Tyme limited for your Lordships stay is but till *Candlemas*, you need therefore make hast. My Lord Admiral told me Thanfwer was in *Flushing*, which you might keape, if you pleased, to bring you ouer. My Lord *Sheffield* is come vp, and hopes for that he shall neuer have.

My Lord of *Essex* mournes for my Lord of *Huntingdon*, and takes his Death very grievous.

London, this Saturday Night,  
xxth of December, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Roland Whyte.

Roland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

THE Queen signed your Leauē this Day at Twelue a Clocke : Sir Robert *Cecill* deliuered yt unto me, and I went to Mr. *Lake*, who sealed yt, and directed yt vnto you. A true Copie whereof I here enclosed send you, and deliuered the Queens Letter yt self to my Ladys own Hands. I fearing least my Man *George* might come to some Mishap at Sea, take this Course of sending the Copie vnto you. I was with my Lord Treasurer, who only wishes you a safe Passage. I made my Lord of *Essex* acquainted with it, who salutes you. So doth Sir Robert *Cecill*, and my Lady *Warwicke*, who tooke exceeding Care in this ; and the honorable Mr. *John Stanhope*, whoe indeed tooke Paines to induce some of the Lords to Dispatch yt. Now, my Lord, you see yt is donne, let me tell you what Cheques were giuen vnto yt these 2 Dayes. My Lord *Boroughes* Friends hearing that the Queen had graunted your Lordships Leauē to Return, gaue yt out that he was so sicke, that their was no Hope of Recouery, but by the Chaunge of Ayre ; and that if her Majestie were resolved to keape hym theire, she should shortly heare of his Death. My Lady *Shandos*, my Lady *Thomas Howard*, Mrs. *Bridges*, and my Lady *Borough*, were in my Lady *Cecills* Chamber, which, indeed, made me so jealous, that I went to my Lady of *Huntingdons*, and besought Mrs. *Malby* to let my Lady know what Hindrance I fownd were giuen to your Return ; and therefore I humbly desired



fired her to send one to the Queen about my Dispatch : She brought me this Word, that the Queen her self told my Lady, your Lordship was sent for, and therefore she knew none durst be against yt. I then assured her yt was not foe, and humbly beseeched her to send a Gentleman to the Court with me about yt, which was donne, and my Ladys *Warwick*, and *Scroope*, told the Queen of yt, and by that Means your Lordship hath your Leau obtained.

The Queen was with my Lady *Huntingdon* very priuat vpon *Saturday*, as I wryt vnto you, which much comforted her. Her Gentlewomen and Gentlemen tell me, she exceedingly desires your speedy Return ; and assure me, she is very ill, and continewes full of Sorrow. Here is no Body to looke to her Buisnes ; if your Lordship were here, yt is very like she wold comytt the Trust of all to your Hands. I shall need to say no more, but to referre your speedy Coming to your own Wisdome, which can best direct you ; but if she be foe ill as they tell me, I wold wish your Lordship to make great Hast. I will daily goe to see how she doth, and now must attend my Ladys Christning ; and the Sending of the Prouisions from the Towne. My Lady *Rich* is not yet come, yt wilbe *Christmas Eve* ; she must appoint the Day and Tyme for yt.

Her Majestie thought to haue gone to *Richmond* to Day ; but, by Reason of the fowle Weather, deffers yt till to Morrow. Sir *Henry Vmpton* is posted away. Newes are here, that the King hath wonne *la Fere*. That from the States, there shall come Comissioners to the Queen. That from *Genoa*, are gonne to *Spaine* 12 new built Ships well appointed, and called the 12 *Apostles*. That our Fleet is a making ready, and a Stay made of all Sortes of Ships of Warre in all our Portes.

To Morrow Sir *Roger Williams* is buried, and I feare Sir *Tho. Morgan* will dy this Night, for all that come from hym are of that Opinion.

I forgot to wryte vnto you, that the rich Gentleman was knighted by the Queen at *Kew* Sir *Hugh Portman*. *d d d*, follows his Buisnes at Court with wonderfull Care ; and I was assured by *c c*, that 200 was neuer knowen to be foe earnest in any Thing as in yt ; and that he shuld say, their was no Reason why he shuld be sent away before 1500 [Queen] had giuen hym Satisfaction. 100 presents the Petition, 900 comends yt, and 200 drawes as many to doe it as he can ; but 300 said at 130, that their were many Sutes of the same Nature, and how shuld yt be knowen if the Soldiers hired or were paid, what he now demanded for them.

I acquainted Sir *Edmund [Vvedale]* with your Leau, and shewed yt hym, who protestes, that when your Lordships comes, if you will haue hym goe to *Flushing*, he will leau all, and obey your Comandments. But seeing his being here doth not hynder yours, he hopes your Lordship will not be offended withall, seeing all his Fortune depends vpon this Sute he now hath in Hand.

Assoon as ever I heare of your Landing, which I hope wilbe assone as may be, lest Th'occasions of this Tyme might countermand your Return. I will attend your Pleasure where you will comand me. And referre many Thinges to that Tyme. God send your Lordship a good Wynd ; and I beseech you be carefull to haue a good Shippe to carry you. *London*, this *Monday Night* 10 a Clocke, 22 *December*, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Rowland Whyte.

I haue made knowen the Wants of Powder, but I see no Hast made to Supply you. My Lord Treasorer talkes of yt with Sir *Tho. Brooks*, who giues yt Furtherance.

Rowland



Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**M**Y Lord *Boroughes* frends do mightely storme that he hath no Leave, and doe begin to fynd Fault with 1000 [Earl of *Essex*], who is thought to be the Occasioner of yours; but beleue me, though 900 put me euer in good Hope, I of late began to dispaire of your Leaue, and am perswaded, that if my Lady *Huntingdons* Desire to see you, had not moued the Queen to grant yt, you had not come ouer in Hast. And soe doth 1000 assure them, as 14 tells me. My Lady *Rich* is come to the Town, yet the Christning is put of till *Wednesday* New Yeares Eue. She sayes that my Lord *Compton* desired her to differ yt till then, because of some vrgent Buifnes he hath in the Countrey, that will keepe hym away till *Tuesday* Night; but I doe rather thincke yt to be a Tetter, that sodainly broke out in her faire whyte Forheade, which will not be well in 5 or 6 Dayes, that keapes your Son from being christned. But my Lady *Riches* Desires are obeyed as Comandment by my Lady, who, in deed, is sorry of this Delay, because she wold haue it past before your Returne. My Lord *Borough* is expected with the next Wynd, though he haue no Leaue, for he is wrytten vnto by 200, and others, that the Queen hath graunted yours. My Lady *Essex* was with my Lady vpon *Christmas Eve*, and itayed here 3 Howres. My Lady, and all the Children are well, and doe pray to God to send you well and speedely ouer.

I am going to the Court, but to harken how the World goes their; and as long as the Wynd continewes westerly to wryte vnto you. I am soe affrayd of Coutermands, as that I cold wish you here already: But if they come to my Hands, you shall not receue them in Hast. London, this *St. Stephens* Day.

Your Lordships, &c.

Rowland Whyte

Sir *Roger Williams* is buried, and Sir *Thomas Morgan* dead. Here are 2 *Irish* Greihownds sent you from *Ireland*, by Capt. *Gorings* Procurement; I cannot learne from whom.

Rowland Whyte, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

**Y**F my Seruant *George* be come vnto you, whom I dispatcht hence the 22 of *December* at Night, your Lordship hath receued assured Newes that you haue leave to come ouer; for by hym I sent a true Copie of the Queens own Lettre vnto you, exaimined by Mr. *Lake*. My Lady hath the Warrant yt self, lest yt shuld perrish at Sea. And least my Man might haue some Misfortune, I send now againe a Copie of yt vnto you, beseeching your Lordship to hasten ouer, for my Lady *Huntingdon* is ill, and continewes ill, vnwill-ing to receue Comfort. I need not tell you how much yt may concern you, but refer yt to your own Wisdome. Her Estate is broken; and, as I heare, much of her Iointer, by her Consentment made away. At your own Coming, you shalbe acquainted with the Truth of all Things, which I only can receue by vncertain Reports. I was at Court this Morning, where nothing is so much thought vpon as Dauncing and Playing. Some were there, hoping for Preferment, as my Lord *North*, and Sir *Henry Leigh*. They play at Cards with the Queen, and it is like to be all the Honor that will fall vnto them this Yeare.

My Lord Treasurer is ill of a Cold in the Neck, and lies at his House in the Strand. Sir *Edm. Vvedall* is at Court; hath exceeding good Words giuen vnto hym, but he doth no good at all in his Buifnes; 200 [Sir *Robert Cecil*] doth most for hym, and that brings no Fruit at all. The Bishop of *Yorke* is made Lord



President of the *North*. My Lady *Darbyes* Son is turned to be a Daughter ; she was but brought to Bed vpon *Christmas Eve*, though the Newes at Court was that yt was a Boy, 12 Dayes past.

My Lord *Borough* hath no Leauē, nor like to haue any, though his Friends doe mightely trauaile in yt, especially 1000 [Earl of *Essex*], and all in vaine.

The Queen chid my Lord of *Lincolne*, that he doth not give his Daughter better Maintenance.

The Christning (as I wryt vnto you in my Lettre Yesterday, which I sent with 2 Greihownds to *Grauesend*) is put of by my Lady *Riches* owne Comandment, till *Wednesday* next. My Lady is well, and all these your sweet Children, that howrely pray for your safe Returne.

The Queen went this Day to the Chappell very Princelike, and in very good Health. *London*, this *St. Johns* Day at Night, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Roland Whyte, *Esq;* to Sir Robert Sydney.

My Lord,

Although I hope your Lordship become away with the faire Wynd, which appeared here to be good vpon *New Years* Day, I venter the sending of this, which purchase you may meet on the Way.

My Lady of *Huntington* continewes soe ill, as that many Doubt she cannot liue ; she is so much by Sorrow weakned as that no Officer of hers, dare goe to her sight, to know her Pleasure, either in her own priuat Fortune, or to know what shall be donne with the dead Body ; you are much wished here to comfort her, which I assure them wilbe assone as any Boat be able to put to Sea, the Wynd and Weather being as yt is contrary and tempestuous.

Your Sonne was christnyd vpon *New Years* Eue, by my Lord *Monjoy*, Lord *Compton*, and Lady *Rich*. They named hym *Robert*, by my Lady *Riches* Desire. They gaue 3 very fair standing Bowles all of one Fashion, that may be worth 20 *l.* a Piece. Here was my Lady *Cumberland*, her Daughter ; my Lady of *Essex*, her Daughter and Sonn ; my Lady *Dacres*, her Daughters, and many other Gentlewomen, and Gentlemen. All Things were so prouided, as they had no Cawse to feare the Measels.

My Lord *Borough* hath a Grant to come ouer, the Queen being continually importuned vnto yt by his Friends, since your Leave was signed ; yet is not his Warrant come to the Signet.

My Lord Treasurer is gonne this Day to the Court, I meane Godwilling, to Morrow, to goe and hearken a loofe if their be any Speach of you these Holidays, and how the Speach continews of making of Officers, and Counsellors.

A Brute is here, that the King of *Scots* of late hath declared hym self to be the Successor here ; but long may our gracious Soueraigne rayne ouer us. And yt is reported, that the Duke of *Sauoys* Embassadors are very kindly receued by the King of *France*.

My Lady is Churched, is very well, and all the Children. We all pray for your safe and speedy Return : This enclosed is from my Lady *Rich*, and a Note of the Hangings to be made.

The Carriages for the great Ordinance are not yet ready, I doe sollicit the dispatching of them ; the Officers of the *Towre*, put the Fault in the Carpenter.

Yf my Lady *Huntington*, be in that extremity as many tell me ; I cold wish your Lordship to put to Sea with a contrary Wynd, lest you come to late to see hur in this World ; but I hope they make of yt more then yt is, but my Duty is to aduertise what I soe credibly here to be soe. And no Body hath yet  
looked



looked into the Point of her Estate, which is thought very poore; yet something is sayd to be lefte vnto her, and her Heires for euer.

London 3. January, 1595.  
at Night by Post.

Your Lordships, &c.

R. Whyte.

Geo. Gilpin, Esq; to Sir Robert Sydney.

My especiall good Lorde,

**N**O Subject is offred for the Present, worth the troublinge of yowe, all remayninge in State, as at your Lordships being here; somewhat his Excellencie is about, and ready to be put in Execution, but what, none shall know, til yt speede or fayle; Sir *Fra. Vere*, beinge also not ydle, but would make sure Worke, or neuer beginne yt; my Lord Ambassador attends for the retorne of those of *Holland* from *Zurick* Sea, and then will there very shortly after, be a Meeting here of those, of this Province; when as, within a Whyle after, I shall here what is past, and thereby haue a Gesse of the Succes in the present Nogociation of his Lordship; whereof your Lordship shall haue Aduertisement, as Occasion shall sarve; so I may but know wether and how to directe my Letters vnto yowe in *London*. At your Lordships comming to the Court, I humbly beseech you, I may be remembred for som Increase of my Interteynement, and yf afore, I could be fauoured by your Lordships Meanes withowt that I be made known, yt might much Pleasure me, especially at this Present, for Causes which I am loath to manifest. Yf I could get the Priuiledge about the Furnaces, I would thinke to make yt beneficiall to me, and to your Lordship worthe the Fauouringe: Forget not *Aertsens*, for he put me in remembraunce of Thoffices by him donne about *John Waringes*.

Here are new Alarmes from *Ostende*, which I thinke your Lordship shall there haue harde of: I dowbt the Gouuernour at length wil worke his owne Harme; Capt. *Olyuer* wil as I suppose inlarge hereof, what he heareth. Haugh this 12th January, 1595.

Your Lordships, &c.

Geo. Gilpin.

Some Letters being by Mistake omitted in their proper Places, I have referred to the Pages, where they should have been incerted, viz.

Page 8. Copy of the Orders, for putting an End to the Differences between the Erls of Ormond and Desmound. Sent by Secretary Cecil, to Sir Henry Sydney, Lord Deputy of Ireland.

1. Article **F**IRST, That all their Matters in Controversy, be hard in the Chauncerie in Irland, without eny dilatorie Plees.

2. Secondly, That after Issue joinid, the Queens Majesty be advertised, that Comission be sent out of England, for the Triall of the Issue; then the Commissioners Certificat to be returnid. First to the Lord Deputy, then by hym to the Queene, with his Opinion. And then the Queen to take Order.

3. The Prise Wines of *Yonghall*, and *Kinsale*, to be sequestrid by the Lord Deputy and Counsaill, till the Queen shall determine the Effects and Bonds, to be taken for due aunswering of the same, by the Sequestrators.

†

4. All



4. All Lands, &c. whereof the Erle of *Ormound* was possessed, before the Fraie committid, viz. i *Februarii*, 1564, to remaine in the Possession of the Erle of *Ormound*.

5. All Lands, in the Erle of *Desmounds* Possession, before the said Fraie, to remaine in Possession of the Erle of *Desmound*, till they be recouerid by Lawe.

6. All Things in the doubtfull Possession, to be in the Hands of indifferent Persons, by the Lord Deputies Sequestracion. Whervnto the Erles to be obedient, and the Bonds to be taken of those indifferent Persons for the Rent, &c.

7. That bothe Erles obserue the Pece, against the other, by themselves, their Seruaunts and Followers, till her Majesty shall take Order.

8. Both the Erles fined at . . . the Peece, for the Breach of the Peace in their Conflict.

9. That the Erles be callid to Accompt for the Detts to their Queene.

10. That the Erle of *Ormounde*, within xxty Daies after his Arrival, deliver to the Lord Deputy in Writing, the Names of all Offenders, mainteyned by the Erle of *Desmound*, or his Friends, by his Consent or Comaundement; which Offenders, *Desmound* shall bring to Justification.

11. That the Erle of *Desmound* shall in like Maner, *Mutatis mutandis*.

12. The Lord Deputy and Counsaill, hath Power to determine Contraversies, concerning Goods and Cattails detained; or of eny Person or Persons imprisoned, in such Sort and Maner, as they shall think meetest, for the Service of the Queenes Majesty.

13. The Erle of *Ormounde*, within xxty Daies after his Arrival, to put in Pledges, and thes to be detained, imprisoned, alterid, or sett at Liberty, at the Lord Deputies Discretion. And that thes Pledges shalbe, and remaine, for Perfourmaunce of the Recognisaunce, knowlegid by the said Erle, 22<sup>o</sup> *No-uembris*, 1565.

14. The like for the Erle of *Desmound*, *Mutatis mutandis*.

Page 59. *Sir Frances Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My very good Lord,*

I Was gladd to vnderstande by the Earl of *Essex*'s Letter, that your Lordship and he is growen to so good a Conclufyon towching his Demaundes, wherby his Lordship seamethe to be greatlye satisfyed with your frendely Dealyng towards him. Soche here as doe wyshe generally unto that State, and partycularly to your selues, doe desyre nothing more, then the contynewance of good Lyking and sownde Frendeship betwene you. And therfor, good my Lord, lett your Eares be closed ageynst Tale-bearers, who make ther Proffyt of Dyssentyon. That Natyon, I learne, is cunnyng in the Professyon, and therefore yt behouethe your Lordships bothe, to be verry circumspect in that behalf. I pray God, that pestylent Humour receive no Neuryshment from hence. When I fawle into Consyderation of the Sowndenes of bothe your Judgements, then doe I shake of all feare: But when I caule to my mynd the cursed Destyny of that Ilande, I can not put of all Dredd. I hope your owne Wysdome, and the caulng en of your Friends here, and the good Mynisters aboute you, they will pevent the Mallice of foeche as shall seek any Waye to slander you. Towching the sendyng over of your Assystaunts, I am not unmyndefull thereof. Him whom you chiefly desyre, I meane Sir *W. Dreury*, wyll not fayle at the Tyme by you appointed, yf God let yt not, or her Majesty. Mr. *Rookebye*, without some imprest owt of your Lordships Hande, and to fornish him of foeche Necessaries as the Place he is appoynted for requyre (having not the Meanes otherwyse to furnishe him selfe) shall be forced to refuse the same, thorowhout Dysabylytye. When I consyder the Woorthynes of the Man, howe hardely foeche an other of his Integryte is to be fownde, and how great Neade that Place hath of foeche a oane; I can not but wyshe your Lordship to streyne your self as myche as you may,

+

to



to supplye his Wants. And so leavyng forther to troble your Lordship, I most hombly take my Leave. At my House at Odiam, the 20th of Octobre, 1571.

*Your Lordships assured Friend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

Page 81. *Sir Francis Walsyngham, to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*After my very bartie Commendacions vnto your good Lordship,*

**W**E have here had Newes, to the great Grief of many, of the Deathe of good Sir *Peeter Carew*; a Gentleman, in the Opinion of all Men, of such rare Vertue, and singular good Parts, as is feldom to be found in these our Dayes; our Losse is therbie the greater; but he is in better State then we can wishe him. Vppon theise Newes, very earnest Suite hath ben made here, for the establishinge and maintaininge of his Cofin *Peeter* (whome he hath made his Heire to his Landes in that Realme) in the Barony of *Hidron*, and for so much as it is geven t'vnderstand, that the same shall hardly be kept, vnlesse he have also her Majesties Castell of *Lanbelin* in Keeping, as Sir *Peeter* had. The said Suite tendeth to make Meanes to your Lordship (in whome the Disposicion of the same is) that he may have the Graunt therof, and be placed there accordingly. Your Lordships Favour to that good Name hath alwayes ben noted, and Sir *Peeter*, in that Suite, did finde the Fruites therof, to his great Benefitt and Comfort; and so is the same acknowledged by his neereft Frindes; and, thervppon, the greater Hope is conceaved, that your Lordship will maintaine in his Succession, the same Favour and Goodnes: And, for so much as I have learned, that the Vphouldinge of a trustie and trew *Englishman* in those Parts, shall stand much to Thadvancement of her Majesties Service, aswell in the Repressing of the *Irisbrie*, as for other good Purposes, better knownen to you then to me. I am moved emonge the rest of the Frindes to that Name (that in so many Ages are witnessed to have ben good Servaunts to this Crowne) to be an Intercessor vnto your Lordship, that yt may like you to shew him so much Favour as you may, aswell by Placing of him as aforefaid, as by Aidinge and Assistinge him with such Persons of Advice and Counsell, in the Practises of that Realme, as are most meetest to hould him in his Strength, for the Keeping of him in his Inheritaunce, and therewithall to hould that Countrey in goode Obedience, to the Furtheraunce of her Majesties Service. And as your Lordship hereby shall showe good Allowance of the Title adiudged by you and her Majesties Counsell of that Realme, so shall you deserve for ever the Love and good Will of all that Kinred. And whatsoever you shall doe for my Sake, and for the Intercession of other of his Frindes, you shall finde vs ready to requite you with any Pleasure we can shewe you. And so I bid your Lordship right hartely farewell. From *Windsore*, the ixth of *December*, 1575.

*Your Lordships assured Frinde,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

Page 248. *Sir Philip Sidney to Edward Waterhowse, Esq; Secretary of Ireland.*

*My good Ned,*

**N**EUER since yow wente, that euer yow wrote to me, and yet, I haue not failed to do some frendely Offices for yow heere. How know I that, say you. I can not tell. But I know that no Lettres I haue receaued frome yow. Thus dothe Vnkyndenes make me fall to a Pointe of Kyndenes. Good *Nedd*, either come or wryte. Let me either see the, heere the, or reede the. Yowr other Frindes that know more, will wryte more fully. I, of my selfe, thus

V. O. L. I.

7 H

much



much. Allwaies one, and in one Cace. *Me solo Exultans totus teres atque Rotundas.* Commende me to my Lord President; to the noble Sir *Nicholas*, whom I beare speciall good Will to; to my Cofin *Harry Harrington*, whom I longe to see in Helthe; Sir *Nicholas Bagnoll*; Mr. *Agardes* Daughter; my Cofin *Spikman* for yowr Sake; and whofoeuer is Maire of *Deulin* [*Dublin*] for my Sake. And euen at his Howse when yow thinke good. I bidd yow fare well. From Courte, this 28th *Aprill*, 1578.

Your uery louing Frende,

Philippe Sidney.

Page 130. Sir Henry Sydney to Thomas Earl of Ormond.

My verie good Lord,

I Am sory you were so ill delte withall by *Occarell*, that you were forced with that Extremytie to passe your Cariage over the *Shannynne*; more neighbourly Dealing mighte haue ben lookid for at his Handes, especially towards your Lordship. I expected longe er this, that your Compaynie had ben remayninge in the Plaines of *Connaught*, there to haue resiftid the Force of the *Scotts*, as I writt to my Lord Treasorer thei shoulde doe; and be reddie at his Appointment, as Occasion required, to joyne their Force with his, in any Exploite that shoulde be made: Or els, according to my former Direction, they shoulde haue taryed for me, at the *Corlew-foote*. Their longe Staie, cheiflie, that I hard not from them, hath ben occasioned of my tarryeng heere, longer then otherwise I had eyther determynid, or woulde haue donne; to some Hinderaunce of the Service in Loosinge so muche Tyme; and I rather directed them to theise Places, becawse I woulde haue had them to haue had some Dealing with the *Scotts*, thereby to haue wonne your Lordship some Honnor; since the *Scotts* will not abide the Places nere where I come, I woulde haue driven them in to their Lappes, or to haue been mett withall by some other Bandes or Companies, that I haue disperced Abroade in like Sorte. Towching the Complaintes you make of your bad Neighboures, and specially against my Lord of *Vpper Offory*, and Sir *William Occarell*, I haue written to them boathe, as by the enclosed your Lordship shall perceiue, either to be sente or deliuered vnto them by your Lordship; but since they be bothe Men ameandable to Justice, and the Harmes done in myne Absence; your Lordship, for spedier Remedie, might haue complaynid to my Lord Chauncellor, whoe, in my absence, would haue done you Justice. And, for the Execucion of any Orders that I haue taken against *Occarrel* on your Lordships Behalfe, I will see he shall performe yt, and doe that toe your Lordship that appertaynith to him to doe; othercors he shall not haue me to Frende. And where you make Request that the Compaynie sent from you, mighte be sente backe to defende the Counties where they dwell: My Lord, since they be comme, I thinke yt expedient to vse their Service; being a Thing moore necessarye, considering the Action in Hande, to vse their Service heere, then to spare them hence to any other Place, which is not, in Apparance, of such Daunger as is dalie looked for here, till the Rebells be suppressed. And even so I bid your good Lordship hartelye farewell. From *Gallwaye*, the xxiith of *September*, 1576.

Your Lordships, &c.

H. Sydney.

By



By the Lord Deputie.

*Trustie and right welbeloved, we grete your Lordship hartelye well,*

**I**T is complayned vnto vs, by oure verye good Lord, the Earle of Ormound, that since the Tyme of oure Departure thence, soche perticuler Iniuries and Wronges have bene offered and attempted by you and yours, against him and his, in Preyinge and Steelinge from hym and his Tenaunts and Followers nightlye. As we have bene more troubled with those perticuler Complaints, and Cawties of Quarrell and Striffe betwixt you twoe, then with all other accidents of those Parts, wherewith we are not a little offended towardes you. The rather, when we enter into the Consideracions of the Matter of what Wisedome and Discreacion you are to governe those vnder you, if your Mind and good Will were framed there unto; aswell to restrayne those your badd People, and loose Followers, for doing any Harme, as to punishe and correcte them if they should offende; and so consequentye, by this Kinde of Dealinge, ioyne in Freindshippe and good Neighbourhoode with his Lordship, to whome you are so niere allyed; which Thing we expected at your Handes in oure Absence, rather then to have harde of soch Complaints of your Dealings. Theise, therefore, shalbe, to will and commaunde your Lordship, not onelye to amende and repair that which is past, and to make present Restitucion of that, that hath bene taken from the Earle, or any of his Tenaunts and Followers, in this oure Absence, by you, or any of those vnder you; but also, from hencefoorth, to desist in any Sort, to offer any newe Occasion of privat Quarrells betwixt you: And so, by your Doings, to drawe vs from this publike Action, wherein we are now occupied, to conuerte oure Force, to suppress those Contentions and Quarrells: Which we will do, rather then we will endure theise contynuall Clamors, and Oppressions, which are daylie complayned of by hym; and on your Parte not amended, for any Thing that heretofore we have donne. And so we bid your Lordship hartelye Farewell. From Galway, the xxiith of September, 1576.

The Forme of this Leter was adressed to the Lord Barron, of Vpper Ossery, and to Sir William Occarall, Knight, and in a Post Scripte of my Lords owne Hande, was written to my Lord of Vpper Ossery, theis Wordes: *Trewly I am not a little offended, that yow so little regarde Justice; your owne Promise, and myne Honor.* In the Letter to Sir William Occarall, was wrytten of my Lords owne Hande, theis Wordes: *Be you assured yf I finde this trewe, I will make your owne Boddie aunswer for yt, in the Castell of Dublin.*

Page 130. *Sir Francis Walsyngham to Sir Henry Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**Y**OUR Lordship maye easely Coniecture howe vnpleasant the Newes of my Lord of Essex, dangerouse Sicknese, withowt all Hope of his Recoverie, hath been to vs here in Court, knowinge what a Subiect hir Majestie shall loose of him, and of howe good an Assistant your Lordship shalbe deprived. Towching your Desyre, to knowe what hath been done for the Archbushoppe of Dublin, your Lordship may vnderstand, that bothe my selfe, and other his Friends here, have been, and are alwayes myndefull to doe him what Good we maye, ether in Healpinge to translate him into this Realme or otherwise; but as yet the Placynge and Alteration of Bushops, is not called into Deliberation: Concernynge the Bushopricke of Ossorie, when Oportunitie shall serve, I will doe my best Endeavor to further your Lordships Request to hir Majestie, for the Preferment of Mr. Clere. For the present State of Fraunce, Flanders, and some other foraine Parts, I referre you to these severall Occurrents here inclosed.

And



And so verie desyrouse to heare some good Newes of your Lordships Travayles, for the appeasyng of *Connaghe*, I humbly take my Leave. From the Court at *Readyng*, the xxixth of September, 1576.

*Your Lordships assured Friend,*

Fra. Walsyngham.

Page 268. *Sir Henry Sydney, to his Son Sir Philip Sydney.*

*Philippe,*

**B**Y the Lettres you sent me by *Sackeforde*, you have discovered unto me, your Intencion to goe over into the *Lowe Countries*, to accompagnie Duke *Cassimiere*, who hathe with so noble Offers, and by so honorable Meanes, convited you: Which Disposition of your vertuowse Mind, as I must needes muche commende in you: So when I enter into the Consideracion of mine owne Estate, and call to Minde, what Practises, Informations, and maliciowse Accusacions, are devised against me; and what an Assistance in the Defense of those Cawties, your Prefence wold be unto me, reposinge my self so much, bothe upon your Helpe and Judgment, I strive betwixt Honor and Necessitie, what Allowance I may best geve of that Mocion for your Goinge: How be it, if you thinke not my Matters of that Weight, and Difficultie (as I hope thei be not) but that they may be well enowghe by my self, without yowr Assistance, or any other, be browght to an honorable End, I will not be against your Determinacion. Yet wolde wishe yow, before your Departure, that yow come to me, to the Water Side, \* abowt the latter Ende of this Moneth, to take yowr Leave of me: And so from thence to departe towards yowr intended Journey: Yow must nowe beare with me, that I write not this unto yow with mine owne Hande, which I wold have done, if the Indispocion of my Body, had not beene suche, as I cowlde not. God prosper yow, in that yow shall goe abowt, and sende yow to winne muche Credit and Honor. And I send you my daily Blessing.

The First of August, 1578.

*Your very lovyng Father,*

H. Sydney.

Page 296. *Sir Philip Sydney to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.*

\* *Right honorable my very good Lorde,*

**I** Am bolde to trouble your Lordship withe these few Wordes. Humbly to craue yowr Lordships Favour so furr unto me, as that it will please you to lett me undrestand, whether I may withe your Lordships Leave, and that I may not offende in Wante of my Service, remaine absente from the Cowrte this *Christemas* Tyme.

Some Ocasions bothe of Helthe and otherwise, do make me much desyre it, but knowing how muche my Dutie goes beyonde any suche Cawses, makes me bolde to beseeche humbly your Lordship to know your Direction, which I will willingly follow, not onely in these Duties I am tyed to, but in any Thing, wherein I may be hable to doe your Lordship Service.

I will no furdre troble your Lordship, but withe the Remembrance of my Dutie to your Lordship, and my Lady and Awnte. And so I humbly Leave you both to the Eternall, who allwaies prosper you. Frome *Wilton*, this 16th of December, 1582.

*Your Lordships humbly at Comandement.*

Philippe Sidney.

\* His House was at *Bainards* Castle by the Water-side, near *St. Pauls*. \* Letter 42, Not. 161. C. 7. in Bibl. Harley.



I was bolde of late to move your Lordship in the Case of the poore stranger Musician. He hathe allreddy, so furr tasted of your Lordships Goodnes, as I am rather in his Behalfe, humbly to thanke your Lordship. Yet his Case is suche, as I am constrained to continew still a Suiter to your Lordship for him.

Superscribed,  
To the Earle of *Leycester*.

*Sir Philip Sydney to William Lord Burleigh.*

<sup>b</sup> *Right honorable, my singular good Lord,*

I Have from my Childhod ben much bownd to your Lordship, which as the Meanes of my Fortune keeps me from Hability to requite, so gives it me daily Caws to make the Bond greater, by seeking and using your Favor to-wardes me.

The Queen, at my Lord of *Warwicks* Request, hath bene moved to joine me in his Office of Ordinance, and, as I learne, her Majesty yeeldes gracious heering unto it. My Suit is, your Lordship will favour and furdre it; which I truly affirme unto your Lordship, I much more desyre, for the being busied in a Thing of some serviseable Experience, then for any other Commodity; which I think is but small, that can arise of it.

I conclude your Lordships troble with this, that I have no Reason to be thus bold with your Lordship, but the presuming of your honorable Goodwill to-wardes me, which I can not deserve, but I can and will greatly Esteem. I humbly take my Leave, and pray for your long and prosperows Lyfe. At Court, this 27th of *January*, 1582.

*Your Lordships most humble at Commandment,*

Superscribed,

Philip Sidney:

To the Right honourable, and singular good Lord, the Lord Threasorer of *England*, &c.

Page 298. Thomas Lord Buckehurst to Robert Dudley, *Earl of Leicester*, on the Death of Sir Philip Sydney.

*My very good Lord,*

WITH great Grief do I write these Lines unto you, being thereby forced to renew to your Remembrance, the Decease of that noble Gentleman your Nephew, by whose Death not only your Lordship, and all other his Friends and Kinsfolks, but even her Majestie, and the whole Realm besides, do suffer no small Loss and Detriment. Nevertheless it may not bring the least Comfort unto you; that as he hath both lived and died, in Fame of Honour and Reputation to his Name, in the worthy Service of his Prince and Country; and with as great Love in his Life, and with as many Tears for his Death, as ever any had; so hath he also by his good and godly End, so greatly testified the Assurance of Gods infinite Mercy towards him, as ther is no Doubt but that he now liveth with Immortality, free from the Cares and Calamities of mortal Misery; and in Place thereof, remaineth filled with all heavenly Joys and Felicities, such as cannot be expressed: So as I doubt not, but that your Lordship in Wisdom, after you have yielded some While to the Imperfection of Mans Nature, will yet in Time remember how happy in Truth he is, and how miserable and blind we are, that lament his bleffid Change. Her Majestie seemeth resolute to call home your Lordship, and intendeth presently to think of some fit Personage, that may take your Place and Charge. And in my Opinion, her Majestie had never more Cause to wish you here than now; I pray

<sup>b</sup> Letter 19, Not. 161 C. 8. in Bibl. Harley.



God send it speedily. I shall not need to enlarge my Letter with any other Matters, for that this Messenger, your Lordships wholly devoted, can sufficientli inform you of all. And so wishing all Comfort and Contentacion unto your Lordship. I rest your Lordships wholly for ever, to use and command as your own. From the Court this 3d of November, 1586.

*Your Lordships most assured to command,*

T. Buckehurst.

Page 299. *Sir William Borlas to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My verie good Lord,*

**I** Haue thought good, accordinge to Theeffect of my last Lettres, to move your Lordship to deale with Mr. Secretarie, and Mr. Threasurer, of the great Want of Shooes, which (at this greatest Time of Neede) the poore Souldier sustaineth, through the Fault of those which are appointed to serve the Garrisons with Apparell, who are so vtterlie vnprovided, as that there are not any to be gotten. It is pitifull to see howe the poore Souldier is pinched this colde Weather, and greivous to heare their dailie Complaints. Besides, the Bread which is given out, since the Execucion of the newe Orders, is so exceedinge mustie, that Men are scarce able to eate it, and the Souldiers crie out exceedingly against it. I beseech your Lordship to deale for Remedie of both theis Abuses. I haue looked more narrowlie into the Counsells Lettres, and finde the Order not to be for the viij *d.* in Bread only, but in Victualls; whereby the Captaines make a Doubt to receive it, as they haue done in Bread, but rather to make Suite to receive it in Victualls, as they saie it is the Counsells Will it shoulde be. I assure your Lordship I am greatly troubled with theis Matters, and so shall you be, vnles you provide thoroughly for it before your Cominge over, which I hope will nowe shortlie be; for the Howse is nowe ready for you, and the Hangings and all Things vp. There wanteth nothing but your Lordships Person, which I assure you euery Man here woulde be glad to see; and thus with my humble Dutie I leave your Lordship to Almighty God. *Flushing*, this xxijth of November, 1589.

*Your Lordships most assured to comaunde,*

William Borlas.

The Princeesse here is in great Heavines, by Reason of the Sicknes of her younge Sonne, whome it hath pleased God, at this Instante, verie greatlie to visite.

Page 299. *Sir William Borlas to Sir Robert Sydney.*

*My verie good Lorde,*

**T**HIS present Morninge I receaved Advertisements both from the Lorde Governor and the Captaines of *Ostende*, of some Enterprise which they suppose the Enimie hath in Hande against that Place, by Reason of the Repaire of the Prince with his Forces about *Bruges*, and other Places thereabouts. They have therefore requested me to sende thither twoo Companies out of this Towne, which I haue differed to doe, vntill such Time as I shall receive some Direction from your Lordship in that Behalfe, whereof I beseech your Lordship to advertise me your Minde with as convenient Speede as maie be.

The Souldiers here continuallie complaine of their bad Bread, neither can they endure longe to eate, vnles it be amended.

That



This present Day there are executed, by the Comandement of the States, about fortie or fiftie Mariners, which were taken about five Daies agoe in the *Admirall* of *Dunckerke*, which was brought in hether by the Men of Warre of this Towne, amongst which were diuers Souldiers of *Gravelinge*, whose Execucion I haue furthered as much as I coulde, for the Massacre which they made of our Men at Sir *Phillip Sidneyes* beinge at *Gravelinge*; and thus, with my humble Dutie, I leave your Lordship to the Almighty. *Flushing*, this thirde of *February*, 1589.

Your Lordships assured to comaunde,

William Borlas.

Page 299. George Gilpin, *Esq*; to Sir Robert Sydney.

Most honorable Knight,

BEINGE retorned this Weeke from *Zelande* and *Bargenopzoom*, I fownde your Lettre of the 30 of *January* last, which was longe by the Way, and yet most welcom, because wee were put in assurid Hope to haue inioied your Presence; whereof I would haue bin most glad; at my late beinge in *Flushing*, where I fownde them all longinge for the same, as alsoe in *Middelborgh*, and here: His Excellencie, the Count of *Solms*, *Hobenlo*, and the Admiral *Nassawe*, inquire often of your Comminge. I am now againe voide of any Hope of seeing you for a longe Time, by Reason of the right honorable Earle of *Warwicke* his Disease; and yet trust, that shall neither be Cause of your Stay, neither yet alter your Minde and Desire to possesse your Govuernment of so noble a Garrison, and by Saruice in Warres, to make greate that worthy Name of *Sidneys*; wherein, though your late honorable Brother lost his Liffe, yet did he leave soch a Testimony of his Zeale to Religion, that the Renown thereof wil last til the Worlds Ende, and his Soule receave everlasting Ioy, to the Comfort of all his Posteritie, and an Incouragement to all vertuous Mindes, to aspire and tend to like Honnors. Whensoever you shalbe arrived in *Flushing*, I will looke for your Lettres, and whereinsouer I may stand yow in Steede, my Saruice is and shalbe at your Commaundment, which to shew effectuallie, I could wish my selfe there at your Comminge; methinkes it were good yow could bringe ouer a hundret or twoe of Men, to fil vp the Companies of your Garrison, which would make them faire and strong, and be an Occasion to make these Men thinke you beganne with a Desire and Care to keepe the Companies compleete. Other Matters I leave for this Time, wisshinge your Buissnes there to be wel ended, and your selfe with my Lady and Familie wel settled in *Flushing*. Owr Newes are few, not dowbtinge but yow shall haue vnderstood, ere this, the Particularities of the Takinge of *Breda*; since the which, Count *Maurice* is com hither, leauinge there the Count of *Hobenlo*, with Capten *Harrogieres*, who commaundeth ouer the Garrison, which consisteth of 1200 Foote, and 4 Cornets of Horsemen. The Losse of that Place doth much amase Thennemy, and will diuerte and change al his Intents, havinge drawen a Number of Men together. Between *Vendlo* and *Ruremonde* are passed ouer the *Maese* about 60 Ensignes of Foote, and 10 Cornets of Horse, being com as farre as *Helmont*; so as it is thought he will haue a Layinge to *Breda*, where he shalbe receaved with Bullet and Pike, and wil find more Play then he looketh for, with Likelihood, after a longe Siege, to departe with Dishonor. Others write, the Meaninge is onely to victuail the Townes nere to *Breda*, which he cannot doe but ouer Lande, and with a greate Force, for *Bargues* and *Breda* beinge strongly gar- risoned, will cutt of all Convoies, vnlesse they be very stronge. Wee vnder- stande that *Hanno Veccho*, by Commaundment from the Duke, had the Kees of *Geertrudenbergh* taken from him, and receaved him Prisoner, beinge in greate Displeasure. Yt is said there is not in that Towne for 3 Weekes Victuals, and those of *Bolduck* haue refused flatly to disprouide them selues, and send thither any; *Stoenberghen*, *Rosendael*, and *Wourwe*, are likewise slenderlie prouided. The

Count



Count *Maurice* insisteth harde to haue the States make a new Levy of 3 or 4000 Men, whereto they harken, but agree slowly. *Verdugo*, this last Frost, made a Roade againe into *Freeſland*, but did no more Harme, then to fire a Village or twoe, and so retired. Thence are good Stoare of Men put into *Steenwick* and *Demeter*, where it is presumed he hath som Enterprise in Hande; wee are also here practisinge of another Matter or twoe of good Service, God send the Succes agreable to the last. Al other Matters continew after the olde Way; Sir *Frauncys Vere* is readie to departe to his Garrison in *Desborghe*; and thus, for Want of other, I humbly take my Leave. From the *Haeghe*, this 7th of *Marche*, 1589. *Sti Angliæ*.

Your Lordships at commaundment,

Geo. Gilpin.

Page 383. Robert Beale, Esq; (Clerk of the Council) to Sir Robert Sydney.

My verie good Lorde,

I Most humblie thancke yow for your Letter of the xiiijth of this Present. Concerning the Booke which I wrote for, I was desirous to haue it, not for anie particular Respect or Interest of mine owne, but onely by seinge what flanderous and wicked Allegacions the Enemies haue against this Estate, to be better hable to aunswar them when Time and Occasion should require. I haue hearde that diuers of the said Bookes haue ben brought into this Realme and discouered: But such a Ialousie is conceaued, that anie should haue the Sight of them, that I can be contented to forbear to desire it, because I will not incurre the Displeasure or Suspicion of anie whatsoeuer.

I thincke the *Spanishe* Preparacions be the principall Cause, why the Demaunde of the Moneye is not vrged; but yet the Estates ought to make better Accompt of the Benefits that they haue receaued from hence. For whether it hath proceeded of a Feare, and Provision for our selues, to keepe the Enemye farre of, or of Loue to them, a greate Masse of Treasure hath ben issued out of this Realme, which they will never paye or requite towards vs, if the Burthen of the Warre be turned from them vpon vs, as, by these greate Preparacions in *Spaine*, it is to be feared. The Deathe of your noble Vncle, the Erle of *Huntingdon*, Doctor *Whittakers* in *Cambridge*, and Sir *Roger Williams* here; all three worthie Men in their Callinge, and hardlie to be seconded againe, portende some Skourge vpon vs, for the Multitude of our Sinnes and Transgressions. The Lorde geue vs Grace to amende our Liues, so maye we be assured of his Mercie and Deliverance. To him I commend yow, and so take my Leave. From my House in *London*, the xxijth of *December*, 1595.

Your Lordships assuredly at Commaundement,

Robert Beale.

Sir *Henry Vmpton* is dispatched into *Fraunce*, I pray God that he cum not to late to do good: Houbet it is reported, that the Duke of *Mayne* is come into the King, and that there is good Hope of the Duke of *Mercure*; but for Lack of Countenance, the Cause of Religion goeth to wrack. The Lord amend all.

†

THE



# THE INDEX.

|          |                               |                                 |                                |
|----------|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <b>A</b> | B, Ellis Ellis 139            | Bloq, — 359                     | Cavaghes, — 269                |
|          | Aertfens, — 304, 387          | Blunt, Francis 137, 138. Mi-    | Cavannagh, — 82, 83, 87        |
|          | Agarde, — 82, 85, 86,         | chael 372. Tho. 35              | Cayre, Barons 91               |
|          | 95, 104, 120, 122,            | Boden, — 283                    | Cavendyshe, — 266              |
|          | 159, 169, 197, 211, 212,      | Bodley, Sir Tho. 301, 308, 310, | Cecill, Rob. 314, 325, 326,    |
|          | 226, 227, 232                 | 311, 318, 331, 342, 345,        | 329, 348, 353, 361, 363,       |
|          | Ailster Carraghe Mac Oghe 41  | 346, 349, 359, 382              | 365, 369, 372, 375, 377, 381,  |
|          | Aldegarde, Monf. 299          | Borlase, John 298. Will. 298    | 383, 385. Lady 383             |
|          | Alexander, — 41               | Borough, Lord 345, 357, 361,    | Chaloner, — 140, 280. John 75, |
|          | Alford Lancelot 85, 92, 111,  | 365, 368, 376, 378, 379, 381,   | 85                             |
|          | 282, 283                      | 383, 385, 386. Lady 355         | Chalons, — 75                  |
|          | Allanfon, Duke 325            | Bosseville, — 297               | Champernon, — 298, 299         |
|          | Allen, — 294                  | Bouillon, Duke 344, 354         | Chancellor, Lord 3, 30, 119,   |
|          | Alva, Duke 317                | Bourcke, — 20, 93. Edward       | 128, 152, 167, 211, 226        |
|          | Amyas, — 286                  | 150. John 122, 215. Ma-         | Chatterton, — 75, 76, 79, 97,  |
|          | Angwys, — 123                 | ry 215. Ullick 150. Shane       | 117, 148                       |
|          | Ardaghe, Bishop 123, 142      | 166, 229, 230                   | Cheke, John 282                |
|          | Arde, — 30                    | Bowes, — 129                    | Cholmley, — 366, 372           |
|          | Arglas, Geo. 210              | Bowyer, — 272                   | Clandeboyne, Lord 33           |
|          | Arkenburge, Conte 309         | Boye, Sorley 75, 77, 79         | Clandonnells, — 104, 150       |
|          | Arguile, Earl 12, 14, 35, 36, | Bradye, Hugh 112                | Clancarty, Earl 32             |
|          | 77, 78                        | Bremingham, — 105               | Clancarre, Earl 23, 29, 39,    |
|          | Arloc, Obrien 93              | Brenane, Nicolas 125            | 78, 91. Donald 49              |
|          | Armorer, Will. 5              | Bridges, — 383                  | Clanoneil, Earl 78             |
|          | Arnolde, Nic. 10, 14, 137     | Brinklows, James 204            | Clanrycardines 89              |
|          | Arandells, — 91               | Brooke 355. David 5. Tho-       | Clanrycarde, Earl 16, 28, 29,  |
|          | Arra, Mac, Brian 93           | mas 384                         | 78, 83, 103, 105, 106, 126,    |
|          | Afcott, Duke 228              | Brograve, — 357                 | 150, 154, 157, 187, 194,       |
|          | Athenrie, Baron 105           | Bromley, — 357. Tho. 5, 133     | 208, 215, 249. Nicolas 119,    |
|          | Atkyns, — 314, 315            | Brown, — 234, 312, 340, 347,    | 122, 125                       |
|          | Avery, Marquis 225            | 358, 364, 371, 378, 381.        | Clare, Lord 103                |
|          | Angusta, — 309                | Will. 299                       | Cleire, David 127, 146, 158,   |
|          | Austria, Don Jhon 325         | Brymyingham, — 5. Will. 31      | 159, 168, 186                  |
|          | Ansty, Will. 5                | Buck, — 353, 383, 387           | Clifford, — 321                |
|          | Awbrie, — 356                 | Buckley, Rowland 139            | Clinch, — 357                  |
|          | Aylward, Piers 244. Ric. 127  | Buckhurst, Lord 300, 331, 382   | Clinton, Eliz. 374             |
|          | B.                            | Bulkeley, Ric. 36, 276, 277,    | Clufins, Carolus 246           |
|          | Bacon, Lady 14                | 278. Tho. 277, 278              | Clutwell, — 134                |
|          | —, Mrs. 370                   | Bullen, Anne 372                | Cockran, John 122, 125, 210    |
|          | — 357                         | Burke, — 105, 107               | Collier, — 126. Will. 120, 154 |
|          | Bagnall, — 10, 43, 277. Henry | Burck, Ullick 91. 120. 122.     | Colman, — 206, 209, 221        |
|          | 362, 371, 373. Nic. 75, 99,   | John 94, 191. Hen. 179,         | Collofluyne, — 116             |
|          | 180, 241, 250, 252, 268, 282, | 186, 197, 202, 234. Shane       | Comines, Phil. 345             |
|          | 390                           | 150. Mac Philippin 105          | Compton, Lord 375, 381, 386    |
|          | 266                           | Burchinshaw, — 355              | Coningsby, — 296               |
|          | Balfour, — 17, 140,           | Burgh, Lord 240                 | Connell, — 123                 |
|          | Baltinglafs, Lord 268, 269    | Burnell, — 245                  | Con O Donnell 107, 115         |
|          | Bangor, Bishop 139            | Burnham, — 302, 331, 342, 369   | Connors, — 250                 |
|          | Barham, — Serj. 200           | Butler Family 42. James, Earl   | Conti, Prince 344              |
|          | Barkley, Hen. 319, 369, 370.  | of Ormond 130, 133. Tho.        | Corbet, Andrew 144. Rich.      |
|          | —, Lord 35, 302, 372          | Earl of Ormond 130. Ed-         | 23, 213                        |
|          | Barlow, John 140              | mond 17, 21, 37, 82. Ed-        | Corbye, Alex. 167, 229         |
|          | Barnes, — 66                  | ward 18, 21, 40, 37, 126.       | Corcke, Bishop 49, 91, 93      |
|          | Barrets, — 23, 91, 105        | Geofrey 18. Florence 18.        | Cornwallles, Will. 348         |
|          | Barry, Viscount 23, 91        | Piers 18, 20, 40, 130, 134.     | Cosbye, Alex. 216              |
|          | Baskerville, Tho. 232, 319    | Phil. 357. Tibald 91            | Courcy, Lord 23, 91            |
|          | Baskett, Richard 361          | Button, Miles 138               | Cowes, Edm. 137                |
|          | Beare, — 356                  | Buzenval, Monf. 233, 378        | Cowley, Hen. 82, 283           |
|          | Beaumont, — 357               | Byron, Marquis 232              | Cox, — 35, 364                 |
|          | Bedford, Lady 358             | C.                              | Croft, — 263. Gabriel 31       |
|          | Beecher, — 348, 360, 369, 374 | Cadogann, Harry 137, 138        | Croghter Mac William 105       |
|          | Beere, Solivan 200            | Canterbury, Lord 177            | Crome, Moris 100               |
|          | Bell, — 109                   | Carberie, Lord 91               | Cromwell, — 266                |
|          | Belleille, Monf. 294          | Carew, Geo. 348, 353, 368,      | Cuff, — 347                    |
|          | Bellomont, — 309              | 372, 373. Peter 82, 177,        | Cumberland, Earl 374, 386      |
|          | Bentin, Conte 309             | 389                             | Cufak, Tho. 27, 29             |
|          | Berwell, — 314                | Carne, — 314. Will. 275         | Cufacke, — 43, 105             |
|          | Bingham, — 270. Ric. 358      | Cary, — 300                     | D.                             |
|          | Birchinshawe, — 350           | Carye, Barons 91                | Dacres, Lady 377, 386          |
|          | Birne, — 82, 240              | Catlyn, — 121. Hen. 114, 148    | Dale, Valentine 325            |
|          | Bland, John 204               | Cassells, Earl 36, 37. Bishop   | Dallahide, Laurence 108        |
|          | Blanchvill, — 134             | 32, 49, 91, 93                  | Dalton, — 81                   |
|          | Blanuden, Andrew 137          | Cassymyre, — 272. Duke 392      |                                |



- Damporte, Rob. 107  
 Daniel, — 150  
 Danfell, Sir Will. 79  
 Darby, Earl 123. Lady 373, 383, 386  
 Darcie, — 81  
 Daton, — 134  
 Davells, Hen. 26, 192, 244, 269  
 Davies, John 138, 140  
 Deane, — 134  
 Decies, Viscount 91  
 De la Verdin, Monf. 329  
 De la More, — 81  
 Delvin, Baron 17, 82, 108, 236, 237  
 Denny, Edw. 282  
 Dermagh, Terlagh 352  
 Desmonde, — 151, 187. Countess 42. Earl 19, 22, 23, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 41, 42, 45, 46, 47, 90, 91, 93, 166, 183, 189, 192, 202, 210, 242, 264, 268, 388. John 25, 26, 37, 91, 119, 166, 191, 209, 215, 281. James 91, 264, 281. Thomas 42, 91  
 Devereux, — 213. Lady  
 Penelope 147  
 Digges, — 299  
 Dillon, — 81. Lucas 27, 75, 85, 96, 103, 110, 120, 122, 152, 241, 268, 282. Thomas 107, 202  
 Dombes, Prince 329  
 Donno O Connor 106  
 Donfany, Lord 227  
 Dorset, Duke. Lionel 328  
 Dowdall, — 92. James 50, 95. Justice 12  
 Dowglas, — 12, 35  
 Drewrye, Will. 74, 80, 85, 95, 108, 119, 122, 123, 166, 191, 202, 205, 212, 248, 388  
 Dublin, Archbishop 123, 127, 140, 141, 160, 391  
 Dudley, — 293. Lord 2  
 Duffyn, — 30  
 Du Maire — 352  
 Dunboyne, Lord 13, 19, 20, 21, 91. Lady 41  
 Dungannon, Baron 69, 75, 77, 249  
 Dunn, Griffith 140  
 Dutton, Myles 275  
 Dyer, —, E. 66, 67  
 Eaton, Rob. 137  
 Edmonds, — 67, 373  
 Elles ap. Elles 138  
 Elyot, Sir Thomas 6  
 Emley, Bishop 114  
 Englefeld, — 145  
 Errington, N. 192  
 Espernon, Duke 375  
 Essex, Earl 62, 63, 65, 71, 74, 76, 77, 78, 81, 88, 89, 96, 97, 107, 108, 117, 123, 140, 147, 148, 168, 169, 213, 312, 314, 317, 327, 329, 332, 343, 348, 349, 350, 353, 355, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, to 368 inclusive, 369, 371, 373, 374, 377, 378, 382, 383, 385, 386, 388, 391. Lady 314, 355, 385, 386  
 Ewter, Mac William 16, 28, 73, 129, 104, 105, 106, 149, 150  
 Exeter, Bishop 2. Earl, Will. 231. Countess F. 231  
 Ferrers, Lord 2  
 Finche, — 17, 356, 369  
 Fisher 248  
 Fitz, Edmund, Piers 134  
 Fitz Garrold, Morris 17, 91  
 Fitz Morrice, Lord 17, 25, 32, 39, 90, 91, 95, 116. James 91, 166, 184, 188, 200, 202, 208, 211, 216, 233, 234, 238, 243, 248, 250, 255, 262  
 Fitz, Patrick, Barnab. 17  
 Fitz Symons, Edw. 27  
 Fitz William, — 13, 14, 40, 74. Bryan 13, 16. Tho. 268. Will. 147, 156, 192, 209  
 Fitton, — 122. Edw. 42, 75, 118, 122  
 Flemings, — 91  
 Fleming, — 237, 357, 360. Serjeant 348. Thomas 169  
 Follyott, John 137  
 Fontenelles, — 352  
 Fookes, — 347  
 Fortescue, John 347, 350, 359, 369, 377, 382  
 Foster, Will. 189  
 Foxe, — 82, 293  
 France, King 290, 302, 310, 323, 325, 345  
 Frangton, Hubert 131  
 Fuentes, Count 345, 347, 351, 379  
 G,  
 Gage, Sir John 3  
 Games, John 140  
 Gaunt, John, Duke of Lancaster 350  
 Garran, — 101  
 Garvey, John 122  
 Gefford, John 80, 85, 96, 97, 102, 121, 168, 347  
 Gerrard 86. William 95, 133, 144, 145, 266  
 Germin, Richard 5  
 Gilbert 28, 36, 38. Sir Humph. 298  
 Glasfer, William 258  
 Glyne, — 30, 78, 79, 139  
 Glouster de Guliam 131, 133  
 Gold, James 189  
 Golding, — 360, 364  
 Gomond, William 137, 138  
 Gormanston, Lord 169  
 Gorme, Doneil 35  
 Gorge, Arthur 263, 381  
 Goring, — 315, 385  
 Gotenham, James 132  
 Grace, Oliver 13, 19, 20, 23. Foulke 118, 141. Philip 134  
 Greene, Powle 280  
 Greenville, Richard 39, 231  
 Greye, Lord 240  
 Griffith, John 138, 139  
 Grevil, Foulke 35, 145, 187, 193, 293, 294, 359, 364, 365, 366, 368, 374, 376  
 H,  
 Hackluyt, — 298  
 Harebottle, Grimston 358  
 Hare, — 145, 314  
 Harley, — 36  
 Harleston, — 36  
 Harris, — 360  
 Harrifon, — 96  
 Harpoole, Robert 167, 229, 230, 269, 281  
 Harrington, Henry 111, 120, 216, 229, 240, 390. Sir John 382  
 Hassal, Richard 5  
 Hastings, Lord Francis 382  
 Hatton, — 159  
 Hatfield, Bishop 3  
 Heath, Bishop 3  
 Hector, — Dr. 187, 189  
 Herbert, Lord 353, 361, 372  
 —, Edward 36, 139, 360, 363. William 277. Matt. 275  
 Heneage, Sir Tho. 302, 363  
 Henfias, — 66  
 Hereford, Lord Viscount 36  
 Hertford, Lord 356, 358, 359, 360  
 —, Lady 360, 363, 366, 369, 377  
 Higham, — 351  
 Hix, Mr. 243, 360, 369  
 Hobby, Posthumus 357, 361, 366  
 Hohenlo, Count 233, 308, 395  
 Holcroft, Sir Tho. 5  
 Holmes, Count 328  
 Hothe, Richard 149  
 Howard, Lord 101, 272, 283  
 Howarth, Humfr. 138  
 Howthe, Lord 197  
 Huband, John 138, 277, 278  
 Huggins, — 272  
 Hughes, Rees 139  
 Huntingdon, Lord and Earle 312, 359, 361, 382, 396  
 Huntingdon, Lady 348, 354, 357, 358, 374, 378, 379, 380, 381, 383, 384, 385, 386  
 Hunfdon, the Tribe of 372  
 Hunt, Richard 33  
 I,  
 James, Tho. 315, 317  
 Ibrecan, Lord 226  
 Jeford, — 314  
 Jenkin, Rees David 139  
 —, David Lloyd 139  
 —, William 138  
 Jenifon, — 267  
 Jones, David 138. Rees 138, 139. Owen 139. John ap Roger 137. Richard 137  
 K,  
 Kallagh, — 101  
 Kellie, — 106  
 Kenelaghan, — 116  
 Kenrick, Rowland 139  
 Kiffin, Morris 159  
 Kildare, Earl of 16, 17, 29, 62, 76, 81, 83, 224, 266  
 Killegrew, Henry 345, 373  
 Kinaston, Tho. 138  
 King, Lord Peter 312  
 —, Mathew 31  
 L,  
 Lake, Sir Tho. 231, 327, 329, 369, 370, 373, 374, 375, 381, 383, 385  
 Lambert, — 297, 330, 377  
 Lane, Ralph 326, 327  
 La Roche 198, 203, 211, 212, 234  
 Lauenburgh, Duke 329  
 Leicester, Earl 10, 13, 62, 70, 146



- 146, 147, 168, 169, 185,  
186, 188, 191, 199, 210,  
226, 276, 277, 278, 279,  
281, 312. Lady 359, 360  
Lee, Rowland 144  
Leigh, Henry 382, 385  
Leighton, Sir Tho. 295  
Lenard, Lord 10  
Lenaugh, Tirlaugh 30, 37, 40,  
97, 164, 165, 216, 218, 224,  
249, 261  
Lefrange, Tho. 107, 120, 126,  
154, 282  
Lewis, Tho. 138, 275. Wil-  
liam 139  
Lincoln, Lord 386  
Littleton, John 137, 318  
Lixnawe, Baron 91  
Lloyd, David 137. Foulk and  
John 139  
Lorrain, Duke 310, 352  
Lovel, Francis 134  
Lowth, Baron 75, 81, 91, 93,  
120, 122, 255, 261  
Lymerick, Bishop 49, 265  
Lynches, — 105  
M.  
Mac Amarrowe 116  
Mac Brien 26, 76, 239  
Mac Phelim Barret 105  
Mac Carty, Sir Donoghe 23  
—, Sir Dermot 23  
—, Donel 91  
Mac Cough 125  
Mac Couglan 120, 181  
Mac Conell, James 164  
Mac Conner Teigh 102  
Mac Cormocke O Connor 166,  
216  
Mac Donaghe 32, 104, 241  
Mac Donell, James 78  
Mac Dermond 106  
Mac Denniffe 76  
Mac Davye 105  
Mac Genneffe 79, 96, 97, 117,  
155, 158  
Maguire, — 12, 14, 15, 30,  
45, 78, 81, 351  
Mac Gill, Patrick 83  
Mac Glough 116  
Mac Granell 116  
Mac Hugh, Owen 163, 167  
Mac Hubert 105  
Mac Mahon 30, 69, 102, 142,  
255, 261  
Mac Lyfagh Neil 262  
Mac Mafon 78  
Mac Morres 105  
Mac Nemarrough of Thomond  
94, 102, 116  
Mackworth, Humphry 269, 282  
Mac Neil Oge Con 76  
Mac Redmonde 105  
Mac Sawle 81  
Mac Seneschal 76  
Mac Shane 82, 101, 120, 134,  
140, 149, 269  
Mac Teige, Mac Carty, Cormok  
162, 163  
Mac Teige, Sir Dermot 32  
Mac Terman 116  
Mac Murrough Teige 102, 103  
— Donogh 102  
Mac Swynes 92, 93  
Madox Gryffin 271  
Mainard 348, 357, 359, 361,  
364, 365, 367, 368, 371  
Main, — Serjeant 348  
Malbie, Capt. 35, 41, 70, 79,  
97, 111, 117, 129, 170. Sir  
Nicholas 63, 76, 150, 151,  
154, 156, 166, 168, 188,  
215, 241, 248, 249, 262  
Mannors, Roger 364, 366, 368  
Manfell, Sir Rice 5. Edward  
275  
Martin, David 263  
Masterfon, Tho. 82, 83, 281,  
283  
Mathew, William 275. Toby  
362  
Mayne, Duke of 352, 396  
Meithe, Bishop 108, 119, 282  
Mercure, Duke of 229, 396  
Meredith 304. Morgan 138.  
Jenkin, and Rowland 139  
Merwin, Justice 3  
Morgan, — 266, 356. Ed-  
mund 138. Roger 137, 138.  
Richard 140. William 213.  
Sir Mathew 340. Sir Tho.  
137, 315, 356, 384, 385  
Mollingar, — 108  
Molineux, — 194, 210, 227,  
240. Edmund 66, 145, 187,  
296  
Montagu, — 209, 348, 353,  
360  
—, Sir Edward 109, 117  
Montpenfier, Duke of 232  
Montmorency, Duke of 382  
—, Hallet 232  
Montjoy, Lord 372, 375, 377,  
381, 386  
Moores 167, 170, 205, 250,  
314. Edward 169, 282.  
Tho. 282. Owen 43, 282  
Moor, Ofulyvan 91  
Morley, — 362  
Morris, Redman 100. David  
139  
Morton, Earl 286  
Moston, Richard 139  
Mountgarret, Viscount 17, 134,  
135, 188, 194, 195  
Muskerry, Lord 91  
Mytton, Sir Adam 5  
N.  
Naffaue, Count Maurice 302,  
303, 311, 321, 324, 326,  
330, 346, 395, 396  
— William 301,  
308. Naffaue, Admiral 395  
Nah, — 371  
Navarr, King 290, 325  
Nevell, — 283, 285, 380.  
Henry 246, 271  
Nevell als Latimer, — 372  
Nevers, Duke 344, 354  
Newterfeld, — 245  
Newtervill, Richard 179, 182,  
183, 186, 192, 197, 202,  
234  
Norris, Edward 315, 318, 320,  
321, 322, 331, 333, 335,  
337, 338. John 266, 315,  
316, 318, 320, 326, 327,  
333, 344, 347, 348, 350,  
351. Thom. 347, 351  
North, Lord 381, 385  
Northumberland, Lady 359  
la Noue Monsieur 329  
Nugent, Nic. 236  
O.  
Obrien, — 28, 81, 82, 102,  
103, 104, 106, 116, 126.  
Cornelius 158, 186. Donel  
102, 103. Tirrelagh 239  
Ocalaghan, — 163  
Ocarroll, — 18, 83, 390.  
Ely 91. Will. 91, 390, 391  
Ochane, Ric. 30  
Oconnor, — 81, 83, 89, 104,  
154, 158, 167, 205, 216,  
232, 235, 240  
Odempies, — 241  
Odonell 14, 28, 40, 69, 70,  
81, 83, 104, 115, 116, 231,  
243, 249, 251  
Odwyns, — 149  
Offerall, — 104, 107  
Offlartye, — 28, 105  
Oge, Baron 91. Barry 23. Co-  
merford Richard 134. Con  
Mac Neil 115. Rore 83,  
250, 262, 263, 264, 268  
Ogonough, Mac Brian 19, 26,  
93  
Ohanlon, — 30, 148  
Oig, James 118  
Okelley, — 29, 105, 115,  
116  
Okennedie, — 20. Oge 241  
Okyne, — 91  
Olfworth, — 364, 369  
Omalden, — 105  
Omagher, — 19  
Omaylle, — 105  
Omolaghlin, — 81  
Omoloie, — 81, 82  
Omolindy, — 116  
Omore, — 82, 83, 87, 89,  
158, 210, 232, 235, 262.  
Rorie Oge 166, 216, 243  
Onaughton, — 105  
Oneil, — 10, 12, 14, 16,  
35, 78, 155, 156, 243, 252.  
Cormocke 77. Harry 80.  
Lady 78. Shane 37, 116.  
Tiege 15, 62, 77, 78, 117,  
156, 160, 255  
Orange, Prince 192, 198, 273,  
345  
Oreileigh, — 12, 81, 104,  
107, 261  
Orerye, — 75  
Ormonde, Earl 9, 10, 13, 17,  
19, 20, 22, 23, 29, 38,  
40, 41, 42, 45, 46, 47, 49,  
51, 52, 62, 88, 94, 96, 140,  
146, 156, 157, 158, 194,  
195, 203, 241, 266, 269,  
388, 391. John 132. James  
132. Piers 131. Thomas  
238  
Orwarcke, — 104, 107, 115,  
116, 166, 249  
Offorye, Bishop 127, 157  
Ofulyvant, Owen 23, 91  
Ocomores, — 87  
Overstein, Count 321, 324  
Owen, — 357. John 139  
Robert 139  
P.  
Pakynghon, Sir John 5  
Parker, — 229  
Pallavicine, Horace 319, 323  
Pakenham, — 88  
Pates, Richard 137  
Peirs, William 9, 12, 13. Capt.  
33, 35, 41  
Pembroke, Earl and Lord 10,  
88, 89, 191, 237, 312, 314,  
315, 348, 353, 355, 356,  
357, 358, 359, 360, 361,  
366, 370, 372, 374, 382.  
Lady 361, 363  
Penrin,



- Penrin, William 140  
 Perrot, Sir John 49, 51, 95, 139, 265, 326  
 Petit, Sir John 142, 158, 186  
 Phetiplace, — 145, 202  
 Philip, Owen Powell 138  
 Pigotte, Robert 137  
 Pollard, — 145  
 Poole, St. Giles 35  
 Portsmouth, Earl John 298  
 Portman, Justice 3. Hugh 384  
 Porte, Sir John 2  
 Portugal, King 273, 274  
 Power, Lord 22, 90, 91  
 Poyntz, Sir Nicholas 302  
 Prendergast, — 105  
 Prendel, James 309  
 Prefcot, James 88, 115, 147, 148, 149, 156  
 Prife, Sir John 5, 138. Ellis 138, 139. Leycester 275  
 Proby, Peter 356, 357  
 Puckering, Lady 382  
 Purcell, — 93, 149, 241  
     R.  
 Raleigh, Walter 377  
 Randolphe, — 286  
 Ratcliff, — 238  
 Ray, — 348  
 Raynsford, Hercules 89  
 Rei, de Baron 234  
 Reinald, Carew 366  
 Reough, Mac Cartye of Carberie 116, 183  
 Refwyck, Henry 206  
 Revell, Tho. 140  
 Rich, Lord 348, 353, 259, 360. Lady 348, 359, 361, 372, 375, 381, 383, 384, 385, 386  
 Roche, Lord Viscount 23, 25, 91, 92, 93  
 Rocheford, — 91  
 Roe, O Connor 106  
 Rookebye, — 74, 95, 384  
 Roos, Phelim 75. Lord William 231. Bishop 32, 91  
 Rutland, Earl 352, 356, 368  
 Ryther, Sir William 231  
     S.  
 Sackford, Tho. 38, 39, 40  
 Salisbury, John 213  
 Sanford, — 353, 370  
 Savage 359, 362, 372. Edm. 76  
 Savell, — 246, 283, 285  
 Savoye, Duke 345, 386  
 Scotte, — 79  
 Scroope, Lady 384  
 Scurlock, Patrick 21. Barnaby 179, 182, 186, 196, 197, 202, 235, 237  
 Seborne, Richard 138  
 Seintleger, Warham 17, 20, 22, 39. Sir Ant. 115  
 Selbie, Capt. 73  
 St. Luc, Monsieur 294  
 Seys, Roger 294, 312, 315  
 Shandos, Lord 383  
 Shean, Morrice 265  
 Sheffield, — 263. Henry 259, 265  
 Sherlock, — 118. Peter 244  
 Sherley, Sir Tho. 315, 327. Sir Ant. 359  
 Sirewsbery, Earl 356, 370. Lady 370, 374, 377  
 Shethe, Richard 101  
 Sidney, Sir Hen. 2, 36, 59, 206, 214, 347, 369, 372, 374.  
 Sir Philip 147, 168, 192, 193, 197, 202, 209, 210, 225, 226, 227, 228, 276, 281, 295, 395. Robert 187, 194, 209, 312, 372. William 360, 366, 370. Mary 360, 366  
 Siliyard, — 145  
 Skudamore, Mrs. 67. Lady 366  
 Skydie, Andrew 26  
 Slane, Lord 102, 211  
 Sligo, O Conor 28, 107, 115, 116, 129, 150, 231  
 Smallman, Francis 137  
 Smith, — 298, 299. Sir Tho. 69, 76, 137  
 Solmes, Count 329, 341, 395  
 Somerset, Lady Catherine, and Lady Elizabeth 366, 381  
 Sordiac, Monsieur 294  
 Southampton, Earl 248  
 Snagge, — 228, 231  
 Sparhawke, — 233  
 Stafford, Lord 275  
 Stanhope, Sir John 35, 331, 356, 358, 359, 360, 364, 365, 366, 368, 374, 375, 379, 380, 381, 385. Michael 300  
 Stanley, — 363. Sir George 31, 32  
 Stanton, — 105  
 Steadman, John 139  
 Stepney, Alban 140  
 Stradlynge, Edward 275  
 Straunge, le Tho. 154  
 Stukeley, Tho. 10, 38, 234, 256, 258, 261, 267, 270  
 Suffex, Earl 6, 11, 83, 182, 271, 353  
 Swyne, Mac 30  
 Swartzenbourgh, Count 309  
 Synolt, Richard 83  
     T.  
 Talbot, — 370  
 Terril, — 81  
 Thinne, Mr. 361  
 Thomas, John 44, 139, 140. William 138. David 138, 140  
 Thomkins, — 350, 351  
 Thomond, Earl 16, 27, 49, 91, 94, 102, 105, 151, 211, 225, 242  
 Throkmorton, Tho. 35, 213  
 Tirone, Earl 350, 351, 355, 362  
 Tirelagh, — 102  
 Tirries, — 91  
 Touchet, — 361  
 Townesend, — 145, 277, 278. Sir Robert 3  
 Trevor, — M. D. 140  
 Tremayne, — 109  
 Triers, Bishop 309  
 Turbridge, Rob. 139  
 Tyrconnell, — 16, 69  
     V.  
 Vander Warke 307  
 Vaughan, John 137. Griffith 140. William, 140. Rich. 136, 137, 138, 139, 140  
 Vere, Sir Francis 233, 235, 236, 238, 306, 308, 309, 311, 315, 319, 320, 321, 323, 324, 329, 340, 346, 387, 396  
 Verney, — 35  
 Vernon, — 348  
 Vettinghale, Lord, Harry 232  
 Villiers, — 232  
 Vmpton, Sir Henry 298, 356, 373, 375, 376, 378, 382, 384, 396  
 Vpper Offorye, Baron and Lord 17, 18, 100, 101, 102, 118, 125, 127, 128, 146, 147, 149, 156, 157, 158, 164, 167, 282, 390, 391  
 Vvedale, Sir Edm. 348, 362, 372, 377, 379, 381, 383, 384, 385  
     W.  
 Waghorn, — 347  
 Wallop, John, Earl of Portsmouth 298  
 Walsingham, — 101, 153. Sir Francis, Secretary of State 153, 186, 187, 189, 191, 231. Thomas 67. Lady 355  
 Walshe, — 92, 146, 159. Nich. 50, 95. Walter 134. Francis 137  
 Wainman, — 372  
 Waring, John 387  
 Waterford, Bishop 49  
 Waterhouse 44, 114, 123, 156, 235. Edward 156, 169, 184, 254  
 Warwick, Earl, John 3  
 —, Earl 191, 282, 298, 393, 395  
 —, Lady 67, 297, 360, 361, 364, 366, 368, 369, 374, 375, 379, 380, 381, 383, 384  
 Welles, Sir Will. 131, 132  
 Wesley, Gaiet 179  
 Westmorland, Earl 200, 234  
 Weston, — 95  
 White, Knight 19, 26  
 White, — 76, 255, 321, 361. Nich. 27, 38. Henry 246, 271, 272, 277, 285, 286, 299. Richard 139  
 Whiting, — 374  
 Whitten, — 232  
 Wigmore, Rich. 124, 326  
 Wilkes, Tho. 240, 301, 308, 311, 325  
 Williams, Sir Roger 354, 359, 362, 375, 377, 384, 385, 396. Williams, — Serjeant 353  
 Willoughby, Geo. 5  
 Winchelsea, Earl 302  
 Windibank, — 359  
 Wingfield 191, 320. James 75, 85, 89, 282. Sir John 347, 359. Richard 347  
 Winstone, Roger 133  
 Winter George 203, 204, 211, 212, 244. William 39  
 Worcester, Earl 10, 381  
 —, Bishop 276  
 Wood, — 145, 356, 361, 373, 377. Owen 139, 277  
 Wraye, — 316, 319, 321  
 Wylfon, Tho. Secretary of State 234, 240  
 Wyn, Owen 139  
     Y.  
 York, Archbishop 385  
 York, Edmund 317  
 Yvere, — 351  
     Z.  
 Zouche, Alan 282



















Romney, Henry Sidney of

Letters And Memorials Of State In the Reigns of Queen Mary, Queen  
Elizabeth, King James, King Charles The First, Part of the Reign of King  
Charles the Second, and Oliver's Usurpation  
Bd.: 1

London (1746)

2 Brit. 27 m-1

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10212976-6